



*Paul Lawrence Dunbar*

THE 'COMPLETE POEMS/  
OF  
PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

WITH THE INTRODUCTION TO  
"LYRICS OF LOWLY LIFE

BY  
W D HOWELLS



NEW YORK  
DODD, MEAD AND COMPANY  
1922



# American Studies Research Centre

Copyright 1895, 1896, 1897, 1898, 1901, 1902, 1903, 1904, 1905  
By THE CLEVELAND Co

Copyright 1897, 1898, 1901, 1902, 1903, 1904, 1905  
By THE CLEVELAND PUBLISHING Co

Copyright 1898  
By THE OUTLOOK Co

Copyright 1898  
By J. L. WALLER

Copyright 1903  
By W. H. GALT

COPYRIGHT 1901, 1902, 1903, 1905, 1913  
By DODD MEAD AND COMPANY

## DEDICATIONS

*LYRICS OF LOWLY LIFE*

TO

MY MOTHER

*LYRICS OF THE HEARTH-SIDE*

TO

ALICE

*LYRICS OF LOVE AND LAUGHTER*

TO

MISS CATHERINE IMPEY

*LYRICS OF SUNSHINE AND SHADOW*

TO

MRS FRANK CONOVER

WITH THANKS FOR HER LONG BELIEF



## INTRODUCTION TO LYRICS OF LOWLY LIFE

I THINK I should scarcely trouble the reader with a special appeal in behalf of this book if it had not specially appealed to me for reasons apart from the author's race origin and condition. The world is too old now, and I find myself too much of its mood to care for the work of a poet because he is black, because his father and mother were slaves, because he was before and after he began to write poems an elevator boy. These facts would certainly attract me to him as a man if I knew him to have a literary ambition, but when it came to his literary art I must judge it irrespective of these facts and enjoy or endure it for what it was in itself.

It seems to me that this was my experience with the poetry of Paul Laurence Dunbar when I found it in another form and in justice to him I cannot wish that it should be otherwise with his readers here. Still it will legitimately interest those who like to know the causes or if these may not be known the sources of things to learn that the father and mother of the first poet of his race in our language were negroes without admixture of white

blood. The father escaped from slavery in Kentucky to freedom in Canada while there was still no hope of freedom otherwise, but the mother was freed by the events of the civil war and came North to Ohio where their son was born at Dayton and grew up with such chances and mischances for mental training as everywhere befall the children of the poor. He has told me that his father picked up the trade of a plasterer and when he had taught himself to read loved chiefly to read history. The boy's mother shared his passion for literature with a special love of poetry and after the father died she struggled on in more than the poverty she had shared with him. She could value the faculty which her son showed first in prose sketches and attempts at fiction and she was proud of the praise and kindness they won him among the people of the town where he has never been without the warmest and kindest friends.

In fact from every part of Ohio and from several cities of the adjoining States there came letters in cordial appreciation of the critical recognition which it was my

## INTRODUCTION

pleasure no less than my duty to offer Paul Dunbar's work in another place. It seemed to me a happy omen for him that so many people who had known him, or known of him, were glad of a stranger's good word, and it was gratifying to see that at home he was esteemed for the things he had done rather than because as the son of negro slaves he had done them. If a prophet is often without honor in his own country, it surely is nothing against him when he has it. In this case it deprived me of the glory of a discoverer, but that is sometimes a barren joy, and I am always willing to forego it.

What struck me in reading Mr Dunbar's poetry was what had already struck his friends in Ohio and Indiana, in Kentucky and Illinois. They had felt, as I felt, that however gifted his race had proven itself in music, in oratory, in several of the other arts, here was the first instance of an American negro who had evinced innate distinction in literature. In my criticism of his book I had alleged Dumas in France, and I had forgetfully failed to allege the far greater Pushkin in Russia, but these were both mulattoes, who might have been supposed to derive their qualities from white blood

vastly more artistic than ours, and who were the creatures of an environment more favorable to their literary development. So far as I could remember, Paul Dunbar was the only man of pure African blood and of American civilization to feel the negro life aesthetically and express it lyrically. It seemed to me that this had come to its most modern consciousness in him, and that his brilliant and unique achievement was to have studied the American negro objectively, and to have represented him as he found him to be, with humor, with sympathy, and yet with what the reader must instinctively feel to be entire truthfulness. I said that a race which had come to this effect in any member of it, had attained civilization in him, and I permitted myself the imaginative prophecy that the hostilities and the prejudices which had so long constrained his race were destined to vanish in the arts, that these were to be the final proof that God had made of one blood all nations of men. I thought his merits positive and not comparative, and I held that if his black poems had been written by a white man, I should not have found them less admirable. I accepted them as an evidence of the essential unity of the human race, which does not

## INTRODUCTION

think or feel black in one and white in another, but humanly in all

Yet it appeared to me then and it appears to me now that there is a precious difference of temperament between the races which it would be a great pity ever to lose and that this is best preserved and most charmingly suggested by Mr Dunbar in those pieces of his where he studies the moods and traits of his race in its own accent of our English. We call such pieces dialect pieces for want of some closer phrase but they are really not dialect so much as delightful personal attempts and failures for the written and spoken language. In nothing is his essentially refined and delicate art so well shown as in these pieces which as I ventured to say described the range between appetite and emotion with certain lifts far beyond and above it which is the range of the race. He reveals in these a finely ironical perception of the negro's limitations with a tenderness for them which I think so very rare as to be almost quite new. I should say perhaps that it was this humorous quality which Mr Dunbar had added to our literature and it would be this which would most distinguish him now and here after. It is something that one

feels in nearly all the dialect pieces and I hope that in the present collection he has kept all of these in his earlier volume and added others to them. But the contents of this book are wholly of his own choosing and I do not know how much or little he may have preferred the poems in literary English. Some of these I thought very good and even more than very good but not distinctively his contribution to the body of American poetry. What I mean is that several people might have written them but I do not know any one else at present who could quite have written the dialect pieces. These are divinations and reports of what passes in the hearts and minds of a lowly people whose poetry had hitherto been inarticulately expressed in music but now finds for the first time in our tongue literary interpretation of a very artistic completeness.

I say the event is interesting but how important it shall be can be determined only by Mr Dunbar's future performance. I can not undertake to prophesy concerning this but if he should do nothing more than he has done, I should feel that he had made the strongest claim for the negro in English literature that the negro has yet made. He has at least

## INTRODUCTION

produced something that, however we may critically disagree about it, we cannot well refuse to enjoy, in more than one piece he has produced a work of art

W. D. HOWELLS.

# INDEX OF TITLES

	PAGE		PAGE
ABSENCE	93	BARRIER THE	99
ACCOUNTABILITY	5	BEHIND THE ARRAS	94
ADVICE	250	BEIN BACK HOME	259
AFTER A VISIT	42	BEYOND THE YEARS	41
AFTER MANY DAYS	267	BLACK SAMSON OF BRANDY	
AFTER THE QUARREL	40	WINE	205
AFTER WHILE	53	BLUE	253
ALEXANDER CRUMMELL —		BOHEMIAN THE	92
DEAD	113	BOOGAH MAN THE	185
ALICE	40	BOOKER T WASHINGTON	209
ANCHORED	256	BORDER BALLAD A	48
ANGELINA	138	BOY S SUMMER SONG A	235
ANTE BELLUM SEP MON AN	13	BREAKING THE CHARM	149
APPRECIATION	247	BRIDAL MEASURE A	97
AT CANDLE LIGHTIN TIME	155	BY RUGGED WAYS	215
AT CHESHIRE CHEESE	129	BY THE STREAM	50
AT LOAFING-HOLT	263		
AT NIGHT	254	CABIN TALE A	153
AT SUNSET TIME	263	CAPTURE THE	275
AT THE TAVERN	226	CAREER A	285
AWAKENING THE	252	CHANGE HAS COME THE	58
		CHANGE THE	258
BACK LOG SONG A	143	CHANGING TIME	72
BALLAD	58	CHASE THE	258
BALLADE	204	CHOICE A	125
BANJO SONG A	20	CHRISMUS IS A COMIN	153



# INDEX OF TITLES

	PAGE		PAGE
CHRISTMAS ON THE PLANTATION .. . . .	137	DEATH OF THE FIRST BORN, THE . . .	258
CHRISTMAS . . . . .	269	DEATH SONG, A . . . . .	112
CHRISTMAS CAROL . . . . .	278	DEBT, THE . . . . .	213
CHRISTMAS FOLKSONG, A . . . . .	236	DE CRITTIES' DANCE . . . . .	181
CHRISTMAS IN THE HEART . . . . .	105	DELINQUENT, THE . . . . .	64
CIRCUMSTANCES ALTER CASES .. . . .	261	DELY . . . . .	148
COLORS BAND, THE . . . . .	178	DESERTED PLANTATION, THE . . . . .	67
COLORS SOLDIERS, THE . . . . .	50	DESPAIR . . . . .	261
COLUMBIAN ODE . . . . .	47	DE WAY THINGS COME . . . . .	225
COMMUNION . . . . .	110	DIFFERENCES . . . . .	192
COMPARISON . . . . .	59	DILETTANTE, THE . . . . .	
COMPENSATION . . . . .	256	MODERN TYPE . . . . .	49
CONFESSIONAL . . . . .	116	DINAH KNEADING DOUGH . . . . .	188
CONFIDENCE, A . . . . .	73	DIPLOMACY . . . . .	238
CONQUERORS, THE . . . . .	112	DIRGE . . . . .	66
CONSCIENCE AND REMORSE . . . . .	31	DIRGE FOR A SOLDIER . . . . .	199
COQUETTE CONQUERED, A . . . . .	62	DISAPPOINTED . . . . .	60
CORN-SONG, A . . . . .	59	DISCOVERED . . . . .	60
CORN-STALK FIDDLE, THE . . . . .	16	DISCOVERY, THE . . . . .	251
CRISIS, THE . . . . .	111	DISTINCTION . . . . .	114
CURIOSITY . . . . .	241	DISTURBER, THE . . . . .	131
CURTAIN . . . . .	42	DOUGLASS . . . . .	208
		DOVE, THE . . . . .	167
DANCE, THE .. . . .	170	DREAM SONG I . . . . .	104
DAT OL' MARE O' MINE . . . . .	189	DREAM SONG II . . . . .	104
DAWN . . . . .	65	DREAMER, THE . . . . .	100
DAY . . . . .	248	DREAMIN' TOWN . . . . .	254
DEACON JONES' GRIEVANCE . . . . .	39	DREAMS . . . . .	100
DEAD . . . . .	73	DREAMS . . . . .	166
DEATH .. . . .	227	DRIZZLE . . . . .	180

# INDEX OF TITLES

	PAGE		PAGE
DROWSY DAY A	65	GOOD NIGHT	61
		GOURD THE	107
EASY GOIN FELLER AN	49	GRIEVANCE A	188
ENCOURAGED	238	GROWIN GRAY	80
ENCOURAGEMENT	184		
END OF THE CHAPTER THE	101	HARRIET BEECHER STOWE	119
EQUIPMENT	276	HAUNTED OAK THE	219
ERE SLEEP COMES DOWN TO		HE HAD HIS DREAM	61
SOOTHE THE WEARY EYES	3	HER THOUGHT AND HIS	93
EVENING	276	HOPE	247
EXPECTATION	131	HOW LUCY BACKSLID	158
		HOW SHALL I WOO THEE	289
FAITH	244	HOWDY HONEY HOWDY <sup>1</sup>	196
FAREWELL TO ARCADY	123	HUNTING SONG	150
FARM CHILD S LULLABY		HYMN	66
THE	245	HYMN	133
FISHER CHILD S LULLABY		HYMN A	98
THE	244		
FISHING	172	IF	75
FLORIDA NIGHT A	191	IONE	31
FOOLIN WID DE SEASONS	139	IN AN ENGLISH GARDEN	111
FOR THE MAN WHO FAILS	118	IN AUGUST	130
FOREST GREETING THE	237	IN MAY	166
FOREVER	240	IN SUMMER	91
FOUNT OF TEARS THE	224	IN SUMMER TIME	280
FREDERICK DOUGLASS	6	IN THE MORNING	190
FROLIC A	200	IN THE TENTS OF AKBAR	223
FROM THE PORCH AT		INSPIRATION	179
RUNNYMEDE	275	INVITATION TO LOVE	61
		ITCHING HEELS	222
GARRET THE	96		
GOLDEN DAY A	251	JAMES WHITCOMB RILEY	287

# INDEX OF TITLES

	PAGE		PAGE
JEALOUS	145	LOOKING-GLASS, THE	206
JILTED	136	LOST DREAM, A	270
JOGGIN' ERLONG	165	LOVE	103
JOHNNY SPEAKS	235	LOVE AND GRIEF	102
JUST WHISTLE A BIT	98	LOVE DESPOILED	122
		LOVE LETTER, A . . .	266
KEEP A-PLUGGIN' AWAY	46	LOVE-SONG . . .	210
KEEP A SONG UP ON DE WAY	169	LOVE SONG, A	222
KIDNAPED . . .	255	LOVER AND THE MOON,	
KING IS DEAD, THE	105	THE . . .	29
KNIGHT, THE	108	LOVER'S LANE . . .	132
		LOVE'S APOTHEOSIS	89
LAPSE, THE	122	LOVE'S CASTLE	201
LAWYERS' WAYS, THE	22	LOVE'S DRAFT	252
LAZY DAY, A	249	LOVE'S HUMILITY .	106
LESSON, THE	8	LOVE'S PHASES .	117
LETTER, A	151	LOVE'S PICTURES	282
LIFE .	8	LOVE'S SEASONS	215
LIFE'S TRAGEDY	225	LULLABY . . .	144
LI'L' GAL	207	LYRIC, A .	288
LILY OF THE VALLEY, THE	237		
LIMITATIONS	250	MADRIGAL, A .	287
LINCOLN	184	MARE RUBRUM .	110
LITTLE BROWN BABY	134	MASTER-PLAYER, THE	17
LITTLE CHRISTMAS BASKET,		MASTERS, THE	268
A	174	MEADOW LARK, THE	71
LITTLE LUCY LANDMAN	107	MELANCHOLIA	54
LIZA MAY .	267	MEMORY OF MARTHA, THE	194
LONESOME	79	MERRY AUTUMN	56
LONG AGO	192	MISTY DAY, A .	207
'LONG TO'DS NIGHT	187	MISAPPREHENSION .	117
LONGING .	21	MONK'S WALK, THE .	209

# INDEX OF TITLES

	PAGE		PAGE
MORNING	252	OLD MEMORY, AN	284
MORNING SONG OF LOVE	202	OL' TUNES THE	53
MORTALITY	103	ON A CLEAN BOOK	202
MY CORN COB PIPE	129	ON THE DEATH OF W C	284
MY LADY OF CASTLE GRAND	180	ON THE DEDICATION OF	
MY LITTLE MARCH GIRL	120	DOROTHY HALL	214
MY SORT O MAN	140	ON THE RIVER	285
MY SWEET BROWN GAL	176	ON THE ROAD	142
MYSTERY THE	17	ON THE SEA WALL	115
MYSTIC SEA THE	91	ONE LIFE	72
MURDERED LOVER THE	211	OPPORTUNITY	242
MUSICAL A	253	OVER THE HILLS	90
NATURE AND ART	52	PARADOX THE	89
NEGRO LOVE SONG A	49	PARTED	240
NEWS THE	136	PARTED	145
NIGHT	263	PARTY, THE	83
NIGHT DIM NIGHT	227	PASSION AND LOVE	11
NIGHT OF LOVE	46	PATH THE	21
NODDIN BY DE FIRE	201	PHANTOM KISS THE	109
NOON	226	PHILOSOPHY	212
NORA A SERENADE	62	PHOTOGRAPH THE	144
NOT THEY WHO SOAR	18	PHYLLIS	74
NUTTING SONG	282	PLACE WHERE THE RAIN	
		BOW ENDS THE	246
OCTOBER	63	PLANTATION CHILD S LUL	
ODE FOR MEMORIAL DAY	22	LABY THE	241
ODE TO ETHIOPIA	15	PLANTATION PORTRAIT A	173
OLD APPLE TREE THE	10	PLANTATION MELODY A	193
OLD CABIN THE	260	PLEA A	167
OLD FRONT GATE THE	199	POET AND HIS SONG THE	4
OLD HOMESTEAD THE	283	POET AND THE BABY, THE	114

# INDEX OF TITLES

	PAGE		PAGE
POET, THE . . .	191	RIVER OF RUIN, THE	265
POOL, THE . . .	198	ROADWAY, A	214
POOR WITHERED ROSE . . .	286	ROBERT GOULD SHAW	221
POSSESSION	198	ROSES	221
POSSUM . . .	141	ROSES AND PEARLS	270
POSSUM TROT	147		
PRAYER, A	14	SAILOR'S SONG, A	92
PRECEDENT . . .	106	SAND-MAN, THE	235
PREFERENCE, A . . .	213	SCAMP	239
PREMONITION . . . . .	23	SECRET, THE	68
PREPARATION . . .	67	SEEDLING, THE	12
PROMETHEUS . . .	117	SHE GAVE ME A ROSE	103
PROMISE . . .	12	SHE TOLD HER BEADS	106
PROTEST . . .	133	SHIPS THAT PASS IN THE	
PUTTIN' THE BABY AWAY . . .	243	NIGHT	64
		SIGNS OF THE TIMES	77
QUILTING, THE . . . . .	240	SILENCE	186
		SLOW THROUGH THE DARK	211
RAIN-SONGS . . .	270	SNOWIN'	168
REAL QUESTION, THE . . .	135	SOLILOQUY OF A TURKEY	171
RELIGION . . . . .	38	SONG	13
RELUCTANCE . . .	203	SONG	178
REMEMBERED . . . . .	121	SONG, A	248
RESIGNATION . . . . .	106	SONG, A . . . . .	271
RESPONSE . . .	175	SONG OF SUMMER . . .	26
RETORT . . . . .	5	SONG, THE . . .	76
RETROSPECTION . . . . .	24	SONNET	115
RIDING TO TOWN . . .	70	SPARROW, THE	78
RIGHT TO DIE, THE . . .	94	SPEAKIN' AT DE' COU'T-	
RIGHT'S SECURITY	75	HOUSE . . . . .	205
RISING OF THE STORM, THE	8	SPEAKIN' O' CHRISTMAS	78
RIVALS, THE . . . . .	27	SPELLIN'-BEE, THE . . .	42

# INDEX OF TITLES

	PAGE		PAGE
SPIRITUAL, A	194	To J Q	238
SPRING FEVER	176	To LOUISE	26
SPRING SONG	26	To PFRIMMER	277
SPRING WOOLING A	164	To THE EASTERN SHORE	202
STARRY NIGHT A	288	To THE MEMORY OF MARY	
SUMMER NIGHT A	262	YOUNG	81
STIRRUP CUP THE	125	To THE MIAMI	277
SUMMER PASTORAL A	279	To THE ROAD	163
SUMMER S NIGHT A	64	To THE SOUTH	216
SUM THE	114	TRouble IN DE KITCHEN	268
SUNSET	9	TRYST THE	166
SUPPOSE	258	TURNING OF THE BABIES IN	
SYMPATHY	102	THE BED THE	170
		TWELL DE NIGHT IS PAS	253
TEMPTATION	146	TWILIGHT	241
THANKSGIVING POEM A	281	TWO LITTLE BOOTS	163
THEN AND NOW	129	TWO SONGS	19
THEOLOGY	106		
THOU ART MY LUTE	109	UNEXPRESSED	25
TILL THE WIND GETS		UNLUCKY APPLE THE	251
RIGHT	262	UNSUNG HEROES THE	196
TIME TO TINKER ROUN ' I	135		
TO A CAPTIOUS CRITIC	189	VAGRANTS	119
TO A LADY PLAYING THE		VALE THE	175
HARP	116	VENGEANCE IS SWEET	98
TO A DEAD FRIEND	216	VETERAN, THE	256
TO A VIOLET FOUND ON ALL		VOICE OF THE BANJO THE	124
SAINTS DAY	179	VISITOR THE	177
TO AN INGRATE	223		
TO DAN	248	WADIN IN DE CREEK	239
TO E H K.	97	WAITING	100
TO HER	266	WARM DAY IN WINTER A	168

# INDEX OF TITLES

	PAGE		PAGE
WE WEAR THE MASK	71	WHIP-POOR-WILL AND	
WARRIOR'S PRAYER, THE	123	KATY-DID . . .	186
WELTSCHMERTZ	220	WHISTLING SAM . . .	156
W'EN I GITS HOME	195	WHITTIER . . .	18
WHAT'S THE USE	249	WHY FADES A DREAM?	77
WHEN A FELLER'S ITCHIN'		WIND AND THE SEA, THE	69
TO BE SPANKED	264	WINTER-SONG . . .	236
WHEN ALL IS DONE	113	WINTER'S APPROACH . . .	256
WHEN DE CO'N PONE'S HOR	57	WINTER'S DAY, A . . .	120
WHEN DEY 'LISTED COL-		WITH THE LARK . . .	90
ORED SOLDIERS	182	WOONG, THE . . .	55
WHEN MALINDY SINGS	82	WORN OUT . . . . .	286
WHEN SAM'L SINGS . . .	208	WRAITH, THE . . .	186
WHEN THE OLD MAN		YESTERDAY AND TO-MOR-	
SMOKES . . . . .	95	ROW . . . . .	257
WHEN WINTER DARKENING			
ALL AROUND . . . . .	275		

## INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGES
A bee that was searching for sweets one day	19
A blue bell springs upon the ledge	26
A cloud fell down from the heavens	288
A crust of bread and a corner to sleep in	8
A hush is over all the teeming lists	6
A knock is at her door but she is weak	73
A life was mine full of the close concern	103
A lilt and a swing	226
A little bird with plumage brown	78
A little dreaming by the way	114
A lover whom duty called over the wave	29
A maiden wept and as a comforter	11
A man of low degree was sore oppressed	111
A song for the unsung heroes who rose in the country's need	196
A song is but a little thing	4
A youth went farming up and down	55
Across the hills and down the narrow ways	120
Adown the west a golden glow	263
Ah Douglass we have fall'n on evil days	208
Ah I have changed I do not know	270
Ah love my love is like a cry in the night	222
Ah me it is cold and chill	186
Ah Nora my Nora the light fades away	62
Ah yes 't is sweet still to remember,	31
Ah yes, the chapter ends to day	101
Ain't it nice to have a mammy	239
Ain't nobody tol' you not a word a tall	181



# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Air a-gittin' cool an' coolah . . . . .	77
All de night long twell de moon goes down . . . . .	253
All hot and grimy from the road . . . . .	224
Along by the river of ruin . . . . .	265
An angel robed in spotless white . . . . .	65
An old man planted and dug and tended . . . . .	60
An old, worn harp that had been played . . . . .	17
As a quiet little seedling . . . . .	12
As in some dim baronial hall restrained . . . . .	94
As lone I sat one summer's day . . . . .	122
As some rapt gazer on the lowly earth . . . . .	106
Ashes to ashes, dust unto dust . . . . .	103
At the golden gate of song . . . . .	179
Aye, lay him in his grave, the old dead year! . . . . .	105
Back to the breast of thy mother . . . . .	113
Because I had loved so deeply . . . . .	256
Because you love me I have much achieved . . . . .	238
Bedtime's come fu' little boys . . . . .	144
Belated wanderer of the ways of spring . . . . .	179
Beyond the years the answer lies . . . . .	41
Bird of my lady's bower . . . . .	19
Bones a-gittin' achy . . . . .	153
Break me my bounds, and let me fly . . . . .	285
Breezes blowin' middlin' brisk . . . . .	78
Bring me the livery of no other man . . . . .	92
By Mystic's banks I held my dream . . . . .	204
By rugged ways and thro' the night . . . . .	215
By the pool that I see in my dreams, dear love . . . . .	198
By the stream I dream in calm delight, and watch as in a glass . . . . .	50
Caught Susanner whistlin', well . . . . .	149

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Come away to dreamin town	254
Come drink a stirrup cup with me	125
Come essay a sprightly measure	97
Come on walkin wid me Lucy, t ain t no time to mope erroun	164
Come to the pane draw the curtain apart	120
Come when the nights are bright with stars	61
Cool is the wind for the summer is waning	163
Cover him over with daisies white	258
Daih s a moughty soothin feelin	187
Darling my darling my heart is on the wing	202
Days git wa m an wa'mah	239
De axes has been ringin in de woods de blessid day	143
De breeze is blowin cross de bay	145
De cession s stahted on de gospel way	194
De da'kest hour dey allus say	165
De dog go howlin long de road	247
De night creep down erlong de lan	166
De ol time's gone de new times hyeah	192
De sun hit shine an de win hit blow	256
De times is mighty stirrin mong de people up ouah way	158
De trees is bendin' in de sto m	193
De way t ings come hit seems to me	225
De win is blowin' wahmah	236
De win is hollahin' ' Daih you to de shuttahn in de fiah	174
Dear critic, who my lightness so deplores	189
Dear heart good night!	23
Dear Miss Lucy I been t ink in dat I d write you long fo dis	151
Deep in my heart that aches with the repression	25
Dey been speakin at de cou t house	205
Dey had a gread big pahty down to Tom s de othah night	83
Dey is snow upon the meddahs	168

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Dey is times in life when Nature . . . . .	57
Dey was oncet a awful quail 'twixt de skillet an' de pot	268
Dey was talkin' in de cabin, dey was talkin' in de hall .	182
Dey's a so't o' threatenin' feelin' in de blowin' of de breeze .	171
Dinah stan' befo' de glass . . . . .	206
Dis is gospel weathah sho'— . . . . .	26
Do' a-stan'in' on a jar, fiah a-shinin' thoo .	196
Dolly sits a-quilting by her mother, stitch by stitch .	240
Done are the toils and the wearisome marches . . . . .	22
Dream days of fond delight and hours . . . . .	287
Dream on, for dreams are sweet . . . . .	100
Driftwood gathered here and there . . . . .	277
Duck come switchin' 'cross de lot . . . . .	275
Ef dey's anyt'ing dat riles me . . . . .	141
Ef you's only got de powah fe' to blow a little whistle . .	250
Eight of 'em hyeah all tol' an' yet . . . . .	243
Emblem of blasted hope and lost desire . . . . .	115
Ere sleep comes down to soothe the weary eyes . . . .	3
Folks ain't got no right to censuah othah folks about dey habits	5
Folks is talkin' 'bout de money, 'bout de silvah an' de gold .	135
Four hundred years ago a tangled waste . . . . .	47
Fu' de peace o' my eachin' heels, set down . . . . .	222
God has his plans, and what if we . . . . .	81
"Good-bye," I said to my conscience . . . . .	31
Goo'-by, Jinks, I got to hump . . . . .	64
Good hunting! — aye, good hunting	237
Good-night, my love, for I have dreamed of thee . . .	93
Granny's gone a-visitin' . . . . .	242
Grass commence a-comin' . . . . .	176

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Gray are the pages of record	205
Gray is the palace where she dwells	180
G way an quit dat noise, Miss Lucy	82
Hain t you see my Mandy Lou	173
He had his dream and all through life	61
He loved her and through many years	129
He sang of life serenely sweet	191
He scribbles some in prose and verse	49
Heart of my heart the day is chill	207
Heart of the Southland heed me pleading now	216
Heel and toe heel and toe	170
Hello ole man you re a gittin gray	80
Hits been drizzlin an been sprinklin	180
Home agin an home to stay	259
How shall I woo thee to win thee mine own?	289
How sweet the music sounded	284
How s a man to write a sonnet can you tell	114
Hurt was the nation with a mighty wound	184
Hyeah come Cæsar Higgins	145
Hyeah dat singin in de medders	208
I am but clay the sinner plead	114
I am no priest of crooks nor creeds	38
I am the mother of sorrows	89
I be n down in ole Kentucky	42
I been t inkin bout de preachah whut he said de othah night	212
I did not know that life could be so sweet	252
I done got uligion honey an I s happy ez a king	146
I don t believe in ristercrats	140
I grew a rose once more to please mine eyes	13
I grew a rose within a garden fair	12

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
I had not known before . . . . .	240
I has hyeahd o' people dancin' an' I's hyeahd o' people singin' . .	156
I have no fancy for that ancient cant . . . . .	94
I have seen full many a sight . . . . .	188
I held my heart so far from harm . . . . .	255
I found you and I lost you . . . . .	251
I know a man . . . . .	235
I know my love is true . . . . .	58
I know what the caged bird feels, alas! . . . . .	102
I never shall furgit that night when father hitched up Dobbin . .	42
I sit upon the old sea wall . . . . .	115
I stand above the city's rush and din . . . . .	275
I stood by the shore at the death of day . . . . .	69
I think that though the clouds be dark . . . . .	53
I was not, now I am — a few days hence . . . . .	17
If Death should claim me for her own to-day . . . . .	210
If life were but a dream, my Love . . . . .	75
If the muse were mine to tempt it . . . . .	50
If thro' the sea of night which here surrounds me . . . . .	256
If 'twere fair to suppose . . . . .	258
If you could sit with me beside the sea to-day . . . . .	21
In a small and lonely cabin out of noisy traffic's way . . . . .	124
In de dead of night I sometimes . . . . .	260
In Life's Red Sea with faith I plant my feet . . . . .	110
In the east the morning comes . . . . .	199
In the heavy earth the miner . . . . .	107
In the forenoon's restful quiet . . . . .	95
In the silence of my heart . . . . .	110
In this sombre garden close . . . . .	209
In the tents of Akbar . . . . .	223
In this old garden, fair, I walk to-day . . . . .	111
I's a-gittin' weary of de way dat people do . . . . .	244

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
I s boun' to see my gal to-night	142
I s feelin' linn o' lonesome in my little room to-night	202
It is as if a silver chord	216
It may be misery not to sing at all	2-5
It was Christmas Eve I mind hit fu' a mighty gloomy day	137
It s all a farce — these tales they tell	56
It s hot to-day The bees is buzzin'	279
It s moughty tiahsome layin' roun'	195
I ve a humble little motto	46
I ve always been a faithful man	267
I ve been list'nin' to them lawyers	22
I ve been watchin' of em parson	39
I ve journeyed roun' consid'able a-seein' men an' things	147
Jes lak toddy wahms you thoo	148
Just whistle a bit if the day be dark	98
Key and bar key and bar	201
Kiss me Miami thou most constant one!	277
Know you winds that blow your course	40
Lay me down beneaf de willers in de grass	142
Lead gently Lord and slow	98
Let me close the eyes of my soul	261
Let those who will stride on their barren roads	214
Lias! Lias! Bless de Lawd!	190
Like sea washed sand upon the shore	202
Like the blush upon the rose	282
Little brown baby wif sparklin' eyes	134
Little brown face full of smiles	267
Little lady at de do	177
Long had I grieved at what I deemed abuse	106
Long since, in sore distress I heard one pray	123

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Long time ago, we too set out . . . . .	119
Long years ago, within a distant clime	104
Love hath the wings of the butterfly	117
Love is the light of the world, my dear .	231
Love me I care not what the circling years .	89
Love used to carry a bow, you know .	258
Lucy done gone back on me . . .	136
Mammy's in de kitchen, an' de do' is shet .	241
Mastah drink his ol' Made'a . . . .	213
Men may sing of their Havanas, elevating to the stars	129
Mother's gone a-visitin' to spend a month er two .	79
My cot was down by a cypress grove . . . .	8
My heart to thy heart . . . . .	13
My lady love lives far away . . . . .	288
My muvver's ist the nicest one . . . . .	247
My neighbor lives on the hill . . . . .	192
My soul, lost in the music's mist . . . .	76
Night, dim night, and it rains, my love, it rains	227
Night is for sorrow and dawn is for joy	90
Not o'er thy dust let there be spent	18
No matter what you call it . . . . .	287
Not they who soar, but they who plod . . .	18
Not to the midnight of the gloomy past	214
O li'l' lamb out in de col' . . . . .	133
O Lord, the hard-won miles . . . . .	11
O Mother Race! to thee I bring	15
October is the treasurer of the year . . .	63
Oh, de clouds is mighty heavy	169
Oh, de grubbin'-hoe's a-rustin' in de co'nah	67
Oh, de weathah it is balmy an' de breeze is sighin' low .	207

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Oh dere's lots o keer an trouble	20
Oh for the breath of the briny deep	92
Oh I am hurt to death my Love	72
Oh I des received a letter f om de sweetest little gal	266
Oh I haven t got long to live for we all	48
Oh summer has clothed the earth	91
Oh the breeze is blowin balmy	262
Oh the day has set me dreaming	107
Oh the little bird is rockin in the cradle of the wind	245
Oh the poets may sing of their Lady Irenes	26
Oh to have you in May	166
Oh what shall I do? I am wolly upset	131
Oh who is the Lord of the land of life	268
Oh who would be sad tho the sky be a graving	236
Oh wind of the spring time oh free wind of May	221
On a summer s day as I sat by a stream	248
On the wide veranda white	59
Once Love grew bold and arrogant of air	102
One night in my room still and beamless	109
Our good knight Ted girds his broadsword on	108
Out in de night a sad bird moans	194
Out in the sky the great dark clouds are massing	64
Out of my heart, one day, I wrote a song	117
Out of my heart one treach rous winter s day	102
Out of the sunshine and out of the heat	167
Outside the rain upon the street	253
Over the hills and the valleys of dreaming	90
Phyllis ah Phyllis my life is a gray day	74
Place this bunch of mignonette	66
Poor withered rose she gave it me	286
Pray what can dreams avail	104



# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Pray why are you so bare, so bare . . . . .	219
Prometheus stole from Heaven the sacred fire . . . . .	117
Ring out, ye bells! . . . . .	278
Round the wide earth, from the red field your valour has won	112
Say a mass for my soul's repose, my brother . . . . .	211
Search thou my heart . . . . .	116
See dis pictyah in my han' . . . . .	144
Seems lak folks is mighty curus . . . . .	139
Seen my lady home las' night . . . . .	49
Seen you down at chu'ch las' night . . . . .	60
Shadder in de valley . . . . .	226
She gave a rose . . . . .	103
She sang, and I listened the whole song thro' . . . . .	121
She told the story, and the whole world wept . . . . .	119
She told her beads with downcast eyes . . . . .	106
She wrapped her soul in a lace of lies . . . . .	240
Silence, and whirling worlds afar . . . . .	263
Silently without my window . . . . .	54
Since I left the city's heat . . . . .	263
Slow de night's a-fallin' . . . . .	186
Slow moves the pageant of a climbing race . . . . .	211
So we, who 've supped the selfsame cup . . . . .	40
Some folks t'inks hit's right an' p'opah . . . . .	201
Standin' at de winder . . . . .	253
Step me now a bridal measure . . . . .	248
Step wid de banjo an' glide wid de fiddle, . . . . .	269
Storm and strife and stress . . . . .	227
Summah night an' sighin' breeze . . . . .	132
Summah's nice, wif sun a-shinin' . . . . .	132
Summer is de lovin' time . . . . .	262

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Sunshine on de medders	168
Sweetest of the flowers a blooming	237
Swing yo lady roun' an roun	200
Tek a cool night good an cleah	150
Tell your love where the roses blow	238
Temples he built and palaces of air	100
The air is dark the sky is gray	65
The change has come and Helen sleeps	58
The cloud looked in at the window	72
The draft of love was cool and sweet	252
The gray dawn on the mountain top	248
The gray of the sea and the gray of the sky	93
The lake s dark breast	8
The lark is silent in his nest	61
The little bird sits in the nest and sings	67
The Midnight wooed the Morning Star	99
The mist has left the greenning plain	252
The moon begins her stately ride	276
The moon has left the sky love	46
The night is dewy as a maiden s mouth	64
The November sun invites me	282
The poor man went to the rich man s doors	106
The rain streams down like harpstrings from the sky	270
The river sleeps beneath the sky	9
The sand man he s a jolly old fellow	235
The sky of brightest gray seems dark	59
The smell of the sea in my nostrils	91
The snow lies deep upon the ground	105
The sun has slipped his tether	100
The sun hath shed its kindly light	281
The sun is low	285

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
The trees bend down along the stream . . .	249
The wind is out in its rage to-night .	244
The wind told the little leaves to hurry	258
The word is writ that he who runs may read .	209
The world is a snob, and the man who wins .	118
The young queen Nature, ever sweet and fair	52
Ther' ain't no use in all this strife . . .	49
There are no beaten paths to Glory's height . .	21
There is a heaven, for ever, day by day . . .	106
There's a fabulous story . . . . .	246
There's a memory keeps a-runnin'	10
These are the days of elfs and fays .	251
They please me not — these solemn songs . . .	125
This is the debt I pay . . . . .	213
This is to-day, a golden summer's day . .	223
This poem must be done to-day . . .	122
Thou arrant robber, Death! . . .	284
"Thou art a fool," said my head to my heart . . .	5
Thou art my lute, by thee I sing	109
Thou art the soul of a summer's day .	271
Though the winds be dank . . . . .	71
Thy tones are silver melted into sound .	116
Tim Murphy's gon' walkin' wid Maggie O'Neill .	261
'Tis an old deserted homestead .	283
'Tis better to set here beside the sea . .	186
'Tis fine to play	235
To me, like hauntings of a vagrant breath	97
Treat me nice, Miss Mandy Jane	167
'Twas the apple that in Eden .	251
'Twas three an' thirty year ago . . . . .	27
'Twixt a smile and a tear . . . . .	241
Two little boots all rough an' wo' . . . . .	163

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
Uncle John he makes me tired	73
Underneath the autumn sky	256
 Villain shows his indiscretion	 42
 Want to trade me do you mist'ah? Oh well now I reckon not	 189
We is gathahed hyeah my brothahs	13
We wear the mask that grins and lies	71
W en d'uh s chillun in de house	199
W en de clouds is hangin heavy in de sky	176
W en de colo ed ban comes marchin down de street	178
W en de evenin shadders	185
W en de snow s a fallin	188
W en I git up in de mo nin an de clouds is big an black	172
W en us fellers stomp around makin lots o noise	264
W en you full o worry	250
What are the things that make life bright?	238
What dreams we have and how they fly	166
What if the wind do howl without	75
What says the wind to the waving trees?	68
What s the use o folks a frownin	249
When all is done and my last word is said	113
When August days are hot an dry	130
When de fiddle gits to singin out a ol' Vahginny reel	138
When first of wise old Johnson taught	129
When I come in f m de co n fiel aftah wo kin' had all day	155
When I was young I longed for Love	98
When labor is light and the morning is fair	70
When Phyllis sighs and from her eyes	175
When storms arise	66
When summer time has come and all	280
When the bees are humming in the honeysuckle vine	215

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

	PAGE
When the corn's all cut and the bright stalks shine . . .	16
When to sweet music my lady is dancing . . .	175
When winter covering all the ground .	275
When you and I were young, the days .	24
Who dat knockin' at de do'? . . .	184
Who say my hea't ain't true to you? . . .	133
Whose little lady is you, chile .	198
Whut dat you whisperin' keepin' f'om me? . . .	136
Whut time 'd dat clock strike? . . .	254
Whut you say, dah? huh, uh! chile . . . .	153
Why fades a dream? . . . . .	77
Why was it that the thunder voice of Fate .	221
Will I have some mo' dat pie? . . . .	203
Win' a-blowin' gentle so de san' lay low . .	191
Wintah, summah, snow er shine .	178
Wintah time hit comin' .	241
With sombre mien, the evening gray .	123
With what thou gavest me, O Master .	276
Within a London garret high .	96
Woman's sho' a cur'ous critter, an' dev ain't no doubtin' dat .	170
Yes, my ha't 's ez ha'd ez stone .	62
Yesterday I held your hand .	257
You ask why I am sad to-day .	220
You bid me hold my peace . . .	286
You kin talk about yer anthems .	53
You'll be wonderin' whut's de reason .	131
Your presence like a benison to me .	266
Your spoken words are roses fine and sweet .	270

## LYRICS OF LOWLY LIFE



ERE SLEEP COMES DOWN  
TO SOOTHE THE  
WEARY EYES

Ere sleep comes down to soothe the  
weary eyes

Which all the day with cease-  
less care have sought

The magic gold which from the  
seeker flies

Ere dreams put on the gown  
and cap of thought

And make the waking world a  
world of lies —

Of lies most palpable, uncouth,  
forlorn

That say life's full of aches and  
tears and sighs —

Oh how with more than dreams  
the soul is torn

Ere sleep comes down to soothe the  
weary eyes

Ere sleep comes down to soothe the  
weary eyes

How all the griefs and heart  
aches we have known

Come up like poisonous vapors that  
arise

From some base witch's caldron  
when the crone

To work some potent spell her  
magic plies

The past which held its share of  
bitter pain

Whose ghost we prayed that Time  
might exorcise

Comes up is lived and suffered  
o'er again

Ere sleep comes down to soothe the  
weary eyes

Ere sleep comes down to soothe the  
weary eyes

What phantoms fill the dimly  
lighted room

What ghostly shades in awe creat-  
ing guise

Are bodied forth within the  
teeming gloom

What echoes faint of sad and soul  
sick cries

And pangs of vague inexplicable  
pain

That pay the spirit's ceaseless en-  
terprise

Come thronging through the  
chambers of the brain,

Ere sleep comes down to soothe the  
weary eyes

Ere sleep comes down to soothe the  
weary eyes

Where ranges forth the spirit  
far and free?

Through what strange realms and  
unfamiliar skies

Tends her far course to lands of  
mystery?



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

To lands unspeakable — beyond  
surmise,

Where shapes unknowable to  
being spring,

Till, faint of wing, the Fancy fails  
and dies

Much wearied with the spirit's  
journeying,

Ere sleep comes down to soothe the  
weary eyes

Ere sleep comes down to soothe the  
weary eyes,

How questioneth the soul that  
other soul,—

The inner sense which neither  
cheats nor lies,

But self exposes unto self, a  
scroll

Full writ with all life's acts un-  
wise or wise,

In characters indelible and  
known,

So, trembling with the shock of  
sad surprise,

The soul doth view its awful  
self alone,

Ere sleep comes down to soothe  
the weary eyes

When sleep comes down to seal the  
weary eyes,

The last dear sleep whose soft  
embrace is balm,

And whom sad sorrow teaches us  
to prize

For kissing all our passions into  
calm,

Ah, then, no more we heed the sad  
world's cries,

Or seek to probe th' eternal mys-  
tery,

Or fret our souls at long-withheld  
replies,

At glooms through which our  
visions cannot see,

When sleep comes down to seal the  
weary eyes

## THE POET AND HIS SONG

A SONG is but a little thing,

And yet what joy it is to sing!

In hours of toil it gives me zest,

And when at eve I long for rest,

When cows come home along the  
bars,

And in the fold I hear the bell,  
As Night, the shepherd, herds his  
stars,

I sing my song, and all is well.

There are no ears to hear my lays,

No lips to lift a word of praise,

But still, with faith unfaltering,

I live and laugh and love and sing.

What matters yon unheeding  
throng?

They cannot feel my spirit's  
spell,

Since life is sweet and love is long,

I sing my song, and all is well.

My days are never days of ease;

I till my ground and prune my  
trees.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

When ripened gold is all the plain  
I put my sickle to the grain  
I labor hard and toil and sweat  
While others dream within the  
dell

But even while my brow is wet  
I sing my song and all is well

Sometimes the sun unkindly hot  
My garden makes a desert spot  
Sometimes a blight upon the tree  
Takes all my fruit away from me  
And then with throes of bitter pain  
Rebellious passions rise and  
swell

But—life is more than fruit or  
grain  
And so I sing and all is well

### RETORT

THOU art a fool said my head  
to my heart  
Indeed the greatest of fools thou  
art

To be led astray by the trick of  
a tress

By a smiling face or a ribbon  
smart

And my heart was in sore dis-  
tress.

Then Phyllis came by, and her face  
was fair

The light gleamed soft on her  
raven hair

And her lips were blooming a  
rosy red

Then my heart spoke out with a  
right bold air  
'Thou art worse than a fool O  
head'

### ACCOUNTABILITY

FOLKS ain't got no right to cen-  
suah othah folks about dey  
habits

Him dat giv de squir ls de bush  
tails made de bobtails fu de  
rabbits

Him dat built de gread big moun-  
tains hollered out de little  
valleys

Him dat made de streets an drive  
ways wasn't shamed to make  
de alleys

We is all constructed diffent  
d ain't no two of us de same

We can't he p ouah likes an dis-  
likes ef we se bad we ain't to  
blame

Ef we se good we need n't show  
off case you bet it ain't ouah  
doin

We gits into su ttain channels dat  
we jes can't he p pu suin

But we all fits into places dat no  
othah ones could fill

An we does the things we has to  
big er little good er ill

John can't tek de place o Henry  
Su an Sally ain't alike

Bass ain't nuthin like a suckah  
chub ain't nuthin /like a pike

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

When you come to think about it,  
how it's all planned out it's  
splendid

Nuthin's done er evah happens,  
'dout hit's somefin' dat's in-  
tended,

Don't keer whut you does, you has  
to, an' hit sholy beats de  
dickens,—

Viney, go put on de kittle, I got  
one o' mastah's chickens.

## FREDERICK DOUGLASS

A HUSH is over all the teeming  
lists,

And there is pause, a breath-  
space in the strife,

A spirit brave has passed beyond  
the mists

And vapors that obscure the sun  
of life

And Ethiopia, with bosom torn,  
Laments the passing of her no-  
blest born

She weeps for him a mother's  
burning tears—

She loved him with a mother's  
deepest love

He was her champion thro' direful  
years,

And held her weal all other ends  
above

When Bondage held her bleeding  
in the dust,

He raised her up and whispered,  
“Hope and Trust”

For her his voice, a fearless clarion,  
rung

That broke in warning on the  
ears of men;

For her the strong bow of his  
power he strung,

And sent his arrows to the very  
den

Where grim Oppression held his  
bloody place

And gloated o'er the mis'ries of a  
race

And he was no soft-tongued apolo-  
gist,

He spoke straightforward, fear-  
lessly uncowed,

The sunlight of his truth dispelled  
the mist,

And set in bold relief each dark  
hued cloud,

To sin and crime he gave their  
proper hue,

And hurled at evil what was evil's  
due

Through good and ill report he  
cleaved his way

Right onward, with his face set  
toward the heights,

Nor feared to face the foeman's  
dread array,—

The lash of scorn, the sting of  
petty spites

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

He dared the lightning in the  
lightnings track

And answered thunder with his  
thunder back

When men maligned him and  
their torrent wrath

In furious imprecations o'er him  
broke

He kept his counsel as he kept his  
path

T was for his race not for him  
self he spoke

He knew the import of his Mas-  
ter's call

And felt himself too mighty to be  
small

No miser in the good he held was  
he,—

His kindness followed his hon-  
or's rim

His heart his talents and his  
hands were free

To all who truly needed aught  
of him.

Where poverty and ignorance  
were rife

He gave his bounty as he gave his  
life

The place and cause that first  
aroused his might

Still proved its power until his  
latest day

In Freedom's lists and for the aid  
of Right

Still in the foremost rank he  
waged the fray

Wrong lived his occupation was  
not gone.

He died in action with his armor  
on!

We weep for him but we have  
touched his hand

And felt the magic of his pres-  
ence nigh

The current that he sent through  
out the land

The kindling spirit of his battle  
cry

O'er all that holds us we shall tri-  
umph yet

And place our banner where his  
hopes were set!

Oh Douglass thou hast passed  
beyond the shore

But still thy voice is ringing o'er  
the gale!

Thou hast taught thy race how high  
her hopes may soar

And bade her seek the heights,  
nor faint nor fail

She will not fail she heeds thy  
stirring cry

She knows thy guardian spirit will  
be nigh,

And rising from beneath the  
chastening rod,

She stretches out her bleeding  
hands to God!

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## LIFE

A CRUST of bread and a corner to  
sleep in,  
A minute to smile and an hour to  
weep in,  
A pint of joy to a peck of trouble,  
And never a laugh but the moans  
come double,  
And that is life!

A crust and a corner that love  
makes precious,  
With a smile to warm and the  
tears to refresh us,  
And joy seems sweeter when cares  
come after,  
And a moan is the finest of foils  
for laughter,  
And that is life!

## THE LESSON

My cot was down by a cypress  
grove,  
And I sat by my window the  
whole night long,  
And heard well up from the deep  
dark wood  
A mocking-bird's passionate  
song  
And I thought of myself so sad  
and lone,  
And my life's cold winter that  
knew no spring,  
Of my mind so weary and sick and  
wild,  
Of my heart too sad to sing

But e'en as I listened the mock-  
bird's song,  
A thought stole into my sid-  
dened heart,  
And I said, "I can cheer some  
other soul  
By a carol's simple art."

For oft from the darkness of  
hearts and lives  
Come songs that brim with joy  
and light,  
As out of the gloom of the cypress  
grove  
The mocking-bird sings at  
night

So I sang a lay for a brother's ear  
In a strain to soothe his bleed-  
ing heart,  
And he smiled at the sound of my  
voice and lyre,  
Though mine was a feeble art.

But at his smile I smiled in turn,  
And into my soul there came  
a ray  
In trying to soothe another's woes  
Mine own had passed away

## THE RISING OF THE STORM

THE lake's dark breast  
Is all unrest,  
It heaves with a sob and a sigh.  
Like a tremulous bird,  
From its slumber stirred,  
The moon is a-tilt in the sky.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

From the silent deep  
The waters sweep  
But faint on the cold white stones  
And the wavelets fly  
With a plaintive cry  
O'er the old earth's bare bleak  
bones

And the spray upsprings  
On its ghost white wings  
And tosses a kiss at the stars  
While a water sprite  
In sea pearls dight  
Hums a sea hymn's solemn bars

Far out in the night  
On the wavering sight  
I see a dark hull loom  
And its light on high  
Like a Cyclops eye  
Shines out through the mist and  
gloom

Now the winds well up  
From the earth's deep cup  
And fall on the sea and shore  
And against the pier  
The waters rear  
And break with a sullen roar

Up comes the gale  
And the mist wrought veil  
Gives way to the lightning's glare  
And the cloud drifts fall  
A sombre pall  
O'er water, earth and air

The storm king flies  
His whip he plies  
And bellows down the wind  
The lightning rash  
With blinding flash  
Comes pricking on behind

Rise waters rise  
And trunt the skies  
With your swift flitting form  
Sweep wild winds, sweep  
And tear the deep  
To atoms in the storm

And the waters leapt  
And the wild winds swept,  
And blew out the moon in the sky,  
And I laughed with glee  
It was joy to me  
As the storm went raging by!

### SUNSET

THE river sleeps beneath the sky,  
And clasps the shadows to its  
breast  
The crescent moon shines dim on  
high  
And in the lately radiant west  
The gold is fading into gray  
Now stills the lark his festive  
lay  
And mourns with me the  
dying day

While in the south the first faint  
star  
Lifts to the night its silver face

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

And twinkles to the moon afar  
Across the heaven's grayling  
space,  
Low murmurs reach me from the  
town,  
As Day puts on her sombre crown,  
And shakes her mantle darkly  
down

## THE OLD APPLE-TREE

THERE's a memory keeps a-run-  
nin'  
Through my weary head to-  
night,  
An' I see a picture dancin'  
In the fire-flames' ruddy light,  
'Tis the picture of an orchard  
Wrapped in autumn's purple  
haze,  
With the tender light about it  
That I loved in other days  
An' a-standin' in a corner  
Once again I seem to see  
The verdant leaves an' branches  
Of an old apple-tree.

You perhaps would call it ugly,  
An' I don't know but it's so,  
When you look the tree all over  
Unadorned by memory's glow,  
For its boughs are gnarled an'  
crooked,  
An' its leaves are gettin' thin,  
An' the apples of its bearin'  
Would n't fill so large a bin

As they used to But I tell you,  
When it comes to pleas'n' me,  
It's the dearest in the orchard,—  
Is that old apple-tree

I would hide within its shelter,  
Settlin' in some cosy nook,  
Where no calls nor threats could  
stir me

From the pages o' my book.  
Oh, that quiet, sweet seclusion  
In its fulness passeth words!  
It was deeper than the deepest  
That my sanctum now affords  
Why, the jaybirds an' the robins,  
They was hand in glove with  
me,  
As they winked at me an' warbled  
In that old apple-tree.

It was on its sturdy branches  
That in summers long ago  
I would tie my swing an' dangle  
In contentment to an' fro,  
Idly dreamin' childish fancies,  
Buildin' castles in the air,  
Makin' o' myself a hero  
Of romances rich an' rare  
I kin shet my eyes an' see it  
Jest as plain as plain kin be,  
That same old swing a-danglin'  
To the old apple-tree

There's a rustic seat beneath it  
That I never kin forget  
It's the place where me an'  
Hallie—  
Little sweetheart—used to set,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

When we d wander to the orchard  
So's no listenin ones could hear  
As I whispered sugared nonsense  
Into her little willin ear  
Now my gray old wife is Hallie,  
An I m grayer still than she  
But I ll not forget our courtin  
Neath the old apple tree

Life for us ain t all been summer,  
But I guess we've had our share  
Of its flittin joys an pleasures  
An a sprinklin of its care  
Oft the skies have smiled upon us  
Then again we ve seen 'em  
frown,  
Though our load was neer so  
heavy  
That we longed to lay it down  
But when death does come  
a-callin  
This my last request shall be —  
That they ll bury me in Hallie  
Neath the old apple tree

### A PRAYER

O LORD the hard won miles  
Have worn my stumbling feet  
Oh soothe me with thy smiles  
And make my life complete  
  
The thorns were thick and keen  
Where er I trembling trod  
The way was long between  
My wounded feet and God

Where healing waters flow  
Do thou my footsteps lead  
My heart is aching so  
Thy gracious balm I need

### PASSION AND LOVE

A MAIDEN wept and as a com-  
forter  
Came one who cried, 'I love  
thee and he seized  
Her in his arms and kissed her  
with hot breath  
That dried the tears upon her  
flaming cheeks  
While evermore his boldly blaz-  
ing eye  
Burned into hers but she uncom-  
forted  
Shrank from his arms and only  
wept the more  
  
Then one came and gazed mutely  
in her face  
With wide and wistful eyes but  
still aloof  
He held himself as with a rev-  
erent fear  
As one who knows some sacred  
presence nigh  
And as she wept he mingled tear  
with tear  
That cheered her soul like dew a  
dusty flower —  
Until she smiled approached and  
touched his hand!



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## THE SEEDLING

As a quiet little seedling  
Lay within its darksome bed,  
To itself it fell a-talking,  
And this is what it said:  
"I am not so very robust,  
But I'll do the best I can,"  
And the seedling from that  
moment  
Its work of life began  
So it pushed a little leaflet  
Up into the light of day,  
To examine the surroundings  
And show the rest the way.  
The leaflet liked the prospect,  
So it called its brother, Stem,  
Then two other leaflets heard it,  
And quickly followed them  
To be sure, the haste and hurry  
Made the seedling sweat and  
pant,  
But almost before it knew it  
It found itself a plant  
The sunshine poured upon it,  
And the clouds they gave a  
shower,  
And the little plant kept growing  
Till it found itself a flower.  
Little folks, be like the seedling,  
Always do the best you can,  
Every child must share life's  
labor  
Just as well as every man

And the sun and showers will  
help you  
Through the lonesome, struggling hours,  
Till you raise to light and beauty  
Virtue's fair, unfading flowers

## PROMISE

I GREW a rose within a garden  
fair,  
And, tending it with more than  
loving care,  
I thought how, with the glory of  
its bloom,  
I should the darkness of my life  
illumine,  
And, watching, ever smiled to see  
the lusty bud  
Drink freely in the summer sun to  
tinct its blood  
My rose began to open, and its  
hue  
Was sweet to me as to its sun and  
dew;  
I watched it taking on its ruddy  
flame  
Until the day of perfect blooming  
came,  
Then hasted I with smiles to find  
it blushing red—  
Too late! Some thoughtless child  
had plucked my rose and fled!

# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

## FULFILMENT

I GREW a rose once more to please  
mine eyes  
All things to aid it—dew, sun,  
wind fair skies—  
Were kindly and to shield it  
from despoil  
I fenced it safely in with grateful  
toil  
No other hand than mine shall  
pluck this flower said I  
And I was jealous of the bee that  
hovered nigh  
It grew for days I stood hour  
after hour  
To watch the slow unfolding of  
the flower  
And then I did not leave its side  
at all  
Lest some mischance my flower  
should befall  
At last oh joy! the central petals  
burst apart  
It blossomed—but alas! a worm  
was at its heart!

## SONG

My heart to thy heart,  
My hand to thine  
My lip to thy lips,  
Kisses are wine  
Brewed for the lover in sunshine  
and shade  
Let me drink deep then my  
African maid

Lily to lily,

Rose unto rose,  
My love to thy love  
Tenderly grows  
Rend not the oak and the ivy in  
twain  
Nor the swart maid from her  
swarthier swain

## AN ANTE BELLUM SER MON

WE is gathahed hyeah my  
brothahs  
In dis howlin wildaness  
Fu to speak some words of com  
fo t  
To each othah in distress  
An we chooses fu ouah subjc  
Dis—we ll splain it by an  
by  
An de Lawd said Moses  
Moses'  
An de man said Hyeah am  
I

Now ole Pher oh down in Egypt  
Was de wuss man evah bo n,  
An he had de Hebrew chillun  
Down dah wukin in his co n  
T well de Lawd got tiahed o his  
foolin,  
An sez he ' I ll let him  
know—  
Look hyeah Moses go tell  
Pher'oh  
Fu to let dem chillun go '

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

"An' ef he refuse to do it,  
I will make him rue de houah,  
Fu' I'll empty down on Egypt  
All de vials of my powah"

Yes, he did — an' Pher'oh's ahmy  
Was n't wuth a ha'f a dime,  
Fu' de Lawd will he'p his chillun,  
You kin trust him evah time

An' yo' enemies may 'sail you  
In de back an' in de front,  
But de Lawd is all aroun' you,  
Fu' to ba' de battle's brunt  
Dey kin fo'ge yo' chains an'  
shackles

F'om de mountains to de sea;  
But de Lawd will sen' some  
Moses  
Fu' to set his chillun free

An' de lan' shall hyeah his thun-  
dah,  
Lak a blas' f'om Gab'el's ho'n,  
Fu' de Lawd of hosts is mighty  
When he girds his ahmor on  
But fu' feah some one mistakes  
me,

I will pause right hyeah to say,  
Dat I'm still a-preachin' ancient,  
I ain't talkin' 'bout to-day

But I tell you, fellah christuns,  
Things'll happen mighty  
strange,

Now, de Lawd done dis fu' Isrul,  
An' his ways don't nevah  
change,

An' de love he showed to Isrul  
Was n't all on Isrul spent,  
Now don't run an' tell yo' mas-  
tahs

Dat I's preachin' discontent.

'Cause I is n't; I'se a-judgin'  
Bible people by deir ac's,  
I'se a-givin' you de Scriptuah,  
I'se a-handin' you de fac's  
Cose ole Pher'oh b'lieved in  
slav'ry,

But de Lawd he let him see,  
Dat de people he put bref in,—  
Evah mothah's son was free

An' dahs othahs thinks lak  
Pher'oh,

But dey calls de Scriptuah liar,  
Fu' de Bible says "a servant  
Is a-worthy of his hire"

An' you can't git roun' nor thoo  
dat,

An' you can't git ovah it,  
Fu' whatevah place you git in,  
Dis hyeah Bible too'll fit

So you see de Lawd's intention,

Evah sence de worl' began,  
Was dat His almighty freedom

Should belong to evah man,  
But I think it would be bertah,

Ef I'd pause agin to say,  
Dat I'm talkin' 'bout ouah free-  
dom

In a Bibleistic way

But de Moses is a-comin',  
An' he's comin', suah and fas'

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

We kin hyeah his feet a trompin'  
We kin hyeah his trumpit blas'  
But I want to wa n you people  
Don t you git too brigit  
An don t you git to braggin  
Bout dese things you wait an  
see

But when Moses wif his powah  
Comes an sets us chillun free,  
We will pruse de gracious Mastah  
Dat has gin us liberty  
An we ll shout ouah halleluyahs  
On dat mighty reck nin day  
When we se reco nised ez citiz —  
Huh uh! Chillun, let us pray!

### ODE TO ETHIOPIA

O MOTHER RACE! to thee I  
bring  
This pledge of faith unwavering  
This tribute to thy glory  
I know the pangs which thou  
didst feel  
When Slavery crushed thee with  
its heel  
With thy dear blood all gory  
  
Sad days were those — ah, sad  
indeed!  
But through the land the fruitful  
seed  
Of better times was growing  
The plant of freedom upward  
sprung

And spread its leaves so fresh and  
young —

Its blossoms now are blowing

On every hand in this fair land  
Proud Ethiop e s swarthy children  
stand

Beside their fairer neighbor,  
The forests flee before their stroke  
Their hammers ring their forges  
smoke —

They stir in honest labour

They tread the fields where  
honour calls  
Their voices sound through sen  
ate halls

In majesty and power  
To right they cling the hymns  
they sing

Up to the skies in beauty ring  
And bolder grow each hour

Be proud, my Race in mind and  
soul

Thy name is writ on Glory s scroll  
In characters of fire

High 'mid the clouds of Fame s  
bright sky

Thy banner s blazoned folds now  
fly

And truth shall lift them  
higher

Thou hast the right to noble pride  
Whose spotless robes were purified

By blood's severe baptism  
Upon thy brow the cross was laid,

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

And labour's painful sweat-beads  
made

A consecrating chrism

No other race, or white or black,  
When bound as thou wert, to the  
rack,

So seldom stooped to grieving;  
No other race, when free again,  
Forgot the past and proved them  
men

So noble in forgiving

Go on and up! Our souls and  
eyes

Shall follow thy continuous rise;

Our ears shall list thy story  
From bards who from thy root  
shall spring,

And proudly tune their lyres to  
sing

Of Ethiopia's glory.

### THE CORN-STALK FIDDLE

WHEN the corn's all cut and the  
bright stalks shine

Like the burnished spears of a  
field of gold,

When the field-mice rich on the  
nubbins dine,

And the frost comes white and  
the wind blows cold;

Then it's heigho! fellows and hi-  
diddle-diddle,

For the time is ripe for the corn-  
stalk fiddle.

And you take a stalk that is  
straight and long,

With an expert eye to its  
worthy points,

And you think of the bubbling  
strains of song

That are bound between its  
pithy joints —

Then you cut out strings, with a  
bridge in the middle,

With a corn-stalk bow for a corn-  
stalk fiddle.

Then the strains that grow as you  
draw the bow

O'er the yielding strings with  
a practised hand!

And the music's flow never loud  
but low

Is the concert note of a fairy  
band.

Oh, your dainty songs are a misty  
riddle

To the simple sweets of the corn-  
stalk fiddle

When the eve comes on, and our  
work is done,

And the sun drops down with a  
tender glance,

With their hearts all prime for  
the harmless fun,

Come the neighbor girls for  
the evening's dance,

And they wait for the well-  
known twist and twid-  
dle —

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

More time than tun — from the      To the screech and scrape of a  
corn-stalk fiddle                      corn stalk fiddle

Then brother Jabez takes the bow  
While Ned stands off with Su  
van Bland  
Then Henry stops by Milly Snow  
And John takes Nellie Jones's  
hand  
While I pair off with Mandy  
Biddle  
And scrape scrape scrape goes  
the corn stalk fiddle

'Salute your partners comes the  
call  
All join hands and circle  
round  
Grand train back and Bal  
ance all  
Footsteps lightly spurn the  
ground  
Take your lady and balance  
down the middle  
To the merry strains of the corn  
stalk fiddle.

So the night goes on and the dance  
is o'er  
And the merry girls are home  
ward gone  
But I see it all in my sleep once  
more  
And I dream till the very break  
of dawn  
Of an impish dance on a red hot  
griddle

### THE MASTER PLAYER

An old worn harp that had been  
played  
Till all its strings were loose and  
frayed  
Joy Hate and Fear each one  
essayed  
To play But each in turn had  
found  
No sweet responsiveness of sound  
Then Love the Master Player  
came  
With heaving breast and eyes  
afire  
The Harp he took all undismayed  
Smote on its strings still strange  
to song  
And brought forth music sweet  
and strong

### THE MYSTERY

I WAS not now I am — a few  
days hence  
I shall not be I fain would look  
before  
And after but can neither do  
ome Power  
Or lack of power says no' to all  
I would  
I stand upon a wide and sunless  
plain,

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Nor chart nor steel to guide my  
steps aright

Whene'er, o'ercoming fear, I dare  
to move,

I grope without direction and by  
chance.

Some feign to hear a voice and  
feel a hand

That draws them ever upward  
thro' the gloom

But I — I hear no voice and touch  
no hand,

Tho' oft thro' silence infinite I  
list,

And strain my hearing to supernal  
sounds,

Tho' oft thro' fateful darkness do  
I reach,

And stretch my hand to find that  
other hand

I question of th' eternal bending  
skies

That seem to neighbor with the  
novice earth,

But they roll on, and daily shut  
their eyes

On me, as I one day shall do on  
them,

And tell me not the secret that I  
ask

### NOT THEY WHO SOAR

Not they who soar but they who  
plod

Their rugged way, unhelped, to  
God

Are heroes, they who higher fare,  
And, flying, fan the upper air,  
Miss all the toil that hugs the sod  
'Tis they whose backs have felt  
the rod,

Whose feet have pressed the path  
unshod,

May smile upon defeated care,  
Not they who soar

High up there are no thorns to  
prod,

Nor boulders lurking 'neath the  
clod

To turn the keenness of the share,  
For flight is ever free and rare,  
But heroes they the soil who've  
trod,

Not they who soar!

### WHITTIER

Not o'er thy dust let there be  
spent

The gush of maudlin sentiment,  
Such drift as that is not for thee,  
Whose life and deeds and songs  
agree,

Sublime in their simplicity

Nor shall the sorrowing tear be  
shed

O singer sweet, thou art not  
dead!

In spite of time's malignant chill,  
With living fire thy songs shall  
thrill,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

And men shall say "He liveth  
still

Great poets never die for Earth  
Doth count their lives of too great  
worth

To lose them from her treasured  
store

So shalt thou live for evermore —  
I hough far thy form from mortal  
ken —

Deep in the hearts and minds of  
men

### TWO SONGS

A BEE that was searching for  
sweets one day

Through the gate of a rose garden  
happened to stray

In the heart of a rose he hid away  
And forgot in his bliss the light of  
day,

As sipping his honey he buzzed in  
song

Though day was waning he lin-  
gered long

For the rose was sweet so  
sweet

A robin sits pluming his ruddy  
breast

And a madrigal sings to his love  
in her nest

Oh the skies they are blue the  
fields are green

And the birds in your nest will  
soon be seen!

She hangs on his words with a  
thrill of love

And chirps to him as he sits above  
For the song is sweet o sweet

A maiden was out on a summer's  
day

With the winds and the waves  
and the flowers at play

And she met with a youth of  
gentle air

With the light of the sunshine on  
his hair

Together they wandered the flow-  
ers among

They loved and loving they lin-  
gered long

For to love is sweet so sweet

---

BIRD of my lady's bower  
Sing her a song

Tell her that every hour  
All the day long

Thoughts of her come to me,  
Filling my brain

With the warm ecstasy  
Of love's refrain

Little bird! happy bird!  
Being so near

Where e'en her slightest word  
Thou mayest hear

Seeing her glancing eyes  
Sheen of her hair

Thou art in paradise,—  
Would I were there.



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

I am so far away,  
Thou art so near,  
Plead with her, birdling gay,  
Plead with my dear  
Rich be thy recompense,  
Fine be thy fee,  
If through thine eloquence  
She hearken me

## A BANJO SONG

OH, dere's lots o' keer an' trouble  
In dis world to swaller down,  
An' ol' Sorrer's purty lively  
In her way o' gittin' roun'  
Yet dere's times when I furgit  
em,—  
Aches an' pains an' troubles  
all,—  
An' it's when I tek at ebenin'  
My ol' banjo f'om de wall

'Bout de time dat night is fallin'  
An' my daily wu'k is done,  
An' above de shady hilltops  
I kin see de settin' sun;  
When de quiet, restful shadders  
Is beginnin' jes' to fall,—  
Den I take de little banjo  
F'om its place upon de wall.

Den my fam'ly gadders roun' me  
In de fadin' o' de light,  
Ez I strike de strings to try 'em  
Ef dey all is tuned er-right  
An' it seems we're so nigh heaben  
We kin hyeah de angels sing

When de music o' dat banjo  
Sets my cabin all er-ring

An' my wife an' all de othahs,—  
Male an' female, small an'  
big,—

Even up to gray-haired granny,  
Seem jes' boun' to do a jig;  
'Twell I change de style o' music,  
Change de movement an' de  
time,

An' de ringin' little banjo  
Plays an ol' hea't-feelin' hime

An' somehow my th'oot gits choki,  
An' a lump keeps tryin' to rise  
Lak it wan'ed to ketch de water  
Dat was flowin' to my eyes,  
An' I feel dat I could sorter  
Knock de socks clean off o' sin  
Ez I hyeah my po' ol' granny  
Wif huh tremblin' voice jine in

Den we all th'ow in our voices  
Fu' to he'p de chune out too,  
Lak a big camp-meetin' choiry  
Tryin' to sing a mou'nah th'oo  
An' our th'oahs let out de music,  
Sweet an' solemn, loud an' free,  
'Twell de raftahs o' my cabin  
Echo wif de melody.

Oh, de music o' de banjo,  
Quick an' deb'lish, solemn,  
slow,  
Is de greates' joy an' solace  
Dat a weary slave kin know!

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

So jes let me hyeah it ringin,  
Dough de chune be po an'  
rough,  
It s a pleasure an de pleasures  
O dis life is few enough

Now de blessed little angels  
Up in heaben we are told,  
Don't do nothin all dere lifetime  
Ceptin play on haps o gold  
Now I think heaben d be mo  
homelike  
Ef we'd hyeah some music fall  
Fom a reel ol fashioned banjo,  
Like dat one upon de wall

### LONGING

If you could sit with me beside  
the sea to-day,  
And whisper with me sweetest  
dreamings o'er and o'er  
I think I should not find the  
clouds so dim and gray  
And not so loud the waves com-  
plaining at the shore

If you could sit with me upon the  
shore to-day  
And hold my hand in yours as in  
the days of old  
I think I should not mind the chill  
baptismal spray,  
Nor find my hand and heart and  
all the world so cold

If you could walk with me upon  
the strand to day,

And tell me that my longing love  
had won your own  
I think all my sad thoughts would  
then be put away,  
And I could give back laughter  
for the Ocean's moan!

### THE PATH

THERE are no beaten paths to  
Glory's height  
There are no rules to compass  
greatness known  
Each for himself must cleave a  
path alone  
And press his own way forward  
in the fight  
Smooth is the way to ease and  
calm delight  
And soft the road Sloth chooseth  
for her own  
But he who craves the flower of  
life full blown  
Must struggle up in all his armor  
dight!  
What though the burden bear him  
sorely down  
And crush to dust the mountain  
of his pride  
Oh then, with strong heart let  
him still abide  
For rugged is the roadway to  
renown  
Nor may he hope to gain the en-  
vied crown  
Till he hath thrust the looming  
rocks aside

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## THE LAWYERS' WAYS

I 've been list'nin' to them lawyers  
In the court house up the street,  
An' I 've come to the conclusion  
That I'm most completely beat.  
Fust one feller riz to argy,  
An' he boldly waded in  
As he dressed the tremblin' pris'ner  
In a coat o' deep-dyed sin

Why, he painted him all over  
In a hue o' blackest crime,  
An' he smeared his reputation  
With the thickest kind o'  
grime,  
Tell I found myself a-wond'rin',  
In a misty way and dim,  
How the Lord had come to fashion  
Sich an awful man as him

Then the other lawyer started,  
An' with brimmin', tearful  
eyes,  
Said his client was a martyr  
That was brought to sacrifice.  
An' he give to that same pris'ner  
Every blessed human grace,  
Tell I saw the light o' virtue  
Fairly shinin' from his face.

Then I own 'at I was puzzled  
How sich things could rightly  
be,  
An' this aggervatin' question  
Seems to keep a-puzzlin' me  
So, will some one please inform  
me,  
An' this mystery unroll —

How an angel an' a devil  
Can persess the self-same soul?

## ODE FOR MEMORIAL DAY

DONE are the toils and the wearisome marches,  
Done is the summons of bugle  
and drum  
Softly and sweetly the sky over-  
arches,

Shelt'ring a land where Rebel-  
lion is dumb

Dark were the days of the coun-  
try's derangement,

Sad were the hours when the  
conflict was on,

But through the gloom of frater-  
nal estrangement

God sent his light, and we wel-  
come the dawn

O'er the expanse of our mighty  
dominions,

Sweeping away to the uttermost  
parts,

Peace, the wide-flying, on untiring  
pinions,

Bringeth her message of joy to  
our hearts

Ah, but this joy which our minds  
cannot measure,

What did it cost for our fathers  
to gain!

Bought at the price of the heart's  
dearest treasure,

Born out of travail and sorrow  
and pain,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Born in the battle where fleet  
Death was flying  
Slaying with sabre stroke bloody  
and fell

Born where the heroes and mar  
tyrs were dying  
Torn by the fury of bullet and  
shell

Ah but the day is past silent the  
rattle

And the confusion that followed  
the fight

Peace to the heroes who died in  
the battle

Martyrs to truth and the crown  
ing of Right!

Out of the blood of a conflict fra  
ternal

Out of the dust and the dimness  
of death

Burst into blossoms of glory eter  
nal

Flowers that sweeten the world  
with their breath

Flowers of charity p ace and  
devotion

Bloom in the hearts that are  
empty of strife

Love that is boundless and broad  
as the ocean

Leaps into beauty and fulness  
of life

So with the singing of pæans and  
chorals

And with the flag flashing high  
in the sun

Place on the graves of our heroes  
the laurels

Which their unfaltering valor  
has won!

### PREMONITION

DEAR heart good night!

Nay list awhile that sweet voice  
singing

When the world is all so bright  
And the sound of song sets the  
heart a ringing

Oh, love it is not right—

Not then to say 'Good  
night

Dear heart good night!

The late winds in the lake weeds  
shiver

And the spray flies cold and  
white

And the voice that sings gives a  
telltale quiver—

Ah yes the world is bright

But dearest heart good  
night!

Dear heart good night!

And do not longer seek to hold  
me!

For my soul is in affright

As the fearful glooms in their  
pall enfold me

See him who sang how white

And still so dear good  
night

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Dear heart, good-night!  
Thy hand I'll press no more for-  
ever,  
And mine eyes shall lose the  
light,  
For the great white wraith by the  
winding river  
Shall check my steps with  
might  
So, dear, good-night, good-  
night!

### RETROSPECTION

WHEN you and I were young, the  
days  
Were filled with scent of pink  
and rose,  
And full of joy from dawn till  
close,  
From morning's mist till evening's  
haze  
And when the robin sung his  
song  
The verdant woodland ways  
along,  
We whistled louder than he  
sung  
And school was joy, and work was  
sport  
For which the hours were all too  
short,  
When you and I were young,  
my boy,  
When you and I were young

When you and I were young, the  
woods  
Brimmed bravely o'er with every  
joy  
To charm the happy-hearted  
boy.  
The quail turned out her timid  
broods,  
The prickly copse, a hostess  
fine,  
Held high black cups of harm-  
less wine,  
And low the laden grape-vine  
swung  
With beads of night-kissed ame-  
thyst  
Where buzzing lovers held their  
tryst,  
When you and I were young,  
my boy,  
When you and I were young  
  
When you and I were young, the  
cool  
And fresh wind fanned our  
fevered brows  
When tumbling o'er the scented  
mows,  
Or stripping by the dimpling  
pool,  
Sedge-fringed about its shim-  
mering face,  
Save where we'd worn an en-  
t'ring place  
How with our shouts the  
calm banks rung!

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

How flashed the spray as we  
plunged in —

Pure gems that never caused a  
sin!

When you and I were young  
my boy

When you and I were young

When you and I were young we  
heard

All sounds of Nature with de  
light —

The whirr of wing in sudden  
flight

The chirping of the baby bird

The columbine's red bells were  
rung

The locusts' vested chorus  
sung

While every wind his zithern  
strung

To high and holy sounding keys  
And played sonatas in the trees —

When you and I were young  
my boy

When you and I were young

When you and I were young we  
knew

To shout and laugh to work  
and play

And night was partner to the  
day

In all our joys So swift time  
flew

On silent wings that ere we  
wist,

The fleeting years had fled un  
mis ed

And from our hearts this cry  
was wrung —

To fill with fond regret and tears  
The days of our remaining years —

When you and I were young  
my boy

When you and I were young

### UNEXPRESSED

DEEP in my heart that aches with  
the repression

And strives with plenitude of  
bitter pain

There lives a thought that clamors  
for expression

And spends its undelivered  
force in vain

What boots it that some other  
may have thought it?

The right of thoughts' expres  
sion is divine

The price of pain I pay for it has  
bought it

I care not who lays claim to it  
— it is mine!

And yet not mine until it be deliv  
ered

The manner of its birth shall  
prove the test

Alas alas my rock of pride is  
shivered —

I beat my brow — the thought  
still unexpressed

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## SONG OF SUMMER

Dis is gospel weathah sho'—  
Hills is sawt o' hazy  
Meddahs level ez a flo'  
Callin' to de lazy  
Sky all white wif streaks o' blue,  
Sunshine softly gleamin',  
D'ain't no wuk hit 's right to do,  
Nothin' 's right but dreamin'.

Dreamin' by de rivah side  
Wif de watahs glist'nin',  
Feelin' good an' satisfied  
Ez you lay a-list'nin'  
To the little nakid boys  
Splashin' in de watah,  
Hollerin' fu' to spress deir joys  
Jes' lak youngsters ought to.

Squill a-tippin' on his toes,  
So 's to hide an' view you,  
Whole flocks o' camp-meetin'  
crows  
Shoutin' hallelujah  
Peckahwood erpon de tree  
Tappin' lak a hammah,  
Jaybird chattin' wif a bee,  
Tryin' to teach him grammah

Breeze is blowin' wif perfume,  
Jes' enough to tease you,  
Hollyhocks is all in bloom,  
Smellin' fu' to please you  
Go 'way, folks, an' let me 'lone,  
Times is gettin' dearah—  
Summah's settin' on de th'one,  
An' I'm a-layin' neah huh!

## SPRING SONG

A BLUR-BILL springs upon the  
ledge,  
A lark sits singing in the hedge,  
Sweet perfumes scent the balmy  
air,  
And life is brimming everywhere  
What lark and breeze and blue-  
bird sing,  
Is Spring, Spring, Spring!

No more the air is sharp and cold,  
The planter wends across the wold,  
And, glad, beneath the shining  
sky  
We wander forth, my love and I  
And ever in our hearts doth ring  
Thus song of Spring, Spring!

For life is life and love is love,  
'Twixt maid and man or dove and  
dove.  
Life may be short, life may be  
long,  
But love will come, and to its  
song  
Shall this refrain for ever cling  
Of Spring, Spring, Spring!

## TO LOUISE

OH, the poets may sing of their  
Lady Ilenes,  
And may rave in their rhymes  
about wonderful queens,  
But I throw my poetical wings to  
the breeze,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

And soar in a song to my Lady  
Louise.

A sweet little maid who is dearer  
I ween

Than any fair duchess, or even a  
queen

When speaking of her I can't plod  
in my prose

For she's the wee lassie who gave  
me a rose

Since poets from seeing a lady's  
lip curled

Have written fair verse that has  
sweetened the world

Why, then, should not I give the  
space of an hour

To making a song in return for a  
flower?

I have found in my life—it has  
not been so long—

There are too few of flowers—too  
little of song

So out of that blossom this lay of  
mine grows

For the dear little lady who gave  
me the rose

I thank God for innocence dearer  
than Art

That lights on a by way which  
leads to the heart

And led by an impulse no less  
than divine,

Walks into the temple and sits at  
the shrine

I would rather pluck daisies that  
grow in the wild,

Or take one simple rose from the  
hand of a child,

Then to breathe the rich fragrance  
of flowers that bide

In the gardens of luxury, passion,  
and pride

I know not my wee one how  
came you to know

Which way to my heart was the  
right way to go

Unless in your purity soul-clean  
and clear

God whispers his messages into  
your ear

You have now hid my song let  
me end with a prayer

That your life may be always  
sweet happy and fair

That your joys may be many and  
absent your woes

O dear little lady who gave me  
the rose!

### THE RIVALS

'T WAS three an thirty year ago  
When I was ruther young you  
know,

I had my last an only fight  
About a gal one summer night  
T was me an' Zeke Johnson  
Zeke

N me d be n spattin 'bout a  
week

Each of us tryin' his best to show  
That he was Liza Jones's betu



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

We could n't neither prove the  
 thing,  
 Fur she was fur too sharp to fling  
 One over fur the other one  
 An' by so doin' stop the fun  
 That we chaps did n't have the  
 sense  
 To see she got at our expense,  
 But that's the way a feller does,  
 Fur boys is fools an' allus was  
 An' when they's females in the  
 game  
 I reckon men's about the same  
 Well, Zeke an' me went on that  
 way  
 An' fussed an' quarrelled day by  
 day,  
 While Liza, mindin' not the  
 fuss,  
 Jest kep' a-goin' with both of us,  
 Tell we pore chaps, that's Zeke  
 an' me,  
 Was jest plum mad with jeal-  
 ousy.  
 Well, fur a time we kep' our  
 places,  
 An' only showed by frownin'  
 faces  
 An' looks 'at well our meanin'  
 boded  
 How full o' fight we both was  
 loaded  
 At last it come, the thing broke  
 out,  
 An' this is how it come about  
 One night ('t was fair, you'll all  
 agree)

I got Eliza's company,  
 An' leavin' Zeke in the lurch,  
 Went trottin' off with her to  
 church  
 An' jest as we had took our seat  
 (Eliza lookin' fair an' sweet),  
 Why, I jest could n't help but grin  
 When Zeke come a-bouncin' in  
 As furious as the law allows  
 He'd jest be'n up to Liza's house,  
 To find her gone, then come to  
 church  
 To have this end put to his  
 search  
 I guess I luffed that meetin'  
 through,  
 An' not a mortal word I knew  
 Of what the preacher preached er  
 read  
 Er what the choir sung er said  
 Fur every time I'd turn my head  
 I could n't skeercely help but see  
 'At Zeke had his eye on me  
 An' he 'ud sort o' turn an' twist  
 An' grind his teeth an' shake his  
 fist  
 I laughed, fur la' the hull church  
 seen us,  
 An' knowed that suthin' was be-  
 tween us  
 Well, meetin' out, we started  
 hum,  
 I sorter feelin' what would come  
 We'd jest got out, when up  
 stepped Zeke,  
 An' said, "Scuse me, I'd like to  
 speak

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

To you a minute ' " Cert said  
I —

A nudgin' Liza on the sly  
An laughin in my sleeve with  
glee,

I asked her please to pardon me  
We walked away a step er two  
Jest to git out o' Liza's view  
An then Zeke said, ' I want to  
know

Ef you think you're Eliza's beau,  
An at I m goin to let her go  
Hum with sich a chap as you?  
An I said bold You bet I do  
Then Zekel, sneerin' said at he  
Did n t want to hender me  
But then he lowed the gal was  
his

An at he guessed he knowed his  
biz

An was n t feared o all my kin  
With all my friends an chums  
threwed in

Some other things he mentioned  
there

That no born man could no ways  
bear

Er think o camly tryin to stan'  
Ef Zeke had be n the bigges man  
In town an not the leanest runt  
At time an' labor ever stunt  
An' so I let my fist go bim  
I thought I d mos nigh finished  
him

But Zekel did n t take it so  
He jest ducked down an' dodged  
my blow

An then come back at me so hard  
I guess I must a hurt the yard  
Er spilet the grass plot where I  
fell

An sakes alive it hurt me well  
It would n t be n so bad you see  
But he jest kep a hittin me  
An I hit back an kicked an  
pawed

But t seemed t was mostly air I  
clawed

While Zekel used his science well  
A makin every motion tell  
He punched an hit why good  
ness lands,

Seemed like he had a dozen hands  
Well afterwhile they stopped the  
fuss,

An some one kundlely parted us  
All beat an cuffed an clawed an  
scratched

An needin both our faces  
patched

Each started hum a different way  
An what o Liza, do you say  
Why, Liza — little humbug —  
dern her

Why, she d gone home with  
Hiram Turner

### THE LOVER AND THE MOON

A LOVER whom duty called over  
the wave

With himself communed  
Will my love be true

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

If left to herself? Had I better not sue  
Some friend to watch over her,  
good and grave?  
But my friend might fail in my  
need," he said,  
"And I return to find love  
dead  
Since friendships fade like the  
flow'rs of June,  
I will leave her in charge of the  
stable moon"

Then he said to the moon. "O  
dear old moon,  
Who for years and years from  
thy thrown above  
Hast nurtured and guarded  
young lovers and love,  
My heart has but come to its  
waiting June,  
And the promise time of the  
budding vine,  
Oh, guard thee well this love  
of mine"  
And he harked him then while  
all was still,  
And the pale moon answered  
and said, "I will"

And he sailed in his ship o'er  
many seas,  
And he wandered wide o'er  
strange far strands  
In isles of the south and in Ori-  
ent lands,  
Where pestilence lurks in the  
breath of the breeze

But his star was high, so he  
braved the main,  
And sailed him blithely home  
again,  
And with joy he bended his  
footsteps soon  
To learn of his love from the  
matron moon

She sat as of yore, in her olden  
place,  
Serene as death, in her silver  
chair  
A white rose gleamed in her  
whiter hair,  
And the tint of a blush was on  
her face  
At sight of the youth she sadly  
bowed  
And hid her face 'neath a gra-  
cious cloud  
She faltered faint on the night's  
dim marge,  
But "How," spoke the youth,  
"have you kept your  
charge?"

The moon was sad at a trust ill-  
kept,  
The blush went out in her  
blanching cheek,  
And her voice was timid and  
low and weak,  
As she made her plea and sighed  
and wept  
"Oh, another prayed and an-  
other plead,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

And I could n't resist she  
answering said

' But love still grows in the  
hearts of men

Go forth dear youth, and love  
again

But he turned him away from her  
proffered grace

Thou art false O moon as  
the hearts of men

I will not will not love again

And he turned sheer round with  
a soul sick face

To the sea and cried Sea  
curse the moon

Who makes her vows and for  
gets so soon

And the awful sea with anger  
turred

And his breast heaved hard as  
he lay and heard

To tear the false moon from th  
sky

### CONSCIENCE AND RE MORSE

GOOD-BYE I said to my con  
science —

Good bye for aye and aye

And I put her hands off harshly

And turned my face away

And conscience smitten sorely

Returned not from that day

But a time came when my spirit

Grew weary of its pace

And I cried Come back my  
conscience,

I long to see thy face

But conscience cried I cannot

Remorse sits in my place

And ever the moon wept down in  
rain

And ever her sighs rose high in  
wind

But the earth and sea were deaf  
and blind

And she wept and sighed her  
griefs in vain

And ever at night when the  
storm is fierce

The cries of a wraith through  
the thunder pierce

And the waves strain their aw  
ful hands on high

### IONE

I

AH yes 't is sweet still to remem  
ber

Though t were less painful to  
forget

For while my heart glows like an  
ember

Mine eyes with sorrow's drops  
are wet

And oh my heart is aching  
yet

It is a law of mortal pain

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

That old wounds, long ac-  
counted well,  
Beneath the memory's potent  
spell,  
Will wake to life and bleed again.

So 't is with me; it might be bet-  
ter

If I should turn no look be-  
hind,—

If I could curb my heart, and fet-  
ter

From reminiscent gaze my  
mind,

O! let my soul go blind — go  
blind!

But would I do it if I could?

Nay! ease at such a price were  
spurned,

For, since my love was once re-  
turned,

All that I suffer seemeth good

I know, I know it is the fashion,  
When love has left some heart  
distressed,

To weight the air with wordful  
passion,

But I am glad that in my  
breast

I ever held so dear a guest

Love does not come at every nod,  
Or every voice that calleth  
“hasten,”

He seeketh out some heart to  
chasten,

'And whips it, wailing, up to God!

Love is no random road wayfarer  
Who where he may must sip his  
glass

Love is the King, the Purple-  
Wearer,

Whose guard reels not of tree  
or grass

To blaze the way that he may  
pass

What if my heart be in the blast  
That heralds his triumphant  
way;

Shall I repine, shall I not say  
“Rejoice, my heart, the King has  
passed!”

In life, each heart holds some sad  
story —

The saddest ones are never told.

I, too, have dreamed of fame and  
glory,

And viewed the future bright  
with gold,

But that is as a tale long told.  
Mine eyes have lost their youthful  
flash,

My cunning hand has lost its  
art,

I am not old, but in my heart  
The ember lies beneath the ash

I loved! Why not? My heart  
was youthful,

My mind was filled with  
healthy thought

He doubts not whose own self is  
truthful,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Doubt by dishonesty is taught  
So loved I boldly, fearing  
naught  
I did not walk this lowly earth,  
Mine was a newer, higher  
sphere  
Where youth was long and life  
was dear  
And all save love was little worth  
Her likeness! Would that I  
might hush it  
As Love did with enduring  
art  
Nor dust of days nor death may  
dim it,  
Where it lies graven on my  
heart  
Of this sad fabric of my life a  
part  
I would that I might paint her  
now  
As I beheld her in that day,  
Ere her first bloom had passed  
away  
And left the lines upon her brow  
A face serene that, beaming  
brightly  
Disarmed the hot sun's glances  
bold  
A foot that kissed the ground so  
lightly  
He frowned in wrath and  
deemed her cold  
But loved her still though he  
was old  
A form where every maiden grace  
Bloomed to perfection's richest  
flower,—  
The statted pose of conscious  
power,  
Like lithe limbed Dian's of the  
chase  
Beneath a brow too fair for frown-  
ing  
Like moonlit deeps that glass  
the skies  
Till all the hosts above seem  
drowning  
Looked forth her steadfast ha-  
zel eyes  
With gaze serene and purely  
wise  
And over all, her tresses rare  
Which when with his desire  
grown weak  
The Night bent down to kiss  
her cheek  
Entrapped and held him captive  
there  
This was Ione a spirit finer  
Neer burned to ash its house  
of clay  
A soul instinct with fire diviner  
Neer fled athwart the face of  
day  
And tempted Time with earthly  
stay  
Her loveliness was not alone  
Of face and form and tresses'  
hue,

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

For aye a pure, high soul shone  
through  
Her every act this was Ione.

Go striding down the gory  
West,  
When Day's long fight was fought  
and won.

## II

'T was in the radiant summer  
weather,  
When God looked, smiling,  
from the sky,  
And we went wand'ring much to-  
gether  
By wood and lane, Ione and  
I,  
Attracted by the subtle tie  
Of common thoughts and com-  
mon tastes,  
Of eyes whose vision saw the  
same,  
And freely granted beauty's  
claim  
Where others found but worthless  
wastes

We paused to hear the far bells  
ringing  
Across the distance, sweet and  
clear.  
We listened to the wild bird's  
singing  
The song he meant for his  
mate's ear,  
And deemed our chance to do  
so dear  
We loved to watch the warrior  
Sun,  
With flaming shield and flaunt-  
ing crest,

And life became a different  
story;  
Where'er I looked, I saw new  
light.  
Earth's self assumed a greater  
glory,  
Mine eyes were cleared to  
fuller sight.  
Then first I saw the need and  
might  
Of that fair band, the singing  
throng,  
Who, gifted with the skill di-  
vine,  
Take up the threads of life,  
spun fine,  
And weave them into soulful  
song.

They sung for me, whose passion  
pressing  
My soul, found vent in song  
nor line  
They bore the burden of express-  
ing  
All that I felt, with art's de-  
sign,  
And every word of theirs was  
mine.  
I read them to Ione, oft-times,  
By hill and shore, beneath fair  
skies,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

And she looked deeply in mine  
eyes

And knew my love spoke through  
their rhymes

Her life was like the stream that  
floweth,

And mine was like the waiting  
sea,

Her love was like the flower that  
bloweth,

And mine was like the carch  
ing bee —

I found her sweetness all for  
me.

God plied him in the mint of  
time

And coined for us a golden day

And rolled it ringing down  
life's way

With love's sweet music in its  
chime.

And God unclasped the Book of  
Ages

And laid it open to our sight

Upon the *dimness of its pages*

So long consigned to rayless  
night

He shed the glory of his light.

We read them well we read them  
long

And ever thrilling did we see

That love ruled all human  
ity —

The master passion pure and  
strong

### III

To-day my skies are bare and  
ashen,

And bend on me without a  
beam

Since love is held the master pas-  
sion,

Its loss must be the pain su-  
preme —

And grinning Fate has wrecked  
my dream

But pardon dear departed Guest  
I will not rant I will not rail

For good the grain must feel  
the flail

There are whom love has never  
blessed

I had and have a younger brother,  
One whom I loved and love to  
day

As never fond and doting mother  
Adored the babe who found its

way

From heavenly scenes into her  
day

Oh he was full of youth's new  
wine —

A man on life's ascending slope  
Flushed with ambition full of

hope,

And every wish of his was mine

A kingly youth the way before  
him

Was thronged with victories to  
be won



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

So joyous, too, the heavens o'er  
him

Were bright with an unchang-  
ing sun,—

His days with rhyme were over-  
run

Toil had not taught him Nature's  
prose,

Tears had not dimmed his bril-  
liant eyes,

And sorrow had not made him  
wise,

His life was in the budding rose

I know not how I came to  
waken,

Some instinct pricked my soul  
to sight,

My heart by some vague thrill  
was shaken,—

A thrill so true and yet so  
slight,

I hardly deemed I read aright.

As when a sleeper, ign'rant why,  
Not knowing what mysterious  
hand

Has called him out of slumber-  
land,

Starts up to find some danger  
nigh

Love is a guest that comes, un-  
bidden,

But, having come, asserts his  
right,

He will not be repressed nor hid-  
den

And so my brother's dawning  
plight

Became uncovered to my sight.  
Some sound-mote in his passing  
tone

Caught in the meshes of my  
ear,

Some little glance, a shade too  
dear,

Betrayed the love he bore Ione.

What could I do? He was my  
brother,

And young, and full of hope  
and trust,

I could not, dared not try to  
smother

His flame, and turn his heart to  
dust

I knew how oft life gives a  
crust

To starving men who cry for  
bread,

But he was young, so few his  
days,

He had not learned the great  
world's ways,

Nor Disappointment's volumes  
read.

However fair and rich the booty,  
I could not make his loss my  
gain.

For love is dear, but dearer  
duty,

And here my way was clear and  
plain.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

I saw how I could save him pain  
And so with all my day grown  
dim

That this loved brother's sun  
might shine

I joined his suit gave over  
mine  
And sought Ione to plead for him

I found her in an eastern bower  
Where all day long the am'rous  
sun

Lay by to woo a timid flower  
This day his course was well  
nigh run

But still with lingering art he  
spun

Gold fancies on the shadowed  
wall

The vines waved soft and green  
above

And there where one might tell  
his love

I told my griefs—I told her all!

I told her all and as she heark-  
ened

A tear drop fell upon her dress  
With grief her flushing brow was  
darkened

One sob that she could not re-  
press

Betrayed the depths of her dis-  
tress

Upon her grief my sorrow fed  
And I was bowed with unlived  
years

My heart swelled with a sea of  
tears

The tears my manhood could not  
shed

The world is Rome and Fate is  
Nero

Disporting in the hour of  
doom

God made us men times make the  
hero—

But in that awful space of  
gloom

I gave no thought but sorrow's  
room

All—all was dim within that  
bower

What time the sun divorced the  
day,

And all the shadows glooming  
gray,

Proclaimed the sadness of the  
hour

She could not speak—no word  
was needed

*Her look half strength and half  
despair*

Told me I had not vainly pleaded,  
That she would not ignore my  
prayer

And so she turned and left me  
there

And as she went so passed my  
bliss

She loved me, I could not mis-  
take—

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## RELIGION

But for her own and my love's  
sake,  
Her womanhood could rise to  
this!

My wounded heart fled swift to  
cover,  
And life at times seemed very  
drear  
My brother proved an ardent  
lover —

What had so young a man to  
fear?

He wed Ione within the year  
No shadow clouds her tranquil  
brow,

Men speak her husband's name  
with pride,

While she sits honored at his  
side —

She is — she must be happy now!

I doubt the course I took no  
longer,

Since those I love seem satisfied  
The bond between them will grow  
stronger

As they go forward side by  
side,

Then will my pains be jus-  
fied

Their joy is mine, and that is  
best —

I am not totally bereft;

For I have still the mem'ry  
left —

Love stopped with me — a Royal  
Guest!

I AM no priest of crooks nor  
creeds,

For human wants and human  
needs

Are more to me than prophets'  
deeds,

And human tears and human  
cares

Affect me more than human  
prayers

Go, cease your wail, lugubrious  
saint!

You fret high Heaven with your  
plaint

Is this the "Christian's joy" you  
paint?

Is this the Christian's boasted  
bliss?

Avails your faith no more than  
this?

'Take up your arms, come out with  
me,

Let Heav'n alone, humanity  
Needs more and Heaven less from  
thee

With pity for mankind look  
'round,

Help them to rise — and Heaven  
is found

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### DEACON JONES GRIEVANCE

I've been watchin' of 'em, parson

An' I'm sorry fur to say  
At my mind is not contented  
With the loose an' leerless way

'At the young folks treat the music

Tain't the proper sort o' choir

Then I don't believe in Christuns

A singin' hymns for hire

But I never would a murdered

An' the matter might a gone  
Ef it was n't fur the antics

At I've seen 'em kerry on  
So I thought it was my dooty

Fur to come to you an' ask  
Ef you would n't sort o' gently  
Take them singin' folks to task

Fust the music they've been singin'

Will disgrace us mighty soon  
It's a cross between a op'ry  
An' a ol' cotillion tune  
With its dashes an' its quavers  
An' its hifalutin' style—

Why it sets my head to swimmin'

When I'm comin' down the aisle

Now it might be almost decent

Ef it was n't fur the way

At they git up there an' sing it

Hey dum diddle loud and gay

Why it shames the name o' sacred

In its brazen wordliness

An' they've even got Ol' Hundred

In a bold new fangled dress

You'll excuse me Mr. Parson,

Ef I seem a little sore

But I've sung the songs of Israel

For threescore years an' more

An' it sort o' hurts my feelin's

Fur to see 'em put away

Fur these harum scarum ditties

At is capturin' the day

There's another little happenin'

At I'll mention while I'm here

Jes to show at my objections

All is offered sound and clear

It was one day they was singin'

An' was doin' well enough—

Singin' good as people could sing

Such an awful mess o' stuff—

When the choir give a holler

An' the organ give a groan

An' they left one weak voiced feller

A singin' there alone!

But he stuck right to the music

Tho' t'was tryin' as could be

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

An' when I tried to help him,  
Why, the hull church scowled  
at me

You say that 's so-low singin',  
Well, I pray the Lord that I  
Growed up when folks was  
willin'

To sing their hymns so high.  
Why, we never had sich doin's  
In the good ol' Bethel days,  
When the folks was all con-  
tented  
With the simple songs of  
praise

Now I may have spoke too open,  
But 't was too hard to keep  
still,

An' I hope you 'll tell the singers  
'At I bear 'em no ill-will

'At they all may git to glory  
Is my wish an' my desire,  
But they 'll need some extry train-  
in'

'Fore they jine the heavenly  
choir

### ALICE

KNOW you, winds that blow your  
course

Down the verdant valleys,  
That somewhere you must, per-  
force,

Kiss the brow of Alice?  
When her gentle face you find,  
Kiss it softly, naughty wind

Roses waving fair and sweet  
Thro' the garden alleys,  
Grow into a glory meet  
For the eve of Alice,  
Let the wind your offering bear  
Of sweet perfume, faint and rare

Lily holding crystal dew  
In your pure white chalice,  
Nature kind hath fashioned you  
Like the soul of Alice,  
It of purest white is wrought,  
Filled with gems of crystal  
thought

### AFTER THE QUARREL

So we, who've supped the self-  
same cup,

To-night must lay our friend-  
ship by,

Your wrath has burned your  
judgment up,

Hot breath has blown the ashes  
high

You say that you are wronged —  
ah, well,

I count that friendship poor,  
at best

A bauble, a mere bagatelle,  
That cannot stand so slight a  
test

I fain would still have been your  
friend,

And talked and laughed and  
loved with you,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

But since it must why let it end  
The false but dies 't is not the  
true

So we are favored you and I  
Who only want the living  
truth

It was not good to nurse the lie  
T is well it died in harmless  
youth

I go from you to night to sleep  
Why what s the odds? why  
should I grieve?

I have no fund of tears to weep  
For happenings that undeceive  
The days shall come the days  
shall go

Just as they came and went be  
fore

The sun shall shine the streams  
shall flow

Though you and I are friends no  
more

And in the volume of my years  
Where all my thoughts and  
acts shall be

The page whereon your name  
appears

Shall be forever sealed to me  
Not that I hate you over much  
T is less of hate than love de  
fied

Howe er our hands no more shall  
touch

We ll go our ways the world is  
wide

## BEYOND THE YEARS

### I

BEYOND the years the answer lies  
Beyond where brood the grieving  
skies

And Night drops tears  
Where Faith rod chastened smiles  
to rise

And doff its fears  
And carping Sorrow pines and  
dies —  
Beyond the years

### II

Beyond the years the prayer for rest  
Shall beat no more within the  
breast

The darkness clears  
And Morn perched on the moun  
tain s crest

Her form uprears —  
The day that is to come is best  
Beyond the years

### III

Beyond the years the soul shall find  
That endless peace for which it  
pined

For light appears  
And to the eyes that still were blind  
With blood and tears  
Their sight shall come all uncon  
fined

Beyond the years

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## AFTER A VISIT

I BE'N down in ole Kentucky  
Fur a week er two, an' say,  
'T wuz ez hard ez breakin' oxen  
Fur to tear myse'f away.  
Allus argerin' 'bout fren'ship  
An' yer hospitality —  
Y' ain't no right to talk about it  
Tell you be'n down there to see.

See jest how they give you welcome  
To the best that 's in the land,  
Feel the sort o' grip they give you  
When they take you by the hand  
Hear 'em say, "We're glad to  
have you,  
Better stay a week er two,"  
An' the way they treat you makes  
you  
Feel that ev'ry word is true

Feed you tell you hear the buttons  
Crackin' on yore Sunday vest,  
Haul you roun' to see the wonders  
Tell you have to cry for rest  
Drink yer health an' pet an' praise  
you  
Tell you git to feel ez great  
Ez the Sheriff o' the county  
Er the Gov'ner o' the State.

Wife, she sez I must be crazy  
'Cause I go on so, an' Nelse  
He 'lows, "Goodness gracious!  
daddy,  
Can't you talk about nuthin'  
else?"

Well, pleg-gone it, I 'm jes' tickled,  
Bein' tickled ain't no sin,  
I be'n down in ole Kentucky,  
An' I want o' go ag'in

## CURTAIN

VILLAIN shows his indiscretion,  
Villain's partner makes confession.  
Juvenile, with golden tresses,  
Finds her pa and dons long dresses  
Scapegrace comes home money-  
laden,  
Hero comforts tearful maiden,  
Soubrette marries loyal chappie,  
Villain skips, and all are happy

## THE SPELLIN'-BEE

I NEVER shall furgit that night  
when father hitched up Dob-  
bin,  
An' all us youngsters clambered in  
an' down the road went bob-  
bin'  
To school where we was kep'  
at work in every kind o'  
weather,  
But where that night a spellin'-  
bee was callin' us together.  
'Twas one o' Heaven's banner  
nights, the stars was all a  
glitter,  
The moon was shinin' like the  
hand o' God had jest then lit  
her.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

The ground was white with spot  
 less snow the blast was sort  
 o' stinging  
 But underneath our roundabouts  
 you bet our hearts was sing  
 in  
 That spellin' bee had been the talk  
 o' many a precious moment  
 The youngsters all was wild to see  
 jes what the precious show  
 meant  
 An' we whos' years was in their  
 teens was little less desirous  
 O' gittin' to the meetin' so s our  
 sweethearts could admire us  
 So on we went o' anxious fur to  
 satisfy our mission  
 That father had to box our ears  
 to smother our ambition  
 But boxin' ears was too short  
 work to hinder our arrivin'  
 He jest turned roun' an' smacked  
 us all an' kep' right on  
 a drivin'  
 Well soon the schoolhouse hove  
 in sight, the winders beamin'  
 brightly  
 The sound o' talkin' reached our  
 ears and voices luffin' lightly  
 It puffed us up so full an' big at  
 I'll jest bet a dollar  
 There want a feller there but  
 felt the strain upon his col  
 lar  
 So down we jumped an' in we  
 went ez sprightly ez you  
 make em  
 But somethin' grabbed us by the  
 knees an' straight began to  
 shake em  
 Fur once within that lighted  
 room our feelins' took a  
 canter  
 An' scurried to the zero mark ez  
 quick ez Tam O'Shanter  
 Cause there was crowds o' peo-  
 ple there both sexes in all  
 stations  
 It looked like all the town had  
 come an' brought all their re  
 lations  
 The first I saw was Nettie Gray  
 I thought that girl was  
 dearer  
 N' gold an' when I got a chance  
 you bet I aidge'd up near  
 her  
 An' Farmer Dobb's girl was  
 there th' one at Jim was  
 sweet on  
 An' Cyrus Jones an' Mandy  
 Smith an' Futh an' Patience  
 Deaton  
 Then Parson Brown an' Lawyer  
 Jones were present—all at  
 tention  
 An' piles on piles of other folks  
 too numerous to mention  
 The master rose an' briefly said  
 Good friends dear brother  
 Crawford  
 To spur the pupils' minds along,  
 a little prize has offered  
 To him who spells the best to-



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

night—or 't may be 'her'—  
no tellin'—  
He offers ez a jest reward, this  
precious work on spellin' "

A little blue-backed spellin'-book  
with fancy scarlet trimmin',  
We boys devoured it with our  
eyes—so did the girls an'  
women.

He held it up where all could see,  
then on the table set it,  
An' ev'ry speller in the house felt  
mortal bound to get it  
At his command we fell in line,  
prepared to do our dooty,  
Outspell the rest an' set 'em down,  
an' carry home the booty  
'T was then the merry times be-  
gan, the blunders, an' the  
laffin',  
The nudges an' the nods an' winks  
an' stale good-natured chaf-  
fin'

Ole Uncle Hiram Dane was there,  
the closest man a-livin',  
Whose only bugbear seemed to be  
the dreadful fear o' givin'.  
His beard was long, his hair un-  
cut, his clothes all bare an'  
dingy,  
It was n't 'cause the man was  
pore, but jest so mortal  
stingy,  
An' there he sot by Sally Riggs  
a-smilin' an' a-smirkin',  
An' all his children lef' to home a  
diggin' an' a-workin'.

A widower he was, an' Sal was  
thinkin' 'at she 'd wing him,  
I reckon he was wond'rin' what  
them rings o' hern would  
bring him  
An' when the spellin'-test com-  
menced, he up an' took his  
station,  
A-spellin' with the best o' them  
to beat the very nation.  
An' when he 'd spell some young-  
ster down, he 'd turn to look  
at Sally,  
An' say "The teachin' nowadays  
can't be o' no great vally "  
But true enough the adage says,  
"Pride walks in slipp'ry  
places,"  
Fur soon a thing occurred that  
put a smile on all our faces  
The laffter jest kep' ripplin' 'roun'  
an' teacher could n't quell it,  
Fur when he give out "charity"  
ole Hiram could n't spell it  
But laffin' 's ketchin' an' it  
throwed some others off their  
bases,  
An' folks 'u'd miss the very word  
that seemed to fit their cases  
Why, fickle little Jessie Lee come  
near the house upsettin'  
By puttin' in a double "kay" to  
spell the word "coquettin'."  
An' when it come to Cyrus Jones,  
it tickled me all over—  
Him settin' up to Mandy Smith  
an' got sot down on "lover."

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

But Lawyer Jones of all gone men  
 did shorely look the gonest  
 When he found out that he d fur  
 got to put the 'h in 'hon  
 est  
 An Parson Brown, whose ser  
 mons were too long fur tol  
 eration,  
 Caused lots o smules by missin  
 when they give out con  
 densation  
 So one by one they giv it up—  
 the big words kep a landin  
 Till me an Nettie Gray was left,  
 the only ones a standin  
 An then my inward strife began  
 —I guess my mind was  
 petty—  
 I did so want that spellin book  
 but then to spell down Net  
 tie  
 Jest sort o went ag in my grain—  
 I somehow could n t do it,  
 An when I git a notion fixed  
 I m great on stickin to it  
 So when they giv the next word  
 out—I had n t orter tell  
 it  
 But then 't was all fur Nettie's  
 sake—I missed so's she  
 could spell it  
 She spelt the word then looked at  
 me so lovin like an' mello  
 I tell you t sent a hunderd pins  
 a shootin through a fello  
 O course I had to stand the jokes  
 an' chaffin of the fello s  
 But when they handed her the  
 book I vow I was n t jealous  
 We sung a hymn an Parson  
 Brown dismissed us like he  
 orter  
 Fur lal he'd learned a thing er  
 two an made his blessin  
 shorter  
 T was late an' cold when we got  
 out but Nettie liked cold  
 weather  
 An so did I, so we agreed we'd  
 jest walk home together  
 We both wuz silent fur of words  
 we nuther had a surplus  
 'Till she spoke out quite sudden  
 like You missed that word  
 on purpose'  
 Well I declare it frightened me  
 at first I tried denyin  
 But Nettie she jest smiled an'  
 smiled she knowed that I  
 was lyin  
 Sez she That book is yourn by  
 right sez I ' It never  
 could be—  
 I—I—you—ah— in there  
 I stuck an well she under  
 stood me  
 So we agreed that later on when  
 age had giv' us tether  
 We d jine our lots an settle down  
 to own that book together

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

### KEEP A-PLUGGIN' AWAY

I've a humble little motto  
That is homely, though it's  
true,—

Keep a-pluggin' away.

It's a thing when I've an object  
That I always try to do,—

Keep a-pluggin' away.

When you've rising storms to  
quell,

When opposing waters swell,  
It will never fail to tell,—

Keep a-pluggin' away

If the hills are high before  
And the paths are hard to climb,

Keep a-pluggin' away

And remember that successes

Come to him who bides his  
time,—

Keep a-pluggin' away

From the greatest to the least,  
None are from the rule released.

Be thou toiler, poet, priest,

Keep a-pluggin' away

Delve away beneath the surface,  
There is treasure farther down,—

Keep a-pluggin' away

Let the rain come down in tor-  
rents,

Let the threat'ning heavens frown,

Keep a-pluggin' away

When the clouds have rolled  
away,

There will come a brighter day  
All your labor to repay,—  
Keep a-pluggin' away

There'll be lots of sneers to swal-  
low,

There'll be lots of pain to bear,—  
Keep a-pluggin' away.

If you've got your eye on heaven,  
Some bright day you'll wake up  
there,—

Keep a-pluggin' away.

Perseverance still is king,  
Time its sure reward will bring,  
Work and wait unwearying,—

Keep a-pluggin' away

### NIGHT OF LOVE

THE moon has left the sky, love,  
The stars are hiding now,  
And frowning on the world, love,  
Night bares her sable brow.  
The snow is on the ground, love,  
And cold and keen the air is  
I'm singing here to you, love,  
You're dreaming there in Paris

But this is Nature's law, love,  
Though just it may not seem,  
That men should wake to sing,  
love,

While maidens sleep and dream  
Them care may not molest, love,  
Nor stir them from their slum-  
bers,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Though midnight find the swain  
    love  
Still halting o'er his numbers

I watch the rosy dawn, love  
Come stealing up the east  
While all things round rejoice  
    love  
That Night her reign has  
    ceased  
The lark will soon be heard love  
And on his way be winging  
When Nature's poets wake love  
Why should a man be singing?

### COLUMBIAN ODE

#### I

Four hundred years ago a tangled  
    waste  
Lay sleeping on the west At  
    lantic's side  
Their devious ways the Old  
    World's millions traced  
Content and loved and la  
    bored dared and died  
While students still believed the  
    charts they conned  
And revelled in their thriftless  
    ignorance  
Nor dreamed of other lands that  
    lay beyond  
Old Ocean's dense indefinite  
    expanse

#### II

But deep within her heart old Na  
    ture knew  
That she had once arrayed at  
    Earth's behest  
Another offspring fine and fair  
    to view —  
The chosen suckling of the  
    mother's breast  
The child was wrapped in vest  
    ments soft and fine  
Each fold a work of Nature's  
    matchless art  
The mother looked on it with love  
    divine,  
And strained the loved one  
    closely to her heart.  
And there it lay and with the  
    warmth grew strong  
And hearty by the salt sea  
    breezes fanned  
Till Time with mellowing touches  
    passed along  
And changed the infant to a  
    mighty land

#### III

But men knew naught of this till  
    there arose  
That mighty mariner the  
    Genoese  
Who dared to try, in spite of fears  
    and foes  
The unknown fortunes of un  
    sounded seas  
O noblest of Italia's sons thy  
    bark

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Went not alone into that shroud-  
ing night!

O dauntless darer of the rayless  
dark,

The world sailed with thee to  
eternal light!

The deer-haunts that with game  
were crowded then

To-day are tilled and cultivated  
lands,

The schoolhouse tow'rs where  
Bruin had his den,

And where the wigwam stood  
the chapel stands,

The place that nurtured men of  
savage mien

Now teems with men of Na-  
ture's noblest types,

Where moved the forest-foliage  
banner green,

Now flutters in the breeze the  
stars and stripes!

### A BORDER BALLAD

OH, I have n't got long to live, for  
we all

Die soon, e'en those who live  
longest;

And the poorest and weakest are  
taking their chance

Along with the richest and  
strongest

So it's heigho for a glass and a  
song,

And a bright eye over the table,

And a dog for the hunt when the  
game is flush,

And the pick of a gentleman's  
stable

There is Dimmock o' Dune, he  
was here yester-night,

But he's rotting to-day on Glen  
Arragh,

'Twas the hand o' MacPherson  
that gave him the blow,

And the vultures shall feast on  
his marrow

But it's heigho for a brave old  
song

And a glass while we are able;  
Here's a health to death and an-

other cup

To the bright eye over the table

I can show a broad back and a  
jolly deep chest,

But who argues now on ap-  
pearance?

A blow or a thrust or a stumble  
at best

May send me to-day to my  
clearance

Then it's heigho for the things I  
love,

My mother 'll be soon wearing  
sable,

But give me my horse and my dog  
and my glass,

And a bright eye over the table.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### AN EASY GOIN' FELLER

THER aint no use in all this  
    strife  
An hurryin pell mell right thro  
    life  
I don t believe in goin too fast  
To see what kind o road you ve  
    passed  
It aint no mortal kind o good  
N I would n t hurry ef I could  
I like to jest go joggin long  
To limber up my soul with song  
To stop awhile n chat the men,  
N drink some cider now an'  
    then  
Do want no boss a standin by  
To see me work I allus try  
To do my dooty right straight up  
An earn what fills my plate an  
    cup  
An' ez fur boss, I'll be my own  
I like to jest be let alone  
To plough my strip an tend my  
    bees  
An do jest like I doggoned please  
My head s all right in my  
    heart s meller  
But I m a easy goin feller

### A NEGRO LOVE SONG

SEEN my lady home las night  
Jump back honey jump back  
Hel huh han an squeeze it tight  
Jump back honey jump back  
Hyeahd huh sigh a little sigh,

Seen a light gleam fom huh eye  
An' a smile go flittin by —  
Jump back, honey jump back

Hyeahd de win blow thoo d-  
    pine,  
Jump back honey jump back  
Mockin' bird was singin fine  
Jump back honey jump back  
An my heart was beatin so  
When I reached my lady s do  
Dat I could n t ba to go —  
Jump back honey jump back

Put my ahm aroun' huh waist  
Jump back honey jump back.  
Raised huh lips in took a tise  
Jump back honey jump back.  
I ove me honey love me true?  
I ove me well ez I love you?  
An she answe d Co e I do —  
Jump back honey jump back

### THE DILETTANTE A MODERN TYPE

He scribbles some in prose and  
    verse  
And now and then he prints it  
He paints a little — gathers some  
Of Nature s gold and mints it

He plays a little sings a song  
Acts tragic roles, or funny  
He does because his love is strong  
But not, oh not for money!

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

He studies almost everything  
From social art to science,  
A thirsty mind, a flowing spring,  
Demand and swift compliance

He looms above the sordid  
crowd —  
At least through friendly lenses,  
While his mamma looks pleased  
and proud,  
And kindly pays expenses

## BY THE STREAM

By the stream I dream in calm  
delight, and watch as in a  
glass,

How the clouds like crowds of  
snowy-hued and white-robed  
maidens pass,

And the water into ripples breaks  
and sparkles as it spreads,  
Like a host of armored knights  
with silver helmets on their  
heads

And I deem the stream an emblem  
fit of human life may go,

For I find a mind may sparkle  
much and yet but shallows  
show,

And a soul may glow with myriad  
lights and wondrous mys-  
teries,

When it only lies a dormant thing  
and mirrors what it sees

## THE COLORED SOLDIERS

If the muse were mine to tempt it  
And my feeble voice were  
strong,

If my tongue were trained to  
measures,

I would sing a stirring song  
I would sing a song heroic  
Of those noble sons of Ham,  
Of the gallant colored soldiers  
Who fought for Uncle Sam!

In the early days you scorned  
them,

And with many a flip and flout  
Said "These battles are the white  
man's,

And the whites will fight them  
out"

Up the hills you fought and fal-  
tered,

In the vales you strove and bled,  
While your ears still heard the  
thunder

Of the foes' advancing tread.

Then distress fell on the nation,  
And the flag was drooping low;  
Should the dust pollute your ban-  
ner?

No! the nation shouted, No!  
So when War, in savage triumph,  
Spread abroad his funeral  
pall —

Then you called the colored sol-  
diers,

And they answered to your call

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

And like hounds unleashed and  
eager

For the life blood of the prey,  
Sprung they forth and bore them  
bravely

In the thickest of the fray  
And where'er the fight was hot  
test

Where the bullets fastest fell  
There they pressed unblanched  
and fearless  
At the very mouth of hell

Ah they rallied to the standard  
To uphold it by their might  
None were stronger in the labors  
None were braver in the fight  
From the blazing breach of Wag  
ner

To the plains of Olustee  
They were foremost in the fight  
Of the battles of the free

And at Pillow! God have mercy  
On the deeds committed there  
And the souls of those poor vic  
tims

Sent to Thee without a prayer  
Let the fulness of Thy pity  
O'er the hot wrought spirits  
sway  
Of the gallant colored soldiers  
Who fell fighting on that day!

Yes the Blacks enjoy their free  
dom  
And they won it dearly too,

For the life blood of their thou  
sands

Did the southern fields bedew  
In the darkness of their bondage  
In the depths of slavery's night  
Their muskets flashed the dawn  
ing

And they fought their way to  
light

They were comrades then and  
brothers

Are they more or less to day?  
They were good to stop a bullet  
And to front the fearful fray  
They were citizens and soldiers  
When rebellion raised its head  
And the traits that made them  
worthy —

Ah! those virtues are not dead

They have shared your nightly  
vigils

They have shared your daily  
toil

And their blood with yours com  
mingling

Has enriched the Southern soil

They have slept and marched and  
suffered

'Neath the same dark skies as  
you

They have met as fierce a foe-  
man,

And have been as brave and  
true



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

And their deeds shall find a record  
In the registry of Fame,  
For their blood has cleansed completely  
Every blot of Slavery's shame  
So all honor and all glory  
To those noble sons of Ham—  
The gallant colored soldiers  
Who fought for Uncle Sam!

## NATURE AND ART

TO MY FRIEND CHARLES BOOTH  
NETTLETON

### I

THE young queen Nature, ever  
sweet and fair,  
Once on a time fell upon evil  
days  
From hearing oft herself dis-  
cussed with praise,  
There grew within her heart the  
longing rare  
To see herself, and every passing  
air  
The warm desire fanned into  
lusty blaze  
Full oft she sought this end by  
devious ways,  
But sought in vain, so fell she in  
despair  
For none within her train nor by  
her side  
Could solve the task or give the  
envied boon  
So day and night, beneath the  
sun and moon,

She wandered to and fro unsatis-  
fied,  
Till Art came by, a blithe in-  
ventive elf,  
And made a glass wherein she  
saw herself

### II

Enrapt, the queen gazed on her  
glorious self,  
Then trembling with the thrill  
of sudden thought,  
Commanded that the skilful  
wight be brought  
That she might dower him with  
lands and pelf.  
Then out upon the silent sea-lapt  
shelf  
And up the hills and on the  
downs they sought  
Him who so well and won-  
drously had wrought,  
And with much search found and  
brought home the elf  
But he put by all gifts with sad  
replies,  
And from his lips these words  
flowed forth like wine  
"O queen, I want no gift but  
thee," he said  
She heard and looked on him with  
love-lit eyes,  
Gave him her hand, low murmur-  
ing, "I am thine,"  
And at the morrow's dawning  
they were wed.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### AFTER WHILE

#### A POEM OF FAITH

I THINK that though the clouds  
be dark

That though the waves dash o'er  
the bark

Yet after while the light will  
come

And in calm waters safe at home  
The bark will anchor

Weep not my sad-eyed gray  
robed maid

Because your fairest blossoms  
fade

That sorrow still o'erruns your  
cup

And even though you root them  
up

The weeds grow ranker

For after while your tears shall  
cease

And sorrow shall give way to  
peace

The flowers shall bloom the  
weeds shall die

And in that faith seen by and by  
Thy woes shall perish

Smile at old Fortunes adverse  
tide

Smile when the scoffers sneer and  
chide

Oh not for you the gems that  
pale

And not for you the flowers that  
fail

Let this thought cherish

That after while the clouds will  
part

And then with joy the waiting  
heart

Shall feel the light come stealing  
in

That drives away the cloud of sin  
And breaks its power

And you shall burst your chrysa-  
lis

And wing away to realms of  
blis

Untrammelled pure divinely  
free

Above all earth's anxiety  
From that same hour

### THE OL TUNES

You kin talk about yer anthems  
An yer arias an sich

An yer modern choir singin

That you think so awful rich

But you orter heerd us youngsters

In the times now far away

A singin o the ol tunes

In the ol fashioned way

There was some of us sung treble

An a few of us growled bass

An' the tide o song flowed  
smoothly

With its comp'niment o' grace

There was spirit in that music

An a kind o solemn sway,

A singin o the ol tunes

In the ol fashioned way

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

I remember oft o' standin'  
In my homespun pantaloons —  
On my face the bronze an' freckles  
O' the suns o' youthful Junes —  
Thinkin' that no mortal minstrel  
Ever chanted sich a lay  
As the ol' tunes we was singin'  
In the ol'-fashioned way.

The boys 'ud always lead us,  
An' the girls 'ud all chime in  
Till the sweetness o' the singin'  
Robbed the list'nin' soul o' sin,  
An' I used to tell the parson  
'T was as good to sing as pray,  
When the people sung the ol'  
tunes  
In the ol'-fashioned way

How I long ag'in to hear 'em  
Pourin' forth from soul to soul,  
With the treble high an' meller,  
An' the bass's mighty roll,  
But the times is very diff'rent,  
An' the music heerd to-day  
An't the singin' o' the ol' tunes  
In the ol'-fashioned way.

Little screechin' by a woman,  
Little squawkin' by a man,  
Then the organ's twiddle-twaddle,  
Jest the empty space to span, —  
An' ef you should even think it,  
'T is n't proper fur to say  
That you want to hear the ol'  
tunes  
In the ol'-fashioned way.

But I think that some bright  
mornin',  
When the toils of life air o'er,  
An' the sun o' heaven arisin'  
Glads with light the happy  
shore,  
I shall hear the angel chorus,  
In the realms of endless day,  
A-singin' o' the ol' tunes  
In the ol'-fashioned way.

### MELANCHOLIA

SILENTLY without my window,  
Tapping gently at the pane,  
Falls the rain  
Through the trees sighs the breeze  
Like a soul in pain.  
Here alone I sit and weep;  
Thought hath banished sleep.

Wearily I sit and listen  
To the water's ceaseless drip.  
To my lip  
Fate turns up the bitter cup,  
Forcing me to sip,  
'T is a bitter, bitter drink,  
Thus I sit and think, —

Thinking things unknown and  
awful,  
Thoughts on wild, uncanny  
themes,  
Waking dreams  
Spectres dark, corpses stark,  
Show the gaping seams  
Whence the cold and cruel knife  
Stole away their life.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Bloodshot eyes all strained and staring  
Gazing ghastly into mine,  
Blood like wine  
On the brow — clotted now —  
Shows death's dreadful sign  
Lonely vigil still I keep  
Would that I might sleep!

Hark! the morning cock is crowing  
Dreams like ghosts must hie away  
'Tis the day  
Rosy morn now is born  
Dark thoughts may not stay  
Day my brain from foes will keep,  
Now, my soul, I sleep

Still oh still my brain is whirling!  
Still runs on my stream of thought  
I am caught  
In the net fate hath set  
Mind and soul are brought  
To destruction's very brink  
Yet I can but think!

Eyes that look into the future —  
Peeping forth from out my mind  
They will find  
Some new weight soon or late  
On my soul to bind  
Crushing all its courage out —  
Heavier than doubt

Dawn the Eastern monarch's daughter  
Rising from her dewy bed  
Lays her head  
Gainst the clouds sombre shrouds  
Now half fringed with red  
O'er the land she gins to peep  
Come O gentle Sleep!

### THE WOOING

A YOUTH went faring up and down  
Alack and well a day  
He fared him to the market town  
Alack and well a day  
And there he met a maiden fair  
With hazel eyes and ruburn hair  
His heart went from him then and there  
Alack and well a day

She posies sold right merrily  
Alack and well a day  
But not a flower was fair as she  
Alack and well a day  
He bought a rose and sighed a sigh  
Ah dearest maiden would that I  
Might dare the seller too to buy!  
Alack and well a day

She tossed her head the coy coquette  
Alack and well a day

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

"I'm not, sir, in the market yet,"  
Alack and well-a-day.  
"Your love must cool upon a  
shelf,  
Tho' much I sell for gold and  
pelf,  
I'm yet too young to sell myself,"  
Alack and well-a-day.

The youth was filled with sorrow  
sore,  
Alack and well-a-day.  
And looked he at the maid once  
more,  
Alack and well-a-day  
Then loud he cried, "Fair maid-  
en, if  
Too young to sell, now as I live,  
You're not too young yourself to  
give,"  
Alack and well-a-day.

The little maid cast down her  
eyes,  
Alack and well-a-day  
And many a flush began to rise,  
Alack and well-a-day  
"Why, since you are so bold," she  
said,  
"I doubt not you are highly bled,  
So take me!" and the twain were  
wed,  
Alack and well-a-day.

## MERRY AUTUMN

It's all a farce,—these tales they  
tell  
About the breezes sighing,  
And moans astir o'er field and  
dell,  
Because the year is dying

Such principles are most absurd,—  
I care not who first taught  
'em,  
There's nothing known to beast  
or bird  
To make a solemn autumn

In solemn times, when grief holds  
sway  
With countenance distressing,  
You'll note the more of black and  
gray  
Will then be used in dressing

Now purple tints are all around;  
The sky is blue and mellow,  
And e'en the grasses turn the  
ground  
From modest green to yellow

The seed burrs all with laughter  
crack  
On featherweed and jimson;  
And leaves that should be dressed  
in black  
Are all decked out in crimson

A butterfly goes winging by;  
A singing bird comes after;

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

And Nature all from earth to  
sky

Is bubbling o'er with laughter

The ripples wimple on the rills

Like sparkling little lasses

The sunlight runs along the hills,

And laughs among the grasses

The earth is just so full of fun

It really can't contain it,

And streams of mirth so freely  
run

The heavens seem to rain it

Don't talk to me of solemn days

In autumn's time of splendor

Because the sun shows fewer rays

And these grow slant and slender

Why it's the climax of the  
year —

The highest time of living! —

Till naturally its bursting cheer

Just melts into thanksgiving

### WHEN DE CON PONES HOT

DEY is times in life when Nature  
Seems to slip a cog an go

Jes a rattlin' down creation

Lak an ocean's overflow

When de worl' jes stahts a spin  
nin

Lak a picaninny's top

An yo cup o joy is brimmin'

Twell it seems about to slop

An' you feel jes lak a racah

Dat is trainin' fu' to trot —

When yo mammy says de blessin

An de con pone's hot

When you set down at de table

Kin o weary lak an sad

An you'se jes a little tiahed

An purhps a little mad

How yo gloom turns into glad  
ness

How yo joy drives out de  
doubt

When de oven do is opened

An de smell comes po in out

Why de lectric light o Heaven

Seems to settle on de spot

When yo mammy says de blessin

An de con pone's hot

When de cabbage pot is steamin

An' de bacon good an fat

When de chittlins is a sputter n

So s to show you whah dey s  
at

Tek away yo' sody biscuit

Tek away yo' cake an pie

Fu de glory time is comin

An it s proachin mighty  
nigh

An you want to jump an hollah

Dough you know you d bettah  
not

When yo mammy says de ble sin

An de con pone's hot

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

I have hyeahd o' lots o' sermons,  
An' I've hyeahd o' lots o'  
prayers,  
An' I've listened to some singin'  
Dat has tuck me up de stairs  
Of de Glory-Lan' an' set me  
Jes' below de Mastah's th'one,  
An' have lef' my hea't a-singin'  
In a happy aftah tone,  
But dem wu'ds so sweetly mur-  
mured  
Seem to tech de softes' spot,  
When my mammy says de blessin',  
An' de co'n pone's hot.

## BALLAD

I KNOW my love is true,  
And oh the day is fair.  
The sky is clear and blue,  
The flowers are rich of hue,  
The air I breathe is rare,  
I have no grief or care;  
For my own love is true,  
And oh the day is fair.

My love is false I find,  
And oh the day is dark  
Blows sadly down the wind,  
While sorrow holds my mind,  
I do not hear the lark,  
For quenched is life's dear  
spark,—  
My love is false I find,  
And oh the day is dark!

For love doth make the day  
Or dark or doubly bright;  
Her beams along the way  
Dispel the gloom and gray  
She lives and all is bright,  
She dies and life is night.  
For love doth make the day,  
Or dark or doubly bright.

## THE CHANGE HAS COME

THE change has come, and Helen  
sleeps —  
Not sleeps, but wakes to greater  
deeps  
Of wisdom, glory, truth, and  
light,  
Than ever blessed her seeking  
sight,  
In this low, long, lethargic  
night,  
Worn out with strife  
Which men call life.

The change has come, and who  
would say  
"I would it were not come to-  
day" ?  
What were the respite till to-  
morrow ?  
Postponement of a certain sor-  
row,  
From which each passing day  
would borrow !  
Let grief be dumb,  
The change has come.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### COMPARISON

THE sky of brightest gray seems  
dark

To one whose sky was ever  
white

To one who never knew a spark  
Thro all his life of love or  
light

The grayest cloud seems over  
bright

The robin sounds a beggar's note  
Where one the nightingale has  
heard

But he for whom no silver throat  
Its liquid music ever stirred  
Deems robin still the sweetest  
bird

### A CORN SONG

ON the wide veranda white  
In the purple failing light  
Sits the master while the sun is  
lowly burning

And his dreamy thoughts are  
drowned  
In the softly flowing sound  
Of the corn songs of the field  
hands slow returning

Oh we hoe de co n  
Since de ehly mo n  
Now de sinkin sun  
Says de day is done

O'er the fields with heavy tread  
Light of heart and high of head

Though the halting steps be la  
bored slow and weary  
Still the spirits brave and strong  
Find a comforter in song  
And their corn song rises ever  
loud and cheery

Oh we hoe de co n  
Since de ehly mo n  
Now de sinkin sun  
Says de day is done

To the master in his seat  
Comes the burden full and sweet,  
Of the mellow minor music grow  
ing clearer  
As the toilers raise the hymn  
Thro the silence dusk and dim  
To the cabin's restful shelter  
drawing nearer

Oh we hoe de co n  
Since de ehly mo n  
Now de sinkin sun  
Says de day is done

And a tear is in the eye  
Of the master sitting by  
As he listens to the echoes low  
replying  
To the music's fading calls  
As it faints away and falls  
Into silence deep within the cabin  
dying

Oh we hoe de co n  
Since de ehly mo n  
Now de sinkin sun  
Says de day is done.



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF ·

## DISCOVERED

SEEN you down at chu'ch las'  
night,

Nevah min', Miss Lucy.

What I mean? oh, dat's all right,

Nevah min', Miss Lucy.

You was sma't ez sma't could be,

But you could n't hide f'om me.

Am't I got two eyes to see!

Nevah min', Miss Lucy

Guess you thought you's awful  
keen,

Nevah min', Miss Lucy

Evahthing you done, I seen,

Nevah min', Miss Lucy.

Seen him tek yo' ahm jes' so,

When he got outside de do' —

Oh, I know dat man's yo' beau!

Nevah min', Miss Lucy

Say now, honey, wha'd he say? —

Nevah min', Miss Lucy!

Keep yo' secrets — dat's yo'  
way —

Nevah min', Miss Lucy

Won't tell me an' I'm yo' pal —

I'm gwine tell his othah gal, —

Know huh, too, huh name is Sal,

Nevah min', Miss Lucy!

## DISAPPOINTED

AN old man planted and dug and  
tended,

Toiling in joy from dew to  
dew,

The sun was kind, and the rain  
befriended,

Fine grew his orchard and fair  
to view

Then he said: "I will quiet my  
thrifty fears,

For here is fruit for my failing  
years"

But even then the storm-clouds  
gathered,

Swallowing up the azure sky,

The sweeping winds into white  
foam lathered

The placid breast of the bay,  
hard by,

Then the spirits that raged in the  
darkened air

Swept o'er his orchard and left it  
bare

The old man stood in the rain, un-  
caring,

Viewing the place the storm had  
swept,

And then with a cry from his soul  
despairing,

He bowed him down to the  
earth and wept

But a voice cried aloud from the  
driving rain,

"Arise, old man, and plant  
again!"

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### INVITATION TO LOVE

COME when the nights are bright  
with stars

Or when the moon is mellow  
Come when the sun his golden  
bars

Drops on the hay field yellow  
Come in the twilight soft and  
gray

Come in the night or come in the  
day,

Come O love where'er you may,  
And you are welcome, welcome

You are sweet O Love dear  
Love

You are soft as the nesting dove  
Come to my heart and bring it rest  
As the bird flies home to its wel-  
come nest

Come when my heart is full of  
grief

Or when my heart is merry  
Come with the falling of the leaf  
Or with the reddening cherry  
Come when the year's first blos-  
som blows

Come when the summer gleams  
and glows

Come with the winter's drifting  
snows

And you are welcome welcome

### HE HAD HIS DREAM

HE had his dream and all  
through life

Worked up to it through toil and  
strife

Afloat fore'er before his eyes  
It colored for him all his skies

The storm-cloud dark  
Above his bark,  
The calm and listless vault of blue  
Took on its hopeful hue  
It tintured every passing beam —  
He had his dream

He labored hard and failed at last  
His sails too weak to bear the  
blast

The raging tempests tore away  
And sent his beating bark astray  
But what cared he  
For wind or sea!

He said 'The tempest will be  
short

My bark will come to port  
He saw through every cloud a  
gleam —

He had his dream

### GOOD NIGHT

THE lark is silent in his nest  
The breeze is sighing in its  
flight

Sleep Love and peaceful be thy  
rest

Good night my love good  
night good night

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Sweet dreams attend thee in thy sleep,  
To soothe thy rest till morning's light,  
And angels round thee vigil keep  
Good-night, my love, good-night, good-night

Sleep well, my love, on night's dark breast,  
And ease thy soul with slumber bright,  
Be joy but thine and I am blest  
Good-night, my love, good-night, good-night.

'T ain't no possum! Bless de Lamb!  
Yes, it is, you rascal, Sam!  
Gin it to me, whut you say?  
Ain't you sma't now! Oh, go 'way!  
Possum do look mighty nice,  
But you ax too big a price

Tell me, is you talkin' true,  
Dat's de gal's whut makes you?  
Come back, Sam, now whah's you gwine?  
Co'se you knows dat possum's mine!

### A COQUETTE CON- QUERED

YES, my ha't 's ez ha'd ez stone —  
Go 'way, Sam, an' lemme 'lone.  
No, I ain't gwine change my min' —  
Ain't gwine ma'y you — nuffin' de kin'.

Phiny loves you true an' deah?  
Go ma'y Phiny, whut I keer?  
Oh, you need n't mou'n an' cry —  
I don't keer how soon you die

Got a present! Whut you got?  
Somef'n fu' de pan er pot!  
Huh! yo' sass do sholy beat —  
Think I don't git 'nough to eat?

Whut's dat un'neaf yo' coat?  
Looks des lak a little shoat.

### NORA · A SERENADE

AH, Nora, my Nora, the light  
fades away,  
While Night like a spirit steals  
up o'er the hills,  
The thrush from his tree where he  
chanted all day,  
No longer his music in ecstasy  
trills  
Then, Nora, be near me, thy pres-  
ence doth cheer me,  
Thine eye hath a gleam that is  
truer than gold

I cannot but love thee, so do not  
reprove me,  
If the strength of my passion  
should make me too bold

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Nora pride of my heart —  
    Rosy cheeks cherry lips, sparkling with glee —  
Wake from thy slumbers where  
    ever thou art  
Wake from thy slumbers to  
    me

Ah Nora my Nora, there's love  
    in the air —  
It stirs in the numbers that  
    thrill in my brain  
Oh sweet sweet is love with its  
    mingling of care  
Though joy travels only a step  
    before pain  
Be roused from thy slumbers and  
    list to my numbers  
My heart is poured out in this  
    song unto thee  
Oh be thou not cruel thou treasure  
    thou jewel  
Turn thine ear to my pleading  
    and hearken to me

### OCTOBER

OCTOBER is the treasurer of the  
    year  
And all the months pay bounty  
    to her store  
The fields and orchards still their  
    tribute bear  
And fill her brimming coffers  
    more and more  
But she with youthful lavishness

Spends all her wealth in gaudy  
    dress  
And decks herself in garments  
    bold  
Of scarlet purple, red and  
    gold

She heedeth not how swift the  
    hours fly  
But smiles and sings her happy  
    life along  
She only sees above a shining sky  
    She only hears the breezes voice  
    in song  
Her garments trail the woodlands  
    through  
And gather pearls of early dew  
    That sparkle till the roguish  
    Sun  
Creeps up and steals them every  
    one

But what cares she that jewels  
    should be lost  
When all of Nature's bounte-  
    ous wealth is hers?  
Though princely fortunes may  
    have been their cost  
Not one regret her calm de-  
    meanor stirs  
Wholehearted happy careless  
    free  
She lives her life out joyously  
    Nor cares when Frost stalks over  
    her way  
And turns her auburn locks to  
    gray

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## A SUMMER'S NIGHT

THE night is dewy as a maiden's  
mouth,  
The skies are bright as are a  
maiden's eyes,  
Soft as a maiden's breath the  
wind that flies  
Up from the perfumed bosom of  
the South  
Like sentinels, the pines stand in  
the park,  
And hither hastening, like rakes  
that roam,  
With lamps to light their way-  
ward footsteps home,  
The fireflies come stagg'ring down  
the dark

## SHIPS THAT PASS IN THE NIGHT

OUT in the sky the great dark  
clouds are massing;  
I look far out into the pregnant  
night,  
Where I can hear a solemn boom-  
ing gun  
And catch the gleaming of a  
random light,  
That tells me that the ship I seek  
is passing, passing  
My tearful eyes my soul's deep  
hurt are glassing,  
For I would hail and check that  
ship of ships.

I stretch my hands imploring, cry  
aloud,  
My voice falls dead a foot from  
mine own lips,  
And but its ghost doth reach that  
vessel, passing, passing

O Earth, O Sky, O Ocean, both  
surpassing,  
O heart of mine, O soul that  
dreads the dark!  
Is there no hope for me? Is there  
no way  
That I may sight and check that  
speeding bark  
Which out of sight and sound is  
passing, passing?

## THE DELINQUENT

Goo'-BY, Jinks, I got to hump,  
Got to mek dis pony jump;  
See dat sun a-goin' down  
'N' me a-foolin' hyeah in town!  
Git up, Suke — go long!

Guess Mirandy 'll think I's tight,  
Me not home an' comin' on night.  
What's dat stan'in' by de fence?  
Pshaw! why don't I lu'n some  
sense?  
Git up, Suke — go long!

Guess I spent down dah at Jinks'  
Mos' a dollah fur de drinks  
Bless yo'r soul, you see dat star?  
Lawd, but won't Mirandy rar?  
Git up, Suke — go long!

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Went dis mo nin hyeah it s night,  
Dah s de cabin dah in sight  
Who s dat stan in in de do ?  
Dat must be Mirandy sho  
Git up Suke — go long!

Got de close stick in huh han  
Dat look funny, goodness lan  
Sakes alibe but she look glum!  
Hyeah Mirandy hyeah I come!  
Git up Suke — go long!

Ef t had n t a b en fur you, you  
slow ole fool I d a b en home  
long fo now!

### DAWN

AN angel robed in spotless white  
Bent down and kissed the sleeping  
Night  
Night woke to blush the sprite  
was gone  
Men saw the blush and called it  
Dawn

### A DROWSY DAY

THE air is dark the sky is gray  
The misty shadows come and  
go  
And here within my dusky room  
Each chair looks ghostly in the  
gloom  
Outside the rain falls cold and  
slow —

Half stinging drops half blinding  
spray

Each slightest sound is magnified  
For drowsy quiet holds her  
reign

The burnt stick in the fireplace  
breaks,

The nodding cat with start  
awakes

And then to sleep drops off  
again

Unheeding Towser at her side

I look far out across the lawn  
Where huddled stand the silly  
sheep

My work lies idle at my hands  
My thoughts fly out like scattered  
strands

Of thread and on the verge of  
sleep —

Still half awake — I dream and  
yawn

What spirits rise before my eyes!  
How various of kind and form!  
Sweet memories of days long past  
The dreams of youth that could  
not last,

Each smiling calm each raging  
storm

That swept across my early skies

Half seen the bare gaunt fingered  
boughs

Before my window sweep and  
sway

And chafe in tortures of unrest

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

My chin sinks down upon my  
breast,

I cannot work on such a day,  
But only sit and dream and  
drowse

### DIRGE

PLACE this bunch of mignonette  
In her cold, dead hand,  
When the golden sun is set,  
Where the poplars stand,  
Bury her from sun and day,  
Lay my little love away  
From my sight

She was like a modest flower  
Blown in sunny June,  
Warm as sun at noon's high hour,  
Chaster than the moon  
Ah, her day was brief and bright,  
Earth has lost a star of light,  
She is dead.

Softly breathe her name to me,—  
Ah, I loved her so.  
Gentle let your tribute be,  
None may better know  
Her true worth than I who weep  
O'er her as she lies asleep —  
Soft asleep

Lay these lilies on her breast,  
They are not more white  
Than the soul of her, at rest  
'Neath their petals bright  
Chant your aves ~~soft and low,~~

Solemn be your tread and slow,—  
She is dead

Lay her here beneath the grass,  
Cool and green and sweet,  
Where the gentle brook may pass  
Crooning at her feet.  
Nature's bards shall come and  
sing,  
And the fairest flowers shall spring  
Where she lies

Safe above the water's swirl,  
She has crossed the bar,  
Earth has lost a precious pearl,  
Heaven has gained a star,  
That shall ever sing and shine,  
Till it quells this grief of mine  
For my love

### HYMN

WHEN storms arise  
And dark'ning skies  
About me threat'ning lower,  
To thee, O Lord, I raise mine  
eyes,  
To thee my tortured spirit flies  
For solace in that hour

The mighty arm  
Will let no harm  
Come near me nor befall me;  
Thy voice shall quiet my alarm,  
When life's great battle waxeth  
warm —  
No foeman shall appall me.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Upon thy breast  
Secure I rest  
From sorrow and vexation  
No more by sinful cares oppressed  
But in thy presence ever blest  
O God of my salvation

### PREPARATION

THE little bird sits in the nest and  
sings  
A shy soft song to the morning  
light  
And it flutters a little and prunes  
its wings  
The song is halting and poor  
and brief  
And the fluttering wings scarce  
stir a leaf  
But the note is a prelude to  
sweeter things  
And the busy bill and the flutter  
slight  
Are proving the wings for a  
bolder flight!

### THE DESERTED PLAN TATION

OH de grubbin hoe s a rustin in  
de co nah  
An de plow s a tumblin down  
in de fiel  
While de whippo will s a wulin  
lak a mou nah  
When h s stubbo n hea t is try  
in ha d to yiel

In de furrers whah de co'n was  
allus wavin  
Now de weeds is growin green  
an rank an tall  
An de swallers roun de whole  
place is a bravin  
Lak dey thought deir folks had  
allus owned it all

An de big house stan s all quiet  
lak an solemn  
Not a blessed soul in palor  
po ch er lawn  
Not a guest ner not a ca'iage lef  
to haul em  
Fu' de ones dat tu ned de latch  
string out air gone  
An de banjo s voice is silent in de  
qua ters  
D an t a hymn ner co n song  
ringin in de air  
But de murmur of a branch s pass-  
in' waters  
Is de only soun dat breks de  
stillness dere

Whah s de da kies dem dat used  
to be a dancin  
Evry night befo de ole cabin  
do ?  
Whah 's de chillun dem dat used  
to be a prancin  
Er a rollin in de san er on de  
flo ?

Whah s ole Uncle Mordecai an  
Uncle Aaron?



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Whah 's Aunt Doshy, Sam, an'  
Kit, an' all de res'?

Whah 's ole Tom de da'ky fiddlah,  
how 's he farin'?

Whah 's de gals dat used to sing  
an' dance de bes'?

Gone! not one o' dem is lef' to tell  
de story;

Dey have lef' de deah ole place  
to fall away

Could n't one o' dem dat seed it in  
its glory

Stay to watch it in de hour of  
decay?

Dey have lef' de ole plantation to  
de swallers,

But it hol's in me a lover till de  
las',

Fu' I fin' hyeah in de memory dat  
follers

All dat loved me an' dat I loved  
in de pas'.

So I 'll stay an' watch de deah ole  
place an' tend it

Ez I used to in de happy days  
gone by

'Twell de othah Mastah thinks  
it's time to end it,

An' calls me to my qua'ters in  
de sky.

## THE SECRET

WHAT says the wind to the wav-  
ing trees?

What says the wave to the  
river?

What means the sigh in the passing  
breeze?

Why do the rushes quiver?

Have you not heard the fainting  
cry

Of the flowers that said "Good-  
bye, good-bye"?

List how the gray dove moans and  
grieves

Under the woodland cover,  
List to the drift of, the falling  
leaves,

List to the wail of the lover  
Have you not caught the message  
heard

Already by wave and breeze and  
bird?

Come, come away to the river's  
bank,

Come in the early morning,  
Come when the grass with dew is  
dank,

There you will find the warn-  
ing —

A hint in the kiss of the quicken-  
ing air

Of the secret that birds and  
breezes bear

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### THE WIND AND THE SEA

At many a crime that he wot of  
Wherein he had played his part

I stood by the shore at the death  
of day,  
As the sun sank flaming red,  
And the face of the waters that  
spread away  
Was as gray as the face of the  
dead

He thought of the gallant ships  
gone down  
By the will of his wicked waves  
And he thought how the church  
yard in the town  
Held the sea made widows  
graves

And I heard the cry of the wan  
ton sea  
And the moan of the wailing  
wind  
For love's sweet pain in his heart  
had he  
But the gray old sea had sinned

The wild wind thought of the love  
he had left  
Afar in an Eastern land  
And he longed as long the much  
bereft  
For the touch of her perfumed  
hand

The wind was young and the sea  
was old,  
But their cries went up to-  
gether  
The wind was warm and the sea  
was cold  
For age makes wintry weather

In his winding wail and his deep  
heaved sigh  
His aching grief found vent  
While the sea looked up at the  
bending sky  
And murmured I repent

So they cried aloud and they wept  
amain  
Till the sky grew dark to hear  
it  
And out of its folds crept the misty  
rain  
In its shroud like a troubled  
spirit

But even as he spoke a ship came  
by  
That bravely ploughed the  
main  
And a light came into the sea's  
green eye  
And his heart grew hard again

For the wind was wild with a  
hopeless love  
And the sea was sad at heart

Then he spoke to the wind  
Friend seest thou not  
Yon vessel is eastward bound?  
Pray speed with it to the happy  
spot

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Where thy loved one may be  
found ”

And the wind rose up in a dear  
delight,

And after the good ship sped,  
But the crafty sea by his wicked  
might  
Kept the vessel ever ahead

Till the wind grew fierce in his  
despair,

And white on the brow and lip  
He tore his garments and tore his  
hair,  
And fell on the flying ship.

And the ship went down, for a  
rock was there,

And the sailless sea loomed  
black,

While burdened again with dole  
and care,

The wind came moaning back.

And still he moans from his bosom  
hot

Where his raging grief lies pent,  
And ever when the ships come not,  
The sea says “ I repent ”

## RIDING TO TOWN

WHEN labor is light and the  
morning is fair,

I find it a pleasure beyond all  
compare

To hitch up my nag and go hur-  
rying down

And take Katie May for a ride  
into town,

For bumpety-bump goes the  
wagon,

But tra-la-la-la our lay

There's joy in a song as we rattle  
along

In the light of the glorious day

A coach would be fine, but a  
spring wagon's good,

My jeans are a match for Kate's  
gingham and hood,

The hills take us up and the vales  
take us down,

But what matters that? we are  
riding to town,

And bumpety-bump goes the  
wagon,

But tra-la-la-la sing we

There's never a care may live in  
the air

That is filled with the breath  
of our glee.

And after we've started, there's  
naught can repress

The thrill of our hearts in their  
wild happiness,

The heavens may smile or the  
heavens may frown,

And it's all one to us when we're  
riding to town

For bumpety-bump goes the  
wagon,

But tra-la-la-la we shout,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

For our hearts they are clear and  
there's no hing to fear  
And we ve never a pain nor a  
doubt

The wagon is weak and the road  
way is rough  
And tho it is long it is not long  
enough  
For mid all my ees asies this is the  
crown  
To sit bes de Katie and ride into  
town

When bumpety bump goes the  
wagon  
But tra la la la our song  
And if I had my way I d be will  
ing to pay  
If the road could be made twice  
as long

### WE WFAR THE MASK

We wear the mask that grins and  
lies  
It hides our cheeks and shades our  
eyes —  
This debt we pay to human guile  
With torn and bleeding hearts we  
smile  
And mouth with myriad subtle  
ties

Why should the world be over  
wise  
In counting all our tears and  
sighs?

Nay, let them only see us while  
We wear the mask

We smile but, O great Christ,  
our ees  
To thee from tortured souls arise  
We sing but oh the clay is vile  
Beneath our feet and long the  
mile  
But let the world dream other  
wise  
We wear the mask!

### THE MEADOW LARK

THOUGHT the winds be dank,  
And the sky be sober  
And the grieving Day  
In a mantle gray  
Hath let her waiting maiden  
robe her —  
All the fields along  
I can hear the song  
Of the meadow lark  
As she flits and flutters  
And laughs at the thunder  
when it mutters.  
O happy bird of heart most  
gay  
To sing when skies are gray!

When the clouds are full  
And the tempest master  
Let the loud winds sweep  
From his bosom deep  
Like heralds of some dire disaster,  
ter,

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Then the heart alone  
To itself makes moan,  
And the songs come slow,  
While the tears fall fleeter,  
And silence than song by far  
seems sweeter  
Oh, few are they along the  
way  
Who sing when skies are  
gray!

### ONE LIFE

OH, I am hurt to death, my  
Love;

The shafts of Fate have pierced  
my striving heart,  
And I am sick and weary of  
The endless pain and smart  
My soul is weary of the strife,  
And chafes at life, and chafes at  
life

Time mocks me with fair prom-  
ises,

A blooming future grows a bar-  
ren past,  
Like rain my fair full-blossomed  
trees

Unburden in the blast.  
The harvest fails on grain and  
tree,  
Nor comes to me, nor comes to  
me

The stream that bears my hopes  
abreast

Turns ever from my way its  
pregnant tide  
My laden boat, torn from its rest,  
Drifts to the other side  
So all my hopes are set astray,  
And drift away, and drift away

The lark sings to me at the morn,  
And near me wings her sky-  
ward-soaring flight,  
But pleasure dies as soon as born,  
The owl takes up the night,  
And night seems long and doubly  
dark;

I miss the lark, I miss the lark.

Let others labor as they may,  
I'll sing and sigh alone, and  
write my line

Their fate is theirs, or grave or  
gay,

And mine shall still be mine  
I know the world holds joy and  
glee,

But not for me,—'t is not for me

### CHANGING TIME

THE cloud looked in at the win-  
dow,

And said to the day, "Be dark!"  
And the roguish rain tapped hard  
on the pane,

To stifle the song of the lark

The wind sprang up in the tree  
tops

## PAULI I AGRINCI DI NBAR

[illegible]

10: 410

As our eyes met  
 I saw  
 Strange darkness within  
 Her eyes  
 As if some terrible thing  
 Had been  
 And I was the only one  
 To see  
 So came I to the door and with  
 A knock  
 Crossed the hall to the study  
 And found  
 His face pale as death  
 And his  
 A man whose lips gave  
 A shudder  
 Then looking on the clay of her  
 Death  
 He crushed his fingers in his  
 Arms  
 And I could look no longer upon this  
 Cold embrace  
 Nor see the calmness of the  
 Woman's face  
 With joy unspeakable and bated  
 Breath.

CONFIDENTIAL

[illegible]

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Not no foolin' ner no fun;  
Fur I'm sweet on her, you see,  
An' I ruther guess 'at she  
Must be kinder sweet on me,  
So we're keepin' company.  
Honest Injun! this is true,  
Ever' word I'm tellin' you!  
But you won't be sich a scab  
Ez to run aroun' an' blab  
Mebbe 't ain't the way with you,  
But you know some fellers do.  
Spoils a girl to let her know  
'At you talk about her so.  
Don't you know her? her name's

Liz,

Nicest girl in town she is.  
Purty? ah, git out, you gilly —  
Liz 'ud purt 'nigh knock you silly.  
Y' ought 'o see her when she's  
dressed

All up in her Sunday best,  
All the fellers nudgin' me,  
An' a-whisperin', gemunee!  
Betcher life 'at I feel proud  
When she passes by the crowd  
'T 's kinder nice to be a-goin'  
With a girl 'at makes some show-  
in'—

One you know 'at hain't no snide,  
Makes you feel so satisfied.  
An' I 'll tell you she's a trump,  
Never even seen her jump  
Like some silly girls 'ud do,  
When I 'd hide and holler "Boo!"  
She 'd jest laff an' say "Git out!  
What you hollerin' about?"  
When some girls 'ud have a fit

That 'un don't git skeered a bit,  
Never makes a bit o' row  
When she sees a worm er cow.  
Them kind 's few an' far between;  
Bravest girl I ever seen  
Tell you 'nuther thing she 'll do,  
Mebbe you won't think it 's true,  
But if she's jest got a dime  
She 'll go halvers ever' time.  
Ah, you goose, you need n't laff,  
That 's the kinder girl to have  
If you knowed her like I do,  
Guess you 'd kinder like her too  
Tell you somep'n' if you 'll swear  
You won't tell it anywhere.  
Oh, you got to cross yer heart  
Earnest, truly, 'fore I start.  
Well, one day I kissed her cheek;  
Gee, but I felt cheap an' weak,  
'Cause at first she kinder flared,  
'N', gracious goodness! I was  
scared.  
But I need n't been, fer la!  
Why, she never told her ma.  
That 's what I call grit, don't  
you?

Sich a girl's worth stickin' to

### PHYLLIS

PHYLLIS, ah, Phyllis, my life is a  
gray day,  
Few are my years, but my griefs  
are not few,  
Ever to youth should each day be  
a May-day,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Warm wind and rose breath and  
diamonded dew —  
Phyllis ah Phyllis my life is a  
gray day

Oh for the sunlight that shines on  
a May day!

Only the cloud hangeth over  
my life

Love that should bring me youth's  
happiest heyday

Brings me but seasons of sor  
row and strife

Phyllis ah Phyllis my life is a  
gray day

Sunshine or shadow or gold day  
or gray day

Life must be lived as our des  
tines rule

Leisure or labor or work day or  
play day —

Feasts for the famous and fun  
for the fool

Phyllis ah Phyllis my life is a  
gray day

### RIGHT'S SECURITY

WHAT if the wind do howl with  
out

And turn the creaking weather  
vane

What if the arrows of the rain  
Do beat against the window pane?

Art thou not armored strong and  
fast

Against the sallies of the blast?  
Art thou not sheltered safe and  
well

Against the flood's insistent swell?

What boots it that thou stand'st  
alone,

And laughest in the battle's face  
When all the weak have fled the  
place

And let their feet and fears keep  
pace?

Thou wavest still thine ensign  
high

And shoutest thy loud battle cry  
Higher than e'er the tempest  
roared

It cleaves the silence like a sword

Right arms and armors too that  
man

Who will not compromise with  
wrong

Though single he must front the  
throng

And wage the battle hard and  
long

Minorities since time began  
Have shown the better side of  
man

And often in the lists of Time  
One man has made a cause sub  
lime!

### IF

If life were but a dream my Love  
And death the waking time



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

If day had not a beam, my Love,  
And night had not a rhyme,—  
A barren, barren world were  
this  
Without one saving gleam,  
I'd only ask that with a kiss  
You'd wake me from the  
dream.

If dreaming were the sum of  
days,  
And loving were the bane,  
If battling for a wreath of bays  
Could soothe a heart in pain,—  
I'd scorn the meed of battle's  
might,  
All other aims above  
I'd choose the human's higher  
right,  
To suffer and to love!

### THE SONG

My soul, lost in the music's mist,  
Roamed, rapt, 'neath skies of ame-  
thyst.  
The cheerless streets grew summer  
meads,  
The Son of Phœbus spurred his  
steeds,  
And, wand'ring down the mazy  
tune,  
December lost its way in June,  
While from a verdant vale I  
heard  
The piping of a love-lorn bird.

A something in the tender strain  
Revived an old, long-conquered  
pain,  
And as in depths of many seas,  
My heart was drowned in mem-  
ories  
The tears came welling to my  
eyes,  
Nor could I ask it otherwise,  
For, oh! a sweetness seems to  
last  
Amid the dregs of sorrows past.

It stirred a chord that here of  
late  
I'd grown to think could not vi-  
brate  
It brought me back the trust of  
youth,  
The world again was joy and  
truth  
And Avicé, blooming like a  
bride,  
Once more stood trusting at my  
side  
But still, with bosom desolate,  
The 'lorn bird sang to find his  
mate.

Then there are trees, and lights  
and stars,  
The silv'ry tinkle of guitars,  
And throbs again as throbbed that  
waltz,  
Before I knew that hearts were  
false  
Then like a cold wave on a shore,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Comes silence and she sings no  
more

I wake I breathe I think again  
And walk the sordid ways of men

### SIGNS OF THE TIMES

Air a gittin cool an coolah  
Frost a comin in de night  
Hicka nuts an' wa nuts fallin  
Possum keepin out o' sight  
Tu key struttin' in de ba nya'd  
Nary step so proud ez his  
Keep on struttin Mistah Tu key,  
Yo do know whut time it is

Cidah press commence a squeakin  
Eatin apples sto'ed away  
Chillun swa min 'roun lak ho  
nets

Huntin aigs ermung de hay  
Mistah Tu key keep on gobblin  
At de geese a flyin souf  
Oomph! dat bird do know whut's  
comin

Ef he did he'd shet his mouf

Pumpkin gittin good an yallah  
Mek me open up my eyes  
Seems lak it s a lookin at me  
Jes a la in dah sayin Pies'  
Tu key gobbler gwine roun' blow  
in  
Gwine roun gibbin sass an  
slack

Keep on talkin Mistah Tu key,  
You ain t seed no almanac

Fa'mer walkin th'oo de ba'nya d  
Seen how things is comin on  
Sees ef all de fowls is fatt nin —  
Good times comin sho's you  
bo n

Hyeahs dat tu key gobbler brag  
gin

Den his face break in a smile —  
Nebbah min you sassy rascal  
He s gwine nab you atter while

Choppin suet in de kitchen  
Stonin raisins in de hall  
Beef a cookin fu de mince meat  
Spices groun — I smell em all  
Look hyeah 'Tu key stop dat  
gobblin

You ain lured de sense ob  
feah  
You ol fool yo naik s in dangah  
Do you know Thanksgibbin s  
hyeah?

### WHY FADES A DREAM?

WHY fades a dream?  
An indescent ray  
Flecked in between the tryst  
Of night and day  
Why fades a dream? —  
Of consciousness the shade  
Wrought out by lack of light and  
made  
Upon life's stream  
Why fades a dream?

That thought may thrive  
So fades the fleshless dream,

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Lest men should learn to trust  
The things that seem.  
So fades a dream,  
That living thought may grow  
And like a waxing star-beam glow  
Upon life's stream —  
So fades a dream.

## THE SPARROW

A LITTLE bird, with plumage  
brown,  
Beside my window flutters down,  
A moment chirps its little strain,  
Ten taps upon my window-pane,  
And chirps again, and hops along,  
To call my notice to its song;  
But I work on, nor heed its lay,  
Till, in neglect, it flies away.

So birds of peace and hope and  
love  
Come fluttering earthward from  
above,  
To settle on life's window-sills,  
And ease our load of earthly ills,  
But we, in traffic's rush and din  
Too deep engaged to let them in,  
With deadened heart and sense  
plod on,  
Nor know our loss till they are  
gone.

## SPEAKIN' O' CHRISTMAS

BREEZES blowin' middlin' brisk,  
Snow-flakes thro' the air a-whisk,  
Fallin' kind o' soft an' light,

Not enough to make things white,  
But jest sorter siftin' down  
So 's to cover up the brown  
Of the dark world's rugged ways  
'N' make things look like holidays.  
Not smoothed over, but jest  
specked,

Sorter strainin' fur effect,  
An' not quite a-gittin' through  
What it started in to do.

Mercy sakes! it does seem queer  
Christmas day is 'most nigh here  
Somehow it don't seem to me  
Christmas like it used to be,—  
Christmas with its ice an' snow,  
Christmas of the long ago  
You could feel its stir an' hum  
Weeks an' weeks before it come;  
Somethin' in the atmosphere  
Told you when the day was near,  
Did n't need no almanacs,  
That was one o' Nature's fac's  
Every cottage decked out gay —  
Cedar wreaths an' holly spray —  
An' the stores, how they were  
drest,

Tinsel tell you could n't rest;  
Every winder fixed up pat,  
Candy canes, an' things like that,  
Noah's arks, an' guns, an' dolls,  
An' all kinds o' fol-de-rols  
Then with frosty bells a-chime,  
Slidin' down the hills o' time,  
Right amidst the fun an' din  
Christmas come a-bustlin' in,  
Raised his cheery voice to call  
Out a welcome to us all;

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Hale and hearty, strong an' bluff  
That was Christmas sure enough  
Snow knee deep an' coas in fine  
Frozen mill ponds all ashine,  
Seem n' jest to lay in wait  
Beggin' you to come an' skate.  
An' you d' git your gal in go  
Stumpin' cheerily thro' the snow  
Feelin' pleased an' skeert an'  
warm

'Cau e' she had a holt yore arm  
Why when Christmas come in  
we

Spent the whole glad day in glee,  
Havin' fun an' seas in high  
An' some courtin' on the sly  
Bustin' in some neighbor's door  
An' then suddenly before  
He could give his voice a lift  
Yellin' at him "Christmas gift"  
Now sich things are never heard  
Merry Christmas is the word  
But it's only change o' name,  
An' means givin' jest the same  
There's too many new styled ways  
Now about the holidays  
I d' jest like once more to see  
Christmas like it used to be!

### LONESOME

MOTHER'S gone a visitin' to spend  
a month er two  
An', oh, the house is lonesome ez a  
nest whose birds has flew  
To other trees to build agin' the  
rooms seem jest so bare

That the echoes run like sperrits  
from the kitchen to the  
s' air

The shadders flap more lazy like  
'n what they used to do  
Sence mother's gone a visitin' to  
spend a month er two

We've killed the fattest chicken  
an' we've cooked her to a  
turn

We've made the richest gravy,  
but I jest don't give a darn  
Fur nothin' at I drink er eat, er  
rothin' at I see.

The food ain't got the pleasant  
taste it used to have to me  
They's somep'n stickin' in my  
throat er tight er hardened  
glue

Sence mother's gone a visitin' to  
spend a month er two

The hollyhocks air jest ez pink  
they're double ones at that

An' I wuz prouder of 'em than a  
baby of a cat

But now I don't go near 'em  
though they nod an' blush at  
me

Fur they's somep'n' seems to gall  
me in their keerless sort o'  
glee

An' all their fren'ly noddin' an'  
their blushin' seems to say

'You're purty lonesome John  
old boy sence mother's gone  
away

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

The neighbors ain't so fren'ly ez it  
seems they 'd ort to be,  
They seem to be a-lookin' kinder  
sideways like at me,  
A-kinder feared they 'd tech me  
off ez ef I wuz a match,  
An' all because 'at mother's gone  
an' I'm a-keepin' batch!  
I'm shore I don't do nothin'  
worse 'n what I used to do  
'Fore mother went a-visitin' to  
spend a month er two

The sparrers ac's more fearsome  
like an' won't hop quite so  
near,  
The cricket's chirp is sadder, an'  
the sky ain't ha'f so clear,  
When ev'nin' comes, I set an'  
smoke tell my eyes begin to  
swim,  
An' things aroun' commence to  
look all blurred an' faint an'  
dim.  
Well, I guess I 'll have to own up  
'at I'm feelin' purty blue  
Sence mother's gone a-visitin' to  
spend a month er two

### GROWIN' GRAY

HELLO, ole man, you're a-gittin'  
gray,  
An' it beats ole Ned to see the  
way  
'At the crow's feet's a-getherin'  
aroun' yore eyes,

Tho' it ought n't to cause me no  
su'prise,  
Fur there's many a sun 'at you've  
seen rise  
An' many a one you've seen go  
down  
Sence yore step was light an' yore  
hair was brown,  
An' storms an' snows have had  
their way —  
Hello, ole man, you're a-gittin'  
gray

Hello, ole man, you're a-gittin'  
gray,  
An' the youthful pranks 'at you  
used to play  
Are dreams of a far past long ago  
That lie in a heart where the fires  
burn low —  
That has lost the flame though it  
kept the glow,  
An' spite of drivin' snow an' storm,  
Beats bravely on forever warm.  
December holds the place of  
May —  
Hello, ole man, you're a-gittin'  
gray

Hello, ole man, you're a-gittin'  
gray —  
Who cares what the carpin' young-  
sters say?  
For, after all, when the tale is told,  
Love proves if a man is young or  
old!  
Old age can't make the heart grow  
cold

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

When it does the will of an honest  
mind  
When it beats with love fur all  
mankind  
Then the night but leads to a fairer  
day —  
Hello ole man you re a gittin  
gray!

### TO THE MEMORY OF MARY YOUNG

God has his plans and what if we  
With our sight be too blind to see  
Their full fruition cannot he  
Who made it solve the mystery?  
One whom we loved has fall'n  
asleep  
Not died, although her calm be  
deep  
Some new unknown and strange  
surprise  
In Heaven holds enrapt her eyes  
  
And can you blame her that her  
gaze  
Is turned away from earthly ways  
When to her eyes God's light and  
love  
Have giv'n the view of things  
above?  
A gentle spirit sweetly good  
The pearl of precious womanhood  
Who heard the voice of duty  
clear  
And found her mission soon and  
near

She loved all nature flowers fair  
The warmth of sun the kiss of air  
The birds that filled the sky with  
song  
The stream that laughed its way  
along  
Her home to her was shrine and  
throne  
But one love held her not alone  
She sought out poverty and grief  
Who touched her robe and found  
relief

So sped she in her Master's  
work  
Too busy and too brave to shirk,  
When through the silence, dusk  
and dim  
God called her and she fled to him  
We wonder at the early call  
And tears of sorrow can but fall  
For her o'er whom we spread the  
pall  
But faith sweet faith is over  
all  
  
The house is dust the voice is  
dumb  
But through undying years to  
come  
The spark that glowed within her  
soul  
Shall light our footsteps to the  
goal  
She went her way but oh she  
trod  
The path that led her straight to  
God

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Such lives as this put death to  
scorn,  
They lose our day to find God's  
morn

### WHEN MALINDY SINGS

G'WAY an' quit dat noise, Miss  
Lucy —

Put dat music book away,  
What's de use to keep on tryin' ?  
Ef you practise twell you're  
gray,

You can't sta't no notes a-flyin'  
Lak de ones dat rants and rings  
F'om de kitchen to be big woods  
When Malindy sings

You ain't got de nachel o'gans  
Fu' to make de soun' come right,  
You ain't got de tu'ns an' twistin's  
Fu' to make it sweet an' light  
Tell you one thing now, Miss  
Lucy,

An' I'm tellin' you fu' true,  
When hit comes to raal right  
sigin',

'T ain't no easy thing to do.

Easy 'nough fu' folks to hollah,  
Lookin' at de lines an' dots,  
When dey ain't no one kin sence it,  
An' de chune comes in, in spots,  
But fu' real melojous music,  
Dat jes' strikes yo' hea't and  
clings,

Jes' you stan' an' listen wif me  
When Malindy sings.

Ain't you nevah hyeahd Malindy?  
Blessed soul, tek up de cross!  
Look hye ih, ain't you jokin',  
honcy ?

Well, you don't know whut you  
los'.

Y' ought to hyeah dat gal a-wa'b-  
lin',

Robins, la'ks, an' all dem things,  
Heish dey moufs an' hides dey  
face.

When Malindy sings.

Fiddlin' man jes' stop his fiddlin',  
Lay his fiddle on de she'f,  
Mockin'-bird quit tryin' to whistle,  
'Cause he jes' so shamed hisse'f  
Folks a-playin' on de banjo  
Drops dey fingahs on de  
strings —

Bless yo' soul — fu'gits to move  
em,

When Malindy sings

She jes' spreads huh mouf and hol-  
lahs,

"Come to Jesus," twell you  
hyeah

Sinnahs' tremblin' steps and voices,  
Timid-lak a-drawin' neah,  
Den she tu'ns to "Rock of Ages,"  
Simply to de cross she clings,  
An' you fin' yo' teahs a-drappin'  
When Malindy sings

Who dat says dat humble praises  
Wif de Master nevah counts?

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Heish yo' mouf, I hyeah dat music,  
Ez hit rises up an mounts —  
Floatin by de hills an valleys,  
Way above dis buryin sod  
Ez hit makes its way in glory  
To de very gates of God!

Oh hit s sweetah dan de music  
Of an edicated band  
An hit s dearah dan de battles  
Song o triumph in de lan  
It seems holier dan evenin  
When de solemn chu'ch bell  
rings  
Ez I sit an camly listen  
While Malindy sings

Towsah, stop dat bakin, hyeah  
me!  
Mandy mek dat chile keep still  
Don't you hyeah de echoes callin  
Fom de valley to de hill?  
Let me listen I can hyeah it  
Thoo de bresh of angels wings  
Sof an sweet ' Swing Low  
Sweet Chariot  
Ez Malindy sings

### THE PARTY

DEY had a gread big pahty  
down to Tom's de othah  
night  
Was I dah? You bet! I nevah  
in my life see sich a sight  
All de folks fom fou plantations  
was invited, an' dey come,

Dey come troopin thick ez chillun  
when dey hyeahs a fife an  
drum  
Evahbody dres ed deir fins —  
Heish yo' mouf an git  
away  
Ain't seen no sich fancy dressin'  
sence las quah tly meetin  
day  
Gals all dressed in silks an satins  
not a wrinkle ner a crease  
Eyes a battin, teeth a shinin hah  
breshed back ez slick ez  
grease  
Skuts all tucked an puffed an  
ruffled evah blessed seam an  
stitch  
Ef you d seen em wif deir mistus  
could n't swahed to which  
was which  
Men all dressed up in Prince Al  
berts swaller tails u d tek yo  
bre!  
I can't tell you nothin bout it  
y ought to seen it fu yo se f  
Who was dah? Now who you  
askin? How you spect I  
gwine to know?  
You mus think I stood an  
counted evahbody at de do  
Ole man Babah's house boy Isaac  
brung dat gal Malindy Jane  
Huh a hangin to his elbow, him  
a struttin wif a cane  
My but Hahvey Jones was jeal  
ous' seemed to stick him lak  
a tho'n



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

But he laughed with Viney Cah-  
teah, tryin' ha'd to not let on,  
But a pusson would 'a' noticed  
f'om de d'rection of his look,  
Dat he was watchin' ev'ry step dat  
Ike an' Lindy took.

Ike he foun' a cheer an' asked huh  
"Won't you set down?" wif  
a smile,

An' she answe'd up a-bowin',  
"Oh, I reckon 't ain't wuth  
while"

Dat was jes' fu' style, I reckon,  
'cause she sot down jes' de  
same,

An' she stayed dah 'twell he  
fetched huh fu' to jine some  
so't o' game,

Den I hyeahd huh sayin' propah,  
ez she riz to go away,

"Oh, you raly mus' excuse me,  
fu' I hardly keers to play"

But I seen huh in a minute wif de  
othahs on de flo',

An' dah was n't any one o' dem  
a-playin' any mo',

Comin' down de flo' a-bowin' an'  
a-swayin' an' a-swingin',

Puttin' on huh high-toned man-  
nahs all de time dat she was  
singin'.

"Oh, swing Johnny up an' down,  
swing him all aroun',

Swing Johnny up an' down, swing  
him all aroun',

Oh, swing Johnny up an' down,  
swing him all aroun'

Fa' you well, my dahlin'."

Had to laff at ole man Johnson,  
he's a caution now, you bet —  
Hittin' clost onto a hunderd, but  
he's spry an' nimble yet,  
He 'lowed how a-so't o' gigglin',  
"I ain't ole, I'll let you see,  
D'ain't no use in gittin' feeble, now  
you youngstahs jes' watch  
me,"

An' he grabbed ole Aunt Marier  
— weighs th'ee hunderd mo  
er less,

An' he spun huh 'roun' de cabin  
swingin' Johnny lak de res'

Evahbody laffed an' hollahed.  
"Go it! Swing huh, Uncle  
Jim!"

An' he swung huh too, I reckon,  
lak a youngstah, who but  
him

Dat was bettah 'n young Scott  
Thomas, tryin' to be so awful  
smaht

You know when dey gits to singin'  
an' dey comes to dat ere paht

"In some lady's new brick  
house,

In some lady's gyahden.

Ef you don't let me out, I  
will jump out,

So fa' you well, my dahlin'"

Den dey's got a circle 'roun' you,  
an' you's got to break de  
line,

Well, dat dahky was so anxious,  
lak to bust hisse'f a-tryin',

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Keep on blund'rin' 'roun' an  
foolin' twell he giv' one  
greed big jump,

Broke de line an lit head fo most  
in de fish place right plump

Hit ad fish in it mind you well,  
I thought my soul I d bust

Tried my best to keep f om laffin',  
but hit seemed like die I  
must!

Y ought to seen dat man a scram  
blin' f om de ashes an de  
grime

Did it bu n him! Sich a question,  
why he did n t give it time

Thow d dem ashes and dem cin  
dahs evah which a way I  
guess

An you nevah did, I reckon clap  
yo eyes on sich a mess

Fu he sholy made a picter an a  
funny one to boot

Wif his clothes all full o ashes  
an his face all full o soot

Well hit laked to stopped de  
pahy an' I reckon lak ez  
not

Dat it would ef Tom's wife,  
Mandy had n t happened on  
de spot

To invite us out to suppah — well,  
we scrambled to de table

An I d lak to tell you 'bout it —  
what we had — but I ain t  
able

Mention jes a few things dough  
I know I had n t orter,

Fu I know t will staht a hank'rin'  
an yo' mouf 'll mence to  
worter

We had wheat bread white ez cot  
ton an a egg pone jes like  
gol

Hog jole bilin hot an steamin  
roasted shoat an ham sliced  
cold —

Look out! What s de mattah wif  
you? Don t be fallin' on de  
flo,

Ef it's go n to fect you dat way  
I won t tell you nothin  
mo

Dah now — well we had hot  
chittlins — now you s tryin  
agin to fall,

Cain t you stan to hyeah about it?  
Spose you d been an seed it  
all

Seed dem greed big sweet pertaters  
layin by de possum's side

Seed dat coon in all his gravy  
reckon den you d up and  
died!

Mandy lowed you all mus  
scuse me, d want much  
upon my she'ves

But I s done my bes to suit you  
so set down an he p  
yo se ves

Tom he 'lowed "I don t b lieve  
in pologisin' an perfessin

Let em tek it lak dey ketch it  
Eldah Thompson ask de  
blessin'

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Wish you'd seed dat colo'ed  
preachah cleah his th'oat an'  
bow his head,  
One eye shet, an' one eye open,—  
dis is evah wud he said  
"Lawd, look down in tendah  
mussy on sich generous hea'ts  
ez dese,  
Make us truly thankful, amen  
Pass dat possum, ef you  
please!"  
Well, we eat and drunk ouah  
po'tion, 'twell dah was n't  
nothin' lef,  
An' we felt jes' like new sausage,  
we was mos' nigh stuffed to  
def!  
Tom, he knowed how we'd be  
feelin', so he had de fiddlah  
'roun',  
An' he made us cleah de cabin  
fu' to dance dat suppah  
down  
Jim, de fiddlah, chuned his fiddle,  
put some rosum on his  
bow,  
Set a pine box on de table, mounted  
it an' let huh go!  
He's a fiddlah, now I tell you, an'  
he made dat fiddle ring,  
'Twell de ol'est an' de lamest had  
to give deir feet a fling.

Jigs, cotillions, reels an' break-  
downs, corderills an' a waltz  
er two;  
Bless yo' soul, dat music winged  
'em an' dem people lak to  
flew.  
Cripple Joe, de old rheumatic,  
danced dat flo' f'om side to  
middle,  
Th'owed away his crutch an'  
hopped it; what's rheumatics  
'ginst a fiddle?  
Eldah Thompson got so tickled  
dat he lak to los' his grace,  
Had to tek bofe feet an' hol' dem  
so's to keep 'em in deir place.  
An' de Christuns an' de sinnahs  
got so mixed up on dat flo',  
Dat I don't see how dey'd pahted  
ef de trump had chanced to  
blow.  
Well, we danced dat way an' ca-  
pahed in de mos' redic'lous  
way,  
'Twell de roostahs in de bahnyard  
cleahed deir th'oats an' crowed  
fu' day  
Y' ought to been dah, fu' I tell  
you evahthing was rich an'  
prime,  
An' dey ain't no use in talkin', we  
jes had one scrumptious time!

## LYRICS OF THE HEARTHSIDE



## LOVE'S APOTHEOSIS

Love me I care not what the  
circling years  
To me may do  
If but in spite of time and tears,  
You prove but true

Love me — albeit grief shall dim  
mine eyes  
And tears bedew  
I shall not even complain for then  
my skies  
Shall still be blue

Love me and though the winter  
snow shall pile  
And leave me chill  
Thy passion's warmth shall make  
for me meanwhile  
A sun-kissed hill

And when the days have length-  
ened into years  
And I grow old  
Oh spite of pains and griefs and  
cares and fears  
Grow thou not cold

Then hand and hand we shall pass  
up the hill  
I say not down  
That twain go up of love who've  
loved their fill —  
To gain love's crown

Love me and let my life take up  
thine own  
As sun the dew  
Come sit my queen for in my  
heart & throne  
Awaits for you!

## THE PARADOX

I AM the mother of sorrows  
I am the ender of grief  
I am the bud and the blossom  
I am the late falling leaf

I am thy priest and thy poet  
I am thy serf and thy king  
I cure the tears of the heartsick  
When I come near they shall  
sing

White are my hands as the snow-  
drop  
Swart are my fingers as clay  
Dark is my frown as the mid-  
night  
Fair is my brow as the day

Battle and war are my minions  
Doing my will as divine  
I am the calmer of passions  
Peace is a nursling of mine

Speak to me gently or curse me  
Seek me or fly from my sight  
I am thy fool in the morning  
Thou art my slave in the night.

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Down to the grave will I take  
    thee,  
    Out from the noise of the  
        strife,  
Then shalt thou see me and know  
    me —  
    Death, then, no longer, but life.

Then shalt thou sing at my com-  
    ing,  
    Kiss me with passionate breath,  
Clasp me and smile to have  
    thought me  
    Aught save the foeman of  
        Death

Come to me, brother, when weary,  
    Come when thy lonely heart  
        swells,  
I'll guide thy footsteps and lead  
    thee  
    Down where the Dream Wom-  
        an dwells.

### OVER THE HILLS

OVER the hills and the valleys of  
    dreaming  
    Slowly I take my way  
Life is the night with its dream-  
    visions teeming,  
    Death is the waking at day

Down thro' the dales and the bow-  
    ers of loving,  
Singing, I roam afar.

Daytime or night-time, I con-  
    stantly roving,—  
Dearest one, thou art my star.

### WITH THE LARK

NIGHT is for sorrow and dawn is  
    for joy,  
Chasing the troubles that fret and  
    annoy,  
Darkness for sighing and daylight  
    for song,—  
Cheery and chaste the strain,  
    heartfelt and strong  
All the night through, though I  
    moan in the dark,  
I wake in the morning to sing  
    with the lark

Deep in the midnight the rain  
    whips the leaves,  
Softly and sadly the wood-spirit  
    grieves  
But when the first hue of dawn  
    tints the sky,  
I shall shake out my wings like  
    the birds and be dry,  
And though, like the rain-drops, I  
    grieved through the dark,  
I shall wake in the morning to  
    sing with the lark

On the high hills of heaven, some  
    morning to be,  
Where the rain shall not grieve  
    thro' the leaves of the tree,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

There my heart will be glad for  
the pain I have known  
For my hand will be clasped in the  
hand of mine own  
And though life has been hard and  
death's pathway been dark  
I shall wake in the morning to  
sing with the lark

### IN SUMMER

Oh summer has clothed the earth  
In a cloak from the loom of  
the sun!  
And a mantle too of the skies  
soft blue  
And a belt where the rivers run

And now for the kiss of the wind  
And the touch of the air's soft  
hands  
With the rest from strife and the  
heat of life  
With the freedom of lakes and  
lands

I envy the farmer's boy  
Who sings as he follows the  
plow,  
While the shining green of the  
young blades lean  
To the breezes that cool his  
brow

He sings to the dewy morn  
No thought of another's ear

But the song he sings is a chant  
for kings

And the whole wide world to  
hear

He sings of the joys of life  
Of the pleasures of work and  
rest

From an overfull heart without  
aim or art

T is a song of the merriest

O ye who toil in the town  
And ye who toil in the mart  
Hear the artless song and your  
faith made strong  
Shall renew your joy of heart

Oh poor were the worth of the  
world

If never a song were heard —  
If the sting of grief had no re-  
lief

And never a heart were stirred

So long as the streams run down  
And as long as the robins trill  
Let us taunt old Care with a  
merry air

And sing in the face of ill

### THE MYSTIC SEA

THE smell of the sea in my nos-  
trils

The sound of the sea in mine  
ears



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

The touch of the spray on my  
burning face,  
Like the mist of reluctant tears

The blue of the sky above me,  
The green of the waves beneath,  
The sun flashing down on a gray-  
white sail  
Like a scimitar from its sheath

And ever the breaking billows,  
And ever the rocks' disdain,  
And ever a thrill in mine inmost  
heart  
That my reason cannot explain

So I say to my heart, "Be silent,  
The mystery of time is here,  
Death's way will be plain when  
we fathom the main,  
And the secret of life be clear"

### A SAILOR'S SONG

OH for the breath of the briny  
deep,  
And the tug of the bellying sail,  
With the sea-gull's cry across the  
sky

And a passing boatman's hail.  
For, be she fierce or be she gay,  
The sea is a famous friend away

Ho! for the plains where the  
dolphins play,  
And the bend of the mast and  
spars,

And a fight at night with the wild  
sea-sprite  
When the foam has drowned the  
stars

And, pray, what joy can the lands-  
man feel  
Like the rise and fall of a sliding  
keel?

Fair is the mead, the lawn is fair  
And the birds sing sweet on the  
lea,  
But the echo soft of a song aloft  
Is the strain that pleases me,  
And swish of rope and ring of  
chain  
Are music to men who sail the  
main

Then, if you love me, let me sail  
While a vessel dares the deep,  
For the ship's my wife, and the  
breath of life  
Are the raging gales that sweep,  
And when I'm done with calm  
and blast,  
A slide o'er the side, and rest at  
last

### THE BOHEMIAN

BRING me the livery of no other  
man

I am my own to robe me at my  
pleasure  
Accepted rules to me disclose no  
treasure.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

What is the chief who shall my  
garments plan?

No garb conventional but I'll  
attack it

(Come, why not don my span  
gled jacket?)

### ABSENCE

GOOD NIGHT my love for I have  
dreamed of thee

In waking dreams until my soul  
is lost —

Is lost in passion's wide and shore  
less sea

Where like a ship unruddered it  
is tost

Hither and thither at the wild  
waves will

There is no potent Master's voice  
to still

This newer more tempestuous  
Galilee!

The stormy petrels of my fancy  
fly

In warning course across the  
darkening green,

And like a frightened bird my  
heart doth cry

And seek to find some rock of rest  
between

The threatening sky and the re  
lentless wave

It is not length of life that grief  
doth crave

But only calm and peace in which  
to die

Here let me rest upon this single  
hope

For oh my wings are weary of the  
wind

And with its stress no more may  
strive or cope

One cry has dulled mine ears  
mine eyes are blind —

Would that o'er all the interven  
ing space

I might fly forth and see thee face  
to face

I fly I search but love in gloom  
I grope

Fly home far bird unto thy wait  
ing nest

Spread thy strong wings above the  
wind swept sea

Beat the grim breeze with thy un  
ruffled breast

Until thou sittest wing to wing  
with me

Then let the past bring up its  
tales of wrong

We shall chant low our sweet con  
nubial song

Till storm and doubt and past no  
more shall be!

### HER THOUGHT AND HIS

THE gray of the sea and the gray  
of the sky

A glimpse of the moon like a half  
closed eye

The gleam on the waves and the  
light on the land

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

A thrill in my heart,— and — my  
sweetheart's hand

She turned from the sea with a  
woman's grace,  
And the light fell soft on her  
upturned face,  
And I thought of the flood-tide of  
infinite bliss  
That would flow to my heart from  
a single kiss.

But my sweetheart was shy, so I  
dared not ask  
For the boon, so bravely I wore  
the mask.  
But into her face there came a  
flame —  
I wonder could she have been  
thinking the same?

### THE RIGHT TO DIE

I HAVE no fancy for that ancient  
cant  
That makes us masters of our des-  
tinies,  
And not our lives, to hold or give  
them up  
As will directs, I cannot, will not  
think  
That men, the subtle worms, who  
plot and plan  
And scheme and calculate with  
such shrewd wit,  
Are such great blund'ring fools as  
not to know

When they have lived enough.

Men court not death  
When there are sweets still left in  
life to taste  
Nor will a brave man choose to  
live when he,  
Full deeply drunk of life, has  
reached the dregs,  
And knows that now but bitter-  
ness remains  
He is the coward who, outfaced  
in this,  
Fears the false goblins of another  
life  
I honor him who being much  
harassed  
Drinks of sweet courage until  
drunk of it,—  
Then seizing Death, reluctant, by  
the hand,  
Leaps with him, fearless, to eter-  
nal peace!

### BEHIND THE ARRAS

As in some dim baronial hall re-  
strained,  
A prisoner sits, engirt by secret  
doors  
And waving tapestries that argue  
forth  
Strange passages into the outer  
air,  
So in this dimmer room which we  
call life,  
Thus sits the soul and marks with  
eye intent

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

That mystic curtain o'er the por- tal death	In those moods of silent dream- ing
Still deeming that behind the arras lies	When the old man smokes
The lambent way that leads to lasting light	Ah perhaps he sits there dream- ing
Poor fooled and foolish soul!	Of the love of other days
Know now that death	And of how he used to lead her
Is but a blind false door that no where leads	Through the merry dance's maze
And gives no hope of exit final free	How he called her little prin- cess

### WHEN THE OLD MAN SMOKES

In the forenoon's restful quiet When the boys are off at school When the window lights are shaded And the chimney corner cool Then the old man seeks his arm chair Lights his pipe and settles back Falls a dreaming as he draws it Till the smoke wreaths gather black	Tender wreaths to crown her tresses From the matrimony vine  Then before his mental vision Comes perhaps a sadder day When they left his little princess Sleeping with her fellow clay How his young heart throbbed and pained him! Why the memory of it chokes! Is it of these things he's thinking When the old man smokes?
And the tear drops come a trick- ling Down his cheeks a silver flow — Smoke or memories you wonder But you never ask him — no For there's something almost sa- cred To the other family folks	But some brighter thoughts pos- sess him For the tears are dried the while And the old worn face is wrin- kled In a reminiscent smile From the middle of the forehead To the feebly trembling lip

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

At some ancient prank remembered  
Or some long unheard-of quip

Then the lips relax their tension  
And the pipe begins to slide,  
Till in little clouds of ashes,  
It falls softly at his side,  
And his head bends low and lower  
Till his chin lies on his breast,  
And he sits in peaceful slumber  
Like a little child at rest.

Dear old man, there's something  
sad'ning,

In these dreamy moods of yours,  
Since the present proves so fleeting,  
ing,

All the past for you endures  
Weeping at forgotten sorrows,  
Smiling at forgotten jokes;  
Life epitomized in minutes,  
When the old man smokes

### THE GARRET

WITHIN a London garret high,  
Above the roofs and near the sky,  
My ill-rewarding pen I ply  
To win me bread  
This little chamber, six by four,  
Is castle, study, den, and more,—  
Altho' no carpet decks the floor,  
Nor down, the bed

My room is rather bleak and bare;  
I only have one broken chair,  
But then, there's plenty of fresh  
air,—

Some light, beside.  
What tho' I cannot ask my friends  
To share with me my odds and  
ends,  
A liberty my aerie lends,  
To most denied

The bore who falters at the stair  
No more shall be my curse and  
care,

And duns shall fail to find my lair  
With beastly bills  
When debts have grown and  
funds are short,

I find it rather pleasant sport  
To live "above the common sort"  
With all their ills.

I write my rhymes and sing away,  
And dawn may come or dusk or  
day.

Tho' fare be poor, my heart is  
gay,

And full of glee  
Though chimney-pots be all my  
views,

'Tis nearer for the winging  
Muse,

So I am sure she'll not refuse  
To visit me.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### TO E H K

#### ON THE RECEIPT OF A FAMILIAR POEM

To me like hauntings of a va-  
grant breath  
From some far forest which I  
once have known  
The perfume of this flower of  
verse is blown  
Tho seemingly soul blossoms frunt  
to death  
Naught that with joy she bears  
e'er withereth  
So tho the pregnant years have  
come and flown  
Lives come and gone and al-  
tered like mine own  
This poem comes to me a shib-  
boleth  
Brings sound of past communings  
to my ear,  
Turns round the tide of time  
and bears me back  
Along an old and long un-  
traversed way  
Makes me forget this is a later  
year  
Makes me tread o'er a reminis-  
cent track  
Half sad half glad to one  
forgotten day!

### A BRIDAL MEASURE

COME essay a sprightly measure  
Tuned to some light song of  
pleasure

Maidens let your brows be  
crowned  
As we foot this merry round

From the ground a voice is sing-  
ing  
From the sod a soul is springing  
Who shall say 'tis but a clod  
Quickning upward toward its  
God?

Who shall say it? Who may  
know it  
That the clod is not a poet  
Waiting but a gleam to waken  
In a spirit music shaken?

Phyllis Phyllis why be waiting?  
In the woods the birds are mating  
From the tree beside the wall  
Hear the am'rous robin call

Listen to yon thrush's trilling  
Phyllis Phyllis are you willing  
When love speaks from cave  
and tree  
Only we should silent be?

When the year itself renewing  
All the world with flowers is  
strewing  
Then through Youth's Arcadian  
land  
Love and song go hand in hand

Come unfold your vocal treasure  
Sing with me a nuptial measure—  
Let this springtime gambol be  
Bridal dance for you and me

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

### VENGEANCE IS SWEET

WHEN I was young I longed for  
Love,  
And held his glory far above  
All other earthly things I cried:  
"Come, Love, dear Love, with me  
abide,"  
And with my subtlest art I wooed,  
And eagerly the wight pursued  
But Love was gay and Love was  
shy,  
He laughed at me and passed me  
by

Well, I grew old and I grew gray,  
When Wealth came wending  
down my way  
I took his golden hand with glee,  
And comrades from that day were  
we  
Then Love came back with dole-  
ful face,  
And prayed that I would give him  
place  
But, though his eyes with tears  
were dim,  
I turned my back and laughed at  
him

### A HYMN

AFTER READING "LEAD, KINDLY  
LIGHT"

LEAD gently, Lord, and slow,  
For oh, my steps are weak,  
And ever as I go,  
Some soothing sentence speak,

That I may turn my face  
Through doubt's obscurity  
Toward thine abiding-place,  
E'en tho' I cannot see

For lo, the way is dark,  
Through mist and cloud I grope,  
Save for that fitful spark,  
The little flame of-hope

Lead gently, Lord, and slow,  
For fear that I may fall;  
I know not where to go  
Unless I hear thy call

My fainting soul doth yearn  
For thy green hills afar,  
So let thy mercy burn —  
My greater, guiding star!

### JUST WHISTLE A BIT

JUST whistle a bit, if the day be  
dark,  
And the sky be overcast.  
If mute be the voice of the piping  
lark,  
Why, pipe your own small blast.

And it's wonderful how o'er the  
gray sky-track  
The truant warbler comes steal-  
ing back  
But why need he come? for your  
soul's at rest,  
And the song in the heart,—ah,  
that is best

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Just whistle a bit if the night be  
drear

And the stars refuse to shine  
And a gleam that mocks the star  
light clear

Within you glows benign

Till the dearth of light in the  
glooming skies

Is lost to the sight of your soul lit  
eyes

What matters the absence of moon  
or star?

The light within is the best by far

Just whistle a bit, if there s work  
to do

With the mind or in the soil  
And your note will turn out a  
talisman true  
To exorcise grim Toil

It will lighten your burden and  
make you feel

That there s nothing like work as  
a sauce for a meal

And with song in your heart and  
the meal in — its place

There ll be joy in your bosom and  
light in your face

Just whistle a bit if your heart  
be sore

Tis a wonderful balm for pain  
Just pipe some old melody o'er  
and o'er

Till it soothes like summer rain

And perhaps t would be best in a  
later day

When Death comes stalking down  
the way

To knock at your bosom and see  
if you re fit

Then as you wait calmly, just  
whistle a bit

### THE BARRIER

THE Midnight wooed the Morn  
ing Star

And prayed her Love come  
nearer

Your swinging coldly there afar  
To me but makes you dearer!"

The Morning Star was pale with  
dole

As said she low replying

'Oh lover mine soul of my soul,  
For you I too am sighing

'But One ordained when we  
were born

In spite of Love s insistence

That Night might only view the  
Morn

Adoring at a distance'

But as she spoke the jealous Sun  
Across the heavens panted

'Oh whining fools he cried  
have done

Your wishes shall be granted!



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

He hurled his flaming lances far,  
The twain stood unaffrighted —  
And Midnight and the Morning-  
Star  
Lay down in death united!

He set his foot upon Fame's  
nether stair  
But ah, his dream,—it had  
entranced him so  
He could not move He could  
no farther go,  
But paused in joy that he was even  
there!

### DREAMS

DREAM on, for dreams are sweet.  
Do not awaken!  
Dream on, and at thy feet  
Pomegranates shall be shaken

Who likeneth the youth  
Of life to morning?  
'Tis like the night in truth,  
Rose-coloured dreams adorning

The wind is soft above,  
The shadows umber  
(There is a dream called Love)  
Take thou the fullest slumber!

In Lethe's soothing stream,  
Thy thirst thou slakest  
Sleep, sleep; 't is sweet to dream  
Oh, weep when thou awakest!

### THE DREAMER

TEMPLES he built and palaces of  
air,  
And, with the artist's parent-  
pride aglow,  
His fancy saw his vague ideals  
grow  
Into creations marvellously fair,

He did not wake until one day  
there gleamed  
'Thro' his dark consciousness a  
light that racked  
His being till he rose, alert to act.  
But lo! what he had dreamed, the  
while he dreamed,  
Another, wedding action unto  
thought,  
Into the living, pulsing world  
had brought

### WAITING

THE sun has slipped his tether  
And galloped down the west.  
(Oh, it's weary, weary waiting,  
love)  
The little bird is sleeping  
In the softness of its nest  
Night follows day, day follows  
dawn,  
And so the time has come and  
gone  
And it's weary, weary waiting,  
love

The cruel wind is rising  
With a whistle and a wail

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

(And it s weary weary waiting  
love )

My eyes are seaward straining  
For the coming of a sail,  
But void the sea and void the  
beach  
Far and beyond where gaze can  
reach!

And it s weary weary waiting  
love

I heard the bell buoy ringing—  
How long ago it seems!  
(Oh it s weary weary waiting  
love )

And ever still its knelling  
Crashes in upon my dreams  
The banns were read my frock  
was sewn

Since then two seasons winds  
have blown—

And it s weary, weary waiting  
love

The stretches of the ocean  
Are bare and bleak to-day  
(Oh it s weary, weary waiting  
love )

My eyes are growing dimmer—  
Is it tears or age or spray?  
But I will stay till you come home  
Strange ships come in across the  
foam!

But it s weary, weary waiting  
love

## THE END OF THE CHAPTER

All yes the chapter ends to day,  
We even lay the book away  
But oh, how sweet the moments  
sped  
Before the final page was read!

We tried to read between the lines  
The Author s deep-concealed de  
signs

But scant reward such search se  
cures  
You saw my heart and I saw  
yours

The Master—He who penned  
the page  
And bade us read it—He is sage  
And what he orders you and I  
Can but obey nor question why

We read together and forgot  
The world about us Time was  
not

Unheeded and unfelt it fled  
We read and hardly knew we  
read

Until beneath a sadder sun  
We came to know the book was  
done  
Then as our minds were but new  
lit  
It dawned upon us what was writ

And we were startled In our  
eyes,

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Looked forth the light of great  
surprise

Then as a deep-toned tocsin tolls,  
A voice spoke forth "Behold  
your soul!"

I do, I do I cannot look  
Into your eyes so close the book  
But brought it grief or brought it  
bliss,  
No other page shall read like this!

### SYMPATHY

I KNOW what the caged bird feels,  
alas!

When the sun is bright on the  
upland slopes,

When the wind stirs soft through  
the springing grass,

And the river flows like a stream  
of glass,

When the first bird sings and  
the first bud opes,

And the faint perfume from its  
chalice steals —

I know what the caged bird feels!

I know why the caged bird beats  
his wing

Till its blood is red on the cruel  
bars,

For he must fly back to his perch  
and cling

When he fain would be on the  
bough a-swing,

And a pain still throbs in the  
old, old scars

And they pulse again with a keener  
sting —

I know why he beats his wing!

I know why the caged bird sings,  
ah me,

When his wing is bruised and  
his bosom sore,—

When he beats his bars and he  
would be free,

It is not a carol of joy or glee,

But a prayer that he sends from  
his heart's deep core,

But a plea, that upward to Heaven  
he flings —

I know why the caged bird sings!

### LOVE AND GRIEF

OUT of my heart, one treach'rous  
winter's day,

I locked young Love and threw  
the key away.

Grief, wandering widely, found  
the key,

And hastened with it, straight-  
way, back to me,

With Love beside him He un-  
locked the door

And bade Love enter with him  
there and stay

And so the twain abide for ever-  
more.

### LOVE'S CHASTENING

Once Love grew bold and arro-  
gant of air,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Proud of the youth that made him  
fresh and fur

So unto Grief he spake    What  
right hast thou

To part or parcel of this heart? '   
Grief's brow

Was darkened with the storm of  
inward strife,

Thrice smote he Love as only he  
might dare

And Love pride purged was chas-  
tened all his life

### MORTALITY

ASHES to ashes dust unto dust,  
What of his loving what of his  
lust?

What of his passion, what of his  
pain?

What of his poverty what of his  
pride?

Earth the great mother has called  
him again

Deeply he sleeps the world's ver-  
dict defied

Shall he be tried again? Shall he  
go free?

Who shall the court convene?  
Where shall it be?

No answer on the land none from  
the sea

Only we know that as he did we  
must

You with your theories you with  
your trust—

Ashes to ashes dust unto dust!

### LOVE

A LIFE was mine full of the close  
concern

Of many voiced affairs The  
world sped fast

Behind me, ever rolled a preg-  
nant past

A present came equipped with lore  
to learn

Art science letters in their turn  
Each one allured me with its  
treasures vast

And I staked all for wisdom,  
till at last

Thou camst and taught my soul  
anew to yearn

I had not dreamed that I could  
turn away

From all that men with brush  
and pen had wrought

But ever since that memorable  
day

When to my heart the truth of  
love was brought,

I have been wholly yielded to  
its sway

And had no room for any other  
thought

### SHE GAVE ME A ROSE

SHE gave a rose

And I kissed it and pressed it

I love her she knows

And my action confessed it

She gave me a rose

And I kissed it and pressed it

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Ah, how my heart glows,  
    Could I ever have guessed it?  
It is fair to suppose  
    That I might have repressed it.  
She gave me a rose,  
    And I kissed it and pressed it

'T was a rhyme in life's prose  
    That uplifted and blest it  
Man's nature, who knows  
    Until love comes to test it?  
She gave me a rose,  
    And I kissed it and pressed it.

### DREAM SONG I

LONG years ago, within a distant  
    clime,  
Ere Love had touched me with  
    his wand sublime,  
I dreamed of one to make my life's  
    calm May  
The panting passion of a sum-  
    mer's day  
And ever since, in almost sad sus-  
    pense,  
I have been waiting with a soul  
    intense  
To greet and take unto myself  
    the beams,  
Of her, my star, the lady of my  
    dreams  
O Love, still longed and looked  
    for, come to me,

Be thy far home by mountain,  
    vale, or sea  
My yearning heart may never find  
    its rest  
Until thou liest rapt upon my  
    breast  
The wind may bring its perfume  
    from the south,  
Is it so sweet as breath from my  
    love's mouth?  
Oh, naught that surely is, and  
    naught that seems  
May turn me from the lady of my  
    dreams.

### DREAM SONG II

PRAY, what can dreams avail  
    To make love or to mar?  
The child within the cradle rail  
    Lies dreaming of the star  
But is the star by this beguiled  
    To leave its place and seek the  
    child?  
The poor plucked rose within its  
    glass  
Still dreameth of the bee,  
But, tho' the lagging moments  
    pass,  
Her Love she may not see  
If dream of child and flower fail,  
Why should a maiden's dreams  
    prevail?

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### CHRISTMAS IN THE HEART

THE snow lies deep upon the  
ground  
And winter's brightness all around  
Decks bravely out the forest sere  
With jewels of the brave old year  
The coasting crowd upon the hill  
With some new spirit seems to  
thrill  
And all the temple bells achime  
Ring out the glee of Christmas  
time

In happy homes the brown oak  
bough  
Vies with the red gemmed holly  
now,  
And here and there like pearls  
there show  
The berries of the mistletoe  
A sorig upon the chandelier  
Says to the maidens Come not  
here!  
Even the pauper of the earth  
Some kindly gift has cheered to  
mirth!

Within his chamber dim and cold  
There sits a grasping miser old  
He has no thought save one of  
gain —  
To grind and gather and grasp  
and drain  
A peal of bells a merry shout  
Assail his ear he gazes out  
Upon a world to him all gray

And snarls Why this is Christ  
mas Day!

No man of ice — for shame for  
shame!  
For 'Christmas Day' is no mere  
name  
No not for you this ringing cheer  
This festal season of the year  
And not for you the chime of bells  
From holy temple rolls and swells  
In day and deed he has no part —  
Who holds not Christmas in his  
heart!

### THE KING IS DEAD

AYE lay him in his grave the old  
dead year!  
His life is lived — fulfilled his  
destiny  
Have you for him no sad regret  
ful tear  
To drop beside the cold unfol  
lowed bier?  
Can you not pay the tribute of a  
sigh?

Was he not kind to you this dead  
old year?  
Did he not give enough of earthly  
store?  
Enough of love and laughter, and  
good cheer?  
Have not the skies you scanned  
sometimes been clear?

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

How, then, of him who dies, could  
you ask more?

It is not well to hate him for the  
pain

He brought you, and the sorrows  
manifold.

To pardon him these hurts still I  
am fain,

For in the panting period of his  
reign,

He brought me new wounds, but  
he healed the old

One little sigh for thee, my poor,  
dead friend —

One little sigh while my com-  
panions sing

Thou art so soon forgotten in the  
end,

We cry e'en as thy footsteps down-  
ward tend

"The king is dead! long live the  
king!"

### THEOLOGY

THERE is a heaven, for ever, day  
by day,

The upward longing of my soul  
doth tell me so

There is a hell, I'm quite as sure,  
for pray,

If there were not, where would  
my neighbours go?

### RESIGNATION

LONG had I grieved at what I  
deemed abuse,

But now I am as grain within  
the mill

If so be thou must crush me for  
thy use,

Grind on, O potent God, and  
do thy will!

### LOVE'S HUMILITY

AS some rapt gazer on the lowly  
earth,

Looks up to radiant planets,  
ranging far,

So I, whose soul doth know thy  
wondrous worth

Look longing up to thee as to a  
star

### PRECEDENT

THE poor man went to the rich  
man's doors,

"I come as Lazarus came," he  
said.

The rich man turned with humble  
head,—

"I will send my dogs to lick your  
sores!"

### SHE TOLD HER BEADS

SHE told her beads with down-  
cast eyes,

Within the ancient chapel dim;  
And ever as her fingers slim

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Slept o'er the insensate ivories  
My rapt soul followed, spaniel  
wise.

Ah, many were the beads she wore  
But as she told them o'er and  
o'er

They did not number all my sighs  
My heart was filled with unvoiced  
cries

And prayers and pleadings un  
expressed

But while I burned with Love's  
unrest

She told her beads with down  
cast eyes.

### LITTLE LUCY LANDMAN

Oh the day has set me dreaming  
In a strange half solemn way  
Of the feelings I experienced

On another long past day —  
Of the way my heart made music  
When the buds began to blow  
And o little Lucy Landman

Whom I loved long years ago

It is in spring the poet tells us  
That we turn to thoughts of  
love

And our hearts go out a wooing  
With the lapwing and the dove  
But whenever the soul goes seeking  
Its twin soul upon the wing

I've a notion backed by memory  
That it is love that makes the  
spring

I have heard a robin singing  
When the boughs were brown  
and bare

And the chilling hand of winter  
Scattered jewels through the air  
And in spite of dates and seasons

It was always spring I know  
When I loved Lucy Landman  
In the days of long ago

Ah my little Lucy Landman,

I remember you as well

As if it were only yesterday

I strove your thoughts to tell —

When I tilted back your bonnet,

Looked into your eyes so true

Just to see if you were loving

Me as I was loving you

Ah my little Lucy Landman

It is true it was denied

You should see a fuller summer

And an autumn by my side

But the glance of love's sweet sun  
light

Which your eyes that morning  
gave

Has leapt spring within my bosom

Though you lie within the  
grave

### THE GOURD

In the heavy earth the miner  
Toiled and laboured day by day  
Wrenching from the miser moun  
tain

Brilliant treasure where it lay



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

And the artist worn and weary  
Wrought with labour manifold  
That the king might drink his  
nectar  
From a goblet made of gold

On the prince's groaning table  
Mid the silver gleaming bright  
Mirroring the happy faces  
Giving back the flaming light,  
Shine the cups of priceless crystal  
Chased with many a lovely line,  
Glowing now with warmer colour,  
Crimsoned by the ruby wine

In a valley sweet with sunlight,  
Fertile with the dew and rain,  
Without miner's daily labour,  
Without artist's nightly pain,  
There there grows the cup I drink  
from,  
Summer's sweetness in it stored,  
And my lips pronounce a blessing  
As they touch an old brown  
gourd

Why, the miracle at Cana  
In the land of Galilee,  
Tho' it puzzles all the scholars,  
Is no longer strange to me  
For the poorest and the humblest  
Could a priceless wine afford,  
If they'd only dip up water  
With a sunlight-seasoned gourd

So a health to my old comrade,  
And a song of praise to sing

When he rests inviting kisses  
In his place beside the spring  
Give the king his golden goblets,  
Give the prince his crystal  
hoard;  
But for me the sparkling water  
From a brown and brimming  
gourd!

### THE KNIGHT

OUR good knight, Ted, girds his  
broadsword on  
(And he wields it well, I  
ween),  
He's on his steed, and away has  
gone  
To the fight for king and queen.  
What tho' no edge the broadsword  
hath?  
What tho' the blade be made of  
lath?  
'T is a valiant hand  
That wields the brand,  
So, foeman, clear the path!

He prances off at a goodly pace,  
'T is a noble steed he rides,  
That bears as well in the speedy  
race  
As he bears in battle-tides  
What tho' 't is but a rocking-chair  
That prances with this stately air?  
'T is a warrior bold  
The reins doth hold,  
Who bids all foes beware!

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### THOU ART MY LUTE

THOU art my lute by thee I  
sing —

My being is attuned to thee  
Thou settest all my words a wing  
And meltest me to melody

Thou art my life by thee I live  
From thee proceed the joys I  
know

Sweetheart thy hand has power  
to give  
The meed of love — the cup of  
woe

Thou art my love by thee I lead  
My soul the paths of light along  
From vale to vale from mead to  
mead  
And home it in the hills of song

My song, my soul, my life my all  
Why need I pray or make my  
plea

Since my petition cannot fall  
For I m already one with thee!

### THE PHANTOM KISS

ONE night in my room still and  
beamless

With will and with thought in  
eclipse  
I rested in sleep that was dream  
less

When softly there fell on my  
lips

A touch as of lips that were press  
ing

Mine own with the message of  
bliss —

A sudden soft, fleeting caressing  
A breath like a maiden's first  
kiss

I woke — and the scoffer may  
doubt me —

I peered in surprise through the  
gloom

But nothing and none were about  
me

And I was alone in my room

Perhaps 't was the wind that  
caressed me

And touched me with dew laden  
breath

Or maybe close sweeping there  
passed me

The low winging Angel of  
Death

Some sceptic may choose to dis  
dain it

Or *one feign to read it aright*

Or wisdom may seek to explain  
it —

This mystical kiss in the night

But rather let fancy thus clear it  
That thinking of me here alone  
The miles were made naught and  
in spirit

Thy lips love were laid on  
mine own

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## COMMUNION

IN the silence of my heart,  
I will spend an hour with thee,  
When my love shall rend apart  
All the veil of mystery:

All that dim and misty veil  
That shut in between our souls  
When Death cried, "Ho, maiden,  
hail!"  
And your barque sped on the  
shoals

On the shoals? Nay, wrongly  
said.  
On the breeze of Death that  
sweeps  
Far from life, thy soul has sped  
Out into unsounded deeps

I shall take an hour and come  
Sailing, darling, to thy side  
Wind nor sea may keep me from  
Soft communings with my bride

I shall rest my head on thee  
As I did long days of yore,  
When a calm, untroubled sea  
Rocked thy vessel at the shore.

I shall take thy hand in mine,  
And live o'er the olden days  
When thy smile to me was wine,—  
Golden wine thy word of praise,

For the carols I had wrought  
In my soul's simplicity,

For the petty beads of thought  
Which thine eyes alone could  
see

Ah, those eyes, love-blind, but keen  
For my welfare and my weal!  
Tho' the grave-door shut between,  
Still their love-lights o'er me  
steal

I can see thee thro' my tears,  
As thro' rain we see the sun.  
What tho' cold and cooling years  
Shall their bitter courses run,—

I shall see thee still and be  
Thy true lover evermore,  
And thy face shall be to me  
Dear and helpful as before.

Death may vaunt and Death may  
boast,  
But we laugh his pow'r to  
scorn,  
He is but a slave at most,—  
Night that heralds coming morn.

I shall spend an hour with thee  
Day by day, my little bride  
True love laughs at mystery,  
Crying, "Doors of Death, fly  
wide"

## MARE RUBRUM

IN Life's Red Sea with faith I  
plant my feet,  
And wait the sound of that sus-  
taining word

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Which long ago the men of  
Israel heard  
When Pharaoh's host behind them  
fierce and fleet  
Raged on consuming with re-  
vengeful heat  
Why are the barrier waters  
still unstirred? —  
That struggling faith may die  
of hope deferred?  
Is God not sitting in His ancient  
seat?

The billows swirl above my trem-  
bling limbs  
And almost chill my anxious  
heart to doubt  
And disbelief, long conquered  
and defied  
But tho' the music of my hopeful  
hymns  
Is drowned by curses of the rag-  
ing rout,  
No voice yet bids th' opposing  
waves divide!

### IN AN ENGLISH GARDEN

IN this old garden fair I walk  
to day  
Heart-charmed with all the  
beauty of the scene  
The rich luxuriant grasses  
cooling green  
The wall's environing ivy decked and  
gray,

The waving branches with the  
wind at play  
The slight and tremulous  
blossoms that show between  
Sweet all and yet my yearning  
heart doth lean  
Toward Love's Egyptian flesh  
pots far away

Beside the wall the slim Labur-  
num grows  
And flings its golden flow'rs to  
every breeze  
But e'en among such soothing  
sights as these  
I pant and nurse my soul devour-  
ing woes  
Of all the longings that our  
hearts wot of  
There is no hunger like the want  
of love!

### THE CRISIS

A MAN of low degree was sore op-  
pressed  
Fate held him under iron handed  
sway  
And ever, those who saw him  
thus distressed  
Would bid him bend his stub-  
born will and pray  
But he strong in himself and ob-  
durate  
Waged prayerless on his losing  
fight with Fate

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Friends gave his proffered hand  
    their coldest clasp,  
Or took it not at all, and Poverty,  
    That bruised his body with relentless grasp,  
Grinned, taunting, when he  
    struggled to be free.  
But though with helpless hands he  
    beat the air,  
His need extreme yet found no  
    voice in prayer

Then he prevailed, and forthwith  
    snobbish Fate,  
Like some whipped cur, came  
    fawning at his feet,  
Those who had scorned forgave  
    and called him great—  
His friends found out that  
    friendship still was sweet  
But he, once obdurate, now bowed  
    his head  
In prayer, and trembling with its  
    import, said.

“Mere human strength may stand  
    ill-fortune's frown,  
So I prevailed, for human  
    strength was mine;  
But from the killing pow'r of  
    great renown,  
Naught may protect me save a  
    strength divine  
Help me, O Lord, in this my  
    trembling cause,  
I scorn men's curses, but I dread  
    applause!”

## THE CONQUERORS

THE BLACK TROOPS IN CUBA  
ROUND the wide earth, from the  
    red field your valour has won,  
Blown with the breath of the far-  
    speaking gun,  
Goes the word  
Bravely you spoke through the bat-  
    tle cloud heavy and dun  
Tossed though the speech toward  
    the mist-hidden sun,  
The world heard.

Hell would have shrunk from you  
    seeking it fresh from the fray,  
Grim with the dust of the battle,  
    and gray  
From the fight.  
Heaven would have crowned you,  
    with crowns not of gold but  
    of bay,  
Owning you fit for the light of  
    her day,  
Men of night

Far through the cycle of years and  
    of lives that shall come,  
There shall speak voices long muf-  
    fled and dumb,  
Out of fear  
And through the noises of trade  
    and the turbulent hum,  
Truth shall rise over the militant  
    drum,  
Loud and clear

Then on the cheek of the honestest  
    nation that grows,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

All for their love of you not for  
your woes

There shall lie  
Tears that shall be to your souls as  
the dew to the rose  
Afterward thanks that the pres-  
ent yet knows  
Not to ply!

### ALEXANDER CRUMMELL — DEAD

BACK to the breast of thy mother  
Child of the earth!  
E'en her cares can not smother  
What thou hast done  
Follow the trail of the westering  
sun

Over the earth  
Thy light and his were as one —  
Sun in thy worth  
Unto a nation who e sky was as  
night  
Camest thou holily bearing thy  
light  
And the dawn came  
In it thy fame  
Flashed up in a flame

Back to the breast of thy mother —  
To rest  
Long hast thou striven  
Dared where the hills by the light  
ning of heaven were riven  
Go now pure shriven  
Who shall come after thee out of  
the clay —

Learned one and leader to show  
us the way?

Who shall rise up when the world  
gives the test?  
Think thou no more of this —  
Rest!

### WHEN ALL IS DONE

WHEN all is done and my last  
word is said  
And ye who loved me murmur  
He is dead  
Let no one weep for fear that I  
should know  
And sorrow too that ye should  
sorrow so

When all is done and in the ooz-  
ing clay  
Ye lay this cast off hull of mine  
away  
Pray not for me for after long  
despair  
The quiet of the grave will be a  
prayer

For I have suffered loss and  
grievous pain  
The hurts of hatred and the  
world's disdain  
And wounds so deep that love  
well tried and pure  
Had not the pow'r to ease them  
or to cure

When all is done, say not my day  
is o'er

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

And that thro' night I seek a dimmer shore  
Say rather that my morn has just begun,—  
I greet the dawn and not a setting sun,  
    When all is done.

### THE POET AND THE BABY

How's a man to write a sonnet,  
    can you tell,—  
How 's he going to weave the dim,  
    poetic spell,—  
    When a-toddling on the floor  
    Is the muse he must adore,  
And this muse he loves, not  
    wisely, but too well?

Now, to write a sonnet, every one  
    allows,  
One must always be as quiet as a  
    mouse,  
    But to write one seems to me  
    Quite superfluous to be,  
When you've got a little sonnet  
    in the house

Just a dainty little poem, true and  
    fine,  
That is full of love and life in  
    every line,  
    Earnest, delicate, and sweet,  
Altogether so complete

That I wonder what's the use of  
    writing mine

### DISTINCTION

"I AM but clay," the sinner plead,  
    Who fed each vain desire  
"Not only clay," another said,  
    "But worse, for thou art mire."

### THE SUM

A LITTLE dreaming by the way,  
A little toiling day by day,  
A little pain, a little strife,  
A little joy,—and that is life

A little short-lived summer's  
    morn,  
When joy seems all so newly born,  
When one day's sky is blue above,  
And one bird sings,—and that is  
    love.

A little sickening of the years,  
The tribute of a few hot tears  
Two folded hands, the failing  
    breath,  
And peace at last,—and that is  
    death

Just dreaming, loving, dying so,  
The actors in the drama go —  
A fitting picture on a wall,  
Love, Death, the themes, but is  
    that all?

# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

## SONNET

ON AN OLD BOOK WITH UNCUT  
LEAVES

EMBLEM of blasted hope and lost  
desire

No finger ever traced thy yel  
low page

Save Times Thou hast not  
wrought to noble rage

The hearts thou wouldst have  
stirred Not any fire

Save sad flames set to light a fu  
neral pyre

Dost thou suggest Nay — im  
potent in age

Unsought thou holdst a corner  
of the stage

And ceasest even dumbly to aspire

How different was the thought of  
him that writ

What promised he to love of  
ease and wealth

When men should read and kin  
dle at his wit

But here decay eats up the book  
by stealth,

While it like some old maiden,  
solemnly,

Hugs its incongruous virginity!

## ON THE SEA WALL

I sit upon the old sea wall

And watch the shimmering sea  
Where soft and white the moon  
beams fall,

Till in a fantasy,

Some pure white maiden's funeral  
pall

The strange light seems to me

The waters break upon the shore  
And shiver at my feet

While I dream old dreams o'er  
and o'er

And dim old scenes repeat  
Tho all have dreamed the same  
before,

They still seem new and sweet

The waves still sing the same old  
song

That knew an elder time  
The breakers beat is not more  
strong

Their music more sublime  
And poets thro the ages long  
Have set these notes to rhyme

But this shall not deter my lyre  
Nor check my simple strain

If I have not the old time fire  
I know the ancient pun

The hurt of unfulfilled desire —  
The ember quenched by rain

I know the softly shining sea  
That rolls this gentle swell

Has snarled and licked its tongues  
at me

And bared its fangs as well  
That neath its smile so heavenly  
There lurks the scowl of hell!



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

But what of that? I strike my  
string

(For songs in youth are sweet),  
I'll wait and hear the waters  
bring

Their loud resounding beat,  
Then, in her own bold numbers  
sing

The Ocean's dear deceit!

But far and strange, thou still  
dost make them fair

Now thou dost sing, and I am lost  
in thee

As one who drowns  
In floods of melody.

Still in thy art  
Give me this part,  
Till perfect love, the love of lov-  
ing crowns

### TO A LADY PLAYING THE HARP

THY tones are silver melted into  
sound,

And as I dream

I see no walls around,

But seem to hear

A gondolier

Sing sweetly down some slow Ve-  
netian stream

Italian skies — that I have never  
seen —

I see above

(Ah, play again, my queen,

Thy fingers white

Fly swift and light

And weave for me the golden  
mesh of love)

Oh, thou dusk sorceress of the  
dusky eyes

And soft dark hair,

'Tis thou that mak'st my skies

So swift to change

To far and strange,

### CONFESSIONAL

SEARCH thou my heart,

If there be guile,

It shall depart

Before thy smile

Search thou my soul,

Be there deceit,

'T will vanish whole

Before thee, sweet

Upon my mind

Turn thy pure lens;

Naught shalt thou find

Thou canst not cleanse.

If I should pray,

I scarcely know

In just what way

My prayers would go

So strong in me

I feel love's leaven,

I'd bow to thee

As soon as Heaven!

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### MISAPPREHENSION

OUT of my heart one day I  
wrote a song  
With my heart's blood imbued  
Instinct with passion tremulously  
strong  
With grief subdued  
Breathing a fortitude  
Pain bought  
And one who claimed much love  
for what I wrought  
Read and considered it  
And spoke  
Ay brother — t is well writ,  
But where s the joke?

### PROMETHEUS

PROMETHEUS stole from Heaven  
the sacred fire  
And swept to earth with it o'er  
land and sea  
He lit the vestal flames of poesy  
Content for this to brave celestial ire

Wroth were the gods and with  
eternal hate  
Pursued the fearless one who  
ravished Heaven  
That earth might hold in fee  
the perfect leaven  
To lift men's souls above their  
low estate  
But judge you now when poets  
wield the pen

Think you not well the wrong  
has been repaired?

T was all in vain that ill Pro  
metheus fared  
The fire has been returned to  
Heaven again!

We have no singers like the ones  
whose note

Gave challenge to the noblest  
warbler's song

We have no voice so mellow  
sweet and strong  
As that which broke from Shelley's  
golden throat

The measure of our songs is our  
desires

We tinkle where old poets used  
to storm

We lack their substance tho we  
keep their form  
We strum our banjo strings and  
call them lyres

### LOVE'S PHASES

Love hath the wings of the but  
terfly

Oh clasp him but gently  
Pausing and dipping and flutter  
ing by

Inconsequently  
Stir not his poise with the breath  
of a sigh

Love hath the wings of the but  
terfly

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Love hath the wings of the eagle  
bold,

Cling to him strongly —  
What if the look of the world be  
cold,

And life go wrongly?  
Rest on his pinions, for broad is  
their fold,  
Love hath the wings of the eagle  
bold

Love hath the voice of the nightin-  
gale,

Hearken his trilling —  
List to his song when the moon-  
light is pale,—

Passionate, thrilling.  
Cherish the lay, ere the lilt of it  
fail;  
Love hath the voice of the nightin-  
gale.

Love hath the voice of the storm  
at night,

Wildly defiant.  
Hear him and yield up your soul  
to his might,

Tenderly pliant.  
None shall regret him who heed  
him aright,  
Love hath the voice of the storm  
at night

### FOR THE MAN WHO FAILS

THE world is a snob, and the man  
who wins

Is the chap for its money's  
worth

And the lust for success causes  
half of the sins

That are cursing this brave old  
earth

For it's fine to go up, and the  
world's applause

Is sweet to the mortal ear,  
But the man who fails in a noble  
cause

Is a hero that's no less dear.

'Tis true enough that the laurel  
crown

Twines but for the victor's  
brow,

For many a hero has lain him  
down

With naught but the cypress  
bough

There are gallant men in the los-  
ing fight,

And as gallant deeds are done  
As ever graced the captured  
height

Or the battle grandly won.

We sit at life's board with our  
nerves highstrung,

And we play for the stake of  
Fame,

And our odes are sung and our  
banners hung

For the man who wins the  
game

But I have a song of another kind

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Than breathes in these fame  
wrought gales —

An ode to the noble heart and  
mind

Of the gallant man who fails!

The man who is strong to fight his  
fight

And whose will no front can  
daunt,

If the truth be truth and the right  
be right

Is the man that the ages want  
Tho he fail and die in grim de-  
feat

Yet he has not fled the strife,  
And the house of Earth will seem  
more sweet

For the perfume of his life.

### HARRIET BEECHER STOWE

SHE told the story and the whole  
world wept

At wrongs and cruelties it had  
not known

But for this fearless woman's  
voice alone

She spoke to consciences that  
long had slept

Her message Freedom's clear  
reveille swept

From heedless hovel to compla-  
cent throne

Command and prophecy were  
in the tone

And from its sheath the sword  
of justice leapt

Around two peoples swelled a  
fiery wave

But both came forth transfig-  
ured from the flame

Blest be the hand that dared be  
strong to save

And blest be she who in our  
weakness came —

Prophet and priestess! At one  
stroke she gave

A race to freedom and herself  
to fame

### VAGRANTS

LONG time ago we two set out,

My soul and I

I know not why

For all our way was dim with  
doubt

I know not where

We two may fare

Though still with every changing  
weather

We wander groping on together

We do not love we are not  
friends

My soul and I

He lives a lie

Untruth lines every way he wends

A scoffer he

Who jeers at me

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

And so, my comrade and my  
brother,  
We wander on and hate each  
other

Ay, there be taverns and to spare,  
Beside the road,  
But some strange goad  
Lets me not stop to taste their  
fare  
Knew I the goal  
Toward which my soul  
And I made way, hope made life  
fragrant  
But no We wander, aimless, va-  
grant!

## A WINTER'S DAY

Across the hills and down the  
narrow ways,  
And up the valley where the  
free winds sweep,  
The earth is folded in an er-  
mined sleep  
That mocks the melting mirth of  
myriad Mays  
Departed her disheartening duns  
and grays,  
And all her crusty black is cov-  
ered deep  
Dark streams are locked in  
Winter's donjon-keep,  
And made to shine with keen, un-  
wonted rays.

O icy mantle, and deceitful snow!  
What world-old liars in your  
hearts ye are!  
Are there not still the darkened  
seam and scar  
Beneath the brightness that you  
fain would show?  
Come from the cover with thy  
blot and blur,  
O reeking Earth, thou whited  
sepulchre!

## MY LITTLE MARCH GIRL

COME to the pane, draw the cur-  
tain apart,  
There she is passing, the girl of  
my heart,  
See where she walks like a queen  
in the street,  
Weather-defying, calm, placid and  
sweet  
Tripping along with impetuous  
grace,  
Joy of her life beaming out of her  
face,  
Tresses all truant-like, curl upon  
curl,  
Wind-blown and rosy, my little  
March girl.

Hint of the violet's delicate  
bloom,  
Hint of the rose's pervading per-  
fume!

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

How can the wind help from kiss  
ing her face —  
Wrapping her round in his stormy  
embrace?  
But still serenely she laughs at his  
rout  
She is the victor who wins in the  
bout  
So may life's passions about her  
soul swirl,  
Leaving it placid — my little  
March girl

What self possession looks out of  
her eyes!  
What are the wild winds and  
what are the skies  
Frowning and glooming when  
brimming with life  
Cometh the little maid ripe for the  
strife?  
Ah! Wind and bahl Wind what  
might have you now?  
What can you do with that inno-  
cent brow?  
Blow Wind and grow Wind  
and eddy and swirl  
But bring her to me Wind — my  
little March girl

### REMEMBERED

SHE sang and I listened the  
whole song thro  
(It was sweet so sweet the  
singing)

The stars were out and the moon  
it grew  
From a wee soft glimmer y out  
in the blue  
To a bird thro the heavens  
winging

She sang and the song trembled  
down to my breast —  
(It was sweet so sweet the  
singing)  
As a dove just out of its fledgling  
nest  
And putting its wings to the first  
sweet test  
Flutters homeward o wearily  
winging

She sang and I said to my heart  
That song  
That was sweet so sweet i the  
singing  
Shall live with us and inspire us  
long  
And thou my heart shalt be brave  
and strong  
For the sake of those words  
winging

The woman died and the song  
was still  
(It was sweet so sweet the  
singing)  
But ever I hear the same low  
trill  
Of the song that shakes my heart  
with a thrill  
And goes forever winging

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

And so, my comrade and my  
brother,  
We wander on and hate each  
other

Ay, there be taverns and to spare,  
Beside the road,  
But some strange goad  
Lets me not stop to taste their  
fare  
Knew I the goal  
Toward which my soul  
And I made way, hope made life  
fragrant.  
But no We wander, aimless, va-  
grant!

### A WINTER'S DAY

ACROSS the hills and down the  
narrow ways,  
And up the valley where the  
free winds sweep,  
The earth is folded in an er-  
mined sleep  
That mocks the melting mirth of  
myriad Mays  
Departed her disheartening duns  
and grays,  
And all her crusty black is cov-  
ered deep  
Dark streams are locked in  
Winter's donjon-keep,  
And made to shine with keen, un-  
wonted rays

O icy mantle, and deceitful snow!  
What world-old liars in your  
hearts ye are!  
Are there not still the darkened  
seam and scar  
Beneath the brightness that you  
fain would show?  
Come from the cover with thy  
blot and blur,  
O reeking Earth, thou whited  
sepulchre!

### MY LITTLE MARCH GIRL

COME to the pane, draw the cur-  
tain apart,  
There she is passing, the girl of  
my heart,  
See where she walks like a queen  
in the street,  
Weather-defying, calm, placid and  
sweet  
Tripping along with impetuous  
grace,  
Joy of her life beaming out of her  
face,  
Tresses all truant-like, curl upon  
curl,  
Wind-blown and rosy, my little  
March girl  
Hint of the violet's delicate  
bloom,  
Hint of the rose's pervading per-  
fume!

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

How can the wind help from kiss  
    ing her face —  
Wrapping her round in his stormy  
    embrace?  
But still serenely she laughs at his  
    rout  
She is the victor who wins in the  
    bout  
So may life's passions about her  
    soul swirl  
Leaving it placid — my little  
    March girl

What self possession looks out of  
    her eyes!  
What are the wild winds and  
    what are the skies  
Frowning and glooming when  
    brimming with life  
Cometh the little mud ripe for the  
    strife?  
Ah! Wind and bahl Wind what  
    might have you now?  
What can you do with that inno-  
    cent brow?  
Blow, Wind and grow Wind,  
    and eddy and swirl  
But bring her to me Wind — my  
    little March girl

### REMEMBERED

SHE sang and I listened the  
    whole song thro  
(It was sweet so sweet the  
    singing)

The stars were out and the moon  
    it grew  
From a wee soft glimmer way out  
    in the blue  
To a bird thro the heavens  
    winging

She sang and the song trembled  
    down to my breast —  
(It was sweet so sweet the  
    singing)  
As a dove just out of its fledgling  
    nest

And putting its wings to the first  
    sweet test  
Flutters homeward o wearily  
    winging

She sang and I said to my heart  
    That song  
That was sweet so sweet the  
    singing  
Shall live with us and inspire us  
    long  
And thou my heart shalt be brave  
    and strong  
For the sake of those words  
    winging

The woman died and the song  
    was still  
(It was sweet, so sweet the  
    singing)  
But ever I hear the same low  
    trill  
Of the song that shakes my heart  
    with a thrill  
And goes forever winging



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## LOVE DESPOILED

As lone I sat one summer's day,  
With mien dejected, Love  
came by,  
His face distraught, his locks  
astray,  
So slow his gait, so sad his eye,  
I hailed him with a pitying cry.

"Pray, Love, what has disturbed  
thee so?"  
Said I, amazed "Thou seem'st  
bereft,  
And see thy quiver hanging  
low,—  
What, not a single arrow left?  
Pray, who is guilty of this  
theft?"

Poor Love looked in my face and  
cried  
"No thief were ever yet so bold  
To rob my quiver at my side.  
But Time, who rules, gave ear  
to Gold,  
And all my goodly shafts are  
sold"

## THE LAPSE

THIS poem must be done to-day;  
Then, I'll e'en to it  
I must not dream my time away,—  
I'm sure to rue it  
The day is rather bright, I know  
The Muse will pardon

My half-defection, if I go  
Into the garden.  
It must be better working  
there,—  
I'm sure it's sweeter.  
And something in the balmy air  
May clear my metre.

### [In the Garden]

Ah this is noble, what a sky!  
What breezes blowing!  
The very clouds, I know not why,  
Call one to rowing  
The stream will be a paradise  
To-day, I'll warrant  
I know the tide that's on the rise  
Will seem a torrent,  
I know just how the leafy boughs  
Are all a-quiver,  
I know how many skiffs and scows  
Are on the river  
I think I'll just go out awhile  
Before I write it,  
When Nature shows us such a  
smile,  
We should n't slight it  
For Nature always makes desire  
By giving pleasure;  
And so 't will help me put more  
fire  
Into my measure.

### [On the River.]

The river's fine, I'm glad I came,  
That poem's teasing;  
But health is better far than fame,  
Though cheques are pleasing.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

I don't know what I did it for,—  
This air's a poppy  
I'm sorry for my editor—  
He'll get no copy!

Still let mine eyes look ever on the  
foe  
Still let mine armor case me  
strong and bright  
And grant me as I deal each right  
eous blow  
Strength for the fight!

### THE WARRIOR'S PRAYER

LONG since in sore distress I  
heard one pray  
Lord who prevailest with re-  
sisless might  
Ever from war and strife keep me  
away  
My battles fight!

And when at eventide the fray  
is done  
My soul to Death's bedchamber  
do thou light  
And give me be the field or lost  
or won  
Rest from the fight!

I know not if I play the Pharisee  
And if my brother after all be  
right  
But mine shall be the warrior's  
plea to thee—  
Strength for the fight

### FAREWELL TO ARCADY

I do not ask that thou shalt front  
the fray  
And drive the warring foeman  
from my sight  
I only ask O Lord by night by  
day  
Strength for the fight!

WITH sombre mien the Evening  
gray  
Comes nagging at the heels of  
Day  
And driven faster and still faster  
Before the dusky mantled Master  
The light fades from her fearful  
eyes  
She hastens, stumbles, falls, and  
dies

When foes upon me press let me  
not quail  
Nor think to turn me into  
coward flight  
I only ask to make mine arms  
prevail  
Strength for the fight!

Beside me Amaryllis weeps  
The swelling tears obscure the  
deeps  
Of her dark eyes as mistily  
The rushing rain conceals the sea  
Here lay my tuneless reed away—  
I have no heart to tempt a lay

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

I scent the perfume of the rose  
Which by my crystal fountain  
    grows

In this sad time, are roses blowing?<sup>?</sup>

And thou, my fountain, art thou  
    flowing,

While I who watched thy waters  
    spring

Am all too sad to smile or sing?

Nay, give me back my pipe again,  
It yet shall breathe this single  
    strain

Farewell to Arcady!

### THE VOICE OF THE BANJO

IN a small and lonely cabin out  
    of noisy traffic's way,

Sat an old man, bent and feeble,  
    dusk of face, and hair of gray,

And beside him on the table, battered, old, and worn as he,

Lay a banjo, droning forth this  
    reminiscent melody.

"Night is closing in upon us,  
    friend of mine, but don't be  
    sad,

Let us think of all the pleasures  
    and the joys that we have had.

Let us keep a merry visage, and be  
    happy till the last,

Let the future still be sweetened  
    with the honey of the past.

"For I speak to you of summer  
    nights upon the yellow sand,  
When the Southern moon, was  
    sailing high and silvering all  
    the land;

And if love tales were not sacred,  
    there's a tale that I could  
    tell

Of your many nightly wanderings  
    with a dusk and lovely belle

"And I speak to you of care-free  
    songs when labour's hour was  
    o'er,

And a woman waiting for your  
    step outside the cabin door,  
And of something roly-poly that  
    you took upon your lap,

While you listened for the stumbling, hesitating words, 'Pap,  
    pap'

"I could tell you of a 'possum  
    hunt across the wooded  
    grounds,

I could call to mind the sweetness  
    of the baying of the hounds,  
You could lift me up and smelling  
    of the timber that's in me,  
Build again a whole green forest  
    with the mem'ry of a tree

"So the future cannot hurt us  
    while we keep the past in  
    mind,

What care I for trembling fingers,  
    — what care you that you are  
    blind?

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Time may leave us poor and  
stranded circumstance may  
make us bend  
But they ll only find us mellow  
won't they, comrade? — in  
the end

### THE STIRRUP CUP

COME, drink a stirrup cup with me,  
Before we close our rouse  
You're all aglow with wine, I  
know  
The master of the house  
Unmindful of our revelry  
Has drowned the carking devil  
care  
And slumbers in his chair

Come drink a cup before we start  
We've far to ride to night  
And Death may take the race we  
make  
And check our gallant flight  
But even he must play his part  
And tho' the look he wears be  
grim  
We'll drink a toast to him!

For Death — a swift old chap is  
he  
And swift the steed He rides  
He needs no chart o'er main or  
mart  
For no direction bides  
So come a final cup with me  
And let the soldiers chorus  
swell —  
To hell with care to hell!

### A CHOICE

THEY please me not — these  
solemn songs  
That hint of sermons covered up  
Tis true the world should heed  
its wrongs  
But in a poem let me sup,  
Not simples brewed to cure or  
ease  
Humanity's confessed disease  
But the spirit wine of a singing  
line  
Or a dew drop in a honey cup!



## **HUMOUR AND DIALECT**



## THEN AND NOW

### THEN

He loved her, and through many  
years

Had paid his fair devoted court  
Until she wearied and with sneers  
Turned all his ardent love to sport

That night within his chamber  
lone

He long sat writing by his bed  
A note in which his heart made  
moan

For love, the morning found him  
dead

### NOW

Like him, a man of later day  
Was ilted by the maid he sought  
And from her presence turned  
away

Consumed by burning bitter  
thought

He sought his room to write — a  
curse

Like him before and die I ween  
Ah no he put his woes in verse,  
And sold them to a magazine

## AT CHESHIRE CHEESE

WHEN first of wise old Johnson  
taught

My youthful mind its homage  
brought,

And made the pond rous crusty  
sage

The object of a noble rage

Nor did I think (How dense we  
are!)

That any day however far  
Would find me holding unre-  
pelled

The place that Doctor Johnson  
held!

But change has come and time has  
moved,

And now applauded unreprieved,  
I hold with pardonable pride  
The place that Johnson occupied

Conceit! Presumption! What is  
this?

You surely read my words amiss  
Like Johnson I — a man of mind!  
How could you ever be so blind?

No At the ancient Cheshire  
Cheese,

Blown hither by some vagrant  
breeze

To dignify my shallow wit  
In Doctor Johnson's seat I sit!

## MY CORN COB PIPE

Men may sing of their Havanas  
elevating to the stars

The real or fancied virtues of their  
foreign made cigars,



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

But I worship Nicotina at a different sort of shrine,  
And she sits enthroned in glory in  
this corn-cob pipe of mine

It's as fragrant as the meadows  
when the clover is in bloom,  
It's as dainty as the essence of the  
daintiest perfume,  
It's as sweet as are the orchards  
when the fruit is hanging ripe,  
With the sun's warm kiss upon  
them — is this corn-cob pipe

Thro' the smoke about it clinging,  
I delight its form to trace,  
Like an oriental beauty with a veil  
upon her face;  
And my room is dim with vapour  
as a church when censers  
sway,  
As I clasp it to my bosom — in a  
figurative way.

It consoles me in misfortune and  
it cheers me in distress,  
And it proves a warm partaker of  
my pleasures in success;  
So I hail it as a symbol, friendship's  
true and worthy type,  
And I press my lips devoutly to  
my corn-cob pipe.

### IN AUGUST

WHEN August days are hot an'  
dry,  
When burning copper is the sky,

I'd rather fish than feast or fly  
In airy realms serene and high.

I'd take a suit not made for looks,  
Some easily digested books,  
Some flies, some lines, some bait,  
some hooks,  
Then would I seek the bays and  
brooks

I would eschew mine every task,  
In Nature's smiles my soul should  
bask,  
And I methinks no more could  
ask,  
Except — perhaps — one little  
flask

In case of accident, you know,  
Or should the wind come on to  
blow,  
Or I be chilled or capsized, so,  
A flask would be the only go

Then could I spend a happy  
time,—  
A bit of sport, a bit of rhyme  
(A bit of lemon, or of lime,  
To make my bottle's contents  
prime).

When August days are hot an'  
dry,  
I won't sit by an' sigh or die,  
I'll get my bottle (on the sly)  
And go ahead, and fish, and lie!

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### THE DISTURBER

OH, what shall I do? I am wholly  
upset

I am sure I'll be jailed for a  
lunatic yet

I ll be out of a job—it s the  
thing to expect

When I m letting my duty go by  
with neglect

You may judge the extent and de  
gree of my plight

When I'm thinking all day and  
a dreaming all night,

And a trying my hand at a rhyme  
on the sly

All on account of a sparkling eye

There are those who say men  
should be strong well a day!

But what constitutes strength in  
a man? Who shall say?

I am strong as the most when it  
comes to the arm

I have aye held my own on the  
playground or farm

And when I ve been tempted I  
haven't been weak

But now—why I tremble to  
hear a maid speak

I used to be bold but now I've  
grown shy,

And all on account of a sparkling  
eye

There once was a time when my  
heart was devout

But now my religion is open to  
doubt

When parson is earnestly preach  
ing of grace

My fancy is busy with drawing  
a face,

Thro the back of a bonnet most  
piously plain

'I draw it redraw it and draw  
it again

While the songs and the sermon  
unheeded go by—

All on account of a sparkling eye

Oh dear little conjurer give o'er  
your wiles

It is easy for you you re all  
blushes and smiles

But, love of my heart I am sorely  
perplexed

I am smiling one minute and sigh  
ing the next

And if it goes on, I ll drop hackle  
and flail

And go to the parson and tell him  
my tale

I warrant he ll find me a cure  
for the sigh

That you re aye bringing forth  
with the glance of your eye.

### EXPECTATION

YOU LL be wonderin whut's de  
reason

I's a grinnin all de time

An I guess you tink my sperits

Mus be feelin mighty prime.

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Well, I 'fess up, I is tickled  
As a puppy at his paws  
But you need n't think I's crazy,  
I ain' laffin' 'dout a cause

You 's a wonderin' too, I reckon,  
Why I does n't seem to eat,  
An' I notice you a lookin'

Lak you felt completely beat  
When I 'fuse to tek de bacon,  
An' don' settle on de ham  
Don' you feel no feah erbout me,  
Jes' keep eatin', an' be ca'm

Fu' I 's waitin' an' I 's watchin'  
'Bout a little t'ing I see —  
D' othah night I 's out a walkin'  
An' I passed a 'simmon tree  
Now I 's whettin' up my hongry,  
An' I 's laffin' fit to kill,  
Fu' de fros' done turned de 'sim-  
mons,  
An' de possum 's eat his fill

He done go'ged hisse'f owdacious,  
An' he stayin' by de tree!  
Don' you know, ol' Mistah Pos-  
sum

Dat you gittin' fat fu' me?  
'T ain't no use to try to 'spute it,  
'Case I knows you 's gittin'  
sweet

Wif dat 'simmon flavoh thoo you,  
So I 's waitin' fu' yo' meat

An' some ebenin' me an' Towsah  
Gwine to come an' mek a call,

We jes' drap in onexpected  
Fu' to shek yo' han', dat 's all  
Oh, I knows dat you 'll be tickled,  
Seems lak I kin see you smile,  
So pu'haps I mought pu'suade you  
Fu' to visit us a while.

### LOVER'S LANE

SUMMAH night an' sighin' breeze,  
'Long de lovah's lane,  
Frien'ly, shadder-mekin' trees,  
'Long de lovah's lane.

White folks' wo'k all done up  
gran'—

Me an' 'Mandy han'-in-han'  
Struttin' lak we owned de lan',  
'Long de lovah's lane.

Owl a-settin' 'side de road,  
'Long de lovah's lane,  
Lookin' at us lak he knowed  
Dis uz lovah's lane

Go on, hoot yo' mou'nful tune,  
You ain' nevah loved in June,  
An' come hidin' f'om de moon  
Down in lovah's lane

Bush it ben' an' nod an' sway,  
Down in lovah's lane,

Try'n' to hyeah me whut I say  
'Long de lovah's lane

But I whispahs low lak dis,  
An' my 'Mandy smile huh bliss —  
Mistah Bush he shek his fis',  
Down in lovah's lane.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Whut I keer ef day is long  
Down in lovah s lane  
I kin allus sing a song  
Long de lovah s lane  
An de wods I hyeah an say  
Meks up fu de weary day  
W en I s strollin' by de way,  
Down in lovah s lane  
  
An dis tought will allus rise  
Down in lovah s lane  
Wondah whethah in de skies  
Dey s a lovah s lane  
Ef dey ain t I tell you true  
Ligion do look mighty blue  
'Cause I do know whut I d do  
Dout a lovah s lane

### PROTEST

Who say my heat ain t true to  
you?  
Dey bettah heish dey mou'  
I knows I loves you thoo an thoo  
In watah time er drouf  
I wush dese people d stop dey  
talkin,  
Don t mean no mo dan chicken s  
squawkin  
I guess I knows which way I s  
walkin  
I knows de norf f om souf  
  
I does not love Elizy Brown  
I guess I knows my mun  
You illus try to tek me down  
Wid evah ting you fin

Ef dese hyeah folks will keep on  
fillin'  
Yo haid wid nonsense an' you s  
willin  
I bet some day dey il be a killin  
Somewhah along de line  
  
O cose I buys de gal ice cream  
Whut else I gwine to do?  
I knows jes how de ting u d  
seem  
Ef I d be sho t wid you  
On Sunday you s at chu'ch  
a shoutin  
Den all de week you go roun  
poutin —  
I s mighty tiahed o all dis  
doubtin  
I tell you cause I s true

### HYMN

O LI L lamb out in de col  
De Mastah call you to de fol  
O l i l lamb!  
He hyeah you bleatin on de hull  
Come hyeah an keep yo' mou nin  
still  
O l i l lamb!  
  
De Mastah sen' de Shepud fo f  
He wandah souf he wandah no f  
O l i l lamb!  
He wandah eas he wandah  
wes  
De win a wrenchin at his breas',  
O l i l lamb!

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Oh, tell de Shepud whaih you hide,  
He want you walkin' by his side,  
O li'l' lamb!

He know you weak, he know you  
so',  
But come, don' stay away no mo',  
O li'l' lamb!

An' af'ah while de lamb he hyeah  
De Shepud's voice a-callin' cleah —  
Sweet li'l' lamb!  
He ansawah f'om de brambles thick,  
"O Shepud, I's a-comin' quick"—  
O li'l' lamb!

### LITTLE BROWN BABY

LITTLE brown baby wif spa'klin'  
eyes,

Come to yo' pappy an' set on his  
knee

What you been doin', suh — mak-  
in' san' pies?

Look at dat bib — you's ez  
du'ty ez me

Look at dat mouf — dat's mer-  
lasses, I bet,

Come hyeah, Maria, an' wipe  
off his han's

Bees gwine to ketch you an' eat  
you up yit,

Bein' so sticky an sweet — good-  
ness lan's!

Little brown baby wif spa'klin'  
eyes,

Who's pappy's darlin' an'  
who's pappy's chile?

Who is it all de day nevah once  
tries

Fu' to be cross, er once loses dat  
smile?

Whaih did you git dem teef? My,  
you's a scamp!

Whaih did dat dimple come f'om  
in yo' chin?

Pappy do' know you — I b'lieves  
you's a tramp,

Mammy, dis hyeah's some ol'  
straggler got in!

Let's th'ow him ouden de do' in  
de san',

We do' want stragglers a-layin'  
'roun' hyeah,

Let's gin him 'way to de big  
buggah-man;

I know he's hidin' erroun'  
hyeah right neah

Buggah-man, buggah-man, come  
in de do',

Hyeah's a bad boy you kin have  
fu' to eat.

Mammy an' pappy do' want him  
no mo',

Swaller him down f'om his haid  
to his feet!

Dah, now, I t'ought dat you'd  
hug me up close

Go back, ol' buggah, you sha'n't  
have dis boy.

He ain't no tramp, ner no strag-  
gler, of co'se,

He's pappy's pa'dner an' play-  
mate an' joy.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Come to you' pallet now — go to  
yo res

Wisht you could allus know  
ease an cleah skies

Wisht you could stay jes' a chile  
on my breas —

Little brown baby wif spa llin'  
eyes!

### TIME TO TINKER 'ROUN I

SUMMAH s nice wif sun 7-shinin  
Spring is good wif greens and  
grass

An dey s some tings nice bout  
wintah

Dough hit brings de freezin  
blas

But de time dat is de fines

Whethah fiel s is green er brown  
Is w en de rain s a po in

An dey's time to tinker 'roun

Den you men's de mule's ol'  
ha ness

An you men s de broken chair  
Hummin all de time you s wo kin

Some ol common kind o air  
Evah now an then you looks out,

Tryin' mighty had to frown  
But you can't you's glad hit's  
runin

An dey s time to tinker roun

Oh you ten s lak you so anxious  
Evah time it so t o stops

W'en hit goes on, den you reckon  
Dat de wet 'll he'p de crops

But hit ain't de crops you's aftah,  
You knows w en de rain comes  
down

Dat s hit's too wet out fu'  
wo kin,

An' dey s time to tinker roun'

Oh, dey's fun inside de co'n-crib,

An' dey's luffin' 7t de ba n

An dey s illus some one jokin',

Er some one to tell a ya n

Dah s 7 quiet in yo cabin

Only fu de rains sof soun',

So you s mighty blessed happy

Wen dey s time to tinker  
roun !

### THE REAL QUESTION

FOLKS is talkin bout de money  
bout de silvah 7n de gold

All de time de serson's changin  
an' de days is gittin cold

An dey s wondrin bout de  
metals whethah we'll live  
one er two

While de price o coal is risin an  
dey s two months rent  
dat s due

Some folks s7ys dat gold's de only  
money dat is wuff de name

Den de othahs rise an tell em  
dat dey ought to be ashame

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

An' dat silvah is de only thing to  
save us f'om de powah  
Of de gold-bug ragin' 'roun' an'  
seekin' who he may de-  
vowah.

Well, you folks kin keep on  
shoutin' wif yo' gold er  
silvah cry,

But I tell you people hams is  
sceerce an' fowls is roostin'  
high.

An' hit ain't de so't o' money dat  
is pesterin' my min',  
But de question I want answehed 's  
how to get at any kin'!

### JILTED

LUCY done gone back on me,  
Dat 's de way wif life  
Evaht'ing was movin' free,  
T'ought I had my wife.  
Den some dahky comes along,  
Sings my gal a little song,  
Since den, evaht'ing 's gone wrong,  
Evah day dey 's strife.

Did n't answeh me to-day,  
W'en I called huh name,  
Would you t'ink she 'd ac' dat way  
W'en I ain't to blame?  
Dat 's de way dese women do,  
W'en dey fin's a fellow true,  
Den dey 'buse him thoo an' thoo;  
Well, hit 's all de same.

Somep'n's wrong erbout my lung,  
An' I 's glad hit 's so.

Doctah says 'at I 'll die young,  
Well, I wants to go!  
Whut 's de use o' livin' hyeah,  
W'en de gal you loves so deah,  
Goes back on you clean an' cleah —  
I sh'd like to know?

### THE NEWS

WHUT dat you whisperin' keepin'  
f'om me?  
Don't shut me out 'cause I 's ol'  
an' can't see.  
Somep'n's gone wrong dat 's  
a-causin' you dread,—  
Don't be afeared to tell — Whut!  
mastah dead?

Somebody brung de news early  
to-day,—  
One of de sojers he led, do you  
say?  
Did n't he foller whah ol' mastah  
lead?  
How kin he live w'en his leadah  
is dead?

Let me lay down awhile, dah by  
his bed,  
I wants to t'ink,— hit ain't cleah  
in my head. —  
Killed while a-leadin' his men into  
fight,—  
Dat 's whut you said, ain't it, did  
I hyeah right?

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Mastah my mastah dead dah in  
de fiel'?

Lif me up some — dah jes so I  
kin kneel

I was too weak to go wid him dey  
said

Well now I ll — fin him — so —  
mastah is dead

Yes suh I s comin ez fas ez I  
kin —

T'was kin o dak but hit s  
lightah agin

P omised yo pappy I d allus tek  
keer

Of you — yes mastah — I s fol  
lerin — hyeah!

### CHRISMUS ON THE PLAN TATION

It was Chrismus Eve I mind hit  
fu a mighty gloomy day —

Bofe de weathah an de people —  
not a one of us was gay

Cose you ll tink dat s mighty  
funny twell I try to mek hit  
cleah

Fu a da ky's allus happy when de  
holidays is neah

But we was n t fu dat mo'nin  
Mastah d tol us we mus go

He d been pryin us sence free  
dom but he could n t pay no  
mo'

He wa n t nevah used to plannin'  
fo he got so po an ol

So he gwine to give up tryin, an  
de homestead mus be sol

I kin see him stan in' now erpon  
de step ez cleah ez day

Wid de win' a kind o' fondlin  
thoo his haih all thin an  
gray

An I membah how he trimbled  
when he said It s had fu  
me

Not to mek yo Chrismus brightah  
but I low it wa n t to be

All de women was a cryin an' de  
men too on de sly

An I noticed somep n shinin even  
in ol Mastah s eye

But we ill stood still to listen ez  
ol Ben come fom de crowd

An spoke up a try n to steady  
down his voice and mek it  
loud —

Look hyeah Mastah I s been  
servin you fu lol dese many  
yeahs

An now sence we s got freedom  
an you s kind o po hit  
pears

Dat you want us all to leave you  
cause you don t tink you can  
pay

Ef my membry has n t fooled me  
seem dat whut I hyeah you  
say



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

“Er in othah wo'ds, you wants us  
to fu'git dat you 's been kin',  
An' ez soon ez you is he'pless, we 's  
to leave you hyeah behin'.

Well, ef dat 's de way dis freedom  
ac's on people, white er black,  
You kin jes' tell Mistah Lincum  
fu' to tek his freedom back.

“We gwine wo'k dis ol' planta-  
tion fu' whatevah we kin git,  
Fu' I know hit did suppo't us, an'  
de place kin do it yit.

Now de land is yo's, de hands is  
ouahs, an' I reckon we 'll be  
brave,

An' we 'll bah ez much ez you do  
w'en we has to scrape an'  
save ”

Ol' Mastah stood dah trimblin',  
but a-smilin' thoo his teahs,  
An' den hit seemed jes' nachul-  
like, de place fah rung wid  
cheahs,

An' soon ez dey was quiet, some  
one sta'ted sof' an' low:

“Praise God,” an' den we all  
joined in, “from whom all  
blessin's flow!”

Well, dey was n't no use tryin',  
ouah min's was sot to stay,  
An' po' ol' Mastah could n't plead  
ner baig, ner drive us 'way,  
An' all at once, hit seemed to us,  
de day was bright agin,  
So evahone was gay dat night, an'  
watched de Chrismus in

## ANGELINA

WHEN de fiddle gits to singin' out  
a ol' Vahginny reel,

An' you 'mence to feel a ticklin' in  
yo' toe an' in yo' heel,

Ef you t'ink you got 'uligion an'  
you wants to keep it, too,

You jes' bettah tek a hint an' git  
yo'self clean out o' view.

Case de time is mighty temptin'  
when de chune is in de  
swing,

Fu' a darky, saint or sinner man,  
to cut de pigeon-wing

An' you could n't he'p f'om danc-  
in' ef yo' feet was boun' wif  
twine,

When Angelina Johnson comes  
a-swingin' down de line

Don't you know Miss Angelina?  
She 's de da'lin' of de place

W'y, dey ain't no high-toned lady  
wif sich mannahts an' sich  
grace

She kin move across de cabin, wif  
its planks all rough an' wo',  
Jes' de same 's ef she was dancin'  
on ol' mistus' ball-room flo'.

Fact is, you do' see no cabin—  
evaht'ing you see look grand,

An' dat one ol' squeaky fiddle  
soun' to you jes' lak a ban',

Cotton britches look lak broadclof  
an' a linsey dress look fine,

When Angelina Johnson comes  
a-swingin' down de line.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Some folks ay dat dancin s sin  
ful an de blessed Lawd, dey  
say

Gwine to punish us fu steppin  
w en we hyeah de music play

But I tell you I don b lieve it fu'  
de Lawd is wise and good

An he made de banjo s metal an  
he made de fiddle s wood

An he made de music in dem so  
I don quite tink he ll keer

Ef our feet keeps time a little to  
de melodies we hyeah

W y dey's somep n downright  
holy in de way our faces  
shine

When Angelina Johnson comes  
a swingin down de line

Angelina steps so gentle Angelina  
bows so low

An she lif huh sku t so dainty dat  
huh shoetop skacely show

An dem teef o huh n a shinin , ez  
she tek you by de han —

Go way people d aint anothah  
sich a lady in de lan !

When she s movin thoo de figgers  
er a dancin by huhse f

Folks jes stan stock still a sta  
in an dey mos nigh hol s  
dey bref

An de young mens dey s a sayin ,  
'I s gwine mek dat damsel  
mine

When Angelina Johnson comes  
a swingin down de line

## FOOLIN' WID DE SEASONS

SEEMS lak folks is mighty curus

In de way dey t inks an ac s

Dey jes spen s dey days a mixin

Up de t ings in almshouses

Now, I min my nex do neigh  
bour —

He s a mighty likely man

But he nevah t inks o nuffin

'Ceptin jes to plot an plan

All de wintah he was plannin

How he d gettah sassifras

Jes ez soon ez evah Springtime

Put some greenness in de grass

An he loved a little soonah

He could stan' a coolah breeze

So s to mek a little money

From de sugah watah trees

In de summah he d be waihin

Out de linin' of his soul

Try n cacilate an fashion

How he d git his wintah coal,

An' I b lieve he got his judgement

Jes so tuckahed out an thinned

Dat he t ought a robin s whistle

Was de whistle of de wind

Why won t folks gin up dey plan  
nin ,

An jes be content to know

Dat dey's gittin all dat s fu dem

In de days dat come an go?

Why won t folks quit movin for  
rard?

Ain t hit bettah jes to stan

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

An' be satisfied wid livin'  
In de season dat 's at han'?

Hit 's enough fu' me to listen  
W'en de birds is singin' 'roun',  
'Dout a-guessin' whut 'll happen  
W'en de snow is on de groun'.  
In de Springtime an' de summah,  
I lays sorrer on de she'f,  
An' I knows ol' Mistah Wintah  
Gwine to hustle fu' hisse'f

We been put hyeah fu' a pu'pose,  
But de questun dat has riz  
An' made lots o' people diftah  
Is jes' whut dat pu'pose is  
Now, accordin' to my reas'nin',  
Hyeah 's de p'int whaih I's  
arriv,  
Sence de Lawd put life into us,  
We was put hyeah fu' to live!

## MY SORT O' MAN

I DON'T believe in 'ristercrats  
An' never did, you see,  
The plain ol' homelike sorter folks  
Is good enough fur me  
O' course, I don't desire a man  
To be too tarnal rough,  
But then, I think all folks should  
know  
When they air nice enough.

Now there is folks in this here  
world,  
From peasant up to king,

Who want to be so awful nice  
They overdo the thing  
That 's jest the thing that makes  
me sick,  
An' quicker 'n a wink  
I set it down that them same  
folks  
Ain't half so good 's you  
think

I like to see a man dress nice,  
In clothes becomin' too,  
I like to see a woman fix  
As women orter to do,  
An' boys an' gals I like to see  
Look fresh an' young an'  
spry,—  
We all must have our vanity  
An' pride before we die

But I jedge no man by his  
clothes,—  
Nor gentleman nor tramp,  
The man that wears the finest suit  
May be the biggest scamp,  
An' he whose limbs air clad in rags  
That make a mournful sight,  
In life's great battle may have  
proved  
A hero in the fight

I don't believe in 'ristercrats,  
I like the honest tan  
That lies upon the healthful cheek  
An' speaks the honest man,  
I like to grasp the brawny hand  
That labor's lips have kissed,

# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

For he who has not labored here  
Life's greates t pride has  
mis ed

The pride to feel that yore own  
strength

Has cleaved fur you the way  
To heights to which you were not  
born

But struggled day by day  
What though the thou ands sneer  
an scoff

An scorn yore humble birth?  
Kings are but puppets you are  
king

By right o royal worth

The man who simply sits an waits  
Fur good to come along  
Ain t worth the breath that one  
would take

To tell him he is wrong  
Fur good ain t flov in round this  
world

Fur every fool to sup  
You ve got to put yore see ers on  
An go an hunt it up

Good goes with honesty I say  
To honour an to bless  
To rich an poor alike it brings  
A wealth o happiness

The ristercrats ain t got it all  
Fur much to their su prise  
That s one of earth s most blessed  
things

They can t monopolize

## POSSUM

Er dey s anyting dat riles me  
An jes gits me out o hitch  
Twel I want to tek my coat off  
So s to rar an t ar an pitch  
Hit s to see some ign ant white  
man

Mittin dat ouldacious sin —  
W en he want to cook a possum  
Tekin off de possum s skin

W'y dey ain t no use in talkin  
Hit jes hu ts me to de hea t  
Fu to see dem foolish people  
Thowin way de fines pa t  
W'y dat skin is jes ez tend'ah  
An ez juicy ez kin be  
I knows all erbout de critter —  
Hide an hah — don t talk to  
me!

Possum skin is jes lak shoat skin  
Jes you swinge an scrope it  
down

Tek a good shap knife an sco it  
Den you bake it good an' brown  
Huh uh! honey you s so happy  
Dat yo thoughts is mos a sin  
When you s settin dah a-chawin'  
On dat possum s cracklin skin

White folks tink dey know bout  
eatin

An I reckon dat dey do  
Sometimes git a little idee  
Of a middlin dish er two

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

But dey ain't a t'ing dey knows of  
Dat I reckon can't be beat  
W'en we set down at de table  
To a unskun possum's meat!

## ON THE ROAD

I's boun' to sec my gal to-night —  
Oh, lone de way, my dearie!  
De moon ain't out, de stars ain't  
bright —

Oh, lone de way, my dearie!  
Dis hoss o' mine is pow'ful slow,  
But when I does git to yo' do'  
Yo' kiss 'll pay me back, an' mo',  
Dough lone de way, my dearie

De night is skeery-lak an' still —  
Oh, lone de way, my dearie!  
'Cept fu' dat mou'nful whippo'-  
will —

Oh, lone de way, my dearie!  
De way so long wif dis slow pace,  
'T'u'd seem to me lak savin' grace  
Ef you was on a nearer place,  
Fu' lone de way, my dearie.

I hyeah de hootin' of de owl —  
Oh, lone de way, my dearie!  
I wish dat watch-dog would n't  
howl —

Oh, lone de way, my dearie!  
An' evah'ting, bofe right an' lef',  
Seem p'int'ly lak hit put itse'f  
In shape to skeer me half to def —  
Oh, lone de way, my dearie!

I whistles so 's I won't be feared —  
Oh lone de way, my dearie!  
But anyhow I's kin' o' skeered,  
Fu' lone de way, my dearie  
De sky been lookin' mighty glum,  
But you kin mek hit lighten some,  
Ef you 'll jes' say you's glad I  
come,

Dough lone de way, my dearie

## A DEATH SONG

LAY me down beneaf de willers in  
de grass,  
Whah de branch 'll go a-singin' as  
it pass  
An' w'en I's a-layin' low,  
I kin hyeah it as it go  
Singin', "Sleep, my honey, tek yo'  
res' at las'."

Lay me nigh to whah hit meks a  
little pool,  
An' de watah stan's so quiet lak  
an' cool,  
Whah de little birds in spring,  
Ust to come an' drink an' sing,  
An' de chillen waded on dey way  
to school

Let me settle w'en my shouldahs  
draps dey load  
Nigh enough to hyeah de noises in  
de road,  
Fu' I t'ink de las' long res'  
Gwine to soothe my sperrit bes'  
Ef I's layin' 'mong de t'ings I's  
allus knowed.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### A BACK LOG SONG

DE axes has been ringin in de  
woods de blessid day

An de chips has been a fallin  
f<sup>r</sup> an thick

Dey has cut de bigges hick ry dat  
de mules l<sup>i</sup>n tote away

An dey s laid hit down and  
soaked it in de crik

Den dey tuk hit to de big house an  
dey piled de wood erroun

In de fiah place f<sup>r</sup> om ash flo to  
de flue

While ol' Ezry sta ts de hymn dat  
evah yeah has got to soun

When de back log fus com  
mence a bu'nin thoo

Ol' Mastah is a-smilin on de  
da lies f<sup>r</sup> om de hall

Ol Mistus is a stannin in de do  
An' de young folks mules an'  
misses is a tryin one an'  
all

Fu to mek us feel hit s Chris  
mus time fu' sho

An ouah hea ts are full of pleasure  
fu we know de time is  
ouahs

Fu to dance er do jes' whut we  
wants to do

An' dey ain t no ovahseer an no  
othah kind o powahs

Dat kin stop us while dat log  
is bu'nin thoo

Dey s a wokin in de qua tahs a  
preparin' fu de feas

So de little pigs is feelin kind o  
shy

De chickens ain't so trus ful ez  
dey was to say de leas,

An' de w<sup>i</sup>e ol hens is roostin'  
mighty high

You could n t git a gobblin fu to  
look you in de face—

I ain t sayin' whut de tu ky  
spects is true

But hit s mighty dange ous trav'  
lin fu de critters on de  
place

F<sup>r</sup> om de time dat log commence a  
bu'nin thoo

Some one s tunin up his fiddle  
dah I hyeah a banjo s ring

An, bless me, dat s de tootin of  
a hon!

Now dey ll evah one be runnin  
dat has got a foot to fling

An' dey ll dance an frolic on  
f<sup>r</sup> om now twell mon

Plunk de banjo scrap de fiddle,  
blow dat ho n yo level bes,

Keep yo min erpon de chune  
an step it true

Oh, dey ain t no time fu stoppin  
an dey ain t ro time fu  
res

Fu hit's Christmas an' de back  
log's bu'nin thoo!

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## LULLABY

BEDTIME 's come fu' little boys.  
Po' little lamb  
Too tiahed out to make a noise,  
Po' little lamb  
You gwine t' have to-morrer sho'?  
Yes, you tole me dat befo',  
Don't you fool me, chile, no mo',  
Po' little lamb

You been bad de livelong day,  
Po' little lamb  
Th'owin' stones an' runnin' 'way,  
Po' little lamb  
My, but you 's a-runnin' wil',  
Look jes' lak some po' folks chile;  
Mam' gwine whup you atter while,  
Po' little lamb.

Come hyeah! you mos' tiahed to  
def,  
Po' little lamb  
Played yo'se'f clean out o' bref,  
Po' little lamb  
See dem han's now — sich a sight!  
Would you evah b'lieve dey's  
white?  
Stan' still twell I wash 'em right,  
Po' little lamb

Jes' can't hol' yo' hard up straight,  
Po' little lamb  
Had n't oughter played so late,  
Po' little lamb  
Mammy do' know whut she 'd do,  
Ef de chillun's all lak you,  
You 's a caution now fu' true,  
Po' little lamb.

Lay yo' hard down in my lap,  
Po' little lamb  
Y' ought to have a right good slap,  
Po' little lamb  
You been runnin' roun' a heap  
Shet dem eyes an' don't you pcep,  
Dah now, dah now, go to sleep,  
Po' little lamb

## THE PHOTOGRAPH

SEE dis pictyah in my han'?  
Dat 's my gal,  
Ain't she purty? goodness lan'!  
Huh name Sal  
Dat 's de very way she be —  
Kin' o' tickles me to see  
Huh a-smilin' back at me  
She sont me dis photygraph  
Jes' las' week,  
An' aldough hit made me laugh —  
My black cheek  
Felt somethin' a-runnin' queer,  
Bless yo' soul, it was a tear  
Jes' f'om wishin' she was here

Often when I 's all alone  
Layin' here,  
I git t'inkin' 'bout my own  
Sallie dear,  
How she say dat I 's huh beau,  
An' hit tickles me to know  
Dat de gal do love me so  
Some bright day I 's goin' back,  
Fo' de la!

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

An' ez sho 's my face is black  
Ax huh pa  
Fu de blessed little miss  
Who s a smilin out o dis  
Pictyah lak she waned a kiss'

Second hand to boot  
I s a tryin to spite you!  
Full of jealousy'  
Look hyeah man I ll fight  
you  
Don t you fool wid me'

### JEALOUS

HYEAH come Cæsar Higgins  
Don t he think he s fine?  
Look at dem new riggin s  
Ain t he tryin to shine?  
Got a standin collar  
An a stove pipe hat  
I ll jes bet a dollar  
Some one gin him dat

Don't one o you mention,  
Nothin 'bout his cloes  
Don't pay no attention  
Er let on you knows  
Dat he s got em on him,  
Why t'll mek him sick  
Jes go on an sco'n him  
My ain t dis a trick'

Look hyeah whut s he doin  
Lookin t othah way?  
Dat ere move s a new one  
Some one call him Say!  
Can t you see no pusson —  
Puttin on you airs  
Sakes alive you s wuss n  
Dese hyeah millionaires

Need n't git so flighty  
Case you got dat suit  
Dem cloes ain t so mighty —

### PARTED

DE breeze is blowin cross de bay  
My lady my lady  
De ship hit teks me far away  
My lady my lady  
Ole M<sup>rs</sup> done sol me down de  
stream  
Dey tell me t ain t so bad s hit  
seem  
My lady my lady

O cose I knows dat you ll be  
true  
My lady my lady  
But den I do know whut to do  
My lady my lady  
I knowed some day we d h<sup>ave</sup> to  
pa t  
But den hit put' nigh breaks my  
hea't  
My lady my lady

De day is long de night is black  
My lady my lady  
I know you ll wait twell I come  
back  
My lady my lady  
I ll stan' de ship, I ll stan de  
chain,



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

But I'll come back, my darlin'  
Jane,  
My lady, my lady.

Jes' wait, jes' b'lieve in whut I  
say,  
My lady, my lady;  
D' ain't nothin' dat kin keep me  
'way,  
My lady, my lady;  
A man's a man, an' love is love,  
God knows ouah hea'ts, my little  
dove,  
He'll he'p us f'om his th'one  
above,  
My lady, my lady.

### TEMPTATION

I DONE got 'uligion, honey, an' I's  
happy ez a king;  
Evahthing I see erbout me's jes'  
lak sunshine in de spring,  
An' it seems lak I do' want to do  
anothah blessid thing  
But jes' run an' tell de neighbours,  
an' to shout an' pray an'  
sing.

I done shuk my fis' at Satan, an'  
I's gin de worl' my back,  
I do' want no hendrin' causes now  
a-both'rin' in my track,  
Fu' I's on my way to glory, an' I  
feels too sho' to miss  
W'y, dey ain't no use in sinnin'  
when 'uligion's sweet ez dis

Talk erbout a man backslidin' w'en  
he's on de gospel way;  
No, suh, I done beat de debbil, an'  
Temptation's los' de day.  
Gwine to keep my eyes right  
straight up, gwine to shet my  
eahs, an' see  
Whut ole projick Mistah Satan's  
gwine to try to wuk on me

Listen, whut dat soun' I hycah  
dah? 'tain't no one commence  
to sing;  
It's a fiddle, git erway dah! don'  
you hycah dat blessid  
thing?  
W'y, dat's sweet ez drippin' honey,  
'cause, you knows, I draws de  
bow,  
An' when music's sho' 'nough  
music, I's de one dat's sho'  
to know.

W'y, I's done de double shuffle,  
twell a body could n't res',  
Jes' a-hycahn' Sam de fiddlah play  
dat chune his level bes',  
I could cut a mighty caper, I could  
gin a mighty fling  
Jes' right now, I's mo' dan suttain  
I could cut de pigeon wing

Look hycah, whut's dis I's been  
sayin'? whut on urf's tuk  
holt o' me?  
Dat ole music come nigh runnin'  
my 'uligion up a tree!

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Cleah out wif dat dah ole fiddle  
don you try dat trick agin  
Did n t think I could be tempted  
but you lak to made me sin!

### POSSUM TROT

I VE journeyed roun' consid'able  
a seen men an' things  
An' I ve learned a little of the  
sense that meetin' people  
brings  
But in spite of all my travellin'  
an' of all I think I know  
I ve got one notion in my head  
that I can't git to go  
An' it is that the folks I meet in  
any other spot  
Ain't half so good as them I  
knowed back home in Possum  
Trot

I know you ve never heerd the  
name it ain't a famous  
place  
An' I reckon ef you'd search the  
map you could n't find a trace  
Of any sich locality as this I ve  
named to you  
But never mind I know the place  
an' I love it dearly too  
It don't make no pretensions to  
bein' great or fine  
The circuses don't come that way  
they ain't no railroad line  
It ain't no great big city where  
the schemers plan an' plot

But jest a little settlement thi  
place called Possum Trot.

But don't you think the folks that  
lived in that outlandish place  
Were ignorant of all the things  
that go for sense or grace  
Why there was Hannah Dyer you  
may search this teemin' earth  
An' never find a sweeter girl er  
one o' greater worth  
An' Uncle Abner Williams a  
leanin' on his staff  
It seems like I kin hear him talk  
an' hear his hearty laugh  
His heart was big an' cheery as a  
sunny acre lot  
Why that's the kind o' folks we  
had down there at Possum  
Trot

Good times? Well now to suit  
my taste — an' I'm some hard  
to suit —

There ain't been no sich pleasure  
sence an' won't be none to  
boot

With huskin' bees in Harvest time  
an' dances later on

An' singin' school an' taffy pulls  
an' fun from night till  
dawn

Revivals come in winter time bap  
tizins in the spring

You'd ought to seen those people  
shout an' heerd 'em pray an  
sing

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

You 'd ought to 've heard ole Par-  
son Brown a-throwin' gospel  
shot

Among the saints an' sinners in  
the days of Possum Trot

We live up in the city now, my  
wife was bound to come,

I hear aroun' me day by day the  
endless stir an' hum

I reckon that it done me good, an'  
yet it done me harm,

That oil was found so plentiful  
down there on my ole farm

We 've got a new-styled preacher,  
our church is new-styled too,

An' I 've come down from what I  
knowed to rent a cushioned  
pew

But often when I 'm settin' there,  
it 's foolish, like as not,

To think of them ol' benches in  
the church at Possum Trot

I know that I 'm ungrateful, an'  
sich thoughts must be a sin,

But I find myself a wishin' that  
the times was back agin

With the huskin's an' the frolics,  
an' the joys I used to know,

When I lived at the settlement, a  
dozen years ago

I don't feel this way often, I 'm  
scarcely ever glum,

For life has taught me how to take  
her chances as they come

But now an' then my mind goes  
back to that ol' buryin' plot,

That holds the dust of some I  
loved, down there at Possum  
Trot

### DELY

JES' lak toddy wahms you thoo'

Sets yo' haid a reelin',

Meks you ovah good and new,

Dat 's de way I 's feelin'

Seems to me hit 's summah time,

Dough hit 's wintah reely,

I 's a feelin' jes' dat prime—

An' huh name is Dely

Dis hyeah love 's a cu'rus thing,

Changes 'roun' de season,

Meks you sad or meks you sing,

'Dout no uifly reason

Sometimes I go mopin' 'roun',

Den agin I 's leapin',

Sperits allus up an' down

Even when I 's sleepin'.

Fu' de dreams comes to me den,

An' dey keeps me pitchin',

Lak de apple dumplin's w'en

Bilin' in de kitchen

Some one sot to do me hahm,

Tryin' to ovahcome me,

Ketchin' Dely by de ahm

So 's to tek huh f'om me.

Mon, you bettah b'lieve I fights

(Dough hit 's on'y seemin'),

I 's a hittin' fu' my rights

Even w'en I 's dreamin'.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

But I d let you have em all  
Give em to you freely  
Good an bad one grent in' small  
So's you leave me Dely

Dely got dem meltin eyes  
Big an black an tend'ah  
Dely je a ladi size  
Delikit an slend'ah  
Dely brown ez brown kin be  
An huh huh is curly  
Oh she look so sweet to me —  
Bless de precious girlie!

Dely brown ez brown kin be  
She ain no mullatter  
She pure cullud — don you ee  
Dat s jes whut s de mittah?  
Dat s de why I love huh o  
D ain t no mix about huh  
Soon s you see huh face you know  
D ain t no chanst to doubt huh

Folks dey go to chuch an pray  
So s to git a blessin  
Oomph dey bettah come my way  
Dey could lu n a lesson  
Sabbaf day I don go fu  
Jes to see my pigeon  
I jes ets an' looks at huh  
Dat s enuff uligion

### BREAKING THE CHARM

CAUGHT Susanner whistlin well  
It s most nigh too good to tell  
Twould a ben too good to see  
Ef it had n t ben fur me,

Comin up so soft an sly  
That she didn' hear me nigh  
I was pokin 'round that d'ry  
An ez I come down the way  
First her whistle strikes my ears —  
Then her gingham dress appears,  
So with oft step up I slips  
Oh them dewy rose lips!  
Ripe ez cherries red an' round,  
Puckered up to make the sound  
She was lookin in the spring  
Whistlin to beat anything —

Kitty Dale er In the Sweet'  
I was jes so mortal beat  
That I can't quite ricoleck  
What the toon was but I speck  
'T w as some hymn er other fur  
Hymny things is jest like her  
Well she went on fur awhile  
With her face all in a smile  
An I never moved but stood  
Still n a piece o wood —  
Would n t wink ner would n t stir,  
But a gazin right at her,  
Tell she turns an' sees me — my!  
Thought at first she d try to fly  
But she blushed an' stood her  
ground  
Then a slyly lookin round,  
She says 'Did you hear me  
Ben?'

Whistlin wom'n crowin' hen'  
Says I lookin awful stern  
Then the red commenced to burn  
In them cheeks o hern Why la!  
Reddest red you ever saw —  
Pineys wa'n t a circumstance

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

You 'd 'a' noticed in a glance  
She was pow'rful shamed an'  
skeart;

But she looked so sweet an' peart,  
That a idee struck my head,  
So I up an' slowly said

"Woman whistlin' brings shore  
harm,

Jest one thing 'll break the charm"

"And what's that?" "Oh,  
my!" says I,

"I don't like to tell you"  
"Why?"

Says Susanner. "Well, you see  
It would kinder fall on me"  
Course I knowed that she'd in-  
sist,—

So I says. "You must be kissed  
By the man that heard you whistle;  
Everybody says that this 'll  
Break the charm and set you free  
From the threat'nin' penalty"

She was blushin' fit to kill,  
But she answered, kinder still:

"I don't want to have no harm,  
Please come, Ben, an' break the  
charm"

Did I break that charm?—oh,  
well,

There's some things I mustn't  
tell

I remember, afterwhile,

Her a-sayin' with a smile:

"Oh, you quit,—you sassy dunce,  
You jest caught me whistlin' *once*."

Ev'ry sence that when I hear  
Some one whistlin' kinder clear,

I most break my neck to see  
Ef it's Susy; but, dear me,  
I jest find I've b'en to chase  
Some blamed boy about the place.  
Dad's b'en noticin' my way,  
An' last night I heerd him say.  
"We must send fur Dr. Glenn,  
Mother, somethin's wrong with  
Ben!"

### HUNTING SONG

TEK a cool night, good an'  
cleah,

Skiff o' snow upon de groun';  
Jes' 'bout fall-time o' de yeah

W'en de leaves is dry an'  
brown,

Tek a dog an' tek a axe,  
Tek a lantu'n in yo' han',  
Step light whah de switches  
cracks,

Fu' dey's huntin' in de lan'.  
Down thoo de valleys an' ovah de  
hills,

Into de woods whah de 'simmon-  
tree grows,  
Wakin' an' skeerin' de po' whip-  
po'wills,

Huntin' fu' coon an' fu' 'possum  
we goes

Blow dat ho'n dah loud an'  
strong,

Call de dogs an' da'kies neah;  
Mek its music cleah an' long,  
So de folks at home kin hyeah.

# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Blow it twell de hills an' trees  
 Sets de echoes tumblin' back  
 Blow it twell de back ard breeze  
 Tells de folks we s on de  
 track  
 Coons is a ramblin an' 'possums  
 is out,  
 Look at dat dog you could set  
 on his tail!  
 Watch him now — steady — min  
 — what you s about  
 Bless me dat animal s got on  
 de trail!  
 Listen to him b' kin now!  
 Dat means bus ness sho s you  
 bo n  
 Ef he's struck de scent I low  
 Dat ere possum s sholy gone  
 knowed dat dog fu fo teen  
 yeahs  
 An I nevah seed him fail  
 Wen he sot dem flippin eahs  
 An went off upon a trail  
 Run Mistah 'Possum an run  
 Mistah Coon  
 No place is safe fu yo ramblin  
 to-night  
 Mas gin de lantun an God gin  
 de moon  
 An a long hunt gins a good ap  
 petite  
 Look hyeah folks you hyeah  
 dat change?  
 Dat ba k is sha per dan de res'  
 Dat ere son' ain't nothin  
 strange —

Dat dog s talked his level  
 bes  
 Somep n' s treed I know de  
 soun  
 Dah now — wha d I tell  
 you? seel  
 Dat ere dog done run him  
 down  
 Come hyeah he p cut down  
 dis tree  
 Ah Mistah 'Possum we got you  
 at las —  
 Need n't ply dud layin dah  
 on de groun  
 Fros an de simmons hrs made  
 you grow fas —  
 Wont he be fine when he s  
 roasted up brown!

## A LETTER

DEAR MISS LUCY I been tinkin  
 dat I d write you long fo dis  
 But dis writin s mighty tedious an  
 you know jes how it s  
 But I s got a little lesure so I teks  
 my pen in han  
 Fu to let you know my feelin s  
 ince I retched dis furrin lan  
 I s right well I's glad to tell you  
 (dough dis climte unt to  
 blame),  
 An I hopes wen dese lines reach  
 you dat dey'll fin yo' se f de  
 same  
 Cose I se feelin kin o homesick  
 — dat s ez richul ez kin be

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

W'en a feller's mo'n th'ee thou-  
sand miles across dat awful  
sea

(Don't you let nobidy fool you  
'bout de ocean bein' gran',

If you want to see de billers, you  
jes' view dem f'om de lan' )

'Bout de people? We been t'inkin'  
dat all white folks was alak,

But dese Englishmen is diffunt,  
an' dey 's curus fu' a fac'

Fust, dey's heavier an' redder in  
dey make-up an' dey looks,

An' dey don't put salt nor pepper  
in a blessed t'ing dey cooks!

W'en dey gin you good ol' tu'nips,  
ca'ots, pa'snips, beets, an'  
sich,

Ef dey ain't some one to tell you,  
you can't 'stinguish which is  
which

W'en I t'ought I's eatin' chicken  
— you may b'lieve dis hyeah's  
a lie —

But de waiter beat me down dat I  
was eatin' rabbit pie

An' dey 'd t'ink dat you was crazy  
— jes' a reg'lar ravin' loon,

Ef you 'd speak erbout a 'possum  
or a piece o' good ol' coon

O, hit's mighty nice, dis trav'lin',  
an' I's kin' o' glad I come

But, I reckon, now I's willin' fu'  
to tek my way back home

I done see de Crystal Palace, an'  
I's hyeahd dey string-band  
play,

But I has n't seen no banjos layin'  
nowhahs roun' dis way

Jes' gin ol' Jim Bowles a banjo,  
an' he 'd not go very fu',

'Fo' he 'd outplayed all dese fid-  
dlers, wif dey flourish and  
dey stir

Evahbiddy dat I's met wif has  
been monst'ous kin an' good;

But I t'ink I 'd lak it better to be  
down in Jones's wood,

Where we ust to have sich frolics,  
Lucy, you an' me an' Nelse,

Dough my appetite 'ud call me, ef  
dey was n't nuffin else

I 'd jes' lak to have some sweet-  
pertaters roasted in de skin;

I's a-longin' fu' my chittlin's an'  
my mustard greens ergin,

I's a-wishin' fu' some buttermilk,  
an' co'n braid, good an'  
brown,

An' a drap o' good ol' bourbon fu'  
to wash my feelin's down!

An' I's comin' back to see you jes'  
as chly as I kin,

So you better not go spa'kin' wif  
dat wuffless scoun'el Quin!

Well, I reckon, I mus' close now,  
write ez soon's dis reaches  
you,

Gi' my love to Sister Mandy an'  
to Uncle Isham, too.

Tell de folks I sen' 'em howdy;  
gin a kiss to pap an' mam,

Closin' I is, deah Miss Lucy,  
Still Yo' Own True-Lovin' SAM.

# PAUL LAURINCE DUNBAR

P S Ff you can't m k ou d  
letter luv it by erpon de hef  
An when I git home I ll read  
it darlin to you in own et

## CHRISMUS IS A COMIN

Bones a cuttin' in  
Back a feelin' col  
Hans a growin' larky  
Jes I k I v s ol  
Fros erpon de neldah  
Lookin' mighty w'ie  
Snowdraps lak a feeldah  
Slippin' down at night  
Jes keep tings a hummin'  
Spite o' fros an' 'lowth  
Chrismus is a-comin'  
An' all de week is outh

Little mas axin  
Who is Strit, Chrus?  
Meks it kin o' travin'  
Not to brek de laws  
Chillun s' pow'ful tryin'  
Fo' a pusson s' free  
Wen dey go a pryin'  
Right on thoo you free  
Down ernong yo' feelin's  
Jes pears lak dat you  
Got to change you dealin's  
So s' to tell em true

An my pickaninny —  
Dreamin' in his l'ol  
Come hycal' Mummy Jinny  
Come in tek a peep

Ol M s Bob an' Miss is  
In dey hot e up drah  
Got no chile lak dis is  
Dint none any hah  
Sleep in little lummy  
Sleep you little lumb  
He do know whut mammy  
Done wed up fu him

Dey ll be b'njo p'ckin'  
Dancin' ll night thoo  
Dey ll be lo s o' chicken  
Plenty tukks too  
Drums to wet yo' whistles  
So s' to luv e out chills  
Whut I keer fu drizzles  
Fallin' on de hills?  
Jes keep tings a hummin'  
Spite o' col an' show he  
Chrismus day s a-comin'  
An' all de week is outh

## A CABIN TALK

THE YOUNG MASTER ASKS FOR A  
STORY

WHUT you say dah? huh uh!  
chile

You s' enough to dribe me wile  
Want a story jes hycal' dat!  
Whah ll I git a story at?  
Din I tell you thee luv' night?  
Go w'y honey you run t' right  
I got somep'n else to do  
Cides jes tellin' tales to you  
Tell you jes one? Lem me ee  
Whut dat one's a gwine to be



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

When you 's ole, yo membry fails,  
Seems lak I do' know no tales.  
Well, set down dah in dat cheer,  
Keep, still ef you wants to hyeah  
Tek dat chin up off yo' han's,  
Set up nice now Goodness lan's!  
Hol' yo'se'f up lak yo' pa  
Bet nobidy evah saw  
Him scrunched down lak you was  
den —  
High-tone boys mecks high-tone  
men

Once dey was a ole black bah,  
Used to live 'roun' hyeah some-  
whah  
In a cave. He was so big  
He could ca'y off a pig  
Lak you picks a chicken up,  
Er yo' leetles' bit o' pup  
An' he had two gread big eyes,  
Jes' erbout a saucer's size  
Why, dey looked lak balls o' fiah  
Jumpin' 'roun' erpon a wiah  
W'en dat bah was mad, an' laws!  
But you ought to seen his paws!  
Did I see 'em? How you 'spec  
I 's a-gwine to ricollec'  
Dis hyeah ya'n I 's try'n' to spin  
Ef you keeps on puttin' in?  
You keep still an' don't you cheep  
Less I 'll sen' you off to sleep  
Dis hyeah bah'd go trompin'  
'roun'  
Eatin' evahthing he foun',  
No one could n't have a fa'm  
But dat bah 'u'd do' em ha'm,

And dey could n't ketch de scamp  
Anywhah he wan'ed to tramp  
Dah de scoun'el 'd mek his track,  
Do his du't an' come on back  
He was sich a sly ole limb,  
Traps was jes' lak fun to him

Now, down neah whah Mistah  
Bah  
Lived, dey was a weasel dah,  
But dey was n't fren's a-tall  
Case de weasel was so small.  
An' de bah 'u'd, jes' fu' sass,  
Tu'n his nose up w'en he'd pass.  
Weasels's small o' cose, but my!  
Dem air animiles is sly.  
So dis hyeah one says, says he,  
"I 'll jes' fix dat bah, you see"  
So he fixes up his plan  
An' hunts up de fa'merman  
When de fa'mer see him come,  
He 'mence lookin' mighty glum,  
An' he ketches up a stick,  
But de weasel speak up quick  
"Hol' on, Mistah Fa'mer man,  
I wan' 'splain a little plan  
Ef you waits, I 'll tell you whah  
An' jes' how to ketch ol' Bah  
But I tell yow now you mus'  
Gin me one fat chicken fus'"  
Den de man he scratch his haid,  
Las' he say, "I'll mek de trade"  
So de weasel et his hen,  
Smacked his mouf and says,  
"Well, den,  
Set yo' trap an' bait ternight,  
An' I 'll ketch de bah all right"

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Den he ups an' goes to see  
Mistah Bah an says says he  
' Well fren Bah we *aint* been  
frens

But ternight ha d feelin' en  
Ef you ain t too proud to steal,  
We kin git a splendid meal  
Cose I would n t come to you  
But it mus be done by two  
Hit s a trap but we kin beat  
All dey tricks an git de meat  
Cose I s wif you says de bah  
Come on weasel show me  
whah

Well dey trots erlong ontwell  
Dat air meat began ned to smell  
In de trap Den weasel say  
Now you put yo paw dis way  
While I hol de spring back so  
Den you grab de meat an go  
Well de bah he had to grin  
Ez he put his big paw in  
Den he juked up but — kerbing!  
Weasel done let go de spring

Dah now says de weasel dah  
I done cotched you Mistah Bah!  
O dat bah did sno t and spout  
Try n his bestes to git out  
But de weasel say Goo bye!  
Weasel small but weasel sly  
Den he tu ned his back an run  
Tol de famer whut he done  
So de famer come down dah  
Wif a axe and killed de bah

Dah now ain t dat sto y fine?  
Run erlong now, nevah min

Want some mo' you rascal you?  
No suh! no suh! dat ll do

### AT CANDLE-LIGHTIN' TIME

WHEN I come in f'om de co n fiel  
aftah wo kin' ha d all day  
It s amazin nice to fin my sup  
pah all erpon de way  
An it s nice to smell de coffee  
bubblin ovah in de pot  
An it s fine to see de meat a  
sizzlin teasin lak an hot

But when suppah time is ovah an  
de tings is cleahed away  
Den de happy hours dat foller are  
de sweetes of de day  
When my co ncob pipe is sta ted,  
an de smoke is drawin  
prime  
My ole ooman says 'I reckon  
Ile it s candle lightin' time

Den de chillun snuggle up to me  
an all commence to call  
Oh say daddy now it s time  
to mek de shadders on de  
wall  
So I puts my han s togethah —  
evah daddy knows de way —  
An de chillun snuggle closer roun'  
ez I begin to say —

Fus thung hyeah come Mistah  
Rabbit don you see him wok  
his eahs?

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Huh, uh! dis mus' be a donkey,—  
look, how innercent he 'pears!  
Dah 's de ole black swan a-swim-  
min'—ain't she got a' awful  
neck?

Who's dis feller dat's a-comin'?  
Why, dat's ole dog Tray, I  
'spec'!"

Dat's de way I run on, tryin' fu'  
to please 'em all I can;

Den I hollahs, "Now be keerful  
—dis hyeah las' 's de buga-  
man!"

An' dey runs an' hides dey faces,  
dey ain't skeered — dey's let-  
tin' on

But de play ain't raaly ovah twell  
dat buga-man is gone

So I jes' teks up my banjo, an' I  
plays a little chune,

An' you see dem hards come peepin'  
out to listen mighty soon

Den my wife says, "Sich a pappy  
fu' to give you sich a fright!"

Jes, you go to baid, an' leave him  
say yo' prayers an' say good-  
night."

## WHISTLING SAM

I HAS hyeahd o' people dancin' an'  
I's hyeahd o' people singin'.  
An' I's been 'roun' lots of othahs  
dat could keep de banjo  
ringin',

But of all de whistlin' da'kies dat  
have lived an' died since Ham,  
De whistlin'est I evah seed was  
ol' Ike Bates's Sam

In de kitchen er de stable, in de  
fiel' er mowin' hay,

You could hyeah dat boy a-whis-  
tlin' pu'ty nigh a mile er-  
way,—

Puck'rin' up his ugly features  
'twell you could n't see his  
eyes,

Den you 'd hyeah a soun' lak dis  
un f'om dat awful puckah  
rise.



When dey had revival meetin' an'  
de Lawd's good grace was  
flowin'

On de groun' dat needed wat'rin'  
whaih de seeds of good was  
growin',

While de othahs was a-singin' an'  
a-shoutin' right an' lef',

You could hyeah dat boy a-whis-  
tlin' kin' o' sof' beneaf his  
bref:



# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

At de call fu colo'ed soldiers  
 Sam enlisted mong de res  
 Wid de blue o Gawd s great ahmy  
 wropped about his swellin  
 breas

An he laffed an whistled loudah  
 in his youfful joy an glee  
 Dat de govament would let him  
 he p to mek his people free

Daih was lots o ties to bin him  
 pappy mammy an his  
 Dinah —

Dinah min you was his sweet  
 heat an dey was n't nary  
 finah

But he lef em all I tell you lak  
 a king he marched away

Try n his level bes to whistle  
 happy solemn choky gay



To de front he went an' bravely  
 fought de foe an kep his  
 sperrit

An his comerds said his whistle  
 made em strong when dey  
 could hyeah it

When a saber er a bullet cut some  
 frien o his n down

An de time u d come to trench  
 him an de boys 'u d gettah  
 roun

An dey could n't stat a hymn  
 tune mebbe none o dem  
 u d keer

Sam 'u d whistle Sleep in Jesus  
 an he knowed de Mastah d  
 hyeah

In de camp all sad discouraged  
 he would cheer de hea ts of  
 all

When above de soun of labour  
 dey could hyeah his whistle  
 call



When de cruel wah was ovah an  
 de boys come machin back

Dey was shouts an cries an  
 blessins all erlong dey happy  
 track

An de da kies all was happy souls  
 an bodies bofe was freed

Why hit seemed lak de Redeemah  
 mus a been on earf indeed

Dey was gettahed all one evenin  
 jes befo de cabin do

When dey hyeahd somebody  
 whistlin kin o sof an sweet  
 an low

Dey could n't see de whistlah but  
 de hymn was cleah and  
 crim

An dey all stood daih a listenin  
 ontwell Dinah shouted,  
 ' Sam!

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

An' dey seed a little da'ky way off  
yandah thoo de trees  
Wid his face all in a puckah mekin'  
jes' sich soun's ez dese



## HOW LUCY BACKSLID

DE times is mighty stirrin' 'mong  
de people up ouah way,  
Dey 'sputin' an' dey argyin' an'  
fussin' night an' day,  
An' all dis monst'ous trouble dat  
hit meks me tiahed to tell  
Is 'bout dat Lucy Jackson dat was  
sich a mighty belle.

She was de preachah's favoured,  
an' he tol' de chu'ch one  
night  
Dat she travelled thoo de cloud o'  
sin a-bearin' of a light,  
But, now, I 'low he t'inkin' dat she  
mus' 'a' los' huh lamp,  
Case Lucy done backslided an' dey  
trouble in de camp

Huh daddy wants to beat huh, but  
huh mammy dais him to,  
Fu' she lookin' at de question f'om  
a ooman's pint o' view,  
An' she say dat now she would n't  
have it diff'ent ef she could,  
Dat huh darter only acted jes' lak  
any othah would.

Cose you know w'en women argy,  
dey is mighty easy led  
By dey hea'ts an' don't go foolin'  
'bout de reasons of de haid  
So huh mammy laid de law down  
(she ain' reckernizin' wrong),  
But you got to mek erlowance fu'  
de cause dat go along

Now de cause dat made Miss Lucy  
fu' to th'ow huh grace away  
I's afcard won't baih no 'spection  
w'en hit come to jedgement  
day,  
Do' de same t'ing been a-wo'kin'  
evah sence de worl' began,—  
De ooman disobeyin' fu' to 'tice  
along a man

Ef you 'tended de revivals which  
we held de wintah pas',  
You kin rickolec' dat convuts was  
a-comin' thuck an' fas',  
But dey ain't no use in talkin', dey  
was all lef' in de lu'ch  
W'en ol' Mis' Jackson's dartah  
foun' huh peace an' tuk de  
chu'ch.

W'y, she shouted ovah evah inch  
of Ebenczah's flo',  
Up into de preachah's pulpit an'  
f'om dah down to de do',  
Den she hugged an' squeezed huh  
mammy, an' she hugged an'  
kissed huh dad,  
An' she struck out at huh sistah,  
people said, lak she was mad.

# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

I has tended some revivals dat  
was lively in my day

An' I s seed folks git 'uligion in  
mos evah kin o way

But I tell you an you b lieve me  
dat I s speakin' true indeed

Dat gal tuk huh ligion hɪ dah dan  
de ha dest ʒit I's seed

Well fom dat t was Sistah  
Jackson won t you please do  
dis er dat?

She mus allus stat de singin  
wen dey d pass erroun de  
hat

An hit seemed dey was n t nuffin  
in dat chu ch dat could go by  
Dout sistah Lucy Jackson had a  
finger in de pie

But de sayin mighty trufeful dat  
hit easiah to sail

W en de sea is ca m an gentle dan  
to weathah out a gale

Dat s whut made dis oomans  
trouble, ef de stom had kep  
away

She d a hɪd enough uligion fu  
to lasted out huh day

Lucy went wid Lishy Davis but  
wen she jined chu ch you  
know

Dah was lots o little places dat of  
cose she could n t go

An she had to gin up dancin' an  
huh singin' an' huh play —

Now hit s nachul dat sich goin s  
on u d drive a man away

So wen Lucy got so solemn Ike  
he stat ed fu to go

Wid a gal who was a sinnah an  
could mek a bettah show

Lucy jes went on to meetin lak  
she did n t keer a rip

But my sperunce kep me t ink in  
dah was somep n gwine to  
drap

Fu a gal won t let uligion er no  
othah so t o t ing

Stop huh wen she teks a notion  
dat she wants a weddin ring

You kin promise huh de blessin s  
of a happy aftah life

(An hit's nice to be a angel) but  
she d ravah be a wife

So wen Chrismus come in mas-  
tah gin a frolic on de lawn

Did n t sprise me not de littlest  
seen Lucy lookin on

An I seed a wɪnin lightnin go  
a flashin fom huh eye

Jest ez Lishy an his new gal went  
a gallivantin by

An dat Tildy umph! she giggled  
an she gin huh dress a flirt

Lak de people she was passin was  
ez common ez de dirt

An de minit she was dancin' w'y  
dat gal put on mo ahs

Dan a cat a tek in' kittens up a  
pash o windin stahs

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

She could 'fo'd to show huh  
sma'tness, fu' she could n't  
he'p but know

Dat wid jes' de present dancahs  
she was ownah of de flo',

But I t'ink she'd kin' o' cooled  
down ef she happened on de  
sly

Fu' to noticed dat 'ere lightnin'  
dat I seed in Lucy's eye

An' she would n't been so 'ston-  
ished w'en de people gin a  
shout,

An' Lucy th'owed huh mantle  
back an' come a-glidin' out  
Some ahms was dah to tek huh an'  
she fluttahed down de flo'

Lak a feddah f'om a bedtick w'en  
de win' commence to blow.

Soon ez Tildy see de trouble, she  
jes' tu'n an' toss huh haid,

But seem lak she los' huh sperrit,  
all huh darin'ness was daid

Did n't cut anothah capah nary  
time de blessid night,

But de othah one, hit looked lak  
could n't git enough delight

W'en you keeps a colt a-stan'nin'  
in de stable all along,

W'en he do git out hit's nachul  
he'll be pullin' mighty strong

Ef you will tie up yo' feelin's,  
hyeah 's de bes' advice to tek,

Look out fu' an awful loosin' w'en  
de string dat hol's 'em brek.

Lucy's mammy groaned to see huh,  
an' huh pappy sto'med an' to',

But she kep' right on a-hol'in' to  
de centah of de flo'

So dey went an' ast de pastoh ef he  
could n't mek huh quit,

But de tellin' of de sto'y th'owed  
de preachah in a fit.

Tildy Taylor chewed huh hank'-  
cher twell she'd chewed it in  
a hole,—

All de sinnahs was rejoicin' 'cause  
a lamb had lef' de fol',

An' de las' I seed o' Lucy, she an'  
'Lish was side an' side

I don't blame de gal fu' dancin',  
an' I could n't ef I tried.

Fu' de men dat wants to ma'y  
ain't a-growin' 'roun' on  
trees,

An' de gal dat wants to git one  
sholy has to try to please

Hit's a ha'd t'ing fu' a ooman fu'  
to pray an' jes' set down,

An' to sacafice a husban' so 's to  
try to gain a crown

Now, I don' say she was justified  
in follerin' huh plan,

But aldough she los' huh 'ligion,  
yit she sholy got de man

Latah on, w'en she is suttain dat  
de preachah 's made 'em fas'

She kin jes' go back to chu'ch an'  
ax fu'giveness fu' de pas'!

LYRICS OF LOVE AND LAUGHTER





## TWO LITTLE BOOTS

Two little boots all rough an wo  
Two little boots!

Law, I s kissed em times befo  
Dese little boots!

Seems de toes a peepin thoo  
Dis hyeah hole an sayin Bool!  
Evah time dey looks at you—  
Dese little boots

Membah de time he put em an  
Dese little boots

Riz an called fu em by dawn  
Dese little boots

Den he tromped de livelong day  
Laffin in lus happy way  
Evah ting he had to say  
My little boots!

Kickin de an de whole day long  
Dem little boots

Good de cobblah made em strong,  
Dem little boots!

Rocks was fu dat baby s use  
Ion had to stan abuse  
Wen you tuned dese champeens  
loose  
De e little boots!

Ust to make de ol cat cry  
Dese little boots

Den you walked it mighty high  
Proud little boots!

Ahms akimbo, stan in wide

Eyes a sayin 'Dis is pride!  
Den de manny baby stride!  
You little boots

Somehow you don' seem so gay,  
Po little boots

Sence yo ownah went erway  
Po little boots!

Yo bright tops don look so red  
Dese brass tips is dull an dead  
Goo by whut de baby said  
Deah little boots!

Ain t you kin o sad yo'se f  
You l ttle boots?

Dis is all his mammy s lef  
Two little boots  
Sence huh baby gone an died  
Her n itse f hit seem to hide  
Des a little bit inside  
Two little boots

## TO THE ROAD

COOL is the wind for the summer  
is waning

Who s for the road?  
Sun flecked and soft where the  
dead leaves are raining

Who s for the road?  
Knapsack and alpenstock press  
hand and shoulder

Prick of the brier and roll of the  
boulder

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

This be your lot till the season  
grow older,  
Who's for the road?

Up and away in the hush of the  
morning,  
Who's for the road?  
Vagabond he, all conventions a-  
scorning,  
Who's for the road?  
Music of warblers so merrily sing-  
ing,  
Draughts from the rill from the  
roadside up-springing,  
Nectar of grapes from the vines  
lowly swinging,  
These on the road

Now every house is a hut or a  
hovel,  
Come to the road:  
Mankind and moles in the dark  
love to grovel,  
But to the road  
Throw off the loads that are bend-  
ing you double,  
Love is for life, only labor is  
trouble,  
Truce to the town, whose best gift  
is a bubble.  
Come to the road!

## A SPRING WOOING

COME on walkin' wid me, Lucy,  
'tain't no time to mope  
erroun'

W'en de sunshine's shoutin'  
glory in de sky,  
An' de little Johnny-Jump-Ups's  
jes' a-springin' f'om de  
groun',  
Den a-lookin' roun' to ax each  
othah w'y.  
Don' you hyeah dem cows a-  
mooiin'? Dat's dey howdy  
to de spring;  
Ain' dey lookin' most oncom-  
mon satisfied?  
Hit's enough to mek a body want  
to spread dey mouf an'  
sing  
Jes' to see de critters all so  
spa'klin'-eyed.

W'y dat squir'l dat jes' run past  
us, ef I did n' know his  
tricks,  
I could swaih he'd got 'uligion  
jes' to-day;  
An' dem liza'ds slippin' back an'  
fofe ermong de stones an'  
sticks  
Is a-wigglin' 'cause dey feel so  
awful gay  
Oh, I see yo' eyes a-shinin' dough  
you try to mek me b'lieve  
Dat you ain' so monst'ous happy  
'cause you come,  
But I tell you dis hyeah weathah  
meks it moughty ha'd to  
'ceive  
Ef a body's soul ain' blin' an'  
deef an' dumb.

# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Robin whistlin' ovah yandah ez he  
buil his little nes

Whut you reckon dat he sayin  
to his mate?

He's a sayin dat he love huh in de  
wods she know de bes

An she lookin moughty pleased  
at whut he state

Now Miss Lucy dat ah robin  
sholy got his sheer o sense

An de hen bird got huh  
mothah wit fu true,

So I tink ef you ll excuse me fu  
I do mean no erfence

Dey s a lesson in dem birds fu  
me an' you

I s a buil in o my cabin an I s  
vines erbove de do

Fu to kin o gin it sheltah f om  
de sun

Gwine to have a little kitchen wid  
a reglar wooden flo

An dey ll be a back verandy  
wen hit's done

I s a waitin fu you Lucy tek de  
zample o de birds

Dat's a lovin' an a matin evah  
whaih

I can tell you dat I loves you in  
de robin s music wods

But my cabin s talkin fu me  
ovah thaih!

## JOGGIN ERLONG

De da kest hour dey allus say  
Is des befo de dawn,

But it s moughty ha d a waitin  
Were de night goes frownin  
on

An it s moughty ha d a hopin'  
W en de clouds is big an black  
An all de t ings you s waited fu'  
Has failed er gone to wrack —  
But des keep on a joggin wid a  
little bit o' song

De mo n is allus brightah w en de  
night s been long

Dey s lots o knocks you s got to  
tek

Befo yo journey s done  
An dey s times w en you ll be  
wishin

Dat de weary race was run  
W en you want to give up tryin  
An des float erpon de wave  
W en you don t feel no mo sorrer  
Ez you t ink erbout de grave —  
Den des' keep on a joggin wid a  
little bit o song

De mo n is allus brightah w en de  
night s been long

De whup lash sting a good deal  
mo

De back hit's knowed befo  
An de burden s allus heavies  
Whaih hits weight hrs made a  
so

Dey is times w en tribulation  
Seems to git de uppah han  
An to whip de weary trav lah  
Tw ell he ain t got stren th to  
stan —

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

But des' keep on a-joggin' wid a  
    little bit o' song,  
De mo'n is allus brightah w'en de  
    night's been long

## IN MAY

OH to have you in May,  
    To talk with you under the  
    trees,  
Dreaming throughout the day,  
    Drinking the wine-like breeze,

Oh it were sweet to think  
    That May should be ours again,  
Hoping it not, I shrink,  
    Out of the sight of men

May brings the flowers to bloom,  
    It brings the green leaves to the  
    tree,

And the fatally sweet perfume,  
    Of what you once were to me

## DREAMS

WHAT dreams we have and how  
    they fly  
Like rosy clouds across the sky,  
    Of wealth, of fame, of sure suc-  
    cess,  
    Of love that comes to cheer  
    and bless,  
And how they wither, how they  
    fade,  
The waning wealth, the jilting  
    jade —

The fame that for a moment  
    gleams,  
Then flies forever,— dreams, ah  
    — dreams!

O burning doubt and long regret,  
O tears with which our eyes are  
    wet,  
Heart-throbs, heart-aches, the  
    glut of pain,  
The somber cloud, the bitter  
    rain,  
You were not of those dreams —  
    ah! well,  
Your full fruition who can tell?  
Wealth, fame, and love, ah!  
    love that beams  
Upon our souls, all dreams —  
    ah! dreams.

## THE TRYST

DE night creep down erlong de  
    lan',  
De shadders rise an' shake,  
De frog is sta'tin' up his ban',  
De cricket is awake,  
My wo'k is mos' nigh done, Celes',  
    To-night I won't be late,  
I's hu'yin' thoo my level bes',  
    Wait fu' me by de gate  
De mockin'-bird 'll sen' his glee  
    A-thrillin' thoo and thoo,  
I know dat ol' magnolia-tree  
    Is smellin' des' fu' you,  
De jessamine erside de road  
    Is bloomin' rich an' white,

# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

My heart s a thobbin 'cuse it  
knowed

You d wait fu me to night

Hit s lonesome, ain t it stan in  
thaih

Wid no one nigh to talk ?

But ain t dey whispahs in de aih

Erlong de gjahden walk ?

Dont somep n kin o call my  
name

An say he love you bes ?

Hit s true I wants to say de  
same

So wait fu me Celes

Sing somep n fu to pass de time

Outsing de mockin bird

You got de music an de rhyme

You beat him wid de word

I s comin now my work is done

De hour has come fu res

I wants to fly but only run —

Wait fu me deah Celes

## A PLEA

TREAT me nice Miss Mandy  
Jane

Treat me nice

Dough my love has tuned my  
brain

Treat me nice

I ain t done a ting to shame

Lovahs all ac s jes de same

Dont you know we ain t to blame ?

Treat me nice!

Cose I know I's talkin wild

Treat me nice

I can t talk no bettah child,

Treat me nice

Whut a pusson gwine to do

Wen he come a cou tin you

All a trimblin thoo and thoo ?

Please be nice

Reckon I mus' go de paf

Othahs do

Lovahs ling'rh ladies laff

Mebbe you

Do mean all the things you say

An pu haps some latah day

Wen I baig you had you may

Treat me nice!

## THE DOVE

OUT of the sunshine and out of  
the heat

Out of the dust of the grimy  
street

A song fluttered down in the form  
of a dove

And it bore me a message the one  
word — Love!

Ah I was toiling and oh I was  
sad

I had forgotten the way to be glad  
Now smiles for my sadness and  
for my toil rest

Since the dove fluttered down to  
its home in my breast!

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## A WARM DAY IN WINTER

"SUNSHINE on de meddeis,  
Greenness on de way,  
Dat's de blessed reason  
I sing all de day"  
Look hyeah! Whut you awin'?  
Whut meks me so merry?  
'Spect to see me sighin'  
W'en hit's wa'm in Febawary?

'Long de stake an' rider  
Seen a robin set,  
W'y, hit 'mence a-thawin',  
Groun' is monst'ous wet  
Den you stan' dah wond'rin',  
Lookin' skeert an' stary,  
I's a right to caper  
W'en hit's wa'm in Febawary.

Missis gone a-drivin',  
Mastah gone to shoot,  
Ev'ry da'ky lazin'  
In de sun to boot  
Qua'tah's moughty pleasant,  
Hangin' 'roun' my Mary,  
Cou'tin' boun' to prospah  
W'en hit's wa'm in Febawary

Cidah look so pu'ty  
Po'in' f'om de jug —  
Don' you see it's happy?  
Hyeah it laffin'—glug?  
Now's de time fu' people  
Fu' to try an' bury  
All dey grief an' sorer,  
W'en hit's wa'm in Febawary

## SNOWIN'

DEY is snow upon de meddahs,  
dey is snow upon de hill,  
An' de little branch's watahs is  
all glistenin' an' still;  
De win' goes roun' de cabin lak a  
sperrit wan'erin' 'roun'.  
An' de chillen shakes an' shivahs  
as dey listen to de soun'.  
Dey is hick'ry in de fiahplace,  
whah de blaze is risin' high,  
But de heat it meks ain't wa'min'  
up de gray clouds in de sky.  
Now an' den I des peep outside,  
den I hurries to de do',  
Lawd a mussy on my body, how I  
wish it would n't snow!

I kin stan' de hottes' summah, I  
kin stan' de wettes' fall,  
I kin stan' de chilly springtime in  
de ploughland, but dat's  
all,  
Fu' de ve'y hottes' fiah nevah tells  
my skin a t'ing,  
W'en de snow commence a-flyin',  
an' de win' begin to sing  
Dey is plenty wood erroun' us, an'  
I chop an' tote it in,  
But de t'oughts dat I's a t'inkin'  
while I's wo'kin' is a sin  
I kin keep f'om downright swahin'  
all de time I's on de go,  
But my hea't is full o' cuss-wo'ds  
w'en I's trampin' thoo de  
snow.

# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

What you say you Lishy Davis  
dat you see a possum's tracks?

Look hyeah, boy you stop yo  
foolin bring ol Spot an  
bring de ax.

Is I col? Go way now Mandy  
what you tink I s made of?  
—sho

W y dis win is des ez gentle an  
dis ain't no kin o snow

Dis hyeah weathah s des ez healthy  
ez de wärmest summah days

All you chillen step up lively pile  
on wood an keep a blaze

What s de use o gittin skeery  
ca e dey s snow upon de  
groun?

Huh uh I s a reglar snowbird ef  
dey s any possum roun

Go on Spot don be so foolish  
don you see de signs o feet

What you howlin fu? Keep still  
suh cose de col is putty  
sweet

But we goin out on busness an  
hit s busness o de kin

Dat mus put a dog an dahky in  
a happy frame o min

Yes you s col I know it Spotty  
but you des stay close to me

An I ll mek you hot ez cotton  
w en we strikes de happy tree

No I don lak wintah weathah  
an I'd wush t uz allus  
June

Ef it was n't fu de trackin o de  
possum an de coon

## KEEP A SONG UP ON DE WAY

*On de clouds is mighty heavy*  
An de rain is mighty thick

Keep a song up on de way  
An de waters is a rumblin  
On de boulders in de crick

Keep a song up on de way  
Fu a bird ercross de road  
Is a singin lak he knowed  
Dat we people did n't daih  
Fu to try de runy uh

Wid a song up on de way

What s de use o gittin mopy  
Case de weather ain de bes!

Keep a song up on de way  
W en de rain is fallin ha des  
Dey s de longes times to res

Keep a song up on de way  
Dough de plough s a strain still  
Dey ll be warih fu de mill  
Run mus come ez well ez sun  
Fo de weathah s wok is done

Keep a song up on de way

W y hit s nice to hyeah de show ahs  
Fallin down ermong de trees

Keep a song up on de way  
Ef de bird don bothah bout it  
Put go singin lak dey please

Keep a song up on de way  
You don spose I s gwine to see  
*Dem uh fowls do mo dan me?*

No suh I ll des chase dis frown  
An aldough de run fall down

Keep a song up on de way



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## THE TURNING OF THE BABIES IN THE BED

WOMAN's sho' a curious critter,  
an' dey ain't no doubtin' dat.  
She's a mess o' funny capahs f'om  
huh slippahs to huh hat  
Ef you tries to un'erstan' huh, an'  
you fails, des' up an' say  
"D' ain't a bit o' use to try to  
un'erstan' a woman's way"

I don' mean to be complainin', but  
I's jes' a-settin' down  
Some o' my own observations,  
w'en I cas' my eye croun'  
Ef you ax me fu' to prove it, I  
ken do it mighty fine,  
Fu' dey ain't no bettah 'zample  
den dis ve'y wife o' mine

In de ve'y hea't o' midnight, w'en  
I's sleepin' good an' soun',  
I kin hyeah a so't o' rustlin' an'  
somebody movin' 'roun'  
An' I say, "Lize, whut you do-  
in'?" But she frown an' shek  
huh hard,  
"Heish yo' mouf, I's only tu'nin'  
of de chillun in de bed

"Don' you know a chile gits rest-  
less, layin' all de night one  
way?  
An' you' got to kind o' 'range him  
sev'al times befo' de day?  
So de little necks won't worry, an'  
de little backs won't break;

Don' you t'ink case chillun's chil-  
lun dey hain't got no pain an'  
ache"

So she shakes 'em, an' she twists  
'em, an' she tu'ns 'em 'roun'  
erbout,  
'Twell I don' see how de chillun  
evah keeps f'om hollahin' out  
Den she lif's 'em up head down-  
'ards, so 's dey won't git livah-  
grown,  
But dey snoozes des' ez peaceful  
ez a liza'd on a stone.

W'en hit's mos' nigh time fu'  
wakin' on de dawn o' jedg-  
ment day,  
Seems lak I kin hyeah ol' Gab'iel  
lay his trumpet down an' say,  
"Who dat walkin' 'roun' so easy,  
down on earf ermong de  
dead?"—  
'T will be Lizy up a-tu'nin' of de  
chillun in de bed

## THE DANCE

HEEL and toe, heel and toe,  
That is the song we sing;  
Turn to your partner and curtsy  
low,  
Balance and forward and swing  
Corners are draughty and meadows  
are white,  
This is the game for a winter's  
night.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Hands around, hands around  
Trip it and not too slow  
Clear is the fiddle and sweet its  
sound

Keep the girls cheeks aglow  
I'll let your movements be dainty  
and light

This is the game for a winters  
night

Back to back, back to back  
Turn to your place again  
Never let lightness nor nimble  
ness lack

Either in maidens or men  
Time hasteth ever beware of its  
flight

Oh what a game for a winters  
night!

Slower now slower now  
Softer the music sighs  
Look there are beads on your  
partners brow

Though there be light in her  
eyes

Lead her away and her grace re  
quite

So goes the game on a winters  
night

### SOLILOQUY OF A TURKEY

DEY's a sot o threatenin feelin  
in de blowin of de breeze  
An I s feelin kin o queamish  
in de night

I s a walkin roun a lookin at  
de diffunt style o trees

An a measurin dey thickness  
an' dey height

Fu dey s somep n mighty spicious  
in de looks de da kies give

Ez dey pass me an my fambly  
on de groun

So it curs to me dat lakly ef I  
cahs to try an live

It concehns me fu' to mence to  
look erroun

Dey s a curious kin o shivah  
runnin up an down my back

An I feel my feddahs rufflin  
all de day

An my laigs commence to trimble  
evah blessid step I mek

Wen I sees a ax I tuns my  
head away

Folks is gogin me wid goodies  
an dey s treatin me wid cash

An I s fat in spite of all dat I  
kin do

I s mistrus ful of de kin ness dat s  
erroun me evahwhuh

Fu it s jes too good an fre  
quent to be true

Snow s a fallin on de medders all  
erroun me now is white

But I s still kep on a roostin  
on de fence

Isham comes an feels my breas  
bone an he hefted me las  
night

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

An' he 's gone erroun' a-grinnin'  
evah sence.  
'T ain't de snow dat meks me  
shivah, 't ain't de col' dat  
meks me shake,  
'T ain't de wintah-time itse'f  
dat 's 'fectin' me,  
But I t'ink de time is comin',  
an' I'd bettah mek a break,  
Fu' to set wid Mistah Possum  
in his tree  
W'en you hyeah de da'kies singin',  
an' de quahtahs all is gay,  
'T ain't de time fu' birds lak me  
to be 'erroun',  
W'en de hick'ry chips is flyin', an'  
de log's been ca'ied erway,  
Den hit 's dang'ous to be roostin'  
nigh he groun'.  
Grin on, Isham! Sing on, da'k-  
ies! But I flop my wings an'  
go  
Fu' de sheltah of de ve'y high-  
est tree,  
Fu' dey's too much close ertention  
— an' dey's too much fallin'  
snow —  
An' it's too nigh Chris'mus  
mo'nin' now fu' me

## FISHING

W'EN I git up in de mo'nin' an'  
de clouds is big an' black,  
Dey's a kin' o' wa'nin' shivah goes  
a-scootin' down my back;

Den I says to my ol' ooman ez I  
watches down de lane,  
“Don't you so't o' reckon, Lizy,  
dat we gwine to have some  
rain?”

“Go on, man,” my Lizy answah,  
“you cain't fool me, not a  
bit,  
I don't see no rain a-comin', ef  
you 's wishin' fu' it, quit,  
Case de mo' you t'ink erbout it, an'  
de mo' you pray an' wish,  
W'y de rain stay 'way de longah,  
spechul ef you wants to fish.”

But I see huh pat de skillet, an' I  
see huh cas' huh eye  
Wid a kin' o' anxious motion to'ds  
de da'kness in de sky,  
An' I knows whut she 's a-t'inkin',  
dough she tries so ha'd to  
hide  
She 's a-sayin', “Would n't catfish  
now tas'e monst'ous bully,  
fried?”

Den de clouds git black an' black-  
ah, an' de thundah 'mence to  
roll,  
An' de rain, it 'mence a-fallin'  
Oh, I's happy, bless my  
soul!

Ez I look at dat ol' skillet, an' I  
'magine I kin see  
Jes' a slew o' new-ketched catfish  
sizzlin' dah fu' huh an' me.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

'T ain t no use to go a ploughin ,  
fu' de groun ll be too  
wet

So I puts out fu' de big house at  
a moughty pace you bet

An ol mastah say Well Lishy  
ef you tink hit s gwine to  
rain

Go on fishin hit s de weathah  
an I low we can't com  
plain

Talk erbout a dahky walkin wid  
his haid up in de aih'

Have to feel mine evah minute to  
be sho I got it dah

En de win is cuttin capahs an  
a lashin thoo de trees

But de rain keeps on a singin  
blessed songs lak Tek yo  
ease

Wid my pole erpon my shouldah  
an my wom can in my  
han

I kin feel de fish a waitin' wen I  
strikes de rivahs san

Nevah min you ho ny scoun els  
need n swim erroun an  
grin

I'll be grinnin in a minute wen I  
mence to haul you in

Wen de fish begin to nibble an  
de cok begin to jump

I's erfeahed dat dey ll quit bitin  
case dey hycah my heat go  
' thump '

'Twell de cok go way down  
undah, an I raise a awful  
shout

Ez a big ol yallah belly comes a  
gallivantin out

Need n t wriggle Mistah Catfish  
case I got you jes de same,

You been eatin I ll be eatin an  
we needah ain t to blame

But you need n t feel so lonesome  
fu I s thowin out to see

Ef dey ain t some of yo comrades  
fu to keep you company

Spot dis fishin ! now you talkin  
wy dey ain t no kin to beat

I don keer ef I is soakin laigs  
an back an naik an feet

It s de spot I s lookin aftah  
Hit s de pleasure an de fun

Dough I knows dat Lizy s waitin  
wid de skillet wen I s done

### A PLANTATION PORTRAIT

HAIN T you see my Mandy Lou  
Is it true?

Whaih you been fom day to day,  
Whaih I say?

Dat you say you nevah seen  
Dis hycah queen

Walkin roun fom fiel to street  
Smilin sweet?

Slendah ez a saplin tree  
Seems to me

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

W'en de win' blow f'om de bay  
 She jes' sway  
 Lak de reg'lar saplin' do  
 Ef hit's grew  
 Straight an' graceful, 'dout a limb,  
 Sweet an' slim.

Browner den de frush's wing,  
 An' she sing  
 Lak he mek his wa'ble ring  
 In de spring;  
 But she sholy beat de frush,  
 Hyeah me, hush:  
 W'en she sing, huh teef kin show  
 White ez snow

Eyes ez big an' roun' an' bright  
 Ez de light  
 Whut de moon gives in de prime  
 Harvest time  
 An' huh hah a woolly skein,  
 Black an' plain  
 Hol's you wid a natchul twis'  
 Close to bliss.

Tendah han's dat mek yo' own  
 Feel lak stone;  
 Easy steppin', blessid feet,  
 Small an' sweet.  
 Hain't you seen my Mandy Lou,  
 Is it true?  
 Look at huh befo' she's gone,  
 Den pass on!

## A LITTLE CHRISTMAS BASKET

De win' is hollahin' "Daih you"  
 to de shuttahs an' de fiah,

De snow's a-sayin' "Got you" to  
 de groun',  
 Fu' de wintah weathah's come  
 widout a-askin' ouah de-  
 siah,  
 An' he's laughin' in his sleeve  
 at whut he foun',  
 Fu' dey ain't nobody ready wid  
 dey fuel er dey food,  
 An' de money bag look timid  
 lak, fu' sho',  
 So we want ouah Chrismus  
 sermon, but we'd lak it ef  
 you could  
 Leave a little Chrismus basket  
 at de do'.

Wha's de use o' tellin' chillen  
 'bout a Santy er a Nick,  
 An' de sto'ies dat a body allus  
 tol'?  
 When de harf is gray wid ashes  
 an' you has n't got a stick  
 Fu' to warm dem when dey  
 little toes is col'?  
 Wha's de use o' preachin' 'ligion  
 to a man dat's sta'ved to  
 def,  
 An' a-tellin' him de Mastah  
 will pu'vide?  
 Ef you want to tech his feelin's,  
 save yo' sermons an' yo'  
 bref,  
 Tek a little Chrismus basket by  
 yo' side

'T ain't de time to open Bibles an'  
 to lock yo' cellah do',

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Tain't de time to talk o bein  
good to men  
Ef you want to preach a sermon  
ez you n'vah preached  
befo,  
Preach dat sermon wid a shoat  
er wid er hen,  
Bein good is heap sight bettah den  
a dallyin wid sin  
An dey ain't nobody roun dat  
knows it mo  
But I tink dat ligion s sweeter  
wen it kind o mixes in  
Wid a little Christmas basket at  
de do

### THE VALSE

WHEN to sweet music my lady  
is dancing  
My heart to mild frenzy her  
beauty inspires  
Into my face are her brown eyes  
a glancing  
And swift my whole frame  
thrills with tremulous fires  
Dance lady dance for the mo-  
ments are fleeting  
Pause not to place yon refractory  
curl  
Life is for love and the night is  
for sweeting  
Dreamily joyously, circle and  
whirl

Oh how those viols are throbbing  
and pleading

A prayer is scarce needed in  
sound of their strain  
Surely and lightly as round you  
are speeding  
You turn to confusion my heart  
and my brain  
Dance, lady dance to the viols  
soft calling  
Slip it and trip it as light as the  
air  
Dance for the moments like rose  
leaves are falling  
Strikes now the clock from its  
place on the stair  
Now sinks the melody lower and  
lower

The weary musicians scarce  
seeming to play  
Ah love your steps now are  
slower and slower  
The smile on your face is more  
sad and less gay  
Dance lady dance to the brink of  
our parting  
My heart and your step must not  
fail to be light  
Dance! Just a turn—tho the  
tear drop be starting  
Ah—now it is done—so—  
my lady good night!

### REPOSE

WHEN Phyllis sighs and from her  
eyes  
The light dies out my soul re-  
plies

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

With misery of deep-drawn breath,  
E'en as it were at war with  
death.

When Phyllis smiles, her glance  
beguiles

My heart through love-lit wood-  
land aisles,

And through the silence high and  
clear,

A wooing warbler's song I hear.

But if she frown, de-pair comes  
down,

I put me on my sack-cloth gown;  
So frown not, Phyllis, lest I die,  
But look on me with smile or  
sigh

### MY SWEET BROWN GAL

W'EN de clouds is hangin' heavy  
in de sky,

An' de win's's a-tailin' moughty  
vig'rous by,

I don' go a-sighin' all erlong de  
way;

I des' wo'k a-waitin' fu' de close  
o' day.

Case I knows w'en evenin' draps  
huh shadders down,

I won' care a smidgeon fu' de  
weathah's frown;

Let de rain go splashin', let de  
thundah raih,

Dey's a happy sheltah, an' I's  
goin' daih.

Down in my ol' cabin wa'm ez  
mammy's toas',

'Taters in de fiah layin' daih to  
roas';

No onc daih to cross me, got no  
talkin' pal,

But I's got de comp'ny o' my  
sweet brown gal.

So I spen's my evenin' listenin' to  
huh sing,

Lak a blessid angel, how huh  
voice do ring!

Sweetah den a bluebird flutterin'  
erroun',

W'en he sees de steamin' o' de  
new ploughed groun'

Den I hugs huh closah, closah to  
my breas'.

Need n't sing, my da'lin', tek you'  
hones' res'.

Does I mean Malindy, Mandy,  
Lize er Sal?

No, I means my fiddle — dat's  
my sweet brown gal!

### SPRING FEVER

GRASS commence a-comin'  
Thoo de thawin' groun',

Evah bird dat whistles  
Keepin' noise erroun';

Cain't sleep in de mo'nin',  
Case befo' it's light

Bluebird an' de robin,  
Done begun to fight.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Bluebird sass de robin

Robin sass him back,  
Den de bluebird scol him  
'Twell his face is black.  
Would n min' de quolin'  
All de monin long  
'Cept it wakes me early  
Case hit s done in song

Anybody wo kin

Wants to sleep ez late  
Ez de folks ll low him  
An I wish to state  
(Co se dis ain t to scattah,  
But 'twix me an' you)  
I could stan' de bedclothes  
Kin o lntah too

'T ain t my natchul feelin',

Dis hyeah mopin spell  
I stan s early risin  
Mosly moughty well,  
But de vey minute  
I feel Ap il's heat  
Bless yo soul de bedclothes  
Nevah seemed so sweet

Mastah he s a scol in'

Case de han s is slow  
All de hosses balkin  
Jes' cain t mek 'em go  
Don know whut s de mattah,  
Hit s a funny ting  
Less n hit s de fevah  
Dat you gits in spring

## THE VISITOR

LITTLE lady at de do

Wy you stan dey knockin'?  
Nevah seen you ac befo  
In er way so shockin  
Don you know de sin it is  
Fu to git my temper riz  
W'en I s got de rheumatiz  
An' my jints is lockin ?

No ol Miss un t sont you down,  
Don you tell no story

I been seed you hangin roun

Dis hyeah te itory

You des come fu me to tell

You a tale an I ain'—  
well—

Look hyeah what is dat I  
smell?

Steamin victuals? Glory!

Come in Missy how you do?

Come up by de fiah,

I was jokin' chile wid you

Bring dat basket nighah

Huh uh ain't dat lak ol  
Miss

Sen in me a feas lak dis?

Rheumatiz cain t stop my  
bliss

Case I s feelin spryah

Chicken meat an gravy too

Hot an still a heatin

Good ol sweet pertater stew

Missy b lieves in treatin

Des set down you blessed  
chile



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Daddy got to t'ink a while,  
Den a story mek you smile  
W'en he git thoo eatin'.

Stir yo' stumps an' cleah de  
way,  
Fu' de music dat dey mekin' can't  
be beat.

### SONG

WINTAH, summah, snow er  
shine,

Hit's all de same to me,  
Ef only I kin call you mine,  
An' keep you by my knee

Ha'dship, frolic, grief er caih,  
Content by night an' day,  
Ef only I kin see you whaih  
You wait beside de way

Livin', dyin', smiles er teahs,  
My soul will still be free,  
Ef only thoo de comin' yeahs  
You walk de worl' wid me

Bird-song, breeze-wail, chune er  
moan,

What puny t'ings dey'll be,  
Ef w'en I's seemin' all erlone,  
I knows yo' hea't's wid me

### THE COLORED BAND

W'EN de colo'ed ban' comes  
ma'chin' down de street,

Don't you people stan' dah  
starin'; lif' yo' feet!

Ain't dey playin'? Hip, hoo-  
ray!

Oh, de major man's a-swingin'  
of his stick,

An' de pickaninnies crowdin'  
roun' him thick,

In his go'geous uniform,  
He's de lightnin' of de sto'm,  
An' de little clouds erroun' look  
mighty slick

You kin hyeah a fine perfo'mance  
w'en de white ban's sere-  
nade,

An' dey play dey high-toned  
music mighty sweet,  
But hit's Sousa played in rag-  
time, an' hit's Rastus on  
Parade,

W'en de colo'ed ban' comes  
ma'chin' down de street.

W'en de colo'ed ban' comes ma'ch-  
in' down de street

You kin hyeah de ladies all erroun'  
repeat.

"Ain't dey handsome? Ain't  
dey gian'?"

Ain't dey splendid? Goodness,  
lan'!

W'y dey's pu'fect f'om dey fo'-  
heads to dey feet!"

An' sich steppin' to de music down  
de line,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

'Tain t de music by itself dat meks  
it fine

Hit s de walkin, step by step  
An de keepin time wid Hep  
Dat it mek a common ditty oun  
divine

Oh, de white ban' play hits music  
an hit's mighty good to  
hyeah

An it sometimes leaves a ticklin  
in yo feet

But de hea t goes into bus ness fu  
to he p erlong de eah

W en de colo ed ban goes ma ch  
in down de street

Or does some brighter spirit un  
forlorn

Send you my little sister of the  
wood

To say to some one on a cloudful  
morn

' Life lives through death my  
brother all is good?

With meditative hearts the others  
go

The memory of their dead to  
dress anew

But sister mine bide here that I  
may know

Life grows through death, as  
beautiful as you

### TO A VIOLET FOUND ON ALL SAINTS DAY

BELATED wanderer of the ways of  
spring

Lost in the chill of grim No-  
vember rain

Would I could read the message  
that you bring

And find in it the antidote for  
pain

Does some sad spirit out beyond  
the day

Far looking to the hours forever  
dead

Send you a tender offering to lay  
Upon the grave of us the liv-  
ing dead?

### INSPIRATION

At the golden gate of song  
Stood I knocking all day long  
But the Angel calm and cold  
Still refused and bade me, Hold

Then a breath of soft perfume  
Then a light within the gloom  
Thou Love camest to my side  
And the gates flew open wide

Long I dwelt in this domain  
Knew no sorrow grief or pain  
Now you bid me forth and free  
Will you shut these gates on me?

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

### MY LADY OF CASTLE GRAND

GRAY is the palace where she  
dwells,

Grimly the poplars stand  
There by the window where she  
sits,

My Lady of Castle Grand

There does she bide the livelong  
day,

Grim as the poplars are,  
Ever her gaze goes reaching out,  
Steady, but vague and far.

Bright burn the fires in the castle  
hall,

Brightly the fire-dogs stand,  
But cold is the body and cold the  
heart

Of my Lady of Castle Grand.

Blue are the veins in her lily-white  
hands,

Blue are the veins in her brow;  
Thin is the line of her blue drawn  
lips,

Who would be haughty now?

Pale is the face at the window-  
pane,

Pale as the pearl on her breast,  
"Roderick, love, wilt come again?"  
Fares he to east or west?"

The shepherd pipes to the shep-  
herdess,

The bird to his mate in the  
tree,

And ever she sighs as she hears  
their song,

"Nobody sings for me"

The scullery maids have swains  
enow

Who lead them the way of love,  
But lonely and loveless their mis-  
tress sits

At her window up above

Loveless and lonely she waits and  
waits,

The saddest in all the land,  
Ah, cruel and lasting is love-blind  
pride,

My Lady of Castle Grand

### DRIZZLE

HIT's been drizzlin' an' been  
sprinklin',

Kin' o' techy all day long  
I ain't wet enough fu' toddy,

I's too damp to raise a song,  
An' de case have set me t'inkin',  
Dat dey's folk des lak de rain,  
Dat goes drizzlin' w'en dey's  
talkin',

An' won't speak out flat an'  
plain

Ain't you nevah set an' listened  
At a body 'splain his min'?

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

W'en de toughts dey keep on  
drappin

Was n't big enough to fin?  
Dem s' whut I call drizzlin  
people

Othahs call em mealy mouf  
But de fust name hits me bettah  
Case dey nev'ah tech a drouf

Dey kin talk from hyeah to yandah  
An f'om yandah hyeah ergain  
An dey don mek no mo' pression  
Den dis powd'ry kin' o' rain  
En yo' min is dry ez cindahs  
Er a piece o' kindlin' wood  
T'aint no use a talkin' to em  
Fu dey drizzle ain't no good

Gimme folks dat speak out nachul  
Whut 'll say des whut dey mean  
Whut don't set dey wods so  
skimpy

Dat you got to guess between  
I want talk des lak de showahs  
Whut kin wash de dust erway  
Not dat prinklin convusation  
Dat des drizzle all de day

### DE CRITTERS DANCE

AIN'T nobody nev'ah tol you not a  
v'od a tall

Bout de time dat all de critters  
gin dey fancy ball?

Some folks tell it in a sto'y some  
folks sing de rhyme

'Peahs to me you ought to hyeahed  
it case hit s' ol ez time

Well de critters all was p'ospos,ous,  
now would be de chance

Fu to tease ol P'ason Hedgehog,  
givin' of a dance,

Case you know de critters  
preachah was de stric'est kin

An he nev'ah made no 'low'ance fu  
de frisky min

So dey sont dey inbitations Rac  
coon writ em all

Dis hyeah note is to inbite you  
to de Fancy Ball

Come erlong an bring yo ladies  
bring yo chillun too

Put on all yo bibs in tuckahs  
show whut you kin do

W'en de night come dey all  
gathahed in a place dey  
knowed

Fu enough erway f'om people  
nigh enough de road

All de critters had ersponded Hop  
Toad up to Bah

An I s' hyeah to tell you P'ason  
Hedgehog too was daih

Well dey talked in made dey  
bejunce des lak critters  
do

An dey walked an pomenaded  
roun an thoo an thoo

Jealous ol Mis Fox she whisperh  
See Mis Wildcat d'uh

Ain't hit scan'lous huh a comin'  
wid huh shouldahs bah?"

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Ol' man T'utle was n't honin' fu'  
no dancin' tricks,  
So he stayed by ol' Mis' Tu'tle,  
talkin' politics;  
Den de ban' hit 'mence a-playin'  
critters all to place,  
Fou' ercross an' fou' stan' side-  
ways, smilin' face to face

'Fessah Frog, he play de co'net,  
Cricket play de fife,  
Slews o' Grasshoppahs a-fiddlin'  
lak to save dey life;  
Mistah Crow, 'he call de figgers,  
settin' in a tree,  
Huh, uh! how dose critters sas-  
shayed was a sight to see.

Mistah Possom swing Mis' Rab-  
bit up an' down de flo',  
Ol' man Bah, he ain't so nimble,  
an' it mek him blow;  
Raccoon dancin' wid Mis' Squ'il  
squeeze huh little han',  
She say, "Oh, now ain't you aw-  
ful, quit it, goodness lan'!"

Pa'son Hedgehog groanin' awful at  
his converts' shines,  
'Dough he peepin' thoo his fingahs  
at dem movin' lines,  
'Twell he cain't set still no longah  
w'en de fiddles sing,  
Up he jump, an' bless you, honey,  
cut de pigeon-wing

Well, de critters lak to fainted jes'  
wid dey su'prise,

Sistah Fox, she vowed she was n't  
gwine to b'lieve huh eyes,  
But dey could n't be no 'sputin'  
'bout it any mo':

Pa'son Hedgehog was a-cape'in' all  
erroun' de flo'

Den dey all jes' capahed scan'lous  
case dey did n't doubt,  
Dat dey still could go to meetin';  
who could tu'n 'em out?  
So wid dancin' an' uligion, dey  
was in de fol',  
Fu' a-dancin' wid de Pa'son could-  
n't hu't de soul.

### WHEN DEY 'LISTED COL- ORED SOLDIERS

DEY was talkin' in de cabin, dey  
was talkin' in de hall,  
But I listened kin' o' keerless, not  
a-t'inkin' 'bout it all;  
An' on Sunday, too, I noticed, dey  
was whisp'rin' mighty much,  
Stan'in' all erroun' de roadside  
w'en dey let us out o'  
chu'ch

But I did n't t'ink eibout it 'twell  
de middle of de week,  
An' my 'Lias come to see me, an'  
somehow he could n't speak  
Den I seed all in a minute whut  
he'd come to see me  
for,—

Dey had 'listed colo'ed sojers an'  
my 'Lias gwine to wah.

# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Oh, I hugged him, an I kissed  
him an I baiged him not to  
go

But he tol me dat his conscience,  
hit was callin to him so

An he could n t baih to lingah  
w'en he had a chanst to  
fight

For de freedom dey had gin him  
an de glory of de right

So he kissed me an he lef me  
wen I d promised to be true

An dey put a knapsack on him  
an a coat all colo ed blue

So I gin him paps ol Bible fom  
de bottom of de draw —

Wen dey listed colo ed sojers an  
my Lias went to wah

But I t ought of all de weary miles  
dat he would have to tramp

An I could n t be contented wen  
dey tuk him to de camp

Wy my hea t nigh broke wid  
grievin twell I seed him on  
de street

Den I felt lak I could go an thow  
my body at his feet

For his buttons was a shinin an'  
his face was shinin too

An he looked so strong an mighty  
in his coat o sojer blue

Dat I hollahed Step up man  
ny' dough my th oat was so  
an raw —

Wen dey listed colo ed sojers an  
my Lias went to wah

Ol Mis cried wen mastah lef'  
huh young Miss mou ned huh  
brothah Ned

An I did n t know dey feelin s is  
de ve'y wods dey said

Wen I tol em I was so y Dey  
had done gin up dey all

But dey only seemed mo proudah  
dat dey men had hyeahed de  
call

Bofe my mastahs went in gray  
suits an I loved de Yankee  
blue

But I t'ought dat I could sorrer  
for de losin of em too

But I could n t for I did n t know  
de ha f o whut I saw

Twell dey listed colo ed sojers an  
my Lias went to wah

Mastah Jack come home all sickly,  
he wis broke for life dey  
said

An dey lef my po young mastah  
some rs on de roadside —  
dead

Wen de women cried an mouned  
em I could feel it thoo an  
thoo

For I had a loved un fightin in de  
way o dangah too

Den dey tol me dey had laid him  
some rs way down souf to  
res ,

Wid de flag dat he had fit for  
shinin daih acrost his  
breas

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Well, I cried, but den I reckon  
dat's whut Gawd had called  
him for,  
W'en dey 'listed colo'ed sojers an'  
my 'Lias went to wah

### LINCOLN

HURT was the nation with a  
mighty wound,  
And all her ways were filled with  
clam'rous sound  
Wailed loud the South with unre-  
mitting grief,  
And wept the North that could  
not find relief  
Then madness joined its harshest  
tone to strife  
A minor note swelled in the song  
of life  
'Till, stirring with the love that  
filled his breast,  
But still, unflinching at the right's  
behest,  
Grave Lincoln came, strong  
handed, from afar,  
The mighty Homer of the lyre of  
war  
'T was he who bade the raging  
tempest cease,  
Wrenched from his harp the har-  
mony of peace,  
Muted the strings, that made the  
discord,— Wrong,  
And gave his spirit up in thun-  
d'rous song.

Oh mighty Master of the mighty  
lyre,  
Earth heard and trembled at thy  
strains of fire.  
Earth learned of thee what Heav'n  
already knew,  
And wrote thee down among her  
treasured few.

### ENCOURAGEMENT

WHO dat knockin' at de do'?  
Why, Ike Johnson,—yes, fu' sho'  
Come in, Ike I's mighty glad  
You come down I t'ought you's  
mad  
At me 'bout de othah night,  
An' was stayin' 'way fu' spite  
Say, now, was you mad fu' true  
W'en I kin' o' laughed at you?  
Speak up, Ike, an' 'spress yo'se'f.  
  
'T ain't no use a-lookin' sad,  
An' a-mekin' out you's mad,  
Ef you's gwine to be so glum,  
Wondah why you evah come  
I don't lak nobidy 'roun'  
Dat jes' shet dey mouf an'  
frown,—  
Oh, now, man, don't act a dunce!  
Cain't you talk? I tol' you once,  
Speak up, Ike, an' 'spress yo'se'f  
  
Wha'd you come hyeah fu' to-  
night?  
Body'd t'ink yo' haid ain't right  
I's done all dat I kin do,—

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Dressed perticler jes fu you,  
Reckon I d a bettah wo  
My ol ragged calico  
Aftah all de pains I s took  
Cain t you tell me how I look?  
Speak up Ike an spress yo se f

Bless my soul! I mos fu got  
Tellin you bout Tildy Scott  
Don t you know come Thursday  
night  
She gwine may Lucius White?  
Miss Lize say I allus wuh  
Heap sight laklier n huh  
An she ll git me somep n new  
Ef I wants to may too  
Speak up Ike an spress yo se f

I could may in a week  
Ef de man I wants ud speak  
Tildy s presents ll be fine  
But dey would n t ekal mine  
Him whut gits me fu a wife  
Ll be proud you bet yo life  
I s had offers some ain t quit  
But I has n t maied yit!  
Speak up Ike an spress yo se f

Ike I loves you — yes I does  
You s my choice and allus was  
Laffin at you ain t no harm —  
Go way dahky whah s yo arm?  
Hug me closer — dah dat s  
right!  
Was n t you a awful sight  
Havin me to baig you so?  
Now ix whut you want to  
know —  
Speak up Ike an spress yo se f!

### THE BOOGAH MAN

WEN de evenin shadders  
Come a glidin down  
Fallin black an heavy  
Ovah hill an town  
Ef you listen keerful,  
Keerful ez you kin  
So s you boun to notice  
Des a drappin pin  
Den you ll hyeah a funny  
Soun ercross de lan  
Lay low dat s de callin  
Of de Boogah Man!

*Woo oo woo oo!*  
*Hyeah him ez he go erlong de*  
*way*

*Woo oo woo oo!*  
*Don you wish de night ud tur*  
*to day?*

*Woo oo woo oo!*  
*Hide yo little peep rs hind yo*  
*han*

*Woo oo woo oo!*  
*Callin of de Boogah Man*

Wen de win s a shiverin  
Thoo de gloomy lane  
An dey comes de patterin  
Of de evenin rain  
Wen de owl s a hootin  
Out daih in de wood  
Don you wish my honey  
Dat you had been good?  
'T ain t no use to try to  
Snuggle up to Dan  
Bless you dat s de callin  
Of de Boogah Man!



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Ef you loves yo' mammy,  
An' you min's yo' pap,  
Ef you nevah wriggles  
Outen Sukey's lap;  
Ef you says yo' "Lay me"  
Evah single night  
'Fo' dey tucks de kivers  
An' puts out de light,  
Den de rain kin pattah  
Win' blow lak a fan,  
But you need n' bothah  
'Bout de Boogah Man!

### THE WRAITH

AH me, it is cold and chill  
And the fire sobs low in the  
grate,  
While the wind rides by on the  
hill,  
And the logs crack sharp with  
hate.

And she, she is cold and sad  
As ever the sinful are,  
But deep in my heart I am glad  
For my wound and the coming  
scar

Oh, ever the wind rides by  
And ever the raindrops grieve;  
But a voice like a woman's sigh  
Says, "Do you believe, be-  
lieve?"

Ah, you were warm and sweet,  
Sweet as the May days be,

Down did I fall at your feet,  
Why did you hearken to me?

Oh, the logs they crack and whine,  
And the water drops from the  
caves,  
But it is not rain but brine  
Where my dead darling grieves.

And a wraith sits by my side,  
A spectre grim and dark,  
Are you gazing here open-eyed  
Out to the lifeless dark?

But ever the wind rides on,  
And we sit close within,  
Out of the face of the dawn,  
I and my darling,—sin

### SILENCE

'Tis better to sit here beside the  
sea,  
Here on the spray-kissed beach,  
In silence, that between such  
friends as we  
Is full of deepest speech.

### WHIP-POOR-WILL AND KATY-DID

SLOW de night 's a-fallin',  
An' I hyeah de callin,  
Out erpon de lonesome hill;  
Soun' is moughty dreary,  
Solemn-lak an' skeery,  
Sayin' fu' to "whip po' Will."

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Now hit s moughty tryin  
Fu to hyeah dis cryin  
Deed hit s mo den I kin stan ,  
Sho wid all our slippin  
Dey s enough of whippin  
Dout a bird a visin any man

In de noons o summah  
Dey s anothah hummah  
Sings anothah song instid  
An his th oat s a swellin  
Wid de joy o tellin ,  
But he says dat Katy did

Now I feels onsultain  
Won t you raise de cu tain  
Ovah all de tings dat s hid?  
Wy dat feathahed pisen  
Goes erbout a visin  
Whippin Will wen Katy  
did?

### 'LONG TO DS NIGHT

DAIH s a moughty soothin  
feelin  
Hits a dahky man  
Long to ds night  
Wen de row is mos nigh ended  
Den he stops to fan  
Long to ds night  
De blue smoke fom his cabin  
is a callin to him  
Come  
He smell de bacon cookin an he  
hyeah de fiah hum

An' he mence to sing 'dough  
wo kin putty nigh  
done made him dumb  
'Long to ds night

Wid his hoe erpon his shouldah  
Den he goes erlong  
Long to ds night  
An he keepin time a steppin  
Wid a little song  
Long to ds night  
De restin time s a comin an de  
time to drink an eat  
A baby s toddlin to ds hum on hits  
little dusty feet  
An' a goin to'ds his cabin an  
his suppah s moughty  
sweet  
Long to ds night

Daih his Ca line min de kettle  
Rufus min de chile  
Long to ds night  
An de sweat roll down his  
forred  
Mixin wid his smile  
Long to ds night  
He toss his piccaninny an he hum  
a little chune  
De wokin' all is ovah an de sup  
pah comin soon  
De wo kin time s Decembah but  
de restin time is  
June  
Long to ds night

Dey s a kin o doleful feelin  
Hits a tendah place  
'Long to ds night

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Dey's a moughty glory in him  
Shinin' thoo his face,  
Long to'ds night.  
De cabin's lak de big house, an'  
de fiah's lak de sun,  
His wife look moughty lakly, an'  
de chile de puttiest  
one,  
W'y, hit's blessid, jes' a-livin'  
w'en a body's wo'k is  
done  
'Long to'ds night.

### A GRIEVANCE

W'EN de snow's a-fallin'  
An' de win' is col'.  
Mammy 'mence a-callin',  
Den she 'mence to scol',  
"Lucius Lishy Brackett,  
Don't you go out do's,  
Button up yo' jacket,  
Les'n you'll git froze"

I sit at de windah  
Lookin' at de groun',  
Nuffin nigh to hindah,  
Mammy ain' erroun';  
Wish't she would n' mek me  
Set down in dis chair,  
Pshaw, it would n't tek me  
Long to git some ah  
So I jump down nimble  
Ez a boy kin be,  
Dough I's all a-trimble  
Feahed some one'll see;  
Bet in a half a minute  
I fly out de do'

An' I's knee-deep in it,  
Dat dah blessed snow.

Den I hyeah a pattah  
Come acrost de flo'  
Den dey comes a clattah  
At de cabin do',  
An' my mammy holler  
Spoilin' all my joy,  
"Come in f'om dat waller,  
Don't I see you, boy?"

W'en de snow's a-sievin'  
Down ez sof' ez meal,  
Whut's de use o' livin'  
'Cept you got de feel  
Of de stuff dat's fallin'  
'Roun' an' white an' damp,  
'Dout some one a-callin',  
"Come in hyeah, you scamp!"

### DINAH KNEADING DOUGH

I HAVE seen full many a sight  
Born of day or drawn by night:  
Sunlight on a silver stream,  
Golden lilies all a-dream,  
Lofty mountains, bold and proud,  
Veiled beneath the lacelike cloud,  
But no lovely sight I know  
Equals Dinah kneading dough

Brown arms buried elbow-deep  
Their domestic rhythm keep,  
As with steady sweep they go  
Through the gently yielding  
dough.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Maids may vaunt their finer  
    charms—

Naught to me like Dinah's arms

Girls may draw or paint or  
    sew —

I love Dinah kneading dough

Eyes of jet and teeth of pearl

Hair some say too tight a curl

But the dainty maid I deem

Very near perfection's dream

Swift she works and only flings

Me a glance — the least of things

And I wonder does she know

That my heart is in the dough?

### TO A CAPTIOUS CRITIC

DEAR critic who my lightness so  
    deplores

Would I might study to be prince  
    of bores

Right wisely would I rule that  
    dull estate —

But sir I may not till you  
    abdicate

### DAT OL MARE O MINE

WANT to trade me do you mis-  
    tah? Oh well now I  
    reckon not

Why you could n't buy my Sukey  
    fu a thousan on de spot —  
Dat ol mare o mine?

Yes, huh coat ah long an' shaggy  
    an' she aint no shakes to  
    see

Dat's a ring bone yes you right  
    suh an she got a onry  
    knee

But dey aint no use in tlikin,  
    she de only hoss fu me  
Dat ol mare o mine

Cose I knows dat Suke's con-  
    tray an she moughty ap  
    to vex

But you got to mek erlowance fu  
    de nature of huh sex  
Dat ol mare o mine

Ef you pull her on de lef han  
    she plum termind to go  
    right

A cannon could n't skeer huh but  
    she boun to tek a fright

At a piece o common paper or  
    anyting whut's white  
Dat ol mare o mine

Wen my eyes commence to fail  
    me dough I truses to  
    huh sight

An she ll tote me safe an hones  
    on de vey dakes night  
Dat ol' mare o mine

Ef I whup huh she jes switch  
    huh tail an settle to a  
    walk

Ef I whup huh mo she shek huh  
    haid an lak ez not she  
    balk

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

But huh sense ain't no ways  
lackin', she do evah t'ing  
but talk,  
Dat ol' mare o' mine.

But she gentle ez a lady w'en she  
know huh beau kin see  
An' she sholy got mo' gumption  
any day den you or me,  
Dat ol' mare o' mine  
She's a leetle slow a-goin', an' she  
moughty ha'd to sta't,  
But we's gittin' ol' togathah, an'  
she's closah to my hea't,  
An' I does n't reckon, mistah, dat  
she'd sca'cely keer to pa't;  
Dat ol' mare o' mine.

W'y I knows de time dat cidah's  
kin' o' muddled up my haid,  
Ef it had n't been fu' Sukey  
hyeah, I reckon I'd been  
daid,  
Dat ol' mare o' mine.

But she got me in de middle o'  
de road an' tuk me  
home,

An' she would n't let me wandah,  
ner she would n't let me  
roam,

Dat's de kin' o' hoss to tie to  
w'en you's seed de cidah's  
foam,

Dat ol' mare o' mine

Dey is people, dey is hosses, den  
dey's cattle, den dey's—  
well—

Dat ol' mare o' mine,  
She de beatenes' t'ing dat evah  
struck de medders o' de  
town,

An' aldough huh haid ain't fittin'  
fu' to waih no golden  
crown.

D' ain't a blessed way fu' Petah  
fu' to tu'n my Sukey down,  
Dat ol' mare o' mine

### IN THE MORNING

'LIAS! 'Lias! Bless de Lawd!  
Don' you know de day's  
erbioad?

Ef you don' git up, you scamp,  
Dey'll be trouble in dis camp.  
T'ink I gwine to let you sleep  
W'ile I meks yo' boa'd an' keep?  
Dat's a putty howdy-do—  
Don' you hyeah me, 'Lias—you?

Bet ef I come crost dis flo'  
You won' fin' no time to sno'.  
Daylight all a-shinin' in  
W'ile you sleep—w'y hit's a sin!  
Ain't de can'le-light enough  
To bu'n out widout a snuff,  
But you go de mo'nin' thoo  
Bu'nin' up de daylight too?

You kin talk erbout yo' heaven,  
you kin talk erbout yo' hell,

'Lias, don' you hyeah me call?  
No use tu'nin' to'ds de wall,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

I kin hyeah dat mattuss squeak  
Don you hyeah me w en I speak?  
Dis hyeah clock done struck off  
six—

Ca line bring me dem ah sticks!  
Oh you down suh, huh, you  
down—

Look hyeah, don you daih to  
frown

Mach yo'se f an' wash yo' face,  
Don you splattah all de place,  
I got somep n else to do  
Sides jes cleanin aftah you  
Tek dat comb an fix yo haid—  
Looks jes lak a feddah baid  
Look hyeah boy I let you see  
You sha n t roll yo' eyes at me

Come hyeah bring me dat ah  
strap!

Boy I ll whup you 'twell you  
drap

You done felt yo se f too strong  
An you sholy got me wrong  
Set down at dat table thaih  
Jes you whimpah ef you drihl  
Evah monin on dis place  
Seem lak I mus lose my grace

Fol yo hans an bow yo haid—  
Wait ontwell de blessin's said,  
Lawd have mussy on ouah  
souls—

(Don you daih to tech dem  
rolls—)

"Bless de food we gwine to  
eat—"

(You set still—I see yo' feet,  
You jes try dat trick agin!)  
Gin us peace an joy Amen!"

### THE POET

HE sang of life serenely sweet,  
With, now and then a deeper  
note

From some high peak nigh yet  
remote

He voiced the world's absorbing  
beat

He sang of love when earth was  
young

And Love itself, was in his  
lays

But wh the world it turned to  
praise

A jingle in a broken tongue

### A FLORIDA NIGHT

WIN a blowin' gentle so de san'  
lay low

San' a little heavy f om de rain  
All de pa'ms a wavin an a weav  
in slow

Sighin' lak a sinnah soul in  
pain

Alligator grinnin by de ol  
lagoon

Mockin bird a singin' to be big  
full moon,

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

'Skeeter go a-skimmin' to his  
fightin' chune

(Lizy Ann's a-waitin' in de  
lane!).

Moccasin a-sleepin' in de cyprus  
swamp,

Need n't wake de gent'man, not  
fu' me

Mule, you need n't wake him  
w'en you switch an' stomp,

Fightin' off a 'skeeter er a flea  
Florida is lovely, she's de fines'  
lan'

Evah seed de sunlight f'om de  
Mastah's han',

'Ceptin' fu' de varmints an' huh  
fleas an' san'

An' de nights w'en Lizy Ann  
ain' free

Moon's a-kinder shaddered on de  
melon patch,

No one ain't a-watchin' ez I  
go

Climbin' of de fence so's not to  
click de latch

Meks my gittin' in a little  
slow

Watermelon smilin' as it say,  
"I's free,"

Alligator boomin', but I let him  
be,

Florida, oh, Florida's de lan' fu'  
me —

(Lizy Ann a-singin' sweet an'  
low)

## DIFFERENCES

My neighbor lives on the hill,  
And I in the valley dwell,

My neighbor must look down on  
me,

Must I look up? — ah, well,  
My neighbor lives on the hill,  
And I in the valley dwell.

My neighbor reads, and prays,  
And I — I laugh, God wot,  
And sing like a bird when the  
grass is green

In my small garden plot,  
But ah, he reads and prays,  
And I — I laugh, God wot

His face is a book of woe,  
And mine is a song of glee,  
A slave he is to the great "They  
say,"

But I — I am bold and free,  
No wonder he smacks of woe,  
And I have the tang of glee

My neighbor thinks me a fool,  
"The same to yourself," say I,  
"Why take your books and take  
your prayers,

Give me the open sky,"  
My neighbor thinks me a fool,  
"The same to yourself," say I

## LONG AGO

DE ol' time's gone, de new  
time's hyeah

Wid all hits fuss an' feddahs,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

I done fu got de joy an cheah  
We knowed all kin s o wed  
dahs

I done fu got each ol time hymn  
We ust to sing in meetin  
I s leahned de prah s so neat an  
trim  
De preachah keeps us peatin

Hang a vine by de chimney side  
An one by de cabin do  
An sing a song fu de day dat  
died  
De day of long ergo

My youf hit s gone yes long  
ergo  
An yit I ain t a moanin  
Hit s fu sometings I ust to  
know  
I set to night a honin  
De pallet on de ol plank flo  
De rain bar l und de eaves  
De live oak fo de cabin do  
Whaih de night dove comes an  
grieves

Hang a vine by de chimney side,  
An one by de cabin do  
An sing a song fu de day dat  
died  
De day of long ergo

I d lak a few ol frien s to-night  
To come an set wid me  
An let me feel dat ol delight  
I ust to in dey glee  
But hyeah we is my pipe an me,  
Wid no one else erbout,

We bofe is choked ez choked kin  
be

An bofe ll soon go out

Hang a vine by de chimney side  
An one by de cabin do  
An sing a song fu de day dat  
died  
De day of long ergo

### A PLANTATION MELODY

DE trees is bendin in de sto m  
De rain done hid de mountain s  
fo m

I s lone an in distress  
But listen dah s a voice I hyeah,  
A sayin to me loud an cleah  
Lay low in de wildaness

De lightnin flash de bough sway  
low

My po sick heat is trimblin so  
It hu ts my very breas  
But him dat give de lightnin  
powah

Jes bids me in de tryin howah  
Lay low in de wildaness

O brothah w'en de tempes beat  
An w en yo weary head an feet  
Can t fin no place to res  
Jes membah dat de Mastah s  
nigh

An putty soon you ll hyeah de  
cry  
'Lay low in de wildaness



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

O sistah, w'en de rain come down,  
An' all yo' hopes is 'bout to  
drown,

Don't trus' de Mastah less  
He smilin' w'en you t'ink he  
frown,

He ain' gwine let yo' soul sink  
down —

Lay low in de wildaness.

### A SPIRITUAL

DE 'cession's stahted on de gospel  
way,

De Captin' is a-drawin' nigh:  
Bettah stop a-foolin' an' a-try to  
pray,

Lif' up yo' haid w'en de King  
go by!

Oh, sinnah mou'nin' in de dusty  
road,

Hyeah's de minute fu' to dry  
yo' eye.

Dey's a moughty One a-comin'  
fu' to baih yo' load,

Lif' up yo' haid w'en de King  
go by!

Oh, widder weepin' by yo' hus-  
ban's grave,

Hit's bettah fu' to sing den  
sigh.

Hyeah come de Mastah wid de  
powah to save,

Lif' up yo' haid w'en de King  
go by!

Oh, orphans a-weepin' lak de wid-  
der do,

An' I wish you'd tell me why.  
De Mastah is a mammy an' a  
pappy too,

Lif' up yo' haid w'en de King  
go by!

Oh, Moses sot de sarpint in de  
wildahness

W'en de chillun had com-  
menced to die:

Some 'efused to look, but hit  
cuohed de res',

Lif' up yo' haid w'en de King  
go by!

Bow down, bow 'way down,

Bow down,

But lif' up yo' haid w'en de King  
go by!

### THE MEMORY OF MARTHA

OUT in de night a sad bird moans,

An', oh, but hit's moughty  
lonely,

Times I kin sing, but mos' I  
groans,

Fu' oh, but hit's moughty  
lonely!

Is you sleepin' well dis evenin',  
Marfy, deah?

W'en I calls you f'om de cabin,  
kin you hyeah?

'T ain't de same ol' place to me,  
Nuffin' 's lak hit used to be,

# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

W'en I knowed dat you was allus  
some ers near

Down by de road de shadders  
grows

An oh but hit s moughty  
lonely

Seem lak de ve y moonlight  
knows

An oh but hit s moughty  
lonely!

Does you know I s cryin fu' you  
oh my wife?

Does you know dey ain't no joy  
no mo in life?

An my only tought is dis  
Dat I s honin fu de bliss

Fu to quit dis groun o worri  
ment an strife

Dah on de baid my banjo lays

An oh but hit s moughty  
lonely

Can t even stat a chune o praise  
An, oh but hit s moughty  
lonely!

Oh, hit s moughty slow a waitin  
hycah below

Is you watchin fu me Marfy  
at de do?

Ef you is in spite o sin

Dey li be sho to let me in

W'en dey sees yo face a shinin  
den dey li know

## WEN I GITS HOME

It s moughty tiahsome layin  
roun

'Dis sorrer laden earfly groun

An oftentimes I thinks thinks  
I

T would be a sweet ting des to  
die

An go long home.

Home whaih de frien s I loved li  
say

We ve waited fu you many a  
day

Come hycah an res yo se f an'  
know

You s done wid sorrer an wid  
woe

Now you s at home

Wen I gits home some blessid  
day

I lows to thow my caihs erway,  
An up an down de shinin street  
Go singin sof an low an sweet,

Wen I gits home

I wish de day was neah at han,  
I s tiahed of dis grievin lan  
I s tiahed of de lonely yeahs

I want to des dry up my teahs

An go 'long home

Oh Mastah won t you sen de  
call?

My frien's is daih my hope my  
aif

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

I's waitin' whaih de road is rough,  
I want to hyeah you say,  
    "Enough,  
Ol' man, come home!"

"HOWDY, HONEY,  
    HOWDY!"

Do' a-stan'in' on a jar, fiah  
    a-shinin' thoo,  
Ol' folks drowsin' 'roun' de place,  
    wide awake is Lou,  
W'en I tap, she answeh, an' I see  
    huh 'mence to grin,  
"Howdy, honey, howdy, won't  
    you step right in?"

Den I step erpon de log layin' at  
    de do',  
Bless de Lawd, huh mammy an'  
    huh pap's done 'menced -to  
    sno',  
Now 's de time, ef evah, ef I's  
    gwine to try an' win,  
"Howdy, honey, howdy, won't  
    you step right in?"

No use playin' on de aidge,  
    trimblin' on de brink,  
W'en a body love a gal, tell huh  
    whut he t'ink;  
W'en huh hea't is open fu' de love  
    you gwine to gin,  
Pull yo'se'f togethah, suh, an' step  
    right in

Sweetes' imbitation dat a body  
    evah hyeahed

Sweetah den de music of a love-  
    sick mockin'-bird,  
Comin' f'om de gal you loves bet-  
    tah den yo' kin,  
"Howdy, honey, howdy, won't  
    you step right in?"

At de gate o' heaven w'en de  
    storm o' life is pas',  
'Spec' I'll be a-stan'in', 'twell de  
    Mastah say at las',  
"Hyeah he stan' all weary, but  
    he winned his fight wid sin  
Howdy, honey, howdy, won't you  
    step right in?"

## THE UNSUNG HEROES

A SONG for the unsung heroes  
    who rose in the country's  
    need,  
When the life of the land was  
    threatened by the slaver's  
    cruel greed,  
For the men who came from the  
    cornfield, who came from the  
    plough and the flail,  
Who rallied round when they  
    heard the sound of the  
    mighty man of the rail.

They laid them down in the val-  
    leys, they laid them down in  
    the wood,  
And the world looked on at the  
    work they did, and whis-  
    pered, "It is good."

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

They fought their way on the  
hillside they fought their  
way in the glen

And God looked down on their  
sinews brown and said I  
have made them men

They went to the blue lines gladly  
and the blue lines took them  
in

And the men who saw their  
muskets fire thought not of  
their dusky skin

The gray lines rose and melted  
beneath their scathing show-  
ers

And they said, 'T is true they  
have force to do these old  
slave boys of ours

Ah Wagner saw their glory and  
Pillow knew their blood

That poured on a nation's altar  
a sacrificial flood

Port Hudson heard their war cry  
that smote its smoke filled  
air

And the old free fires of their  
savage sires again were  
kindled there

They laid them down where the  
rivers the greening valleys  
gem

And the song of the thund'rous  
cannon was their sole re-  
quiem

And the great smoke wreath that  
mingled its hue with the  
dusky cloud

Was the flag that furled o'er a  
saddened world and the  
sheet that made their shroud

Oh Mighty God of the Battles  
Who held them in Thy  
hand

Who gave them strength through  
the whole day's length to  
fight for their native land

They are lying dead on the hill  
sides they are lying dead on  
the plain

And we have not fire to smite the  
lyre and sing them one brief  
strain

Give Thou some seer the power  
to sing them in their might

The men who feared the master's  
whip but did not fear the  
fight

That he may tell of their virtues  
as minstrels did of old

Till the pride of face and the hate  
of race grow obsolete and  
cold

A song for the unsung heroes who  
stood the awful test

When the humblest host that the  
land could boast went forth  
to meet the best

A song for the unsung heroes who  
fell on the bloody sod,

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Who fought their way from night  
to day and struggled up to  
God.

### THE POOL

By the pool that I see in my  
dreams, dear love,

I have sat with you time and  
again,  
And listened beneath the dank  
leaves, dear love,  
To the sibilant sound of the  
rain

And the pool, it is silvery bright,  
dear love,

And as pure as the heart of a  
maid,

As sparkling and dimpling, it  
darkles and shines

In the depths of the heart of  
the glade.

But, oh, I've a wish in my soul,  
dear love,

(The wish of a dreamer, it  
seems,)

That I might wash free of my  
sins, dear love,

In the pool that I see in my  
dreams

### POSSESSION

WHOSE little lady is you, chile,  
Whose little gal is you?

What's de use o' kiver'n up yo'  
face?

Chile, dat ain't de way to do.  
Lemme see yo' little eyes,

Tek yo' little han's down nice,  
Lawd, you wuff a million bills,  
Huh uh, chile, dat ain't yo'  
price.

Honey, de money ain't been made  
Dat dey could pay fu' you,  
'Tain't no use a-biddin', you too  
high

Fu' de riches' Jap er Jew.  
Lemme see you smilin' now,  
How dem teef o' yo'n do  
shine,

An' de t'ing dat meks me laff  
Is dat all o' you is mine.

How's I gwine to tell you how I  
feel,

How's I gwine to weigh yo'  
wuff?

Oh, you sholy is de sweetes' t'ing  
Walkin' on dis blessed earf

Possum is de sweetes' meat,  
Cidah is the nices' drink,

But my little lady-bird  
Is de bes' of all, I t'ink.

Talk erbout 'uligion he'pin' folks  
All thoo de way o' life,

Gin de res' 'uligion, des' gin me  
You, my little lady-wife

Den de days kin come all ha'd,  
Den de nights kin come all  
black,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Des' you tek me by de han',  
An I ll stumble on de track

Stumble on de way to Gawd my  
chile,

Stumble on, an mebbe fall  
But I ll keep a trottin while you  
lead on

Pickin an a trottin, dat's all  
Hol me mighty tight, dough  
chile

Fu hit s rough an rocky lan,  
Heaben s at de en I know  
So I's leanin on yo han

### THE OLD FRONT GATE

W'EN daih s chillun in de house

Dey keep on a gittin tall  
But de folks don seem to see

Dat dey s growin up at all  
'Twell dey fin out some fine day  
Dat de gals has menced to  
grow

W'en dey notice as dey pass  
Dat de front gate s saggin low

W'en de hinges creak an' cry  
An de bahs go slantin down

You kin reckon dat hit s time

Fu to cas yo eye erroun  
'Cause daih ain t no sputin dis  
Hit s de trues sign to show

Dat daih s cou tin goin on  
W'en de ol front gate sags low

Oh you grumble an complain  
An you prop dat gate up right

But you notice right nex day  
Dat hit s in de same ol plight  
So you fin dat hit's a rule

An daih ain no use to blow,  
W'en de gals is growin up,  
Dat de front gate will sag low

Den you tink o' yo young days,  
W'en you cou ted Sally Jane,  
An you so t o' feel ashamed

Fu to grumble an complain  
Cause yo ricerlection says  
An you know hits wo ds is so,  
Dat huh pappy had a time

Wid his front gate saggin low

So you jes looks on an smiles

At em leanin on de gate,  
Tryin to tink whut he kin say  
Fu to keep him daih so late,

But you lets dat gate erlone  
Fu yo sperunce goes to show,  
'Twell de gals is maied off  
It gwine keep on saggin low

### DIRGE FOR A SOLDIER

IN the east the morning comes  
Hear the rollin of the drums  
On the hill

But the heart that beat as they  
beat

In the battle s raging day heat  
Lieth still

Unto him the night has come  
Though they roll the morning  
drum

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

What is in the bugle's blast?  
It is "Victory at last!  
Now for rest"

But, my comrades, come behold  
him,

Where our colors now enfold him,  
And his breast

Bares no more to meet the blade,  
But lies covered in the shade

What a stir there is to-day!  
They are laying him away  
Where he fell

There the flag goes draped before  
him,  
Now they pile the grave sod o'er  
him

With a knell.

And he answers to his name  
In the higher ranks of fame

There's a woman left to mourn  
For the child that she has borne  
In travail

But her heart beats high and  
higher,

With the patriot mother's fire,  
At the tale

She has borne and lost a son,  
But her work and his are done

Fling the flag out, let it wave;  
They're returning from the  
grave —

"Double quick!"

And the cymbals now are crash-  
ing,

Bright his comrades' eyes are flash-  
ing

From the thick  
Battle-ranks which knew him  
brave,

No tears for a hero's grave

In the east the morning comes,  
Hear the rattle of the drums

Far away  
Now no time for grief's pursuing,  
Other work is for the doing,  
Here to-day

He is sleeping, let him rest  
With the flag across his breast.

### A FROLIC

SWING yo' lady roun' an' roun',

Do de bes' you know,

Mek yo' bow an' p'omenade

Up an' down de flo';

Mek dat banjo hump huhsc'f,

Listen at huh talk:

Mastah gone to town to-night;

'T ain't no time to walk

Lif' yo' feet an' flutter thoo,

Run, Miss Lucy, run,

Reckon you'll be cotched an'  
kissed

'Fo' de night is done

You don't need to be so proud —

I's a-watchin' you,

An' I's layin' lots o' plans

Fu' to git you, too.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Moonlight on de cotton fiel  
Shinin sof an white  
Whippo will a tellin tales  
Out thaih ir de night  
An' yo cabin s crost de lot  
Run Miss Lucy run  
Reckon you ll be cotched an  
kissed  
'Fo de night is done

### NODDIN BY DE FIRE

SOME folks tinks hit s right an  
popah  
Soon ez bedtime come erroun  
Fu to scramble to de liver  
Lak dey 'd hycahed de trumpet  
soun

But dese people dey all misses  
Whut I mos ly does desiah  
Dat s de settin roun an dozin  
An a noddin by de fiah

When you s tiahed out a hoein  
Er a followin de plough  
Whut s de use of des a fallin  
On yo pallet lak a cow ?  
Wy de fun is all in waitin  
In de face of all de tiah  
An a dozin and a drowsin  
By a good ol luck ry fiah

Oh you grunts an groans an  
mumbles  
Case yo bones is full o col',

Dough you feels de joy a tricklin  
Roun de corns of yo soul  
An you low anothah minute  
S sho to git you wam an'  
dryah  
W en you set up pas yo' bedtime  
Cise you hates to leave de fiah

Whut s de use o downright  
sleepin ?

You can t feel it while it las ,  
An you git up feelin sorry  
W en de time fu it is pas  
Seem to me dat time too precious  
An de hours too short entiah  
Fu to sleep w en you could spen  
em  
Des a noddin by de fiah

### LOVE S CASTLE

KEY and bar key and bar  
Iron bolt and chain!  
And what will you do when the  
King comes  
To enter his domain ?

Turn key and lift bar,  
Loose oh bolt and chain!  
Open the door and let him in  
And then lock up again

But oh heart and woe heart,  
Why do you ache so sore ?  
Never a moment s peace have you  
Since Love hath passed the door



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Turn key and lift bai,  
And loose bolt and chain,  
But Love took in his esquire, Grief,  
And there they both remain.

## MORNING SONG OF LOVE

DARLING, my darling, my heart is  
on the wing,  
It flies to thee this morning like  
a bird,  
Like happy birds in springtime my  
spirits soar and sing,  
The same sweet song thine ears  
have often heard

The sun is in my window, the  
shadow on the lea,  
The wind is moving in the  
branches green,  
And all my life, my darling, is  
turning unto thee,  
And kneeling at thy feet, my  
own, my queen

The golden bells are ringing across  
the distant hill,  
Their merry peals come to me  
soft and clear,  
But in my heart's deep chapel all  
incense-filled and still  
A sweeter bell is sounding for  
thee, dear.

The bell of love invites thee to  
come and seek the shrine

Whose altar is erected unto  
thee,  
The offerings, the sacrifice, the  
prayers, the chants are  
thine,  
And I, my love, thy humble  
priest will be

## ON A CLEAN BOOK

TO F N

LIKE sea-washed sand upon the  
shore,  
So fine and clean the tale,  
So clear and bright I almost see,  
The flashing of a sail

The tang of salt is in its veins,  
The freshness of the spray  
God give you love and lore and  
strength,  
To give us such alway

## TO THE EASTERN SHORE

I's feelin' kin' o' lonesome in my  
little room to-night,  
An' my min's done los' de min-  
utes an' de miles,  
W'ile it teks me back a-flyin' to  
de country of delight,  
Whaih de Chesapeake goes  
grumblin' er wid smiles  
Oh, de ol' plantation's callin'  
to me, Come, come back,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Hyeah 's de place fu you to la  
bough an to res

'Fu my sandy roads is gleam  
in' wile de city ways is  
black

Come back honey erse yo  
country home is bes

I know de moon is shinin' down  
erpon de Eastern sho

An de bay s a sayin How  
dy ' to de lan

An de folks is all a settin out  
erroun de cabin do

Wid dey feet a restin in de sil  
vah san

An de ol' plantation s callin  
to me Come oh come

Fom de life dat s des a waih  
in you erway

Fom de trouble an de bustle  
an de agernizin hum

Dat de city keeps ergoin all de  
day

I's tiahed of de city tek me back  
to Sandy Side

Whaih de po est ones kin live  
an play an eat

Whaih we draws a simple livin  
fom de fo est an de tide

An' de days ah faih, an evah  
night is sweet

Fu de ol' plantation s callin  
to me Come oh come

An' de Chesapeake's a sayin  
Dat s de ting'

Wile my little cabin beckons  
dough his mouf is closed  
an dumb

I's a-comin an my heat be  
gins to sing

### RELUCTANCE

WILL I have some mo dat pie?  
No ma'am thank ee dat is—  
I—

Bettah quit dahin me  
Dat ah pie look sutny good  
How d you feel now ef I would?  
I don reckon dat I should  
Bettah quit dahin me

Look hyerh I gwine tell de truf,  
Mine is sholy one sweet toof

Bettah quit dahin' me  
Yass m yass m dat s all right,  
I s done tried to be perlite  
But dat pie s a lakly sight,  
Wha s de use o dahin' me?

My yo lips is full an' red  
Don't I wish you d tu n yo hand?

Bettah quit dahin me  
Dat ain t faih now honey chile  
I s gwine lose my sense erwhile  
Ef you des set dah an' smile  
Bettah quit dahin me

Nuffin don' look ha f so fine  
Ez dem teef, deah w en dey shine  
Bettah quit dahin me  
Now look hyeah I tells you dis,

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

I'll give up all othah bliss  
Des to have one little kiss,  
Bettah quit daihin' me

Laws, I teks yo' little han',  
Ain't it tendah? bless de lan'—  
Bettah quit daihin' me  
I's so lonesome by myse'f,  
'D ain't no fun in livin' lef',  
Dis hyeah life's ez dull ez def.  
Bettah quit daihin' me

Why n't you tek yo' han' erway?  
Yass, I'll hol' it: but I say  
Bettah quit daihin' me  
Holin' han's is sholy fine  
Seems lak dat's de weddin' sign.  
Wish you'd say dat you'd be  
mine;—  
Dah you been daihin' me.

### BALLADE

By Mystic's banks I held my  
dream.

(I held my fishing rod as well,)  
The vision was of dace and bream,  
A fruitless vision, sooth to tell.  
But round about the sylvan dell  
Were other sweet Arcadian  
shrines,

Gone now, is all the rural spell,  
Arcadia has trolley lines

Oh, once loved, sluggish, darkling  
stream,

For me no more, thy waters  
swell,  
Thy music now the engines'  
scream,  
Thy fragrance now the factory's  
smell,  
Too near for me the clanging  
bell,  
A false light in the water shines  
While Solitude lists to her  
knell,—  
Arcadia has trolley lines.

Thy wooded lanes with shade and  
gleam  
Where bloomed the fragrant as-  
phodel,  
Now bleak commercially teem  
With signs "To Let," "To  
Buy," "To Sell"  
And Commerce holds them  
fierce and fell;  
With vulgar sport she now com-  
bines  
Sweet Nature's piping voice to  
quell  
Arcadia has trolley lines.

### L'ENVOI

Oh, awful Power whose works  
repel  
The marvel of the earth's de-  
signs,—  
I'll hie me elsewhere to dwell,  
Arcadia has trolley lines

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### SPEAKIN AT DE COUT HOUSE

DEY been speakin at de cout  
house

An' laws a massy me  
'T was de beatness kin o doins  
Dat evah I did see  
Of cose I had to be dah  
In de middle o de crowd,  
An I halloed wid de othahs  
W en de speakah riz and bowed

I was kind o disappinted  
At de smallness of de man  
Case I d allus pictered great folks  
On a mo expansive plan  
But I tought I could respect him  
An tek in de wods he said  
Fu dey sho was sompn knowin  
In de bald spot on his haid

But hit did seem so t o funny  
Aftah waitin fu a week  
Dat de people kep on shoutin  
So de man des could n t speak,  
De ho ns dey blared a little  
Den dey let loose on de  
drums —

Some one tol me dey was playin  
See de conkerin hero comes

Well, says I you all is white  
folks

But you s sutny actin queer  
What s de use of heroes comin  
Ef dey cain t talk wen dey s  
here?

Aftah while dey let him open  
An dat man he waded in  
An' he fit de wahs all ovah  
Winnin vacteries lak sin

W en he come down to de present,  
Den he made de feathahs fly  
He des waded in on money,  
An he played de ta iff high  
An he said de colah question  
Hit was ovah solved an done  
Dat de dahky was his brothah,  
Evah blessed mothah's son

Well he settled all de trouble  
Dat s been pesterin de lan'  
Den he set down mid de cheerin  
An de playin of de ban  
I was feelin moughty happy  
Twel I hyeahed somebody  
speak  
Well, dat s his side of de bus  
nes,  
But you wait for Jones nex  
week'

### BLACK SAMSON OF BRANDYWINE

In the fight at Brandywine Black  
Samson a giant negro armed with a  
scythe sweeps his way through the  
red ranks C M SKINNER'S  
*Myths and Legends of Our Own  
Land*

GRAY are the pages of record  
Dim are the volumes of eld  
Else had old Delaware told us  
More that her history held

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Told us with pride in the story,  
Honest and noble and fine,  
More of the tale of my hero,  
Black Samson of Brandywine

Sing of your chiefs and your nobles,

Saxon and Celt and Gaul,  
Breath of mine ever shall join you,  
Highly I honor them all.  
Give to them all of their glory,  
But for this noble of mine,  
Lend him a tithe of your tribute,  
Black Samson of Brandywine

There in the heat of the battle,  
There in the stir of the fight,  
Loomed he, an ebony giant,  
Black as the pinions of night.  
Swinging his scythe like a mower  
Over a field of grain,  
Needless the care of the gleaners,  
Where he had passed amain

Straight through the human harvest,

Cutting a bloody swath,  
Woe to you, soldier of Briton!  
Death is abroad in his path  
Flee from the scythe of the reaper,  
Flee while the moment is thine,  
None may with safety withstand him,  
Black Samson of Brandywine.

Was he a freeman or bondman?  
Was he a man or a thing?

What does it matter? His bravery

Renders him royal — a king.  
If he was only a chattel,  
Honor the ransom may pay  
Of the royal, the loyal black giant  
Who fought for his country  
that day.

Noble and bright is the story,  
Worthy the touch of the lyre,  
Sculptor or poet should find it  
Full of the stuff to inspire  
Beat it in brass and in copper,  
Tell it in storied line,  
So that the world may remember  
Black Samson of Brandywine.

### THE LOOKING-GLASS

DINAH stan' befo' de glass,  
Lookin' moughty neat,  
An' huh purty shadder sass  
At huh haid an' feet  
While she sasshay 'roun' an' bow  
Smilin' den an' poutin' now,  
An' de lookin'-glass, I 'low  
Say. "Now, ain't she sweet?"

All she do, de glass it see,  
Hit des see, no mo',  
Seems to me, hit ought to be  
Drappin' on de flo'.  
She go w'en huh time git slack,  
Kissin' han's an' smilin' back,  
Lawsy, how my lips go smack,  
Watchin' at de do'.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Wisht I was huh lookin glass  
W en she kissed huh han  
Does you tink I d let it pass  
Settin' on de stan ?  
No I'd des fall down an break,  
Kin o' glad 't uz fu huh sake  
But de diffunce dat whut make  
Lookin glass an man

### A MISTY DAY

HEART of my heart, the day is  
chill  
The mist hangs low o'er the  
wooded hill  
The soft white mist and the heavy  
cloud  
The sun and the face of heaven  
shroud  
The birds are thick in the dripping  
trees  
That drop their pearls to the beg  
gar breeze  
No songs a e rife where songs are  
wont  
Each singer crouches in his haunt  
  
Heart of my heart the day is chill  
Whene er thy loving voice is still  
The cloud and mist hide the sky  
from me  
Whene er thy face I cannot see  
My thoughts fly back from the  
chill without  
My mind in the storm drops  
doubt on doubt,

No songs arise Without thee  
love  
My soul sinks down like a fright  
ened dove

### LIL GAL

OH de weathah it is balmy an de  
breeze is sighin low  
Lil gal  
An de mockin bird is singin' in  
de locus by de do,  
Lil gal  
Dere s a hummin an a bummin  
in de lan f om eas to wes  
I s a sighin fu you honey an I  
nevah know no res  
Fu dey s lots o trouble brewin  
an' a stewin in my breas  
Lil gal  
  
Whut s de mattah wid de weathah  
whut s de mattah wid de  
breeze  
Lil gal?  
Whut s de mattah wid de locus  
dat s a singin in de trees  
Lil gal?  
W y dey knows dey ladies love 'em  
an dey knows dey love em  
true  
An dey love 'em back I reckon  
des lak I s a lovin you  
Dat s de reason dey s a weavin  
an a sighin thoo an thoo  
Li'l gal

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Don't you let no da'ky fool you  
'cause de clo'es he waihs is  
fine,

Li'l' gal.

Dey's a hones' hea't a-beatin' un-  
nerneaf dese rags o' mine,

Li'l' gal.

C'ose dey ain' no use in mockin'  
whut de birds an' weathah do,  
But I's so'y I can't 'spress it w'en  
I knows I loves you true,

Dat's de reason I's a-sighin' an'  
a-singin now fu' you,

Li'l' gal.

### DOUGLASS

AH, Douglass, we have fall'n on  
evil days,

Such days as thou, not even thou  
didst know,

When thee, the eyes of that  
harsh long ago

Saw, salient, at the cross of devious  
ways,

And all the country heard thee  
with amaze

Not ended then, the passionate  
ebb and flow,

The awful tide that battled to  
and fro;

We ride amid a tempest of dis-  
praise

Now, when the waves of swift dis-  
sension swarm,

And Honor, the strong pilot,  
lieth stark,

Oh, for thy voice high-sounding  
o'er the storm,

For thy strong arm to guide the  
shivering bark,

The blast-defying power of thy  
form,

To give us comfort through the  
lonely dark

### WHEN SAM'L SINGS

HYEAH dat singin' in de medders

Whaih de folks is mckin' hay?

Wo'k is pretty middlin' heavy

Fu' a man to be so gay.

You kin tell dey's somep'n special

F'om de canter o' de song,

Somep'n sholy pleasin' Sam'l,

W'en he singin' all day long

Hyeahd him wa'blin' 'way dis  
mo'nin'

'Fo' 't was light enough to see  
Seem lak music in de evenin'

Allus good enough fu' me.

But dat man commenced to hollah

'Fo' he'd even washed his face;

Would you b'lieve, de scan'lous  
rascal

Woke de birds erroun' de place?

Sam'l took a ttip a-Sad'day,

Dressed hisse'f in all he had,

Tuk a cane an' went a-strollin',

Lookin' mighty pleased an' glad.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Some folks don know whut de  
mattah

But I do you bet yo' life  
Sam I smilin an a singin

Case he been to ee his wife

She live on de fu plantation

Twenty miles erway er so

But huh man is mighty happy

Wen he git de chanst to go

Walkin allus ain de nices—

*Mo nin fin s hum on de way—*

But he allus comes back smilin

Lak his pleasure was his pay

Den he do a heap o talkin

Do he mosly kin o still,

But de wods dey gits to runnin

Lak de watah fu a mill

Whut s de use o havin trouble

Whut s de use o havin strife? '

Dat 's de way dis Sam I preaches

Wen he been to see his wife

An I reckon I git jealous

Fu I laff an joke an sco n

An I say Oh go on Sam I

Des go on an blow yo hon

But I know dis comin Sad day,

Dey ll be brighter days in life

An I ll be ez glad ez Sam I

Wen I go to see my wife

### BOOKER T WASHINGTON

THE word is writ that he who  
runs may read

What is the passing breath of  
earthly fame?

But to snatch glory from the hands  
of blame—

That is to be to live, to strive in  
deed

A poor Virginia cabin gave the  
seed

And from its dark and lowly door  
there came

A peer of princes in the world's  
acclaim

A master spirit for the nation's  
need

Strong silent purposeful beyond  
his kind

The mark of rugged force on  
brow and lip

Straight on he goes nor turns to  
look behind

Where hot the hounds come  
baying at his hip

With one idea foremost in his  
mind

Like the keen prow of some on  
forging ship

### THE MONK'S WALK

In this sombre garden close

What has come and passed who  
knows?

What red passion what white  
pain

Haunted this dim walk in vain?

Underneath the ivied wall

Where the silent shadows fall



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Lies the pathway chill and damp  
Where the world-quit dreamers  
tramp

Just across, where sunlight burns,  
Smiling at the mourning ferns,  
Stand the roses, side by side,  
Nodding in their useless pride.

Ferns and roses, who shall say  
What you witness day by day?  
Cov'it smile or dropping eye,  
As the monks go pacing by.

Has the novice come to-day  
Here beneath the wall to pray?  
Has the young monk, lately child-  
den,  
Sung his lyric, sweet, forbidden?

Tell me, roses, did you note  
That pale father's throbbing  
throat?  
Did you hear him murmur,  
"Love!"  
As he kissed a faded glove?

Mourning ferns, pray tell me why  
Shook you with that passing sigh?  
Is it that you chanced to spy  
Something in the Abbot's eye?

Here no dream, nor thought of sin,  
Where no worlding enters in,  
Here no longing, no desire,  
Heat nor flame of earthly fire

Branches waving green above,  
Whisper naught of life nor love,

Softened winds that seem a breath,  
Perfumed, bring no fear of death.

Is it living thus to live?  
Has life nothing more to give?  
Ah, no more of smile or sigh —  
Life, the world, and love, good-  
bye

Gray, and passionless, and dim,  
Echoing of the solemn hymn,  
Lies the walk, 'twixt fern and rose,  
Here within the garden close

### LOVE-SONG

IF Death should claim me for her  
own to-day,  
And softly I should falter from  
your side,  
Oh, tell me, loved one, would my  
memory stay,  
And would my image in your  
heart abide?  
Or should I be as some forgotten  
dream,  
That lives its little space, then  
fades entire?  
Should Time send o'er you its  
relentless stream,  
To cool your heart, and quench  
for aye love's fire?

I would not for the world, love,  
give you pain,  
Or ever compass what would  
cause you grief,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

And, oh how well I know that  
tears are vain!

But love is sweet my dear and  
life is brief

So if some day before you I should  
go

Beyond the sound and sight of  
song and sea

'T would give my spirit stronger  
wings to know

That you remembered still and  
wept for me.

### SLOW THROUGH THE DARK

SLOW moves the pageant of a  
climbing race

Their footsteps drag far far be  
low the height

And, unprevailing by their ut  
most might

Seem faltering downward from  
each hard won place

No strange swift sprung excep  
tion we we trace

A devious way thro dim uncer  
tain light —

Our hope through the long  
vistaed years a sight

Of that our Captain's soul sees  
face to face

Who faithless faltering that  
the road is steep

Now raiseth up his drear insistent  
cry?

Who stoppeth here to spend a  
while in sleep

Or cur eth that the storm obscures  
the sky?

Heed not the darkness round  
you dull and deep

The clouds grow thickest when  
the summit's nigh

### THE MURDERED LOVER

SAY a mass for my soul's repose  
my brother

Say a mass for my soul's repose  
I need it

Lovingly lived we the sons of one  
mother

Mine was the sin but I pray  
you not heed it

Dark were her eyes as the sloe and  
they called me

Called me with voice indepen  
dent of breath

God! how my heart beat her  
beauty appalled me

Dazed me and drew to the sea  
brink of death

Lithe was her form like a willow  
She beckoned

What could I do save to follow  
and follow

Nothing of right or result could be  
reckoned

Life without her was unworthy  
and hollow

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Ay, but I wronged thee, my  
brother, my brother,  
Ah, but I loved her, thy beautiful wife  
Shade of our father, and soul of  
our mother,  
Have I not paid for my love  
with my life?

Dark was the night when, re-  
vengeful, I met you,  
Deep in the heart of a desolate  
land  
Warm was the life-blood which  
angrily wet you  
Sharp was the knife that I felt  
from your hand

Wept you, oh, wept you, alone by  
the river,  
When my stark carcass you  
secretly sank  
Ha, now I see that you tremble  
and shiver,  
'T was but my spirit that passed  
when you shrank!

Weep not, oh, weep not, 't is over,  
't is over,  
Stir the dark weeds with the  
turn of the tide,  
Go, thou hast sent me forth, ever  
a rove,  
Rest and the sweet realm of  
heaven denied

Say a mass for my soul's repose,  
my brother,

Say a mass for my soul, I need  
it  
Sin of mine was it, and sin of no  
other,  
Mine was it all, but I pray you  
not heed it

### PHILOSOPHY

I BEEN t'inkin' 'bout de preachah;  
whut he said de othah  
night,  
'Bout hit bein' people's dooty,  
fu' to keep dey faces bright,  
How one ought to live so pleasant  
dat ouah tempah never riles,  
Meetin' evahbody roun' us wid  
ouah very nicest smiles

Dat's all right, I ain't a-sputin'  
not a t'ing dat soun's lak  
fac',

But you don't ketch folks a-grin-  
nin' wid a misery in de  
back,

An' you don't fin' dem a-smilin'  
w'en dey's hongry ez kin  
be,

Leastways, dat's how human  
natur' allus seems to 'pear  
to me

We is mos' all putty likely fu' to  
have our little cares,

An' I think we 'se doin' fus' rate  
w'en we jes' go long and  
bears,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Widout breakin up ouah faces in  
a sickly so't o grin

W en we knows dat in ouah in  
nards we is p ntly mad ez  
sin

Oh dey 's times fu bein pleasant  
an fu goin' smilin roun',  
Cause I don t believe in people  
allus totin roun a frown,

But it's easy nough to titter w en  
de stew is smokin hot

But hit 's mighty had to giggle  
w en dey s nuffin in de  
pot

### A PREFERENCE

MASTAH drink his ol Made a,

Missy drink huh sherry wine

Ovahseah lak his whiskey

But dat othah drink is mine

Des lasses an watah lasses  
an watah

W en you git a steamin hoe-cake

On de table go way man!

'D ain but one ting to go wid it

Sides de gravy in de pan

Dat s lasses an watah lasses  
an watah

W en hit s possum dat you eatin'

Simmon beer is mighty sweet

But fu evahday consumin

'D un t no mo tal way to beat  
Des lasses an watah lasses  
an watah

W y de bees is illus busy

An ain got no time to was ?

Hit s bec'ase dey knows de honey

Dey 's a makin' gwine to tas

Lik lasses an watah lasses  
an watah

Oh hit s mighty mil an'  
soothin

An' hit don go to yo haid,

Dat s de reason I s a backin

Up de othah wods I said

Des lasses an watah lasses  
an watah

### THE DEBT

THIS is the debt I pay

Just for one riotous day

Years of regret and grief,

Sorrow without relief

Pay it I will to the end —

Until the grave my friend

Gives me a true release —

Gives me the clasp of peace

Slight was the thing I bought

Small was the debt I thought

Poor was the loan at best —

God! but the interest!

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## ON THE DEDICATION OF DOROTHY HALL

TUSKEGEE, ALA, APRIL 22, 1901

NOT to the midnight of the gloomy  
past,  
Do we revert to-day, we look  
upon  
The golden present and the future  
vast  
Whose vistas show us visions of  
the dawn

Nor shall the sorrows of departed  
years  
The sweetness of our tranquil  
souls annoy,  
The sunshine of our hopes dispels  
the tears,  
And clears our eyes to see this  
later joy.

Not ever in the years that God  
hath given  
Have we gone friendless down  
the thorny way,  
Always the clouds of pregnant  
black were riven  
By flashes from His own eternal  
day.

The women of a race should be its  
pride,  
We glory in the strength our  
mothers had,  
We glory that this strength was  
not denied

To labor bravely, nobly, and be  
glad

God give to these within this tem-  
ple here,  
Clear vision of the dignity of  
toil,  
That virtue in them may its blos-  
soms rear  
Unspotted, fragrant, from the  
lowly soil.

God bless the givers for their noble  
deed,  
Shine on them with the mercy  
of Thy face,  
Who come with open hearts to  
help and speed  
The striving women of a strug-  
gling race

## A ROADWAY

LET those who will stride on their  
barren roads  
And prick themselves to haste with  
self-made goads,  
Unheeding, as they struggle day  
by day,  
If flowers be sweet or skies be blue  
or gray:  
For me, the lone, cool way by purl-  
ing brooks,  
The solemn quiet of the woodland  
nooks,  
A song-bird somewhere trilling  
sadly gay,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

A pause to pick a flower beside the  
way

### BY RUGGED WAYS

By rugged ways and thro the  
night

We struggle blindly toward the  
light

And groping stumbling ever pray  
For sight of long delaying day

The cruel thorns beside the road  
Stretch eager points our steps to  
goad

And from the thickets all about  
Detaining hands reach threatening  
out

Deliver us oh Lord we cry  
Our hands uplifted to the sky  
No answer save the thunder's peal  
And onward onward still we reel  
'Oh give us now thy guiding  
light

Our sole reply the lightnings  
blight

'Vain vain cries one in vain  
we call

But faith serene is over all

Beside our way the streams are  
dried

And famine mates us side by side  
Discouraged and reproachful eyes  
Seek once again the frowning skies  
Yet shall there come spite storm  
and shock

A Moses who shall smite the rock

Call manna from the Giver's hand  
And lead us to the promised land'

The way is dark and cold and  
steep

And shapes of horror murder sleep  
And hard the unrelenting years

But twixt our sighs and moans  
and tears,

We still can smile, we still can  
sing

Despite the arduous journeying  
For faith and hope their courage  
lend

And rest and light are at the end

### LOVE'S SEASONS

WHEN the bees are humming in  
the honeysuckle vine

And the summer days are in  
their bloom

Then my love is deepest oh,  
dearest heart of mine,

When the bees are humming in the  
honeysuckle vine

When the winds are moaning o'er  
the meadows chill and gray

And the land is dim with winter  
gloom

Then for thee, my darling love  
will have its way

When the winds are moaning o'er  
the meadows chill and gray

In the vernal dawning with the  
starting of the leaf

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

In the merry-chanting time of  
spring,  
Love steals all my senses, oh, the  
happy-hearted thief!  
In the vernal morning with the  
starting of the leaf.

Always, ever always, even in the  
autumn drear,  
When the days are sighing out  
their grief,  
Thou art still my darling, dear-  
est of the dear,  
Always, ever always, even in the  
autumn drear.

## TO A DEAD FRIEND

It is as if a silver chord  
Were suddenly grown mute,  
And life's song with its rhythm  
warred  
Against a silver lute

It is as if a silence fell  
Where bides the garnered sheaf,  
And voices murmuring, "It is  
well,"  
Are stifled by our grief

It is as if the gloom of night  
Had hid a summer's day,  
And willows, sighing at their  
plight,  
Bent low beside the way.

For he was part of all the best  
That Nature loves and gives,

And ever more on Memory's breast  
He lies and laughs and lives

## TO THE SOUTH

### ON ITS NEW SLAVERY

HEART of the Southland, heed me  
pleading now,  
Who bearest, unashamed, upon  
my brow  
The long kiss of the loving tropic  
sun,  
And yet, whose veins with thy red  
current run

Borne on the bitter winds from  
every hand,  
Strange tales are flying over all the  
land,  
And Condemnation, with his pin-  
ions foul,  
Glooms in the place where broods  
the midnight owl

What art thou, that the world  
should point at thee,  
And vaunt and chide the weakness  
that they see?  
There was a time they were not  
wont to chide,  
Where is thy old, uncompromis-  
ing pride?

Blood-washed, thou shouldst lift  
up thine honored head,  
White with the sorrow for thy  
loyal dead

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Who lie on every plain on every hill	For those who loved thee and thy children so
And whose high spirit walks the Southland still	Thou must arise forthwith, and strong thou must
Whose infancy our mother's hands have nursed	Throw off the smirching of this baser dust
Thy manhood gone to battle un accursed	Lay by the practice of this later creed
Our fathers left to till the re luctant field	And be thine honest self again indeed
To rape the soil for what she would not yield	There was a time when even slav ery's chain
Wooping for aye the cold unam orous sod	Held in some joys to alternate with pain
Whose growth for them still meant a master's rod	Some little light to give the night relief
Tearing her bosom for the wealth that gave	Some little smiles to take the place of grief
The strength that made the toiler still a slave	There was a time when jocund as the day
Too long we hear the deep im passioned cry	The toiler hoed his row and sung his lay
That echoes vainly to the heedless sky	Found something gleeful in the very air
Too long too long the Mace donian call	And solace for his toiling every where
Falls fainting far beyond the out ward wall	Now all is changed within the rude stockade
Within whose sweep beneath the shadowing trees	A bondsman whom the greed of men has made
A slumbering nation takes its dangerous ease	Almost too brutish to deplore his plight
Too long the rumors of thy hatred go	Toils hopeless on from joyless morn till night



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

For him no more the cabin's quiet rest,	Is it for this we all have felt the flame,—
The homely joys that gave to labor zest,	This newer bondage and this deeper shame?
No more for him the merry banjo's sound,	Nay, not for this, a nation's heroes bled,
Nor trip of lightsome dances foot- ing round	And North and South with tears beheld their dead
For him no more the lamp shall glow at eve,	Oh, Mother South, hast thou for- got thy ways,
Nor chubby children pluck him by the sleeve,	Forgot the glory of thine ancient days,
No more for him the master's eyes be bright,—	Forgot the honor that once made thee great,
He has nor freedom's nor a slave's delight	And stooped to this unhallowèd estate?
What, was it all for naught, those awful years	It cannot last, thou wilt come forth in might,
That drenched a groaning land with blood and tears?	A warrior queen full armored for the fight,
Was it to leave this sly convenient hell,	And thou wilt take, e'en with thy spear in rest,
That brother fighting his own brother fell?	Thy dusky children to thy saving breast
When that great struggle held the world in awe,	Till then, no more, no more the gladsome song,
And all the nations blanched at what they saw,	Strike only deeper chords, the notes of wrong,
Did Sanctioned Slavery bow its conquered head	Till then, the sigh, the tear, the oath, the moan,
That this unsanctioned crime might rise instead?	Till thou, oh, South, and thine, come to thine own

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### THE HAUNTED OAK

PRAY why are you so bare so bare  
Oh bough of the old oak tree  
And why when I go through the  
shade you throw  
Runs a shudder over me?

My leaves were green as the best,  
I trow,  
And sap ran free in my veins  
But I saw in the moonlight dim  
and weird  
A guiltless victim's pains

I bent me down to hear his sigh  
I shook with his gurgling moan,  
And I trembled sore when they  
rode away,  
And left him here alone.

They d charged him with the old  
old crime,  
And set him fast in jail  
Oh, why does the dog howl all  
night long  
And why does the night wind  
wail?

He prayed his prayer and he swore  
his oath  
And he raised his hand to the  
sky  
But the beat of hoofs smote on his  
ear  
And the steady tread drew nigh  
Who is it rides by night by night  
Over the moonlit road?

And what is the spur that keeps  
the pace  
What is the galling goad?

And now they beat at the prison  
door,  
"Ho keeper do not stay!  
We are friends of him whom you  
hold within  
And we fain would take him  
away

"From those who ride fast on our  
heels  
With mind to do him wrong  
They have no care for his inno-  
cence,  
And the rope they bear is  
long '

They have fooled the jailer with  
lying words  
They have fooled the man with  
lies  
The bolts unbar, the locks are  
drawn  
And the great door open flies

Now they have taken him from  
the jail  
And hard and fast they ride,  
And the leader laughs low down  
in his throat  
As they halt my trunk beside

Oh, the judge, he wore a mask of  
black  
And the doctor one of white

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

And the minister, with his oldest  
son,  
Was curiously bedight.

Oh, foolish man, why weep you  
now?

'T is but a little space,  
And the time will come when these  
shall dread  
The mem'ry of your face.

I feel the rope against my bark,  
And the weight of him in my  
grain,

I feel in the throe of his final woe  
The touch of my own last pain

And never more shall leaves come  
forth

On a bough that bears the ban,  
I am burned with dread, I am  
dried and dead,

From the curse of a guiltless  
man.

And ever the judge rides by, rides  
by,

And goes to hunt the deer,  
And ever another rides his soul  
In the guise of a mortal fear.

And ever the man he rides me  
hard,

And never a night stays he,  
For I feel his curse as a haunted  
bough,

On the trunk of a haunted tree.

## WELTSCHMERTZ

You ask why I am sad to-day,  
I have no cares, no griefs, you say?  
Ah, yes, 't is true, I have no  
grief—

But—is there not the falling  
leaf?

The bare tree there is mourning  
left

With all of autumn's gray bereft;  
It is not what has happened me,  
Think of the bare, dismantled tree.

The birds go South along the sky,  
I hear their lingering, long good-  
bye.

Who goes reluctant from my  
breast?

And yet—the lone and wind-  
swept nest

The mourning, pale-flowered  
hearse goes by,

Why does a tear come to my eye?  
Is it the March rain blowing  
wild?

I have no dead, I know no child

I am no widow by the bier  
Of him I held supremely dear  
I have not seen the choicest one  
Sink down as sinks the westering  
sun

Faith unto faith have I beheld,  
For me, few solemn notes have  
swelled;

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Love beckoned me out to the dawn  
And happily I followed on

And yet my heart goes out to  
them

Whose sorrow is their diadem  
The falling leaf the crying bird,  
The voice to be all lost un  
heard —

Not mine not mine and yet too  
much

The thrilling power of human  
touch

While all the world looks on and  
scorns

I wear another's crown of thorns

Count me a priest who under  
stands

The glorious pain of nail pierced  
hands

Count me a comrade of the thief  
Hot driven into late belief

Oh mother's tear oh father's sigh  
Oh mourning sweetheart's last  
good bye

I yet have known no mourning  
save

Beside some brother's brother's  
grave

### ROBERT GOULD SHAW

WHY was it that the thunder  
voice of Fate  
Should call thee studious from  
the classic groves

Where calm-eyed Pallas with  
still footstep roves,  
And charge thee seek the turmoil  
of the state?

What bade thee hear the voice and  
rise elate

Leave home and kindred and  
thy spicy loves

To lead th unlettered and de  
spised droves

To manhood's home and thunder  
at the gate?

Far better the slow blaze of Learn  
ing's light

The cool and quiet of her dearer  
fane,

Than this hot terror of a hopeless  
fight

This cold endurance of the final  
pain —

Since thou and those who with  
thee died for right

Have died the Present teaches  
but in vain!

### ROSES

OH wind of the spring time oh  
free wind of May

When blossoms and bird song  
are rife

Oh joy for the season and joy for  
the day

That gave me the roses of life,  
of life

That gave me the roses of life

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Oh, wind of the summer, sing  
    loud in the night,  
    When flutters my heart like a  
    dove,  
One came from thy kingdom, thy  
    realm of delight,  
    And gave me the roses of love,  
    of love,  
    And gave me the roses of love.

Oh, wind of the winter, sigh low  
    in thy grief,  
    I hear thy compassionate breath;  
I wither, I fall, like the autumn-  
    kissed leaf,  
    He gave me the roses of death,  
    of death,  
    He gave me the roses of death

### A LOVE SONG

AH, love, my love is like a cry in  
    the night,  
A long, loud cry to the empty sky,  
The cry of a man alone in the  
    desert,  
With hands uplifted, with parch-  
    ing lips,

Oh, rescue me, rescue me,  
Thy form to mine arms,  
The dew of thy lips to my mouth,  
Dost thou hear me?—my call  
    thro' the night?

Darling, I hear thee and answer,  
Thy fountain am I,

All of the love of my soul will I  
    bring to thee,  
All of the pains of my being shall  
    wring to thee,  
Deep and forever the song of my  
    loving shall sing to thee,  
Ever and ever thro' day and thro'  
    night shall I cling to thee  
Hearest thou the answer?  
Darling, I come, I come

### ITCHING HEELS

Fu' de peace o' my eachin' heels,  
    set down;  
    Don' fiddle dat chune no mo'.  
Don' you see how dat melody stuhs  
    me up  
    An' baigs me to tek to de flo'?  
You knows I's a Christian, good  
    an' strong,  
    I wusship f'om June to June,  
My pra'ahs dey ah loud an' my  
    hymns ah long  
    I baig you don' fiddle dat chune  
I's a crick in my back an' a mis-  
    ery hyeah  
    Whaih de j'int's gittin' ol' an'  
    stiff,  
But hit seems lak you brings me  
    de bref o' my youf,  
    W'y, I's suttain I noticed a  
    w'iff  
Don' fiddle dat chune no mo', my  
    chile,  
    Don' fiddle dat chune no mo',

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

I'll git up an' tiah up dis groun  
fu a mile  
An den I ll be chu ched fu' it,  
sho'

Oh, fiddle dat chune some mo, I  
say  
An fiddle it loud an fas  
I s a youngstah ergin in de mist  
o my sin  
De present s gone back to de  
pas  
I ll dance to dat chune so des fid  
dle erway  
I knows how de backslidah  
feels  
So fiddle it on twell de break o  
de day  
Fu de sake o my eachin heels

### TO AN INGRATE

THIS is to day a golden summer s  
day  
And yet — and yet  
My vengeful soul will not for  
get  
The past forever now forgot you  
say

From that half height where I had  
sadly climbed  
I stretched my hand  
I lone in all that land,  
Down there where, helpless, you  
were limed

Our fingers clasped, and dragging  
me a pace  
You struggled up  
It is a bitter Cup  
That now for naught you turn  
away your face

I shall remember this for aye and  
aye  
Whate er may come  
Although my lips are dumb,  
My spirit holds you to that yester  
day

### IN THE TENTS OF ALBAR

IN the tents of Albar  
Are dole and grief to day  
For the flower of all the Indies  
Has gone the silent way

In the tents of Albar  
Are emptiness and gloom,  
And where the dancers gather,  
The silence of the tomb

Across the yellow desert  
Across the burning sands  
Old Albar wanders madly,  
And wrings his fevered hands

And ever makes his moaning  
To the unanswering sky,  
For Sutna lovely Sutna  
Who was so fair to die

For Sutna danced at morning  
And Sutna danced at eve

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Her dusky eyes half hidden  
Behind her silken sleeve

Her pearly teeth out-glancing  
Between her coral lips,  
The tremulous rhythm of passion  
Marked by her quivering hips.

As lovely as a jewel  
Of fire and dewdrop blent,  
So danced the maiden Sutna  
In gallant Akbar's tent

And one who saw her dancing,  
Saw her bosom's fall and rise  
Put all his body's yearning  
Into his lovelit eyes

Then Akbar came and drove  
him —  
A jackal — from his door,  
And bade him wander far and look  
On Sutna's face no more

Some day the sea disgorges,  
The wilderness gives back,  
Those half-dead who have wandered,  
Aimless, across its track

And he returned — the lover,  
Haggard of brow and spent;  
He found fair Sutna standing  
Before her master's tent.

"Not mine, nor Akbar's, Sutna!"  
He cried and closely pressed,  
And drove his craven dagger  
Straight to the maiden's breast.

Oh, weep, oh, weep, for Sutna,  
So young, so dear, so fair,  
Her face is gray and silent  
Beneath her dusky hair

And wail, oh, wail, for Akbar,  
Who walks the desert sands,  
Crying aloud for Sutna,  
Wringing his fevered hands.

In the tents of Akbar  
The tears of sorrow run,  
But the corpse of Sutna's slayer,  
Lies rotting in the sun

## THE FOUNT OF TEARS

ALL hot and grimy from the road,  
Dust gray from arduous years,  
I sat me down and eased my load  
Beside the Fount of Tears

The waters sparkled to my eye,  
Calm, crystal-like, and cool,  
And breathing there a restful sigh,  
I bent me to the pool

When, lo! a voice cried "Pilgrim,  
rise,  
Harsh tho' the sentence be,  
And on to other lands and skies —  
This fount is not for thee

"Pass on, but calm thy needless  
fears,  
Some may not love or sin,  
An angel guards the Fount of  
Tears,  
All may not bathe therein."

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Then with my burden on my back  
I turned to gaze awhile  
First at the uninviting track  
Then at the water's smile

And so I go upon my way  
Thro' out the sultry years  
But pause no more, by night by day  
Beside the Fount of Tears.

### LIFE'S TRAGEDY

It may be misery not to sing at all  
And to go silent through the  
brimming day

It may be sorrow never to be  
loved

But deeper griefs than these  
beset the way

To have come near to sing the  
perfect song

And only by a half tone lost  
the key

There is the potent sorrow there  
the grief,

The pale sad staring of life's  
tragedy

To have just missed the perfect  
love

Not the hot passion of untem-  
pered youth

But that which lays aside its vanity  
And gives thee for thy trusting

worship truth—

This this it is to be accursed in  
deed,

For if we mortals love, or if we  
sing

We count our joys not by the  
things we have

But by what kept us from the  
perfect thing

### DE WAY T'INGS COME

DE way t'ings come hit seems to  
me

Is des one monst'ous mystery

De way hit seem to strike a man

Dey ain't no sense dey ain't no  
plan

Ef trouble sta'ts a pilin' down

It ain't no use to rage er frown

It ain't no use to strive er pray

Hit's mortal boun' to come dat  
way

Now ef you s' hongry, an' yo' plate

Des keep on sayin' to you,  
Wut

Don't mek no diffunce how you  
feel

T'wont do no good to hunt a  
meal

Fu dat 'th meal des boun' to hide  
Ontwell de devil's satisfied,

An' twell dey's some p'n by to  
c'ave

You's got to ease yo' se'f an' sta' ve

But ef dey's co'n meal on de she'f

You need n't bothah roun' yo' se'f,



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Somebody's boun' to amble in  
 An' 'vite you to dey co'n meal bin;  
 An' ef you's stuffed up to be froat  
 Wid co'n er middlin', fowl er  
     shoat,  
 Des' look out an' you'll see fu'  
     sho  
 A 'possum faint befo' yo' do'  
  
 De way t'ings happen, huhuh,  
     chile,  
 Dis worl' 's done puzzled me one  
     w'ile,  
 I's mighty skeered I'll fall in  
     doubt,  
 I des' won't try to reason out  
 De reason why folks strive an'  
     plan  
 A dinnah fu' a full-fed man,  
 An' shet de do' an' cross de street  
 F'om one dat raaly needs to eat.

Shet yo' mouf, you rascal,  
 Wha' 's de use to cry?  
 You do' see no rain clouds  
 Up dah in de sky.

Dis hyciah sweat 's been po'in'  
 Down my face sence dawn,  
 Ain't hit time we 's hyciahin'  
 Dat ah dinnah ho'n?  
 Go on, Ben an' Jaspah,  
 Lif' yo' feet an' fly,  
 Hit out fu' de shadder  
 Fo' I drap an' die

Hongry, lawd a' mussy,  
 Hongry as a bath,  
 Seems lak I hyciah dinnah  
 Callin' evahwhaih;  
 Daih 's de ho'n a blowin'!  
 Let dat cradle swing,  
 One mo' sweep, den da'kies,  
 Beat me to de spring!

### NOON

SHADDER in de valley  
 Sunlight on de hill,  
 Sut'ny wish dat locus'  
 Knowed how to be still.  
 Don't de heat already  
 Mek a body hum,  
 'Dout dat insec' sayin'  
 Hottah days to come?

Fiel' 's a shinin' yaller  
 Wid de bendin' grain,  
 Guinea hen a callin',  
 Now 's de time fu' rain;

### AT THE TAVERN

A LILT and a swing,  
 And a ditty to sing,  
 Or ever the night grow old,  
     The wine is within,  
     And I 'm sure 't were a sin  
 For a soldier to choose to be cold,  
     my dear,  
 For a soldier to choose to be cold

We're right for a spell,  
 But the fever is — well,  
 No thing to be braved, at least;

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

So bring me the wine  
No low fever in mine  
For a drink is more kind than a  
priest my dear  
For a drink is more kind than a  
priest

### DEATH

STORM and strife and stress  
Lost in a wilderness  
Groping to find a way  
Forth to the haunts of day

Sudden a vista peeps  
Out of the tangled deeps  
Only a point—the ray  
But at the end is day

Dark is the dawn and chill  
Daylight is on the hill  
Night is the flitting breath  
Day rides the hills of death

### NIGHT, DIM NIGHT

Night dim night and it rains my  
love it rains  
(Art thou dreaming of me I  
wonder)

The trees are sad and the wind  
complains

Outside the rolling of the thun  
der

And the beat against the panes

Heart my heart thou art mourn  
ful in the rain

(Are thy redolent lips a  
quiver?)

My soul seeks thine doth it seek  
in vain?

My love goes surging like a  
river

Shall its tide bear naught save  
pain?



## LYRICS OF LOVE AND SORROW



## I

Love is the light of the world my  
dear

Heigho but the world is  
gloomy  
The light has faled and the lamp  
down hurled  
Leaves only darkness to me

Love is the light of the world my  
dear

Ah me but the world is dreary  
The night is down, and my curtain  
furled

But I cannot sleep though  
weary

Love is the light of the world my  
dear

Alas for a hopeless hoping  
When the flame went out in the  
breeze that swirled  
And a soul went blindly grop  
ing

## II

THE light was on the golden  
sands

A glimmer on the sea  
My soul spoke clearly to thy soul  
Thy spirit answered me

Since then the light that gilds the  
sands  
And glimmers on the sea

But vainly struggles to reflect  
The radiant soul of thee

## III

THE sea speaks to me of you  
All the day long  
Still as I sit by its side  
You are its song

The sea sings to me of you  
Loud on the reef  
Always it moans as it sings,  
Voicing my grief

## IV

My dear love died last night  
Shall I clothe her in white?  
My passionate love is dead  
Shall I robe her in red?  
But nay she was all untrue,  
She shall not go drest in blue  
Still my desolate love was brave  
Unrobed let her go to her grave

## V

THERE are brilliant heights of  
sorrow

That only the few may know  
And the lesser woes of the world  
like waves

Break noiselessly far below  
I hold for my own possessing,  
A mount that is lone and still —  
The great high place of a hopeless  
grief

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

And I call it my "Heart-break  
Hill "

And once on a winter's midnight  
I found its highest crown,  
And there in the gloom, my soul  
and I,  
Weeping, we sat us down

But now when I seek that summit  
We are two ghosts that go;

Only two shades of a thing that  
died,

Once in the long ago.  
So I sit me down in the silence,  
And say to my soul, "Be still,"  
So the world may not know we  
died that night,  
From weeping on "Heart-break  
Hill."

LYRICS OF SUNSHINE AND SHADOW





## A BOY'S SUMMER SONG

'Tis fine to play  
In the fragrant hay,  
And romp on the golden load,  
To ride old Jack  
To the barn and back  
Or tramp by a shady road  
To pause and drink,  
At a mossy brink,  
Ah, that is the best of joy  
And so I say  
On a summer's day,  
What's so fine as being a boy?  
Ha Ha!

With line and hook  
By a babbling brook  
The fisherman's sport we ply  
And let the song  
Of the feathered throng  
That flit in the branches nigh  
At last we stop  
For a quiet dip  
Ah that is the best of joy  
For this I say  
On a summer's day  
What's so fine as being a boy?  
Ha Ha!

## THE SAND MAN

I know a man  
With face of tan  
But who is ever kind

Whom girls and boys  
Leaves games and toys  
Each eventide to find

When day grows dim,  
They watch for him  
He comes to place his claim,  
He wears the crown  
Of Dreaming town,  
The sand man is his name

When sparkling eyes  
Troop sleepily  
And busy lips grow dumb,  
When little heads  
Nod toward the beds  
We know the sand man's come

## JOHNNY SPEAKS

THE sand man he's a jolly old  
fellow  
His face is kind and his voice is  
mellow,  
But he makes your eyelids as heavy  
as lead  
And then you got to go off to bed  
I don't think I like the sand  
man

But I've been playing this live  
long day  
It does make a fellow so tired to  
play!  
Oh my I'm yawning right here  
before ma

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

I'm the sleepest fellow that ever  
you saw.  
I think I do like the sand-man.

## WINTER-SONG

OH, who would be sad tho' the  
sky be a-graying,  
And meadow and woodlands are  
empty and bare,  
For softly and merrily now there  
come playing,  
The little white birds thro' the  
winter-kissed air.  
The squirrel's enjoying the rest  
of the thrifty,  
He munches his store in the old  
hollow tree,  
Tho' cold is the blast and the  
snow-flakes are drifty  
He fears the white flock not a  
whit more than we

### *Chorus*

Then heigho for the flying snow!  
Over the whitened roads we go,  
With pulses that tingle,  
And sleigh-bells a-jingle  
For winter's white birds here's a  
cheery heigho!

## A CHRISTMAS FOLKSONG

DE win' is blowin' wahmah,  
An hit's blowin' f'om de bay;  
Dey's a so't o' mist a-risin'  
All erlong de meddah way,

Dey ain't a hint o' frostin'  
On de groun' ner in de sky,  
An' dey ain't no use in hopin'  
Dat de snow'll 'mence to fly.  
It's goin' to be a green Christ-  
mas,  
An' sad de day fu' me  
I wish dis was de las' one  
Dat evah I should see.

Dey's dancin' in de cabin,  
Dey's spahkin' by de tree,  
But dancin' times an' spahkin'  
Are all done pas' fur me  
Dey's feastin' in de big house,  
Wid all de windahs wide —  
Is dat de way fu' people  
To meet de Christmas-tide?  
It's goin' to be a green Christ-  
mas,  
No mattah what you say  
Dey's us dat will remembah  
An' grieve de comin' day

Dey's des a bref o' dampness  
A-clingin' to my cheek,  
De aih's been dahk an' heavy  
An' threatenin' fu' a week,  
But not wid signs o' wintah,  
Dough wintah'd seem so deah —  
De wintah's out o' season,  
An' Christmas eve is heah  
It's goin' to be a green Christ-  
mas,  
An' oh, how sad de day!  
Go ax de hongry chu'chya'd,  
An' see what hit will say.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Dey's Allen on de hillside  
An Marfy in de plain  
Fu Christmas was like springtime  
An come wid sun an' rain  
Dey's Caline John an' Susie,  
Wid only dis one lef'  
An now de curse is comin'  
Wid murder in hits bref  
It s goin to be a green Christ  
mas —  
Des hyeah my words an  
see  
Befo' de summah beckons  
Dey's many ll weep wid  
me

### THE FOREST GREETING

Good hunting! — aye good hunt  
ing  
Wherever the forests call  
But ever a heart beats hot with  
fear  
And what of the birds that fall?

Good hunting! — aye good hunt  
ing  
Wherever the north winds  
blow  
But what of the stag that calls for  
his mate?  
And what of the wounded doe?

Good hunting! — aye, good hunt  
ing  
And ah! we are bold and strong

But our triumph call through the  
forest hall  
Is a brother's funeral song

For we are brothers ever  
Panther and bird and bear  
Man and the weakest that fear his  
face  
Born to the nest or lair

Yes brothers and who shall judge  
us?  
Hunters and game are we  
But who gave the right for me to  
smite?  
Who boasts when he smiteth me?

Good hunting! — aye good hunt  
ing  
And dim is the forest track  
But the sportsman Death comes  
striding on  
Brothers the way is black

### THE LILY OF THE VALLEY

SWEETEST of the flowers a bloom  
ing  
In the fragrant vernal days  
Is the Lily of the Valley  
With its soft retiring ways

Well, you chose this humble blos  
som  
As the nurse's emblem flower  
Who grows more like her ideal  
Every day and every hour

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Like the Lily of the Valley  
In her honesty and worth,  
Ah, she blooms in truth and virtue  
In the quiet nooks of earth

Tho' she stands erect in honor,  
When the heart of mankind  
bleeds,  
Still she hides her own deserving  
In the beauty of her deeds

In the silence of the darkness  
Where no eye may see and know,  
There her footsteps shod with  
mercy,  
And fleet kindness come and go

Not amid the sounds of plaudits,  
Nor before the garish day,  
Does she shed her soul's sweet per-  
fume,

Does she take her gentle way

But alike her ideal flower,  
With its honey-laden breath,  
Still her heart blooms forth its  
beauty  
In the valley shades of death.

### ENCOURAGED

BECAUSE you love me I have  
much achieved,  
Had you despised me then I must  
have failed,  
But since I knew you trusted  
and believed,

I could not disappoint you and so  
prevailed.

### TO J. Q.

WHAT are the things that make  
life bright?

A star gleam in the night  
What heart us for the coming  
fray?

The dawn tints of the day.  
What helps to speed the weary  
mile?

A brother's friendly smile  
What turns o' gold the evening  
gray?

A flower beside the way.

### DIPLOMACY

TILL your love where the roses  
blow,

And the hearts of the lilies  
quiver,

Not in the city's gleam and glow,  
But down by a half-sunned river  
Not in the crowded ball-room's  
glare,

That would be fatal, Marie,  
Marie,

How can she answer you then and  
there?

So come then and stroll with me,  
my dear,

Down where the birds call,  
Marie, Marie

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### SCAMP

AN T it nice to have a mammy  
W en you kin o tiahed out  
Wid a playin in de meddah  
An a runnin roun about  
Till hit s made you mighty hongry  
An yo nose hit gits to know  
What de smell means dat s a  
comin  
Fom de open cabin do ?  
She wash yo face  
An mek yo place  
You s hongry as a tramp  
Den hit s eat you suppah right  
away  
You stavin little scamp

W en you s full o braid an bacon  
An dey ain t no mo to eat  
An de lasses dat's a stickin  
On yo face ta se kin o sweet  
Don you t ink hit s kin o pleasin  
Fu to have som body neah  
Dat ll wipe yo han s an kiss you  
Fo dey lif you fom you cheah?  
To smile so sweet  
An wash yo feet  
An leave em col an damp  
Den hit s come let me undress  
you now  
You lazy little scamp

Don yo eyes git awful heavy,  
An yo lip git awful slack  
Ain t dey som p n kin o weak  
nin  
In de backbone of yo back?

Don yo knees feel kin o trimbly  
An yo head go bobb'n roun,  
W en you says yo Now I lay  
me'  
An is sno in on de "down" ?  
She kiss yo nose  
She kiss yo toes  
An den tu n out de lamp  
Den hit s creep into yo' trunnel  
baid  
You sleepy little scamp

### WADIN IN DE CRICK

DAYS git wam an wamah  
School gits mighty dull  
Seems lak dese hyeah teachahs  
Mus feel mussiful  
Hookey s wrong I know it  
Ain t no gent man's trick  
But de aih s a-callin ,  
Come on to de crick "

Dah de watah s gu'glin  
Ovah shiny stones  
Des hit s ve y singin  
Seems to soothe yo bones  
W at s de use o waitin  
Go on good an quick  
Dain t no fun lak dis hyeah  
Wadin in de crick

W at dat jay bud sayin ?  
Bettah shet yo haid  
Fus t ing dat you fin out  
You ll be layin daid

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Jay-bu'ds sich a tattlah,  
Des seem lak his trick  
Fu' to tell on folkses  
Wadin' in de crick

Willer boughs a-bendin'  
Hidin' of de sky,  
Wavin' kin' o' frien'ly  
Ez de win' go by,  
Elum trees a-shinin',  
Dahk an' green an' thick,  
Seem to say, "I see yo'  
Wadin' in de crick "

But de trees don' chittah,  
Dey des look an' sigh  
Lak hit's kin' o' peaceful  
Des a-bein' nigh,  
An' yo' t'ank yo' Mastah  
Dat dey trunks is thick  
W'en yo' mammy fin's you  
Wadin' in de crick

Den yo' run behin' dem  
Lak yo' scalded to def,  
Mammy come a-flyin',  
Mos' nigh out o' bref,  
But she set down gentle  
An' she drap huh stick,—  
An' fus' t'ing, dey's mammy  
Wadin' in de crick.

### THE QUILTING

DOLLY sits a-quilting by her  
mother, stich by stich,  
Gracious, how my pulses throb,  
how my fingers itch,

While I note her dainty waist and  
her slender hand,  
As she matches this and that, she  
stitches strand by strand  
And I long to tell her Life's a  
quilt and I'm a patch;  
Love will do the stitching if she'll  
only be my match

### PARTED

SHE wrapped her soul in a lace of  
lies,  
With a prime decent to pin it;  
And I thought I was gaining a  
fearsome prize,  
So I staked my soul to win it.  
We wed and parted on her com-  
plaint,  
And both were a bit of barter,  
Tho' I'll confess that I'm no saint,  
I'll swear that she's no martyr.

### FOREVER

I HAD not known before  
Forever was so long a word  
The slow stroke of the clock of  
time  
I had not heard

'Tis hard to learn so late;  
It seems no sad heart really  
learns,  
But hopes and trusts and doubts  
and fears,  
And bleeds and burns.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

The night is not all dark  
Nor is the day all it seems  
But each may bring me this re-  
lief —  
My dreams and dreams

I had not known before  
That Never was so sad a word  
So wrap me in forgetfulness —  
I have not heard

### THE PLANTATION CHILD'S LULLABY

WINTAH time hit comin  
Stealin' thoo de night  
Wake up in the mo'nin  
Evah t'ing is white  
Cabin lookin' lonesome  
Stannin' in de snow  
Meks you kin' o' nervous  
W'en de win hit blow

Trompin' back from feedin  
Col' an' wet an' blue  
Homespun jacket ragged  
Win a blowin' thoo  
Cabin lookin' cheerful  
Unnerneaf de do  
Yet you kin o' keerful  
W'en de win hit blow

Hickory log a blazin  
Light a lookin' red  
Faith o' eyes o' peepin  
Rom a trunle bed  
Little feet a patterin  
Cleak across de flo'

Bettah had be keerful  
W'en de win hit blow  
Suppah done an' ovah  
Evah t'ing is still  
Listen to de snowman  
Slippin' down de hill  
Ashes on de fiah  
Keep it wam but low  
What s de use o' keerin  
Ef de win do blow?

Smoke house full o' bacon  
Brown an' sweet an' good  
Taters in de cellah  
Possum roam de wood  
Little baby snoozin  
Des ez ef he know  
What s de use o' keerin'  
Ef de win do blow?

### TWILIGHT

'Twi'xt a smile and a tear,  
Twi'xt a song and a sigh  
Twi'xt the day and the dark  
When the night draweth nigh

Ah sunshine may fade  
From the heavens above  
No twilight have we  
To the day of our love

### CURIOSITY

MAMMY'S in de litchen an' de  
do is shet  
All de pickaninnies climb an' tug  
an' sweat,



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Gittin' to de winder, stickin' dah  
lak flies,  
Evah one ermong us des all nose  
an' eyes

"Whut's she cookin', Isaac?"  
"Whut's she cookin', Jake?"  
"Is it sweet pertaters? Is hit pie  
er cake?"

But we couldn't mek out even  
whah we stood  
Whut was mammy cookin' dat  
could smell so good.

Mammy spread de winder, an'  
she frown an' frown,  
How de pickaninnies come a-tum-  
blin' down!

Den she say: "Ef you-all keeps  
a-peepin' in,  
How I'se gwine to whup you, my!  
't 'ill be a sin!

Need n' come a-sniffin' an' a-nosin'  
hyeah,  
'Ca'se I knows my business, nevah  
feah "

Won't somebody tell us — how I  
wish dey would! —  
Whut is mammy cookin' dat it  
smells so good?

We know she means business, an'  
we dassent stay,  
Dough it's mighty tryin' fuh to  
go erway,  
But we goes a-troopin' down de  
ol' wood-track

'Twell dat steamin' kitchen brings  
us stealin' back,  
Climbin' an' a-peepin' so's to see  
inside

Whut on earf kin mammy be so  
sha'p to hide?  
I'd des up an' tell folks w'en I  
knowed I could,  
Ef I was a-cookin' t'ings dat smelt  
so good

Mammy in de oven, an' I see huh  
smile,  
Moufs mus' be a-wat'rin' roun'  
hyeah fuh a mile,  
Den we almos' hollah ez we hu'ies  
down,

'Ca'se hit's apple dumplin's, big an'  
fat an' brown!

W'en de do' is opened, solemn lak  
an' slow,

Wisht you see us settin' all dah  
in a row

Innercent an' p'opah, des lak chill-  
un should

W'en dey mammy's cookin' t'ings  
dat smell so good

## OPPORTUNITY

GRANNY'S gone a-visitin',  
Seen huh git huh shawl  
W'en I was a-hidin' down  
Hime de gyahden wall  
Seen huh put her bonnet on,  
Seen huh tie de strings,  
An' I'se gone to dreamin' now  
'Bout dem cakes an' t'ings.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

On de she f behime de do —

Mussy what a fea s'

Soon ez she gits out o' sight,

I kin eat in peace

I bin watchin fu a week

Des fu dis hyeah chance

Mussy wen I gits in daih

I ll des sholy dance

Lemon pie an gingah cake,

Let me set an tink —

Vinegah an sugah too

Dat ll mek a drink

Ef deys one ting dat I loves

Mos puticlahly

It is eatin sweet tings an

A drinkin Sangaree

Lawdy won po granny raih

Wen she see de she f

Wen I tink erbout huh face

Is mos shamed myse f

Well she gone an hyeah I is

Back behime de do —

Look hyeah! gran s done spected  
me

Dain t no sweets no mo

Evah sweet is hid erway

Job des done up brown

Pusson tink dat someun tought

Dey was t eves erroun

Dat des breaks my heart in two

Oh how bad I feel!

Des to tink my own gramma

B lieved dat I u d steal!

## PUTTIN THE BABY AWAY

EIGHT of em hyeah all tol an yet

Dese eyes o' mine is wringin wet,

My haht s a achin hrd an so

De way hit nevah ached befo

My soul s a pleadin, Lawd give  
back

Dis little lonesome baby black

Dis one dis las po he pless one

Whose little rice was too soon  
run'

Po Little Jim des fo yerhs ol

A layin down so still an col

Somehow hit don seem hadly  
faih

To have my baby lyin daih

Wi dout a smile upon his face

Wi dout a look erbout de place

He ust to be so full o' fun

Hit don seem right dat all s done  
done

Des eight in all but I don cuh

Dey want a single one to spaih

De worl was big so was my haht

An dis hyeah baby owned hit s  
paht

De house was po dey clothes was  
rough,

But daih was meat an meal  
enough

An daih was room fu little Jim

Oh! Lawd what made you call fu  
him?

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

It do seem monst'ous ha'd to-day,  
To lay dis baby boy away,  
I'd learned to love his teasin'  
smile,  
He mought o' des been lef' er-  
while,  
You wouldn't t'ought wid all de  
folks,  
Dat's roun' hycah mixin' teals an'  
jokes,  
De Lawd u'd had de time to see  
Dis chile an' tek him 'way f'om  
me

But let it go, I reckon Jim,  
'Ll des go right straight up to  
Him  
Dat took him f'om his mammy's  
nest  
An' lef' dis achin' in my breas',  
An' lookin' in dat fathah's face  
An' 'memberin' dis lone sorrerin'  
place,  
He'll say, "Good Lawd, you ought  
to had  
Do sumpin' fu' to comfo't dad!"

### THE FISHER CHILD'S LUL- LABY

THE wind is out in its rage to-  
night,  
And your father is far at sea  
The rime on the window is hard  
and white  
But dear, you are near to me.

Heave ho, weave low,  
Waves of the briny deep,  
Seethe low and breathe low,  
But sleep you, my little one,  
sleep, sleep

The little boat rocks in the cove no  
more,  
But the flying sea-gulls wail;  
I peer through the darkness that  
wraps the shore,  
For sight of a home set sail  
Heave ho, weave low,  
Waves of the briny deep;  
Seethe low and breathe low,  
But sleep you, my little one,  
sleep, sleep

Ay, lad of mine, thy father may  
die  
In the gale that rides the sea,  
But we'll not believe it, not you  
and I,  
Who mind us of Galilee  
Heave ho, weave low,  
Waves of the briny deep,  
Seethe low and breathe low,  
But sleep you, my little one,  
sleep, sleep

### FAITH

I's a-gittin' weary of de way dat  
people do,  
De folks dat's got dey 'ligion in  
dey fiah-place an' flue,  
Dey's allus somep'n comin' so de  
spit'll have to turn,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

An' hit tain t no p oposition fu to  
mek de hickory bu n  
Ef de sweet pertater fails us an de  
go geous yallah yam  
We kin tek a bit o comfo't f om  
ouah sto o summah jam  
W en de snow hit git to flyin  
dat s de Mastah s own desiah  
De Lawd ll run de wintah an yo  
mammy ll run de fiah

I ain skeered because de win hit  
staht to raih and blow  
I ain t bothahed w en he come er  
rattlin at de do  
Let him taih hisse f an shout let  
him blow an bawl

Dat s de time de branches shek an  
bresh wood mence to fall  
W en de stom er railin an de  
shettahs blowin bout  
Dat de time de fiah place crack  
hits welcome out  
Tain my livin business fu to  
trouble ner enquah  
De Lawd ll min de wintah an my  
mammy ll min de fiah

Ash-cake allus gits ez brown w en  
February s hyeah  
Ez it does in bakin any othah time  
o yeah  
De bacon smell ez callin like de  
little rock an sing  
De same way in de wintah dat dey  
do it in de spring

Dey ain t no use in mopin round  
an lookin mad an glum  
Erbout de wintah season fu hit s  
des plumb boun to come

An ef it comes to runnin tings  
Is willin to retiah  
De Lawd ll min de wintah an'  
my mammy ll min de fiah

### THE FARM CHILD S LULLABY

OH the little bird is rocking in  
the cradle of the wind  
And it s bye my little wee one  
bye

The harvest all is gathered and  
the pippins all are binned

Bye my little wee one bye  
The little rabbit s hiding in the  
golden shock of corn

The thrifty squirrel s laughing  
bunny s idleness to scorn

You are smiling with the angels  
in your slumber smile till  
morn

So it s bye my little wee one  
bye

There ll be plenty in the cellar  
there ll be plenty on the  
shelf

Bye my little wee one bye  
There ll be goodly store of sweet  
ings for a dainty little elf  
Bye, my little wee one, bye

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

The snow may be a-flying o'er the  
    meadow and the hill,  
The ice has checked the chatter of  
    the little laughing rill,  
But in your cosey cradle you are  
    warm and happy still,  
So bye, my little wee one, bye.

Why, the Bob White thinks the  
    snowflake is a brother to his  
    song;

Bye, my little wee one, bye;  
And the chimney sings the sweeter  
    when the wind is blowing  
    strong,

Bye, my little wee one, bye,  
The granary's overflowing, full is  
    cellar, crib, and bin,  
The wood has paid its tribute and  
    the ax has ceased its din,  
The winter may not harm you  
    when you're sheltered safe  
    within,  
So bye, my little wee one, bye

## THE PLACE WHERE THE RAINBOW ENDS

THERE'S a fabulous story  
Full of splendor and glory,  
    That Arabian legends trans-  
    cends,  
Of the wealth without measure,  
The coffers of treasure,  
    At the place where the rainbow  
    ends

Oh, many have sought it,  
And all would have bought it,  
    With the blood we so recklessly  
    spend,  
But none has uncovered,  
The gold, nor discovered  
    The spot at the rainbow's end

They have sought it in battle,  
And e'en where the rattle  
    Of dice with man's blasphemy  
    blends,  
But howe'er persuasive,  
It still proves evasive,  
    This place where the rainbow  
    ends

I own for my pleasure,  
I yearn not for treasure,  
    Though gold has a power it  
    lends,  
And I have a notion,  
To find without motion,  
    The place where the rainbow  
    ends.

The pot may hold pottage,  
The place be a cottage,  
    That a humble contentment de-  
    fends,  
Only joy fills its coffer,  
But spite of the scoffer,  
    There's the place where the rain-  
    bow ends.

Where care shall be quiet,  
And love shall run riot,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

And I shall find wealth in my  
friends  
Then truce to the story  
Of riches and glory  
There's the place where the rain  
bow ends

### HOPE

De dog go howlin' long de road  
De night come shiverin' down  
My back is tiahed of its load  
I can't be fu' f'om town  
No mattah ef de way is long  
My haht is swellin' wid a song  
No mattah bout de frownin'  
skies  
I'll soon be home to see my Lize  
My shadder staggah on de way  
It's monstous col' to night  
But I kin hyeah my honey say  
Wy bless me ef de sight  
O you ain't good fu' my so  
eyes  
(Dat talk's dis lak my lady Lize)  
Is so y case de way was long  
But Lawd you bring me love  
an song  
No mattah ef de way is long  
An ef I trimbles so  
I knows de fiah's burnin' strong  
Behime my Lizy's do  
An dah my res an joy shell be,  
Whaih my ol' wifes awaitin'  
me—

Why what I keer fu' stingin'  
bl'is  
I see huh wind'ah light at las

### APPRECIATION

My muvver's ist the nicest one  
At ever lived w'iz folks  
She lets you have ze mostes fun  
An laffs at all your jokes  
I got a ol' maid auntie, too  
The worst you ever saw  
Her eyes ist bore you through and  
through—  
She ain't a bit like ma  
She's ist as slim as slim can be  
An when you want to slide  
Down on ze balusters wy she  
Says at she's harrified  
She ain't as nice as Uncle Ben  
What says at little boys  
Won't never grow to be big men  
Unless they re fond of noise  
But muvver's nicer zan 'em all  
She calls you precious lamb  
An let's you roll your ten pin ball  
An spreads your bread w'iz jam  
An when you re bad she ist looks  
sad  
You sink she's goin' to cry  
An' when she don't you re awful  
glad  
An den you re good, Oh my!

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

At night, she takes ze softest  
hand,  
An' lays it on your head,  
An' says "Be off to Sleepy-Land  
By way o' trundle-bed."

So when you fink what muvver  
knows  
An' aunts an' uncle tan't,  
It skeers a feller, ist suppose  
His muvver 'd been a aunt.

## A SONG

ON a summer's day as I sat by a  
stream,  
A dainty maid came by,  
And she blessed my sight like a  
rosy dream,  
And left me there to sigh, to  
sigh,  
And left me there to sigh, to  
sigh

On another day as I sat by the  
stream,  
This maiden paused a while,  
Then I made me bold as I told  
my dream,  
She heard it with a smile, a  
smile,  
She heard it with a smile, a  
smile

Oh, the months have fled and the  
autumn's red,  
The maid no more goes by,

For my dream came true and the  
maid I wed,  
And now no more I sigh, I  
sigh,  
And now no more I sigh.

## DAY

THE gray dawn on the mountain  
top  
Is slow to pass away.  
Still lays him by in sluggish  
dreams,  
The golden God of day

And then a light along the hills,  
Your laughter silvery gay,  
The Sun God wakes, a bluebird  
trills,  
You come and it is day

## TO DAN

STEP me now a bridal measure,  
Work give way to love and leisure,  
Hearts be free and hearts be gay —  
Doctor Dan doth wed to-day

Diagnosis, cease you! squalling —  
Check that scalpel's senseless bawl-  
ing,  
Put that ugly knife away —  
Doctor Dan doth wed to-day

'Tis no time for things unsightly,  
Life's the day and life goes lightly;  
Science lays aside her sway —  
Love rules Dr Dan to-day

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Gather gentlemen and ladies  
For the nuptial feast now made  
is  
Swing your garlands chant your  
lay  
For the pair who wed to-day

Wish them happy days and many,  
Troubles few and griefs not any  
Lift your brimming cups and say  
God bless them who wed to-day

Then a cup to Cupid daring,  
Who for conquest ever faring  
With his arrows dares assail  
E'en a doctor's coat of mail

So with blithe and happy hymning  
And with harmless goblets brim  
ming  
Dance a step — musicians play —  
Doctor Dan doth wed to day

### WHAT S THE USE

WHAT S the use o' folks a frownin'  
When the way s a little rough?  
Frowns lay out the road fur smil  
in

You'll be wrinkled soon enough  
What s the use?

What s the use o' folks a sighin' ?  
It's an awful waste o' breath  
An a body can't stand wastin'  
What he needs so bad in death  
What s the use?

What s the use o' even weepin' ?  
Might as well go long an smile  
Life our longest strongest arrow  
Only lasts a little while  
What s the use?

### A LAZY DAY

THE trees bend down along the  
stream

Where anchored swings my tiny  
boat.

The day is one to drowse and  
dream

And list the thrush's throttling  
note

When music from his bosom bleeds  
Among the river's rustling reeds

No ripple stirs the placid pool  
When my adventurous line is  
cast,

A truce to sport while clear and  
cool

The mirrored clouds slide softly  
past

The sky gives back a blue divine  
And all the world's wide wealth  
is mine

A pickerel leaps a bow of light  
The minnows shine from side to  
side

The first faint breeze comes up  
the tide —

I pause with half uplifted oar  
While night drifts down to claim  
the shore



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## ADVICE

W'EN you full o' worry  
  'Bout yo' wo'k an' sich,  
W'en you kind o' bothered  
  Case you can't get rich,  
An' yo' neighbor p'ospah  
  Past his jest desu'ts,  
An' de sneer of comerds  
  Stuhes yo' heaht an' hu'ts,  
Des don' pet yo' worries,  
  Lay 'em on de she'f,  
Tek a little trouble  
  Brothah, wid yo'se'f

Ef a frien' comes mou'nin'  
  'Bout his awful case,  
You know you don' grieve him  
  Wid a gloomy face,  
But you wrassle wid him,  
  Try to tek him in,  
Dough hit cracks yo' features,  
  Law, you smile lak sin,  
Ain't you good ez he is?  
  Don' you pine to def,  
Tek a little trouble  
  Brothah, wid yo'se'f

Ef de chillun pestahs,  
  An' de baby's bad,  
Ef yo' wife gits narvous,  
  An' you're gettin' mad,  
Des you grab yo' boot-strops,  
  Hol' yo' body down,  
Stop a-tinkin' cuss-w'rds,  
  Chase away de frown,  
Knock de haid o' worry,  
  Twell dey ain' none lef';

Tek a little trouble,  
  Brothah, wid yo'se'f.

## LIMITATIONS

Er you's only got de powah fe' to  
  blow a little whistle,  
  Keep ermong de people wid de  
  whistles  
Ef you don't, you'll fin' out sho'tly  
  dat you's th'owed yo' fines'  
  feelin'  
  In a place dat's all a bed o' this-  
  tles.

'Tain't no use a-goin' now, ez  
  sho's you bo'n,  
A-squeakin' of yo' whistle 'g'inst  
  a gread big ho'n

Ef you ain't got but a teenchy bit  
  o' victuals on de table,  
  Whut' de use a-claimin' hit's a  
  feas'?

Fe' de folks is mighty 'spicious,  
  an' dey's ap' to come a-  
  peerin',

  Lookin' fe' de scraps you lef'  
  at leas'.

W'en de meal's a-hidin' f'om de  
  meal-bin's top,  
You needn't talk to hide it, ef you  
  sta'ts, des stop

Ef yo' min' kin only carry half a  
  pint o' common idees,  
  Don' go roun' a-sayin' hit's a  
  bar'l,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

C1 se de people gwine to test you  
an dey ll fin out you s  
a lyn  
Den dey ll twis yo sayin s in a  
snarl  
Wuss ting in de country dat I  
evah hyahed —  
A crow dot sit a squawkin Is  
a mockin bird

### A GOLDEN DAY

I FOUND you and I lost you  
All on a gleaming day  
The day was filled with sunshine  
And the land was full of May

A golden bird was singing  
Its melody divine  
I found you and I loved you  
And all the world was mine

I found you and I lost you  
All on a golden day  
But when I dream of you dear  
It is always brimming May

### THE UNLUCKY APPLE

TWAS the apple that in Eden  
Caused our father s primal fall  
And the Trojan War remem  
ber —

Tw as an apple caused it all  
So for weeks I ve hesitated  
You can guess the reason why  
For I want to tell my darling  
She s the apple of my eye

### THE DISCOVERY

THESE are the days of elf s and  
fays  
Who says that with the dreams of  
myth  
These imps and elves disport them  
selves?  
Ah no along the paths of song  
Do all the tiny folk belong

Round all our homes  
Kobolds and gnomes do daily cling  
Then nightly fling their lanterns  
out  
And shout on shout they join the  
rout  
And sing and sing within the  
sweet enchanted ring

Where gleamed the guile of moon  
light s smile  
Once paused I listening for a  
while  
And heard the lay unknown by  
day —  
The fairies dancing roundelay

Queen Mab was there her shum  
mering hair  
Each fairy prince s heart s despair  
She smiled to see their sparkling  
glee  
And once I ween she smiled at me  
Since when you may by night or  
day  
Dispute the sway of elf folk gay,  
But hear me stay!

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

I've learned the way to find Queen  
Mab and elf and fay.

Where e'er by streams, the moon-  
light gleams,  
Or on a meadow softly beams,  
There, footing round on dew-lit  
ground,  
The fairy folk may all be found

### MORNING

THE mist has left the greening  
plain,  
The dew-drops shine like fairy  
rain,  
The coquette rose awakes again  
Her lovely self adorning  
The Wind is hiding in the trees,  
A sighing, soothing, laughing  
tease,  
Until the rose says "Kiss me,  
please,"

'Tis morning, 'tis morning

With staff in hand and careless-  
free,  
The wanderer fares right jauntily,  
For towns and houses are, thinks  
he,

For scorning, for scorning  
My soul is swift upon the wing,  
And in its deeps a song I bring,  
Come, Love, and we together sing,  
" 'Tis morning, 'tis morning "

### THE AWAKENING

I DID not know that life could be  
so sweet,  
I did not know the hours could  
speed so fleet,  
Till I knew you, and life was sweet  
again  
The days grew brief with love  
and lack of pain —

I was a slave a few short days  
ago,  
The powers of Kings and Princes  
now I know,  
I would not be again in bondage,  
save  
I had your smile, the liberty I  
crave

### LOVE'S DRAFT

THE draft of love was cool and  
sweet

You gave me in the cup,  
But, ah, love's fire is keen and  
fleet,  
And I am burning up

Unless the tears I shed for you  
Shall quench this burning flame,  
It will consume me through and  
through,  
And leave but ash—a name

# PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

## A MUSICAL

OUTSIDE the rain upon the street  
The sky all grim of hue  
Inside the music painful sweet  
And yet I heard but you

As is a thrilling violin,  
So is your voice to me  
And still above the other strains  
It sang in ecstasy

## TWELL DE NIGHT IS PAS

ALL de night long twell de moon  
goes down  
Lovin I set at huh feet  
Den fu' de long journey back  
fom de town  
Had but de dreams mek it  
sweet

All de night long twell de break of  
de day  
Dreamin agin in my sleep  
Mandy comes drivin my sorriers  
away  
Axin me Wha' fu you  
weep?

All de day long twell de sun goes  
down  
Smilin I ben to my hoe  
Fu dough de weddah git nasty an  
frown  
One place I know I kin go

All my life long twell de night has  
pas'

Let de wok come ez it will,  
So dat I fin you my honey, at las  
Somewaih des ovah de hill

## BLUE

STANDIN at de winder,  
Feelin kind o glum  
Listenin to de raindrops  
Play de kettle drum,  
Lookin crost de medders  
Swimmin lak a sea  
Lawd a mussy on us  
What s de good o me?

Can t go out a hoein  
Wouldn t ef I could  
Groun too wet fu huntin'  
Fishin ain t no good  
Too much noise fo' sleepin  
No one hyeah to chat  
Des mus stan an listen  
To dat pit a pat

Hills is gittin misty  
Valley s gittin dahk  
Watch dogs mence a howlin  
Rathah have em brik  
Dan a moanin solemn  
Somewaih out o sight  
Rain crow des a chucklin —  
Dis is his delight

Mandy bring my banjo,  
Bring de chillen in,

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Come in f'om de kitchen,  
I feel sick ez sin  
Call in Uncle Isaac,  
Call Aunt Hannah, too,  
Tain't no use in talkin',  
Chile, I's sholy blue

### DREAMIN' TOWN

COME away to dreamin' town,  
Mandy Lou, Mandy Lou,  
Whaih de skies don' nevah frown,  
Mandy Lou,  
Whaih he streets is paved with  
gol',  
Whaih de days is nevah col',  
An' no sheep strays f'om de fol',  
Mandy Lou

Ain't you tiahed of every day,  
Mandy Lou, Mandy Lou,  
Tek my han' an' come away,  
Mandy Lou,  
To the place whaih dreams is  
King,  
Whaih my heart hol's everything,  
An' my soul can allus sing,  
Mandy Lou

Come away to dream wid me,  
Mandy Lou, Mandy Lou,  
Whaih our hands an' hea'ts are  
free,  
Mandy Lou,  
Whaih de sands is shinin' white,  
Whaih de rivahs glistens bright,  
Mandy Lou.

Come away to dreamland town,  
Mandy Lou, Mandy Lou,  
Whaih de fruit is bendin' down,  
Des fu' you  
Smooth your brow of lovin' brown,  
An' my love will be its crown,  
Come away to dreamin' town,  
Mandy Lou.

### AT NIGHT

WHUT time 'd dat clock strike?  
Nine? No — eight,  
I didn't think hit was so late  
Aer chew! I must 'a' got a cough,  
I raally b'lieve I did doze off —  
Hit's mighty soothin' to de tiah,  
A-dozin' dis way by de fiah,  
Oo oom — hit feels so good to  
stretch  
I sutny is one weary wretch!  
Look hyeah, dat boy done gone to  
sleep!  
He des ain't wo'th his boa'd an'  
keep,  
I des don't b'lieve he'd bat his  
eyes  
If Gab'el called him fo'm de  
skies!  
But sleepin's good dey ain't no  
doubt —  
Dis pipe o' mine is done gone  
out  
Don't bu'n a minute, bless my soul,  
Des please to han' me dat ah  
coal

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

You 'Lias git up now, my son  
Seems lak my nap is des begun  
You sutny mus ma k down de day  
W en I treats comp'ny dis away!  
W y, Brother Jones, dat drowse  
come on  
An laws! I dremp dat you was  
gone!  
You Lias, whaih yo mannahs  
suh  
To hyeah me call an' nevah  
stuh!

To morrer mo nin w en I call  
Dat boy ll be sleepin to beat all  
Don t mek no diffunce how I roah  
He ll des lay up an sno and  
sno  
Now boy you done hyeahed whut  
I said  
You bettah tek yo se f yo baid  
Case ef you gits me good an  
wrong  
I ll mek dat sno a diffunt song

Dis wood fiah is invitin dho  
Hit seems to wa m de ve y flo —  
An nuffin aint a whit ez sweet  
Ez settin toastin of yo feet  
Hit mek you drowsy too but La!  
Hyeah Lias don t you hyeah  
yo ma?

Ef I gits sta ted f om dis cheah  
I lay you scamp, I ll mek you  
heah!

To-morrer mo nin' I kin bawl  
Tw ell all de neighbohs hyeah  
me call,

An you ll be snoozin des ez deep  
Ez if de dny was made fu sleep,  
Hit s funny when you got a cough  
Somehow yo voice seems too fu  
off —  
Can t wake dat boy fu' all I say  
I reckon he ll sleep daih tw ell  
day!

### KIDNAPED

I HELD my heart so far from harm,  
I let it wander far and free  
In mead and mart without alarm,  
Assured it must come back to  
me

And all went well till on a day  
Learned Dr Cupid wandered  
by  
A search along our sylvan way  
For some peculiar butterfly

A flash of wings a hurried dive  
A flutter and a short lived flit,  
This Scientist as I am alive  
Had seen my heart and captured  
it

Right tightly now tis held among  
The specimens that he has  
trapped  
And sings (Oh, love is ever  
young),  
'Tis passing sweet to be kid  
naped

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## COMPENSATION

BECAUSE I had loved so deeply,  
Because I had loved so long,  
God in His great compassion  
Gave me the gift of song

Because I have loved so vainly,  
And sung with such faltering  
breath,  
The Master in infinite mercy  
Offers the boon of Death.

## WINTER'S APPROACH

DE sun hit shine an' de win' hit  
blow,

Ol' Brer Rabbit be a-layin' low,  
He know dat de wintah time  
a-comin',

De huntah man he walk an' wait,  
He walk right by Brer Rabbit's  
gate —  
He know —

De dog he lick his sliverin' chop,  
An' he tongue 'gin' his mouf go  
flop, flop —

He —

He rub his nose fu' to clah his  
scent  
So's to tell w'ich way dat cotton-  
tail went,

He —

De huntah's wife she set an' spin  
A good wahn coat fu' to wrop him  
in  
She —

She look at de skillet an' she smile,  
oh my !  
An' ol' Brer Rabbit got to sholy  
fly  
Dey know.

## ANCHORED

Ir thro' the sea of night which  
here surrounds me,

I could swim out beyond the  
farthest star,

Break every barrier of circumstance  
that bounds me,

And greet the Sun of sweeter  
life afar,

Tho' near you there is passion,  
grief, and sorrow,

And out there rest and joy and  
peace and all,

I should renounce that beckoning  
for to-morrow,

I could not choose to go beyond ,  
your call

## THE VETERAN

UNDERNEATH the autumn sky,  
Haltingly, the lines go by.

Ah, would steps were blithe and  
gay,

As when first they marched away,  
Smile on lip and curl on brow,—  
Only white-faced gray-beards now,  
Standing on life's outer verge,  
E'en the marches sound a dirge.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Blow, you bugles, play you fife,  
Rattle, drums for dearest life  
Let the flags wave freely o  
As the marching legions go  
Shout hurrah and laugh and jest,  
This is memory at its best  
(Did you notice at your quip,  
That old comrade's quivering lip?)

Ah, I see them as they come,  
Stumbling with the rumbling  
drum,

But a sight more sad to me  
Even than these ranks could be  
Was that one with cane upraised  
Who stood by and gazed and  
gazed,

Trembling solemn, lips com-  
pressed,  
Longing to be with the rest

Did he dream of old alarms  
As he stood 'presented arms' ?  
Did he think of field and camp  
And the unremitting tramp  
Mile on mile—the lonely guard  
When he kept his midnight ward?  
Did he dream of wounds and scars  
In that bitter war of wars?

What of that? He stood and  
stands

In my memory—trembling hands  
Whitened beard and cane and all  
As if waiting for the call  
Once again 'To arms, my sons,'

And his ears hear far off guns,  
Roll of cannon and the tread  
Of the legions of the Dead!

### YESTERDAY AND TO MORROW

YESTERDAY I held your hand  
Reverently I pressed it  
And its gentle yieldingness  
From my soul I blessed it

But to day I sit alone  
Sad and sore repining  
Must our gold forever know  
Flames for the refining?

Yesterday I walked with you  
Could a day be sweeter?  
Life was all a lyric song  
Set to tricky meter

Ah to day is like a dirge—  
Place my arms around you  
Let me feel the same dear joy  
As when first I found you

Let me once retrace my steps  
From these roads unpleasant  
Let my heart and mind and soul  
All ignore the present

Yesterday the iron seared  
And to day means sorrow  
Pause, my soul arise arise  
Look where gleams the morrow



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## THE CHANGE

LOVE used to carry a bow, you  
    know,  
But now he carries a taper,  
It is either a length of wax aglow,  
Or a twist of lighted paper

I pondered a little about the scamp,  
And then I decided to follow  
His wandering journey to field and  
    camp,  
Up hill, down dale or hollow

I dogged the rollicking, gay, young  
    blade  
In every species of weather,  
Till, leading me straight to the  
    home of a maid  
He left us there together

And then I saw it, oh, sweet sur-  
    prise,  
The taper it set a-burning  
The love-light brimming my lady's  
    eyes,  
And my heart with the fire of  
    yearning.

## THE CHASE

THE wind told the little leaves to  
    hurry,  
And chased them down the way,  
While the mother tree laughed  
    loud in glee,  
For she thought her babes at  
    play.

The cruel wind and the rain  
    laughed loudly,  
We'll bury them deep, they said,  
And the old tree grieves, and the  
    little leaves  
Lie low, all chilled and dead

## SUPPOSE

If 'twere fair to suppose  
    That your heart were not taken,  
That the dew from the rose  
    Petals still were not shaken,  
I should pluck you,  
    Howe'er you should thorn me  
    and scorn me,  
And wear you for life as the green  
    of the bower

If 'twere fair to suppose  
    That that road was for va-  
    grants,  
That the wind and the rose,  
    Counted all in their fragrance,  
Oh, my dear one,  
    By love, I should take you and  
    make you,  
The green of my life from the  
    scintillant hour

## THE DEATH OF THE FIRST BORN

COVER him over with daisies white  
And eke with the poppies red,  
Sit with me here by his couch to-  
    night,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

For the First Born, Love, is  
dead

Poor little fellow, he seemed so  
fair

As he lay in my jealous arms,  
Silent and cold he is lying there  
Stripped of his darling charms

Lusty and strong he had grown  
forsooth

Sweet with an infinite grace  
Proud in the force of his conquer-  
ing youth  
Laughter alight in his face

Oh but the blast, it was cruel and  
keen

And ah but the chill it was rare  
The look of the winter-kissed  
flow'r you've seen  
When meadows and fields were  
bare

Can you not wake from this white,  
cold sleep

And speak to me once again?  
True that your slumber is deep  
so deep,  
But deeper by far is my pain

Cover him over with daisies white  
And eke with the poppies red  
Sit with me here by his couch to  
night

For the First Born, Love is  
dead

## BEIN BACK HOME

HOME agin an' home to stay —

Yes, it's nice to be away  
Plenty things to do an see  
But the old place seems to me  
Jest about the proper thing  
Mebbe ts cause the mem'ries  
cling

Closer round yore place o birth  
'N any other spot on earth

W y it's nice jest settin here  
Lookin out an seein clear,  
Thout no smoke, ner dust ner  
haze

In these sweet October days  
What s as good as that there lane  
Kind o browned from last night s  
rain?

Pears like home has got the start  
When the goals a feller s heart

What s as good as that there jay  
Screechin up ards towards the  
gray

Skies? An tell me what s as fine  
As that full leafed pumpkin vine?  
Tow rin buildin s — yes, they re  
good

But in sight o field and wood  
Then a feller understan s  
Bout the house not made with  
han s

Let the others rant an' roam  
When they git away from home  
Jest gi me my old settee

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

An' my pipe beneath a tree,  
Sight o' medders green an' still,  
Now and then a gentle hill,  
Apple orchards, full o' fruit,  
Nigh a cider press to boot —

That's the thing jest done up  
brown,

D'want to be too nigh to town,  
Want to have the smells an' sights,  
An' the dreams o' long still nights,  
With the friends you used to know  
In the keerless long ago —  
Same old cronies, same old folks,  
Same old cider, same old jokes.

Say, it's nice a-gittin' back,  
When yore pulse is growin' slack,  
An' yore breath begins to wheeze  
Like a fair-set valley breeze,  
Kind o' nice to set aroun'  
On the old familiar groun',  
Knowin' that when Death does  
come,  
That he'll find you right at home.

### THE OLD CABIN

IN de dead of night I sometimes,  
Git to t'inkin' of de pas'  
An' de days w'en slavery helt me  
In my mis'ry — ha'd an' fas'  
Dough de time was mighty tryin',  
In dese houahs somehow hit  
seem

Dat a brightah light come slippin'  
Thoo de kivahs of my dream.

An' my min' fu'gits de whuppins  
Drap de feah o' block an' lash  
An' flies straight to somep'n' joy-  
ful

In a secon's lightnin' flash.

Den hit seems I see a vision

Of a dearah long ago  
Of de childern tumblin' roun' me  
By my rough ol' cabin do'

Talk about yo' go'geous mansions  
An' yo' big house great an'  
gran',

Des bring up de fines' palace  
Dat you know in all de lan'.

But dey's somep'n' dearah to me,  
Somep'n' faihah to my eyes  
In dat cabin, less you bring me  
To yo' mansion in de skies.

I kin see de light a-shinin'  
Thoo de chinks atween de logs,  
I kin hyeah de way-off bayin'  
Of my mastah's huntin' dogs,  
An' de neighin' of de hosses  
Stampin' on de ol' bahn flo',  
But above dese soun's de laughin'  
At my deah ol' cabin do'.

We would gethah dah at evenin',  
All my frien's 'ud come erroun'  
An' hit wan't no time, twell, bless  
you,

You could hyeah de banjo's  
soun'.

You could see de dahkies dancin'  
Pigeon wing an' heel an' toe —

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Joyous times I tell you people  
Roun dat same ol cabin do

But at times my toughts gits sad  
dah,

Ez I riccolec de folks  
An dey frolickin an' talkin  
Wid dey laughin an dey jokes  
An hit hu ts me wen I membahs  
Dat I ll nevah see no mo  
Dem ah faces gethered smilin  
Roun dat po ol cabin do

### DESPAIR

LET me close the eyes of my soul  
That I may not see  
What stands between thee and me

Let me shut the ears of my heart  
That I may not hear  
A voice that drowns yours my  
dear

Let me cut the cords of my life,  
Of my desolate being  
Since cursed is my hearing and see  
ing

### CIRCUMSTANCES ALTER CASES

TIM Murphy's gon walkin wid  
Maggie O'Neill  
O chone!

If I was her muther I'd frown  
on sich foolin  
O chone!

I m sure it s unmotherlike, darin'  
an wrong

To let a gyru! hear tell the sass an  
the song

Of every young felly that happens  
along  
O chone!

An' Murphy the things that s  
ben sed of his doin ,  
O chone!

'Tis a cud that no dacent folks  
wants to be chewin ,  
O chone!

If he came to my door wid his  
cane on a twirl

Fur to thry to make love to you,  
Biddy my girl,

Ah wouldn't I send him away  
wid a whirl  
O chone!

They say the gossoon is indecent  
and dirty,  
O chone!

In spite of his dressin so  
O chone!

Let him dress up ez foine ez a  
king or a queen

Let him put on more wrinkles  
than ever was seen,

You'll be sure he s no match for  
my little colleen  
O chone!

Faith the two is comin' back an  
their walk is all over,  
O chone!

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

'Twas a pretty short walk fur to  
take wid a lover,

O chone!

Why, I believe that Tim Mur-  
phy's a kumin' this way,

Ah, Biddy jest look at him steppin'  
so gay,

I'd niver belave what the gos-  
sipers say,

O chone!

He's turned in the gate an' he's  
coming a-caperin',

O chone!

Go, Biddy, go quick an' put on a  
clane aporn,

O chone!

Be quick as ye kin fur he's right at  
the dure;

Come in, master Tim, fur ye're  
welcome I'm shure.

We were talkin' o' ye jest a minute  
before.

O chone!

### TILL THE WIND GETS RIGHT

OH the breeze is blowin' balmy

An the sun is in a haze,

There's a cloud jest givin' coolness  
To the laziest of days.

There are crowds upon the lake-  
side,

But the fish refuse to bite,

So I'll wait and go a-fishin'

When the wind gets right.

Now my boat tugs at her anchor,

Eager now to kiss the spray,

While the little waves are callin'

Drowsy sailor come away,

There's a harbor for the happy,

And its sheen is just in sight,

But I won't set sail to get there,

Till the wind gets right.

That's my trouble, too, I reckon,

I've been waitin' all too long,

Tho' the days were always

Still the wind is always wrong

An' when Gabriel blows his trum-  
pet,

In the day o' in the night,

I will still be found waitin',

Till the wind gets right.

### A SUMMER NIGHT

SUMMAH is de lovin' time —

Do' keer what you say.

Night is allus peait an' prime,

Bettah dan de day.

Do de day is sweet an' good,

Birds a-singin' fine,

Pines a-smellin' in de wood,—

But de night is mine.

Rivah whisperin' "howdy do,"

Ez it pass you by —

Moon a-lookin' down at you,

Winkin' on de sly.

Frogs a-croakin' f'om de pon',

Singin' bass dey fill,

An' you listen way beyon'

Ol' man whippo'will.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Hush up honey tek my han'  
Mek yo footsteps light  
Somep n' kin' o hol's de lan  
On a summah night  
Somep n dat you nevah sees  
An you nevah hyeahs  
But you feels it in de breeze,  
Somep'n nigh to teahs

Somep n nigh to teahs? dat s so  
But hit s nigh to smiles  
An you feels it ez you go  
Down de shinin' miles  
Tek my han my little dove  
Hush an' come erway —  
Summah is de time fu' love  
Night time beats de day!

### AT SUNSET TIME

ADOWN the west a golden glow  
Sinks burning in the sea  
And all the dreams of long ago  
Come flooding back to me  
The past has writ a story strange  
Upon my aching heart  
But time has wrought a subtle  
change  
My wounds have ceased to  
smart

No more the quick delight of  
youth  
No more the sudden pain,  
I look no more for trust or truth  
Where greed may compass gain

What, was it I who bared my  
heart  
Through unrelenting years  
And knew the sting of misery's  
dart  
The tang of sorrow's tears?

Tis better now I do not weep,  
I do not laugh nor care  
My soul and spirit half asleep  
Drift aimless everywhere  
We float upon a sluggish stream  
We ride no rapids mad  
While life is all a tempered dream  
And every joy half sad

### NIGHT

SILENCE and whirling worlds afar  
Through all encircling skies  
What floods come o'er the spirit's  
bar,  
What wondrous thoughts arise

The earth, a mantle falls away,  
And winged we leave the sod  
Where shines in its eternal sway  
The majesty of God

### AT LOAFING HOLT

SINCE I left the city's heat  
For this sylvan cool retreat,  
High upon the hill side here  
Where the air is clean and clear  
I have lost the urban ways

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Mine are calm and tranquil days,  
Sloping lawns of green are mine,  
Clustered treasures of the vine,  
Long forgotten plants I know,  
Where the best wild berries grow,  
Where the greens and grasses  
sprout,

When the elders blossom out  
Now I am grown weather-wise  
With the lore of winds and skies  
Mine the song whose soft refrain  
Is the sigh of summer rain  
Seek you where the woods are cool,  
Would you know the shady pool  
Where, throughout the lazy day,  
Speckled beauties drowse or play?  
Would you find in rest or peace  
Sorrow's permanent release? —  
Leave the city, grim and gray,  
Come with me, ah, come away  
Do you fear the winter chill,  
Deep's of snow upon the hill?  
'Tis a mantle, kind and warm,  
Shielding tender shoots from harm  
Do you dread the ice-clad  
streams,—

They are mirrors for your dreams  
Here's a rouse, when summer's  
past

To the raging winter's blast  
Let him roar and let him rout,  
We are armored for the bout.  
How the logs are glowing, see!  
Who sings louder, they or he?  
Could the city be more gay?  
Burn your bridges! Come away!

### WHEN A FELLER'S ITCHIN' TO BE SPANKED

W'EN us fellers stomp around,  
makin' lots o' noise,  
Gramma says, "There's certain  
times come to little boys  
W'en they need a shingle or the  
soft side of a plank,"  
She says "we're a-itchin' for a  
right good spank"

An' she says, "Now thes you  
wait,

It's a-comin'—soon or late,  
W'en a feller's itchin' fer a spank"

W'en a feller's out o' school, you  
know how he feels,  
Gramma says we wriggle 'roun'  
like a lot o' eels

W'y it's like a man that's thes  
home from out o' jail  
What's the use o' scoldin' if we  
pull Tray's tail?

Gramma says, tho', "Thes you  
wait,

It's a-comin'—soon or late,  
You'se the boys that's itchin' to  
be spanked"

Cats is funny creatures an' I like  
to make 'em yowl,

Gramma alwus looks at me with  
a awful scowl

An' she says, "Young gentlemen,  
mamma should be thanked  
Ef you'd get your knickerbockers  
right well spanked."

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

An she says 'Now thes you wait It's a comin'—soon or late " Wen a feller s itchin to be spanked  Ef you fin the days is gettin awful hot in school An you know a swimmin place where it s nice and cool Er you know a cat fish hole brim min full o fish Whose a goin to set around school and wish? Tain t no use to hide your bait It s a comin —soon or late Wen a feller s itchin to be spanked  Ol folks know most ever thing bout the world I guess Gramma does we wish she knowed thes a little less But I alvus kind o think it ud be as well Ef they wouldn t alvus have to up an tell, We kids wish at they d thes wait It s a comin —soon or late Wen a feller s itchin to be spanked	By the side of the stream, As long as the river runs  It seems all so pleasant and cheery — No thought of the morrow is theirs And their faces are bright With the sun of delight And they dream of no night brooding cares  The women wear garlanded tresses The men have rings on their hands And they sing in their glee For they think they are free — They that know not the treacher ous sands  Ah but this be a venturesome jour ney Forever those sands are ashift, And a step to one side Means a grasp of the tide And the current is fearful and swift  For once in the river of ruin What boots it, to do or to dare, For down we must go In the turbulent flow To the desolate sea of Despair
---	---

### THE RIVER OF RUIN

ALONG by the river of ruin  
They dally — the thoughtless ones,  
They dance and they dream



# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## TO HER

YOUR presence like a benison to  
me

Wakes my sick soul to dreamful  
ecstasy,

I fancy that some old Arabian  
night

Saw you my hour and my heart's  
delight

And wandering forth beneath the  
passionate moon,

Your love-strung zither and my  
soul in tune,

We knew the joy, the haunting of  
the pain

That like a flame thrills  
through me now again.

To-night we sit where sweet the  
spice winds blow,

A wind the northland lacks and  
ne'er shall know,

With clasped hands and spirits all  
aglow

As in Arabia in the long ago.

## A LOVE LETTER

OH, I des received a letter f'om de  
sweetest little gal;

Oh, my, oh, my

She's my lovely little sweetheart  
an' her name is Sal.

Oh, my, oh, my.

She writes me dat she loves me an'  
she loves me true,

She wonders ef I'll tell huh dat

I loves huh, too,

An' my heaht's so full o' music dat

I do' know what to do,

Oh, my, oh, my

I got a man to read it an' he read  
it fine,

Oh, my; oh, my.

Dey ain' no use denying dat her  
love is mine,

Oh, my, oh, my

But hyeah's de t'ing dat's puttin'  
me in such a awful plight,

I t'ink of huh at mornin' an' I  
dream of huh at night,

But how's I gwine to cou't huh  
w'en I do' know how to  
write?

Oh, my, oh, my

My heaht is bubblin' ovah wid de  
t'ings I want to say,

Oh, my, oh, my.

An' dey's lots of folks to copy  
what I tell 'em fu' de pay,

Oh, my, oh, my

But dey's t'ings dat I's a-t'inkin'  
dat is only fu' huh ears,

An' I couldn't lu'n to write 'em ef  
I took a dozen years,

So to go down daih an' tell huh  
is de only way, it 'pears,

Oh, my, oh, my

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

### AFTER MANY DAYS

I've always been a faithful man  
An tried to live for duty  
But the stringent mode of life  
Has somewhat lost its beauty

The story of the generous bread  
He sent upon the waters  
Which after many days returns  
To trusting sons and daughters,

Had oft impressed me, so I want  
My soul influenced by it  
And bought a loaf of bread and  
sought  
A stream where I could try it

I cast my bread upon the waves  
And fancied then to await it  
It had not floated far away  
When a fish came up and ate it

And if I want both fish and bread  
And surely both I'm wanting,  
About the only way I see  
Is for me to go fishing

### LIZA MAY

Little brown face full of smiles  
And a baby's guileless wiles  
Liza May Liza May

Eyes a peeping thro' the fence  
With an interest intense  
Liza May

Ah, the gate is just ajar,  
And the meadow is not far,  
Liza May Liza May

And the road feels very sweet,  
To your little toddling feet,  
Liza May

Ah, you roguish runaway,  
What will toiling mother say  
Liza May, Liza May?

What care you who smile to greet  
Everyone you chance to meet,  
Liza May?

Soft the mill race sings its song  
Just a little way along  
Liza May, Liza May

But the song is full of guile  
Turn ah turn your steps the  
while  
Liza May

You have caught the gleam and  
glow  
Where the darkling waters flow  
Liza May, Liza May

Flash of ripple bend of bough  
Where are all the angels now?  
Liza May

Now a mother's eyes intense  
Gazing o'er a shabby fence  
Liza May Liza May

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Then a mother's anguished face  
Peering all around the place,  
Liza May.

Hear the agonizing call  
For a mother's all in all,  
Liza May, Liza May.

Hear a mother's maddened prayer  
To the calm unanswering air,  
Liza May

What's become of — Liza May?  
What has darkened all the day?  
Liza May, Liza May.

Ask the waters dark and fleet,  
If they know the smiling, sweet  
Liza May.

Call her, call her as you will,  
On the meadow, on the hill,  
Liza May, Liza May.

Through the brush or beaten track  
Echo only gives you back,  
Liza May

Ah, but you were loving — sweet,  
On your little toddling feet,  
Liza May, Liza May.

But through all the coming years,  
Must a mother breathe with tears,  
Liza May.

### THE MASTERS

Oh, who is the Lord of the land of  
life,

When hotly goes the fray?  
When, fierce we smile in the midst  
of strife  
Then whom shall we obey?

Oh, Love is the Lord of the land  
of life

Who holds a monarch's sway,  
He wends with wish of maid and  
wife,  
And him you must obey

Then who is the Lord of the land  
of life,

At setting of the sun?  
Whose word shall sway when  
Peace is rife  
And all the fray is done?

Then Death is the Lord of the  
land of life,

When your hot race is run  
Meet then his scythe and pruning-  
knife  
When the fray is lost or won.

### TROUBLE IN DE KITCHEN

DEY was oncet a awful quail  
'twixt de skillet an' de pot,  
De pot was des a-bilin' an' de skil-  
let sho' was hot  
Dey slurred each othah's colah an'  
dey called each othah names,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Wile de coal oil can des gu gled,  
po in oil erpon de flames

De pot, hit called de skillet des a  
flat disfiggered ting  
An de skillet plied dat all de pot  
could do was set an sing  
An he lowed dat dey was lusions  
dat he wouldn't stoop to mek  
'Case he reckernize his juty, an' he  
had too much at steak

Well at dis de pot biled ovah case  
his tempah gittin highah,  
An' 'de skillet got to sputterin  
den de fat was in de fiah  
Mistah fiah lay daih smokin an  
a tinkin to hisse f  
Wile de peppah box us nudgin of  
de gingah on de she f

Den dey all des lei hit to 'im,  
bout de trouble an de talk  
An' howevah he decided w y dey  
bofe u d walk de chalk  
But de fiah uz so sgusted how dey  
quoil an dey shout  
Dat he cooled em off I reckon  
wen he puffed an' des went  
out

### CHRISTMAS

STEP wid de banjo an glide wid  
de fiddle  
Dis ain no time fu to pottah  
an piddle

Fu' Christmas is comin', it's right  
on de way

An dey s houahs to dance 'fo  
de break o de day

What if de win' is tain' an'  
whistlin'?

Look at dat fiah how hit s  
spittin' an bristlin !

Heat in de ashes an heat in de  
cinderhs

Ol' mistah Fros kin des look  
thoo de windahs

Heat up de toddy an' pas' de wa m  
glasses,

Don stop to shivah at blowin s  
an blas es

Keep on de little an keep it a  
hummin

Eat all an drink all dey s lots  
mo' a comin

Look hyeah, Maria don't open  
dat oven

Want all dese people a pushin  
an shovin'?

Res' fom de dance? Yes you  
done cotch dat odah,

Mammy done cotch it an law!  
hit nigh flo d huh

'Possum is monstous fu mekin  
folks fin it!

Come draw yo cheers up I s  
sho I do min it

Eat up dem critters you men folks  
an wimmens

Possums ain' skace wen dey s  
lots o pu simmons

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## ROSES AND PEARLS

YOUR spoken words are roses fine  
and sweet,  
The songs you sing are perfect  
pearls of sound  
How lavish nature is about your  
feet,  
To scatter flowers and jewels both  
around.

Blushing the stream of petal beauty  
flows,  
Softly the white strings trickle  
down and shine.  
Oh! speak to me, my love, I crave  
a rose.  
Sing me a song, for, I would pearls  
were mine.

## RAIN-SONGS

THE rain streams down like harp-  
strings from the sky,  
The wind, that world-old  
harpist sitteth by;  
And ever as he sings his low re-  
frain,  
He plays upon the harp-strings  
of the rain

## A LOST DREAM

AH, I have changed, I do not  
know  
Why lonely hours affect me so.

In days of yore, this were not wont,  
No loneliness my soul could daunt.

For me too serious for my age,  
The weighty tome of hoary sage,  
Until with puzzled heart astir,  
One God-giv'n night, I dreamed  
of her.

I loved no woman, hardly knew  
More of the sex that strong men  
woo  
Than cloistered monk within his  
cell;  
But now the dream is lost, and hell  
Holds me her captive tight and  
fast  
Who prays and struggles for the  
past  
No living maid has charmed my  
eyes,  
But now, my soul is wonder-wise

For I have dreamed of her and  
seen  
Her red-brown tresses' ruddy  
sheen,  
Have known her sweetness, lip to  
lip,  
The joy of her companionship

When days were bleak and winds  
were rude,  
She shared my smiling solitude,  
And all the bare hills walked with  
me  
To hearken winter's melody.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

And when the spring came o'er the  
land

We fared together hand in hand  
Beneath the linden's leafy screen  
That waved above us faintly  
green

In summer, by the river-side  
Our souls were kindred with the  
tide

That floated onward to the sea  
As we swept toward Eternity

The bird's call and the water's  
drone  
Were all for us and us alone  
The water fall that sang all night  
Was her companion my delight

And even the squirrel, as he sped  
Along the branches overhead,  
Half kindly and half envious  
Would chatter at the joy of us

'Twas but a dream, her face, her  
hair,  
The spring time sweet, the winter  
bare  
The summer when the woods we  
ranged —  
'Twas but a dream, but all is  
changed

Yes, all is changed and all has  
fled

The dream is broken shattered  
dead

And yet sometimes I pray to know  
How just a dream could hold me  
so

### A SONG

THOU art the soul of a summer's  
day

Thou art the breath of the rose  
But the summer is fled  
And the rose is dead

Where are they gone who know's  
who know's?

Thou art the blood of my heart o  
hearts

Thou art my soul's repose  
But my heart grows numb  
And my soul is dumb

Where art thou love, who know's  
who know's?

Thou art the hope of my after  
years —

Sun for my winter snows  
But the years go by  
'Neath a clouded sky

Where shall we meet who know's,  
who know's?



## MISCELLANEOUS





## THE CAPTURE

DUCK come switchin cross de lot

Hi oh Miss Lady!

Hurry up an hide de pot

Hi oh Miss Lady!

Ducks a mighty spicious fowl,

Slick as snake an wise as owl,

Hol' dat dog don t let him yowl!

Hi oh Miss Lady!

Th ow dat co n out kind o slow

Hi oh Miss Lady!

Keep yo se f behin de do

Hi oh Miss Lady!

Lots o' food ll kill his feah

Co n is cheap but fowls is deah —

“Come good ducky, come on  
heah

Hi, oh Miss Lady!

Ain t he fat and ain t he fine

Hi oh Miss Lady!

Des can t wait to make him  
mine

Hi oh Miss Lady!

See him waddle when he walk

Sh! keep still and don t you talk!

Got you! Don t you daih to  
squawk!

Hi oh, Miss Lady!

## WHEN WINTER DARKEN ING ALL AROUND

WHEN winter covering all the  
ground

Hides every sign of Spring sir  
However you may look around  
Pray what will then you sing  
sir?

The Spring was here last year I  
know

And many bards did flute sir  
I shall not fear a little snow  
Forbid me from my lute sir

If words grow dull and rhymes  
grow rare

I ll sing of Spring s farewell ir  
For every serson steals in air  
Which has a Springtime smell  
sir

But if upon the other side  
With passionate longing burn  
ing

Will seek the half unjeweled tide  
And sing of Spring s returning

## FROM THE PORCH AT RUNNYMEDE

I STAND above the city s rush and  
din

And gaze far down with calm  
and undimmed eyes

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

To where the misty smoke wreath  
    grey and dim  
Above the myriad roofs and  
    spires rise,

Still is my heart and vacant is my  
    breath —

    This lovely view is breath and  
    life to me,

Why I could charm the icy soul  
    of death

    With such a sight as this I stand  
    and see

I hear no sound of labor's din or  
    stir,

    I feel no weight of worldly  
    cares or fears,

Sweet song of birds, of wings the  
    soothing whirl,

    These sounds alone assail my  
    listening ears

Unwhipt of conscience here I  
    stand alone,

    The breezes humbly kiss my gar-  
    ment's hem,

I am a king — the whole world is  
    my throne,

    The blue grey sky my royal  
    diadem

## EQUIPMENT

WITH what thou gavest me, O  
    Master,

    I have wrought

Such chances, such abilities,  
    To see the end was not for my  
    poor eyes,  
Thine was the impulse, thine the  
    forming thought.

Ah, I have wrought,  
    And these sad hands have right  
    to tell their story,

It was no hard up striving after  
    glory,

    Catching and losing, gaining  
    and failing,

Raging me back at the world's  
    raucous railing.

    Simply and humbly from stone  
    and from wood,

Wrought I the things that to thee  
    might seem good

If they are little, ah God! but the  
    cost,

    Who but thou knowest the all  
    that is lost!

If they are few, is the workman-  
    ship true?

Try them and weigh me, what-  
    e'er be my due!

## EVENING

THE moon begins her stately ride  
    Across the summer sky;

The happy wavelets lash the  
    shore,—

    The tide is rising high.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Beneath some friendly blade of  
grass

The lazy beetle covers,  
The coffers of the air are filled  
With offerings from the flow-  
ers.

And slowly buzzing o'er my head  
A swallow wings her flight  
I hear the weary plowman sing  
As falls the restful night

### TO PRIMMIE

(Lines on reading Driftwood )

DRIFTWOOD gathered here and  
there

Along the beach of time  
Now and then a chip of truth  
'Mid boards and boughs of rhyme  
Driftwood gathered day by day —  
The cypress and the oak —  
Twigs that in some former time  
From sturdy home trees broke  
Did this wood come floating thick  
All along down Injun Crk?  
Or did kind tides bring it thee  
From the past's receding sea  
Down the stream of memory?

### TO THE MIAMI

Kiss me Miami thou most con-  
stant one!  
I love thee more for that thou  
changest not

When Winter comes with frigid  
blast

Or when the blithesome Spring  
is past

And Summer's here with sun-  
shine hot

Or in sore Autumn thou has  
still the power

To charm alike whatever the hour

Kiss me Miami with thy dewy  
lips

Throbs fast my heart e'en as  
thine own breast beats

My soul doth rise as rise thy  
waves

As each on each the dark shore  
laves

And breaks in ripples and re-  
treats

There is a poem in thine every  
phase

Thou still has sung through all  
thy days.

Tell me Miami, how it was with  
thee

When years ago Tecumseh in  
his prime

His birch boat o'er thy waters  
sent

And pitched upon thy banks his  
tent

In that long gone poetic time  
Did some bronze bard thy flowing

stream sit by

And sing thy praises e'en as I?

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Did some bronze lover 'neath this  
dark old tree  
Whisper of love unto his Indian  
maid?  
And didst thou list his murmurs  
deep,  
And in thy bosom safely keep  
The many raging vows they  
said?  
Or didst thou tell to fish and frog  
and bird  
The raptured scenes that there  
occurred?  
But, O dear stream, what volumes  
thou couldst tell  
To all who know thy language  
as I do,  
Of life and love and jealous hate!  
But now to tattle were too late,—  
Thou who hast ever been so  
true  
Tell not to every passing idler  
here  
All those sweet tales that reached  
thine ear  
But, silent stream, speak out and  
tell me this  
I say that men and things are  
still the same;  
Were men as bold to do and dare?  
Were women then as true and  
fair?  
Did poets seek celestial flame,  
The hero die to gain a laureled  
brow,  
And women suffer, then as now?

## CHRISTMAS CAROL

RING out, ye bells!  
All Nature swells  
With gladness at the wondrous  
story,—  
The world was lorn,  
But Christ is born  
To change our sadness into glory  
  
Sing, earthlings, sing!  
To-night a King  
Hath come from heaven's high  
throne to bless us  
The outstretched hand  
O'er all the land  
Is raised in pity to caress us  
  
Come at his call,  
Be joyful all,  
Away with mourning and with  
sadness!  
The heavenly choir  
With holy fire  
Their voices raise in songs of glad-  
ness  
  
The darkness breaks  
And Dawn awakes,  
Her cheeks suffused with youthful  
blushes.  
The rocks and stones  
In holy tones  
Are singing sweeter than the  
thrushes  
  
Then why should we  
In silence be,

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

When Nature lends her voice to  
    praises  
    When heaven and earth  
    Proclaim the truth  
Of Him for whom that lone star  
    blazes?

    No be not still  
    But with a will  
Strike all your harps and set them  
    ringing  
    On hill and heath  
    Let every breath  
Throw all its power into singing!

### A SUMMER PASTORAL

It's hot to day The bees is  
    buzzin  
    Kinder don't keer like aroun  
An fur off the warm air dances  
    O'er the parchin roofs in town  
In the brook the cows is standin  
    Childern hidin in the hay  
Can't keep none of 'em a workin',  
    Cause it's hot to day

It's hot to-day The sun is  
    blazin  
    Like a great big ball o' fire  
Seems as ef instead o' settin  
    It keeps mountin higher an  
    higher  
I'm as triffin as the children,  
    Though I blame them lots an'  
    scold  
I keep slippin to the spring house  
    Where the milk is rich an cold

The very air within its shadder  
    Smells o' cool an restful things  
An a roguish little robin  
    Sits above the place an sings  
I don't mean to be a shurkin  
    But I linger by the way  
Longer, mebbe than is needful,  
    'Cause it's hot to day

It's hot to-day The horses stum  
    ble  
    Half asleep across the fieds  
An a host o' teasin' fancies  
    O'er my burnin senses steals—  
Dreams o' cool rooms curtains  
    lowered  
An' a sofys temptin look  
Patter o' composin' raindrops  
    Or the ripple of a brook

I strike a stump! That wakes  
    me sudden  
    Dreams all vanish into air  
Lordy! how I chew my whiskers  
    Twouldn't do fur me to swear  
But I have to be so keerful  
    Bout my thoughts an' what I  
    say  
Somethin might slip out unheeded  
    Cause it's hot to day

Git up there Suke! you, Sa!, git  
    over!  
    Sakes alive! how I do sweat  
Every stitch that I've got on me  
    Bet a cent, is wringin wet  
If this keeps up I'll lose my tem  
    per

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Gee there, Sal, you lazy brute!  
Wonder who on airth this weather  
Could 'a' be'n got up to suit?

You, Sam, go bring a tin o' water;  
Dash it all, don't be so slow!  
'Pears as ef you tuk an hour  
'Tween each step to stop an'  
blow.

Think I want to stand a meltin'  
Out here in this b'ilin' sun,  
While you stop to think about it?  
Lift them feet o' your'n an' run

It ain't no use, I'm plumb fe-  
taggled

Come an' put this team away.  
I won't plow another furrer,  
It's too mortal hot to-day.  
I ain't weak, nor I ain't lazy,  
But I'll stand this half day's loss  
'Fore I let the devil make me  
Lose my patience an' git cross.

## IN SUMMER TIME

WHEN summer time has come,  
and all

The world is in the magic thrall  
Of perfumed airs that lull each  
sense

To fits of drowsy indolence,  
When skies are deepest blue above,  
And flow'rs aflush,— then most I  
love

To start, while early dews are  
damp,

And wend my way in woodland  
tramp

Where forests rustle, tree on tree,  
And sing their silent songs to me;  
Where pathways meet and path  
ways part,—

To walk with Nature heart by  
heart,

Till wearied out at last I lie  
Where some sweet stream steals  
singing by

A mossy bank; where violets vie  
In color with the summer sky,—  
Or take my rod and line and hook,  
And wander to some darkling  
brook,

Where all day long the willows  
dream,

And idly droop to kiss the stream,  
And there to loll from morn till  
night —

Unheeding nibble, run, or bite —  
Just for the joy of being there  
And drinking in the summer air,  
The summer sounds, and summer  
sights,

That set a restless mind to rights  
When grief and pain and raging  
doubt

Of men and creeds have worn it  
out;

The birds' song and the water's  
drone,

The humming bees' low monotone,  
The murmur of the passing breeze,  
And all the sounds akin to these,  
That make a man in summer time

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Feel only fit for rest and rhyme  
Joy springs all radiant in my  
breast

Though pauper poor, than king  
more blest

The tide beats in my soul so strong  
That happiness breaks forth in  
song

And rings aloud the welkin blue  
With all the songs I ever knew  
O time of rapture! time of song!  
How swiftly glide thy days along  
Adown the current of the years  
Above the rocks of grief and tears!  
'Tis wealth enough of joy for me  
In summer time to simply be

### A THANKSGIVING POEM

THE sun hath shed its kindly  
light

Our harvesting is gladly o'er  
Our fields have felt no killing  
blight

Our bins are filled with goodly  
store

From pestilence fire flood and  
sword

We have been spared by thy de-  
cree

And now with humble hearts O  
Lord

We come to pay our thanks to  
thee

We feel that had our merits been  
The measure of thy gifts to us

We erring children, born of sin,  
Might not now be rejoicing  
thus

No deed of ours hath brought us  
grace,

When thou wert nigh our sight  
was dull,

We hid in trembling from thy  
face

But thou O God wert merci-  
ful

Thy mighty hand o'er all the land  
Hath still been open to bestow  
Those blessings which our wants  
demand

From heaven whence all bless-  
ings flow

Thou hast with ever watchful eye  
Looked down on us with holy  
care

And from thy storehouse in the  
sky

Hast scattered plenty every  
where

Then lift we up our songs of  
praise

To thee O Father good and  
kind

To thee we consecrate our days  
Be thine the temple of each  
mind

With incense sweet our thanks  
ascend,



## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Before thy works our powers  
    pall,  
Though we should strive years  
    without end,  
We could not thank thee for  
    them all.

### NUTTING SONG

THE November sun invites me,  
And although the chill wind smites  
    me,  
I will wander to the woodland  
    Where the laden trees await,  
And with loud and joyful singing  
I will set the forest ringing,  
As if I were king of Autumn,  
    And Dame Nature were my  
    mate,—

While the squirrel in his gambols  
Fearless round about me ambles,  
As if he were bent on showing  
    In my kingdom he'd a share,  
While my warm blood leaps and  
    dashes,  
And my eye with freedom flashes,  
As my soul drinks deep and deeper  
    Of the magic in the air

There's a pleasure found in nut-  
    ting,  
All life's cares and griefs outshut-  
    ting,  
That is fuller far and better  
    Than what prouder sports im-  
    part.

Who could help a carol trilling  
As he sees the baskets filling?  
Why, the flow of song keeps run-  
    ning  
O'er the high walls of the heart.

So when I am home returning,  
When the sun is lowly burning,  
I will once more wake the echoes  
    With a happy song of praise,—  
For the golden sunlight blessing,  
And the breezes' soft caressing,  
And the precious boon of living  
    In the sweet November days

### LOVE'S PICTURES

LIKE the blush upon the rose  
    When the wooing south wind  
    speaks,

Kissing soft its petals,  
    Are thy cheeks

Tender, soft, beseeching, true  
    Like the stars that deck the skies  
Through the ether sparkling,  
    Are thine eyes.

Like the song of happy birds,  
    When the woods with spring re-  
    joice,  
In their blithe awak'ning,  
    Is thy voice

Like soft threads of clustered silk  
    O'er thy face so pure and fair,  
Sweet in its profusion,  
    Is thy hair.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Like a fair but fragile vase,  
Triumph of the carver's art  
Graceful formed and slender —  
Thus thou art

Ah thy cheek, thine eyes thy  
voice,  
And thy hair's delightful wave  
Make me I'll confess it,  
Thy poor slave!

### THE OLD HOMESTEAD

'Tis an old deserted homestead  
On the outskirts of the town  
Where the roof is all moss covered  
And the walls are tumbling  
down  
But around that little cottage  
Do my brightest memories cling  
For 'twas there I spent the moments  
Of my youth — life's happy  
spring

I remember how I used to  
Swing upon the old front gate  
While the robin in the tree tops  
Sung a night song to his mate  
And how later in the evening  
As the beaux were wont to do  
Mr Perkins in the parlor  
Sat and sparked my sister Sue

There my mother — heaven bless  
her! —

Kissed or spanked as was our  
need

And by smile or stroke implanted  
In our hearts fair virtues seed  
While my father, man of wisdom  
Lawyer keen, and farmer stout  
Argued long with neighbor Dob  
bins

How the corn crops would turn  
out

Then the quiltings and the  
dances —

How my feet were wont to fly,  
While the moon peeped through  
the barn chinks

From her stately place on high  
Oh those days so sweet so happy  
Ever backward o'er me roll  
Still the music of that farm life  
Rings an echo in my soul

Now the old place is deserted,  
And the walls are falling down,  
All who made the home life cheer  
ful,

Now have died or moved to  
town

But about that dear old cottage  
Shall my memories ever cling  
For 'twas there I spent the moments

Of my youth — life's happy  
spring

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

## ON THE DEATH OF W. C

THOU arrant robber, Death!  
Couldst thou not find  
Some lesser one than he  
To rob of breath,—  
Some poorer mind  
Thy prey to be?

His mind was like the sky,—  
As pure and free,  
His heart was broad and open  
As the sea  
His soul shone purely through his  
face,  
And Love made him her dwelling  
place

Not less the scholar than the  
friend,  
Not less a friend than man;  
The manly life did shorter end  
Because so broad it ran

Weep not for him, unhappy Muse!  
His merits found a grander use  
Some other-where God wisely  
sees

The place that needs his qualities.  
Weep not for him, for when Death  
lowers

O'er youth's ambrosia-scented bow-  
ers

He only plucks the choicest flow-  
ers

## AN OLD MEMORY

How sweet the music sounded  
That summer long ago,  
When you were by my side, love,  
To list its gentle flow.

I saw your eyes a-shining,  
I felt your rippling hair,  
I kissed your pearly cheek, love,  
And had no thought of care.

And gay or sad the music,  
With subtle charm replete,  
I found in after years, love  
'Twas you that made it sweet.

For standing where we heard it,  
I hear again the strain;  
It wakes my heart, but thrills it  
With sad, mysterious pain

It pulses not so joyous  
As when you stood with me,  
And hand in hand we listened  
To that low melody.

Oh, could the years turn back,  
love!

Oh, could events be changed  
To what they were that time, love,  
Before we were estranged,

Wert thou once more a maiden  
Whose smile was gold to me,  
Were I once more the lover  
Whose word was life to thee,—

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

O God! could all be altered  
The pain, the grief the strife  
And wert thou — as thou shouldst  
be —

My true and loyal wife!

But all my tears are idle  
And all my wishes vain  
What once you were to me, love,  
You may not be again

For I alas! like others  
Have missed my dearest aim  
I asked for love Oh mockery!  
Fate comes to me with fame!

### A CAREER

'BREAK me my bounds and let  
me fly  
To regions vast of boundless sky  
Nor I like piteous Daphne be  
Root bound Ah no! I would  
be free

As yon same bird that in its flight  
Outstrips the range of mortal  
sight

Free as the mountain streams that  
gush

From bubbling springs and down  
ward rush

Across the serrate mountain's  
side —

The rocks overwhelmed their  
banks defied —

And like the passions in the soul  
Swell into torrents as they roll

Oh circumscribe me not by rules  
That serve to lead the minds of  
fools!

But give me pow'r to work my  
will,

And at my deeds the world shall  
thrill

My words shall rouse the slumber-  
ing zest

That hardly stirs in manhood's  
breast

And as the sun feeds lesser lights  
As planets have their satellites

So round about me will I bind  
The men who prize a master  
mind!

He lived a silent life alone  
And laid him down when it was  
done

And at his head was placed a  
stone

On which was carved a name un-  
known!

### ON THE RIVER

THE sun is low  
The waters flow,  
My boat is dancing to and fro  
The eve is still  
Yet from the hill  
The kildeer echoes loud and shrill

The paddles plash  
The wavelets dash  
We see the summer lightning flash

## THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

While now and then,  
In marsh and fen  
Too muddy for the feet of men,

Where neither bird  
Nor beast has stirred,  
The spotted bullfrog's croak is  
    heard  
The wind is high,  
The grasses sigh,  
The sluggish stream goes sobbing  
    by.

And far away  
The dying day  
Has cast its last effulgent ray;  
While on the land  
The shadows stand  
Proclaiming that the eve's at hand.

### POOR WITHERED ROSE

#### *A Song*

Poor withered rose, she gave it me,  
Half in revenge and half in glee;  
Its petals not so pink by half  
As are her lips when curled to  
    laugh,  
As are her cheeks when dimples  
    gay  
In merry mischief o'er them play.

#### *Chorus*

Forgive, forgive, it seems un-  
    kind  
To cast thy petals to the  
    wind,

But it is right, and lest I err  
So scatter I all thought of her.

Poor withered rose, so like my  
    heart,  
That wilts at sorrow's cruel dart.  
Who hath not felt the winter's  
    blight  
When every hope seemed warm  
    and bright?  
Who doth not know love unre-  
    turned,  
E'en when the heart most wildly  
    burned?

Poor withered rose, thou liest  
    dead,  
Too soon thy beauty's bloom hath  
    fled  
'Tis not without a tearful ruth  
I watch decay thy blushing routh;  
And though thy life goes out in  
    dole,  
Thy perfume lingers in my soul.

### WORN OUT

You bid me hold my peace  
And dry my fruitless tears,  
Forgetting that I bear  
    A pain beyond my years.

You say that I should smile  
And drive the gloom away;  
I would, but sun and smiles  
Have left my life's dark day.

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

All time seems cold and void  
And naught but tears remain  
Life's music beats for me  
A melancholy strain

I used at first to hope  
But hope is past and gone,  
And now without a ray  
My cheerless life drags on

Like to an ash stained hearth  
When all its fires are spent,  
Like to an autumn wood  
By storm winds rudely shent —

So sadly goes my heart  
Unclothed of hope and peace,  
It asks not joy again  
But only seeks release

### JAMES WHITCOMB RILEY (From a Westerner's Point of View)

No matter what you call it,  
Whether genius or art,  
He sings the simple songs that  
come

The closest to your heart  
Fur trim and skillful phrases,  
I do not keep a jot  
Taint the words alone, but feel  
in

That tech the tender spot  
And that's jest why I love him,—  
Why he's got sech human  
feelin

And in ev'ry song he gives us  
You kin see it creepin', stealin',

Through the core the tears go  
tricklin',  
But the edge is bright and  
smiley,

I never saw a poet  
Like that poet Whitcomb Riley

His heart keeps beatin' time with  
our'n

In measures fast or slow,  
He tells us jest the same ol' things  
Our souls have learned to know

He paints our joys and sorrows  
In a way so strictly true,  
That a body can't help knowin'  
That he has felt them too

If there's a lesson to be taught  
He never fears to teach it  
And he puts the food so good and  
low

That the humblest one kin reach  
it

Now in our time, when poets  
rhyme

For money, fun or fashion  
Tis good to hear one voice so clear  
That thrills with honest passion  
So let the others build their songs  
And strive to polish highly —

There's none of them kin tech the  
heart

Like our own Whitcomb Riley

### A MADRIGAL

DREAM days of fond delight and  
hours

As rosy hued as dawn are mine

# THE COMPLETE POEMS OF

Love's drowsy wine,  
Brewed from the heart of Passion  
    flowers,  
Flows softly o'er my lips  
And save thee, all the world is  
    in eclipse.

There were no light if thou wert  
    not,  
The sun would be too sad to  
    shine,  
And all the line  
Of hours from dawn would be a  
    blot,  
And Night would haunt the  
    skies,  
An unlaid ghost with staring  
    dark-ringed eyes

Oh, love, if thou wert not my love,  
And I perchance not thine —  
    what then?  
Could gift of men  
Or favor of the God above,  
Plant aught in this bare heart  
Or teach this tongue the sing-  
    er's soulful art?

Ah, no! 'Tis love, and love alone  
That spurs my soul so surely on;  
Turns night to dawn,  
And thorns to roses fairest blown;  
And winter drear to spring —  
Oh, were it not for love I could  
    not sing!

## A STARRY NIGHT

A CLOUD fell down from the heav-  
    ens,  
And broke on the mountain's  
    brow,  
It scattered the dusky fragments  
All over the vale below

The moon and the stars were anx-  
    ious  
To know what its fate might be;  
So they rushed to the azure op'n-  
    ing,  
And all peered down to see.

## A LYRIC

My lady love lives far away,  
And oh my heart is sad by day,  
And ah my tears fall fast by night,  
What may I do in such a plight

Why, miles grow few when love is  
    fleet,  
And love, you know, hath flying  
    feet,  
Break off thy sighs and witness  
    this,  
How poor a thing mere distance is

My love knows not I love her so,  
And would she scorn me, did she  
    know?

How may the tale I would impart  
Attract her ear and storm her  
    heart?

## PAUL LAURENCE DUNBAR

Calm thou the tempest in my  
breast

Who loves in silence loves the  
best

But bide thy time she will awake  
No night so dark but morn will  
break

But though my heart so strongly  
yearn

My lady loves me not in turn  
How may I win the blest reply  
That my void heart shall satisfy

Love breedeth love be thou but  
true

And soon thy love shall love thee  
too

If Fate hath meant you heart for  
heart,

There's naught may keep you  
twain apart

### HOW SHALL I WOO THEE

How shall I woo thee to win thee  
mine own?

Say in what tongue shall I tell  
of my love

I who was fearless so timid have  
grown,

All that was eagle has turned  
into dove

The path from the meadow that  
leads to the bars

Is more to me now than the path  
of the stars

How shall I woo thee to win thee  
mine own

Thou who art fair and as far as  
the moon?

Had I the strength of the torrent's  
wild tone

Had I the sweetness of warblers  
in June

The strength and the sweetness  
might charm and persuade

But neither have I my petition to  
aid

How shall I woo thee to win thee  
mine own?

How shall I traverse the dis-  
tance between

My humble cot and your glorious  
throne?

How shall a clown gain the ear  
of a queen?

Oh teach me the tongue that shall  
please thee the best

For till I have won thee my heart  
may not rest



heap of straw, a torch was put to it, and a great blaze shot up, to the delight of the children who frisked round it screaming out some old popular verses about the death of the Carnival. Sometimes the effigy was rolled down the slope of a hill before being burnt. At Saint-Lô the ragged effigy of Shrove Tuesday was followed by his widow, a big burly lout dressed as a woman with a crape veil, who emitted sounds of lamentation and woe in a stentorian voice. After being carried about the streets on a litter attended by a crowd of maskers, the figure was thrown into the River Vire. The final scene has been graphically described by Madame Octave Feuillet as she witnessed it in her childhood some sixty years ago. "My parents invited friends to see, from the top of the tower of Jeanne Couillard, the funeral procession passing. It was there that, quaffing lemonade—the only refreshment allowed because of the fast—we witnessed at nightfall a spectacle of which I shall always preserve a lively recollection. At our feet flowed the Vire under its old stone bridge. On the middle of the bridge lay the figure of Shrove Tuesday on a litter of leaves, surrounded by scores of maskers dancing, singing, and carrying torches. Some of them in their motley costumes ran along the parapet like fiends. The rest, worn out with their revels, sat on the posts and dozed. Soon the dancing stopped, and some of the troop, seizing a torch, set fire to the effigy, after which they flung it into the river with redoubled shouts and clamour. The man of straw, soaked with resin, floated away burning down the stream of the Vire, lighting up with its funeral fires the woods on the bank and the battlements of the old castle in which Louis XI and Francis I had slept. When the last glimmer of the blazing phantom had vanished, like a falling star, at the end of the valley, every one withdrew, crowd and maskers alike, and we quitted the ramparts with our guests."

In the neighbourhood of Tübingen on Shrove Tuesday a straw-man, called the Shrovetide Bear, is made up, he is dressed in a pair of old trousers, and a fresh black-pudding or two squirts filled with blood are inserted in his neck. After a formal condemnation he is beheaded, laid in a coffin, and on Ash Wednesday is buried in the churchyard. This is called "Burying the Carnival." Amongst some of the Saxons of Transylvania the Carnival is hanged. Thus at Braller on Ash Wednesday or Shrove Tuesday two white and two chestnut horses draw a sledge on which is placed a straw-man swathed in a white cloth, beside him is a cart-wheel which is kept turning round. Two lads disguised as old men follow the sledge lamenting. The rest of the village lads, mounted on horseback and decked with ribbons, accompany the procession, which is headed by two girls crowned with evergreen and drawn in a waggon or sledge. A trial is held under a tree, at which lads disguised as soldiers pronounce sentence of death. The two old men try to rescue the straw-man and to fly with him, but to no purpose; he is caught by the two girls and handed over to the executioner, who hangs him on a tree. In vain the old men try to climb up the tree and take him down; they always tumble down,

and at last in despair they throw themselves on the ground and weep and howl for the hanged man. An official then makes a speech in which he declares that the Carnival was condemned to death because he had done them harm, by wearing out their shoes and making them tired and sleepy. At the "Burial of Carnival" in Lechrain, a man dressed as a woman in black clothes is carried on a litter or bier by four men; he is lamented over by men disguised as women in black clothes, then thrown down before the village dung-heap, drenched with water, buried in the dung-heap, and covered with straw. On the evening of Shrove Tuesday the Esthomians make a straw figure called *metsik* or "wood-spirit"; one year it is dressed with a man's coat and hat, next year with a hood and a petticoat. This figure is stuck on a long pole, carried across the boundary of the village with loud cries of joy, and fastened to the top of a tree in the wood. The ceremony is believed to be a protection against all kinds of misfortune.

Sometimes at these Shrovetide or Lenten ceremonies the resurrection of the pretended dead person is enacted. Thus, in some parts of Swabia on Shrove Tuesday Dr. Iron-Beard professes to bleed a sick man, who thereupon falls as dead to the ground; but the doctor at last restores him to life by blowing air into him through a tube. In the Harz Mountains, when Carnival is over, a man is laid on a baking-trough and carried with dirges to a grave; but in the grave a glass of brandy is buried instead of the man. A speech is delivered and then the people return to the village-green or meeting-place, where they smoke the long clay pipes which are distributed at funerals. On the morning of Shrove Tuesday in the following year the brandy is dug up and the festival begins by every one tasting the spirit which, as the phrase goes, has come to life again.

§ 3. *Carrying out Death* —The ceremony of "Carrying out Death" presents much the same features as "Burying the Carnival", except that the carrying out of Death is generally followed by a ceremony, or at least accompanied by a profession, of bringing in Summer, Spring, or Life. Thus in Middle Franken, a province of Bavaria, on the fourth Sunday in Lent, the village urchins used to make a straw effigy of Death, which they carried about with burlesque pomp through the streets, and afterwards burned with loud cries beyond the bounds. The Frankish custom is thus described by a writer of the sixteenth century: "At Mid-Lent, the season when the church bids us rejoice, the young people of my native country make a straw image of Death, and fastening it to a pole carry it with shouts to the neighbouring villages. By some they are kindly received, and after being refreshed with milk, peas, and dried pears, the usual food of that season, are sent home again. Others, however, treat them with anything but hospitality, for, looking on them as harbingers of misfortune, to wit of death, they drive them from their boundaries with weapons and insults." In the villages near Erlangen, when the fourth Sunday in Lent came round, the peasant girls used to dress themselves in all their finery with flowers in their hair. Thus attired they repaired

to the neighbouring town, carrying puppets which were adorned with leaves and covered with white cloths. These they took from house to house in pairs, stopping at every door where they expected to receive something, and singing a few lines in which they announced that it was Mid-Lent and that they were about to throw Death into the water. When they had collected some trifling gratuities they went to the River Regnitz and flung the puppets representing Death into the stream. This was done to ensure a fruitful and prosperous year, further, it was considered a safeguard against pestilence and sudden death. At Nuremberg girls of seven to eighteen years of age go through the streets bearing a little open coffin, in which is a doll hidden under a shroud. Others carry a beech branch, with an apple fastened to it for a head, in an open box. They sing, "We carry Death into the water, it is well," or "We carry Death into the water, carry him in and out again." In some parts of Bavaria down to 1780 it was believed that a fatal epidemic would ensue if the custom of "Carrying out Death" were not observed.

In some villages of Thuringen, on the fourth Sunday of Lent, the children used to carry a puppet of birchen twigs through the village, and then threw it into a pool, while they sang, "We carry the old Death out behind the herdsman's old house; we have got Summer, and Kroden's (?) power is destroyed." At Debschwitz or Dobschwitz, near Gera, the ceremony of "Driving out Death" is or was annually observed on the first of March. The young people make up a figure of straw or the like materials, dress it in old clothes, which they have begged from houses in the village, and carry it out and throw it into the river. On returning to the village they break the good news to the people, and receive eggs and other victuals as a reward. The ceremony is or was supposed to purify the village and to protect the inhabitants from sickness and plague. In other villages of Thuringen, in which the population was originally Slavonic, the carrying out of the puppet is accompanied with the singing of a song, which begins, "Now we carry Death out of the village and Spring into the village." At the end of the seventeenth and beginning of the eighteenth century the custom was observed in Thuringen as follows. The boys and girls made an effigy of straw or the like materials, but the shape of the figure varied from year to year. In one year it would represent an old man, in the next an old woman, in the third a young man, and in the fourth a maiden, and the dress of the figure varied with the character it personated. There used to be a sharp contest as to where the effigy was to be made, for the people thought that the house from which it was carried forth would not be visited with death that year. Having been made, the puppet was fastened to a pole and carried by a girl if it represented an old man, but by a boy if it represented an old woman. Thus it was borne in procession, the young people holding sticks in their hands and singing that they were driving out Death. When they came to water they threw the effigy into it and ran hastily back, fearing that it might jump on their shoulders and wring their

necks. They also took care not to touch it, lest it should dry them up. On their return they beat the cattle with the sticks, believing that this would make the animals fat or fruitful. Afterwards they visited the house or houses from which they had carried the image of Death, where they received a dole of half-boiled peas. The custom of "Carrying out Death" was practised also in Saxony. At Leipsic the bastards and public women used to make a straw effigy of Death every year at Mid-Lent. This they carried through all the streets with songs and showed it to the young married women. Finally they threw it into the River Parthe. By this ceremony they professed to make the young wives fruitful, to purify the city, and to protect the inhabitants for that year from plague and other epidemics.

Ceremonies of the same sort are observed at Mid-Lent in Silesia. Thus in many places the grown girls with the help of the young men dress up a straw figure with women's clothes and carry it out of the village towards the setting sun. At the boundary they strip it of its clothes, tear it in pieces, and scatter the fragments about the fields. This is called "Burying Death." As they carry the image out, they sing that they are about to bury Death under an oak, that he may depart from the people. Sometimes the song runs that they are bearing Death over hill and dale to return no more. In the Polish neighbourhood of Gross-Strehlitz the puppet is called *Goik*. It is carried on horseback and thrown into the nearest water. The people think that the ceremony protects them from sickness of every sort in the coming year. In the districts of Wohlau and Guhrau the image of Death used to be thrown over the boundary of the next village. But as the neighbours feared to receive the ill-omened figure, they were on the look-out to repel it, and hard knocks were often exchanged between the two parties. In some Polish parts of Upper Silesia the effigy, representing an old woman, goes by the name of *Marzana*, the goddess of death. It is made in the house where the last death occurred, and is carried on a pole to the boundary of the village, where it is thrown into a pond or burnt. At Polkwitz the custom of "Carrying out Death" fell into abeyance, but an outbreak of fatal sickness which followed the intermission of the ceremony induced the people to resume it.

In Bohemia the children go out with a straw-man, representing Death, to the end of the village, where they burn it, singing—

<i>" Now carry we Death out of the village,</i>	<i>Welcome, dear Summer,</i>
<i>The new Summer into the village,</i>	<i>Green little corn "</i>

At Tabor in Bohemia the figure of Death is carried out of the town and flung from a high rock into the water, while they sing—

<i>" Death swims on the water,</i>	<i>And do thou, O holy Marketa,</i>
<i>Summer will soon be here,</i>	<i>Give us a good year</i>
<i>We carried Death away for you,</i>	<i>For wheat and for rye "</i>
<i>We brought the Summer</i>	

In other parts of Bohemia they carry Death to the end of the village, singing—

*" We carry Death out of the village,  
And the New Year into the village.*

*Dear Spring, we bid you welcome,  
Green grass, we bid you welcome "*

Behind the village they erect a pyre, on which they burn the straw figure, reviling and scoffing at it the while Then they return, singing—

*" We have carried away Death,  
And brought Life back.*

*He has taken up his quarters in the village,  
Therefore sing joyous songs "*

In some German villages of Moravia, as in Jassnitz and Seitendorf, the young folk assemble on the third Sunday in Lent and fashion a straw-man, who is generally adorned with a fur cap and a pair of old leathern hose, if such are to be had. The effigy is then hoisted on a pole and carried by the lads and lasses out into the open fields On the way they sing a song, in which it is said that they are carrying Death away and bringing dear Summer into the house, and with Summer the May and the flowers. On reaching an appointed place they dance in a circle round the effigy with loud shouts and screams, then suddenly rush at it and tear it to pieces with their hands Lastly, the pieces are thrown together in a heap, the pole is broken, and fire is set to the whole. While it burns the troop dances merrily round it, rejoicing at the victory won by Spring, and when the fire has nearly died out they go to the householders to beg for a present of eggs wherewith to hold a feast, taking care to give as a reason for the request that they have carried Death out and away.

The preceding evidence shows that the effigy of Death is often regarded with fear and treated with marks of hatred and abhorrence Thus the anxiety of the villagers to transfer the figure from their own to their neighbours' land, and the reluctance of the latter to receive the ominous guest, are proof enough of the dread which it inspires Further, in Lusatia and Silesia the puppet is sometimes made to look in at the window of a house, and it is believed that some one in the house will die within the year unless his life is redeemed by the payment of money Again, after throwing the effigy away, the bearers sometimes run home lest Death should follow them, and if one of them falls in running, it is believed that he will die within the year At Chrudim, in Bohemia, the figure of Death is made out of a cross, with a head and mask stuck at the top, and a shirt stretched out on it. On the fifth Sunday in Lent the boys take this effigy to the nearest brook or pool, and standing in a line throw it into the water Then they all plunge in after it, but as soon as it is caught no one more may enter the water. The boy who did not enter the water or entered it last will die within the year, and he is obliged to carry the Death back to the village The effigy is then burned On the other hand, it is believed that no one will die within the year in the house out of which the figure of Death has been carried, and the village out of which Death has been driven is sometimes supposed to be protected against

sickness and plague. In some villages of Austrian Silesia on the Saturday before Dead Sunday an effigy is made of old clothes, hay, and straw, for the purpose of driving Death out of the village. On Sunday the people, armed with sticks and straps, assemble before the house where the figure is lodged. Four lads then draw the effigy by cords through the village amid exultant shouts, while all the others beat it with their sticks and straps. On reaching a field which belongs to a neighbouring village they lay down the figure, cudgel it soundly, and scatter the fragments over the field. The people believe that the village from which Death has been thus carried out will be safe from any infectious disease for the whole year.

§ 4 *Bringing in Summer*—In the preceding ceremonies the return of Spring, Summer, or Life, as a sequel to the expulsion of Death, is only implied or at most announced. In the following ceremonies it is plainly enacted. Thus in some parts of Bohemia the effigy of Death is drowned by being thrown into the water at sunset, then the girls go out into the wood and cut down a young tree with a green crown, hang a doll dressed as a woman on it, deck the whole with green, red, and white ribbons, and march in procession with their *Lito* (Summer) into the village, collecting gifts and singing—

<p><i>" Death swims in the water, Spring comes to visit us, With eggs that are red,</i></p>	<p><i>With yellow pancakes We carried Death out of the village, We are carrying Summer into the village "</i></p>
---	---

In many Silesian villages the figure of Death, after being treated with respect, is stript of its clothes and flung with curses into the water, or torn to pieces in a field. Then the young folk repair to a wood, cut down a small fir-tree, peel the trunk, and deck it with festoons of evergreens, paper roses, painted egg-shells, motley bits of cloth, and so forth. The tree thus adorned is called Summer or May. Boys carry it from house to house singing appropriate songs and begging for presents. Among their songs is the following :

<p><i>" We have carried Death out, We are bringing the dear Summer back,</i></p>	<p><i>The Summer and the May, And all the flowers gay "</i></p>
--	---

Sometimes they also bring back from the wood a prettily adorned figure, which goes by the name of Summer, May, or the Bride. In the Polish districts it is called *Dziewanna*, the goddess of spring.

At Eisenach on the fourth Sunday in Lent young people used to fasten a straw-man, representing Death, to a wheel, which they trundled to the top of a hill. Then setting fire to the figure they allowed it and the wheel to roll down the slope. Next they cut a tall fir-tree, tricked it out with ribbons, and set it up in the plain. The men then climbed the tree to fetch down the ribbons. In Upper Lusatia the figure of Death, made of straw and rags, is dressed in a veil furnished by the last bride and a shirt provided by the house in which the last death took place. Thus arrayed the figure is stuck on the end of a long pole and carried at full speed by the tallest and strongest girl, while the rest

pelt the effigy with sticks and stones. Whoever hits it will be sure to live through the year. In this way Death is carried out of the village and thrown into the water or over the boundary of the next village. On their way home each one breaks a green branch and carries it gaily with him till he reaches the village, when he throws it away. Sometimes the young people of the next village, upon whose land the figure has been thrown, run after them and hurl it back, not wishing to have Death among them. Hence the two parties occasionally come to blows.

In these cases Death is represented by the puppet which is thrown away, Summer or Life by the branches or trees which are brought back. But sometimes a new potency of life seems to be attributed to the image of Death itself, and by a kind of resurrection it becomes the instrument of the general revival. Thus in some parts of Lusatia women alone are concerned in carrying out Death, and suffer no male to meddle with it. Attired in mourning, which they wear the whole day, they make a puppet of straw, clothe it in a white shirt, and give it a broom in one hand and a scythe in the other. Singing songs and pursued by urchins throwing stones, they carry the puppet to the village boundary, where they tear it in pieces. Then they cut down a fine tree, hang the shirt on it, and carry it home singing. On the Feast of Ascension the Saxons of Braller, a village of Transylvania, not far from Hermannstadt, observe the ceremony of "Carrying out Death" in the following manner. After morning service all the school-girls repair to the house of one of their number, and there dress up the Death. This is done by tying a threshed-out sheaf of corn into a rough semblance of a head and body, while the arms are simulated by a broomstick thrust through it horizontally. The figure is dressed in the holiday attire of a young peasant woman, with a red hood, silver brooches, and a profusion of ribbons at the arms and breast. The girls bustle at their work, for soon the bells will be ringing to vespers, and the Death must be ready in time to be placed at the open window, that all the people may see it on their way to church. When vespers are over, the longed-for moment has come for the first procession with the Death to begin; it is a privilege that belongs to the school-girls alone. Two of the older girls seize the figure by the arms and walk in front, all the rest follow two and two. Boys may take no part in the procession, but they troop after it gazing with open-mouthed admiration at the "beautiful Death." So the procession goes through all the streets of the village, the girls singing the old hymn that begins—

*"Gott mein Vater, deine Liebe  
Reicht so weit der Himmel ist,"*

to a tune that differs from the ordinary one. When the procession has wound its way through every street, the girls go to another house, and having shut the door against the eager prying crowd of boys who follow at their heels, they strip the Death and pass the naked truss of straw out of the window to the boys, who pounce on it, run out of the

village with it without singing, and fling the dilapidated effigy into the neighbouring brook. This done, the second scene of the little drama begins. While the boys were carrying away the Death out of the village, the girls remained in the house, and one of them is now dressed in all the finery which had been worn by the effigy. Thus arrayed she is led in procession through all the streets to the singing of the same hymn as before. When the procession is over they all betake themselves to the house of the girl who played the leading part. Here a feast awaits them from which also the boys are excluded. It is a popular belief that the children may safely begin to eat gooseberries and other fruit after the day on which Death has thus been carried out; for Death, which up to that time lurked especially in gooseberries, is now destroyed. Further, they may now bathe with impunity out of doors. Very similar is the ceremony which, down to recent years, was observed in some of the German villages of Moravia. Boys and girls met on the afternoon of the first Sunday after Easter, and together fashioned a puppet of straw to represent Death. Decked with bright-coloured ribbons and cloths, and fastened to the top of a long pole, the effigy was then borne with singing and clamour to the nearest height, where it was stript of its gay attire and thrown or rolled down the slope. One of the girls was next dressed in the gauds taken from the effigy of Death, and with her at its head the procession moved back to the village. In some villages the practice is to bury the effigy in the place that has the most evil reputation of all the country-side. Others throw it into running water.

In the Lusatian ceremony described above, the tree which is brought home after the destruction of the figure of Death is plainly equivalent to the trees or branches which, in the preceding customs, were brought back as representatives of Summer or Life, after Death had been thrown away or destroyed. But the transference of the shirt worn by the effigy of Death to the tree clearly indicates that the tree is a kind of revivification, in a new form, of the destroyed effigy. This comes out also in the Transylvanian and Moravian customs: the dressing of a girl in the clothes worn by the Death, and the leading her about the village to the same song which had been sung when the Death was being carried about, show that she is intended to be a kind of resuscitation of the being whose effigy has just been destroyed. These examples therefore suggest that the Death whose demolition is represented in these ceremonies cannot be regarded as the purely destructive agent which we understand by Death. If the tree which is brought back as an embodiment of the reviving vegetation of spring is clothed in the shirt worn by the Death which has just been destroyed, the object certainly cannot be to check and counteract the revival of vegetation. It can only be to foster and promote it. Therefore the being which has just been destroyed—the so-called Death—must be supposed to be endowed with a vivifying and quickening influence, which it can communicate to the vegetable and even the animal world. This ascription of a life-giving virtue to the figure of Death is put



beyond a doubt by the custom, observed in some places, of taking pieces of the straw effigy of Death and placing them in the fields to make the crops grow, or in the manger to make the cattle thrive. Thus in Spachendorf, a village of Austrian Silesia, the figure of Death, made of straw, brushwood, and rags, is carried with wild songs to an open place outside the village and there burned, and while it is burning a general struggle takes place for the pieces, which are pulled out of the flames with bare hands. Each one who secures a fragment of the effigy ties it to a branch of the largest tree in his garden, or buries it in his field, in the belief that this causes the crops to grow better. In the Troppau district of Austrian Silesia the straw figure which the boys make on the fourth Sunday in Lent is dressed by the girls in woman's clothes and hung with ribbons, necklace, and garlands. Attached to a long pole it is carried out of the village, followed by a troop of young people of both sexes, who alternately frolic, lament, and sing songs. Arrived at its destination—a field outside the village—the figure is stripped of its clothes and ornaments, then the crowd rushes at it and tears it to bits, scuffling for the fragments. Every one tries to get a wisp of the straw of which the effigy was made, because such a wisp, placed in the manger, is believed to make the cattle thrive. Or the straw is put in the hens' nest, it being supposed that this prevents the hens from carrying away their eggs, and makes them brood much better. The same attribution of a fertilising power to the figure of Death appears in the belief that if the bearers of the figure, after throwing it away, beat cattle with their sticks, this will render the beasts fat or prolific. Perhaps the sticks had been previously used to beat the Death, and so had acquired the fertilising power ascribed to the effigy. We have seen, too, that at Leipsic a straw effigy of Death was shown to young wives to make them fruitful.

It seems hardly possible to separate from the May-trees the trees or branches which are brought into the village after the destruction of the Death. The bearers who bring them in profess to be bringing in the Summer, therefore the trees obviously represent the Summer, indeed in Silesia they are commonly called the Summer or the May, and the doll which is sometimes attached to the Summer-tree is a duplicate representative of the Summer, just as the May is sometimes represented at the same time by a May-tree and a May Lady. Further, the Summer-trees are adorned like May-trees with ribbons and so on, like May-trees, when large, they are planted in the ground and climbed up, and like May-trees, when small, they are carried from door to door by boys or girls singing songs and collecting money. And as if to demonstrate the identity of the two sets of customs the bearers of the Summer-tree sometimes announce that they are bringing in the Summer and the May. The customs, therefore, of bringing in the May and bringing in the Summer are essentially the same, and the Summer-tree is merely another form of the May-tree, the only distinction (besides that of name) being in the time at which they are respectively brought in, for while the May-tree is usually fetched in

on the first of May or at Whitsuntide, the Summer-tree is fetched in on the fourth Sunday in Lent. Therefore, if the May-tree is an embodiment of the tree-spirit or spirit of vegetation, the Summer-tree must likewise be an embodiment of the tree-spirit or spirit of vegetation. But we have seen that the Summer-tree is in some cases a revivification of the effigy of Death. It follows, therefore, that in these cases the effigy called Death must be an embodiment of the tree-spirit or spirit of vegetation. This inference is confirmed, first, by the vivifying and fertilising influence which the fragments of the effigy of Death are believed to exercise both on vegetable and on animal life, for this influence, as we saw in an earlier part of this work, is supposed to be a special attribute of the tree-spirit. It is confirmed, secondly, by observing that the effigy of Death is sometimes decked with leaves or made of twigs, branches, hemp, or a threshed-out sheaf of corn, and that sometimes it is hung on a little tree and so carried about by girls collecting money, just as is done with the May-tree and the May Lady, and with the Summer-tree and the doll attached to it. In short, we are driven to regard the expulsion of Death and the bringing in of Summer as, in some cases at least, merely another form of that death and revival of the spirit of vegetation in spring which we saw enacted in the killing and resurrection of the Wild Man. The burial and resurrection of the Carnival is probably another way of expressing the same idea. The interment of the representative of the Carnival under a dung-heap is natural, if he is supposed to possess a quickening and fertilising influence like that ascribed to the effigy of Death. The Esthonians, indeed, who carry the straw figure out of the village in the usual way on Shrove Tuesday, do not call it the Carnival, but the Wood-spirit (*Metsik*), and they clearly indicate the identity of the effigy with the wood-spirit by fixing it to the top of a tree in the wood, where it remains for a year, and is besought almost daily with prayers and offerings to protect the herds; for like a true wood-spirit the *Metsik* is a patron of cattle. Sometimes the *Metsik* is made of sheaves of corn.

Thus we may fairly conjecture that the names Carnival, Death, and Summer are comparatively late and inadequate expressions for the beings personified or embodied in the customs with which we have been dealing. The very abstractness of the names bespeaks a modern origin, for the personification of times and seasons like the Carnival and Summer, or of an abstract notion like death, is not primitive. But the ceremonies themselves bear the stamp of a dateless antiquity; therefore we can hardly help supposing that in their origin the ideas which they embodied were of a more simple and concrete order. The notion of a tree, perhaps of a particular kind of tree (for some savages have no word for tree in general), or even of an individual tree, is sufficiently concrete to supply a basis from which by a gradual process of generalisation the wider idea of a spirit of vegetation might be reached. But this general idea of vegetation would readily be confounded with the season in which it manifests itself, hence the substitution

of Spring, Summer, or May for the tree-spirit or spirit of vegetation would be easy and natural. Again, the concrete notion of the dying tree or dying vegetation would by a similar process of generalisation glide into a notion of death in general, so that the practice of carrying out the dying or dead vegetation in spring, as a preliminary to its revival, would in time widen out into an attempt to banish Death in general from the village or district. The view that in these spring ceremonies Death meant originally the dying or dead vegetation of winter has the high support of W. Mannhardt; and he confirms it by the analogy of the name Death as applied to the spirit of the ripe corn. Commonly the spirit of the ripe corn is conceived, not as dead, but as old, and hence it goes by the name of the Old Man or the Old Woman. But in some places the last sheaf cut at harvest, which is generally believed to be the seat of the corn spirit, is called "the Dead One": children are warned against entering the corn-fields because Death sits in the corn, and, in a game played by Saxon children in Transylvania at the maize harvest, Death is represented by a child completely covered with maize leaves.

§ 5 *Battle of Summer and Winter*.— Sometimes in the popular customs of the peasantry the contrast between the dormant powers of vegetation in winter and their awakening vitality in spring takes the form of a dramatic contest between actors who play the parts respectively of Winter and Summer. Thus in the towns of Sweden on May Day two troops of young men on horseback used to meet as if for mortal combat. One of them was led by a representative of Winter clad in furs, who threw snowballs and ice in order to prolong the cold weather. The other troop was commanded by a representative of Summer covered with fresh leaves and flowers. In the sham fight which followed the party of Summer came off victorious, and the ceremony ended with a feast. Again, in the region of the middle Rhine, a representative of Summer clad in ivy combats a representative of Winter clad in straw or moss and finally gains a victory over him. The vanquished foe is thrown to the ground and stripped of his casing of straw, which is torn to pieces and scattered about, while the youthful comrades of the two champions sing a song to commemorate the defeat of Winter by Summer. Afterwards they carry about a summer garland or branch and collect gifts of eggs and bacon from house to house. Sometimes the champion who acts the part of Summer is dressed in leaves and flowers and wears a chaplet of flowers on his head. In the Palatinate this mimic conflict takes place on the fourth Sunday in Lent. All over Bavaria the same drama used to be acted on the same day, and it was still kept up in some places down to the middle of the nineteenth century or later. While Summer appeared clad all in green, decked with fluttering ribbons, and carrying a branch in blossom or a little tree hung with apples and pears, Winter was muffled up in cap and mantle of fur and bore in his hand a snow-shovel or a flail. Accompanied by their respective retinues dressed in corresponding attire, they went through all the streets of the village, halting

before the houses and singing staves of old songs, for which they received presents of bread, eggs, and fruit. Finally, after a short struggle, Winter was beaten by Summer and ducked in the village well or driven out of the village with shouts and laughter into the forest.

At Goepfritz in Lower Austria, two men personating Summer and Winter used to go from house to house on Shrove Tuesday, and were everywhere welcomed by the children with great delight. The representative of Summer was clad in white and bore a sickle; his comrade, who played the part of Winter, had a fur cap on his head, his arms and legs were swathed in straw, and he carried a flail. In every house they sang verses alternately. At Dromling in Brunswick, down to the present time, the contest between Summer and Winter is acted every year at Whitsuntide by a troop of boys and a troop of girls. The boys rush singing, shouting, and ringing bells from house to house to drive Winter away, after them come the girls singing softly and led by a May Bride, all in bright dresses and decked with flowers and garlands to represent the genial advent of spring. Formerly the part of Winter was played by a straw-man which the boys carried with them, now it is acted by a real man in disguise.

Among the central Esquimaux of North America the contest between representatives of summer and winter, which in Europe has long degenerated into a mere dramatic performance, is still kept up as a magical ceremony of which the avowed intention is to influence the weather. In autumn, when storms announce the approach of the dismal Arctic winter, the Esquimaux divide themselves into two parties called respectively the ptarmigans and the ducks, the ptarmigans comprising all persons born in winter, and the ducks all persons born in summer. A long rope of sealskin is then stretched out, and each party laying hold of one end of it seeks by tugging with might and main to drag the other party over to its side. If the ptarmigans get the worst of it, then summer has won the game and fine weather may be expected to prevail through the winter.

§ 6 *Death and Resurrection of Kostrubonko* —In Russia funeral ceremonies like those of "Burying the Carnival" and "Carrying out Death" are celebrated under the names, not of Death or the Carnival, but of certain mythic figures, Kostrubonko, Kostroma, Kupalo, Lada, and Yarilo. These Russian ceremonies are observed both in spring and at midsummer. Thus "in Little Russia it used to be the custom at Eastertide to celebrate the funeral of a being called Kostrubonko, the deity of the spring. A circle was formed of singers who moved slowly around a girl who lay on the ground as if dead, and as they went they sang:

*' Dead, dead is our Kostrubonko !  
Dead, dead is our dear one ! '*

until the girl suddenly sprang up, on which the chorus joyfully exclaimed.

*' Come to life, come to life has our Kostrubonko !  
Come to life, come to life has our dear one ! '*

On the Eve of St. John (Midsummer Eve) a figure of Kupalo is made of straw and "is dressed in woman's clothes, with a necklace and a floral crown. Then a tree is felled, and, after being decked with ribbons, is set up on some chosen spot. Near this tree, to which they give the name of Marena [Winter or Death], the straw figure is placed, together with a table, on which stand spirits and viands. Afterwards a bonfire is lit, and the young men and maidens jump over it in couples, carrying the figure with them. On the next day they strip the tree and the figure of their ornaments, and throw them both into a stream." On St. Peter's Day, the twenty-ninth of June, or on the following Sunday, "the Funeral of Kostroma" or of Lada or of Yarilo is celebrated in Russia. In the Governments of Penza and Simbirsk the funeral used to be represented as follows. A bonfire was kindled on the twenty-eighth of June, and on the next day the maidens chose one of their number to play the part of Kostroma. Her companions saluted her with deep obeisances, placed her on a board, and carried her to the bank of a stream. There they bathed her in the water, while the oldest girl made a basket of lime-tree bark and beat it like a drum. Then they returned to the village and ended the day with processions, games, and dances. In the Murom district Kostroma was represented by a straw figure dressed in woman's clothes and flowers. This was laid in a trough and carried with songs to the bank of a lake or river. Here the crowd divided into two sides, of which the one attacked and the other defended the figure. At last the assailants gained the day, stripped the figure of its dress and ornaments, tore it in pieces, trod the straw of which it was made under foot, and flung it into the stream, while the defenders of the figure hid their faces in their hands and pretended to bewail the death of Kostroma. In the district of Kostroma the burial of Yarilo was celebrated on the twenty-ninth or thirtieth of June. The people chose an old man and gave him a small coffin containing a Priapus-like figure representing Yarilo. This he carried out of the town, followed by women chanting dirges and expressing by their gestures grief and despair. In the open fields a grave was dug, and into it the figure was lowered amid weeping and wailing, after which games and dances were begun, "calling to mind the funeral games celebrated in old times by the pagan Slavonians." In Little Russia the figure of Yarilo was laid in a coffin and carried through the streets after sunset surrounded by drunken women, who kept repeating mournfully, "He is dead! he is dead!" The men lifted and shook the figure as if they were trying to recall the dead man to life. Then they said to the women, "Women, weep not. I know what is sweeter than honey." But the women continued to lament and chant, as they do at funerals. "Of what was he guilty? He was so good. He will arise no more. O how shall we part from thee? What is life without thee? Arise, if only for a brief hour. But he rises not, he rises not." At last the Yarilo was buried in a grave.

§ 7. *Death and Revival of Vegetation* — These Russian customs are

plainly of the same nature as those which in Austria and Germany are known as "Carrying out Death." Therefore if the interpretation here adopted of the latter is right, the Russian Kostrubonko, Yarilo, and the rest must also have been originally embodiments of the spirit of vegetation, and their death must have been regarded as a necessary preliminary to their revival. The revival as a sequel to the death is enacted in the first of the ceremonies described, the death and resurrection of Kostrubonko. The reason why in some of these Russian ceremonies the death of the spirit of vegetation is celebrated at midsummer may be that the decline of summer is dated from Midsummer Day, after which the days begin to shorten, and the sun sets out on his downward journey.

*"To the darkness hollows  
Where the frosts of winter lie"*

Such a turning-point of the year, when vegetation might be thought to share the incipient though still almost imperceptible decay of summer, might very well be chosen by primitive man as a fit moment for resorting to those magic rites by which he hopes to stay the decline, or at least to ensure the revival, of plant life.

But while the death of vegetation appears to have been represented in all, and its revival in some, of these spring and midsummer ceremonies, there are features in some of them which can hardly be explained on this hypothesis alone. The solemn funeral, the lamentations, and the mourning attire, which often characterise these rites, are indeed appropriate at the death of the beneficent spirit of vegetation. But what shall we say of the glee with which the effigy is often carried out, of the sticks and stones with which it is assailed, and the taunts and curses which are hurled at it? What shall we say of the dread of the effigy evinced by the haste with which the bearers scamper home as soon as they have thrown it away, and by the belief that some one must soon die in any house into which it has looked? This dread might perhaps be explained by a belief that there is a certain infectiousness in the dead spirit of vegetation which renders its approach dangerous. But this explanation, besides being rather strained, does not cover the rejoicings which often attend the carrying out of Death. We must therefore recognise two distinct and seemingly opposite features in these ceremonies: on the one hand, sorrow for the death, and affection and respect for the dead; on the other hand, fear and hatred of the dead, and rejoicings at his death. How the former of these features is to be explained I have attempted to show. how the latter came to be so closely associated with the former is a question which I shall try to answer in the sequel.

§ 8 *Analogous Rites in India*—In the Kanagra district of India there is a custom observed by young girls in spring which closely resembles some of the European spring ceremonies just described. It is called the *Rālī Ka melā*, or fair of Rālī, the *Rālī* being a small painted earthen image of Siva or Pârvatī. The custom is in vogue all over the

Kanagra district, and its celebration, which is entirely confined to young girls, lasts through most of Chet (March-April) up to the Sankrânt of Baisâkh (April). On a morning in March all the young girls of the village take small baskets of *dâb* grass and flowers to an appointed place, where they throw them in a heap. Round this heap they stand in a circle and sing. This goes on every day for ten days, till the heap of grass and flowers has reached a fair height. Then they cut in the jungle two branches, each with three prongs at one end, and place them, prongs downwards, over the heap of flowers, so as to make two tripods or pyramids. On the single uppermost points of these branches they get an image-maker to construct two clay images, one to represent Siva, and the other Pârvatî. The girls then divide themselves into two parties, one for Siva and one for Pârvatî, and marry the images in the usual way, leaving out no part of the ceremony. After the marriage they have a feast, the cost of which is defrayed by contributions solicited from their parents. Then at the next Sankrânt (Baisâkh) they all go together to the river-side, throw the images into a deep pool, and weep over the place, as though they were performing funeral obsequies. The boys of the neighbourhood often tease them by diving after the images, bringing them up, and waving them about while the girls are crying over them. The object of the fair is said to be to secure a good husband.

That in this Indian ceremony the deities Siva and Pârvatî are conceived as spirits of vegetation seems to be proved by the placing of their images on branches over a heap of grass and flowers. Here, as often in European folk-custom, the divinities of vegetation are represented in duplicate, by plants and by puppets. The marriage of these Indian deities in spring corresponds to the European ceremonies in which the marriage of the vernal spirits of vegetation is represented by the King and Queen of May, the May Bride, Bridegroom of the May, and so forth. The throwing of the images into the water, and the mourning for them, are the equivalents of the European customs of throwing the dead spirit of vegetation under the name of Death, Yarilo, Kostroma, and the rest, into the water and lamenting over it. Again, in India, as often in Europe, the rite is performed exclusively by females. The notion that the ceremony helps to procure husbands for the girls can be explained by the quickening and fertilising influence which the spirit of vegetation is believed to exert upon the life of man as well as of plants.

§ 9. *The Magic Spring* — The general explanation which we have been led to adopt of these and many similar ceremonies is that they are, or were in their origin, magical rites intended to ensure the revival of nature in spring. The means by which they were supposed to effect this end were imitation and sympathy. Led astray by his ignorance of the true causes of things, primitive man believed that in order to produce the great phenomena of nature on which his life depended he had only to imitate them, and that immediately by a secret sympathy or mystic influence the little drama which he acted in forest glade or

mountain dell, on desert plain or wind-swept shore, would be taken up and repeated by mightier actors on a vaster stage. He fancied that by masquerading in leaves and flowers he helped the bare earth to clothe herself with verdure, and that by playing the death and burial of winter he drove that gloomy season away, and made smooth the path for the footsteps of returning spring. If we find it hard to throw ourselves even in fancy into a mental condition in which such things seem possible, we can more easily picture to ourselves the anxiety which the savage, when he first began to lift his thoughts above the satisfaction of his merely animal wants, and to meditate on the causes of things, may have felt as to the continued operation of what we now call the laws of nature. To us, familiar as we are with the conception of the uniformity and regularity with which the great cosmic phenomena succeed each other, there seems little ground for apprehension that the causes which produce these effects will cease to operate, at least within the near future. But this confidence in the stability of nature is bred only by the experience which comes of wide observation and long tradition; and the savage, with his narrow sphere of observation and his short-lived tradition, lacks the very elements of that experience which alone could set his mind at rest in face of the ever-changing and often menacing aspects of nature. No wonder, therefore, that he is thrown into a panic by an eclipse, and thinks that the sun or the moon would surely perish, if he did not raise a clamour and shoot his puny shafts into the air to defend the luminaries from the monster who threatens to devour them. No wonder he is terrified when in the darkness of night a streak of sky is suddenly illumined by the flash of a meteor, or the whole expanse of the celestial arch glows with the fitful light of the Northern Streamers. Even phenomena which recur at fixed and uniform intervals may be viewed by him with apprehension, before he has come to recognise the orderliness of their recurrence. The speed or slowness of his recognition of such periodic or cyclic changes in nature will depend largely on the length of the particular cycle. The cycle, for example, of day and night is everywhere, except in the polar regions, so short and hence so frequent that men probably soon ceased to discompose themselves seriously as to the chance of its failing to recur, though the ancient Egyptians, as we have seen, daily wrought enchantments to bring back to the east in the morning the fiery orb which had sunk at evening in the crimson west. But it was far otherwise with the annual cycle of the seasons. To any man a year is a considerable period, seeing that the number of our years is but few at the best. To the primitive savage, with his short memory and imperfect means of marking the flight of time, a year may well have been so long that he failed to recognise it as a cycle at all, and watched the changing aspects of earth and heaven with a perpetual wonder, alternately delighted and alarmed, elated and cast down, according as the vicissitudes of light and heat, of plant and animal life, ministered to his comfort or threatened his existence. In autumn when the withered leaves were whirled about the forest by



the nipping blast, and he looked up at the bare boughs, could he feel sure that they would ever be green again? As day by day the sun sank lower and lower in the sky, could he be certain that the luminary would ever retrace his heavenly road? Even the waning moon, whose pale sickle rose thinner and thinner every night over the rim of the eastern horizon, may have excited in his mind a fear lest, when it had wholly vanished, there should be moons no more.

These and a thousand such misgivings may have thronged the fancy and troubled the peace of the man who first began to reflect on the mysteries of the world he lived in, and to take thought for a more distant future than the morrow. It was natural, therefore, that with such thoughts and fears he should have done all that in him lay to bring back the faded blossom to the bough, to swing the low sun of winter up to his old place in the summer sky, and to restore its orb'd fulness to the silver lamp of the waning moon. We may smile at his vain endeavours if we please, but it was only by making a long series of experiments, of which some were almost inevitably doomed to failure, that man learned from experience the futility of some of his attempted methods and the fruitfulness of others. After all, magical ceremonies are nothing but experiments which have failed and which continue to be repeated merely because, for reasons which have already been indicated, the operator is unaware of their failure. With the advance of knowledge these ceremonies either cease to be performed altogether or are kept up from force of habit long after the intention with which they were instituted has been forgotten. Thus fallen from their high estate, no longer regarded as solemn rites on the punctual performance of which the welfare and even the life of the community depend, they sink gradually to the level of simple pageants, mummeries, and pastimes, till in the final stage of degeneration they are wholly abandoned by older people, and, from having once been the most serious occupation of the sage, become at last the idle sport of children. It is in this final stage of decay that most of the old magical rites of our European forefathers linger on at the present day, and even from this their last retreat they are fast being swept away by the rising tide of those multitudinous forces, moral, intellectual, and social, which are bearing mankind onward to a new and unknown goal. We may feel some natural regret at the disappearance of quaint customs and picturesque ceremonies, which have preserved to an age often deemed dull and prosaic something of the flavour and freshness of the olden time, some breath of the springtime of the world, yet our regret will be lessened when we remember that these pretty pageants, these now innocent diversions, had their origin in ignorance and superstition, that if they are a record of human endeavour, they are also a monument of fruitless ingenuity, of wasted labour, and of blighted hopes; and that for all their gay trappings—their flowers, their ribbons, and their music—they partake far more of tragedy than of farce.

The interpretation which, following in the footsteps of W Mann-

hardt, I have attempted to give of these ceremonies has been not a little confirmed by the discovery, made since this book was first written, that the natives of Central Australia regularly practise magical ceremonies for the purpose of awakening the dormant energies of nature at the approach of what may be called the Australian spring. Nowhere apparently are the alternations of the seasons more sudden and the contrasts between them more striking than in the deserts of Central Australia, where at the end of a long period of drought the sandy and stony wilderness, over which the silence and desolation of death appear to brood, is suddenly, after a few days of torrential rain, transformed into a landscape smiling with verdure and peopled with teeming multitudes of insects and lizards, of frogs and birds. The marvellous change which passes over the face of nature at such times has been compared even by European observers to the effect of magic, no wonder, then, that the savage should regard it as such in very deed. Now it is just when there is promise of the approach of a good season that the natives of Central Australia are wont especially to perform those magical ceremonies of which the avowed intention is to multiply the plants and animals they use as food. These ceremonies, therefore, present a close analogy to the spring customs of our European peasantry not only in the time of their celebration, but also in their aim, for we can hardly doubt that in instituting rites designed to assist the revival of plant life in spring our primitive forefathers were moved, not by any sentimental wish to smell at early violets, or pluck the rather primrose, or watch yellow daffodils dancing in the breeze, but by the very practical consideration, certainly not formulated in abstract terms, that the life of man is inextricably bound up with that of plants, and that if they were to perish he could not survive. And as the faith of the Australian savage in the efficacy of his magic rites is confirmed by observing that their performance is invariably followed, sooner or later, by that increase of vegetable and animal life which it is their object to produce, so, we may suppose, it was with European savages in the olden time. The sight of the fresh green in brake and thicket, of vernal flowers blowing on mossy banks, of swallows arriving from the south, and of the sun mounting daily higher in the sky, would be welcomed by them as so many visible signs that their enchantments were indeed taking effect, and would inspire them with a cheerful confidence that all was well with a world which they could thus mould to suit their wishes. Only in autumn days, as summer slowly faded, would their confidence again be dashed by doubts and misgivings at symptoms of decay, which told how vain were all their efforts to stave off for ever the approach of winter and of death.

## CHAPTER XXIX

## THE MYTH OF ADONIS

THE spectacle of the great changes which annually pass over the face of the earth has powerfully impressed the minds of men in all ages, and stirred them to meditate on the causes of transformations so vast and wonderful. Their curiosity has not been purely disinterested; for even the savage cannot fail to perceive how intimately his own life is bound up with the life of nature, and how the same processes which freeze the stream and strip the earth of vegetation menace him with extinction. At a certain stage of development men seem to have imagined that the means of averting the threatened calamity were in their own hands, and that they could hasten or retard the flight of the seasons by magic art. Accordingly they performed ceremonies and recited spells to make the rain to fall, the sun to shine, animals to multiply, and the fruits of the earth to grow. In course of time the slow advance of knowledge, which has dispelled so many cherished illusions, convinced at least the more thoughtful portion of mankind that the alternations of summer and winter, of spring and autumn, were not merely the result of their own magical rites, but that some deeper cause, some mightier power, was at work behind the shifting scenes of nature. They now pictured to themselves the growth and decay of vegetation, the birth and death of living creatures, as effects of the waxing or waning strength of divine beings, of gods and goddesses, who were born and died, who married and begot children, on the pattern of human life.

Thus the old magical theory of the seasons was displaced, or rather supplemented, by a religious theory. For although men now attributed the annual cycle of change primarily to corresponding changes in their deities, they still thought that by performing certain magical rites they could aid the god, who was the principle of life, in his struggle with the opposing principle of death. They imagined that they could recruit his failing energies and even raise him from the dead. The ceremonies which they observed for this purpose were in substance a dramatic representation of the natural processes which they wished to facilitate, for it is a familiar tenet of magic that you can produce any desired effect by merely imitating it. And as they now explained the fluctuations of growth and decay, of reproduction and dissolution, by the marriage, the death, and the rebirth or revival of the gods, their religious or rather magical dramas turned in great measure on these themes. They set forth the fruitful union of the powers of fertility, the sad death of one at least of the divine partners, and his joyful resurrection. Thus a religious theory was blended with a magical practice. The combination is familiar in history. Indeed, few religions have ever succeeded in wholly extricating themselves from the old trammels of magic. The inconsistency of acting on two

opposite principles, however it may vex the soul of the philosopher, rarely troubles the common man, indeed he is seldom even aware of it. His affair is to act, not to analyse the motives of his action. If mankind had always been logical and wise, history would not be a long chronicle of folly and crime.

Of the changes which the seasons bring with them, the most striking within the temperate zone are those which affect vegetation. The influence of the seasons on animals, though great, is not nearly so manifest. Hence it is natural that in the magical dramas designed to dispel winter and bring back spring the emphasis should be laid on vegetation, and that trees and plants should figure in them more prominently than beasts and birds. Yet the two sides of life, the vegetable and the animal, were not dissociated in the minds of those who observed the ceremonies. Indeed they commonly believed that the tie between the animal and the vegetable world was even closer than it really is, hence they often combined the dramatic representation of reviving plants with a real or a dramatic union of the sexes for the purpose of furthering at the same time and by the same act the multiplication of fruits, of animals, and of men. To them the principle of life and fertility, whether animal or vegetable, was one and indivisible. To live and to cause to live, to eat food and to beget children, these were the primary wants of men in the past, and they will be the primary wants of men in the future so long as the world lasts. Other things may be added to enrich and beautify human life, but unless these wants are first satisfied, humanity itself must cease to exist. These two things, therefore, food and children, were what men chiefly sought to procure by the performance of magical rites for the regulation of the seasons.

Nowhere, apparently, have these rites been more widely and solemnly celebrated than in the lands which border the eastern Mediterranean. Under the names of Osiris, Tammuz, Adonis, and Attis, the peoples of Egypt and Western Asia represented the yearly decay and revival of life, especially of vegetable life, which they personified as a god who annually died and rose again from the dead. In name and detail the rites varied from place to place, in substance they were the same. The supposed death and resurrection of this oriental deity, a god of many names but of essentially one nature, is now to be examined. We begin with Tammuz or Adonis.

The worship of Adonis was practised by the Semitic peoples of Babylonia and Syria, and the Greeks borrowed it from them as early as the seventh century before Christ. The true name of the deity was Tammuz, the appellation of Adonis is merely the Semitic *Adon*, "lord," a title of honour by which his worshippers addressed him. But the Greeks through a misunderstanding converted the title of honour into a proper name. In the religious literature of Babylonia Tammuz appears as the youthful spouse or lover of Ishtar, the great mother goddess, the embodiment of the reproductive energies of nature. The references to their connexion with each other in myth and ritual are

both fragmentary and obscure, but we gather from them that every year Tammuz was believed to die, passing away from the cheerful earth to the gloomy subterranean world, and that every year his divine mistress journeyed in quest of him "to the land from which there is no returning, to the house of darkness, where dust lies on door and bolt" During her absence the passion of love ceased to operate men and beasts alike forgot to reproduce their kinds. all life was threatened with extinction So intimately bound up with the goddess were the sexual functions of the whole animal kingdom that without her presence they could not be discharged A messenger of the great god Ea was accordingly despatched to rescue the goddess on whom so much depended The stern queen of the infernal regions, Allatu or Eresh-Kigal by name, reluctantly allowed Ishtar to be sprinkled with the Water of Life and to depart, in company probably with her lover Tammuz, that the two might return together to the upper world, and that with their return all nature might revive.

Laments for the departed Tammuz are contained in several Babylonian hymns, which liken him to plants that quickly fade. He is

*"A tamarisk that in the garden has drunk no water,  
Whose crown in the field has brought forth no blossom.  
A willow that rejoiced not by the watercourse,  
A willow whose roots were torn up  
A herb that in the garden had drunk no water"*

His death appears to have been annually mourned, to the shrill music of flutes, by men and women about midsummer in the month named after him, the month of Tammuz The dirges were seemingly chanted over an effigy of the dead god, which was washed with pure water, anointed with oil, and clad in a red robe, while the fumes of incense rose into the air, as if to stir his dormant senses by their pungent fragrance and wake him from the sleep of death In one of these dirges, inscribed *Lament of the Flutes for Tammuz*, we seem still to hear the voices of the singers chanting the sad refrain and to catch, like far-away music, the wailing notes of the flutes :

*"At his vanishing away she lifts up a lament,  
'Oh my child!' at his vanishing away she lifts up a lament;  
'My Damu!' at his vanishing away she lifts up a lament  
'My enchanter and priest!' at his vanishing away she lifts up a lament,  
At the shining cedar, rooted in a spacious place,  
In Eanna, above and below, she lifts up a lament  
Like the lament that a house lifts up for its master, lifts she up a lament,  
Like the lament that a city lifts up for its lord, lifts she up a lament.  
Her lament is the lament for a herb that grows not in the bed,  
Her lament is the lament for the corn that grows not in the ear.  
Her chamber is a possession that brings not forth a possession,  
A weary woman, a weary child, forspent  
Her lament is for a great river, where no willows grow,  
Her lament is for a field, where corn and herbs grow not  
Her lament is for a pool, where fishes grow not  
Her lament is for a thicket of reeds, where no reeds grow.*

*Her lament is for woods, where tamarisks grow not*

*Her lament is for a wilderness where no cypresses (?) grow*

*Her lament is for the depth of a garden of trees, where honey and wine grow not*

*Her lament is for meadows, where no plants grow*

*Her lament is for a palace, where length of life grows not "*

The tragical story and the melancholy rites of Adonis are better known to us from the descriptions of Greek writers than from the fragments of Babylonian literature or the brief reference of the prophet Ezekiel, who saw the women of Jerusalem weeping for Tammuz at the north gate of the temple. Mirrored in the glass of Greek mythology, the oriental deity appears as a comely youth beloved by Aphrodite. In his infancy the goddess hid him in a chest, which she gave in charge to Persephone, queen of the nether world. But when Persephone opened the chest and beheld the beauty of the babe, she refused to give him back to Aphrodite, though the goddess of love went down herself to hell to ransom her dear one from the power of the grave. The dispute between the two goddesses of love and death was settled by Zeus, who decreed that Adonis should abide with Persephone in the under world for one part of the year, and with Aphrodite in the upper world for another part. At last the fair youth was killed in hunting by a wild boar, or by the jealous Ares, who turned himself into the likeness of a boar in order to compass the death of his rival. Bitterly did Aphrodite lament her loved and lost Adonis. In this form of the myth, the contest between Aphrodite and Persephone for the possession of Adonis clearly reflects the struggle between Ishtar and Allatu in the land of the dead, while the decision of Zeus that Adonis is to spend one part of the year under ground and another part above ground is merely a Greek version of the annual disappearance and reappearance of Tammuz.

## CHAPTER XXX

### ADONIS IN SYRIA

THE myth of Adonis was localised and his rites celebrated with much solemnity at two places in Western Asia. One of these was Byblus on the coast of Syria, the other was Paphos in Cyprus. Both were great seats of the worship of Aphrodite, or rather of her Semitic counterpart, Astarte, and of both, if we accept the legends, Cinyras, the father of Adonis, was king. Of the two cities Byblus was the more ancient; indeed it claimed to be the oldest city in Phoenicia, and to have been founded in the early ages of the world by the great god El, whom Greeks and Romans identified with Cronus and Saturn respectively. However that may have been, in historical times it ranked as a holy place, the religious capital of the country, the Mecca or Jerusalem of the Phoenicians. The city stood on a height beside

the sea, and contained a great sanctuary of Astarte, where in the midst of a spacious open court, surrounded by cloisters and approached from below by staircases, rose a tall cone or obelisk, the holy image of the goddess. In this sanctuary the rites of Adonis were celebrated. Indeed the whole city was sacred to him, and the River Nahr Ibrahim, which falls into the sea a little to the south of Byblus, bore in antiquity the name of Adonis. This was the kingdom of Cinyras. From the earliest to the latest times the city appears to have been ruled by kings, assisted perhaps by a senate or council of elders.

The last king of Byblus bore the ancient name of Cinyras, and was beheaded by Pompey the Great for his tyrannous excesses. His legendary namesake Cinyras is said to have founded a sanctuary of Aphrodite, that is, of Astarte, at a place on Mount Lebanon, distant a day's journey from the capital. The spot was probably Aphaca, at the source of the River Adonis, half-way between Byblus and Baalbec ; for at Aphaca there was a famous grove and sanctuary of Astarte which Constantine destroyed on account of the flagitious character of the worship. The site of the temple has been discovered by modern travellers near the miserable village which still bears the name of Aska at the head of the wild, romantic, wooded gorge of the Adonis. The hamlet stands among groves of noble walnut-trees on the brink of the lyn. A little way off the river rushes from a cavern at the foot of a mighty amphitheatre of towering cliffs to plunge in a series of cascades into the awful depths of the glen. The deeper it descends, the ranker and denser grows the vegetation, which, sprouting from the crannies and fissures of the rocks, spreads a green veil over the roaring or murmuring stream in the tremendous chasm below. There is something delicious, almost intoxicating, in the freshness of these tumbling waters, in the sweetness and purity of the mountain air, in the vivid green of the vegetation. The temple, of which some massive hewn blocks and a fine column of Syenite granite still mark the site, occupied a terrace facing the source of the river and commanding a magnificent prospect. Across the foam and the roar of the waterfalls you look up to the cavern and away to the top of the sublime precipices above. So lofty is the cliff that the goats which creep along its ledges to browse on the bushes appear like ants to the spectator hundreds of feet below. Seaward the view is especially impressive when the sun floods the profound gorge with golden light, revealing all the fantastic buttresses and rounded towers of its mountain rampart, and falling softly on the varied green of the woods which clothe its depths. It was here that, according to the legend, Adonis met Aphrodite for the first or the last time, and here his mangled body was buried. A fairer scene could hardly be imagined for a story of tragic love and death. Yet, sequestered as the valley is and must always have been, it is not wholly deserted. A convent or a village may be observed here and there standing out against the sky on the top of some beetling crag, or clinging to the face of a nearly perpendicular cliff high above the foam and the din of the river ; and at evening the lights that

twinkle through the gloom betray the presence of human habitations on slopes which might seem inaccessible to man. In antiquity the whole of the lovely vale appears to have been dedicated to Adonis, and to this day it is haunted by his memory, for the heights which shut it in are crested at various points by ruined monuments of his worship, some of them overhanging dreadful abysses, down which it turns the head dizzy to look and see the eagles wheeling about their nests far below. One such monument exists at Ghineh. The face of a great rock, above a roughly hewn recess, is here carved with figures of Adonis and Aphrodite. He is portrayed with spear in rest, awaiting the attack of a bear, while she is seated in an attitude of sorrow. Her grief-stricken figure may well be the mourning Aphrodite of the Lebanon described by Macrobius, and the recess in the rock is perhaps her lover's tomb. Every year, in the belief of his worshippers, Adonis was wounded to death on the mountains, and every year the face of nature itself was dyed with his sacred blood. So year by year the Syrian damsels lamented his untimely fate, while the red anemone, his flower, bloomed among the cedars of Lebanon, and the river ran red to the sea, fringing the winding shores of the blue Mediterranean, whenever the wind set inshore, with a sinuous band of crimson.

## CHAPTER XXXI

### ADONIS IN CYPRUS

The island of Cyprus lies but one day's sail from the coast of Syria. Indeed, on fine summer evenings its mountains may be descried looming low and dark against the red fires of sunset. With its rich mines of copper and its forests of firs and stately cedars, the island naturally attracted a commercial and maritime people like the Phoenicians, while the abundance of its corn, its wine, and its oil must have rendered it in their eyes a Land of Promise by comparison with the niggardly nature of their own rugged coast, hemmed in between the mountains and the sea. Accordingly they settled in Cyprus at a very early date and remained there long after the Greeks had also established themselves on its shores, for we know from inscriptions and coins that Phoenician kings reigned at Citium, the Chittim of the Hebrews, down to the time of Alexander the Great. Naturally the Semitic colonists brought their gods with them from the mother-land. They worshipped Baal of the Lebanon, who may well have been Adonis, and at Amathus on the south coast they instituted the rites of Adonis and Aphrodite, or rather Astarte. Here, as at Byblus, these rites resembled the Egyptian worship of Osiris so closely that some people even identified the Adonis of Amathus with Osiris.

But the great seat of the worship of Aphrodite and Adonis in Cyprus was Paphos on the south-western side of the island. Among



the petty kingdoms into which Cyprus was divided from the earliest times until the end of the fourth century before our era Paphos must have ranked with the best. It is a land of hills and billowy ridges, diversified by fields and vineyards and intersected by rivers, which in the course of ages have carved for themselves beds of such tremendous depth that travelling in the interior is difficult and tedious. The lofty range of Mount Olympus (the modern Troodos), capped with snow the greater part of the year, screens Paphos from the northerly and easterly winds and cuts it off from the rest of the island. On the slopes of the range the last pine-woods of Cyprus linger, sheltering here and there monasteries in scenery not unworthy of the Apennines. The old city of Paphos occupied the summit of a hill about a mile from the sea, the newer city sprang up at the harbour some ten miles off. The sanctuary of Aphrodite at Old Paphos (the modern Kuklia) was one of the most celebrated shrines in the ancient world. According to Herodotus, it was founded by Phœnician colonists from Ascalon, but it is possible that a native goddess of fertility was worshipped on the spot before the arrival of the Phœnicians, and that the newcomers identified her with their own Baalath or Astarte, whom she may have closely resembled. If two deities were thus fused in one, we may suppose that they were both varieties of that great goddess of motherhood and fertility whose worship appears to have been spread all over Western Asia from a very early time. The supposition is confirmed as well by the archaic shape of her image as by the licentious character of her rites, for both that shape and those rites were shared by her with other Asiatic deities. Her image was simply a white cone or pyramid. In like manner, a cone was the emblem of Astarte at Byblus, of the native goddess whom the Greeks called Artemis at Perga in Pamphylia, and of the sun-god Heliogabalus at Emesa in Syria. Conical stones, which apparently served as idols, have also been found at Golgi in Cyprus, and in the Phœnician temples of Malta, and cones of sandstone came to light at the shrine of the "Mistress of Turquoise" among the barren hills and frowning precipices of Sinai.

In Cyprus it appears that before marriage all women were formerly obliged by custom to prostitute themselves to strangers at the sanctuary of the goddess, whether she went by the name of Aphrodite, Astarte, or what not. Similar customs prevailed in many parts of Western Asia. Whatever its motive, the practice was clearly regarded, not as an orgy of lust, but as a solemn religious duty performed in the service of that great Mother Goddess of Western Asia whose name varied, while her type remained constant, from place to place. Thus at Babylon every woman, whether rich or poor, had once in her life to submit to the embraces of a stranger at the temple of Mylitta, that is, of Ishtar or Astarte, and to dedicate to the goddess the wages earned by this sanctified harlotry. The sacred precinct was crowded with women waiting to observe the custom. Some of them had to wait there for years. At Heliopolis or Baalbec in Syria, famous for the imposing grandeur of its ruined temples, the custom of the country

required that every maiden should prostitute herself to a stranger at the temple of Astarte, and matrons as well as maids testified their devotion to the goddess in the same manner. The emperor Constantine abolished the custom, destroyed the temple, and built a church in its stead. In Phœnician temples women prostituted themselves for hire in the service of religion, believing that by this conduct they propitiated the goddess and won her favour. "It was a law of the Amorites, that she who was about to marry should sit in fornication seven days by the gate." At Byblus the people shaved their heads in the annual mourning for Adonis. Women who refused to sacrifice their hair had to give themselves up to strangers on a certain day of the festival, and the money which they thus earned was devoted to the goddess. A Greek inscription found at Tralles in Lydia proves that the practice of religious prostitution survived in that country as late as the second century of our era. It records of a certain woman, Aurelia Aemilia by name, not only that she herself served the god in the capacity of a harlot at his express command, but that her mother and other female ancestors had done the same before her, and the publicity of the record, engraved on a marble column which supported a votive offering, shows that no stain attached to such a life and such a parentage. In Armenia the noblest families dedicated their daughters to the service of the goddess Anaitis in her temple at Acilisena, where the damsels acted as prostitutes for a long time before they were given in marriage. Nobody scrupled to take one of these girls to wife when her period of service was over. Again, the goddess Ma was served by a multitude of sacred harlots at Comana in Pontus, and crowds of men and women flocked to her sanctuary from the neighbouring cities and country to attend the biennial festivals or to pay their vows to the goddess.

If we survey the whole of the evidence on this subject, some of which has still to be laid before the reader, we may conclude that a great Mother Goddess, the personification of all the reproductive energies of nature, was worshipped under different names but with a substantial similarity of myth and ritual by many peoples of Western Asia; that associated with her was a lover, or rather series of lovers, divine yet mortal, with whom she mated year by year, their commerce being deemed essential to the propagation of animals and plants, each in their several kind, and further, that the fabulous union of the divine pair was simulated and, as it were, multiplied on earth by the real, though temporary, union of the human sexes at the sanctuary of the goddess for the sake of thereby ensuring the fruitfulness of the ground and the increase of man and beast.

At Paphos the custom of religious prostitution is said to have been instituted by King Cinyras, and to have been practised by his daughters, the sisters of Adonis, who, having incurred the wrath of Aphrodite, mated with strangers and ended their days in Egypt. In this form of the tradition the wrath of Aphrodite is probably a feature added by a later authority, who could only regard conduct which shocked his

own moral sense as a punishment inflicted by the goddess instead of as a sacrifice regularly enjoined by her on all her devotees. At all events the story indicates that the princesses of Paphos had to conform to the custom as well as women of humble birth

Among the stories which were told of Cinyras, the ancestor of the priestly kings of Paphos and the father of Adonis, there are some that deserve our attention. In the first place, he is said to have begotten his son Adonis in incestuous intercourse with his daughter Myrrha at a festival of the corn-goddess, at which women robed in white were wont to offer corn-wreaths as first-fruits of the harvest and to observe strict chastity for nine days. Similar cases of incest with a daughter are reported of many ancient kings. It seems unlikely that such reports are without foundation, and perhaps equally improbable that they refer to mere fortuitous outbursts of unnatural lust. We may suspect that they are based on a practice actually observed for a definite reason in certain special circumstances. Now in countries where the royal blood was traced through women only, and where consequently the king held office merely in virtue of his marriage with an hereditary princess, who was the real sovereign, it appears to have often happened that a prince married his own sister, the princess royal, in order to obtain with her hand the crown which otherwise would have gone to another man, perhaps to a stranger. May not the same rule of descent have furnished a motive for incest with a daughter? For it seems a natural corollary from such a rule that the king was bound to vacate the throne on the death of his wife, the queen, since he occupied it only by virtue of his marriage with her. When that marriage terminated, his right to the throne terminated with it and passed at once to his daughter's husband. Hence if the king desired to reign after his wife's death, the only way in which he could legitimately continue to do so was by marrying his daughter, and thus prolonging through her the title which had formerly been his through her mother.

Cinyras is said to have been famed for his exquisite beauty and to have been wooed by Aphrodite herself. Thus it would appear, as scholars have already observed, that Cinyras was in a sense a duplicate of his handsome son Adonis, to whom the inflammable goddess also lost her heart. Further, these stories of the love of Aphrodite for two members of the royal house of Paphos can hardly be dissociated from the corresponding legend told of Pygmalion, a Phœnician king of Cyprus, who is said to have fallen in love with an image of Aphrodite and taken it to his bed. When we consider that Pygmalion was the father-in-law of Cinyras, that the son of Cinyras was Adonis, and that all three, in successive generations, are said to have been concerned in a love-intrigue with Aphrodite, we can hardly help concluding that the early Phœnician kings of Paphos, or their sons, regularly claimed to be not merely the priests of the goddess but also her lovers, in other words, that in their official capacity they personated Adonis. At all events Adonis is said to have reigned in Cyprus, and it appears to be certain that the title of Adonis was regularly borne by the sons of all

the Phœnician kings of the island. It is true that the title strictly signified no more than "lord", yet the legends which connect these Cyprian princes with the goddess of love make it probable that they claimed the divine nature as well as the human dignity of Adonis. The story of Pygmalion points to a ceremony of a sacred marriage in which the king wedded the image of Aphrodite, or rather of Astarte. If that was so, the tale was in a sense true, not of a single man only, but of a whole series of men, and it would be all the more likely to be told of Pygmalion, if that was a common name of Semitic kings in general, and of Cyprian kings in particular. Pygmalion, at all events, is known as the name of the famous king of Tyre from whom his sister Dido fled, and a king of Citium and Idalium in Cyprus, who reigned in the time of Alexander the Great, was also called Pygmalion, or rather Pumiyathon, the Phœnician name which the Greeks corrupted into Pygmalion. Further, it deserves to be noted that the names Pygmalion and Astarte occur together in a Punic inscription on a gold medallion which was found in a grave at Carthage; the characters of the inscription are of the earliest type. As the custom of religious prostitution at Paphos is said to have been founded by King Cinyras and observed by his daughters, we may surmise that the kings of Paphos played the part of the divine bridegroom in a less innocent rite than the form of marriage with a statue; in fact, that at certain festivals each of them had to mate with one or more of the sacred harlots of the temple, who played Astarte to his Adonis. If that was so, there is more truth than has commonly been supposed in the reproach cast by the Christian fathers that the Aphrodite worshipped by Cinyras was a common whore. The fruit of their union would rank as sons and daughters of the deity, and would in time become the parents of gods and goddesses, like their fathers and mothers before them. In this manner Paphos, and perhaps all sanctuaries of the great Asiatic goddess where sacred prostitution was practised, might be well stocked with human deities, the offspring of the divine king by his wives, concubines, and temple harlots. Any one of these might probably succeed his father on the throne or be sacrificed in his stead whenever stress of war or other grave junctures called, as they sometimes did, for the death of a royal victim. Such a tax, levied occasionally on the king's numerous progeny for the good of the country, would neither extinguish the divine stock nor break the father's heart, who divided his paternal affection among so many. At all events, if, as there seems reason to believe, Semitic kings were often regarded at the same time as hereditary deities, it is easy to understand the frequency of Semitic personal names which imply that the bearers of them were the sons or daughters, the brothers or sisters, the fathers or mothers of a god, and we need not resort to the shifts employed by some scholars to evade the plain sense of the words. This interpretation is confirmed by a parallel Egyptian usage, for in Egypt, where the kings were worshipped as divine, the queen was called "the wife of the god" or "the mother of the god," and

the title "father of the god" was borne not only by the king's real father but also by his father-in-law. Similarly, perhaps, among the Semites any man who sent his daughter to swell the royal harem may have been allowed to call himself "the father of the god."

If we may judge by his name, the Semitic king who bore the name of Cinyras was, like King David, a harper, for the name of Cinyras is clearly connected with the Greek *cinyra*, "a lyre," which in its turn comes from the Semitic *kinnor*, "a lyre," the very word applied to the instrument on which David played before Saul. We shall probably not err in assuming that at Paphos as at Jerusalem the music of the lyre or harp was not a mere pastime designed to while away an idle hour, but formed part of the service of religion, the moving influence of its melodies being perhaps set down, like the effect of wine, to the direct inspiration of a deity. Certainly at Jerusalem the regular clergy of the temple prophesied to the music of harps, of psalteries, and of cymbals, and it appears that the irregular clergy also, as we may call the prophets, depended on some such stimulus for inducing the ecstatic state which they took for immediate converse with the divinity. Thus we read of a band of prophets coming down from a high place with a psaltery, a timbrel, a pipe, and a harp before them, and prophesying as they went. Again, when the united forces of Judah and Ephraim were traversing the wilderness of Moab in pursuit of the enemy, they could find no water for three days, and were like to die of thirst, they and the beasts of burden. In this emergency the prophet Elisha, who was with the army, called for a minstrel and bade him play. Under the influence of the music he ordered the soldiers to dig trenches in the sandy bed of the waterless waddy through which lay the line of march. They did so, and next morning the trenches were full of the water that had drained down into them underground from the desolate, forbidding mountains on either hand. The prophet's success in striking water in the wilderness resembles the reported success of modern dowsers, though his mode of procedure was different. Incidentally he rendered another service to his countrymen. For the skulking Moabites from their lairs among the rocks saw the red sun of the desert reflected in the water, and taking it for the blood, or perhaps rather for an omen of the blood, of their enemies, they plucked up heart to attack the camp and were defeated with great slaughter.

Again, just as the cloud of melancholy which from time to time darkened the moody mind of Saul was viewed as an evil spirit from the Lord vexing him, so on the other hand the solemn strains of the harp, which soothed and composed his troubled thoughts, may well have seemed to the hag-ridden king the very voice of God or of his good angel whispering peace. Even in our own day a great religious writer, himself deeply sensitive to the witchery of music, has said that musical notes, with all their power to fire the blood and melt the heart, cannot be mere empty sounds and nothing more; no, they have escaped from some higher sphere, they are outpourings of eternal

harmony, the voice of angels, the Magnificat of saints. It is thus that the rude imaginings of primitive man are transfigured and his feeble lisplings echoed with a rolling reverberation in the musical prose of Newman. Indeed the influence of music on the development of religion is a subject which would repay a sympathetic study. For we cannot doubt that this, the most intimate and affecting of all the arts, has done much to create as well as to express the religious emotions, thus modifying more or less deeply the fabric of belief to which at first sight it seems only to minister. The musician has done his part as well as the prophet and the thinker in the making of religion. Every faith has its appropriate music, and the difference between the creeds might almost be expressed in musical notation. The interval, for example, which divides the wild revels of Cybele from the stately ritual of the Catholic Church is measured by the gulf which severs the dissonant clash of cymbals and tambourines from the grave harmonies of Palestrina and Handel. A different spirit breathes in the difference of the music.

## CHAPTER XXXII

### THE RITUAL OF ADONIS

At the festivals of Adonis, which were held in Western Asia and in Greek lands, the death of the god was annually mourned, with a bitter wailing, chiefly by women, images of him, dressed to resemble corpses, were carried out as to burial and then thrown into the sea or into springs; and in some places his revival was celebrated on the following day. But at different places the ceremonies varied somewhat in the manner and apparently also in the season of their celebration. At Alexandria images of Aphrodite and Adonis were displayed on two couches; beside them were set ripe fruits of all kinds, cakes, plants growing in flower-pots, and green bowers twined with anise. The marriage of the lovers was celebrated one day, and on the morrow women attired as mourners, with streaming hair and bared breasts, bore the image of the dead Adonis to the sea-shore and committed it to the waves. Yet they sorrowed not without hope, for they sang that the lost one would come back again. The date at which this Alexandrian ceremony was observed is not expressly stated; but from the mention of the ripe fruits it has been inferred that it took place in late summer. In the great Phœnician sanctuary of Astarte at Byblus the death of Adonis was annually mourned, to the shrill wailing notes of the flute, with weeping, lamentation, and beating of the breast; but next day he was believed to come to life again and ascend up to heaven in the presence of his worshippers. The disconsolate believers, left behind on earth, shaved their heads as the Egyptians did on the death of the divine bull Apis, women who could not bring themselves to sacrifice their beautiful tresses had to

give themselves up to strangers on a certain day of the festival, and to dedicate to Astarte the wages of their shame

This Phœnician festival appears to have been a vernal one, for its date was determined by the discoloration of the River Adonis, and this has been observed by modern travellers to occur in spring. At that season the red earth washed down from the mountains by the rain tinges the water of the river, and even the sea, for a great way with a blood-red hue, and the crimson stain was believed to be the blood of Adonis, annually wounded to death by the boar on Mount Lebanon. Again, the scarlet anemone is said to have sprung from the blood of Adonis, or to have been stained by it, and as the anemone blooms in Syria about Easter, this may be thought to show that the festival of Adonis, or at least one of his festivals, was held in spring. The name of the flower is probably derived from Naaman ("darling"), which seems to have been an epithet of Adonis. The Arabs still call the anemone "wounds of the Naaman." The red rose also was said to owe its hue to the same sad occasion; for Aphrodite, hastening to her wounded lover, trod on a bush of white roses; the cruel thorns tore her tender flesh, and her sacred blood dyed the white roses for ever red. It would be idle, perhaps, to lay much weight on evidence drawn from the calendar of flowers, and in particular to press an argument so fragile as the bloom of the rose. Yet so far as it counts at all, the tale which links the damask rose with the death of Adonis points to a summer rather than to a spring celebration of his passion. In Attica, certainly, the festival fell at the height of summer. For the fleet which Athens fitted out against Syracuse, and by the destruction of which her power was permanently crippled, sailed at midsummer, and by an ominous coincidence the sombre rites of Adonis were being celebrated at the very time. As the troops marched down to the harbour to embark, the streets through which they passed were lined with coffins and corpse-like effigies, and the air was rent with the noise of women wailing for the dead Adonis. The circumstance cast a gloom over the sailing of the most splendid armament that Athens ever sent to sea. Many ages afterwards, when the Emperor Julian made his first entry into Antioch, he found in like manner the gay, the luxurious capital of the East plunged in mimic grief for the annual death of Adonis; and if he had any presentiment of coming evil, the voices of lamentation which struck upon his ear must have seemed to sound his knell.

The resemblance of these ceremonies to the Indian and European ceremonies which I have described elsewhere is obvious. In particular, apart from the somewhat doubtful date of its celebration, the Alexandrian ceremony is almost identical with the Indian. In both of them the marriage of two divine beings, whose affinity with vegetation seems indicated by the fresh plants with which they are surrounded, is celebrated in effigy, and the effigies are afterwards mourned over and thrown into the water. From the similarity of these customs to each other and to the spring and midsummer customs

of modern Europe we should naturally expect that they all admit of a common explanation. Hence, if the explanation which I have adopted of the latter is correct, the ceremony of the death and resurrection of Adonis must also have been a dramatic representation of the decay and revival of plant life. The inference thus based on the resemblance of the customs is confirmed by the following features in the legend and ritual of Adonis. His affinity with vegetation comes out at once in the common story of his birth. He was said to have been born from a myrrh-tree, the bark of which bursting, after a ten months' gestation, allowed the lovely infant to come forth. According to some, a boar rent the bark with his tusk and so opened a passage for the babe. A faint rationalistic colour was given to the legend by saying that his mother was a woman named Myrrh, who had been turned into a myrrh-tree soon after she had conceived the child. The use of myrrh as incense at the festival of Adonis may have given rise to the fable. We have seen that incense was burnt at the corresponding Babylonian rites, just as it was burnt by the idolatrous Hebrews in honour of the Queen of Heaven, who was no other than Astarte. Again, the story that Adonis spent half, or according to others a third, of the year in the lower world and the rest of it in the upper world, is explained most simply and naturally by supposing that he represented vegetation, especially the corn, which lies buried in the earth half the year and reappears above ground the other half. Certainly of the annual phenomena of nature there is none which suggests so obviously the idea of death and resurrection as the disappearance and reappearance of vegetation in autumn and spring. Adonis has been taken for the sun, but there is nothing in the sun's annual course within the temperate and tropical zones to suggest that he is dead for half or a third of the year and alive for the other half or two-thirds. He might, indeed, be conceived as weakened in winter, but dead he could not be thought to be, his daily reappearance contradicts the supposition. Within the Arctic Circle, where the sun annually disappears for a continuous period which varies from twenty-four hours to six months according to the latitude, his yearly death and resurrection would certainly be an obvious idea, but no one except the unfortunate astronomer Bailly has maintained that the Adonis worship came from the Arctic regions. On the other hand, the annual death and revival of vegetation is a conception which readily presents itself to men in every stage of savagery and civilisation; and the vastness of the scale on which this ever-recurring decay and regeneration takes place, together with man's intimate dependence on it for subsistence, combine to render it the most impressive annual occurrence in nature, at least within the temperate zones. It is no wonder that a phenomenon so important, so striking, and so universal should, by suggesting similar ideas, have given rise to similar rites in many lands. We may, therefore, accept as probable an explanation of the Adonis worship which accords so well with the facts of nature and with the analogy of similar rites in



other lands. Moreover, the explanation is countenanced by a considerable body of opinion amongst the ancients themselves, who again and again interpreted the dying and reviving god as the reaped and sprouting grain.

The character of Tammuz or Adonis as a corn-spirit comes out plainly in an account of his festival given by an Arabic writer of the tenth century. In describing the rites and sacrifices observed at the different seasons of the year by the heathen Syrians of Harran, he says "Tammuz (July). In the middle of this month is the festival of el-Bûgât, that is, of the weeping women, and this is the Tâ-uz festival, which is celebrated in honour of the god Tâ-uz. The women bewail him, because his lord slew him so cruelly, ground his bones in a mill, and then scattered them to the wind. The women (during this festival) eat nothing which has been ground in a mill, but limit their diet to steeped wheat, sweet vetches, dates, raisins, and the like." Tâ-uz, who is no other than Tammuz, is here like Burns's John Barleycorn.

*"They wasted o'er a scorching flame      But a miller us'd him worst of all,  
The marrow of his bones,                      For he crush'd him between two stones"*

This concentration, so to say, of the nature of Adonis upon the cereal crops is characteristic of the stage of culture reached by his worshippers in historical times. They had left the nomadic life of the wandering hunter and herdsman far behind them, for ages they had been settled on the land, and had depended for their subsistence mainly on the products of tillage. The berries and roots of the wilderness, the grass of the pastures, which had been matters of vital importance to their ruder forefathers, were now of little moment to them. more and more their thoughts and energies were engrossed by the staple of their life, the corn, more and more accordingly the propitiation of the deities of fertility in general and of the corn-spirit in particular tended to become the central feature of their religion. The aim they set before themselves in celebrating the rites was thoroughly practical. It was no vague poetical sentiment which prompted them to hail with joy the rebirth of vegetation and to mourn its decline. Hunger, felt or feared, was the mainspring of the worship of Adonis.

It has been suggested by Father Lagrange that the mourning for Adonis was essentially a harvest rite designed to propitiate the corn-god, who was then either perishing under the sickles of the reapers or being trodden to death under the hoofs of the oxen on the threshing-floor. While the men slew him, the women wept crocodile tears at home to appease his natural indignation by a show of grief for his death. The theory fits in well with the dates of the festivals, which fell in spring or summer, for spring and summer, not autumn, are the seasons of the barley and wheat harvests in the lands which worshipped Adonis. Further, the hypothesis is confirmed by the practice of the Egyptian reapers, who lamented, calling upon Isis,

when they cut the first corn, and it is recommended by the analogous customs of many hunting tribes, who testify great respect for the animals which they kill and eat

Thus interpreted the death of Adonis is not the natural decay of vegetation in general under the summer heat or the winter cold, it is the violent destruction of the corn by man, who cuts it down on the field, stamps it to pieces on the threshing-floor, and grinds it to powder in the mill. That this was indeed the principal aspect in which Adonis presented himself in later times to the agricultural peoples of the Levant, may be admitted, but whether from the beginning he had been the corn and nothing but the corn, may be doubted. At an earlier period he may have been to the herdsman, above all, the tender herbage which sprouts after rain, offering rich pasture to the lean and hungry cattle. Earlier still he may have embodied the spirit of the nuts and berries which the autumn woods yield to the savage hunter and his squaw. And just as the husbandman must propitiate the spirit of the corn which he consumes, so the herdsman must appease the spirit of the grass and leaves which his cattle munch, and the hunter must soothe the spirit of the roots which he digs, and of the fruits which he gathers from the bough. In all cases the propitiation of the injured and angry sprite would naturally comprise elaborate excuses and apologies, accompanied by loud lamentations at his decease whenever, through some deplorable accident or necessity, he happened to be murdered as well as robbed. Only we must bear in mind that the savage hunter and herdsman of those early days had probably not yet attained to the abstract idea of vegetation in general, and that accordingly, so far as Adonis existed for them at all, he must have been the *Adon* or lord of each individual tree and plant rather than a personification of vegetable life as a whole. Thus there would be as many Adonises as there were trees and shrubs and each of them might expect to receive satisfaction for any damage done to his person or property. And year by year, when the trees were deciduous, every Adonis would seem to bleed to death with the red leaves of autumn and to come to life again with the fresh green of spring.

There is some reason to think that in early times Adonis was sometimes personated by a living man who died a violent death in the character of the god. Further, there is evidence which goes to show that among the agricultural peoples of the Eastern Mediterranean, the corn-spirit, by whatever name he was known, was often represented, year by year, by human victims slain on the harvest-field. If that was so, it seems likely that the propitiation of the corn-spirit would tend to fuse to some extent with the worship of the dead. For the spirits of these victims might be thought to return to life in the ears which they had fattened with their blood, and to die a second death at the reaping of the corn. Now the ghosts of those who have perished by violence are surly and apt to wreak their vengeance on their slayers whenever an opportunity offers. Hence the attempt

to appease the souls of the slaughtered victims would naturally blend, at least in the popular conception, with the attempt to pacify the slain corn-spirit. And as the dead came back in the sprouting corn, so they might be thought to return in the spring flowers, waked from their long sleep by the soft vernal airs. They had been laid to their rest under the sod. What more natural than to imagine that the violets and the hyacinths, the roses and the anemones, sprang from their dust, were empurpled or incarnadined by their blood, and contained some portion of their spirit?

*" I sometimes think that never blows so red  
The Rose as where some buried Caesar bled ;  
That every Hyacinth the Garden wears  
Dropt in her Lap from some once lovely Head*

*" And this reviving Herb whose tender Green  
Fledges the River-Lip on which we lean—  
Ah, lean upon it lightly, for who knows  
From what once lovely Lip it springs unseen ? "*

In the summer after the battle of Landen, the most sanguinary battle of the seventeenth century in Europe, the earth, saturated with the blood of twenty thousand slain, broke forth into millions of poppies, and the traveller who passed that vast sheet of scarlet might well fancy that the earth had indeed given up her dead. At Athens the great Commemoration of the Dead fell in spring about the middle of March, when the early flowers are in bloom. Then the dead were believed to rise from their graves and go about the streets, vainly endeavouring to enter the temples and dwellings, which were barred against these perturbed spirits with ropes, buckthorn, and pitch. The name of the festival, according to the most obvious and natural interpretation, means the Festival of Flowers, and the title would fit well with the substance of the ceremonies if at that season the poor ghosts were indeed thought to creep from the narrow house with the opening flowers. There may therefore be a measure of truth in the theory of Renan, who saw in the Adonis worship a dreamy voluptuous cult of death, conceived not as the King of Terrors, but as an insidious enchanter who lures his victims to himself and lulls them into an eternal sleep. The infinite charm of nature in the Lebanon, he thought, lends itself to religious emotions of this sensuous, visionary sort, hovering vaguely between pain and pleasure, between slumber and tears. It would doubtless be a mistake to attribute to Syrian peasants the worship of a conception so purely abstract as that of death in general. Yet it may be true that in their simple minds the thought of the reviving spirit of vegetation was blent with the very concrete notion of the ghosts of the dead, who come to life again in spring days with the early flowers, with the tender green of the corn and the many-tinted blossoms of the trees. Thus their views of the death and resurrection of nature would be coloured by their views of the death and resurrection of man, by their personal sorrows

and hopes and fears In like manner we cannot doubt that Renan's theory of Adonis was itself deeply tinged by passionate memories, memories of the slumber akin to death which sealed his own eyes on the slopes of the Lebanon, memories of the sister who sleeps in the land of Adonis never again to wake with the anemones and the roses.

## CHAPTER XXXIII

### THE GARDENS OF ADONIS

PERHAPS the best proof that Adonis was a deity of vegetation, and especially of the corn, is furnished by the gardens of Adonis, as they were called These were baskets or pots filled with earth, in which wheat, barley, lettuces, fennel, and various kinds of flowers were sown and tended for eight days, chiefly or exclusively by women Fostered by the sun's heat, the plants shot up rapidly, but having no root they withered as rapidly away, and at the end of eight days were carried out with the images of the dead Adonis, and flung with them into the sea or into springs

These gardens of Adonis are most naturally interpreted as representatives of Adonis or manifestations of his power, they represented him, true to his original nature, in vegetable form, while the images of him, with which they were carried out and cast into the water, portrayed him in his later human shape All these Adonis ceremonies, if I am right, were originally intended as charms to promote the growth or revival of vegetation; and the principle by which they were supposed to produce this effect was homoeopathic or imitative magic. For ignorant people suppose that by mimicking the effect which they desire to produce they actually help to produce it; thus by sprinkling water they make rain, by lighting a fire they make sunshine, and so on Similarly, by mimicking the growth of crops they hope to ensure a good harvest The rapid growth of the wheat and barley in the gardens of Adonis was intended to make the corn shoot up, and the throwing of the gardens and of the images into the water was a charm to secure a due supply of fertilising rain The same, I take it, was the object of throwing the effigies of Death and the Carnival into water in the corresponding ceremonies of modern Europe Certainly the custom of drenching with water a leaf-clad person, who undoubtedly personifies vegetation, is still resorted to in Europe for the express purpose of producing rain Similarly the custom of throwing water on the last corn cut at harvest, or on the person who brings it home (a custom observed in Germany and France, and till lately in England and Scotland), is in some places practised with the avowed intent to procure rain for the next year's crops. Thus in Wallachia and amongst the Roumanians in Transylvania, when a girl is bringing home a crown made of the last ears of corn cut at harvest, all who meet

her hasten to throw water on her, and two farm-servants are placed at the door for the purpose, for they believe that if this were not done, the crops next year would perish from drought. At the spring ploughing in Prussia, when the ploughmen and sowers returned in the evening from their work in the fields, the farmer's wife and the servants used to splash water over them. The ploughmen and sowers retorted by seizing every one, throwing them into the pond, and ducking them under the water. The farmer's wife might claim exemption on payment of a forfeit, but every one else had to be ducked. By observing this custom they hoped to ensure a due supply of rain for the seed.

The opinion that the gardens of Adonis are essentially charms to promote the growth of vegetation, especially of the crops, and that they belong to the same class of customs as those spring and midsummer folk-customs of modern Europe which I have described elsewhere, does not rest for its evidence merely on the intrinsic probability of the case. Fortunately we are able to show that gardens of Adonis (if we may use the expression in a general sense) are still planted, first, by a primitive race at their sowing season, and, second, by European peasants at midsummer. Amongst the Oraons and Mundas of Bengal, when the time comes for planting out the rice which has been grown in seed-beds, a party of young people of both sexes go to the forest and cut a young Karma-tree, or the branch of one. Bearing it in triumph they return dancing, singing, and beating drums, and plant it in the middle of the village dancing-ground. A sacrifice is offered to the tree, and next morning the youth of both sexes, linked arm-in-arm, dance in a great circle round the Karma-tree, which is decked with strips of coloured cloth and sham bracelets and necklets of plaited straw. As a preparation for the festival, the daughters of the headman of the village cultivate blades of barley in a peculiar way. The seed is sown in moist, sandy soil, mixed with turmeric, and the blades sprout and unfold of a pale-yellow or primrose colour. On the day of the festival the girls take up these blades and carry them in baskets to the dancing ground, where, prostrating themselves reverentially, they place some of the plants before the Karma-tree. Finally, the Karma-tree is taken away and thrown into a stream or tank. The meaning of planting these barley blades and then presenting them to the Karma-tree is hardly open to question. Trees are supposed to exercise a quickening influence upon the growth of crops, and amongst the very people in question—the Mundas or Mundaris—"the grove deities are held responsible for the crops." Therefore, when at the season for planting out the rice the Mundas bring in a tree and treat it with so much respect, their object can only be to foster thereby the growth of the rice which is about to be planted out, and the custom of causing barley blades to sprout rapidly and then presenting them to the tree must be intended to subserve the same purpose, perhaps by reminding the tree-spirit of his duty towards the crops, and stimulating his activity by this visible example of rapid vegetable growth. The throwing of the Karma-tree into the water is to be interpreted as

a rain-charm. Whether the barley blades are also thrown into the water is not said, but if my interpretation of the custom is right, probably they are so. A distinction between this Bengal custom and the Greek rites of Adonis is that in the former the tree-spirit appears in his original form as a tree, whereas in the Adonis worship he appears in human form, represented as a dead man, though his vegetable nature is indicated by the gardens of Adonis, which are, so to say, a secondary manifestation of his original power as a tree-spirit.

Gardens of Adonis are cultivated also by the Hindoos, with the intention apparently of ensuring the fertility both of the earth and of mankind. Thus at Oodeypoor in Rajputana a festival is held in honour of Gouri, or Isani, the goddess of abundance. The rites begin when the sun enters the sign of the Ram, the opening of the Hindoo year. An image of the goddess Gouri is made of earth, and a smaller one of her husband Iswara, and the two are placed together. A small trench is next dug, barley is sown in it, and the ground watered and heated artificially till the grain sprouts, when the women dance round it hand in hand, invoking the blessing of Gouri on their husbands. After that the young corn is taken up and distributed by the women to the men, who wear it in their turbans. In these rites the distribution of the barley shoots to the men, and the invocation of a blessing on their husbands by the wives, point clearly to the desire of offspring as one motive for observing the custom. The same motive probably explains the use of gardens of Adonis at the marriage of Brahmans in the Madras Presidency. Seeds of five or nine sorts are mixed and sown in earthen pots, which are made specially for the purpose and are filled with earth. Bride and bridegroom water the seeds both morning and evening for four days, and on the fifth day the seedlings are thrown, like the real gardens of Adonis, into a tank or river.

In Sardinia the gardens of Adonis are still planted in connexion with the great Midsummer festival which bears the name of St. John. At the end of March or on the first of April a young man of the village presents himself to a girl, and asks her to be his *comare* (gossip or sweetheart), offering to be her *compare*. The invitation is considered as an honour by the girl's family, and is gladly accepted. At the end of May the girl makes a pot of the bark of the cork-tree, fills it with earth, and sows a handful of wheat and barley in it. The pot being placed in the sun and often watered, the corn sprouts rapidly and has a good head by Midsummer Eve (St. John's Eve, the twenty-third of June). The pot is then called *Erme* or *Nenneri*. On St. John's Day the young man and the girl, dressed in their best, accompanied by a long retinue and preceded by children gambolling and frolicking, move in procession to a church outside the village. Here they break the pot by throwing it against the door of the church. Then they sit down in a ring on the grass and eat eggs and herbs to the music of flutes. Wine is mixed in a cup and passed round, each one drinking as it passes. Then they join hands and sing "Sweethearts of St. John" (*Compare e comare di San Giovanni*) over and over again, the

flutes playing the while When they tire of singing they stand up and dance gaily in a ring till evening This is the general Sardinian custom As practised at Ozieri it has some special features. In May the pots are made of cork-bark and planted with corn, as already described Then on the Eve of St John the window-sills are draped with rich cloths, on which the pots are placed, adorned with crimson and blue silk and ribbons of various colours On each of the pots they used formerly to place a statuette or cloth doll dressed as a woman, or a Priapus-like figure made of paste, but this custom, rigorously forbidden by the Church, has fallen into disuse The village swains go about in a troop to look at the pots and their decorations and to wait for the girls, who assemble on the public square to celebrate the festival Here a great bonfire is kindled, round which they dance and make merry Those who wish to be "Sweethearts of St John" act as follows. The young man stands on one side of the bonfire and the girl on the other, and they, in a manner, join hands by each grasping one end of a long stick, which they pass three times backwards and forwards across the fire, thus thrusting their hands thrice rapidly into the flames. This seals their relationship to each other Dancing and music go on till late at night. The correspondence of these Sardinian pots of grain to the gardens of Adonis seems complete, and the images formerly placed in them answer to the images of Adonis which accompanied his gardens

Customs of the same sort are observed at the same season in Sicily Pairs of boys and girls become gossips of St John on St John's Day by drawing each a hair from his or her head and performing various ceremonies over them. Thus they tie the hairs together and throw them up in the air, or exchange them over a potsherd, which they afterwards break in two, preserving each a fragment with pious care. The tie formed in the latter way is supposed to last for life In some parts of Sicily the gossips of St John present each other with plates of sprouting corn, lentils, and canary seed, which have been planted forty days before the festival The one who receives the plate pulls a stalk of the young plants, binds it with a ribbon, and preserves it among his or her greatest treasures, restoring the platter to the giver At Catania the gossips exchange pots of basil and great cucumbers, the girls tend the basil, and the thicker it grows the more it is prized

In these midsummer customs of Sardinia and Sicily it is possible that, as Mr R Wunsch supposes, St John has replaced Adonis. We have seen that the rites of Tammuz or Adonis were commonly celebrated about midsummer, according to Jerome, their date was June

In Sicily gardens of Adonis are still sown in spring as well as in summer, from which we may perhaps infer that Sicily as well as Syria celebrated of old a vernal festival of the dead and risen god At the approach of Easter, Sicilian women sow wheat, lentils, and canary-seed in plates, which they keep in the dark and water every two days. The plants soon shoot up, the stalks are tied together with red ribbons, and the plates containing them are placed on the sepulchres which,

with the effigies of the dead Christ, are made up in Catholic and Greek churches on Good Friday, just as the gardens of Adonis were placed on the grave of the dead Adonis. The practice is not confined to Sicily, for it is observed also at Cosenza in Calabria, and perhaps in other places. The whole custom—sepulchres as well as plates of sprouting grain—may be nothing but a continuation, under a different name, of the worship of Adonis.

Nor are these Sicilian and Calabrian customs the only Easter ceremonies which resemble the rites of Adonis. "During the whole of Good Friday a waxen effigy of the dead Christ is exposed to view in the middle of the Greek churches and is covered with fervent kisses by the thronging crowd, while the whole church rings with melancholy, monotonous dirges. Late in the evening, when it has grown quite dark, this waxen image is carried by the priests into the street on a bier adorned with lemons, roses, jessamine, and other flowers, and there begins a grand procession of the multitude, who move in serried ranks, with slow and solemn step, through the whole town. Every man carries his taper and breaks out into doleful lamentation. At all the houses which the procession passes there are seated women with censers to fumigate the marching host. Thus the community solemnly buries its Christ as if he had just died. At last the waxen image is again deposited in the church, and the same lugubrious chants echo anew. These lamentations, accompanied by a strict fast, continue till midnight on Saturday. As the clock strikes twelve, the bishop appears and announces the glad tidings that 'Christ is risen,' to which the crowd replies, 'He is risen indeed,' and at once the whole city bursts into an uproar of joy, which finds vent in shrieks and shouts, in the endless discharge of carronades and muskets, and the explosion of fire-works of every sort. In the very same hour people plunge from the extremity of the fast into the enjoyment of the Easter lamb and neat wine."

In like manner the Catholic Church has been accustomed to bring before its followers in a visible form the death and resurrection of the Redeemer. Such sacred dramas are well fitted to impress the lively imagination and to stir the warm feelings of a susceptible southern race, to whom the pomp and pageantry of Catholicism are more congenial than to the colder temperament of the Teutonic peoples.

When we reflect how often the Church has skilfully contrived to plant the seeds of the new faith on the old stock of paganism, we may surmise that the Easter celebration of the dead and risen Christ was grafted upon a similar celebration of the dead and risen Adonis, which, as we have seen reason to believe, was celebrated in Syria at the same season. The type, created by Greek artists, of the sorrowful goddess with her dying lover in her arms, resembles and may have been the model of the *Pietà* of Christian art, the Virgin with the dead body of her divine Son in her lap, of which the most celebrated example is the one by Michael Angelo in St. Peter's. That noble group, in which the living sorrow of the mother contrasts so wonderfully with the languor



of death in the son, is one of the finest compositions in marble. Ancient Greek art has bequeathed to us few works so beautiful, and none so pathetic.

In this connexion a well-known statement of Jerome may not be without significance. He tells us that Bethlehem, the traditionary birthplace of the Lord, was shaded by a grove of that still older Syrian Lord, Adonis, and that where the infant Jesus had wept, the lover of Venus was bewailed. Though he does not expressly say so, Jerome seems to have thought that the grove of Adonis had been planted by the heathen after the birth of Christ for the purpose of defiling the sacred spot. In this he may have been mistaken. If Adonis was indeed, as I have argued, the spirit of the corn, a more suitable name for his dwelling-place could hardly be found than Bethlehem, "the House of Bread," and he may well have been worshipped there at his House of Bread long ages before the birth of Him who said, "I am the bread of life." Even on the hypothesis that Adonis followed rather than preceded Christ at Bethlehem, the choice of his sad figure to divert the allegiance of Christians from their Lord cannot but strike us as eminently appropriate when we remember the similarity of the rites which commemorated the death and resurrection of the two. One of the earliest seats of the worship of the new god was Antioch, and at Antioch, as we have seen, the death of the old god was annually celebrated with great solemnity. A circumstance which attended the entrance of Julian into the city at the time of the Adonis festival may perhaps throw some light on the date of its celebration. When the emperor drew near to the city he was received with public prayers as if he had been a god, and he marvelled at the voices of a great multitude who cried that the Star of Salvation had dawned upon them in the East. This may doubtless have been no more than a fulsome compliment paid by an obsequious Oriental crowd to the Roman emperor. But it is also possible that the rising of a bright star regularly gave the signal for the festival, and that as chance would have it the star emerged above the rim of the eastern horizon at the very moment of the emperor's approach. The coincidence, if it happened, could hardly fail to strike the imagination of a superstitious and excited multitude, who might thereupon hail the great man as the deity whose coming was announced by the sign in the heavens. Or the emperor may have mistaken for a greeting to himself the shouts which were addressed to the star. Now Astarte, the divine mistress of Adonis, was identified with the planet Venus, and her changes from a morning to an evening star were carefully noted by the Babylonian astronomers, who drew omens from her alternate appearance and disappearance. Hence we may conjecture that the festival of Adonis was regularly timed to coincide with the appearance of Venus as the Morning or Evening Star. But the star which the people of Antioch saluted at the festival was seen in the East; therefore, if it was indeed Venus, it can only have been the Morning Star. At Aphaca in Syria, where there was a famous temple of Astarte, the signal for the celebration

of the rites was apparently given by the flashing of a meteor, which on a certain day fell like a star from the top of Mount Lebanon into the river Adonis. The meteor was thought to be Astarte herself, and its flight through the air might naturally be interpreted as the descent of the amorous goddess to the arms of her lover. At Antioch and elsewhere the appearance of the Morning Star on the day of the festival may in like manner have been hailed as the coming of the goddess of love to wake her dead leman from his earthy bed. If that were so, we may surmise that it was the Morning Star which guided the wise men of the East to Bethlehem, the hallowed spot which heard, in the language of Jerome, the weeping of the infant Christ and the lament for Adonis.

## CHAPTER XXXIV

### THE MYTH AND RITUAL OF ATTIS

ANOTHER of those gods whose supposed death and resurrection struck such deep roots into the faith and ritual of Western Asia is Attis. He was to Phrygia what Adonis was to Syria. Like Adonis, he appears to have been a god of vegetation, and his death and resurrection were annually mourned and rejoiced over at a festival in spring. The legends and rites of the two gods were so much alike that the ancients themselves sometimes identified them. Attis was said to have been a fair young shepherd or herdsman beloved by Cybele, the Mother of the Gods, a great Asiatic goddess of fertility, who had her chief home in Phrygia. Some held that Attis was her son. His birth, like that of many other heroes, is said to have been miraculous. His mother, Nana, was a virgin, who conceived by putting a ripe almond or a pomegranate in her bosom. Indeed in the Phrygian cosmogony an almond figured as the father of all things, perhaps because its delicate lilac blossom is one of the first heralds of the spring, appearing on the bare boughs before the leaves have opened. Such tales of virgin mothers are relics of an age of childish ignorance when men had not yet recognized the intercourse of the sexes as the true cause of offspring. Two different accounts of the death of Attis were current. According to the one he was killed by a boar, like Adonis. According to the other he unmanned himself under a pine-tree, and bled to death on the spot. The latter is said to have been the local story told by the people of Pessinus, a great seat of the worship of Cybele, and the whole legend of which the story forms a part is stamped with a character of rudeness and savagery that speaks strongly for its antiquity. Both tales might claim the support of custom, or rather both were probably invented to explain certain customs observed by the worshippers. The story of the self-mutilation of Attis is clearly an attempt to account for the self-mutilation of his priests, who regularly castrated themselves on entering the service of the goddess. The story of his death

by the boar may have been told to explain why his worshippers, especially the people of Pessinus, abstained from eating swine. In like manner the worshippers of Adonis abstained from pork, because a boar had killed their god. After his death Attis is said to have been changed into a pine-tree.

The worship of the Phrygian Mother of the Gods was adopted by the Romans in 204 B.C. towards the close of their long struggle with Hannibal. For their drooping spirits had been opportunely cheered by a prophecy, alleged to be drawn from that convenient farrago of nonsense, the Sibylline Books, that the foreign invader would be driven from Italy if the great Oriental goddess were brought to Rome. Accordingly ambassadors were despatched to her sacred city Pessinus in Phrygia. The small black stone which embodied the mighty divinity was entrusted to them and conveyed to Rome, where it was received with great respect and installed in the temple of Victory on the Palatine Hill. It was the middle of April when the goddess arrived, and she went to work at once. For the harvest that year was such as had not been seen for many a long day, and in the very next year Hannibal and his veterans embarked for Africa. As he looked his last on the coast of Italy, fading behind him in the distance, he could not foresee that Europe, which had repelled the arms, would yet yield to the gods, of the Orient. The vanguard of the conquerors had already encamped in the heart of Italy before the rearguard of the beaten army fell sullenly back from its shores.

We may conjecture, though we are not told, that the Mother of the Gods brought with her the worship of her youthful lover or son to her new home in the West. Certainly the Romans were familiar with the Galli, the emasculated priests of Attis, before the close of the Republic. These unsexed beings, in their Oriental costume, with little images suspended on their breasts, appear to have been a familiar sight in the streets of Rome, which they traversed in procession, carrying the image of the goddess and chanting their hymns to the music of cymbals and tambourines, flutes and horns, while the people, impressed by the fantastic show and moved by the wild strains, flung alms to them in abundance, and buried the image and its bearers under showers of roses. A further step was taken by the Emperor Claudius when he incorporated the Phrygian worship of the sacred tree, and with it probably the orgiastic rites of Attis, in the established religion of Rome. The great spring festival of Cybele and Attis is best known to us in the form in which it was celebrated at Rome, but as we are informed that the Roman ceremonies were also Phrygian, we may assume that they differed hardly, if at all, from their Asiatic original. The order of the festival seems to have been as follows.

On the twenty-second day of March, a pine-tree was cut in the woods and brought into the sanctuary of Cybele, where it was treated as a great divinity. The duty of carrying the sacred tree was entrusted to a guild of Tree-bearers. The trunk was swathed like a corpse with woollen bands and decked with wreaths of violets, for violets were said

to have sprung from the blood of Attis, as roses and anemones from the blood of Adonis; and the effigy of a young man, doubtless Attis himself, was tied to the middle of the stem. On the second day of the festival, the twenty-third of March, the chief ceremony seems to have been a blowing of trumpets. The third day, the twenty-fourth of March, was known as the Day of Blood. the Archigallus or high-priest drew blood from his arms and presented it as an offering. Nor was he alone in making this bloody sacrifice. Stirred by the wild barbaric music of clashing cymbals, rumbling drums, droning horns, and screaming flutes, the inferior clergy whirled about in the dance with wagging heads and streaming hair, until, rapt into a frenzy of excitement and insensible to pain, they gashed their bodies with potsherds or slashed them with knives in order to bespatter the altar and the sacred tree with their flowing blood. The ghastly rite probably formed part of the mourning for Attis and may have been intended to strengthen him for the resurrection. The Australian aborigines cut themselves in like manner over the graves of their friends for the purpose, perhaps, of enabling them to be born again. Further, we may conjecture, though we are not expressly told, that it was on the same Day of Blood and for the same purpose that the novices sacrificed their virility. Wrought up to the highest pitch of religious excitement they dashed the severed portions of themselves against the image of the cruel goddess. These broken instruments of fertility were afterwards reverently wrapt up and buried in the earth or in subterranean chambers sacred to Cybele, where, like the offering of blood, they may have been deemed instrumental in recalling Attis to life and hastening the general resurrection of nature, which was then bursting into leaf and blossom in the vernal sunshine. Some confirmation of this conjecture is furnished by the savage story that the mother of Attis conceived by putting in her bosom a pomegranate sprung from the severed genitals of a man-monster named Agdestis, a sort of double of Attis.

If there is any truth in this conjectural explanation of the custom, we can readily understand why other Asiatic goddesses of fertility were served in like manner by eunuch priests. These feminine deities required to receive from their male ministers, who personated the divine lovers, the means of discharging their beneficent functions: they had themselves to be impregnated by the life-giving energy before they could transmit it to the world. Goddesses thus ministered to by eunuch priests were the great Artemis of Ephesus and the great Syrian Astarte of Hierapolis, whose sanctuary, frequented by swarms of pilgrims and enriched by the offerings of Assyria and Babylonia, of Arabia and Phoenicia, was perhaps in the days of its glory the most popular in the East. Now the unsexed priests of this Syrian goddess resembled those of Cybele so closely that some people took them to be the same. And the mode in which they dedicated themselves to the religious life was similar. The greatest festival of the year at Hierapolis fell at the beginning of spring, when multitudes thronged

to the sanctuary from Syria and the regions round about. While the flutes played, the drums beat, and the eunuch priests slashed themselves with knives, the religious excitement gradually spread like a wave among the crowd of onlookers, and many a one did that which he little thought to do when he came as a holiday spectator to the festival. For man after man, his veins throbbing with the music, his eyes fascinated by the sight of the streaming blood, flung his garments from him, leaped forth with a shout, and seizing one of the swords which stood ready for the purpose, castrated himself on the spot. Then he ran through the city, holding the bloody pieces in his hand, till he threw them into one of the houses which he passed in his mad career. The household thus honoured had to furnish him with a suit of female attire and female ornaments, which he wore for the rest of his life. When the tumult of emotion had subsided, and the man had come to himself again, the irrevocable sacrifice must often have been followed by passionate sorrow and lifelong regret. This revulsion of natural human feeling after the frenzies of a fanatical religion is powerfully depicted by Catullus in a celebrated poem.

The parallel of these Syrian devotees confirms the view that in the similar worship of Cybele the sacrifice of virility took place on the Day of Blood at the vernal rites of the goddess, when the violets, supposed to spring from the red drops of her wounded lover, were in bloom among the pines. Indeed the story that Attis unmanned himself under a pine-tree was clearly devised to explain why his priests did the same beside the sacred violet-wreathed tree at his festival. At all events, we can hardly doubt that the Day of Blood witnessed the mourning for Attis over an effigy of him which was afterwards buried. The image thus laid in the sepulchre was probably the same which had hung upon the tree. Throughout the period of mourning the worshippers fasted from bread, nominally because Cybele had done so in her grief for the death of Attis, but really perhaps for the same reason which induced the women of Harran to abstain from eating anything ground in a mill while they wept for Tammuz. To partake of bread or flour at such a season might have been deemed a wanton profanation of the bruised and broken body of the god. Or the fast may possibly have been a preparation for a sacramental meal.

But when night had fallen, the sorrow of the worshippers was turned to joy. For suddenly a light shone in the darkness. the tomb was opened. the god had risen from the dead, and as the priest touched the lips of the weeping mourners with balm, he softly whispered in their ears the glad tidings of salvation. The resurrection of the god was hailed by his disciples as a promise that they too would issue triumphant from the corruption of the grave. On the morrow, the twenty-fifth day of March, which was reckoned the vernal equinox, the divine resurrection was celebrated with a wild outburst of glee. At Rome, and probably elsewhere, the celebration took the form of a carnival. It was the Festival of Joy (*Hilaria*). A universal licence prevailed. Every man might say and do what he pleased. People

went about the streets in disguise. No dignity was too high or too sacred for the humblest citizen to assume with impunity. In the reign of Commodus a band of conspirators thought to take advantage of the masquerade by dressing in the uniform of the Imperial Guard, and so, mingling with the crowd of merry-makers, to get within stabbing distance of the emperor. But the plot miscarried. Even the stern Alexander Severus used to relax so far on the joyous day as to admit a pheasant to his frugal board. The next day, the twenty-sixth of March, was given to repose, which must have been much needed after the varied excitements and fatigues of the preceding days. Finally, the Roman festival closed on the twenty-seventh of March with a procession to the brook Almo. The silver image of the goddess, with its face of jagged black stone, sat in a waggon drawn by oxen. Preceded by the nobles walking barefoot, it moved slowly, to the loud music of pipes and tambourines, out by the Porta Capena, and so down to the banks of the Almo, which flows into the Tiber just below the walls of Rome. There the high-priest, robed in purple, washed the waggon, the image, and the other sacred objects in the water of the stream. On returning from their bath, the wain and the oxen were strewn with fresh spring flowers. All was mirth and gaiety. No one thought of the blood that had flowed so lately. Even the eunuch priests forgot their wounds.

Such, then, appears to have been the annual solemnisation of the death and resurrection of Attis in spring. But besides these public rites, his worship is known to have comprised certain secret or mystic ceremonies, which probably aimed at bringing the worshipper, and especially the novice, into closer communication with his god. Our information as to the nature of these mysteries and the date of their celebration is unfortunately very scanty, but they seem to have included a sacramental meal and a baptism of blood. In the sacrament the novice became a partaker of the mysteries by eating out of a drum and drinking out of a cymbal, two instruments of music which figured prominently in the thrilling orchestra of Attis. The fast which accompanied the mourning for the dead god may perhaps have been designed to prepare the body of the communicant for the reception of the blessed sacrament by purging it of all that could defile by contact the sacred elements. In the baptism the devotee, crowned with gold and wreathed with fillets, descended into a pit, the mouth of which was covered with a wooden grating. A bull, adorned with garlands of flowers, its forehead glittering with gold leaf, was then driven on to the grating and there stabbed to death with a consecrated spear. Its hot reeking blood poured in torrents through the apertures, and was received with devout eagerness by the worshipper on every part of his person and garments, till he emerged from the pit, drenched, dripping, and scarlet from head to foot, to receive the homage, nay the adoration, of his fellows as one who had been born again to eternal life and had washed away his sins in the blood of the bull. For some time afterwards the fiction of a new birth was kept up by dieting him

on milk like a new-born babe. The regeneration of the worshipper took place at the same time as the regeneration of his god, namely at the vernal equinox. At Rome the new birth and the remission of sins by the shedding of bull's blood appear to have been carried out above all at the sanctuary of the Phrygian goddess on the Vatican Hill, at or near the spot where the great basilica of St Peter's now stands, for many inscriptions relating to the rites were found when the church was being enlarged in 1608 or 1609. From the Vatican as a centre this barbarous system of superstition seems to have spread to other parts of the Roman empire. Inscriptions found in Gaul and Germany prove that provincial sanctuaries modelled their ritual on that of the Vatican. From the same source we learn that the testicles as well as the blood of the bull played an important part in the ceremonies. Probably they were regarded as a powerful charm to promote fertility and hasten the new birth.

## CHAPTER XXXV

### ATTIS AS A GOD OF VEGETATION

THE original character of Attis as a tree-spirit is brought out plainly by the part which the pine-tree plays in his legend, his ritual, and his monuments. The story that he was a human being transformed into a pine-tree is only one of those transparent attempts at rationalising old beliefs which meet us so frequently in mythology. The bringing in of the pine-tree from the woods, decked with violets and woollen bands, is like bringing in the May-tree or Summer-tree in modern folk-custom, and the effigy which was attached to the pine-tree was only a duplicate representative of the tree-spirit Attis. After being fastened to the tree, the effigy was kept for a year and then burned. The same thing appears to have been sometimes done with the Maypole, and in like manner the effigy of the corn-spirit, made at harvest, is often preserved till it is replaced by a new effigy at next year's harvest. The original intention of such customs was no doubt to maintain the spirit of vegetation in life throughout the year. Why the Phrygians should have worshipped the pine above other trees we can only guess. Perhaps the sight of its changeless, though sombre, green cresting the ridges of the high hills above the fading splendour of the autumn woods in the valleys may have seemed to their eyes to mark it out as the seat of a diviner life, of something exempt from the sad vicissitudes of the seasons, constant and eternal as the sky which stooped to meet it. For the same reason, perhaps, ivy was sacred to Attis; at all events, we read that his eunuch priests were tattooed with a pattern of ivy leaves. Another reason for the sanctity of the pine may have been its usefulness. The cones of the stone-pine contain edible nut-like seeds, which have been used as food since

antiquity, and are still eaten, for example, by the poorer classes in Rome. Moreover, a wine was brewed from these seeds, and this may partly account for the orgiastic nature of the rites of Cybele, which the ancients compared to those of Dionysus. Further, pine-cones were regarded as symbols or rather instruments of fertility. Hence at the festival of the Thesmophoria they were thrown, along with pigs and other agents or emblems of fecundity, into the sacred vaults of Demeter for the purpose of quickening the ground and the wombs of women.

Like tree-spirits in general, Attis was apparently thought to wield power over the fruits of the earth or even to be identical with the corn. One of his epithets was "very fruitful" he was addressed as the "reaped green (or yellow) ear of corn", and the story of his sufferings, death, and resurrection was interpreted as the ripe grain wounded by the reaper, buried in the granary, and coming to life again when it is sown in the ground. A statue of him in the Lateran Museum at Rome clearly indicates his relation to the fruits of the earth, and particularly to the corn; for it represents him with a bunch of ears of corn and fruit in his hand, and a wreath of pine-cones, pomegranates, and other fruits on his head, while from the top of his Phrygian cap ears of corn are sprouting. On a stone urn, which contained the ashes of an Archigallus or high-priest of Attis, the same idea is expressed in a slightly different way. The top of the urn is adorned with ears of corn carved in relief, and it is surmounted by the figure of a cock, whose tail consists of ears of corn. Cybele in like manner was conceived as a goddess of fertility who could make or mar the fruits of the earth; for the people of Augustodunum (Autun) in Gaul used to cart her image about in a waggon for the good of the fields and vineyards, while they danced and sang before it, and we have seen that in Italy an unusually fine harvest was attributed to the recent arrival of the Great Mother. The bathing of the image of the goddess in a river may well have been a rain-charm to ensure an abundant supply of moisture for the crops.

## CHAPTER XXXVI

### HUMAN REPRESENTATIVES OF ATTIS

FROM inscriptions it appears that both at Pessinus and Rome the high-priest of Cybele regularly bore the name of Attis. It is therefore a reasonable conjecture that he played the part of his namesake, the legendary Attis, at the annual festival. We have seen that on the Day of Blood he drew blood from his arms, and this may have been an imitation of the self-inflicted death of Attis under the pine-tree. It is not inconsistent with this supposition that Attis was also represented at these ceremonies by an effigy, for instances can be shown in which the divine being is first represented by a living person and



afterwards by an effigy, which is then burned or otherwise destroyed. Perhaps we may go a step farther and conjecture that this mimic killing of the priest, accompanied by a real effusion of his blood, was in Phrygia, as it has been elsewhere, a substitute for a human sacrifice which in earlier times was actually offered

A reminiscence of the manner in which these old representatives of the deity were put to death is perhaps preserved in the famous story of Marsyas. He was said to be a Phrygian satyr or Silenus, according to others a shepherd or herdsman, who played sweetly on the flute. A friend of Cybele, he roamed the country with the disconsolate goddess to soothe her grief for the death of Attis. The composition of the Mother's Air, a tune played on the flute in honour of the Great Mother Goddess, was attributed to him by the people of Celaenae in Phrygia. Vain of his skill, he challenged Apollo to a musical contest, he to play on the flute and Apollo on the lyre. Being vanquished, Marsyas was tied up to a pine-tree and flayed or cut limb from limb either by the victorious Apollo or by a Scythian slave. His skin was shown at Celaenae in historical times. It hung at the foot of the citadel in a cave from which the river Marsyas rushed with an impetuous and noisy tide to join the Maeander. So the Adonis bursts full-born from the precipices of the Lebanon; so the blue river of Ibreez leaps in a crystal jet from the red rocks of the Taurus, so the stream, which now rumbles deep underground, used to gleam for a moment on its passage from darkness to darkness in the dim light of the Corycian cave. In all these copious fountains, with their glad promise of fertility and life, men of old saw the hand of God and worshipped him beside the rushing river with the music of its tumbling waters in their ears. At Celaenae, if we can trust tradition, the piper Marsyas, hanging in his cave, had a soul for harmony even in death, for it is said that at the sound of his native Phrygian melodies the skin of the dead satyr used to thrill, but that if the musician struck up an air in praise of Apollo it remained deaf and motionless.

In this Phrygian satyr, shepherd, or herdsman who enjoyed the friendship of Cybele, practised the music so characteristic of her rites, and died a violent death on her sacred tree, the pine, may we not detect a close resemblance to Attis, the favourite shepherd or herdsman of the goddess, who is himself described as a piper, is said to have perished under a pine-tree, and was annually represented by an effigy hung, like Marsyas, upon a pine? We may conjecture that in old days the priest who bore the name and played the part of Attis at the spring festival of Cybele was regularly hanged or otherwise slain upon the sacred tree, and that this barbarous custom was afterwards mitigated into the form in which it is known to us in later times, when the priest merely drew blood from his body under the tree and attached an effigy instead of himself to its trunk. In the holy grove at Upsala men and animals were sacrificed by being hanged upon the sacred trees. The human victims dedicated to Odin were regularly

put to death by hanging or by a combination of hanging and stabbing, the man being strung up to a tree or a gallows and then wounded with a spear. Hence Odin was called the Lord of the Gallows or the God of the Hanged, and he is represented sitting under a gallows tree. Indeed he is said to have been sacrificed to himself in the ordinary way, as we learn from the weird verses of the *Havamal*, in which the god describes how he acquired his divine power by learning the magic runes :

*" I know that I hung on the windy tree  
For nine whole nights,  
Wounded with the spear, dedicated to Odin,  
Myself to myself "*

The Bagobos of Mindanao, one of the Philippine Islands, used annually to sacrifice human victims for the good of the crops in a similar way. Early in December, when the constellation Orion appeared at seven o'clock in the evening, the people knew that the time had come to clear their fields for sowing and to sacrifice a slave. The sacrifice was presented to certain powerful spirits as payment for the good year which the people had enjoyed, and to ensure the favour of the spirits for the coming season. The victim was led to a great tree in the forest, there he was tied with his back to the tree and his arms stretched high above his head, in the attitude in which ancient artists portrayed Marsyas hanging on the fatal tree. While he thus hung by the arms, he was slain by a spear thrust through his body at the level of the armpits. Afterwards the body was cut clean through the middle at the waist, and the upper part was apparently allowed to dangle for a little from the tree, while the under part wallowed in blood on the ground. The two portions were finally cast into a shallow trench beside the tree. Before this was done, anybody who wished might cut off a piece of flesh or a lock of hair from the corpse and carry it to the grave of some relation whose body was being consumed by a ghoul. Attracted by the fresh corpse, the ghoul would leave the mouldering old body in peace. These sacrifices have been offered by men now living.

In Greece the great goddess Artemis herself appears to have been annually hanged in effigy in her sacred grove of Condylea among the Arcadian hills, and there accordingly she went by the name of the Hanged One. Indeed a trace of a similar rite may perhaps be detected even at Ephesus, the most famous of her sanctuaries, in the legend of a woman who hanged herself and was thereupon dressed by the compassionate goddess in her own divine garb and called by the name of Hecate. Similarly, at Melite in Phthia, a story was told of a girl named Aspalis who hanged herself, but who appears to have been merely a form of Artemis. For after her death her body could not be found, but an image of her was discovered standing beside the image of Artemis, and the people bestowed on it the title of Hecaerge or Far-shooter, one of the regular epithets of the goddess. Every

year the virgins sacrificed a young goat to the image by hanging it, because Aspalis was said to have hanged herself. The sacrifice may have been a substitute for hanging an image or a human representative of Artemis. Again, in Rhodes the fair Helen was worshipped under the title of Helen of the Tree, because the queen of the island had caused her handmaids, disguised as Furies, to string her up to a bough. That the Asiatic Greeks sacrificed animals in this fashion is proved by coins of Ilium, which represent an ox or cow hanging on a tree and stabbed with a knife by a man, who sits among the branches or on the animal's back. At Hierapolis also the victims were hung on trees before they were burnt. With these Greek and Scandinavian parallels before us we can hardly dismiss as wholly improbable the conjecture that in Phrygia a man-god may have hung year by year on the sacred but fatal tree.

## CHAPTER XXXVII

### ORIENTAL RELIGIONS IN THE WEST

THE worship of the Great Mother of the Gods and her lover or son was very popular under the Roman Empire. Inscriptions prove that the two received divine honours, separately or conjointly, not only in Italy, and especially at Rome, but also in the provinces, particularly in Africa, Spain, Portugal, France, Germany, and Bulgaria. Their worship survived the establishment of Christianity by Constantine; for Symmachus records the recurrence of the festival of the Great Mother, and in the days of Augustine her effeminate priests still paraded the streets and squares of Carthage with whitened faces, scented hair, and mincing gait, while, like the mendicant friars of the Middle Ages, they begged alms from the passers-by. In Greece, on the other hand, the bloody orgies of the Asiatic goddess and her consort appear to have found little favour. The barbarous and cruel character of the worship, with its frantic excesses, was doubtless repugnant to the good taste and humanity of the Greeks, who seem to have preferred the kindred but gentler rites of Adonis. Yet the same features which shocked and repelled the Greeks may have positively attracted the less refined Romans and barbarians of the West. The ecstatic frenzies, which were mistaken for divine inspiration, the mangling of the body, the theory of a new birth and the remission of sins through the shedding of blood, have all their origin in savagery, and they naturally appealed to peoples in whom the savage instincts were still strong. Their true character was indeed often disguised under a decent veil of allegorical or philosophical interpretation, which probably sufficed to impose upon the rapt and enthusiastic worshippers, reconciling even the more cultivated of them to things which otherwise must have filled them with horror and disgust.

The religion of the Great Mother, with its curious blending of crude

savagery with spiritual aspirations, was only one of a multitude of similar Oriental faiths which in the later days of paganism spread over the Roman Empire, and by saturating the European peoples with alien ideals of life gradually undermined the whole fabric of ancient civilisation. Greek and Roman society was built on the conception of the subordination of the individual to the community, of the citizen to the state, it set the safety of the commonwealth, as the supreme aim of conduct, above the safety of the individual whether in this world or in a world to come. Trained from infancy in this unselfish ideal, the citizens devoted their lives to the public service and were ready to lay them down for the common good; or if they shrank from the supreme sacrifice, it never occurred to them that they acted otherwise than basely in preferring their personal existence to the interests of their country. All this was changed by the spread of Oriental religions which inculcated the communion of the soul with God and its eternal salvation as the only objects worth living for, objects in comparison with which the prosperity and even the existence of the state sank into insignificance. The inevitable result of this selfish and immoral doctrine was to withdraw the devotee more and more from the public service, to concentrate his thoughts on his own spiritual emotions, and to breed in him a contempt for the present life which he regarded merely as a probation for a better and an eternal. The saint and the recluse, disdainful of earth and rapt in ecstatic contemplation of heaven, became in popular opinion the highest ideal of humanity, displacing the old ideal of the patriot and hero who, forgetful of self, lives and is ready to die for the good of his country. The earthly city seemed poor and contemptible to men whose eyes beheld the City of God coming in the clouds of heaven. Thus the centre of gravity, so to say, was shifted from the present to a future life, and however much the other world may have gained, there can be little doubt that this one lost heavily by the change. A general disintegration of the body politic set in. The ties of the state and the family were loosened, the structure of society tended to resolve itself into its individual elements and thereby to relapse into barbarism, for civilisation is only possible through the active co-operation of the citizens and their willingness to subordinate their private interests to the common good. Men refused to defend their country and even to continue their kind. In their anxiety to save their own souls and the souls of others, they were content to leave the material world, which they identified with the principle of evil, to perish around them. This obsession lasted for a thousand years. The revival of Roman law, of the Aristotelian philosophy, of ancient art and literature at the close of the Middle Ages, marked the return of Europe to native ideals of life and conduct, to saner, manlier views of the world. The long halt in the march of civilisation was over. The tide of Oriental invasion had turned at last. It is ebbing still.

Among the gods of eastern origin who in the decline of the ancient world competed against each other for the allegiance of the West was

the old Persian deity Mithra. The immense popularity of his worship is attested by the monuments illustrative of it which have been found scattered in profusion all over the Roman Empire. In respect both of doctrines and of rites the cult of Mithra appears to have presented many points of resemblance not only to the religion of the Mother of the Gods but also to Christianity. The similarity struck the Christian doctors themselves and was explained by them as a work of the devil, who sought to seduce the souls of men from the true faith by a false and insidious imitation of it. So to the Spanish conquerors of Mexico and Peru many of the native heathen rites appeared to be diabolical counterfeits of the Christian sacraments. With more probability the modern student of comparative religion traces such resemblances to the similar and independent workings of the mind of man in his sincere, if crude, attempts to fathom the secret of the universe, and to adjust his little life to its awful mysteries. However that may be, there can be no doubt that the Mithraic religion proved a formidable rival to Christianity, combining as it did a solemn ritual with aspirations after moral purity and a hope of immortality. Indeed the issue of the conflict between the two faiths appears for a time to have hung in the balance. An instructive relic of the long struggle is preserved in our festival of Christmas, which the Church seems to have borrowed directly from its heathen rival. In the Julian calendar the twenty-fifth of December was reckoned the winter solstice, and it was regarded as the Nativity of the Sun, because the day begins to lengthen and the power of the sun to increase from that turning-point of the year. The ritual of the nativity, as it appears to have been celebrated in Syria and Egypt, was remarkable. The celebrants retired into certain inner shrines, from which at midnight they issued with a loud cry, "The Virgin has brought forth! The light is waxing!" The Egyptians even represented the new-born sun by the image of an infant which on his birthday, the winter solstice, they brought forth and exhibited to his worshippers. No doubt the Virgin who thus conceived and bore a son on the twenty-fifth of December was the great Oriental goddess whom the Semites called the Heavenly Virgin or simply the Heavenly Goddess, in Semitic lands she was a form of Astarte. Now Mithra was regularly identified by his worshippers with the Sun, the Unconquered Sun, as they called him, hence his nativity also fell on the twenty-fifth of December. The Gospels say nothing as to the day of Christ's birth, and accordingly the early Church did not celebrate it. In time, however, the Christians of Egypt came to regard the sixth of January as the date of the Nativity, and the custom of commemorating the birth of the Saviour on that day gradually spread until by the fourth century it was universally established in the East. But at the end of the third or the beginning of the fourth century the Western Church, which had never recognised the sixth of January as the day of the Nativity, adopted the twenty-fifth of December as the true date, and in time its decision was accepted also by the Eastern Church. At Antioch the change was not introduced till about the year 375 A D.

What considerations led the ecclesiastical authorities to institute the festival of Christmas? The motives for the innovation are stated with great frankness by a Syrian writer, himself a Christian. "The reason," he tells us, "why the fathers transferred the celebration of the sixth of January to the twenty-fifth of December was this. It was a custom of the heathen to celebrate on the same twenty-fifth of December the birthday of the Sun, at which they kindled lights in token of festivity. In these solemnities and festivities the Christians also took part. Accordingly when the doctors of the Church perceived that the Christians had a leaning to this festival, they took counsel and resolved that the true Nativity should be solemnised on that day and the festival of the Epiphany on the sixth of January. Accordingly, along with this custom, the practice has prevailed of kindling fires till the sixth." The heathen origin of Christmas is plainly hinted at, if not tacitly admitted, by Augustine when he exhorts his Christian brethren not to celebrate that solemn day like the heathen on account of the sun, but on account of him who made the sun. In like manner Leo the Great rebuked the pestilent belief that Christmas was solemnised because of the birth of the new sun, as it was called, and not because of the nativity of Christ.

Thus it appears that the Christian Church chose to celebrate the birthday of its Founder on the twenty-fifth of December in order to transfer the devotion of the heathen from the Sun to him who was called the Sun of Righteousness. If that was so, there can be no intrinsic improbability in the conjecture that motives of the same sort may have led the ecclesiastical authorities to assimilate the Easter festival of the death and resurrection of their Lord to the festival of the death and resurrection of another Asiatic god which fell at the same season. Now the Easter rites still observed in Greece, Sicily, and southern Italy bear in some respects a striking resemblance to the rites of Adonis, and I have suggested that the Church may have consciously adapted the new festival to its heathen predecessor for the sake of winning souls to Christ. But this adaptation probably took place in the Greek-speaking rather than in the Latin-speaking parts of the ancient world, for the worship of Adonis, while it flourished among the Greeks, appears to have made little impression on Rome and the West. Certainly it never formed part of the official Roman religion. The place which it might have taken in the affections of the vulgar was already occupied by the similar but more barbarous worship of Attis and the Great Mother. Now the death and resurrection of Attis were officially celebrated at Rome on the twenty-fourth and twenty-fifth of March, the latter being regarded as the spring equinox, and therefore as the most appropriate day for the revival of a god of vegetation who had been dead or sleeping throughout the winter. But according to an ancient and widespread tradition Christ suffered on the twenty-fifth of March, and accordingly some Christians regularly celebrated the Crucifixion on that day without any regard to the state of the moon. This custom was certainly observed in

Phrygia, Cappadocia, and Gaul, and there seem to be grounds for thinking that at one time it was followed also in Rome. Thus the tradition which placed the death of Christ on the twenty-fifth of March was ancient and deeply rooted. It is all the more remarkable because astronomical considerations prove that it can have had no historical foundation. The inference appears to be inevitable that the passion of Christ must have been arbitrarily referred to that date in order to harmonise with an older festival of the spring equinox. This is the view of the learned ecclesiastical historian Mgr Duchesne, who points out that the death of the Saviour was thus made to fall upon the very day on which, according to a widespread belief, the world had been created. But the resurrection of Attis, who combined in himself the characters of the divine Father and the divine Son, was officially celebrated at Rome on the same day. When we remember that the festival of St George in April has replaced the ancient pagan festival of the Parilia, that the festival of St John the Baptist in June has succeeded to a heathen Midsummer festival of water; that the festival of the Assumption of the Virgin in August has ousted the festival of Diana, that the feast of All Souls in November is a continuation of an old heathen feast of the dead, and that the Nativity of Christ himself was assigned to the winter solstice in December because that day was deemed the Nativity of the Sun, we can hardly be thought rash or unreasonable in conjecturing that the other cardinal festival of the Christian church—the solemnisation of Easter—may have been in like manner, and from like motives of edification, adapted to a similar celebration of the Phrygian god Attis at the vernal equinox.

At least it is a remarkable coincidence, if it is nothing more, that the Christian and the heathen festivals of the divine death and resurrection should have been solemnised at the same season and in the same places. For the places which celebrated the death of Christ at the spring equinox were Phrygia, Gaul, and apparently Rome, that is, the very regions in which the worship of Attis either originated or struck deepest root. It is difficult to regard the coincidence as purely accidental. If the vernal equinox, the season at which in the temperate regions the whole face of nature testifies to a fresh outburst of vital energy, had been viewed from of old as the time when the world was annually created afresh in the resurrection of a god, nothing could be more natural than to place the resurrection of the new deity at the same cardinal point of the year. Only it is to be observed that if the death of Christ was dated on the twenty-fifth of March, his resurrection, according to Christian tradition, must have happened on the twenty-seventh of March, which is just two days later than the vernal equinox of the Julian calendar and the resurrection of Attis. A similar displacement of two days in the adjustment of Christian to heathen celebrations occurs in the festivals of St George and the Assumption of the Virgin. However, another Christian tradition, followed by Lactantius and perhaps by the practice of the

Church in Gaul, placed the death of Christ on the twenty-third and his resurrection on the twenty-fifth of March. If that was so, his resurrection coincided exactly with the resurrection of Attis.

In point of fact it appears from the testimony of an anonymous Christian, who wrote in the fourth century of our era, that Christians and pagans alike were struck by the remarkable coincidence between the death and resurrection of their respective deities, and that the coincidence formed a theme of bitter controversy between the adherents of the rival religions, the pagans contending that the resurrection of Christ was a spurious imitation of the resurrection of Attis, and the Christians asserting with equal warmth that the resurrection of Attis was a diabolical counterfeit of the resurrection of Christ. In these unseemly bickerings the heathen took what to a superficial observer might seem strong ground by arguing that their god was the older and therefore presumably the original, not the counterfeit, since as a general rule an original is older than its copy. This feeble argument the Christians easily rebutted. They admitted, indeed, that in point of time Christ was the junior deity, but they triumphantly demonstrated his real seniority by falling back on the subtlety of Satan, who on so important an occasion had surpassed himself by inverting the usual order of nature.

Taken altogether, the coincidences of the Christian with the heathen festivals are too close and too numerous to be accidental. They mark the compromise which the Church in the hour of its triumph was compelled to make with its vanquished yet still dangerous rivals. The inflexible Protestantism of the primitive missionaries, with their fiery denunciations of heathendom, had been exchanged for the supple policy, the easy tolerance, the comprehensive charity of shrewd ecclesiastics, who clearly perceived that if Christianity was to conquer the world it could do so only by relaxing the too rigid principles of its Founder, by widening a little the narrow gate which leads to salvation. In this respect an instructive parallel might be drawn between the history of Christianity and the history of Buddhism. Both systems were in their origin essentially ethical reforms born of the generous ardour, the lofty aspirations, the tender compassion of their noble Founders, two of those beautiful spirits who appear at rare intervals on earth like beings come from a better world to support and guide our weak and erring nature. Both preached moral virtue as the means of accomplishing what they regarded as the supreme object of life, the eternal salvation of the individual soul, though by a curious antithesis the one sought that salvation in a blissful eternity, the other in a final release from suffering, in annihilation. But the austere ideals of sanctity which they inculcated were too deeply opposed not only to the frailties but to the natural instincts of humanity ever to be carried out in practice by more than a small number of disciples, who consistently renounced the ties of the family and the state in order to work out their own salvation in the still seclusion of the cloister. If such faiths were to be nominally accepted by whole



nations or even by the world, it was essential that they should first be modified or transformed so as to accord in some measure with the prejudices, the passions, the superstitions of the vulgar. This process of accommodation was carried out in after ages by followers who, made of less ethereal stuff than their masters, were for that reason the better fitted to mediate between them and the common herd. Thus as time went on, the two religions, in exact proportion to their growing popularity, absorbed more and more of those baser elements which they had been instituted for the very purpose of suppressing. Such spiritual decadences are inevitable. The world cannot live at the level of its great men. Yet it would be unfair to the generality of our kind to ascribe wholly to their intellectual and moral weakness the gradual divergence of Buddhism and Christianity from their primitive patterns. For it should never be forgotten that by their glorification of poverty and celibacy both these religions struck straight at the root not merely of civil society but of human existence. The blow was parried by the wisdom or the folly of the vast majority of mankind, who refused to purchase a chance of saving their souls with the certainty of extinguishing the species.

## CHAPTER XXXVIII

### THE MYTH OF OSIRIS

IN ancient Egypt the god whose death and resurrection were annually celebrated with alternate sorrow and joy was Osiris, the most popular of all Egyptian deities; and there are good grounds for classing him in one of his aspects with Adonis and Attis as a personification of the great yearly vicissitudes of nature, especially of the corn. But the immense vogue which he enjoyed for many ages induced his devoted worshippers to heap upon him the attributes and powers of many other gods; so that it is not always easy to strip him, so to say, of his borrowed plumes and to restore them to their proper owners.

The story of Osiris is told in a connected form only by Plutarch, whose narrative has been confirmed and to some extent amplified in modern times by the evidence of the monuments.

Osiris was the offspring of an intrigue between the earth-god Seb (Keb or Geb, as the name is sometimes transliterated) and the sky-goddess Nut. The Greeks identified his parents with their own deities Cronus and Rhea. When the sun-god Ra perceived that his wife Nut had been unfaithful to him, he declared with a curse that she should be delivered of the child in no month and no year. But the goddess had another lover, the god Thoth or Hermes, as the Greeks called him, and he playing at draughts with the moon won from her a seventy-second part of every day, and having compounded five whole days out of these parts he added them to the Egyptian year.

of three hundred and sixty days. This was the mythical origin of the five supplementary days which the Egyptians annually inserted at the end of every year in order to establish a harmony between lunar and solar time. On these five days, regarded as outside the year of twelve months, the curse of the sun-god did not rest, and accordingly Osiris was born on the first of them. At his nativity a voice rang out proclaiming that the Lord of All had come into the world. Some say that a certain Pamylen heard a voice from the temple at Thebes bidding him announce with a shout that a great king, the beneficent Osiris, was born. But Osiris was not the only child of his mother. On the second of the supplementary days she gave birth to the elder Horus, on the third to the god Set, whom the Greeks called Typhon, on the fourth to the goddess Isis, and on the fifth to the goddess Nephthys. Afterwards Set married his sister Nephthys, and Osiris married his sister Isis.

Reigning as a king on earth, Osiris reclaimed the Egyptians from savagery, gave them laws, and taught them to worship the gods. Before his time the Egyptians had been cannibals. But Isis, the sister and wife of Osiris, discovered wheat and barley growing wild, and Osiris introduced the cultivation of these grains amongst his people, who forthwith abandoned cannibalism and took kindly to a corn diet. Moreover, Osiris is said to have been the first to gather fruit from trees, to train the vine to poles, and to tread the grapes. Eager to communicate these beneficent discoveries to all mankind, he committed the whole government of Egypt to his wife Isis, and travelled over the world, diffusing the blessings of civilisation and agriculture wherever he went. In countries where a harsh climate or niggardly soil forbade the cultivation of the vine, he taught the inhabitants to console themselves for the want of wine by brewing beer from barley. Loaded with the wealth that had been showered upon him by grateful nations, he returned to Egypt, and on account of the benefits he had conferred on mankind he was unanimously hailed and worshipped as a deity. But his brother Set (whom the Greeks called Typhon) with seventy-two others plotted against him. Having taken the measure of his good brother's body by stealth, the bad brother Typhon fashioned and highly decorated a coffer of the same size, and once when they were all drinking and making merry he brought in the coffer and jestingly promised to give it to the one whom it should fit exactly. Well, they all tried one after the other, but it fitted none of them. Last of all Osiris stepped into it and lay down. On that the conspirators ran and slammed the lid down on him, nailed it fast, soldered it with molten lead, and flung the coffer into the Nile. This happened on the seventeenth day of the month Athyr, when the sun is in the sign of the Scorpion, and in the eight-and-twentieth year of the reign or the life of Osiris. When Isis heard of it she sheared off a lock of her hair, put on mourning attire, and wandered disconsolately up and down, seeking the body.

By the advice of the god of wisdom she took refuge in the papyrus

swamps of the Delta. Seven scorpions accompanied her in her flight. One evening when she was weary she came to the house of a woman, who, alarmed at the sight of the scorpions, shut the door in her face. Then one of the scorpions crept under the door and stung the child of the woman that he died. But when Isis heard the mother's lamentation, her heart was touched, and she laid her hands on the child and uttered her powerful spells, so the poison was driven out of the child and he lived. Afterwards Isis herself gave birth to a son in the swamps. She had conceived him while she fluttered in the form of a hawk over the corpse of her dead husband. The infant was the younger Horus, who in his youth bore the name of Harpocrates, that is, the child Horus. Him Buto, the goddess of the north, hid from the wrath of his wicked uncle Set. Yet she could not guard him from all mishap; for one day when Isis came to her little son's hiding-place she found him stretched lifeless and rigid on the ground—a scorpion had stung him. Then Isis prayed to the sun-god Ra for help. The god hearkened to her and staid his bark in the sky, and sent down Thoth to teach her the spell by which she might restore her son to life. She uttered the words of power, and straightway the poison flowed from the body of Horus, air passed into him, and he lived. Then Thoth ascended up into the sky and took his place once more in the bark of the sun, and the bright pomp passed onward jubilant.

Meantime the coffer containing the body of Osiris had floated down the river and away out to sea, till at last it drifted ashore at Byblus, on the coast of Syria. Here a fine *erica*-tree shot up suddenly and enclosed the chest in its trunk. The king of the country, admiring the growth of the tree, had it cut down and made into a pillar of his house, but he did not know that the coffer with the dead Osiris was in it. Word of this came to Isis and she journeyed to Byblus, and sat down by the well, in humble guise, her face wet with tears. To none would she speak till the king's handmaidens came, and then she greeted kindly, and braided their hair, and breathed on them from her own divine body a wondrous perfume. But when the queen beheld the braids of her handmaidens' hair and smelt the sweet smell that emanated from them, she sent for the stranger woman and took her into her house and made her the nurse of her child. But Isis gave the babe her finger instead of her breast to suck, and at night she began to burn all that was mortal of him away, while she herself in the likeness of a swallow fluttered round the pillar that contained her dead brother, twittering mournfully. But the queen spied what she was doing and shrieked out when she saw her child in flames, and thereby she hindered him from becoming immortal. Then the goddess revealed herself and begged for the pillar of the roof, and they gave it her, and she cut the coffer out of it, and fell upon it and embraced it and lamented so loud that the younger of the king's children died of fright on the spot. But the trunk of the tree she wrapped in fine linen, and poured ointment on it, and gave it to the king and queen, and the wood stands in a temple of Isis and is

worshipped by the people of Byblus to this day. And Isis put the coffer in a boat and took the eldest of the king's children with her and sailed away. As soon as they were alone, she opened the chest, and laying her face on the face of her brother she kissed him and wept. But the child came behind her softly and saw what she was about, and she turned and looked at him in anger, and the child could not bear her look and died; but some say that it was not so, but that he fell into the sea and was drowned. It is he whom the Egyptians sing of at their banquets under the name of Maneros.

But Isis put the coffer by and went to see her son Horus at the city of Buto, and Typhon found the coffer as he was hunting a boar one night by the light of a full moon. And he knew the body, and rent it into fourteen pieces, and scattered them abroad. But Isis sailed up and down the marshes in a shallop made of papyrus, looking for the pieces; and that is why when people sail in shallops made of papyrus, the crocodiles do not hurt them, for they fear or respect the goddess. And that is the reason, too, why there are many graves of Osiris in Egypt, for she buried each limb as she found it. But others will have it that she buried an image of him in every city, pretending it was his body, in order that Osiris might be worshipped in many places, and that if Typhon searched for the real grave he might not be able to find it. However, the genital member of Osiris had been eaten by the fishes, so Isis made an image of it instead, and the image is used by the Egyptians at their festivals to this day. "Isis," writes the historian Diodorus Siculus, "recovered all the parts of the body except the genitals, and because she wished that her husband's grave should be unknown and honoured by all who dwell in the land of Egypt, she resorted to the following device. She moulded human images out of wax and spices, corresponding to the stature of Osiris, round each one of the parts of his body. Then she called in the priests according to their families and took an oath of them all that they would reveal to no man the trust she was about to repose in them. So to each of them privately she said that to them alone she entrusted the burial of the body, and reminding them of the benefits they had received she exhorted them to bury the body in their own land and to honour Osiris as a god. She also besought them to dedicate one of the animals of their country, whichever they chose, and to honour it in life as they had formerly honoured Osiris, and when it died to grant it obsequies like his. And because she would encourage the priests in their own interest to bestow the aforesaid honours, she gave them a third part of the land to be used by them in the service and worship of the gods. Accordingly it is said that the priests, mindful of the benefits of Osiris, desirous of gratifying the queen, and moved by the prospect of gain, carried out all the injunctions of Isis. Wherefore to this day each of the priests imagines that Osiris is buried in his country, and they honour the beasts that were consecrated in the beginning, and when the animals die the priests renew at their burial the mourning for Osiris. But the sacred bulls, the one called Apis and the other

Mnevis, were dedicated to Osiris, and it was ordained that they should be worshipped as gods in common by all the Egyptians, since these animals above all others had helped the discoverers of corn in sowing the seed and procuring the universal benefits of agriculture "

Such is the myth or legend of Osiris, as told by Greek writers and eked out by more or less fragmentary notices or allusions in native Egyptian literature. A long inscription in the temple at Denderah has preserved a list of the god's graves, and other texts mention the parts of his body which were treasured as holy relics in each of the sanctuaries. Thus his heart was at Athribis, his backbone at Busiris, his neck at Letopolis, and his head at Memphis. As often happens in such cases, some of his divine limbs were miraculously multiplied. His head, for example, was at Abydos as well as at Memphis, and his legs, which were remarkably numerous, would have sufficed for several ordinary mortals. In this respect, however, Osiris was nothing to St Denys, of whom no less than seven heads, all equally genuine, are extant.

According to native Egyptian accounts, which supplement that of Plutarch, when Isis had found the corpse of her husband Osiris, she and her sister Nephthys sat down beside it and uttered a lament which in after ages became the type of all Egyptian lamentations for the dead. "Come to thy house," they wailed, "Come to thy house. O god On! come to thy house, thou who hast no foes. O fair youth, come to thy house, that thou mayest see me. I am thy sister, whom thou lovest, thou shalt not part from me. O fair boy, come to thy house. . . . I see thee not, yet doth my heart yearn after thee and mine eyes desire thee. Come to her who loves thee, who loves thee, Unnefer, thou blessed one! Come to thy sister, come to thy wife, to thy wife, thou whose heart stands still. Come to thy housewife. I am thy sister by the same mother, thou shalt not be far from me. Gods and men have turned their faces towards thee and weep for thee together. . . . I call after thee and weep, so that my cry is heard to heaven, but thou hearest not my voice; yet am I thy sister, whom thou didst love on earth; thou didst love none but me, my brother! my brother!" This lament for the fair youth cut off in his prime reminds us of the laments for Adonis. The title of Unnefer or "the Good Being" bestowed on him marks the beneficence which tradition universally ascribed to Osiris; it was at once his commonest title and one of his names as king.

The lamentations of the two sad sisters were not in vain. In pity for her sorrow the sun-god Ra sent down from heaven the jackal-headed god Anubis, who, with the aid of Isis and Nephthys, of Thoth and Horus, pieced together the broken body of the murdered god, swathed it in linen bandages, and observed all the other rites which the Egyptians were wont to perform over the bodies of the departed. Then Isis fanned the cold clay with her wings: Osiris revived, and thenceforth reigned as king over the dead in the other world. There he bore the titles of Lord of the Underworld, Lord of Eternity, Ruler

of the Dead. There, too, in the great Hall of the Two Truths, assisted by forty-two assessors, one from each of the principal districts of Egypt, he presided as judge at the trial of the souls of the departed, who made their solemn confession before him, and, their heart having been weighed in the balance of justice, received the reward of virtue in a life eternal or the appropriate punishment of their sins

In the resurrection of Osiris the Egyptians saw the pledge of a life everlasting for themselves beyond the grave. They believed that every man would live eternally in the other world if only his surviving friends did for his body what the gods had done for the body of Osiris. Hence the ceremonies observed by the Egyptians over the human dead were an exact copy of those which Anubis, Horus, and the rest had performed over the dead god "At every burial there was enacted a representation of the divine mystery which had been performed of old over Osiris, when his son, his sisters, his friends were gathered round his mangled remains and succeeded by their spells and manipulations in converting his broken body into the first mummy, which they afterwards reanimated and furnished with the means of entering on a new individual life beyond the grave. The mummy of the deceased was Osiris; the professional female mourners were his two sisters Isis and Nephthys, Anubis, Horus, all the gods of the Osirian legend gathered about the corpse" In this way every dead Egyptian was identified with Osiris and bore his name. From the Middle Kingdom onwards it was the regular practice to address the deceased as "Osiris So-and-So," as if he were the god himself, and to add the standing epithet "true of speech," because true speech was characteristic of Osiris. The thousands of inscribed and pictured tombs that have been opened in the valley of the Nile prove that the mystery of the resurrection was performed for the benefit of every dead Egyptian; as Osiris died and rose again from the dead, so all men hoped to arise like him from death to life eternal

Thus according to what seems to have been the general native tradition Osiris was a good and beloved king of Egypt, who suffered a violent death but rose from the dead and was henceforth worshipped as a deity. In harmony with this tradition he was regularly represented by sculptors and painters in human and regal form as a dead king, swathed in the wrappings of a mummy, but wearing on his head a kingly crown and grasping in one of his hands, which were left free from the bandages, a kingly sceptre. Two cities above all others were associated with his myth or memory. One of them was Busiris in Lower Egypt, which claimed to possess his backbone; the other was Abydos in Upper Egypt, which gloried in the possession of his head. Encircled by the nimbus of the dead yet living god, Abydos, originally an obscure place, became from the end of the Old Kingdom the holiest spot in Egypt, his tomb there would seem to have been to the Egyptians what the Church of the Holy Sepulchre at Jerusalem is to Christians. It was the wish of every pious man that his dead body should rest in hallowed earth near the grave of the glorified Osiris.

Few indeed were rich enough to enjoy this inestimable privilege, for, apart from the cost of a tomb in the sacred city, the mere transport of mummies from great distances was both difficult and expensive. Yet so eager were many to absorb in death the blessed influence which radiated from the holy sepulchre that they caused their surviving friends to convey their mortal remains to Abydos, there to tarry for a short time, and then to be brought back by river and interred in the tombs which had been made ready for them in their native land. Others had cenotaphs built or memorial tablets erected for themselves near the tomb of their dead and risen Lord, that they might share with him the bliss of a joyful resurrection.

## CHAPTER XXXIX

### THE RITUAL OF OSIRIS

§ 1 *The Popular Rites* — A useful clue to the original nature of a god or goddess is often furnished by the season at which his or her festival is celebrated. Thus, if the festival falls at the new or the full moon, there is a certain presumption that the deity thus honoured either is the moon or at least has lunar affinities. If the festival is held at the winter or summer solstice, we naturally surmise that the god is the sun, or at all events that he stands in some close relation to that luminary. Again, if the festival coincides with the time of sowing or harvest, we are inclined to infer that the divinity is an embodiment of the earth or of the corn. These presumptions or inferences, taken by themselves, are by no means conclusive, but if they happen to be confirmed by other indications, the evidence may be regarded as fairly strong.

Unfortunately, in dealing with the Egyptian gods we are in a great measure precluded from making use of this clue. The reason is not that the dates of the festivals are always unknown, but that they shifted from year to year, until after a long interval they had revolved through the whole course of the seasons. This gradual revolution of the festal Egyptian cycle resulted from the employment of a calendar year which neither corresponded exactly to the solar year nor was periodically corrected by intercalation.

If the Egyptian farmer of the olden time could get no help, except at the rarest intervals, from the official or sacerdotal calendar, he must have been compelled to observe for himself those natural signals which marked the times for the various operations of husbandry. In all ages of which we possess any records the Egyptians have been an agricultural people, dependent for their subsistence on the growth of the corn. The cereals which they cultivated were wheat, barley, and apparently sorghum (*Holcus sorghum*, Linnaeus), the *doora* of the modern fellaheen. Then as now the whole country, with the exception

of a fringe on the coast of the Mediterranean, was almost rainless, and owed its immense fertility entirely to the annual inundation of the Nile, which, regulated by an elaborate system of dams and canals, was distributed over the fields, renewing the soil year by year with a fresh deposit of mud washed down from the great equatorial lakes and the mountains of Abyssinia. Hence the rise of the river has always been watched by the inhabitants with the utmost anxiety, for if it either falls short of or exceeds a certain height, dearth and famine are the inevitable consequences. The water begins to rise early in June, but it is not until the latter half of July that it swells to a mighty tide. By the end of September the inundation is at its greatest height. The country is now submerged, and presents the appearance of a sea of turbid water, from which the towns and villages, built on higher ground, rise like islands. For about a month the flood remains nearly stationary, then sinks more and more rapidly, till by December or January the river has returned to its ordinary bed. With the approach of summer the level of the water continues to fall. In the early days of June the Nile is reduced to half its ordinary breadth, and Egypt, scorched by the sun, blasted by the wind that has blown from the Sahara for many days, seems a mere continuation of the desert. The trees are choked with a thick layer of grey dust. A few meagre patches of vegetables, watered with difficulty, struggle painfully for existence in the immediate neighbourhood of the villages. Some appearance of verdure lingers beside the canals and in the hollows from which the moisture has not wholly evaporated. The plain appears to pant in the pitiless sunshine, bare, dusty, ash-coloured, cracked and seamed as far as the eye can see with a network of fissures. From the middle of April till the middle of June the land of Egypt is but half alive, waiting for the new Nile.

For countless ages this cycle of natural events has determined the annual labours of the Egyptian husbandman. The first work of the agricultural year is the cutting of the dams which have hitherto prevented the swollen river from flooding the canals and the fields. This is done, and the pent-up waters released on their beneficent mission, in the first half of August. In November, when the inundation has subsided, wheat, barley, and sorghum are sown. The time of harvest varies with the district, falling about a month later in the north than in the south. In Upper or Southern Egypt barley is reaped at the beginning of March, wheat at the beginning of April, and sorghum about the end of that month.

It is natural to suppose that the various events of the agricultural year were celebrated by the Egyptian farmer with some simple religious rites designed to secure the blessing of the gods upon his labours. These rustic ceremonies he would continue to perform year after year at the same season, while the solemn festivals of the priests continued to shift, with the shifting calendar, from summer through spring to winter, and so backward through autumn to summer. The rites of the husbandman were stable because they rested on direct observation



of nature: the rites of the priest were unstable because they were based on a false calculation. Yet many of the priestly festivals may have been nothing but the old rural festivals disguised in the course of ages by the pomp of sacerdotalism and severed, by the error of the calendar, from their roots in the natural cycle of the seasons.

These conjectures are confirmed by the little we know both of the popular and of the official Egyptian religion. Thus we are told that the Egyptians held a festival of Isis at the time when the Nile began to rise. They believed that the goddess was then mourning for the lost Osiris, and that the tears which dropped from her eyes swelled the impetuous tide of the river. Now if Osiris was in one of his aspects a god of the corn, nothing could be more natural than that he should be mourned at midsummer. For by that time the harvest was past, the fields were bare, the river ran low, life seemed to be suspended, the corn-god was dead. At such a moment people who saw the handiwork of divine beings in all the operations of nature might well trace the swelling of the sacred stream to the tears shed by the goddess at the death of the beneficent corn-god her husband.

And the sign of the rising waters on earth was accompanied by a sign in heaven. For in the early days of Egyptian history, some three or four thousand years before the beginning of our era, the splendid star of Sirius, the brightest of all the fixed stars, appeared at dawn in the east just before sunrise about the time of the summer solstice, when the Nile begins to rise. The Egyptians called it Sothis, and regarded it as the star of Isis, just as the Babylonians deemed the planet Venus the star of Astarte. To both peoples apparently the brilliant luminary in the morning sky seemed the goddess of life and love come to mourn her departed lover or spouse and to wake him from the dead. Hence the rising of Sirius marked the beginning of the sacred Egyptian year, and was regularly celebrated by a festival which did not shift with the shifting official year.

The cutting of the dams and the admission of the water into the canals and fields is a great event in the Egyptian year. At Cairo the operation generally takes place between the sixth and the sixteenth of August, and till lately was attended by ceremonies which deserve to be noticed, because they were probably handed down from antiquity. An ancient canal, known by the name of the Khalíj, formerly passed through the native town of Cairo. Near its entrance the canal was crossed by a dam of earth, very broad at the bottom and diminishing in breadth upwards, which used to be constructed before or soon after the Nile began to rise. In front of the dam, on the side of the river, was reared a truncated cone of earth called the *'arooseh* or "bride," on the top of which a little maize or millet was generally sown. This "bride" was commonly washed down by the rising tide a week or a fortnight before the cutting of the dam. Tradition runs that the old custom was to deck a young virgin in gay apparel and throw her into the river as a sacrifice to obtain a plentiful inundation. Whether that was so or not, the intention of the practice appears to

have been to marry the river, conceived as a male power, to his bride the cornland, which was so soon to be fertilised by his water. The ceremony was therefore a charm to ensure the growth of the crops. In modern times money used to be thrown into the canal on this occasion, and the populace dived into the water after it. This practice also would seem to have been ancient, for Seneca tells us that at a place called the Veins of the Nile, not far from Philae, the priests used to cast money and offerings of gold into the river at a festival which apparently took place at the rising of the water.

The next great operation of the agricultural year in Egypt is the sowing of the seed in November, when the water of the inundation has retreated from the fields. With the Egyptians, as with many peoples of antiquity, the committing of the seed to the earth assumed the character of a solemn and mournful rite. On this subject I will let Plutarch speak for himself. "What," he asks, "are we to make of the gloomy, joyless, and mournful sacrifices, if it is wrong either to omit the established rites or to confuse and disturb our conceptions of the gods by absurd suspicions? For the Greeks also perform many rites which resemble those of the Egyptians and are observed about the same time. Thus at the festival of the Thesmophoria in Athens women sit on the ground and fast. And the Boeotians open the vaults of the Sorrowful One, naming that festival sorrowful because Demeter is sorrowing for the descent of the Maiden. The month is the month of sowing about the setting of the Pleiades. The Egyptians call it Athyr, the Athenians Pyanepsion, the Boeotians the month of Demeter. . . . For it was that time of year when they saw some of the fruits vanishing and falling from the trees, while they sowed others grudgingly and with difficulty, scraping the earth with their hands and huddling it up again, on the uncertain chance that what they deposited in the ground would ever ripen and come to maturity. Thus they did in many respects like those who bury and mourn their dead."

The Egyptian harvest, as we have seen, falls not in autumn but in spring, in the months of March, April, and May. To the husbandman the time of harvest, at least in a good year, must necessarily be a season of joy. In bringing home his sheaves he is requited for his long and anxious labours. Yet if the old Egyptian farmer felt a secret joy at reaping and garnering the grain, it was essential that he should conceal the natural emotion under an air of profound dejection. For was he not severing the body of the corn-god with his sickle and trampling it to pieces under the hoofs of his cattle on the threshing-floor? Accordingly we are told that it was an ancient custom of the Egyptian corn-reapers to beat their breasts and lament over the first sheaf cut, while at the same time they called upon Isis. The invocation seems to have taken the form of a melancholy chant, to which the Greeks gave the name of *Maneros*. Similar plaintive strains were chanted by corn-reapers in Phœnicia and other parts of Western Asia. Probably all these doleful ditties were lamentations for the

corn-god killed by the sickles of the reapers. In Egypt the slain deity was Osiris, and the name *Maneros*, applied to the dirge, appears to be derived from certain words meaning "Come to thy house," which often occur in the lamentations for the dead god.

Ceremonies of the same sort have been observed by other peoples, probably for the same purpose. Thus we are told that among all vegetables corn, by which is apparently meant maize, holds the first place in the household economy and the ceremonial observance of the Cherokee Indians, who invoke it under the name of "the Old Woman" in allusion to a myth that it sprang from the blood of an old woman killed by her disobedient sons. After the last working of the crop a priest and his assistant went into the field and sang songs of invocation to the spirit of the corn. After that a loud rustling would be heard, which was thought to be caused by the Old Woman bringing the corn into the field. A clean trail was always kept from the field to the house, "so that the corn might be encouraged to stay at home and not go wandering elsewhere." "Another curious ceremony, of which even the memory is now almost forgotten, was enacted after the first working of the corn, when the owner or priest stood in succession at each of the four corners of the field and wept and wailed loudly. Even the priests are now unable to give a reason for this performance, which may have been a lament for the bloody death of Selu," the Old Woman of the Corn. In these Cherokee practices the lamentations and the invocations of the Old Woman of the Corn resemble the ancient Egyptian customs of lamenting over the first corn cut and calling upon Isis, herself probably in one of her aspects an Old Woman of the Corn. Further, the Cherokee precaution of leaving a clear path from the field to the house resembles the Egyptian invitation to Osiris, "Come to thy house." So in the East Indies to this day people observe elaborate ceremonies for the purpose of bringing back the Soul of the Rice from the fields to the barn. The Nandi of East Africa perform a ceremony in September when the eleusine grain is ripening. Every woman who owns a plantation goes out with her daughters into the cornfields and makes a bonfire of the branches and leaves of certain trees. After that they pluck some of the eleusine, and each of them puts one grain in her necklace, chews another and rubs it on her forehead, throat, and breast. "No joy is shown by the womenfolk on this occasion, and they sorrowfully cut a basketful of the corn which they take home with them and place in the loft to dry."

The conception of the corn-spirit as old and dead at harvest is very clearly embodied in a custom observed by the Arabs of Moab. When the harvesters have nearly finished their task and only a small corner of the field remains to be reaped, the owner takes a handful of wheat tied up in a sheaf. A hole is dug in the form of a grave, and two stones are set upright, one at the head and the other at the foot, just as in an ordinary burial. Then the sheaf of wheat is laid at the bottom of the grave, and the sheikh pronounces these words,

"The old man is dead" Earth is afterwards thrown in to cover the sheaf, with a prayer, "May Allah bring us back the wheat of the dead"

§ 2 *The Official Rites*—Such, then, were the principal events of the farmer's calendar in ancient Egypt, and such the simple religious rites by which he celebrated them But we have still to consider the Osirian festivals of the official calendar, so far as these are described by Greek writers or recorded on the monuments In examining them it is necessary to bear in mind that on account of the movable year of the old Egyptian calendar the true or astronomical dates of the official festivals must have varied from year to year, at least until the adoption of the fixed Alexandrian year in 30 B C From that time onward, apparently, the dates of the festivals were determined by the new calendar, and so ceased to rotate throughout the length of the solar year At all events Plutarch, writing about the end of the first century, implies that they were then fixed, not movable, for though he does not mention the Alexandrian calendar, he clearly dates the festivals by it Moreover, the long festal calendar of Esne, an important document of the Imperial age, is obviously based on the fixed Alexandrian year, for it assigns the mark for New Year's Day to the day which corresponds to the twenty-ninth of August, which was the first day of the Alexandrian year, and its references to the rising of the Nile, the position of the sun, and the operations of agriculture are all in harmony with this supposition Thus we may take it as fairly certain that from 30 B C onwards the Egyptian festivals were stationary in the solar year

Herodotus tells us that the grave of Osiris was at Sais in Lower Egypt, and that there was a lake there upon which the sufferings of the god were displayed as a mystery by night This commemoration of the divine passion was held once a year the people mourned and beat their breasts at it to testify their sorrow for the death of the god, and an image of a cow, made of gilt wood with a golden sun between its horns, was carried out of the chamber in which it stood the rest of the year The cow no doubt represented Isis herself, for cows were sacred to her, and she was regularly depicted with the horns of a cow on her head, or even as a woman with the head of a cow It is probable that the carrying out of her cow-shaped image symbolised the goddess searching for the dead body of Osiris, for this was the native Egyptian interpretation of a similar ceremony observed in Plutarch's time about the winter solstice, when the gilt cow was carried seven times round the temple A great feature of the festival was the nocturnal illumination People fastened rows of oil-lamps to the outside of their houses, and the lamps burned all night long The custom was not confined to Sais, but was observed throughout the whole of Egypt

This universal illumination of the houses on one night of the year suggests that the festival may have been a commemoration not merely of the dead Osiris but of the dead in general, in other words, that it

may have been a night of All Souls. For it is a widespread belief that the souls of the dead revisit their old homes on one night of the year; and on that solemn occasion people prepare for the reception of the ghosts by laying out food for them to eat, and lighting lamps to guide them on their dark road from and to the grave. Herodotus, who briefly describes the festival, omits to mention its date, but we can determine it with some probability from other sources. Thus Plutarch tells us that Osiris was murdered on the seventeenth of the month Athyr, and that the Egyptians accordingly observed mournful rites for four days from the seventeenth of Athyr. Now in the Alexandrian calendar, which Plutarch used, these four days corresponded to the thirteenth, fourteenth, fifteenth, and sixteenth of November, and this date answers exactly to the other indications given by Plutarch, who says that at the time of the festival the Nile was sinking, the north winds dying away, the nights lengthening, and the leaves falling from the trees. During these four days a gilt cow swathed in a black pall was exhibited as an image of Isis. This, no doubt, was the image mentioned by Herodotus in his account of the festival. On the nineteenth day of the month the people went down to the sea, the priests carrying a shrine which contained a golden casket. Into this casket they poured fresh water, and thereupon the spectators raised a shout that Osiris was found. After that they took some vegetable mould, moistened it with water, mixed it with precious spices and incense, and moulded the paste into a small moon-shaped image, which was then robed and ornamented. Thus it appears that the purpose of the ceremonies described by Plutarch was to represent dramatically, first, the search for the dead body of Osiris, and, second, its joyful discovery, followed by the resurrection of the dead god who came to life again in the new image of vegetable mould and spices. Lactantius tells us how on these occasions the priests, with their shaven bodies, beat their breasts and lamented, imitating the sorrowful search of Isis for her lost son Osiris, and how afterwards their sorrow was turned to joy when the jackal-headed god Anubis, or rather a mummer in his stead, produced a small boy, the living representative of the god who was lost and was found. Thus Lactantius regarded Osiris as the son instead of the husband of Isis, and he makes no mention of the image of vegetable mould. It is probable that the boy who figured in the sacred drama played the part, not of Osiris, but of his son Horus; but as the death and resurrection of the god were celebrated in many cities of Egypt, it is also possible that in some places the part of the god come to life was played by a living actor instead of by an image. Another Christian writer describes how the Egyptians, with shorn heads, annually lamented over a buried idol of Osiris, smiting their breasts, slashing their shoulders, ripping open their old wounds, until, after several days of mourning, they professed to find the mangled remains of the god, at which they rejoiced. However the details of the ceremony may have varied in different places, the presence of finding the god's body, and probably of restoring it to life,

was a great event in the festal year of the Egyptians. The shouts of joy which greeted it are described or alluded to by many ancient writers

The funeral rites of Osiris, as they were observed at his great festival in the sixteen provinces of Egypt, are described in a long inscription of the Ptolemaic period, which is engraved on the walls of the god's temple at Denderah, the Tentyra of the Greeks, a town of Upper Egypt situated on the western bank of the Nile about forty miles north of Thebes. Unfortunately, while the information thus furnished is remarkably full and minute on many points, the arrangement adopted in the inscription is so confused and the expression often so obscure that a clear and consistent account of the ceremonies as a whole can hardly be extracted from it. Moreover, we learn from the document that the ceremonies varied somewhat in the several cities, the ritual of Abydos, for example, differing from that of Busiris. Without attempting to trace all the particularities of local usage I shall briefly indicate what seem to have been the leading features of the festival, so far as these can be ascertained with tolerable certainty.

The rites lasted eighteen days, from the twelfth to the thirtieth of the month Khoiak, and set forth the nature of Osiris in his triple aspect as dead, dismembered, and finally reconstituted by the union of his scattered limbs. In the first of these aspects he was called Chent-Ament (Khenti-Amenti), in the second Osiris-Sep, and in the third Sokari (Seker). Small images of the god were moulded of sand or vegetable earth and corn, to which incense was sometimes added, his face was painted yellow and his cheek-bones green. These images were cast in a mould of pure gold, which represented the god in the form of a mummy, with the white crown of Egypt on his head. The festival opened on the twelfth day of Khoiak with a ceremony of ploughing and sowing. Two black cows were yoked to the plough, which was made of tamarisk wood, while the share was of black copper. A boy scattered the seed. One end of the field was sown with barley, the other with spelt, and the middle with flax. During the operation the chief celebrant recited the ritual chapter of "the sowing of the fields." At Busiris on the twentieth of Khoiak sand and barley were put in the god's "garden," which appears to have been a sort of large flower-pot. This was done in the presence of the cow-goddess Shenty, represented seemingly by the image of a cow made of gilt sycamore wood with a headless human image in its inside. "Then fresh inundation water was poured out of a golden vase over both the goddess and the 'garden,' and the barley was allowed to grow as the emblem of the resurrection of the god after his burial in the earth, 'for the growth of the garden is the growth of the divine substance'." On the twenty-second of Khoiak, at the eighth hour, the images of Osiris, attended by thirty-four images of deities, performed a mysterious voyage in thirty-four tiny boats made of papyrus, which were illuminated by three hundred and sixty-five lights. On the twenty-fourth of Khoiak, after sunset, the effigy of Osiris in a coffin of mulberry

wood was laid in the grave, and at the ninth hour of the night the effigy which had been made and deposited the year before was removed and placed upon boughs of sycamore. Lastly, on the thirtieth day of Khoiak they repaired to the holy sepulchre, a subterranean chamber over which appears to have grown a clump of Persea-trees. Entering the vault by the western door, they laid the confined effigy of the dead god reverently on a bed of sand in the chamber. So they left him to his rest, and departed from the sepulchre by the eastern door. Thus ended the ceremonies in the month of Khoiak.

In the foregoing account of the festival, drawn from the great inscription of Denderah, the burial of Osiris figures prominently, while his resurrection is implied rather than expressed. This defect of the document, however, is amply compensated by a remarkable series of bas-reliefs which accompany and illustrate the inscription. These exhibit in a series of scenes the dead god lying swathed as a mummy on his bier, then gradually raising himself up higher and higher, until at last he has entirely quitted the bier and is seen erect between the guardian wings of the faithful Isis, who stands behind him, while a male figure holds up before his eyes the *crux ansata*, the Egyptian symbol of life. The resurrection of the god could hardly be portrayed more graphically. Even more instructive, however, is another representation of the same event in a chamber dedicated to Osiris in the great temple of Isis at Philae. Here we see the dead body of Osiris with stalks of corn springing from it, while a priest waters the stalks from a pitcher which he holds in his hand. The accompanying inscription sets forth that "this is the form of him whom one may not name, Osiris of the mysteries, who springs from the returning waters." Taken together, the picture and the words seem to leave no doubt that Osiris was here conceived and represented as a personification of the corn which springs from the fields after they have been fertilised by the inundation. This, according to the inscription, was the kernel of the mysteries, the innermost secret revealed to the initiated. So in the rites of Demeter at Eleusis a reaped ear of corn was exhibited to the worshippers as the central mystery of their religion. We can now fully understand why at the great festival of sowing in the month of Khoiak the priests used to bury effigies of Osiris made of earth and corn. When these effigies were taken up again at the end of a year or of a shorter interval, the corn would be found to have sprouted from the body of Osiris, and this sprouting of the grain would be hailed as an omen, or rather as the cause, of the growth of the crops. The corn-god produced the corn from himself—he gave his own body to feed the people, he died that they might live.

And from the death and resurrection of their great god the Egyptians drew not only their support and sustenance in this life, but also their hope of a life eternal beyond the grave. This hope is indicated in the clearest manner by the very remarkable effigies of Osiris which have come to light in Egyptian cemeteries. Thus in

the Valley of the Kings at Thebes there was found the tomb of a royal fan-bearer who lived about 1500 B C. Among the rich contents of the tomb there was a bier on which rested a mattress of reeds covered with three layers of linen. On the upper side of the linen was painted a life-size figure of Osiris, and the interior of the figure, which was waterproof, contained a mixture of vegetable mould, barley, and a sticky fluid. The barley had sprouted and sent out shoots two or three inches long. Again, in the cemetery at Cynopolis "were numerous burials of Osiris figures. These were made of grain wrapped up in cloth and roughly shaped like an Osiris, and placed inside a bricked-up recess at the side of the tomb, sometimes in small pottery coffins, sometimes in wooden coffins in the form of a hawk-mummy, sometimes without any coffins at all." These corn-stuffed figures were bandaged like mummies with patches of gilding here and there, as if in imitation of the golden mould in which the similar figures of Osiris were cast at the festival of sowing. Again, effigies of Osiris, with faces of green wax and their interior full of grain, were found buried near the necropolis of Thebes. Finally, we are told by Professor Erman that between the legs of mummies "there sometimes lies a figure of Osiris made of slime, it is filled with grains of corn, the sprouting of which is intended to signify the resurrection of the god." We cannot doubt that, just as the burial of corn-stuffed images of Osiris in the earth at the festival of sowing was designed to quicken the seed, so the burial of similar images in the grave was meant to quicken the dead, in other words, to ensure their spiritual immortality.

## CHAPTER XL

### THE NATURE OF OSIRIS

§ 1. *Osiris a Corn-god*—The foregoing survey of the myth and ritual of Osiris may suffice to prove that in one of his aspects the god was a personification of the corn, which may be said to die and come to life again every year. Through all the pomp and glamour with which in later times the priests had invested his worship, the conception of him as the corn-god comes clearly out in the festival of his death and resurrection, which was celebrated in the month of Khoiak and at a later period in the month of Athyr. That festival appears to have been essentially a festival of sowing, which properly fell at the time when the husbandman actually committed the seed to the earth. On that occasion an effigy of the corn-god, moulded of earth and corn, was buried with funeral rites in the ground in order that, dying there, he might come to life again with the new crops. The ceremony was, in fact, a charm to ensure the growth of the corn by sympathetic magic, and we may conjecture that as such it was practised in a simple form by every Egyptian farmer on his fields long before it



was adopted and transfigured by the priests in the stately ritual of the temple. In the modern, but doubtless ancient, Arab custom of burying "the Old Man," namely, a sheaf of wheat, in the harvest-field and praying that he may return from the dead, we see the germ out of which the worship of the corn-god Osiris was probably developed.

The details of his myth fit in well with this interpretation of the god. He was said to be the offspring of Sky and Earth. What more appropriate parentage could be invented for the corn which springs from the ground that has been fertilised by the water of heaven? It is true that the land of Egypt owed its fertility directly to the Nile and not to showers; but the inhabitants must have known or guessed that the great river in its turn was fed by the rains which fell in the far interior. Again, the legend that Osiris was the first to teach men the use of corn would be most naturally told of the corn-god himself. Further, the story that his mangled remains were scattered up and down the land and buried in different places may be a mythical way of expressing either the sowing or the winnowing of the grain. The latter interpretation is supported by the tale that Isis placed the severed limbs of Osiris on a corn-sieve. Or more probably the legend may be a reminiscence of a custom of slaying a human victim, perhaps a representative of the corn-spirit and distributing his flesh or scattering his ashes over the fields to fertilise them. In modern Europe the figure of Death is sometimes torn in pieces, and the fragments are then buried in the ground to make the crops grow well, and in other parts of the world human victims are treated in the same way. With regard to the ancient Egyptians we have it on the authority of Manetho that they used to burn red-haired men and scatter their ashes with winnowing fans, and it is highly significant that this barbarous sacrifice was offered by the kings at the grave of Osiris. We may conjecture that the victims represented Osiris himself, who was annually slain, dismembered, and buried in their persons that he might quicken the seed in the earth.

Possibly in prehistoric times the kings themselves played the part of the god and were slain and dismembered in that character. Set as well as Osiris is said to have been torn in pieces after a reign of eighteen days, which was commemorated by an annual festival of the same length. According to one story Romulus, the first king of Rome, was cut in pieces by the senators, who buried the fragments of him in the ground, and the traditional day of his death, the seventh of July, was celebrated with certain curious rites, which were apparently connected with the artificial fertilisation of the fig. Again, Greek legend told how Pentheus, king of Thebes, and Lycurgus, king of the Thracian Edonians, opposed the vine-god Dionysus, and how the impious monarchs were rent in pieces, the one by the frenzied Bacchanals, the other by horses. These Greek traditions may well be distorted reminiscences of a custom of sacrificing human beings, and especially divine kings, in the character of Dionysus, a god who resembled Osiris in many points and was said like him to have been

torn limb from limb. We are told that in Chios men were rent in pieces as a sacrifice to Dionysus, and since they died the same death as their god, it is reasonable to suppose that they personated him. The story that the Thracian Orpheus was similarly torn limb from limb by the Bacchanals seems to indicate that he too perished in the character of the god whose death he died. It is significant that the Thracian Lycurgus, king of the Edonians, is said to have been put to death in order that the ground, which had ceased to be fruitful, might regain its fertility.

Further, we read of a Norwegian king, Halfdan the Black, whose body was cut up and buried in different parts of his kingdom for the sake of ensuring the fruitfulness of the earth. He is said to have been drowned at the age of forty through the breaking of the ice in spring. What followed his death is thus related by the old Norse historian Snorri Sturluson: "He had been the most prosperous (literally, blessed with abundance) of all kings. So greatly did men value him that when the news came that he was dead and his body removed to Hringariki and intended for burial there, the chief men from Raumaniki and Westfold and Heithmork came and all requested that they might take his body with them and bury it in their various provinces, they thought that it would bring abundance to those who obtained it. Eventually it was settled that the body was distributed in four places. The head was laid in a barrow at Steinn in Hringariki, and each party took away their own share and buried it. All these barrows are called Halfdan's barrows." It should be remembered that this Halfdan belonged to the family of the Ynglings, who traced their descent from Frey, the great Scandinavian god of fertility.

The natives of Kiwai, an island lying off the mouth of the Fly River in British New Guinea, tell of a certain magician named Segera, who had sago for his totem. When Segera was old and ill, he told the people that he would soon die, but that, nevertheless, he would cause their gardens to thrive. Accordingly, he instructed them that when he was dead they should cut him up and place pieces of his flesh in their gardens, but his head was to be buried in his own garden. Of him it is said that he outlived the ordinary age, and that no man knew his father, but that he made the sago good and no one was hungry any more. Old men who were alive some years ago affirmed that they had known Segera in their youth, and the general opinion of the Kiwai people seems to be that Segera died not more than two generations ago.

Taken all together, these legends point to a widespread practice of dismembering the body of a king or magician and burying the pieces in different parts of the country in order to ensure the fertility of the ground and probably also the fecundity of man and beast.

To return to the human victims whose ashes the Egyptians scattered with winnowing-fans, the red hair of these unfortunates

was probably significant. For in Egypt the oxen which were sacrificed had also to be red; a single black or white hair found on the beast would have disqualified it for the sacrifice. If, as I conjecture, these human sacrifices were intended to promote the growth of the crops—and the winnowing of their ashes seems to support this view—red-haired victims were perhaps selected as best fitted to personate the spirit of the ruddy grain. For when a god is represented by a living person, it is natural that the human representative should be chosen on the ground of his supposed resemblance to the divine original. Hence the ancient Mexicans, conceiving the maize as a personal being who went through the whole course of life between seed-time and harvest, sacrificed new-born babes when the maize was sown, older children when it had sprouted, and so on till it was fully ripe, when they sacrificed old men. A name for Osiris was the “crop” or “harvest”, and the ancients sometimes explained him as a personification of the corn.

§ 2. *Osiris a Tree-spirit*—But Osiris was more than a spirit of the corn, he was also a tree-spirit, and this may perhaps have been his primitive character, since the worship of trees is naturally older in the history of religion than the worship of the cereals. The character of Osiris as a tree-spirit was represented very graphically in a ceremony described by Firmicus Maternus. A pine-tree having been cut down, the centre was hollowed out, and with the wood thus excavated an image of Osiris was made, which was then buried like a corpse in the hollow of the tree. It is hard to imagine how the conception of a tree as tenanted by a personal being could be more plainly expressed. The image of Osiris thus made was kept for a year and then burned, exactly as was done with the image of Attis which was attached to the pine-tree. The ceremony of cutting the tree, as described by Firmicus Maternus, appears to be alluded to by Plutarch. It was probably the ritual counterpart of the mythical discovery of the body of Osiris enclosed in the *erica*-tree. In the hall of Osiris at Denderah the coffin containing the hawk-headed mummy of the god is clearly depicted as enclosed within a tree, apparently a conifer, the trunk and branches of which are seen above and below the coffin. The scene thus corresponds closely both to the myth and to the ceremony described by Firmicus Maternus.

It accords with the character of Osiris as a tree-spirit that his worshippers were forbidden to injure fruit-trees, and with his character as a god of vegetation in general that they were not allowed to stop up wells of water, which are so important for the irrigation of hot southern lands. According to one legend, he taught men to train the vine to poles, to prune its superfluous foliage, and to extract the juice of the grape. In the papyrus of Nebseni, written about 1550 B C, Osiris is depicted sitting in a shrine, from the roof of which hang clusters of grapes, and in the papyrus of the royal scribe Nekht we see the god enthroned in front of a pool, from the banks of which a luxuriant vine, with many bunches of grapes, grows towards the

green face of the seated deity. The ivy was sacred to him, and was called his plant because it is always green.

§ 3. *Osiris a God of Fertility*—As a god of vegetation Osiris was naturally conceived as a god of creative energy in general, since men at a certain stage of evolution fail to distinguish between the reproductive powers of animals and of plants. Hence a striking feature in his worship was the coarse but expressive symbolism by which this aspect of his nature was presented to the eye not merely of the initiated but of the multitude. At his festival women used to go about the villages singing songs in his praise and carrying obscene images of him which they set in motion by means of strings. The custom was probably a charm to ensure the growth of the crops. A similar image of him, decked with all the fruits of the earth, is said to have stood in a temple before a figure of Isis, and in the chambers dedicated to him at Philae the dead god is portrayed lying on his bier in an attitude which indicates in the plainest way that even in death his generative virtue was not extinct but only suspended, ready to prove a source of life and fertility to the world when the opportunity should offer. Hymns addressed to Osiris contain allusions to this important side of his nature. In one of them it is said that the world waxes green in triumph through him, and another declares, "Thou art the father and mother of mankind, they live on thy breath, they subsist on the flesh of thy body." We may conjecture that in this paternal aspect he was supposed, like other gods of fertility, to bless men and women with offspring, and that the processions at his festival were intended to promote this object as well as to quicken the seed in the ground. It would be to misjudge ancient religion to denounce as lewd and profligate the emblems and the ceremonies which the Egyptians employed for the purpose of giving effect to this conception of the divine power. The ends which they proposed to themselves in these rites were natural and laudable, only the means they adopted to compass them were mistaken. A similar fallacy induced the Greeks to adopt a like symbolism in their Dionysiac festivals, and the superficial but striking resemblance thus produced between the two religions has perhaps more than anything else misled enquirers, both ancient and modern, into identifying worships which, though certainly akin in nature, are perfectly distinct and independent in origin.

§ 4 *Osiris a God of the Dead*—We have seen that in one of his aspects Osiris was the ruler and judge of the dead. To a people like the Egyptians, who not only believed in a life beyond the grave but actually spent much of their time, labour, and money in preparing for it, this office of the god must have appeared hardly, if at all, less important than his function of making the earth to bring forth its fruits in due season. We may assume that in the faith of his worshippers the two provinces of the god were intimately connected. In laying their dead in the grave they committed them to his keeping who could raise them from the dust to life eternal, even as he caused the seed to spring from the ground. Of that faith the corn-stuffed

effigies of Osiris found in Egyptian tombs furnish an eloquent and unequivocal testimony. They were at once an emblem and an instrument of resurrection. Thus from the sprouting of the grain the ancient Egyptians drew an augury of human immortality. They are not the only people who have built the same lofty hopes on the same slender foundation.

A god who thus fed his people with his own broken body in this life, and who held out to them a promise of a blissful eternity in a better world hereafter, naturally reigned supreme in their affections. We need not wonder, therefore, that in Egypt the worship of the other gods was overshadowed by that of Osiris, and that while they were revered each in his own district, he and his divine partner Isis were adored in all.

## CHAPTER XLI

### ISIS

THE original meaning of the goddess Isis is still more difficult to determine than that of her brother and husband Osiris. Her attributes and epithets were so numerous that in the hieroglyphics she is called "the many-named," "the thousand-named," and in Greek inscriptions "the myriad-named." Yet in her complex nature it is perhaps still possible to detect the original nucleus round which by a slow process of accretion the other elements gathered. For if her brother and husband Osiris was in one of his aspects the corn-god, as we have seen reason to believe, she must surely have been the corn-goddess. There are at least some grounds for thinking so. For if we may trust Diodorus Siculus, whose authority appears to have been the Egyptian historian Manetho, the discovery of wheat and barley was attributed to Isis, and at her festivals stalks of these grains were carried in procession to commemorate the boon she had conferred on men. A further detail is added by Augustine. He says that Isis made the discovery of barley at the moment when she was sacrificing to the common ancestors of her husband and herself, all of whom had been kings, and that she showed the newly discovered ears of barley to Osiris and his councillor Thoth or Mercury, as Roman writers called him. That is why, adds Augustine, they identify Isis with Ceres. Further, at harvest-time, when the Egyptian reapers had cut the first stalks, they laid them down and beat their breasts, wailing and calling upon Isis. The custom has been already explained as a lament for the corn-spirit slain under the sickle. Amongst the epithets by which Isis is designated in the inscriptions are "Creatress of green things," "Green goddess, whose green colour is like unto the greenness of the earth," "Lady of Bread," "Lady of Beer," "Lady of Abundance." According to Brugsch she is "not only the creatress of the fresh verdure of vegetation which covers the earth, but is actually the green

corn-field itself, which is personified as a goddess " This is confirmed by her epithet *Sochit* or *Sochet*, meaning " a corn-field," a sense which the word still retains in Coptic. The Greeks conceived of Isis as a corn-goddess, for they identified her with Demeter. In a Greek epigram she is described as " she who has given birth to the fruits of the earth," and " the mother of the ears of corn "; and in a hymn composed in her honour she speaks of herself as " queen of the wheat-field," and is described as " charged with the care of the fruitful furrow's wheat-rich path " Accordingly, Greek or Roman artists often represented her with ears of corn on her head or in her hand

Such, we may suppose, was Isis in the olden time, a rustic Corn-Mother adored with uncouth rites by Egyptian swains But the homely features of the clownish goddess could hardly be traced in the refined, the saintly form which, spiritualised by ages of religious evolution, she presented to her worshippers of after days as the true wife, the tender mother, the beneficent queen of nature, encircled with the numbus of moral purity, of immemorial and mysterious sanctity. Thus chastened and transfigured she won many hearts far beyond the boundaries of her native land. In that welter of religions which accompanied the decline of national life in antiquity her worship was one of the most popular at Rome and throughout the empire. Some of the Roman emperors themselves were openly addicted to it. And however the religion of Isis may, like any other, have been often worn as a cloak by men and women of loose life, her rites appear on the whole to have been honourably distinguished by a dignity and composure, a solemnity and decorum well fitted to soothe the troubled mind, to ease the burdened heart They appealed therefore to gentle spirits, and above all to women, whom the bloody and licentious rites of other Oriental goddesses only shocked and repelled We need not wonder, then, that in a period of decadence, when traditional faiths were shaken, when systems clashed, when men's minds were disquieted, when the fabric of empire itself, once deemed eternal, began to show ominous rents and fissures, the serene figure of Isis with her spiritual calm, her gracious promise of immortality, should have appeared to many like a star in a stormy sky, and should have roused in their breasts a rapture of devotion not unlike that which was paid in the Middle Ages to the Virgin Mary. Indeed her stately ritual, with its shaven and tonsured priests, its matins and vespers, its tinkling music, its baptism and aspersions of holy water, its solemn processions, its jewelled images of the Mother of God, presented many points of similarity to the pomps and ceremonies of Catholicism The resemblance need not be purely accidental. Ancient Egypt may have contributed its share to the gorgeous symbolism of the Catholic Church as well as to the pale abstractions of her theology. Certainly in art the figure of Isis suckling the infant Horus is so like that of the Madonna and child that it has sometimes received the adoration of ignorant Christians And to Isis in her later character of patroness of mariners the Virgin Mary perhaps owes her beautiful epithet of *Stella Maris*.

"Star of the Sea," under which she is adored by tempest-tossed sailors. The attributes of a marine deity may have been bestowed on Isis by the sea-faring Greeks of Alexandria. They are quite foreign to her original character and to the habits of the Egyptians, who had no love of the sea. On this hypothesis Sirius, the bright star of Isis, which on July mornings rises from the glassy waves of the eastern Mediterranean, a harbinger of halcyon weather to mariners, was the true *Stella Maris*, "the Star of the Sea."

## CHAPTER XLII

### OSIRIS AND THE SUN

OSIRIS has been sometimes interpreted as the sun-god, and in modern times this view has been held by so many distinguished writers that it deserves a brief examination. If we enquire on what evidence Osiris has been identified with the sun or the sun-god, it will be found on analysis to be minute in quantity and dubious, where it is not absolutely worthless, in quality. The diligent Jablonski, the first modern scholar to collect and sift the testimony of classical writers on Egyptian religion, says that it can be shown in many ways that Osiris is the sun, and that he could produce a cloud of witnesses to prove it, but that it is needless to do so, since no learned man is ignorant of the fact. Of the ancient writers whom he condescends to quote, the only two who expressly identify Osiris with the sun are Diodorus and Macrobius. But little weight can be attached to their evidence, for the statement of Diodorus is vague and rhetorical, and the reasons which Macrobius, one of the fathers of solar mythology, assigns for the identification are exceedingly slight.

The ground upon which some modern writers seem chiefly to rely for the identification of Osiris with the sun is that the story of his death fits better with the solar phenomena than with any other in nature. It may readily be admitted that the daily appearance and disappearance of the sun might very naturally be expressed by a myth of his death and resurrection; and writers who regard Osiris as the sun are careful to indicate that it is the diurnal, and not the annual, course of the sun to which they understand the myth to apply. Thus Renouf, who identified Osiris with the sun, admitted that the Egyptian sun could not with any show of reason be described as dead in winter. But if his daily death was the theme of the legend, why was it celebrated by an annual ceremony? This fact alone seems fatal to the interpretation of the myth as descriptive of sunset and sunrise. Again, though the sun may be said to die daily, in what sense can he be said to be torn in pieces?

In the course of our enquiry it has, I trust, been made clear that there is another natural phenomenon to which the conception of death and resurrection is as applicable as to sunset and sunrise, and which,

as a matter of fact, has been so conceived and represented in folk-custom. That phenomenon is the annual growth and decay of vegetation. A strong reason for interpreting the death of Osiris as the decay of vegetation rather than as the sunset is to be found in the general, though not unanimous, voice of antiquity, which classed together the worship and myths of Osiris, Adonis, Attis, Dionysus, and Demeter, as religions of essentially the same type. The consensus of ancient opinion on this subject seems too great to be rejected as a mere fancy. So closely did the rites of Osiris resemble those of Adonis at Byblus that some of the people of Byblus themselves maintained that it was Osiris and not Adonis whose death was mourned by them. Such a view could certainly not have been held if the rituals of the two gods had not been so alike as to be almost indistinguishable. Herodotus found the similarity between the rites of Osiris and Dionysus so great that he thought it impossible the latter could have arisen independently, they must, he supposed, have been recently borrowed, with slight alterations, by the Greeks from the Egyptians. Again, Plutarch, a very keen student of comparative religion, insists upon the detailed resemblance of the rites of Osiris to those of Dionysus. We cannot reject the evidence of such intelligent and trustworthy witnesses on plain matters of fact which fell under their own cognizance. Their explanations of the worships it is indeed possible to reject, for the meaning of religious cults is often open to question, but resemblances of ritual are matters of observation. Therefore, those who explain Osiris as the sun are driven to the alternative of either dismissing as mistaken the testimony of antiquity to the similarity of the rites of Osiris, Adonis, Attis, Dionysus, and Demeter, or of interpreting all these rites as sun-worship. No modern scholar has fairly faced and accepted either side of this alternative. To accept the former would be to affirm that we know the rites of these deities better than the men who practised, or at least who witnessed them. To accept the latter would involve a wrenching, clipping, mangling, and distorting of myth and ritual from which even Macrobius shrank. On the other hand, the view that the essence of all these rites was the mimic death and revival of vegetation, explains them separately and collectively in an easy and natural way, and harmonises with the general testimony borne by the ancients to their substantial similarity.

## CHAPTER XLIII

### DIONYSUS

IN the preceding chapters we saw that in antiquity the civilised nations of Western Asia and Egypt pictured to themselves the changes of the seasons, and particularly the annual growth and decay of vegetation, as episodes in the life of gods, whose mournful



death and happy resurrection they celebrated with dramatic rites of alternate lamentation and rejoicing. But if the celebration was in form dramatic, it was in substance magical, that is to say, it was intended, on the principles of sympathetic magic, to ensure the vernal regeneration of plants and the multiplication of animals, which had seemed to be menaced by the inroads of winter. In the ancient world, however, such ideas and such rites were by no means confined to the Oriental peoples of Babylon and Syria, of Phrygia and Egypt, they were not a product peculiar to the religious mysticism of the dreamy East, but were shared by the races of livelier fancy and more mercurial temperament who inhabited the shores and islands of the Aegean. We need not, with some enquirers in ancient and modern times, suppose that these Western peoples borrowed from the older civilisation of the Orient the conception of the Dying and Reviving God, together with the solemn ritual, in which that conception was dramatically set forth before the eyes of the worshippers. More probably the resemblance which may be traced in this respect between the religions of the East and the West is no more than what we commonly, though incorrectly, call a fortuitous coincidence, the effect of similar causes acting alike on the similar constitution of the human mind in different countries and under different skies. The Greek had no need to journey into far countries to learn the vicissitudes of the seasons, to mark the fleeting beauty of the damask rose, the transient glory of the golden corn, the passing splendour of the purple grapes. Year by year in his own beautiful land he beheld, with natural regret, the bright pomp of summer fading into the gloom and stagnation of winter, and year by year he hailed with natural delight the outburst of fresh life in spring. Accustomed to personify the forces of nature, to tinge her cold abstractions with the warm hues of imagination, to clothe her naked realities with the gorgeous drapery of a mythic fancy, he fashioned for himself a train of gods and goddesses, of spirits and elves, out of the shifting panorama of the seasons, and followed the annual fluctuations of their fortunes with alternate emotions of cheerfulness and dejection, of gladness and sorrow, which found their natural expression in alternate rites of rejoicing and lamentation, of revelry and mourning. A consideration of some of the Greek divinities who thus died and rose again from the dead may furnish us with a series of companion pictures to set side by side with the sad figures of Adonis, Attis, and Osiris. We begin with Dionysus.

The god Dionysus or Bacchus is best known to us as a personification of the vine and of the exhilaration produced by the juice of the grape. His ecstatic worship, characterised by wild dances, thrilling music, and tipsy excess, appears to have originated among the rude tribes of Thrace, who were notoriously addicted to drunkenness. Its mystic doctrines and extravagant rites were essentially foreign to the clear intelligence and sober temperament of the Greek race. Yet appealing as it did to that love of mystery and that proneness

to revert to savagery which seem to be innate in most men, the religion spread like wildfire through Greece until the god whom Homer hardly deigned to notice had become the most popular figure of the pantheon. The resemblance which his story and his ceremonies present to those of Osiris have led some enquirers both in ancient and modern times to hold that Dionysus was merely a disguised Osiris, imported directly from Egypt into Greece. But the great preponderance of evidence points to his Thracian origin, and the similarity of the two worships is sufficiently explained by the similarity of the ideas and customs on which they were founded.

While the vine with its clusters was the most characteristic manifestation of Dionysus, he was also a god of trees in general. Thus we are told that almost all the Greeks sacrificed to "Dionysus of the tree." In Boeotia one of his titles was "Dionysus in the tree." His image was often merely an upright post, without arms, but draped in a mantle, with a bearded mask to represent the head, and with leafy boughs projecting from the head or body to show the nature of the deity. On a vase his rude effigy is depicted appearing out of a low tree or bush. At Magnesia on the Maeander an image of Dionysus is said to have been found in a plane-tree, which had been broken by the wind. He was the patron of cultivated trees; prayers were offered to him that he would make the trees grow; and he was especially honoured by husbandmen, chiefly fruit-growers, who set up an image of him, in the shape of a natural tree-stump, in their orchards. He was said to have discovered all tree-fruits, amongst which apples and figs are particularly mentioned, and he was referred to as "well-fruited," "he of the green fruit," and "making the fruit to grow." One of his titles was "teeming" or "bursting" (as of sap or blossoms); and there was a Flowery Dionysus in Attica and at Patrae in Achaia. The Athenians sacrificed to him for the prosperity of the fruits of the land. Amongst the trees particularly sacred to him, in addition to the vine, was the pine-tree. The Delphic oracle commanded the Corinthians to worship a particular pine-tree "equally with the god," so they made two images of Dionysus out of it, with red faces and gilt bodies. In art a wand, tipped with a pine-cone, is commonly carried by the god or his worshippers. Again, the ivy and the fig-tree were especially associated with him. In the Attic township of Acharnae there was a Dionysus Ivy, at Lacedaemon there was a Fig Dionysus; and in Naxos, where figs were called *melicha*, there was a Dionysus Melichios, the face of whose image was made of fig-wood.

Further, there are indications, few but significant, that Dionysus was conceived as a deity of agriculture and the corn. He is spoken of as himself doing the work of a husbandman. He is reported to have been the first to yoke oxen to the plough, which before had been dragged by hand alone, and some people found in this tradition the clue to the bovine shape in which, as we shall see, the god was often supposed to present himself to his worshippers. Thus guiding the ploughshare and scattering the seed as he went, Dionysus is said to

have eased the labour of the husbandman Further, we are told that in the land of the Bisaltae, a Thracian tribe, there was a great and fair sanctuary of Dionysus, where at his festival a bright light shone forth at night as a token of an abundant harvest vouchsafed by the deity, but if the crops were to fail that year, the mystic light was not seen, darkness brooded over the sanctuary as at other times Moreover, among the emblems of Dionysus was the winnowing-fan, that is the large open shovel-shaped basket, which down to modern times has been used by farmers to separate the grain from the chaff by tossing the corn in the air This simple agricultural instrument figured in the mystic rites of Dionysus; indeed the god is traditionally said to have been placed at birth in a winnowing-fan as in a cradle in art he is represented as an infant so cradled, and from these traditions and representations he derived the epithet of *Liknites*, that is, "He of the Winnowing-fan"

Like other gods of vegetation Dionysus was believed to have died a violent death, but to have been brought to life again, and his sufferings, death, and resurrection were enacted in his sacred rites His tragic story is thus told by the poet Nonnus. Zeus in the form of a serpent visited Persephone, and she bore him Zagreus, that is, Dionysus, a horned infant. Scarcely was he born, when the babe mounted the throne of his father Zeus and mimicked the great god by brandishing the lightning in his tiny hand But he did not occupy the throne long, for the treacherous Titans, their faces whitened with chalk, attacked him with knives while he was looking at himself in a mirror For a time he evaded their assaults by turning himself into various shapes, assuming the likeness successively of Zeus and Cronus, of a young man, of a lion, a horse, and a serpent. Finally, in the form of a bull, he was cut to pieces by the murderous knives of his enemies His Cretan myth, as related by Firmicus Maternus, ran thus He was said to have been the bastard son of Jupiter, a Cretan king Going abroad, Jupiter transferred the throne and sceptre to the youthful Dionysus, but, knowing that his wife Juno cherished a jealous dislike of the child, he entrusted Dionysus to the care of guards upon whose fidelity he believed he could rely. Juno, however, bribed the guards, and amusing the child with rattles and a cunningly-wrought looking-glass lured him into an ambush, where her satellites, the Titans, rushed upon him, cut him limb from limb, boiled his body with various herbs, and ate it But his sister Minerva, who had shared in the deed, kept his heart and gave it to Jupiter on his return, revealing to him the whole history of the crime. In his rage, Jupiter put the Titans to death by torture, and, to soothe his grief for the loss of his son, made an image in which he enclosed the child's heart, and then built a temple in his honour In this version a Euhemeristic turn has been given to the myth by representing Jupiter and Juno (Zeus and Hera) as a king and queen of Crete The guards referred to are the mythical Curetes who danced a war-dance round the infant Dionysus, as they

are said to have done round the infant Zeus. Very noteworthy is the legend, recorded both by Nonnus and Firmicus, that in his infancy Dionysus occupied for a short time the throne of his father Zeus. So Proclus tells us that "Dionysus was the last king of the gods appointed by Zeus. For his father set him on the kingly throne, and placed in his hand the sceptre, and made him king of all the gods of the world." Such traditions point to a custom of temporarily investing the king's son with the royal dignity as a preliminary to sacrificing him instead of his father. Pomegranates were supposed to have sprung from the blood of Dionysus, as anemones from the blood of Adonis and violets from the blood of Attis; hence women refrained from eating seeds of pomegranates at the festival of the Thesmophoria. According to some, the severed limbs of Dionysus were pieced together, at the command of Zeus, by Apollo, who buried them on Parnassus. The grave of Dionysus was shown in the Delphic temple beside a golden statue of Apollo. However, according to another account, the grave of Dionysus was at Thebes, where he is said to have been torn in pieces. Thus far the resurrection of the slain god is not mentioned, but in other versions of the myth it is variously related. According to one version, which represented Dionysus as a son of Zeus and Demeter, his mother pieced together his mangled limbs and made him young again. In others it is simply said that shortly after his burial he rose from the dead and ascended up to heaven, or that Zeus raised him up as he lay mortally wounded; or that Zeus swallowed the heart of Dionysus and then begat him afresh by Semele, who in the common legend figures as mother of Dionysus. Or, again, the heart was pounded up and given in a potion to Semele, who thereby conceived him.

Turning from the myth to the ritual, we find that the Cretans celebrated a biennial festival at which the passion of Dionysus was represented in every detail. All that he had done or suffered in his last moments was enacted before the eyes of his worshippers, who tore a live bull to pieces with their teeth and roamed the woods with frantic shouts. In front of them was carried a casket supposed to contain the sacred heart of Dionysus, and to the wild music of flutes and cymbals they mimicked the rattles by which the infant god had been lured to his doom. Where the resurrection formed part of the myth, it also was acted at the rites, and it even appears that a general doctrine of resurrection, or at least of immortality, was inculcated on the worshippers, for Plutarch, writing to console his wife on the death of their infant daughter, comforts her with the thought of the immortality of the soul as taught by tradition and revealed in the mysteries of Dionysus. A different form of the myth of the death and resurrection of Dionysus is that he descended into Hades to bring up his mother Semele from the dead. The local Argive tradition was that he went down through the Alcyonian lake, and his return from the lower world, in other words his resurrection, was annually celebrated on the spot by the Argives, who summoned him

from the water by trumpet blasts, while they threw a lamb into the lake as an offering to the warder of the dead. Whether this was a spring festival does not appear, but the Lydians certainly celebrated the advent of Dionysus in spring; the god was supposed to bring the season with him. Deities of vegetation, who are believed to pass a certain portion of each year underground, naturally come to be regarded as gods of the lower world or of the dead. Both Dionysus and Osiris were so conceived.

A feature in the mythical character of Dionysus, which at first sight appears inconsistent with his nature as a deity of vegetation, is that he was often conceived and represented in animal shape, especially in the form, or at least with the horns, of a bull. Thus he is spoken of as "cow-born," "bull," "bull-shaped," "bull-faced," "bull-browed," "bull-horned," "horn-bearing," "two-horned," "horned." He was believed to appear, at least occasionally, as a bull. His images were often, as at Cyzicus, made in bull shape, or with bull horns, and he was painted with horns. Types of the horned Dionysus are found amongst the surviving monuments of antiquity. On one statuette he appears clad in a bull's hide, the head, horns, and hoofs hanging down behind. Again, he is represented as a child with clusters of grapes round his brow, and a calf's head, with sprouting horns, attached to the back of his head. On a red-figured vase the god is portrayed as a calf-headed child seated on a woman's lap. The people of Cynaetha held a festival of Dionysus in winter, when men, who had greased their bodies with oil for the occasion, used to pick out a bull from the herd and carry it to the sanctuary of the god. Dionysus was supposed to inspire their choice of the particular bull, which probably represented the deity himself, for at his festivals he was believed to appear in bull form. The women of Elis hailed him as a bull, and prayed him to come with his bull's foot. They sang, "Come hither, Dionysus, to thy holy temple by the sea; come with the Graces to thy temple, rushing with thy bull's foot, O goodly bull, O goodly bull!" The Bacchanals of Thrace wore horns in imitation of their god. According to the myth, it was in the shape of a bull that he was torn to pieces by the Titans; and the Cretans, when they acted the sufferings and death of Dionysus, tore a live bull to pieces with their teeth. Indeed, the rending and devouring of live bulls and calves appear to have been a regular feature of the Dionysiac rites. When we consider the practice of portraying the god as a bull or with some of the features of the animal, the belief that he appeared in bull form to his worshippers at the sacred rites, and the legend that in bull form he had been torn in pieces, we cannot doubt that in rending and devouring a live bull at his festival the worshippers of Dionysus believed themselves to be killing the god, eating his flesh, and drinking his blood.

Another animal whose form Dionysus assumed was the goat. One of his names was "Kid." At Athens and at Hermion he was worshipped under the title of "the one of the Black Goatskin," and a

legend ran that on a certain occasion he had appeared clad in the skin from which he took the title. In the wine-growing district of Phlius, where in autumn the plain is still thickly mantled with the red and golden foliage of the fading vines, there stood of old a bronze image of a goat, which the husbandmen plastered with gold-leaf as a means of protecting their vines against blight. The image probably represented the vine-god himself. To save him from the wrath of Hera, his father Zeus changed the youthful Dionysus into a kid, and when the gods fled to Egypt to escape the fury of Typhon, Dionysus was turned into a goat. Hence when his worshippers rent in pieces a live goat and devoured it raw, they must have believed that they were eating the body and blood of the god. The custom of tearing in pieces the bodies of animals and of men and then devouring them raw has been practised as a religious rite by savages in modern times. We need not therefore dismiss as a fable the testimony of antiquity to the observance of similar rites among the frenzied worshippers of Bacchus.

The custom of killing a god in animal form, which we shall examine more in detail further on, belongs to a very early stage of human culture, and is apt in later times to be misunderstood. The advance of thought tends to strip the old animal and plant gods of their bestial and vegetable husk, and to leave their human attributes (which are always the kernel of the conception) as the final and sole residuum. In other words, animal and plant gods tend to become purely anthropomorphic. When they have become wholly or nearly so, the animals and plants which were at first the deities themselves, still retain a vague and ill-understood connexion with the anthropomorphic gods who have been developed out of them. The origin of the relationship between the deity and the animal or plant having been forgotten, various stories are invented to explain it. These explanations may follow one of two lines according as they are based on the habitual or on the exceptional treatment of the sacred animal or plant. The sacred animal was habitually spared, and only exceptionally slain, and accordingly the myth might be devised to explain either why it was spared or why it was killed. Devised for the former purpose, the myth would tell of some service rendered to the deity by the animal, devised for the latter purpose, the myth would tell of some injury inflicted by the animal on the god. The reason given for sacrificing goats to Dionysus exemplifies a myth of the latter sort. They were sacrificed to him, it was said, because they injured the vine. Now the goat, as we have seen, was originally an embodiment of the god himself. But when the god had divested himself of his animal character and had become essentially anthropomorphic, the killing of the goat in his worship came to be regarded no longer as a slaying of the deity himself, but as a sacrifice offered to him, and since some reason had to be assigned why the goat in particular should be sacrificed, it was alleged that this was a punishment inflicted on the goat for injuring the vine, the object of the god's especial care. Thus we have the strange spectacle of a god sacrificed to himself on the ground that he

is his own enemy And as the deity is supposed to partake of the victim offered to him, it follows that, when the victim is the god's old self, the god eats of his own flesh Hence the goat-god Dionysus is represented as eating raw goat's blood, and the bull-god Dionysus is called "eater of bulls" On the analogy of these instances we may conjecture that wherever a deity is described as the eater of a particular animal, the animal in question was originally nothing but the deity himself Later on we shall find that some savages propitiate dead bears and whales by offering them portions of their own bodies

All this, however, does not explain why a deity of vegetation should appear in animal form But the consideration of that point had better be deferred till we have discussed the character and attributes of Demeter. Meantime it remains to mention that in some places, instead of an animal, a human being was torn in pieces at the rites of Dionysus This was the practice in Chios and Tenedos, and at Potmæ in Boeotia the tradition ran that it had been formerly the custom to sacrifice to the goat-smiting Dionysus a child, for whom a goat was afterwards substituted At Orchomenus, as we have seen, the human victim was taken from the women of an old royal family. As the slain bull or goat represented the slain god, so, we may suppose, the human victim also represented him

The legends of the deaths of Pentheus and Lycurgus, two kings who are said to have been torn to pieces, the one by Bacchanals, the other by horses, for their opposition to the rites of Dionysus, may be, as I have already suggested, distorted reminiscences of a custom of sacrificing divine kings in the character of Dionysus and of dispersing the fragments of their broken bodies over the fields for the purpose of fertilising them It is probably no mere coincidence that Dionysus himself is said to have been torn in pieces at Thebes, the very place where according to legend the same fate befell King Pentheus at the hands of the frenzied votaries of the vine-god

However, a tradition of human sacrifice may sometimes have been a mere misinterpretation of a sacrificial ritual in which an animal victim was treated as a human being For example, at Tenedos the new-born calf sacrificed to Dionysus was shod in buskins, and the mother cow was tended like a woman in child-bed At Rome a she-goat was sacrificed to Vedijovis as if it were a human victim Yet on the other hand it is equally possible, and perhaps more probable, that these curious rites were themselves mitigations of an older and ruder custom of sacrificing human beings, and that the later pretence of treating the sacrificial victims as if they were human beings was merely part of a pious and merciful fraud, which palmed off on the deity less precious victims than living men and women This interpretation is supported by many undoubted cases in which animals have been substituted for human victims.

## CHAPTER XLIV

## DEMETER AND PERSEPHONE

DIONYSUS was not the only Greek deity whose tragic story and ritual appear to reflect the decay and revival of vegetation. In another form and with a different application the old tale reappears in the myth of Demeter and Persephone. Substantially their myth is identical with the Syrian one of Aphrodite (Astarte) and Adonis, the Phrygian one of Cybele and Attis, and the Egyptian one of Isis and Osiris. In the Greek fable, as in its Asiatic and Egyptian counterparts, a goddess mourns the loss of a loved one, who personifies the vegetation, more especially the corn, which dies in winter to revive in spring, only whereas the Oriental imagination figured the loved and lost one as a dead lover or a dead husband lamented by his leman or his wife, Greek fancy embodied the same idea in the tenderer and purer form of a dead daughter bewailed by her sorrowing mother.

The oldest literary document which narrates the myth of Demeter and Persephone is the beautiful Homeric *Hymn to Demeter*, which critics assign to the seventh century before our era. The object of the poem is to explain the origin of the Eleusinian mysteries, and the complete silence of the poet as to Athens and the Athenians, who in after ages took a conspicuous part in the festival, renders it probable that the hymn was composed in the far-off time when Eleusis was still a petty independent state, and before the stately procession of the Mysteries had begun to defile, in bright September days, over the low chain of barren rocky hills which divides the flat Eleusinian cornland from the more spacious olive-clad expanse of the Athenian plain. Be that as it may, the hymn reveals to us the conception which the writer entertained of the character and functions of the two goddesses: their natural shapes stand out sharply enough under the thin veil of poetical imagery. The youthful Persephone, so runs the tale, was gathering roses and lilies, crocuses and violets, hyacinths and narcissuses in a lush meadow, when the earth gaped and Pluto, lord of the Dead, issuing from the abyss carried her off on his golden car to be his bride and queen in the gloomy subterranean world. Her sorrowing mother Demeter, with her yellow tresses veiled in a dark mourning mantle, sought her over land and sea, and learning from the Sun her daughter's fate she withdrew in high dudgeon from the gods and took up her abode at Eleusis, where she presented herself to the king's daughters in the guise of an old woman, sitting sadly under the shadow of an olive tree beside the Maiden's Well, to which the damsels had come to draw water in bronze pitchers for their father's house. In her wrath at her bereavement the goddess suffered not the seed to grow in the earth but kept it hidden under ground, and she vowed that never would she set foot on Olympus and never would she let the corn sprout till her lost daughter should be restored to her.



Vainly the oxen dragged the ploughs to and fro in the fields ; vainly the sower dropped the barley seed in the brown furrows , nothing came up from the parched and crumbling soil Even the Rarian plain near Eleusis, which was wont to wave with yellow harvests, lay bare and fallow Mankind would have perished of hunger and the gods would have been robbed of the sacrifices which were their due, if Zeus in alarm had not commanded Pluto to disgorge his prey, to restore his bride Persephone to her mother Demeter The grim lord of the Dead smiled and obeyed, but before he sent back his queen to the upper air on a golden car, he gave her the seed of a pomegranate to eat, which ensured that she would return to him But Zeus stipulated that henceforth Persephone should spend two-thirds of every year with her mother and the gods in the upper world and one-third of the year with her husband in the nether world, from which she was to return year by year when the earth was gay with spring flowers Gladly the daughter then returned to the sunshine, gladly her mother received her and fell upon her neck ; and in her joy at recovering the lost one Demeter made the corn to sprout from the clods of the ploughed fields and all the broad earth to be heavy with leaves and blossoms And straightway she went and showed this happy sight to the princes of Eleusis, to Triptolemus, Eumolpus, Diocles, and to the king Celeus himself, and moreover she revealed to them her sacred rites and mysteries Blessed, says the poet, is the mortal man who has seen these things, but he who has had no share of them in life will never be happy in death when he has descended into the darkness of the grave So the two goddesses departed to dwell in bliss with the gods on Olympus , and the bard ends the hymn with a pious prayer to Demeter and Persephone that they would be pleased to grant him a livelihood in return for his song

It has been generally recognised, and indeed it seems scarcely open to doubt, that the main theme which the poet set before himself in composing this hymn was to describe the traditional foundation of the Eleusinian mysteries by the goddess Demeter. The whole poem leads up to the transformation scene in which the bare leafless expanse of the Eleusinian plain is suddenly turned, at the will of the goddess, into a vast sheet of ruddy corn , the beneficent deity takes the princes of Eleusis, shows them what she has done, teaches them her mystic rites, and vanishes with her daughter to heaven The revelation of the mysteries is the triumphal close of the piece This conclusion is confirmed by a more minute examination of the poem, which proves that the poet has given, not merely a general account of the foundation of the mysteries, but also in more or less veiled language mythical explanations of the origin of particular rites which we have good reason to believe formed essential features of the festival. Amongst the rites as to which the poet thus drops significant hints are the preliminary fast of the candidates for initiation, the torchlight procession, the all-night vigil, the sitting of the candidates, veiled and in silence, on stools covered with sheepskins, the use of scurrilous

language, the breaking of ribald jests, and the solemn communion with the divinity by participation in a draught of barley-water from a holy chalice

But there is yet another and a deeper secret of the mysteries which the author of the poem appears to have divulged under cover of his narrative. He tells us how, as soon as she had transformed the barren brown expanse of the Eleusinian plain into a field of golden grain, she gladdened the eyes of Triptolemus and the other Eleusinian princes by showing them the growing or standing corn. When we compare this part of the story with the statement of a Christian writer of the second century, Hippolytus, that the very heart of the mysteries consisted in showing to the initiated a reaped ear of corn, we can hardly doubt that the poet of the hymn was well acquainted with this solemn rite, and that he deliberately intended to explain its origin in precisely the same way as he explained other rites of the mysteries, namely by representing Demeter as having set the example of performing the ceremony in her own person. Thus myth and ritual mutually explain and confirm each other. The poet of the seventh century before our era gives us the myth—he could not without sacrilege have revealed the ritual—the Christian father reveals the ritual, and his revelation accords perfectly with the veiled hint of the old poet. On the whole, then, we may, with many modern scholars, confidently accept the statement of the learned Christian father Clement of Alexandria, that the myth of Demeter and Persephone was acted as a sacred drama in the mysteries of Eleusis.

But if the myth was acted as a part, perhaps as the principal part, of the most famous and solemn religious rites of ancient Greece, we have still to enquire, What was, after all, stripped of later accretions, the original kernel of the myth which appears to later ages surrounded and transfigured by an aureole of awe and mystery, lit up by some of the most brilliant rays of Grecian literature and art? If we follow the indications given by our oldest literary authority on the subject, the author of the Homeric hymn to Demeter, the riddle is not hard to read, the figures of the two goddesses, the mother and the daughter, resolve themselves into personifications of the corn. At least this appears to be fairly certain for the daughter Persephone. The goddess who spends three or, according to another version of the myth, six months of every year with the dead under ground and the remainder of the year with the living above ground, in whose absence the barley seed is hidden in the earth and the fields lie bare and fallow, on whose return in spring to the upper world the corn shoots up from the clods and the earth is heavy with leaves and blossoms—this goddess can surely be nothing else than a mythical embodiment of the vegetation, and particularly of the corn, which is buried under the soil for some months of every winter and comes to life again, as from the grave, in the sprouting cornstalks and the opening flowers and foliage of every spring. No other reasonable and probable explanation of Persephone seems possible. And if the daughter goddess

was a personification of the young corn of the present year, may not the mother goddess be a personification of the old corn of last year, which has given birth to the new crops? The only alternative to this view of Demeter would seem to be to suppose that she is a personification of the earth, from whose broad bosom the corn and all other plants spring up, and of which accordingly they may appropriately enough be regarded as the daughters. This view of the original nature of Demeter has indeed been taken by some writers, both ancient and modern, and it is one which can be reasonably maintained. But it appears to have been rejected by the author of the Homeric hymn to Demeter, for he not only distinguishes Demeter from the personified Earth but places the two in the sharpest opposition to each other. He tells us that it was Earth who, in accordance with the will of Zeus and to please Pluto, lured Persephone to her doom by causing the narcissuses to grow which tempted the young goddess to stray far beyond the reach of help in the lush meadow. Thus Demeter of the hymn, far from being identical with the Earth-goddess, must have regarded that divinity as her worst enemy, since it was to her insidious wiles that she owed the loss of her daughter. But if the Demeter of the hymn cannot have been a personification of the earth, the only alternative apparently is to conclude that she was a personification of the corn.

The conclusion is confirmed by the monuments, for in ancient art Demeter and Persephone are alike characterised as goddesses of the corn by the crowns of corn which they wear on their heads and by the stalks of corn which they hold in their hands. Again, it was Demeter who first revealed to the Athenians the secret of the corn and diffused the beneficent discovery far and wide through the agency of Triptolemus, whom she sent forth as an itinerant missionary to communicate the boon to all mankind. On monuments of art, especially in vase-paintings, he is constantly represented along with Demeter in this capacity, holding corn-stalks in his hand and sitting in his car, which is sometimes winged and sometimes drawn by dragons, and from which he is said to have sowed the seed down on the whole world as he sped through the air. In gratitude for the priceless boon many Greek cities long continued to send the first-fruits of their barley and wheat harvests as thank-offerings to the Two Goddesses, Demeter and Persephone, at Eleusis, where subterranean granaries were built to store the overflowing contributions. Theocritus tells how in the island of Cos, in the sweet-scented summer time, the farmer brought the first-fruits of the harvest to Demeter who had filled his threshing-floor with barley, and whose rustic image held sheaves and poppies in her hands. Many of the epithets bestowed by the ancients on Demeter mark her intimate association with the corn in the clearest manner.

How deeply implanted in the mind of the ancient Greeks was this faith in Demeter as goddess of the corn may be judged by the circumstance that the faith actually persisted among their Christian descendants

at her old sanctuary of Eleusis down to the beginning of the nineteenth century. For when the English traveller Dodwell revisited Eleusis, the inhabitants lamented to him the loss of a colossal image of Demeter, which was carried off by Clarke in 1802 and presented to the University of Cambridge, where it still remains "In my first journey to Greece," says Dodwell, "this protecting deity was in its full glory, situated in the centre of a threshing-floor, amongst the ruins of her temple. The villagers were impressed with a persuasion that their rich harvests were the effect of her bounty, and since her removal, their abundance, as they assured me, has disappeared" Thus we see the Corn Goddess Demeter standing on the threshing-floor of Eleusis and dispensing corn to her worshippers in the nineteenth century of the Christian era, precisely as her image stood and dispensed corn to her worshippers on the threshing-floor of Cos in the days of Theocritus. And just as the people of Eleusis in the nineteenth century attributed the diminution of their harvests to the loss of the image of Demeter, so in antiquity the Sicilians, a corn-growing people devoted to the worship of the two Corn Goddesses, lamented that the crops of many towns had perished because the unscrupulous Roman governor Verres had impiously carried off the image of Demeter from her famous temple at Henna. Could we ask for a clearer proof that Demeter was indeed the goddess of the corn than this belief, held by the Greeks down to modern times, that the corn-crops depended on her presence and bounty and perished when her image was removed?

On the whole, then, if, ignoring theories, we adhere to the evidence of the ancients themselves in regard to the rites of Eleusis, we shall probably incline to agree with the most learned of ancient antiquaries, the Roman Varro, who, to quote Augustine's report of his opinion, "interpreted the whole of the Eleusinian mysteries as relating to the corn which Ceres (Demeter) had discovered, and to Proserpine (Persephone), whom Pluto had carried off from her. And Proserpine herself, he said, signifies the fecundity of the seeds, the failure of which at a certain time had caused the earth to mourn for barrenness, and therefore had given rise to the opinion that the daughter of Ceres, that is, fecundity itself, had been ravished by Pluto and detained in the nether world, and when the dearth had been publicly mourned and fecundity had returned once more, there was gladness at the return of Proserpine and solemn rites were instituted accordingly. After that he says," continues Augustine, reporting Varro, "that many things were taught in her mysteries which had no reference but to the discovery of the corn."

Thus far I have for the most part assumed an identity of nature between Demeter and Persephone, the divine mother and daughter personifying the corn in its double aspect of the seed-corn of last year and the ripe ears of this, and this view of the substantial unity of mother and daughter is borne out by their portraits in Greek art, which are often so alike as to be indistinguishable. Such a close resemblance between the artistic types of Demeter and Persephone

mitates decidedly against the view that the two goddesses are mythical embodiments of two things so different and so easily distinguishable from each other as the earth and the vegetation which springs from it. Had Greek artists accepted that view of Demeter and Persephone, they could surely have devised types of them which would have brought out the deep distinction between the goddesses. And if Demeter did not personify the earth, can there be any reasonable doubt that, like her daughter, she personified the corn which was so commonly called by her name from the time of Homer downwards? The essential identity of mother and daughter is suggested, not only by the close resemblance of their artistic types, but also by the official title of "the Two Goddesses" which was regularly applied to them in the great sanctuary at Eleusis without any specification of their individual attributes and titles, as if their separate individualities had almost merged in a single divine substance.

Surveying the evidence as a whole, we are fairly entitled to conclude that in the mind of the ordinary Greek the two goddesses were essentially personifications of the corn, and that in this germ the whole efflorescence of their religion finds implicitly its explanation. But to maintain this is not to deny that in the long course of religious evolution high moral and spiritual conceptions were grafted on this simple original stock and blossomed out into fairer flowers than the bloom of the barley and the wheat. Above all, the thought of the seed buried in the earth in order to spring up to new and higher life readily suggested a comparison with human destiny, and strengthened the hope that for man too the grave may be but the beginning of a better and happier existence in some brighter world unknown. This simple and natural reflection seems perfectly sufficient to explain the association of the Corn Goddess at Eleusis with the mystery of death and the hope of a blissful immortality. For that the ancients regarded initiation in the Eleusinian mysteries as a key to unlock the gates of Paradise appears to be proved by the allusions which well-informed writers among them drop to the happiness in store for the initiated hereafter. No doubt it is easy for us to discern the flimsiness of the logical foundation on which such high hopes were built. But drowning men clutch at straws, and we need not wonder that the Greeks, like ourselves, with death before them and a great love of life in their hearts, should not have stopped to weigh with too nice a hand the arguments that told for and against the prospect of human immortality. The reasoning that satisfied Saint Paul and has brought comfort to untold thousands of sorrowing Christians, standing by the deathbed or the open grave of their loved ones, was good enough to pass muster with ancient pagans, when they too bowed their heads under the burden of grief, and, with the taper of life burning low in the socket, looked forward into the darkness of the unknown. Therefore we do no indignity to the myth of Demeter and Persephone—one of the few myths in which the sunshine and clarity of the Greek genius are crossed by the shadow and mystery of death—when we trace its

origin to some of the most familiar, yet eternally affecting aspects of nature, to the melancholy gloom and decay of autumn and to the freshness, the brightness, and the verdure of spring.

## CHAPTER XLV

### THE CORN-MOTHER AND THE CORN-MAIDEN IN NORTHERN EUROPE

It has been argued by W Mannhardt that the first part of Demeter's name is derived from an alleged Cretan word *dean*, "barley," and that accordingly Demeter means neither more nor less than "Barley-mother" or "Corn-mother", for the root of the word seems to have been applied to different kinds of grain by different branches of the Aryans. As Crete appears to have been one of the most ancient seats of the worship of Demeter, it would not be surprising if her name were of Cretan origin. But the etymology is open to serious objections, and it is safer therefore to lay no stress on it. Be that as it may, we have found independent reasons for identifying Demeter as the Corn-mother, and of the two species of corn associated with her in Greek religion, namely barley and wheat, the barley has perhaps the better claim to be her original element, for not only would it seem to have been the staple food of the Greeks in the Homeric age, but there are grounds for believing that it is one of the oldest, if not the very oldest, cereal cultivated by the Aryan race. Certainly the use of barley in the religious ritual of the ancient Hindoos as well as of the ancient Greeks furnishes a strong argument in favour of the great antiquity of its cultivation, which is known to have been practised by the lake-dwellers of the Stone Age in Europe.

Analogies to the Corn-mother or Barley-mother of ancient Greece have been collected in great abundance by W Mannhardt from the folk-lore of modern Europe. The following may serve as specimens.

In Germany the corn is very commonly personified under the name of the Corn-mother. Thus in spring, when the corn waves in the wind, the peasants say, "There comes the Corn-mother," or "The Corn-mother is running over the field," or "The Corn-mother is going through the corn." When children wish to go into the fields to pull the blue corn-flowers or the red poppies, they are told not to do so, because the Corn-mother is sitting in the corn and will catch them. Or again she is called, according to the crop, the Rye-mother or the Pea-mother, and children are warned against straying in the rye or among the peas by threats of the Rye-mother or the Pea-mother. Again the Corn-mother is believed to make the crop grow. Thus in the neighbourhood of Magdeburg it is sometimes said, "It will be a good year for flax, the Flax-mother has been seen." In a village of Styria it is said that the Corn-mother, in the shape of a female puppet made out of the last sheaf of corn and dressed in white, may be seen at mid-

night in the corn-fields, which she fertilises by passing through them ; but if she is angry with a farmer, she withers up all his corn.

Further, the Corn-mother plays an important part in harvest customs. She is believed to be present in the handful of corn which is left standing last on the field, and with the cutting of this last handful she is caught, or driven away, or killed. In the first of these cases, the last sheaf is carried joyfully home and honoured as a divine being. It is placed in the barn, and at threshing the corn-spirit appears again. In the Hanoverian district of Hadeln the reapers stand round the last sheaf and beat it with sticks in order to drive the Corn-mother out of it. They call to each other, " There she is ! hit her ! Take care she doesn't catch you ! " The beating goes on till the grain is completely threshed out, then the Corn-mother is believed to be driven away. In the neighbourhood of Danzig the person who cuts the last ears of corn makes them into a doll, which is called the Corn-mother or the Old Woman and is brought home on the last waggon. In some parts of Holstein the last sheaf is dressed in woman's clothes and called the Corn-mother. It is carried home on the last waggon, and then thoroughly drenched with water. The drenching with water is doubtless a rain-charm. In the district of Bruck in Styria the last sheaf, called the Corn-mother, is made up into the shape of a woman by the oldest married woman in the village, of an age from fifty to fifty-five years. The finest ears are plucked out of it and made into a wreath, which, twined with flowers, is carried on her head by the prettiest girl of the village to the farmer or squire, while the Corn-mother is laid down in the barn to keep off the mice. In other villages of the same district the Corn-mother, at the close of harvest, is carried by two lads at the top of a pole. They march behind the girl who wears the wreath to the squire's house, and while he receives the wreath and hangs it up in the hall, the Corn-mother is placed on the top of a pile of wood, where she is the centre of the harvest supper and dance. Afterwards she is hung up in the barn and remains there till the threshing is over. The man who gives the last stroke at threshing is called the son of the Corn-mother ; he is tied up in the Corn-mother, beaten, and carried through the village. The wreath is dedicated in church on the following Sunday, and on Easter Eve the grain is rubbed out of it by a seven-year-old girl and scattered amongst the young corn. At Christmas the straw of the wreath is placed in the manger to make the cattle thrive. Here the fertilising power of the Corn-mother is plainly brought out by scattering the seed taken from her body (for the wreath is made out of the Corn-mother) among the new corn, and her influence over animal life is indicated by placing the straw in the manger. Amongst the Slavs also the last sheaf is known as the Rye-mother, the Wheat-mother, the Oats-mother, the Barley-mother, and so on, according to the crop. In the district of Tarnow, Galicia, the wreath made out of the last stalks is called the Wheat-mother, Rye-mother, or Pea-mother. It is placed on a girl's head and kept till spring, when some of the

17791

grain is mixed with the seed-corn. Here again the fertilising power of the Corn-mother is indicated. In France, also, in the neighbourhood of Auxerre, the last sheaf goes by the name of the Mother of the Wheat, Mother of the Barley, Mother of the Rye, or Mother of the Oats. They leave it standing in the field till the last waggon is about to wend homewards. Then they make a puppet out of it, dress it with clothes belonging to the farmer, and adorn it with a crown and a blue or white scarf. A branch of a tree is stuck in the breast of the puppet, which is now called the Ceres. At the dance in the evening the Ceres is set in the middle of the floor, and the reaper who reaped fastest dances round it with the prettiest girl for his partner. After the dance a pyre is made. All the girls, each wearing a wreath, strip the puppet, pull it to pieces, and place it on the pyre, along with the flowers with which it was adorned. Then the girl who was the first to finish reaping sets fire to the pile, and all pray that Ceres may give a fruitful year. Here, as Mannhardt observes, the old custom has remained intact, though the name Ceres is a bit of schoolmaster's learning. In Upper Brittany the last sheaf is always made into human shape, but if the farmer is a married man, it is made double and consists of a little corn-puppet placed inside of a large one. This is called the Mother-sheaf. It is delivered to the farmer's wife, who unties it and gives drink-money in return. 303 1-858

Sometimes the last sheaf is called, not the Corn-mother, but the Harvest-mother or the Great Mother. In the province of Osnabruck, Hanover, it is called the Harvest-mother, it is made up in female form, and then the reapers dance about with it. In some parts of Westphalia the last sheaf at the rye-harvest is made especially heavy by fastening stones in it. They bring it home on the last waggon and call it the Great Mother, though they do not fashion it into any special shape. In the district of Erfurt a very heavy sheaf, not necessarily the last, is called the Great Mother, and is carried on the last waggon to the barn, where all hands lift it down amid a fire of jokes.

Sometimes again the last sheaf is called the Grandmother, and is adorned with flowers, ribbons, and a woman's apron. In East Prussia, at the rye or wheat harvest, the reapers call out to the woman who binds the last sheaf, "You are getting the Old Grandmother." In the neighbourhood of Magdeburg the men and women servants strive who shall get the last sheaf, called the Grandmother. Whoever gets it will be married in the next year, but his or her spouse will be old; if a girl gets it, she will marry a widower; if a man gets it, he will marry an old crone. In Silesia the Grandmother—a huge bundle made up of three or four sheaves by the person who tied the last sheaf—was formerly fashioned into a rude likeness of the human form. In the neighbourhood of Belfast the last sheaf sometimes goes by the name of the Granny. It is not cut in the usual way, but all the reapers throw their sickles at it and try to bring it down. It is plaited and kept till the (next?) autumn. ~~Whoever gets it will marry in the course of the year.~~ MA 58A 1-858



Often the last sheaf is called the Old Woman or the Old Man. In Germany it is frequently shaped and dressed as a woman, and the person who cuts it or binds it is said to "get the Old Woman." At Altisheim, in Swabia, when all the corn of a farm has been cut except a single strip, all the reapers stand in a row before the strip, each cuts his share rapidly, and he who gives the last cut "has the Old Woman." When the sheaves are being set up in heaps, the person who gets hold of the Old Woman, which is the largest and thickest of all the sheaves, is jeered at by the rest, who call out to him, "He has the Old Woman and must keep her." The woman who binds the last sheaf is sometimes herself called the Old Woman, and it is said that she will be married in the next year. In Neusaass, West Prussia, both the last sheaf—which is dressed up in jacket, hat, and ribbons—and the woman who binds it are called the Old Woman. Together they are brought home on the last waggon and are drenched with water. In various parts of North Germany the last sheaf at harvest is made up into a human effigy and called "the Old Man", and the woman who bound it is said "to have the Old Man."

In West Prussia, when the last rye is being raked together, the women and girls hurry with the work, for none of them likes to be the last and to get "the Old Man," that is, a puppet made out of the last sheaf, which must be carried before the other reapers by the person who was the last to finish. In Silesia the last sheaf is called the Old Woman or the Old Man and is the theme of many jests; it is made unusually large and is sometimes weighted with a stone. Among the Wends the man or woman who binds the last sheaf at wheat harvest is said to "have the Old Man." A puppet is made out of the wheaten straw and ears in the likeness of a man and decked with flowers. The person who bound the last sheaf must carry the Old Man home, while the rest laugh and jeer at him. The puppet is hung up in the farmhouse and remains till a new Old Man is made at the next harvest.

In some of these customs, as Mannhardt has remarked, the person who is called by the same name as the last sheaf and sits beside it on the last waggon is obviously identified with it, he or she represents the corn-spirit which has been caught in the last sheaf, in other words, the corn-spirit is represented in duplicate, by a human being and by a sheaf. The identification of the person with the sheaf is made still clearer by the custom of wrapping up in the last sheaf the person who cuts or binds it. Thus at Hermsdorf in Silesia it used to be the regular practice to tie up in the last sheaf the woman who had bound it. At Weiden, in Bavaria, it is the cutter, not the binder, of the last sheaf who is tied up in it. Here the person wrapt up in the corn represents the corn-spirit, exactly as a person wrapt in branches or leaves represents the tree-spirit.

The last sheaf, designated as the Old Woman, is often distinguished from the other sheaves by its size and weight. Thus in some villages of West Prussia the Old Woman is made twice as long and thick as a

common sheaf, and a stone is fastened in the middle of it. Sometimes it is made so heavy that a man can barely lift it. At Alt-Pillau, in Samland, eight or nine sheaves are often tied together to make the Old Woman, and the man who sets it up grumbles at its weight. At Itzgrund, in Saxe-Coburg, the last sheaf, called the Old Woman, is made large with the express intention of thereby securing a good crop next year. Thus the custom of making the last sheaf unusually large or heavy is a charm, working by sympathetic magic, to ensure a large and heavy crop at the following harvest.

In Scotland, when the last corn was cut after Hallowmas, the female figure made out of it was sometimes called the Carlin or Carline, that is, the Old Woman. But if cut before Hallowmas, it was called the Maiden, if cut after sunset, it was called the Witch, being supposed to bring bad luck. Among the Highlanders of Scotland the last corn cut at harvest is known either as the Old Wife (*Caillach*) or as the Maiden, on the whole the former name seems to prevail in the western and the latter in the central and eastern districts. Of the Maiden we shall speak presently; here we are dealing with the Old Wife. The following general account of the custom is given by a careful and well-informed enquirer, the Rev. J. G. Campbell, minister of the remote Hebridean island of Tiree. "The Harvest Old Wife (*a Chailleach*)—In harvest, there was a struggle to escape from being the last done with the shearing, and when tillage in common existed, instances were known of a ridge being left unshorn (no person would claim it) because of it being behind the rest. The fear entertained was that of having the 'famine of the farm' (*gort a bhaile*), in the shape of an imaginary old woman (*caillach*), to feed till next harvest. Much emulation and amusement arose from the fear of this old woman. . . . The first done made a doll of some blades of corn, which was called the 'old wife,' and sent it to his nearest neighbour. He in turn, when ready, passed it to another still less expeditious, and the person it last remained with had 'the old woman' to keep for that year."

In the island of Islay the last corn cut goes by the name of the Old Wife (*Caillach*), and when she has done her duty at harvest she is hung up on the wall and stays there till the time comes to plough the fields for the next year's crop. Then she is taken down, and on the first day when the men go to plough she is divided among them by the mistress of the house. They take her in their pockets and give her to the horses to eat when they reach the field. This is supposed to secure good luck for the next harvest, and is understood to be the proper end of the Old Wife.

Usages of the same sort are reported from Wales. Thus in north Pembrokeshire a tuft of the last corn cut, from six to twelve inches long, is plaited and goes by the name of the Hag (*wrach*), and quaint old customs used to be practised with it within the memory of many persons still alive. Great was the excitement among the reapers when the last patch of standing corn was reached. All in turn threw their sickles at it, and the one who succeeded in cutting it received a

jug of home-brewed ale The Hag (*wrach*) was then hurriedly made and taken to a neighbouring farm, where the reapers were still busy at their work This was generally done by the ploughman; but he had to be very careful not to be observed by his neighbours, for if they saw him coming and had the least suspicion of his errand they would soon make him retrace his steps. Creeping stealthily up behind a fence he waited till the foreman of his neighbour's reapers was just opposite him and within easy reach Then he suddenly threw the Hag over the fence and, if possible, upon the foreman's sickle. On that he took to his heels and made off as fast as he could run, and he was a lucky man if he escaped without being caught or cut by the flying sickles which the infuriated reapers hurled after him. In other cases the Hag was brought home to the farmhouse by one of the reapers He did his best to bring it home dry and without being observed, but he was apt to be roughly handled by the people of the house, if they suspected his errand Sometimes they stripped him of most of his clothes, sometimes they would drench him with water which had been carefully stored in buckets and pans for the purpose If, however, he succeeded in bringing the Hag in dry and unobserved, the master of the house had to pay him a small fine, or sometimes a jug of beer "from the cask next to the wall," which seems to have commonly held the best beer, would be demanded by the bearer The Hag was then carefully hung on a nail in the hall or elsewhere and kept there all the year. The custom of bringing in the Hag (*wrach*) into the house and hanging it up still exists in some farms of north Pembrokeshire, but the ancient ceremonies which have just been described are now discontinued.

In County Antrim, down to some years ago, when the sickle was finally expelled by the reaping machine, the few stalks of corn left standing last on the field were plaited together; then the reapers, blindfolded, threw their sickles at the plaited corn, and whoever happened to cut it through took it home with him and put it over his door. This bunch of corn was called the Carley—probably the same word as Carlin.

Similar customs are observed by Slavonic peoples. Thus in Poland the last sheaf is commonly called the Baba, that is, the Old Woman. "In the last sheaf," it is said, "sits the Baba" The sheaf itself is also called the Baba, and is sometimes composed of twelve smaller sheaves lashed together. In some parts of Bohemia the Baba, made out of the last sheaf, has the figure of a woman with a great straw hat It is carried home on the last harvest-waggon and delivered, along with a garland, to the farmer by two girls In binding the sheaves the women strive not to be last, for she who binds the last sheaf will have a child next year Sometimes the harvesters call out to the woman who binds the last sheaf, "She has the Baba," or "She is the Baba" In the district of Cracow, when a man binds the last sheaf, they say, "The Grandfather is sitting in it", when a woman binds it, they say, "The Baba is sitting in it," and the woman

herself is wrapt up in the sheaf, so that only her head projects out of it. Thus encased in the sheaf, she is carried on the last harvest-waggon to the house, where she is drenched with water by the whole family. She remains in the sheaf till the dance is over, and for a year she retains the name of Baba.

In Lithuania the name for the last sheaf is Boba (Old Woman), answering to the Polish name Baba. The Boba is said to sit in the corn which is left standing last. The person who binds the last sheaf or digs the last potato is the subject of much banter, and receives and long retains the name of the Old Rye-woman or the Old Potato-woman. The last sheaf—the Boba—is made into the form of a woman, carried solemnly through the village on the last harvest-waggon, and drenched with water at the farmer's house, then every one dances with it.

In Russia also the last sheaf is often shaped and dressed as a woman, and carried with dance and song to the farmhouse. Out of the last sheaf the Bulgarians make a doll which they call the Corn-queen or Corn-mother; it is dressed in a woman's shirt, carried round the village, and then thrown into the river in order to secure plenty of rain and dew for the next year's crop. Or it is burned and the ashes strewn on the fields, doubtless to fertilise them. The name Queen, as applied to the last sheaf, has its analogies in Central and Northern Europe. Thus, in the Salzburg district of Austria, at the end of the harvest a great procession takes place, in which a Queen of the Corn-cars (*Ahrenkönigin*) is drawn along in a little carriage by young fellows. The custom of the Harvest Queen appears to have been common in England. Milton must have been familiar with it, for in *Paradise Lost* he says :

" Adam the while  
Waiting desirous her return, had wove  
Of choicest flow'rs a garland to adorn  
Her tresses, and her rural labours crown,  
As reapers oft are wont their harvest-queen "

Often customs of this sort are practised, not on the harvest-field but on the threshing-floor. The spirit of the corn, fleeing before the reapers as they cut down the ripe grain, quits the reaped corn and takes refuge in the barn, where it appears in the last sheaf threshed, either to perish under the blows of the flail or to flee thence to the still unthreshed corn of a neighbouring farm. Thus the last corn to be threshed is called the Mother-Corn or the Old Woman. Sometimes the person who gives the last stroke with the flail is called the Old Woman, and is wrapt in the straw of the last sheaf, or has a bundle of straw fastened on his back. Whether wrapt in the straw or carrying it on his back, he is carted through the village amid general laughter. In some districts of Bavaria, Thuringen, and elsewhere, the man who threshes the last sheaf is said to have the Old Woman or the Old Corn-woman, he is tied up in straw, carried or carted about the

village, and set down at last on the dunghill, or taken to the threshing-floor of a neighbouring farmer who has not finished his threshing. In Poland the man who gives the last stroke at threshing is called Baba (Old Woman), he is wrapt in corn and wheeled through the village. Sometimes in Lithuania the last sheaf is not threshed, but is fashioned into female shape and carried to the barn of a neighbour who has not finished his threshing.

In some parts of Sweden, when a stranger woman appears on the threshing-floor, a flail is put round her body, stalks of corn are wound round her neck, a crown of ears is placed on her head, and the threshers call out, "Behold the Corn-woman." Here the stranger woman, thus suddenly appearing, is taken to be the corn-spirit who has just been expelled by the flails from the corn-stalks. In other cases the farmer's wife represents the corn-spirit. Thus in the Commune of Saligné (Vendée), the farmer's wife, along with the last sheaf, is tied up in a sheet, placed on a litter, and carried to the threshing machine, under which she is shoved. Then the woman is drawn out and the sheaf is threshed by itself, but the woman is tossed in the sheet, as if she were being winnowed. It would be impossible to express more clearly the identification of the woman with the corn than by this graphic imitation of threshing and winnowing her.

In these customs the spirit of the ripe corn is regarded as old, or at least as of mature age. Hence the names of Mother, Grandmother, Old Woman, and so forth. But in other cases the corn-spirit is conceived as young. Thus at Saldern, near Wolfenbüttel, when the rye has been reaped, three sheaves are tied together with a rope so as to make a puppet with the corn ears for a head. This puppet is called the Maiden or the Corn-maiden. Sometimes the corn-spirit is conceived as a child who is separated from its mother by the stroke of the sickle. This last view appears in the Polish custom of calling out to the man who cuts the last handful of corn, "You have cut the navel-string." In some districts of West Prussia the figure made out of the last sheaf is called the Bastard, and a boy is wrapt up in it. The woman who binds the last sheaf and represents the Corn-mother is told that she is about to be brought to bed, she cries like a woman in travail, and an old woman in the character of grandmother acts as midwife. At last a cry is raised that the child is born, whereupon the boy who is tied up in the sheaf whimpers and squalls like an infant. The grandmother wraps a sack, in imitation of swaddling bands, round the pretended baby, who is carried joyfully to the barn, lest he should catch cold in the open air. In other parts of North Germany the last sheaf, or the puppet made out of it, is called the Child, the Harvest-Child, and so on, and they call out to the woman who binds the last sheaf, "You are getting the child."

In some parts of Scotland, as well as in the north of England, the last handful of corn cut on the harvest-field was called the *kirn*, and the person who carried it off was said "to win the *kirn*." It was then dressed up like a child's doll and went by the name of the

kirn-baby, the kirn-doll, or the Maiden In Berwickshire down to about the middle of the nineteenth century there was an eager competition among the reapers to cut the last bunch of standing corn They gathered round it at a little distance and threw their sickles in turn at it, and the man who succeeded in cutting it through gave it to the girl he preferred She made the corn so cut into a kirn-dolly and dressed it, and the doll was then taken to the farmhouse and hung up there till the next harvest, when its place was taken by the new kirn-dolly. At Spottiswoode in Berwickshire the reaping of the last corn at harvest was called "cutting the Queen" almost as often as "cutting the kirn" The mode of cutting it was not by throwing sickles One of the reapers consented to be blindfolded, and having been given a sickle in his hand and turned twice or thrice about by his fellows, he was bidden to go and cut the kirn His groping about and making wild strokes in the air with his sickle excited much hilarity When he had tired himself out in vain and given up the task as hopeless, another reaper was blindfolded and pursued the quest, and so on, one after the other, till at last the kirn was cut The successful reaper was tossed up in the air with three cheers by his brother harvesters To decorate the room in which the kirn-supper was held at Spottiswoode as well as the granary, where the dancing took place, two women made kirn-dollies or Queens every year, and many of these rustic effigies of the corn-spirit might be seen hanging up together

In some parts of the Highlands of Scotland the last handful of corn that is cut by the reapers on any particular farm is called the Maiden, or in Gaelic *Maidhdeanbuam*, literally "the shorn Maiden" Superstitions attach to the winning of the Maiden If it is got by a young person, they think it an omen that he or she will be married before another harvest For that or other reasons there is a strife between the reapers as to who shall get the Maiden, and they resort to various stratagems for the purpose of securing it One of them, for example, will often leave a handful of corn uncut and cover it up with earth to hide it from the other reapers, till all the rest of the corn on the field is cut down Several may try to play the same trick, and the one who is coolest and holds out longest obtains the coveted distinction When it has been cut, the Maiden is dressed with ribbons into a sort of doll and affixed to a wall of the farmhouse. In the north of Scotland the Maiden is carefully preserved till Yule morning, when it is divided among the cattle "to make them thrive all the year round" In the neighbourhood of Balquhiddier, Perthshire, the last handful of corn is cut by the youngest girl on the field, and is made into the rude form of a female doll, clad in a paper dress, and decked with ribbons It is called the Maiden, and is kept in the farmhouse, generally above the chimney, for a good while, sometimes till the Maiden of the next year is brought in The writer of this book witnessed the ceremony of cutting the Maiden at Balquhiddier in September 1888 A lady friend informed me that as a young girl

she cut the Maiden several times at the request of the reapers in the neighbourhood of Perth. The name of the Maiden was given to the last handful of standing corn, a reaper held the top of the bunch while she cut it. Afterwards the bunch was plaited, decked with ribbons, and hung up in a conspicuous place on the wall of the kitchen till the next Maiden was brought in. The harvest-supper in this neighbourhood was also called the Maiden; the reapers danced at it.

On some farms on the Gareloch, in Dumbartonshire, about the year 1830, the last handful of standing corn was called the Maiden. It was divided in two, plaited, and then cut with the sickle by a girl, who, it was thought, would be lucky and would soon be married. When it was cut the reapers gathered together and threw their sickles in the air. The Maiden was dressed with ribbons and hung in the kitchen near the roof, where it was kept for several years with the date attached. Sometimes five or six Maidens might be seen hanging at once on hooks. The harvest-supper was called the Kirm. In other farms on the Gareloch the last handful of corn was called the Maidenhead or the Head; it was neatly plaited, sometimes decked with ribbons, and hung in the kitchen for a year, when the grain was given to the poultry.

In Aberdeenshire "the last sheaf cut, or 'Maiden,' is carried home in merry procession by the harvesters. It is then presented to the mistress of the house, who dresses it up to be preserved till the first mare foals. The Maiden is then taken down and presented to the mare as its first food. The neglect of this would have untoward effects upon the foal, and disastrous consequences upon farm operations generally for the season." In the north-east of Aberdeenshire the last sheaf is commonly called the *clyack* sheaf. It used to be cut by the youngest girl present and was dressed as a woman. Being brought home in triumph, it was kept till Christmas morning, and then given to a mare in foal, if there was one on the farm, or, if there was not, to the oldest cow in calf. Elsewhere the sheaf was divided between all the cows and their calves or between all the horses and the cattle of the farm. In Fifeshire the last handful of corn, known as the Maiden, is cut by a young girl and made into the rude figure of a doll, tied with ribbons, by which it is hung on the wall of the farm-kitchen till the next spring. The custom of cutting the Maiden at harvest was also observed in Inverness-shire and Sutherlandshire.

A somewhat maturer but still youthful age is assigned to the corn-spirit by the appellations of Bride, Oats-bride, and Wheat-bride, which in Germany are sometimes bestowed both on the last sheaf and on the woman who binds it. At wheat-harvest near Muglitz, in Moravia, a small portion of the wheat is left standing after all the rest has been reaped. This remnant is then cut, amid the rejoicing of the reapers, by a young girl who wears a wreath of wheaten ears on her head and goes by the name of the Wheat-bride. It is supposed that she will be a real bride that same year. Near Roslin and Stonehaven, in Scotland, the last handful of corn cut "got the name of 'the bride,'

and she was placed over the *bress* or chimney-piece, she had a ribbon tied below her numerous *ears*, and another round her waist "

Sometimes the idea implied by the name of Bride is worked out more fully by representing the productive powers of vegetation as bride and bridegroom. Thus in the Vorharz an Oats-man and an Oats-woman, swathed in straw, dance at the harvest feast. In South Saxony an Oats-bridegroom and an Oats-bride figure together at the harvest celebration. The Oats-bridegroom is a man completely wrapt in oats-straw; the Oats-bride is a man dressed in woman's clothes, but not wrapt in straw. They are drawn in a waggon to the ale-house, where the dance takes place. At the beginning of the dance the dancers pluck the bunches of oats one by one from the Oats-bridegroom, while he struggles to keep them, till at last he is completely stript of them and stands bare, exposed to the laughter and jests of the company. In Austrian Silesia the ceremony of "the Wheat-bride" is celebrated by the young people at the end of the harvest. The woman who bound the last sheaf plays the part of the Wheat-bride, wearing the harvest-crown of wheat ears and flowers on her head. Thus adorned, standing beside her Bridegroom in a waggon and attended by bridesmaids, she is drawn by a pair of oxen, in full imitation of a marriage procession, to the tavern, where the dancing is kept up till morning. Somewhat later in the season the wedding of the Oats-bride is celebrated with the like rustic pomp. About Neisse, in Silesia, an Oats-king and an Oats-queen, dressed up quaintly as a bridal pair, are seated on a harrow and drawn by oxen into the village.

In these last instances the corn-spirit is personified in double form as male and female. But sometimes the spirit appears in a double female form as both old and young, corresponding exactly to the Greek Demeter and Persephone, if my interpretation of these goddesses is right. We have seen that in Scotland, especially among the Gaelic-speaking population, the last corn cut is sometimes called the Old Wife and sometimes the Maiden. Now there are parts of Scotland in which both an Old Wife (*Caillach*) and a Maiden are cut at harvest. The accounts of this custom are not quite clear and consistent, but the general rule seems to be that, where both a Maiden and an Old Wife (*Caillach*) are fashioned out of the reaped corn at harvest, the Maiden is made out of the last stalks left standing, and is kept by the farmer on whose land it was cut, while the Old Wife is made out of other stalks, sometimes out of the first stalks cut, and is regularly passed on to a laggard farmer who happens to be still reaping after his brisker neighbour has cut all his corn. Thus while each farmer keeps his own Maiden, as the embodiment of the young and fruitful spirit of the corn, he passes on the Old Wife as soon as he can to a neighbour, and so the old lady may make the round of all the farms in the district before she finds a place in which to lay her venerable head. The farmer with whom she finally takes up her abode is of course the one who has been the last of all the countryside to finish reaping his crops, and thus the distinction of entertaining her is rather an invidious one. He is



thought to be doomed to poverty or to be under the obligation of "providing for the dearth of the township" in the ensuing season. Similarly we saw that in Pembrokeshire, where the last corn cut is called, not the Maiden, but the Hag, she is passed on hastily to a neighbour who is still at work in his fields and who receives his aged visitor with anything but a transport of joy. If the Old Wife represents the corn-spirit of the past year, as she probably does wherever she is contrasted with and opposed to a Maiden, it is natural enough that her faded charms should have less attractions for the husbandman than the buxom form of her daughter, who may be expected to become in her turn the mother of the golden grain when the revolving year has brought round another autumn. The same desire to get rid of the effete Mother of the Corn by palming her off on other people comes out clearly in some of the customs observed at the close of threshing, particularly in the practice of passing on a hideous straw puppet to a neighbour farmer who is still threshing his corn.

The harvest customs just described are strikingly analogous to the spring customs which we reviewed in an earlier part of this work (1) As in the spring customs the tree-spirit is represented both by a tree and by a person, so in the harvest customs the corn-spirit is represented both by the last sheaf and by the person who cuts or binds or threshes it. The equivalence of the person to the sheaf is shown by giving him or her the same name as the sheaf; by wrapping him or her in it, and by the rule observed in some places, that when the sheaf is called the Mother, it must be made up into human shape by the oldest married woman, but that when it is called the Maiden, it must be cut by the youngest girl. Here the age of the personal representative of the corn-spirit corresponds with that of the supposed age of the corn-spirit, just as the human victims offered by the Mexicans to promote the growth of the maize varied with the age of the maize. For in the Mexican, as in the European, custom the human beings were probably representatives of the corn-spirit rather than victims offered to it. (2) Again, the same fertilising influence which the tree-spirit is supposed to exert over vegetation, cattle, and even women is ascribed to the corn-spirit. Thus, its supposed influence on vegetation is shown by the practice of taking some of the grain of the last sheaf (in which the corn-spirit is regularly supposed to be present) and scattering it among the young corn in spring or mixing it with the seed-corn. Its influence on animals is shown by giving the last sheaf to a mare in foal, to a cow in calf, and to horses at the first ploughing. Lastly, its influence on women is indicated by the custom of delivering the Mother-sheaf, made into the likeness of a pregnant woman, to the farmer's wife, by the belief that the woman who binds the last sheaf will have a child next year, perhaps, too, by the idea that the person who gets it will soon be married.

Plainly, therefore, these spring and harvest customs are based on the same ancient modes of thought, and form parts of the same primitive heathendom, which was doubtless practised by our forefathers long

before the dawn of history. Amongst the marks of a primitive ritual we may note the following

1 No special class of persons is set apart for the performance of the rites ; in other words, there are no priests The rites may be performed by any one, as occasion demands

2. No special places are set apart for the performance of the rites ; in other words, there are no temples The rites may be performed anywhere, as occasion demands

3 Spirits, not gods, are recognised (a) As distinguished from gods, spirits are restricted in their operations to definite departments of nature Their names are general, not proper. Their attributes are generic, rather than individual ; in other words, there is an indefinite number of spirits of each class, and the individuals of a class are all much alike, they have no definitely marked individuality ; no accepted traditions are current as to their origin, life, adventures, and character (b) On the other hand gods, as distinguished from spirits, are not restricted to definite departments of nature It is true that there is generally some one department over which they preside as their special province, but they are not rigorously confined to it, they can exert their power for good or evil in many other spheres of nature and life Again, they bear individual or proper names, such as Demeter, Persephone, Dionysus ; and their individual characters and histories are fixed by current myths and the representations of art

4 The rites are magical rather than propitiatory. In other words, the desired objects are attained, not by propitiating the favour of divine beings through sacrifice, prayer, and praise, but by ceremonies which, as I have already explained, are believed to influence the course of nature directly through a physical sympathy or resemblance between the rite and the effect which it is the intention of the rite to produce

Judged by these tests, the spring and harvest customs of our European peasantry deserve to rank as primitive For no special class of persons and no special places are set exclusively apart for their performance, they may be performed by any one, master or man, mistress or maid, boy or girl, they are practised, not in temples or churches, but in the woods and meadows, beside brooks, in barns, on harvest fields and cottage floors The supernatural beings whose existence is taken for granted in them are spirits rather than deities their functions are limited to certain well-defined departments of nature. their names are general, like the Barley-mother, the Old Woman, the Maiden, not proper names like Demeter, Persephone, Dionysus. Their generic attributes are known, but their individual histories and characters are not the subject of myths For they exist in classes rather than as individuals, and the members of each class are indistinguishable. For example, every farm has its Corn-mother, or its Old Woman, or its Maiden, but every Corn-mother is much like every other Corn-mother, and so with the Old Women and Maidens Lastly, in these harvest, as in the spring customs, the ritual is magical rather than propitiatory. This is shown by throwing the Corn-mother

into the river in order to secure rain and dew for the crops, by making the Old Woman heavy in order to get a heavy crop next year, by strewing grain from the last sheaf amongst the young crops in spring; and by giving the last sheaf to the cattle to make them thrive.

## CHAPTER XLVI

### THE CORN-MOTHER IN MANY LANDS

§ 1 *The Corn-mother in America* —European peoples, ancient and modern, have not been singular in personifying the corn as a mother goddess. The same simple idea has suggested itself to other agricultural races in distant parts of the world, and has been applied by them to other indigenous cereals than barley and wheat. If Europe has its Wheat-mother and its Barley-mother, America has its Maize-mother and the East Indies their Rice-mother. These personifications I will now illustrate, beginning with the American personification of the maize.

We have seen that among European peoples it is a common custom to keep the plaited corn-stalks of the last sheaf, or the puppet which is formed out of them, in the farm-house from harvest to harvest. The intention no doubt is, or rather originally was, by preserving the representative of the corn-spirit to maintain the spirit itself in life and activity throughout the year, in order that the corn may grow and the crops be good. This interpretation of the custom is at all events rendered highly probable by a similar custom observed by the ancient Peruvians, and thus described by the old Spanish historian Acosta: "They take a certain portion of the most fruitful of the maize that grows in their farms, the which they put in a certain granary which they do call *Pirua*, with certain ceremonies, watching three nights; they put this maize in the richest garments they have, and being thus wrapped and dressed, they worship this *Pirua*, and hold it in great veneration, saying it is the mother of the maize of their inheritances, and that by this means the maize augments and is preserved. In this month [the sixth month, answering to May] they make a particular sacrifice, and the witches demand of this *Pirua* if it hath strength sufficient to continue until the next year; and if it answers no, then they carry this maize to the farm to burn, whence they brought it, according to every man's power, then they make another *Pirua*, with the same ceremonies, saying that they renew it, to the end the seed of maize may not perish, and if it answers that it hath force sufficient to last longer, they leave it until the next year. This foolish vanity continueth to this day, and it is very common amongst the Indians to have these *Piruas*."

In this description of the custom there seems to be some error. Probably it was the dressed-up bunch of maize, not the granary

(*Pirua*), which was worshipped by the Peruvians and regarded as the Mother of the Maize. This is confirmed by what we know of the Peruvian custom from another source. The Peruvians, we are told, believed all useful plants to be animated by a divine being who causes their growth. According to the particular plant, these divine beings were called the Maize-mother (*Zara-mama*), the Quinoa-mother (*Quinoa-mama*), the Coca-mother (*Coca-mama*), and the Potato-mother (*Axo-mama*). Figures of these divine mothers were made respectively of ears of maize and leaves of the quinoa and coca plants; they were dressed in women's clothes and worshipped. Thus the Maize-mother was represented by a puppet made of stalks of maize dressed in full female attire; and the Indians believed that "as mother, it had the power of producing and giving birth to much maize." Probably, therefore, Acosta misunderstood his informant, and the Mother of the Maize which he describes was not the granary (*Pirua*), but the bunch of maize dressed in rich vestments. The Peruvian Mother of the Maize, like the harvest-Maiden at Balquhiddy, was kept for a year in order that by her means the corn might grow and multiply. But lest her strength might not suffice to last till the next harvest, she was asked in the course of the year how she felt, and if she answered that she felt weak, she was burned and a fresh Mother of the Maize made, "to the end the seed of maize may not perish." Here, it may be observed, we have a strong confirmation of the explanation already given of the custom of killing the god, both periodically and occasionally. The Mother of the Maize was allowed, as a rule, to live through a year, that being the period during which her strength might reasonably be supposed to last unimpaired; but on any symptom of her strength failing she was put to death, and a fresh and vigorous Mother of the Maize took her place, lest the maize which depended on her for its existence should languish and decay.

§ 2 *The Rice-mother in the East Indies* —If the reader still feels any doubts as to the meaning of the harvest customs which have been practised within living memory by European peasants, these doubts may perhaps be dispelled by comparing the customs observed at the rice-harvest by the Malays and Dyaks of the East Indies. For these Eastern peoples have not, like our peasantry, advanced beyond the intellectual stage at which the customs originated; their theory and their practice are still in unison, for them the quaint rites which in Europe have long dwindled into mere fossils, the pastime of clowns and the puzzle of the learned, are still living realities of which they can render an intelligible and truthful account. Hence a study of their beliefs and usages concerning the rice may throw some light on the true meaning of the ritual of the corn in ancient Greece and modern Europe.

Now the whole of the ritual which the Malays and Dyaks observe in connexion with the rice is founded on the simple conception of the rice as animated by a soul like that which these people attribute to mankind. They explain the phenomena of reproduction, growth,

decay, and death in the rice on the same principles on which they explain the corresponding phenomena in human beings. They imagine that in the fibres of the plant, as in the body of a man, there is a certain vital element, which is so far independent of the plant that it may for a time be completely separated from it without fatal effects, though if its absence be prolonged beyond certain limits the plant will wither and die. This vital yet separable element is what, for the want of a better word, we must call the soul of a plant, just as a similar vital and separable element is commonly supposed to constitute the soul of man; and on this theory or myth of the plant-soul is built the whole worship of the cereals, just as on the theory or myth of the human soul is built the whole worship of the dead,—a towering superstructure reared on a slender and precarious foundation.

Believing the rice to be animated by a soul like that of a man, the Indonesians naturally treat it with the deference and the consideration which they show to their fellows. Thus they behave towards the rice in bloom as they behave towards a pregnant woman, they abstain from firing guns or making loud noises in the field, lest they should so frighten the soul of the rice that it would miscarry and bear no grain, and for the same reason they will not talk of corpses or demons in the rice-fields. Moreover, they feed the blooming rice with foods of various kinds which are believed to be wholesome for women with child; but when the rice-ears are just beginning to form, they are looked upon as infants, and women go through the fields feeding them with rice-pap as if they were human babes. In such natural and obvious comparisons of the breeding plant to a breeding woman, and of the young grain to a young child, is to be sought the origin of the kindred Greek conception of the Corn-mother and the Corn-daughter, Demeter and Persephone. But if the timorous feminine soul of the rice can be frightened into a miscarriage even by loud noises, it is easy to imagine what her feelings must be at harvest, when people are under the sad necessity of cutting down the rice with the knife. At so critical a season every precaution must be used to render the necessary surgical operation of reaping as inconspicuous and as painless as possible. For that reason the reaping of the seed-rice is done with knives of a peculiar pattern, such that the blades are hidden in the reapers' hands and do not frighten the rice-spirit till the very last moment, when her head is swept off almost before she is aware, and from a like delicate motive the reapers at work in the fields employ a special form of speech, which the rice-spirit cannot be expected to understand, so that she has no warning or inkling of what is going forward till the heads of rice are safely deposited in the basket.

Among the Indonesian peoples who thus personify the rice we may take the Kayans or Bahaus of Central Borneo as typical. In order to secure and detain the volatile soul of the rice the Kayans resort to a number of devices. Among the instruments employed for this purpose are a miniature ladder, a spatula, and a basket containing hooks,

thorns, and cords With the spatula the priestess strokes the soul of the rice down the little ladder into the basket, where it is naturally held fast by the hooks, the thorn, and the cord, and having thus captured and imprisoned the soul she conveys it into the rice-granary. Sometimes a bamboo box and a net are used for the same purpose. And in order to ensure a good harvest for the following year it is necessary not only to detain the soul of all the grains of rice which are safely stored in the granary, but also to attract and recover the soul of all the rice that has been lost through falling to the earth or being eaten by deer, apes, and pigs For this purpose instruments of various sorts have been invented by the priests One, for example, is a bamboo vessel provided with four hooks made from the wood of a fruit-tree, by means of which the absent rice-soul may be hooked and drawn back into the vessel, which is then hung up in the house Sometimes two hands carved out of the wood of a fruit-tree are used for the same purpose. And every time that a Kayan housewife fetches rice from the granary for the use of her household, she must propitiate the souls of the rice in the granary, lest they should be angry at being robbed of their substance

The same need of securing the soul of the rice, if the crop is to thrive, is keenly felt by the Karens of Burma When a rice-field does not flourish, they suppose that the soul (*kelah*) of the rice is in some way detained from the rice. If the soul cannot be called back, the crop will fail. The following formula is used in recalling the *kelah* (soul) of the rice "O come, rice-*kelah*, come! Come to the field. Come to the rice With seed of each gender, come Come from the river Kho, come from the river Kaw, from the place where they meet, come Come from the West, come from the East. From the throat of the bird, from the maw of the ape, from the throat of the elephant Come from the sources of rivers and their mouths Come from the country of the Shan and Burman From the distant kingdoms come From all granaries come O rice-*kelah*, come to the rice "

The Corn-mother of our European peasants has her match in the Rice-mother of the Minangkabauers of Sumatra The Minangkabauers definitely attribute a soul to rice, and will sometimes assert that rice pounded in the usual way tastes better than rice ground in a mill, because in the mill the body of the rice was so bruised and battered that the soul has fled from it Like the Javanese they think that the rice is under the special guardianship of a female spirit called *Saning Sari*, who is conceived as so closely knit up with the plant that the rice often goes by her name, as with the Romans the corn might be called Ceres In particular *Saning Sari* is represented by certain stalks or grains called *indoea padi*, that is, literally, "Mother of Rice," a name that is often given to the guardian spirit herself This so-called Mother of Rice is the occasion of a number of ceremonies observed at the planting and harvesting of the rice as well as during its preservation in the barn. When the seed of the rice is about to be sown in the nursery or bedding-out ground, where under the wet

system of cultivation it is regularly allowed to sprout before being transplanted to the fields, the best grains are picked out to form the Rice-mother. These are then sown in the middle of the bed, and the common seed is planted round about them. The state of the Rice-mother is supposed to exert the greatest influence on the growth of the rice, if she droops or pines away, the harvest will be bad in consequence. The woman who sows the Rice-mother in the nursery lets her hair hang loose and afterwards bathes, as a means of ensuring an abundant harvest. When the time comes to transplant the rice from the nursery to the field, the Rice-mother receives a special place either in the middle or in a corner of the field, and a prayer or charm is uttered as follows: "Saning Sari, may a measure of rice come from a stalk of rice and a basketful from a root; may you be frightened neither by lightning nor by passers-by! Sunshine make you glad; with the storm may you be at peace; and may rain serve to wash your face!" While the rice is growing, the particular plant which was thus treated as the Rice-mother is lost sight of; but before harvest another Rice-mother is found. When the crop is ripe for cutting, the oldest woman of the family or a sorcerer goes out to look for her. The first stalks seen to bend under a passing breeze are the Rice-mother, and they are tied together but not cut until the first-fruits of the field have been carried home to serve as a festal meal for the family and their friends, nay even for the domestic animals, since it is Saning Sari's pleasure that the beasts also should partake of her good gifts. After the meal has been eaten, the Rice-mother is fetched home by persons in gay attire, who carry her very carefully under an umbrella in a neatly worked bag to the barn, where a place in the middle is assigned to her. Every one believes that she takes care of the rice in the barn and even multiplies it not uncommonly.

When the Tomori of Central Celebes are about to plant the rice, they bury in the field some betel as an offering to the spirits who cause the rice to grow. The rice that is planted round this spot is the last to be reaped at harvest. At the commencement of the reaping the stalks of this patch of rice are tied together into a sheaf, which is called "the Mother of the Rice" (*meno pae*), and offerings in the shape of rice, fowl's liver, eggs, and other things are laid down before it. When all the rest of the rice in the field has been reaped, "the Mother of the Rice" is cut down and carried with due honour to the rice-barn, where it is laid on the floor, and all the other sheaves are piled upon it. The Tomori, we are told, regard the Mother of the Rice as a special offering made to the rice-spirit Omonga, who dwells in the moon. If that spirit is not treated with proper respect, for example if the people who fetch rice from the barn are not decently clad, he is angry and punishes the offenders by eating up twice as much rice in the barn as they have taken out of it; some people have heard him smacking his lips in the barn, as he devoured the rice. On the other hand the Toradjas of Central Celebes, who also practise the custom of the Rice-mother at harvest, regard her as the actual mother

of the whole harvest, and therefore keep her carefully, lest in her absence the garnered store of rice should all melt away and disappear

Again, just as in Scotland the old and the young spirit of the corn are represented as an Old Wife (*Cailleach*) and a Maiden respectively, so in the Malay Peninsula we find both the Rice-mother and her child represented by different sheaves or bundles of ears on the harvest-field. The ceremony of cutting and bringing home the Soul of the Rice was witnessed by Mr W W Skeat at Chodoi in Selangor on the twenty-eighth of January 1897. The particular bunch or sheaf which was to serve as the Mother of the Rice-soul had previously been sought and identified by means of the markings or shape of the ears. From this sheaf an aged sorceress, with much solemnity, cut a little bundle of seven ears, anointed them with oil, tied them round with parti-coloured thread, fumigated them with incense, and having wrapt them in a white cloth deposited them in a little oval-shaped basket. These seven ears were the infant Soul of the Rice and the little basket was its cradle. It was carried home to the farmer's house by another woman, who held up an umbrella to screen the tender infant from the hot rays of the sun. Arrived at the house the Rice-child was welcomed by the women of the family, and laid, cradle and all, on a new sleeping-mat with pillows at the head. After that the farmer's wife was instructed to observe certain rules of taboo for three days, the rules being in many respect identical with those which have to be observed for three days after the birth of a real child. Something of the same tender care which is thus bestowed on the newly-born Rice-child is naturally extended also to its parent, the sheaf from whose body it was taken. This sheaf, which remains standing in the field after the Rice-soul has been carried home and put to bed, is treated as a newly-made mother, that is to say, young shoots of trees are pounded together and scattered broadcast every evening for three successive days, and when the three days are up you take the pulp of a coco-nut and what are called "goat-flowers," mix them up, eat them with a little sugar, and spit some of the mixture out among the rice. So after a real birth the young shoots of the jack-fruit, the rose-apple, certain kinds of banana, and the thin pulp of young coco-nuts are mixed with dried fish, salt, acid, prawn-condiment, and the like dainties to form a sort of salad, which is administered to mother and child for three successive days. The last sheaf is reaped by the farmer's wife, who carries it back to the house, where it is threshed and mixed with the Rice-soul. The farmer then takes the Rice-soul and its basket and deposits it, together with the product of the last sheaf, in the big circular rice-bin used by the Malays. Some grains from the Rice-soul are mixed with the seed which is to be sown in the following year. In this Rice-mother and Rice-child of the Malay Peninsula we may see the counterpart and in a sense the prototype of the Demeter and Persephone of ancient Greece.

Once more, the European custom of representing the corn-spirit



in the double form of bride and bridegroom has its parallel in a ceremony observed at the rice-harvest in Java. Before the reapers begin to cut the rice, the priest or sorcerer picks out a number of ears of rice, which are tied together, smeared with ointment, and adorned with flowers. Thus decked out, the ears are called the *padr-pěngantèn*, that is, the Rice-bride and the Rice-bridegroom; their wedding feast is celebrated, and the cutting of the rice begins immediately afterwards. Later on, when the rice is being got in, a bridal chamber is partitioned off in the barn, and furnished with a new mat, a lamp, and all kinds of toilet articles. Sheaves of rice, to represent the wedding guests, are placed beside the Rice-bride and the Rice-bridegroom. Not till this has been done may the whole harvest be housed in the barn. And for the first forty days after the rice has been housed, no one may enter the barn, for fear of disturbing the newly-wedded pair.

In the islands of Bali and Lombok, when the time of harvest has come, the owner of the field himself makes a beginning by cutting "the principal rice" with his own hands and binding it into two sheaves, each composed of one hundred and eight stalks with their leaves attached to them. One of the sheaves represents a man and the other a woman, and they are called "husband and wife." The male sheaf is wound about with thread so that none of the leaves are visible, whereas the female sheaf has its leaves bent over and tied so as to resemble the roll of a woman's hair. Sometimes, for further distinction, a necklace of rice-straw is tied round the female sheaf. When the rice is brought home from the field, the two sheaves representing the husband and wife are carried by a woman on her head, and are the last of all to be deposited in the barn. There they are laid to rest on a small erection or on a cushion of rice-straw. The whole arrangement, we are informed, has for its object to induce the rice to increase and multiply in the granary, so that the owner may get more out of it than he put in. Hence when the people of Bali bring the two sheaves, the husband and wife, into the barn, they say, "Increase ye and multiply without ceasing." When all the rice in the barn has been used up, the two sheaves representing the husband and wife remain in the empty building till they have gradually disappeared or been devoured by mice. The pinch of hunger sometimes drives individuals to eat up the rice of these two sheaves, but the wretches who do so are viewed with disgust by their fellows and branded as pigs and dogs. Nobody would ever sell these holy sheaves with the rest of their profane brethren.

The same notion of the propagation of the rice by a male and female power finds expression amongst the Szis of Upper Burma. When the paddy, that is, the rice with the husks still on it, has been dried and piled in a heap for threshing, all the friends of the household are invited to the threshing-floor, and food and drink are brought out. The heap of paddy is divided and one half spread out for threshing, while the other half is left piled up. On the pile food and spirits are

set, and one of the elders, addressing "the father and mother of the paddy-plant," prays for plenteous harvests in future, and begs that the seed may bear many fold. Then the whole party eat, drink, and make merry. This ceremony at the threshing-floor is the only occasion when these people invoke "the father and mother of the paddy."

§ 3 *The Spirit of the Corn embodied in Human Beings*—Thus the theory which recognises in the European Corn-mother, Corn-maiden, and so forth, the embodiment in vegetable form of the animating spirit of the crops is amply confirmed by the evidence of peoples in other parts of the world, who, because they have lagged behind the European races in mental development, retain for that very reason a keener sense of the original motives for observing those rustic rites which among ourselves have sunk to the level of meaningless survivals. The reader may, however, remember that according to Mannhardt, whose theory I am expounding, the spirit of the corn manifests itself not merely in vegetable but also in human form, the person who cuts the last sheaf or gives the last stroke at threshing passes for a temporary embodiment of the corn-spirit, just as much as the bunch of corn which he reaps or threshes. Now in the parallels which have been hitherto adduced from the customs of peoples outside Europe the spirit of the crops appears only in vegetable form. It remains, therefore, to prove that other races besides our European peasantry have conceived the spirit of the crops as incorporate in or represented by living men and women. Such a proof, I may remind the reader, is germane to the theme of this book, for the more instances we discover of human beings representing in themselves the life or animating spirit of plants, the less difficulty will be felt at classing amongst them the King of the Wood at Nemi.

The Mandans and Minnitarees of North America used to hold a festival in spring which they called the corn-medicine festival of the women. They thought that a certain Old Woman who Never Dies made the crops to grow, and that, living somewhere in the south, she sent the migratory waterfowl in spring as her tokens and representatives. Each sort of bird represented a special kind of crop cultivated by the Indians: the wild goose stood for the maize, the wild swan for the gourds, and the wild duck for the beans. So when the feathered messengers of the Old Woman began to arrive in spring the Indians celebrated the corn-medicine festival of the women. Scaffolds were set up, on which the people hung dried meat and other things by way of offerings to the Old Woman; and on a certain day the old women of the tribe, as representatives of the Old Woman who Never Dies, assembled at the scaffolds each bearing in her hand an ear of maize fastened to a stick. They first planted these sticks in the ground, then danced round the scaffolds, and finally took up the sticks again in their arms. Meanwhile old men beat drums and shook rattles as a musical accompaniment to the performance of the old women. Further, young women came and put dried flesh into the mouths of the old women, for which they received in return a grain of the consecrated

maize to eat Three or four grains of the holy corn were also placed in the dishes of the young women, to be afterwards carefully mixed with the seed-corn, which they were supposed to fertilise The dried flesh hung on the scaffold belonged to the old women, because they represented the Old Woman who Never Dies A similar corn-medicine festival was held in autumn for the purpose of attracting the herds of buffaloes and securing a supply of meat At that time every woman carried in her arms an uprooted plant of maize They gave the name of the Old Woman who Never Dies both to the maize and to those birds which they regarded as symbols of the fruits of the earth, and they prayed to them in autumn saying, "Mother, have pity on us! send us not the bitter cold too soon, lest we have not meat enough! let not all the game depart, that we may have something for the winter!" In autumn, when the birds were flying south, the Indians thought that they were going home to the Old Woman and taking to her the offerings that had been hung up on the scaffolds, especially the dried meat, which she ate Here then we have the spirit or divinity of the corn conceived as an Old Woman and represented in bodily form by old women, who in their capacity of representatives receive some at least of the offerings which are intended for her.

In some parts of India the harvest-goddess Gauri is represented at once by an unmarried girl and by a bundle of wild balsam plants, which is made up into the figure of a woman and dressed as such with mask, garments, and ornaments. Both the human and the vegetable representative of the goddess are worshipped, and the intention of the whole ceremony appears to be to ensure a good crop of rice

§ 4. *The Double Personification of the Corn as Mother and Daughter* — Compared with the Corn-mother of Germany and the Harvest-maiden of Scotland, the Demeter and Persephone of Greece are late products of religious growth Yet as members of the Aryan family the Greeks must at one time or another have observed harvest customs like those which are still practised by Celts, Teutons, and Slavs, and which, far beyond the limits of the Aryan world, have been practised by the Indians of Peru and many peoples of the East Indies—a sufficient proof that the ideas on which these customs rest are not confined to any one race, but naturally suggest themselves to all untutored peoples engaged in agriculture It is probable, therefore, that Demeter and Persephone, those stately and beautiful figures of Greek mythology, grew out of the same simple beliefs and practices which still prevail among our modern peasantry, and that they were represented by rude dolls made out of the yellow sheaves on many a harvest-field long before their breathing images were wrought in bronze and marble by the master hands of Phidias and Praxiteles A reminiscence of that olden time—a scent, so to say, of the harvest-field—lingered to the last in the title of the Maiden (*Kore*) by which Persephone was commonly known Thus if the prototype of Demeter is the Corn-mother of Germany, the prototype of Persephone is the Harvest-maiden, which, autumn after autumn, is still made from the last sheaf on the Braes

of Balquhadder. Indeed, if we knew more about the peasant-farmers of ancient Greece, we should probably find that even in classical times they continued annually to fashion their Corn-mothers (Demeters) and Maidens (Persephones) out of the ripe corn on the harvest-fields. But unfortunately the Demeter and Persephone whom we know were the denizens of towns, the majestic inhabitants of lordly temples; it was for such divinities alone that the refined writers of antiquity had eyes, the uncouth rites performed by rustics amongst the corn were beneath their notice. Even if they noticed them, they probably never dreamed of any connexion between the puppet of corn-stalks on the sunny stubble-field and the marble divinity in the shady coolness of the temple. Still the writings even of these town-bred and cultured persons afford us an occasional glimpse of a Demeter as rude as the rudest that a remote German village can show. Thus the story that Iasion begat a child Plutus ("wealth," "abundance") by Demeter on a thrice-ploughed field, may be compared with the West Prussian custom of the mock birth of a child on the harvest-field. In this Prussian custom the pretended mother represents the Corn-mother (*Żytniamatka*), the pretended child represents the Corn-baby, and the whole ceremony is a charm to ensure a crop next year. The custom and the legend alike point to an older practice of performing, among the sprouting crops in spring or the stubble in autumn, one of those real or mimic acts of procreation by which, as we have seen, primitive man often seeks to infuse his own vigorous life into the languid or decaying energies of nature. Another glimpse of the savage under the civilised Demeter will be afforded farther on, when we come to deal with another aspect of those agricultural divinities.

The reader may have observed that in modern folk-customs the corn-spirit is generally represented either by a Corn-mother (Old Woman, etc.) or by a Maiden (Harvest-child, etc.), not both by a Corn-mother and by a Maiden. Why then did the Greeks represent the corn both as a mother and a daughter?

In the Breton custom the mother-sheaf—a large figure made out of the last sheaf with a small corn-doll inside of it—clearly represents both the Corn-mother and the Corn-daughter, the latter still unborn. Again, in the Prussian custom just referred to, the woman who plays the part of Corn-mother represents the ripe grain, the child appears to represent next year's corn, which may be regarded, naturally enough, as the child of this year's corn, since it is from the seed of this year's harvest that next year's crop will spring. Further, we have seen that among the Malays of the Peninsula and sometimes among the Highlanders of Scotland the spirit of the grain is represented in double female form, both as old and young, by means of ears taken alike from the ripe crop. In Scotland the old spirit of the corn appears as the Carline or *Carilleach*, the young spirit as the Maiden, while among the Malays of the Peninsula the two spirits of the rice are definitely related to each other as mother and child. Judged by these analogies Demeter would be the ripe crop of this year; Persephone would be

the seed-corn taken from it and sown in autumn, to reappear in spring. The descent of Persephone into the lower world would thus be a mythical expression for the sowing of the seed, her reappearance in spring would signify the sprouting of the young corn. In this way the Persephone of one year becomes the Demeter of the next, and this may very well have been the original form of the myth. But when with the advance of religious thought the corn came to be personified, no longer as a being that went through the whole cycle of birth, growth, reproduction, and death within a year, but as an immortal goddess, consistency required that one of the two personifications, the mother or the daughter, should be sacrificed. However, the double conception of the corn as mother and daughter may have been too old and too deeply rooted in the popular mind to be eradicated by logic, and so room had to be found in the reformed myth both for mother and daughter. This was done by assigning to Persephone the character of the corn sown in autumn and sprouting in spring, while Demeter was left to play the somewhat vague part of the heavy mother of the corn, who laments its annual disappearance underground, and rejoices over its reappearance in spring. Thus instead of a regular succession of divine beings, each living a year and then giving birth to her successor, the reformed myth exhibits the conception of two divine and immortal beings, one of whom annually disappears into and reappears from the ground, while the other has little to do but to weep and rejoice at the appropriate seasons.

This theory of the double personification of the corn in Greek myth assumes that both personifications (Demeter and Persephone) are original. But if we suppose that the Greek myth started with a single personification, the aftergrowth of a second personification may perhaps be explained as follows. On looking over the harvest customs which have been passed under review, it may be noticed that they involve two distinct conceptions of the corn-spirit. For whereas in some of the customs the corn-spirit is treated as immanent in the corn, in others it is regarded as external to it. Thus when a particular sheaf is called by the name of the corn-spirit, and is dressed in clothes and handled with reverence, the spirit is clearly regarded as immanent in the corn. But when the spirit is said to make the crops grow by passing through them, or to blight the grain of those against whom she has a grudge, she is apparently conceived as distinct from, though exercising power over, the corn. Conceived in the latter mode the corn-spirit is in a fair way to become a deity of the corn, if she has not become so already. Of these two conceptions, that of the corn-spirit as immanent in the corn is doubtless the older, since the view of nature as animated by indwelling spirits appears to have generally preceded the view of it as controlled by external deities, to put it shortly, animism precedes deism. In the harvest customs of our European peasantry the corn-spirit seems to be conceived now as immanent in the corn and now as external to it. In Greek mythology, on the other hand, Demeter is viewed rather as the deity of the corn

than as the spirit immanent in it. The process of thought which leads to the change from the one mode of conception to the other is anthropomorphism, or the gradual investment of the immanent spirits with more and more of the attributes of humanity. As men emerge from savagery the tendency to humanise their divinities gains strength ; and the more human these become the wider is the breach which severs them from the natural objects of which they were at first merely the animating spirits or souls. But in the progress upwards from savagery men of the same generation do not march abreast ; and though the new anthropomorphic gods may satisfy the religious wants of the more developed intelligences, the backward members of the community will cling by preference to the old animistic notions. Now when the spirit of any natural object such as the corn has been invested with human qualities, detached from the object, and converted into a deity controlling it, the object itself is, by the withdrawal of its spirit, left inanimate, it becomes, so to say, a spiritual vacuum. But the popular fancy, intolerant of such a vacuum, in other words, unable to conceive anything as inanimate, immediately creates a fresh mythical being, with which it peoples the vacant object. Thus the same natural object comes to be represented in mythology by two distinct beings : first by the old spirit now separated from it and raised to the rank of a deity ; second, by the new spirit, freshly created by the popular fancy to supply the place vacated by the old spirit on its elevation to a higher sphere. In such cases the problem for mythology is, having got two distinct personifications of the same object, what to do with them ? How are their relations to each other to be adjusted, and room found for both in the mythological system ? When the old spirit or new deity is conceived as creating or producing the object in question, the problem is easily solved. Since the object is believed to be produced by the old spirit, and animated by the new one, the latter, as the soul of the object, must also owe its existence to the former, thus the old spirit will stand to the new one as producer to produced, that is, in mythology, as parent to child, and if both spirits are conceived as female, their relation will be that of mother and daughter. In this way, starting from a single personification of the corn as female, mythic fancy might in time reach a double personification of it as mother and daughter. It would be very rash to affirm that this was the way in which the myth of Demeter and Persephone actually took shape, but it seems a legitimate conjecture that the reduplication of deities, of which Demeter and Persephone furnish an example, may sometimes have arisen in the way indicated. For example, among the pairs of deities dealt with in a former part of this work, it has been shown that there are grounds for regarding both Isis and her companion god Osiris as personifications of the corn. On the hypothesis just suggested, Isis would be the old corn-spirit, and Osiris would be the newer one, whose relationship to the old spirit was variously explained as that of brother, husband, and son ; for of course mythology would always be free to account for the coexistence

of the two divinities in more ways than one. It must not, however, be forgotten that this proposed explanation of such pairs of deities as Demeter and Persephone or Isis and Osiris is purely conjectural, and is only given for what it is worth.

## CHAPTER XLVII

### LITYERSES

§ 1 *Songs of the Corn-reapers*—In the preceding pages an attempt has been made to show that in the Corn-mother and Harvest-maiden of Northern Europe we have the prototypes of Demeter and Persephone. But an essential feature is still wanting to complete the resemblance. A leading incident in the Greek myth is the death and resurrection of Persephone, it is this incident which, coupled with the nature of the goddess as a deity of vegetation, links the myth with the cults of Adonis, Attis, Osiris, and Dionysus, and it is in virtue of this incident that the myth finds a place in our discussion of the Dying God. It remains, therefore, to see whether the conception of the annual death and resurrection of a god, which figures so prominently in these great Greek and Oriental worships, has not also its origin or its analogy in the rustic rites observed by reapers and vine-dressers amongst the corn-shocks and the vines.

Our general ignorance of the popular superstitions and customs of the ancients has already been confessed. But the obscurity which thus hangs over the first beginnings of ancient religion is fortunately dissipated to some extent in the present case. The worships of Osiris, Adonis, and Attis had their respective seats, as we have seen, in Egypt, Syria, and Phrygia; and in each of these countries certain harvest and vintage customs are known to have been observed, the resemblance of which to each other and to the national rites struck the ancients themselves, and, compared with the harvest customs of modern peasants and barbarians, seems to throw some light on the origin of the rites in question.

It has been already mentioned, on the authority of Diodorus, that in ancient Egypt the reapers were wont to lament over the first sheaf cut, invoking Isis as the goddess to whom they owed the discovery of corn. To the plaintive song or cry sung or uttered by Egyptian reapers the Greeks gave the name of *Maneros*, and explained the name by a story that *Maneros*, the only son of the first Egyptian king, invented agriculture, and, dying an untimely death, was thus lamented by the people. It appears, however, that the name *Maneros* is due to a misunderstanding of the formula *mââ-ne-hra*, "Come to the house," which has been discovered in various Egyptian writings, for example in the dirge of Isis in the Book of the Dead. Hence we may suppose that the cry *mââ-ne-hra* was chanted by the reapers

over the cut corn as a dirge for the death of the corn-spirit (Isis or Osiris) and a prayer for its return. As the cry was raised over the first ears reaped, it would seem that the corn-spirit was believed by the Egyptians to be present in the first corn cut and to die under the sickle. We have seen that in the Malay Peninsula and Java the first ears of rice are taken to represent either the Soul of the Rice or the Rice-bride and the Rice-bridegroom. In parts of Russia the first sheaf is treated much in the same way that the last sheaf is treated elsewhere. It is reaped by the mistress herself, taken home and set in the place of honour near the holy pictures; afterwards it is threshed separately, and some of its grain is mixed with the next year's seed-corn. In Aberdeenshire, while the last corn cut was generally used to make the *chylack* sheaf, it was sometimes, though rarely, the first corn cut that was dressed up as a woman and carried home with ceremony.

In Phœnicia and Western Asia a plaintive song, like that chanted by the Egyptian corn-reapers, was sung at the vintage and probably (to judge by analogy) also at harvest. This Phœnician song was called by the Greeks *Linus* or *Ailinus* and explained, like *Maneros*, as a lament for the death of a youth named *Linus*. According to one story *Linus* was brought up by a shepherd, but torn to pieces by his dogs. But, like *Maneros*, the name *Linus* or *Ailinus* appears to have originated in a verbal misunderstanding, and to be nothing more than the cry *ai lanu*, that is "Woe to us," which the Phœnicians probably uttered in mourning for *Adonis*, at least *Sappho* seems to have regarded *Adonis* and *Linus* as equivalent.

In *Bithynia* a like mournful ditty, called *Bormus* or *Borimus*, was chanted by *Mariandynian* reapers. *Bormus* was said to have been a handsome youth, the son of *King Upias* or of a wealthy and distinguished man. One summer day, watching the reapers at work in his fields, he went to fetch them a drink of water and was never heard of more. So the reapers sought for him, calling him in plaintive strains, which they continued to chant at harvest ever afterwards.

§ 2 *Killing the Corn-spirit*—In *Phrygia* the corresponding song, sung by harvesters both at reaping and at threshing, was called *Lityerses*. According to one story, *Lityerses* was a bastard son of *Midas*, King of *Phrygia*, and dwelt at *Celaenae*. He used to reap the corn, and had an enormous appetite. When a stranger happened to enter the corn-field or to pass by it, *Lityerses* gave him plenty to eat and drink, then took him to the corn-fields on the banks of the *Maeander* and compelled him to reap along with him. Lastly, it was his custom to wrap the stranger in a sheaf, cut off his head with a sickle, and carry away his body, swathed in the corn-stalks. But at last *Hercules* undertook to reap with him, cut off his head with the sickle, and threw his body into the river. As *Hercules* is reported to have slain *Lityerses* in the same way that *Lityerses* slew others, we may infer that *Lityerses* used to throw the bodies of his victims



into the river. According to another version of the story, Lityerses, a son of Midas, was wont to challenge people to a reaping match with him, and if he vanquished them he used to thrash them, but one day he met with a stronger reaper, who slew him.

There are some grounds for supposing that in these stories of Lityerses we have the description of a Phrygian harvest custom in accordance with which certain persons, especially strangers passing the harvest field, were regularly regarded as embodiments of the corn-spirit, and as such were seized by the reapers, wrapt in sheaves, and beheaded, their bodies, bound up in the corn-stalks, being afterwards thrown into water as a rain-charm. The grounds for this supposition are, first, the resemblance of the Lityeises story to the harvest customs of European peasantry, and, second, the frequency of human sacrifices offered by savage races to promote the fertility of the fields. We will examine these grounds successively, beginning with the former.

In comparing the story with the harvest customs of Europe, three points deserve special attention, namely · I. the reaping match and the binding of persons in the sheaves, II. the killing of the corn-spirit or his representatives, III. the treatment of visitors to the harvest field or of strangers passing it.

I. In regard to the first head, we have seen that in modern Europe the person who cuts or binds or threshes the last sheaf is often exposed to rough treatment at the hands of his fellow-labourers. For example, he is bound up in the last sheaf, and, thus encased, is carried or carted about, beaten, drenched with water, thrown on a dunghill, and so forth. Or, if he is spared this horseplay, he is at least the subject of ridicule or is thought to be destined to suffer some misfortune in the course of the year. Hence the harvesters are naturally reluctant to give the last cut at reaping or the last stroke at threshing or to bind the last sheaf, and towards the close of the work this reluctance produces an emulation among the labourers, each striving to finish his task as fast as possible, in order that he may escape the invidious distinction of being last. For example, in the Mittelmark district of Prussia, when the rye has been reaped, and the last sheaves are about to be tied up, the binders stand in two rows facing each other, every woman with her sheaf and her straw rope before her. At a given signal they all tie up their sheaves, and the one who is the last to finish is ridiculed by the rest. Not only so, but her sheaf is made up into human shape and called the Old Man, and she must carry it home to the farmyard, where the harvesters dance in a circle round her and it. Then they take the Old Man to the farmer and deliver it to him with the words, "We bring the Old Man to the Master. He may keep him till he gets a new one." After that the Old Man is set up against a tree, where he remains for a long time, the butt of many jests. At Aschbach in Bavaria, when the reaping is nearly finished, the reapers say, "Now, we will drive out the Old Man." Each of them sets himself to reap a patch of corn as fast as he can;

he who cuts the last handful or the last stalk is greeted by the rest with an exulting cry, " You have the Old Man " Sometimes a black mask is fastened on the reaper's face and he is dressed in woman's clothes ; or if the reaper is a woman, she is dressed in man's clothes. A dance follows. At the supper the Old Man gets twice as large a portion of the food as the others. The proceedings are similar at threshing, the person who gives the last stroke is said to have the Old Man. At the supper given to the threshers he has to eat out of the cream-ladle and to drink a great deal. Moreover, he is quizzed and teased in all sorts of ways till he frees himself from further annoyance by treating the others to brandy or beer.

These examples illustrate the contests in reaping, threshing, and binding which take place amongst the harvesters, from their unwillingness to suffer the ridicule and discomfort incurred by the one who happens to finish his work last. It will be remembered that the person who is last at reaping, binding, or threshing, is regarded as the representative of the corn-spirit, and this idea is more fully expressed by binding him or her in corn-stalks. The latter custom has been already illustrated, but a few more instances may be added. At Kloxin, near Stettin, the harvesters call out to the woman who binds the last sheaf, " You have the Old Man, and must keep him " As late as the first half of the nineteenth century the custom was to tie up the woman herself in pease-straw, and bring her with music to the farmhouse, where the harvesters danced with her till the pease-straw fell off. In other villages round Stettin, when the last harvest-waggon is being loaded, there is a regular race amongst the women, each striving not to be last. For she who places the last sheaf on the waggon is called the Old Man, and is completely swathed in corn-stalks ; she is also decked with flowers, and flowers and a helmet of straw are placed on her head. In solemn procession she carries the harvest-crown to the squire, over whose head she holds it while she utters a string of good wishes. At the dance which follows, the Old Man has the right to choose his, or rather her, partner, it is an honour to dance with him. At Gommern, near Magdeburg, the reaper who cuts the last ears of corn is often wrapt up in corn-stalks so completely that it is hard to see whether there is a man in the bundle or not. Thus wrapt up he is taken by another stalwart reaper on his back, and carried round the field amidst the joyous cries of the harvesters. At Neuhausen, near Merseburg, the person who binds the last sheaf is wrapt in ears of oats and saluted as the Oatsman, whereupon the others dance round him. At Brie, Isle de France, the farmer himself is tied up in the *first* sheaf. At Dingelstedt, in the district of Erfurt, down to the first half of the nineteenth century it was the custom to tie up a man in the last sheaf. He was called the Old Man, and was brought home on the last waggon, amid huzzas and music. On reaching the farmyard he was rolled round the barn and drenched with water. At Nordlingen in Bavaria the man who gives the last stroke at threshing is wrapt in straw and rolled on the

threshing-floor In some parts of Oberpfalz, Bavaria, he is said to "get the Old Man," is wrapt in straw, and carried to a neighbour who has not yet finished his threshing. In Silesia the woman who binds the last sheaf has to submit to a good deal of horse-play. She is pushed, knocked down, and tied up in the sheaf, after which she is called the corn-puppet (*Kornpöpel*)

"In all these cases the idea is that the spirit of the corn—the Old Man of vegetation—is driven out of the corn last cut or last threshed, and lives in the barn during the winter At sowing-time he goes out again to the fields to resume his activity as animating force among the sprouting corn "

II Passing to the second point of comparison between the Lityerses story and European harvest customs, we have now to see that in the latter the corn-spirit is often believed to be killed at reaping or threshing. In the Romsdal and other parts of Norway, when the haymaking is over, the people say that "the Old Hay-man has been killed" In some parts of Bavaria the man who gives the last stroke at threshing is said to have killed the Corn-man, the Oats-man, or the Wheat-man, according to the crop In the Canton of Tillot, in Lorraine, at threshing the last corn the men keep time with their flails, calling out as they thresh, "We are killing the Old Woman! We are killing the Old Woman!" If there is an old woman in the house she is warned to save herself, or she will be struck dead Near Ragnit, in Lithuania, the last handful of corn is left standing by itself, with the words, "The Old Woman (*Boba*) is sitting in there" Then a young reaper whets his scythe and, with a strong sweep, cuts down the handful It is now said of him that "he has cut off the Boba's head", and he receives a gratuity from the farmer and a jugful of water over his head from the farmer's wife According to another account, every Lithuanian reaper makes haste to finish his task, for the Old Rye-woman lives in the last stalks, and whoever cuts the last stalks kills the Old Rye-woman, and by killing her he brings trouble on himself In Wilkischken, in the district of Tilsit, the man who cuts the last corn goes by the name of "the killer of the Rye-woman" In Lithuania, again, the corn-spirit is believed to be killed at threshing as well as at reaping When only a single pile of corn remains to be threshed, all the threshers suddenly step back a few paces, as if at the word of command Then they fall to work, plying their flails with the utmost rapidity and vehemence, till they come to the last bundle Upon this they fling themselves with almost frantic fury, straining every nerve, and raining blows on it till the word "Halt!" rings out sharply from the leader The man whose flail is the last to fall after the command to stop has been given is immediately surrounded by all the rest, crying out that "he has struck the Old Rye-woman dead" He has to expiate the deed by treating them to brandy, and, like the man who cuts the last corn, he is known as "the killer of the Old Rye-woman" Sometimes in Lithuania the slain corn-spirit was represented by a puppet Thus a female figure was made out of

corn-stalks, dressed in clothes, and placed on the threshing-floor, under the heap of corn which was to be threshed last. Whoever thereafter gave the last stroke at threshing "struck the Old Woman dead" We have already met with examples of burning the figure which represents the corn-spirit In the East Riding of Yorkshire a custom called "burning the Old Witch" is observed on the last day of harvest A small sheaf of corn is burnt on the field in a fire of stubble; peas are parched at the fire and eaten with a liberal allowance of ale, and the lads and lasses romp about the flames and amuse themselves by blackening each other's faces Sometimes, again, the corn-spirit is represented by a man, who lies down under the last corn; it is threshed upon his body, and the people say that "the Old Man is being beaten to death." We saw that sometimes the farmer's wife is thrust, together with the last sheaf, under the threshing-machine, as if to thresh her, and that afterwards a pretence is made of winnowing her At Volders, in the Tyrol, husks of corn are stuck behind the neck of the man who gives the last stroke at threshing, and he is throttled with a straw garland If he is tall, it is believed that the corn will be tall next year Then he is tied on a bundle and flung into the river In Carinthia, the thresher who gave the last stroke, and the person who untied the last sheaf on the threshing-floor, are bound hand and foot with straw bands, and crowns of straw are placed on their heads Then they are tied, face to face, on a sledge, dragged through the village, and flung into a brook. The custom of throwing the representative of the corn-spirit into a stream, like that of drenching him with water, is, as usual, a rain-charm

III Thus far the representatives of the corn-spirit have generally been the man or woman who cuts, binds, or threshes the last corn We now come to the cases in which the corn-spirit is represented either by a stranger passing the harvest-field (as in the Lityerses tale), or by a visitor entering it for the first time. All over Germany it is customary for the reapers or threshers to lay hold of passing strangers and bind them with a rope made of corn-stalks, till they pay a forfeit, and when the farmer himself or one of his guests enters the field or the threshing-floor for the first time, he is treated in the same way. Sometimes the rope is only tied round his arm or his feet or his neck But sometimes he is regularly swathed in corn Thus at Solor in Norway, whoever enters the field, be he the master or a stranger, is tied up in a sheaf and must pay a ransom In the neighbourhood of Soest, when the farmer visits the flax-pullers for the first time, he is completely enveloped in flax Passers-by are also surrounded by the women, tied up in flax, and compelled to stand brandy. At Nordlingen strangers are caught with straw ropes and tied up in a sheaf till they pay a forfeit Among the Germans of Haselberg, in West Bohemia, as soon as a farmer had given the last corn to be threshed on the threshing-floor, he was swathed in it and had to redeem himself by a present of cakes. In the canton of Putanges, in Normandy, a pretence of tying up the owner of the land

in the last sheaf of wheat is still practised, or at least was still practised some quarter of a century ago. The task falls to the women alone. They throw themselves on the proprietor, seize him by the arms, the legs, and the body, throw him to the ground, and stretch him on the last sheaf. Then a show is made of binding him, and the conditions to be observed at the harvest-supper are dictated to him. When he has accepted them, he is released and allowed to get up. At Brie, Isle de France, when any one who does not belong to the farm passes by the harvest-field, the reapers give chase. If they catch him, they bind him in a sheaf and bite him, one after the other, in the forehead, crying, "You shall carry the key of the field." "To have the key" is an expression used by harvesters elsewhere in the sense of to cut or bind or thresh the last sheaf; hence, it is equivalent to the phrases "You have the Old Man," "You are the Old Man," which are addressed to the cutter, binder, or thresher of the last sheaf. Therefore, when a stranger, as at Brie, is tied up in a sheaf and told that he will "carry the key of the field," it is as much as to say that he is the Old Man, that is, an embodiment of the corn-spirit. In hop-picking, if a well-dressed stranger passes the hop-yard, he is seized by the women, tumbled into the bin, covered with leaves, and not released till he has paid a fine.

Thus, like the ancient Lityerses, modern European reapers have been wont to lay hold of a passing stranger and tie him up in a sheaf. It is not to be expected that they should complete the parallel by cutting off his head, but if they do not take such a strong step, their language and gestures are at least indicative of a desire to do so. For instance, in Mecklenburg on the first day of reaping, if the master or mistress or a stranger enters the field, or merely passes by it, all the mowers face towards him and sharpen their scythes, clashing their whet-stones against them in unison, as if they were making ready to mow. Then the woman who leads the mowers steps up to him and ties a band round his left arm. He must ransom himself by payment of a forfeit. Near Ratzeburg, when the master or other person of mark enters the field or passes by it, all the harvesters stop work and march towards him in a body, the men with their scythes in front. On meeting him they form up in line, men and women. The men stick the poles of their scythes in the ground, as they do in whetting them, then they take off their caps and hang them on the scythes, while their leader stands forward and makes a speech. When he has done, they all whet their scythes in measured time very loudly, after which they put on their caps. Two of the women binders then come forward, one of them ties the master or stranger (as the case may be) with corn-ears or with a silken band; the other delivers a rhyming address. The following are specimens of the speeches made by the reaper on these occasions. In some parts of Pomerania every passer-by is stopped, his way being barred with a corn-rope. The reapers form a circle round him and sharpen their scythes, while their leader says:

*" The men are ready,  
The scythes are bent,*

*The corn is great and small,  
The gentleman must be mowed "*

Then the process of whetting the scythes is repeated At Ramín, in the district of Stettin, the stranger, standing encircled by the reapers, is thus addressed :

*" We'll stroke the gentleman  
With our naked sword,  
Wherewith we shear meadows and  
fields  
We shear princes and lords  
Labourers are often athirst ,*

*If the gentleman will stand beer  
and brandy  
The joke will soon be over  
But, if our prayer he does not like,  
The sword has a right to strike "*

On the threshing-floor strangers are also regarded as embodiments of the corn-spirit, and are treated accordingly At Wiedingharde in Schleswig when a stranger comes to the threshing-floor he is asked, " Shall I teach you the flail-dance ? " If he says yes, they put the arms of the threshing-flail round his neck as if he were a sheaf of corn, and press them together so tight that he is nearly choked In some parishes of Wermland (Sweden), when a stranger enters the threshing-floor where the threshers are at work, they say that " they will teach him the threshing-song " Then they put a flail round his neck and a straw rope about his body Also, as we have seen, if a stranger woman enters the threshing-floor, the threshers put a flail round her body and a wreath of corn-stalks round her neck, and call out, " See the Corn-woman ! See ! that is how the Corn-maiden looks ! "

Thus in these harvest-customs of modern Europe the person who cuts, binds, or threshes the last corn is treated as an embodiment of the corn-spirit by being wrapt up in sheaves, killed in mimicry by agricultural implements, and thrown into the water These coincidences with the Lityerses story seem to prove that the latter is a genuine description of an old Phrygian harvest-custom But since in the modern parallels the killing of the personal representative of the corn-spirit is necessarily omitted or at most enacted only in mimicry, it is desirable to show that in rude society human beings have been commonly killed as an agricultural ceremony to promote the fertility of the fields. The following examples will make this plain

§ 3 *Human Sacrifices for the Crops* —The Indians of Guayaquil, in Ecuador, used to sacrifice human blood and the hearts of men when they sowed their fields The people of Cañar (now Cuenca in Ecuador) used to sacrifice a hundred children annually at harvest The kings of Quito, the Incas of Peru, and for a long time the Spaniards were unable to suppress the bloody rite At a Mexican harvest-festival, when the first-fruits of the season were offered to the sun, a criminal was placed between two immense stones, balanced opposite each other, and was crushed by them as they fell together His remains were buried, and a feast and dance followed. This sacrifice was known

as "the meeting of the stones" We have seen that the ancient Mexicans also sacrificed human beings at all the various stages in the growth of the maize, the age of the victims corresponding to the age of the corn, for they sacrificed new-born babes at sowing, older children when the grain had sprouted, and so on till it was fully ripe, when they sacrificed old men No doubt the correspondence between the ages of the victims and the state of the corn was supposed to enhance the efficacy of the sacrifice.

The Pawnees annually sacrificed a human victim in spring when they sowed their fields The sacrifice was believed to have been enjoined on them by the Morning Star, or by a certain bird which the Morning Star had sent to them as its messenger The bird was stuffed and preserved as a powerful talisman. They thought that an omission of this sacrifice would be followed by the total failure of the crops of maize, beans, and pumpkins The victim was a captive of either sex He was clad in the gayest and most costly attire, was fattened on the choicest food, and carefully kept in ignorance of his doom When he was fat enough, they bound him to a cross in the presence of the multitude, danced a solemn dance, then cleft his head with a tomahawk and shot him with arrows According to one trader, the squaws then cut pieces of flesh from the victim's body, with which they greased their hoes, but this was denied by another trader who had been present at the ceremony Immediately after the sacrifice the people proceeded to plant their fields A particular account has been preserved of the sacrifice of a Sioux girl by the Pawnees in April 1837 or 1838 The girl was fourteen or fifteen years old and had been kept for six months and well treated Two days before the sacrifice she was led from wigwam to wigwam, accompanied by the whole council of chiefs and warriors At each lodge she received a small billet of wood and a little paint, which she handed to the warrior next to her In this way she called at every wigwam, receiving at each the same present of wood and paint On the twenty-second of April she was taken out to be sacrificed, attended by the warriors, each of whom carried two pieces of wood which he had received from her hands Her body having been painted half red and half black, she was attached to a sort of gibbet and roasted for some time over a slow fire, then shot to death with arrows The chief sacrificer next tore out her heart and devoured it While her flesh was still warm it was cut in small pieces from the bones, put in little baskets, and taken to a neighbouring corn-field There the head chief took a piece of the flesh from a basket and squeezed a drop of blood upon the newly-deposited grains of corn His example was followed by the rest, till all the seed had been sprinkled with the blood, it was then covered up with earth. According to one account the body of the victim was reduced to a kind of paste, which was rubbed or sprinkled not only on the maize but also on the potatoes, the beans, and other seeds to fertilise them. By this sacrifice they hoped to obtain plentiful crops.

A West African queen used to sacrifice a man and woman in the month of March. They were killed with spades and hoes, and their bodies buried in the middle of a field which had just been tilled. At Lagos in Guinea it was the custom annually to impale a young girl alive soon after the spring equinox in order to secure good crops. Along with her were sacrificed sheep and goats, which, with yams, heads of maize, and plantains, were hung on stakes on each side of her. The victims were bred up for the purpose in the king's seraglio, and their minds had been so powerfully wrought upon by the fetish men that they went cheerfully to their fate. A similar sacrifice used to be annually offered at Benin, in Guinea. The Marimos, a Bechuana tribe, sacrifice a human being for the crops. The victim chosen is generally a short, stout man. He is seized by violence or intoxicated and taken to the fields, where he is killed amongst the wheat to serve as "seed" (so they phrase it). After his blood has coagulated in the sun, it is burned along with the frontal bone, the flesh attached to it, and the brain, the ashes are then scattered over the ground to fertilise it. The rest of the body is eaten.

The Bagobos of Mindanao, one of the Philippine Islands, offer a human sacrifice before they sow their rice. The victim is a slave, who is hewn to pieces in the forest. The natives of Bontoc in the interior of Luzon, one of the Philippine Islands, are passionate head-hunters. Their principal seasons for head-hunting are the times of planting and reaping the rice. In order that the crop may turn out well, every farm must get at least one human head at planting and one at sowing. The head-hunters go out in twos or threes, lie in wait for the victim, whether man or woman, cut off his or her head, hands, and feet, and bring them back in haste to the village, where they are received with great rejoicings. The skulls are at first exposed on the branches of two or three dead trees which stand in an open space of every village surrounded by large stones which serve as seats. The people then dance round them and feast and get drunk. When the flesh has decayed from the head, the man who cut it off takes it home and preserves it as a relic, while his companions do the same with the hands and the feet. Similar customs are observed by the Apoyaos, another tribe in the interior of Luzon.

Among the Lhota Naga, one of the many savage tribes who inhabit the deep rugged labyrinthine glens which wind into the mountains from the rich valley of Brahmapootra, it used to be a common custom to chop off the heads, hands, and feet of people they met with, and then to stick up the severed extremities in their fields to ensure a good crop of grain. They bore no ill-will whatever to the persons upon whom they operated in this unceremonious fashion. Once they flayed a boy alive, carved him in pieces, and distributed the flesh among all the villagers, who put it into their corn-bins to avert bad luck and ensure plentiful crops of grain. The Gonds of India, a Dravidian race, kidnapped Brahman boys, and kept them as victims to be sacrificed on various occasions. At sowing and reaping, after a triumphal



procession, one of the lads was slain by being punctured with a poisoned arrow. His blood was then sprinkled over the ploughed field or the ripe crop, and his flesh was devoured. The Oraons or Uraons of Chota Nagpur worship a goddess called Anna Kuari, who can give good crops and make a man rich, but to induce her to do so it is necessary to offer human sacrifices. In spite of the vigilance of the British Government these sacrifices are said to be still secretly perpetrated. The victims are poor waifs and strays whose disappearance attracts no notice. April and May are the months when the catchpoles are out on the prowl. At that time strangers will not go about the country alone, and parents will not let their children enter the jungle or herd the cattle. When a catchpole has found a victim, he cuts his throat and carries away the upper part of the ring finger and the nose. The goddess takes up her abode in the house of any man who has offered her a sacrifice, and from that time his fields yield a double harvest. The form she assumes in the house is that of a small child. When the householder brings in his unhusked rice, he takes the goddess and rolls her over the heap to double its size. But she soon grows restless and can only be pacified with the blood of fresh human victims.

But the best known case of human sacrifices, systematically offered to ensure good crops, is supplied by the Khonds or Kandhs, another Dravidian race in Bengal. Our knowledge of them is derived from the accounts written by British officers who, about the middle of the nineteenth century, were engaged in putting them down. The sacrifices were offered to the Earth Goddess, Tari Pennu or Bera Pennu, and were believed to ensure good crops and immunity from all disease and accidents. In particular, they were considered necessary in the cultivation of turmeric, the Khonds arguing that the turmeric could not have a deep red colour without the shedding of blood. The victim or Meriah, as he was called, was acceptable to the goddess only if he had been purchased, or had been born a victim—that is, the son of a victim father, or had been devoted as a child by his father or guardian. Khonds in distress often sold their children for victims, “considering the beatification of their souls certain, and their death, for the benefit of mankind, the most honourable possible.” A man of the Panua tribe was once seen to load a Khond with curses, and finally to spit in his face, because the Khond had sold for a victim his own child, whom the Panua had wished to marry. A party of Khonds, who saw this, immediately pressed forward to comfort the seller of his child, saying, “Your child has died that all the world may live, and the Earth Goddess herself will wipe that spittle from your face.” The victims were often kept for years before they were sacrificed. Being regarded as consecrated beings, they were treated with extreme affection, mingled with deference, and were welcomed wherever they went. A Meriah youth, on attaining maturity, was generally given a wife, who was herself usually a Meriah or victim; and with her he received a portion of land and farm-stock. Their offspring were

also victims. Human sacrifices were offered to the Earth Goddess by tribes, branches of tribes, or villages, both at periodical festivals and on extraordinary occasions. The periodical sacrifices were generally so arranged by tribes and divisions of tribes that each head of a family was enabled, at least once a year, to procure a shred of flesh for his fields, generally about the time when his chief crop was laid down.

The mode of performing these tribal sacrifices was as follows. Ten or twelve days before the sacrifice, the victim was devoted by cutting off his hair, which, until then, had been kept unshorn. Crowds of men and women assembled to witness the sacrifice, none might be excluded, since the sacrifice was declared to be for all mankind. It was preceded by several days of wild revelry and gross debauchery. On the day before the sacrifice the victim, dressed in a new garment, was led forth from the village in solemn procession, with music and dancing, to the Meriah grove, a clump of high forest trees standing a little way from the village and untouched by the axe. There they tied him to a post, which was sometimes placed between two plants of the *sankissar* shrub. He was then anointed with oil, ghee, and turmeric, and adorned with flowers, and "a species of reverence, which it is not easy to distinguish from adoration," was paid to him throughout the day. A great struggle now arose to obtain the smallest relic from his person; a particle of the turmeric paste with which he was smeared, or a drop of his spittle, was esteemed of sovereign virtue, especially by the women. The crowd danced round the post to music, and, addressing the earth, said, "O God, we offer this sacrifice to you, give us good crops, seasons, and health"; then speaking to the victim they said, "We bought you with a price, and did not seize you; now we sacrifice you according to custom, and no sin rests with us."

On the last morning the orgies, which had been scarcely interrupted during the night, were resumed, and continued till noon, when they ceased, and the assembly proceeded to consummate the sacrifice. The victim was again anointed with oil, and each person touched the anointed part, and wiped the oil on his own head. In some places they took the victim in procession round the village, from door to door, where some plucked hair from his head, and others begged for a drop of his spittle, with which they anointed their heads. As the victim might not be bound nor make any show of resistance, the bones of his arms and, if necessary, his legs were broken; but often this precaution was rendered unnecessary by stupefying him with opium. The mode of putting him to death varied in different places. One of the commonest modes seems to have been strangulation, or squeezing to death. The branch of a green tree was cleft several feet down the middle, the victim's neck (in other places, his chest) was inserted in the cleft, which the priest, aided by his assistants, strove with all his force to close. Then he wounded the victim slightly with his axe, whereupon the crowd rushed at the wretch and hewed the flesh from the bones, leaving the head and bowels untouched. Sometimes

he was cut up alive In Chinna Kumedya he was dragged along the fields, surrounded by the crowd, who, avoiding his head and intestines, hacked the flesh from his body with their knives till he died. Another very common mode of sacrifice in the same district was to fasten the victim to the proboscis of a wooden elephant, which revolved on a stout post, and, as it whirled round, the crowd cut the flesh from the victim while life remained In some villages Major Campbell found as many as fourteen of these wooden elephants, which had been used at sacrifices In one district the victim was put to death slowly by fire A low stage was formed, sloping on either side like a roof, upon it they laid the victim, his limbs wound round with cords to confine his struggles Fires were then lighted and hot brands applied, to make him roll up and down the slopes of the stage as long as possible, for the more tears he shed the more abundant would be the supply of rain Next day the body was cut to pieces

The flesh cut from the victim was instantly taken home by the persons who had been deputed by each village to bring it. To secure its rapid arrival, it was sometimes forwarded by relays of men, and conveyed with postal fleetness fifty or sixty miles In each village all who stayed at home fasted rigidly until the flesh arrived The bearer deposited it in the place of public assembly, where it was received by the priest and the heads of families. The priest divided it into two portions, one of which he offered to the Earth Goddess by burying it in a hole in the ground with his back turned, and without looking Then each man added a little earth to bury it, and the priest poured water on the spot from a hull gourd The other portion of flesh he divided into as many shares as there were heads of houses present Each head of a house rolled his shred of flesh in leaves, and buried it in his favourite field, placing it in the earth behind his back without looking In some places each man carried his portion of flesh to the stream which watered his fields, and there hung it on a pole For three days thereafter no house was swept, and, in one district, strict silence was observed, no fire might be given out, no wood cut, and no strangers received The remains of the human victim (namely, the head, bowels, and bones) were watched by strong parties the night after the sacrifice; and next morning they were burned, along with a whole sheep, on a funeral pile The ashes were scattered over the fields, laid as paste over the houses and granaries, or mixed with the new corn to preserve it from insects Sometimes, however, the head and bones were buried, not burnt After the suppression of the human sacrifices, inferior victims were substituted in some places, for instance, in the capital of Chinna Kumedya a goat took the place of a human victim Others sacrifice a buffalo They tie it to a wooden post in a sacred grove, dance wildly round it with brandished knives, then, falling on the living animal, hack it to shreds and tatters in a few minutes, fighting and struggling with each other for every particle of flesh. As soon as a man has secured a piece he makes off with it at full speed to bury it in his fields, according to

ancient custom, before the sun has set, and as some of them have far to go they must run very fast. All the women throw clods of earth at the rapidly retreating figures of the men, some of them taking very good aim. Soon the sacred grove, so lately a scene of tumult, is silent and deserted except for a few people who remain to guard all that is left of the buffalo, to wit, the head, the bones, and the stomach, which are burned with ceremony at the foot of the stake.

In these Khond sacrifices the Meriahs are represented by our authorities as victims offered to propitiate the Earth Goddess. But from the treatment of the victims both before and after death it appears that the custom cannot be explained as merely a propitiatory sacrifice. A part of the flesh certainly was offered to the Earth Goddess, but the rest was buried by each householder in his fields, and the ashes of the other parts of the body were scattered over the fields, laid as paste on the granaries, or mixed with the new corn. These latter customs imply that to the body of the Meriah there was ascribed a direct or intrinsic power of making the crops to grow, quite independent of the indirect efficacy which it might have as an offering to secure the good-will of the deity. In other words, the flesh and ashes of the victim were believed to be endowed with a magical or physical power of fertilising the land. The same intrinsic power was ascribed to the blood and tears of the Meriah, his blood causing the redness of the turmeric and his tears producing rain, for it can hardly be doubted that, originally at least, the tears were supposed to bring down the rain, not merely to prognosticate it. Similarly the custom of pouring water on the buried flesh of the Meriah was no doubt a rain-charm. Again, magical power as an attribute of the Meriah appears in the sovereign virtue believed to reside in anything that came from his person, as his hair or spittle. The ascription of such power to the Meriah indicates that he was much more than a mere man sacrificed to propitiate a deity. Once more, the extreme reverence paid him points to the same conclusion. Major Campbell speaks of the Meriah as "being regarded as something more than mortal," and Major Macpherson says, "A species of reverence, which it is not easy to distinguish from adoration, is paid to him." In short, the Meriah seems to have been regarded as divine. As such, he may originally have represented the Earth Goddess or, perhaps, a deity of vegetation; though in later times he came to be regarded rather as a victim offered to a deity than as himself an incarnate god. This later view of the Meriah as a victim rather than a divinity may perhaps have received undue emphasis from the European writers who have described the Khond religion. Habituated to the later idea of sacrifice as an offering made to a god for the purpose of conciliating his favour, European observers are apt to interpret all religious slaughter in this sense, and to suppose that wherever such slaughter takes place, there must necessarily be a deity to whom the carnage is believed by the slayers to be acceptable. Thus their preconceived ideas may unconsciously colour and warp their descriptions of savage rites.

The same custom of killing the representative of a god, of which strong traces appear in the Khond sacrifices, may perhaps be detected in some of the other human sacrifices described above. Thus the ashes of the slaughtered Marimo were scattered over the fields, the blood of the Brahman lad was put on the crop and field, the flesh of the slain Naga was stowed in the corn-bin, and the blood of the Sioux girl was allowed to trickle on the seed. Again, the identification of the victim with the corn, in other words, the view that he is an embodiment or spirit of the corn, is brought out in the pains which seem to be taken to secure a physical correspondence between him and the natural object which he embodies or represents. Thus the Mexicans killed young victims for the young corn and old ones for the ripe corn, the Marimos sacrifice, as "seed," a short, fat man, the shortness of his stature corresponding to that of the young corn, his fatness to the condition which it is desired that the crops may attain; and the Pawnees fattened their victims probably with the same view. Again, the identification of the victim with the corn comes out in the African custom of killing him with spades and hoes, and the Mexican custom of grinding him, like corn, between two stones.

One more point in these savage customs deserves to be noted. The Pawnee chief devoured the heart of the Sioux girl, and the Marimos and Gonds ate the victim's flesh. If, as we suppose, the victim was regarded as divine, it follows that in eating his flesh his worshippers believed themselves to be partaking of the body of their god.

§ 4 *The Corn-spirit slain in his Human Representatives* —The barbarous rites just described offer analogies to the harvest customs of Europe. Thus the fertilising virtue ascribed to the corn-spirit is shown equally in the savage custom of mixing the victim's blood or ashes with the seed-corn and the European custom of mixing the grain from the last sheaf with the young corn in spring. Again, the identification of the person with the corn appears alike in the savage custom of adapting the age and stature of the victim to the age and stature, whether actual or expected, of the crop, in the Scotch and Styrian rules that when the corn-spirit is conceived as the Maiden the last corn shall be cut by a young maiden, but when it is conceived as the Corn-mother it shall be cut by an old woman, in the warning given to old women in Lorraine to save themselves when the Old Woman is being killed, that is, when the last corn is being threshed, and in the Tyrolese expectation that if the man who gives the last stroke at threshing is tall, the next year's corn will be tall also. Further, the same identification is implied in the savage custom of killing the representative of the corn-spirit with hoes or spades or by grinding him between stones, and in the European custom of pretending to kill him with the scythe or the flail. Once more the Khond custom of pouring water on the buried flesh of the victim is parallel to the European customs of pouring water on the personal representative of the corn-spirit or plunging him into a stream. Both the Khond and the European customs are rain-charms.

To return now to the Lityerses story. It has been shown that in rude society human beings have been commonly killed to promote the growth of the crops. There is therefore no improbability in the supposition that they may once have been killed for a like purpose in Phrygia and Europe, and when Phrygian legend and European folk-custom, closely agreeing with each other, point to the conclusion that men were so slain, we are bound, provisionally at least, to accept the conclusion. Further, both the Lityerses story and European harvest-customs agree in indicating that the victim was put to death as a representative of the corn-spirit, and this indication is in harmony with the view which some savages appear to take of the victim slain to make the crops flourish. On the whole, then, we may fairly suppose that both in Phrygia and in Europe the representative of the corn-spirit was annually killed upon the harvest-field. Grounds have been already shown for believing that similarly in Europe the representative of the tree-spirit was annually slain. The proofs of these two remarkable and closely analogous customs are entirely independent of each other. Their coincidence seems to furnish fresh presumption in favour of both.

To the question, How was the representative of the corn-spirit chosen? one answer has been already given. Both the Lityerses story and European folk-custom show that passing strangers were regarded as manifestations of the corn-spirit escaping from the cut or threshed corn, and as such were seized and slain. But this is not the only answer which the evidence suggests. According to the Phrygian legend the victims of Lityerses were not simply passing strangers, but persons whom he had vanquished in a reaping contest and afterwards wrapt up in corn-sheaves and beheaded. This suggests that the representative of the corn-spirit may have been selected by means of a competition on the harvest-field, in which the vanquished competitor was compelled to accept the fatal honour. The supposition is countenanced by European harvest-customs. We have seen that in Europe there is sometimes a contest amongst the reapers to avoid being last, and that the person who is vanquished in this competition, that is, who cuts the last corn, is often roughly handled. It is true we have not found that a pretence is made of killing him; but on the other hand we have found that a pretence is made of killing the man who gives the last stroke at threshing, that is, who is vanquished in the threshing contest. Now, since it is in the character of representative of the corn-spirit that the thresher of the last corn is slain in mimicry, and since the same representative character attaches (as we have seen) to the cutter and binder as well as to the thresher of the last corn, and since the same repugnance is evinced by harvesters to be last in any one of these labours, we may conjecture that a pretence has been commonly made of killing the reaper and binder as well as the thresher of the last corn, and that in ancient times this killing was actually carried out. This conjecture is corroborated by the common superstition that whoever cuts the last corn must

die soon. Sometimes it is thought that the person who binds the last sheaf on the field will die in the course of next year. The reason for fixing on the reaper, binder, or thresher of the last corn as the representative of the corn-spirit may be this. The corn-spirit is supposed to lurk as long as he can in the corn, retreating before the reapers, the binders, and the threshers at their work. But when he is forcibly expelled from his refuge in the last corn cut or the last sheaf bound or the last grain threshed, he necessarily assumes some other form than that of the corn-stalks, which had hitherto been his garment or body. And what form can the expelled corn-spirit assume more naturally than that of the person who stands nearest to the corn from which he (the corn-spirit) has just been expelled? But the person in question is necessarily the reaper, binder, or thresher of the last corn. He or she, therefore, is seized and treated as the corn-spirit himself.

Thus the person who was killed on the harvest-field as the representative of the corn-spirit may have been either a passing stranger or the harvester who was last at reaping, binding, or threshing. But there is a third possibility, to which ancient legend and modern folk-custom alike point. Lityerses not only put strangers to death, he was himself slain, and apparently in the same way as he had slain others, namely, by being wrapt in a corn-sheaf, beheaded, and cast into the river; and it is implied that this happened to Lityerses on his own land. Similarly in modern harvest-customs the pretence of killing appears to be carried out quite as often on the person of the master (farmer or squire) as on that of strangers. Now when we remember that Lityerses was said to have been a son of the King of Phrygia, and that in one account he is himself called a king, and when we combine with this the tradition that he was put to death, apparently as a representative of the corn-spirit, we are led to conjecture that we have here another trace of the custom of annually slaying one of those divine or priestly kings who are known to have held ghostly sway in many parts of Western Asia and particularly in Phrygia. The custom appears, as we have seen, to have been so far modified in places that the king's son was slain in the king's stead. Of the custom thus modified the story of Lityerses would be, in one version at least, a reminiscence.

Turning now to the relation of the Phrygian Lityerses to the Phrygian Attis, it may be remembered that at Pessinus—the seat of a priestly kingship—the high-priest appears to have been annually slain in the character of Attis, a god of vegetation, and that Attis was described by an ancient authority as “a reaped ear of corn.” Thus Attis, as an embodiment of the corn-spirit, annually slain in the person of his representative, might be thought to be ultimately identical with Lityerses, the latter being simply the rustic prototype out of which the state religion of Attis was developed. It may have been so; but, on the other hand, the analogy of European folk-custom warns us that amongst the same people two distinct deities

of vegetation may have their separate personal representatives, both of whom are slain in the character of gods at different times of the year. For in Europe, as we have seen, it appears that one man was commonly slain in the character of the tree-spirit in spring, and another in the character of the corn-spirit in autumn. It may have been so in Phrygia also. Attis was especially a tree-god, and his connexion with corn may have been only such an extension of the power of a tree-spirit as is indicated in customs like the Harvest-May. Again, the representative of Attis appears to have been slain in spring, whereas Lityerses must have been slain in summer or autumn, according to the time of the harvest in Phrygia. On the whole, then, while we are not justified in regarding Lityerses as the prototype of Attis, the two may be regarded as parallel products of the same religious idea, and may have stood to each other as in Europe the Old Man of harvest stands to the Wild Man, the Leaf Man, and so forth, of spring. Both were spirits or deities of vegetation, and the personal representatives of both were annually slain. But whereas the Attis worship became elevated into the dignity of a state religion and spread to Italy, the rites of Lityerses seem never to have passed the limits of their native Phrygia, and always retained their character of rustic ceremonies performed by peasants on the harvest-field. At most a few villages may have clubbed together, as amongst the Khonds, to procure a human victim to be slain as representative of the corn-spirit for their common benefit. Such victims may have been drawn from the families of priestly kings or kinglets, which would account for the legendary character of Lityerses as the son of a Phrygian king or as himself a king. When villages did not so club together, each village or farm may have procured its own representative of the corn-spirit by dooming to death either a passing stranger or the harvester who cut, bound, or threshed the last sheaf. Perhaps in the olden time the practice of head-hunting as a means of promoting the growth of the corn may have been as common among the rude inhabitants of Europe and Western Asia as it still is, or was till lately, among the primitive agricultural tribes of Assam, Burma, the Philippine Islands, and the Indian Archipelago. It is hardly necessary to add that in Phrygia, as in Europe, the old barbarous custom of killing a man on the harvest-field or the threshing-floor had doubtless passed into a mere pretence long before the classical era, and was probably regarded by the reapers and threshers themselves as no more than a rough jest which the license of a harvest-home permitted them to play off on a passing stranger, a comrade, or even on their master himself.

I have dwelt on the Lityerses song at length because it affords so many points of comparison with European and savage folk-custom. The other harvest songs of Western Asia and Egypt, to which attention has been called above, may now be dismissed much more briefly. The similarity of the Bithynian Bormus to the Phrygian Lityerses helps to bear out the interpretation which has been given of the latter.



Bormus, whose death or rather disappearance was annually mourned by the reapers in a plaintive song, was, like Lityerses, a king's son or at least the son of a wealthy and distinguished man. The reapers whom he watched were at work on his own fields, and he disappeared in going to fetch water for them, according to one version of the story he was carried off by the nymphs, doubtless the nymphs of the spring or pool or river whither he went to draw water. Viewed in the light of the Lityerses story and of European folk-custom, this disappearance of Bormus may be a reminiscence of the custom of binding the farmer himself in a corn-sheaf and throwing him into the water. The mournful strain which the reapers sang was probably a lamentation over the death of the corn-spirit, slain either in the cut corn or in the person of a human representative, and the call which they addressed to him may have been a prayer that he might return in fresh vigour next year.

The Phœnician Linus song was sung at the vintage, at least in the west of Asia Minor, as we learn from Homer, and this, combined with the legend of Syleus, suggests that in ancient times passing strangers were handled by vintagers and vine-diggers in much the same way as they are said to have been handled by the reaper Lityerses. The Lydian Syleus, so ran the legend, compelled passers-by to dig for him in his vineyard, till Hercules came and killed him and dug up his vines by the roots. This seems to be the outline of a legend like that of Lityerses, but neither ancient writers nor modern folk-custom enable us to fill in the details. But, further, the Linus song was probably sung also by Phœnician reapers, for Herodotus compares it to the Maneros song, which, as we have seen, was a lament raised by Egyptian reapers over the cut corn. Further, Linus was identified with Adonis, and Adonis has some claims to be regarded as especially a corn-deity. Thus the Linus lament, as sung at harvest, would be identical with the Adonis lament, each would be the lamentation raised by reapers over the dead spirit of the corn. But whereas Adonis, like Attis, grew into a stately figure of mythology, adored and mourned in splendid cities far beyond the limits of his Phœnician home, Linus appears to have remained a simple ditty sung by reapers and vintagers among the corn-sheaves and the vines. The analogy of Lityerses and of folk-custom, both European and savage, suggests that in Phœnicia the slain corn-spirit—the dead Adonis—may formerly have been represented by a human victim, and this suggestion is possibly supported by the Harran legend that Tammuz (Adonis) was slain by his cruel lord, who ground his bones in a mill and scattered them to the wind. For in Mexico, as we have seen, the human victim at harvest was crushed between two stones, and both in Africa and India the ashes or other remains of the victim were scattered over the fields. But the Harran legend may be only a mythical way of expressing the grinding of corn in the mill and the scattering of the seed. It seems worth suggesting that the mock king who was annually killed at the Babylonian festival of the Sacae

on the sixteenth day of the month Lous may have represented Tammuz himself. For the historian Berosus, who records the festival and its date, probably used the Macedonian calendar, since he dedicated his history to Antiochus Soter, and in his day the Macedonian month Lous appears to have corresponded to the Babylonian month Tammuz. If this conjecture is right, the view that the mock king at the Sacaea was slain in the character of a god would be established.

There is a good deal more evidence that in Egypt the slain corn-spirit—the dead Osiris—was represented by a human victim, whom the reapers slew on the harvest-field, mourning his death in a dirge, to which the Greeks, through a verbal misunderstanding, gave the name of *Maneros*. For the legend of *Busiris* seems to preserve a reminiscence of human sacrifices once offered by the Egyptians in connexion with the worship of Osiris. *Busiris* was said to have been an Egyptian king who sacrificed all strangers on the altar of Zeus. The origin of the custom was traced to a dearth which afflicted the land of Egypt for nine years. A Cyprian seer informed *Busiris* that the dearth would cease if a man were annually sacrificed to Zeus. So *Busiris* instituted the sacrifice. But when *Hercules* came to Egypt, and was being dragged to the altar to be sacrificed, he burst his bonds and slew *Busiris* and his son. Here then is a legend that in Egypt a human victim was annually sacrificed to prevent the failure of the crops, and a belief is implied that an omission of the sacrifice would have entailed a recurrence of that infertility which it was the object of the sacrifice to prevent. So the *Pawnees*, as we have seen, believed that an omission of the human sacrifice at planting would have been followed by a total failure of their crops. The name *Busiris* was in reality the name of a city, *pe-Asar*, “the house of Osiris,” the city being so called because it contained the grave of Osiris. Indeed some high modern authorities believe that *Busiris* was the original home of Osiris, from which his worship spread to other parts of Egypt. The human sacrifices were said to have been offered at his grave, and the victims were red-haired men, whose ashes were scattered abroad by means of winnowing-fans. This tradition of human sacrifices offered at the tomb of Osiris is confirmed by the evidence of the monuments.

In the light of the foregoing discussion the Egyptian tradition of *Busiris* admits of a consistent and fairly probable explanation. *Osiris*, the corn-spirit, was annually represented at harvest by a stranger, whose red hair made him a suitable representative of the ripe corn. This man, in his representative character, was slain on the harvest-field, and mourned by the reapers, who prayed at the same time that the corn-spirit might revive and return (*mââ-ne-rha*, *Maneros*) with renewed vigour in the following year. Finally, the victim, or some part of him, was burned, and the ashes scattered by winnowing-fans over the fields to fertilise them. Here the choice of the victim on the ground of his resemblance to the corn which he was to represent agrees with the Mexican and African customs already described. Similarly the woman who died in the character of the Corn-mother at the Mexican

midsummer sacrifice had her face painted red and yellow in token of the colours of the corn, and she wore a pasteboard mitre surmounted by waving plumes in imitation of the tassel of the maize. On the other hand, at the festival of the Goddess of the White Maize the Mexicans sacrificed lepers. The Romans sacrificed red-haired puppies in spring to avert the supposed blighting influence of the Dog-star, believing that the crops would thus grow ripe and ruddy. The heathen of Harran offered to the sun, moon, and planets human victims who were chosen on the ground of their supposed resemblance to the heavenly bodies to which they were sacrificed, for example, the priests, clothed in red and smeared with blood, offered a red-haired, red-cheeked man to "the red planet Mars" in a temple which was painted red and draped with red hangings. These and the like cases of assimilating the victim to the god, or to the natural phenomenon which he represents, are based ultimately on the principle of homoeopathic or imitative magic, the notion being that the object aimed at will be most readily attained by means of a sacrifice which resembles the effect that it is designed to bring about.

The story that the fragments of Osiris's body were scattered up and down the land, and buried by Isis on the spots where they lay, may very well be a reminiscence of a custom, like that observed by the Khonds, of dividing the human victim in pieces and burying the pieces, often at intervals of many miles from each other, in the fields.

Thus, if I am right, the key to the mysteries of Osiris is furnished by the melancholy cry of the Egyptian reapers, which down to Roman times could be heard year after year sounding across the fields, announcing the death of the corn-spirit, the rustic prototype of Osiris. Similar cries, as we have seen, were also heard on all the harvest-fields of Western Asia. By the ancients they are spoken of as songs, but to judge from the analysis of the names *Linus* and *Maneros*, they probably consisted only of a few words uttered in a prolonged musical note which could be heard at a great distance. Such sonorous and long-drawn cries, raised by a number of strong voices in concert, must have had a striking effect, and could hardly fail to arrest the attention of any wayfarer who happened to be within hearing. The sounds, repeated again and again, could probably be distinguished with tolerable ease even at a distance, but to a Greek traveller in Asia or Egypt the foreign words would commonly convey no meaning, and he might take them, not unnaturally, for the name of some one (*Maneros*, *Linus*, *Lityerses*, *Bormus*) upon whom the reapers were calling. And if his journey led him through more countries than one, as *Bithynia* and *Phrygia*, or *Phoenicia* and *Egypt*, while the corn was being reaped, he would have an opportunity of comparing the various harvest cries of the different peoples. Thus we can readily understand why these harvest cries were so often noted and compared with each other by the Greeks. Whereas, if they had been regular songs, they could not have been heard at such distances, and therefore could not have attracted the attention of so many travellers, and, moreover, even if

the wayfarer were within hearing of them, he could not so easily have picked out the words.

Down to recent times Devonshire reapers uttered cries of the same sort, and performed on the field a ceremony exactly analogous to that in which, if I am not mistaken, the rites of Osiris originated. The cry and the ceremony are thus described by an observer who wrote in the first half of the nineteenth century: "After the wheat is all cut, on most farms in the north of Devon, the harvest people have a custom of 'crying the neck.' I believe that this practice is seldom omitted on any large farm in that part of the country. It is done in this way. An old man, or some one else well acquainted with the ceremonies used on the occasion (when the labourers are reaping the last field of wheat), goes round to the shocks and sheaves, and picks out a little bundle of all the best ears he can find, this bundle he ties up very neat and trim, and plats and arranges the straws very tastefully. This is called 'the neck' of wheat, or wheaten-ears. After the field is cut out, and the pitcher once more circulated, the reapers, binders, and the women stand round in a circle. The person with 'the neck' stands in the centre, grasping it with both his hands. He first stoops and holds it near the ground, and all the men forming the ring take off their hats, stooping and holding them with both hands towards the ground. They then all begin at once in a very prolonged and harmonious tone to cry 'The neck!' at the same time slowly raising themselves upright, and elevating their arms and hats above their heads, the person with 'the neck' also raising it on high. This is done three times. They then change their cry to 'Wee yen!'—'Way yen!'—which they sound in the same prolonged and slow manner as before, with singular harmony and effect, three times. This last cry is accompanied by the same movements of the body and arms as in crying 'the neck' . . . After having thus repeated 'the neck' three times, and 'wee yen' or 'way yen' as often, they all burst out into a kind of loud and joyous laugh, flinging up their hats and caps into the air, capering about and perhaps kissing the girls. One of them then gets 'the neck' and runs as hard as he can down to the farmhouse, where the dairymaid, or one of the young female domestics, stands at the door prepared with a pail of water. If he who holds 'the neck' can manage to get into the house, in any way unseen, or openly, by any other way than the door at which the girl stands with the pail of water, then he may lawfully kiss her, but, if otherwise, he is regularly soused with the contents of the bucket. On a fine still autumn evening the 'crying of the neck' has a wonderful effect at a distance, far finer than that of the Turkish muezzin, which Lord Byron eulogises so much, and which he says is preferable to all the bells in Christendom. I have once or twice heard upwards of twenty men cry it, and sometimes joined by an equal number of female voices. About three years back, on some high grounds, where our people were harvesting, I heard six or seven 'necks' cried in one night, although I know that some of them were four miles off. They are heard through the quiet evening air at a

considerable distance sometimes." Again, Mrs. Bray tells how, travelling in Devonshire, "she saw a party of reapers standing in a circle on a rising ground, holding their sickles aloft. One in the middle held up some ears of corn tied together with flowers, and the party shouted three times (what she writes as) 'Arnack, arnack, arnack, we haven, we haven, we haven.' They went home, accompanied by women and children carrying boughs of flowers, shouting and singing. The manservant who attended Mrs Bray said 'it was only the people making their games, as they always did, *to the spirit of harvest*'" Here, as Miss Burne remarks, "'arnack, we haven!' is obviously in the Devon dialect, 'a neck (or nack) ! we have un !'"

Another account of this old custom, written at Truro in 1839, runs thus "Now, when all the corn was cut at Helgan, the farming men and maidens come in front of the house, and bring with them a small sheaf of corn, the last that has been cut, and this is adorned with ribbons and flowers, and one part is tied quite tight, so as to look like a neck. Then they cry out 'Our (my) side, my side,' as loud as they can, then the dairymaid gives the neck to the head farming-man. He takes it, and says, very loudly three times, 'I have him, I have him, I have him.' Then another farming-man shouts very loudly, 'What have ye? what have ye? what have ye?' Then the first says, 'A neck, a neck, a neck.' And when he has said this, all the people make a very great shouting. Thus they do three times, and after one famous shout go away and eat supper, and dance, and sing songs." According to another account, "all went out to the field when the last corn was cut, the 'neck' was tied with ribbons and plaited, and they danced round it, and carried it to the great kitchen, where by-and-by the supper was. The words were as given in the previous account, and 'Hip, hip, hack, heck, I have 'ee, I have 'ee, I have 'ee.' It was hung up in the hall." Another account relates that one of the men rushed from the field with the last sheaf, while the rest pursued him with vessels of water, which they tried to throw over the sheaf before it could be brought into the barn.

In the foregoing customs a particular bunch of ears, generally the last left standing, is conceived as the neck of the corn-spirit, who is consequently beheaded when the bunch is cut down. Similarly in Shropshire the name "neck," or "the gander's neck," used to be commonly given to the last handful of ears left standing in the middle of the field when all the rest of the corn was cut. It was plaited together, and the reapers, standing ten or twenty paces off, threw their sickles at it. Whoever cut it through was said to have cut off the gander's neck. The "neck" was taken to the farmer's wife, who was supposed to keep it in the house for good luck till the next harvest came round. Near Trèves, the man who reaps the last standing corn "cuts the goat's neck off." At Faslane, on the Gareloch (Dumbartonshire), the last handful of standing corn was sometimes called the "head." At Aurich, in East Friesland, the man who reaps the last corn "cuts the hare's tail off." In mowing down the last corner of a

field French reapers sometimes call out, "We have the cat by the tail" In Bresse (Bourgogne) the last sheaf represented the fox. Beside it a score of ears were left standing to form the tail, and each reaper, going back some paces, threw his sickle at it. He who succeeded in severing it "cut off the fox's tail," and a cry of "*You cou cou!*" was raised in his honour. These examples leave no room to doubt the meaning of the Devonshire and Cornish expression "the neck," as applied to the last sheaf. The corn-spirit is conceived in human or animal form, and the last standing corn is part of its body—its neck, its head, or its tail. Sometimes, as we have seen, the last corn is regarded as the navel-string. Lastly, the Devonshire custom of drenching with water the person who brings in "the neck" is a rain-charm, such as we have had many examples of. Its parallel in the mysteries of Osiris was the custom of pouring water on the image of Osiris or on the person who represented him.

## CHAPTER XLVIII

### THE CORN-SPIRIT AS AN ANIMAL

§ 1. *Animal Embodiments of the Corn-spirit*.—In some of the examples which I have cited to establish the meaning of the term "neck" as applied to the last sheaf, the corn-spirit appears in animal form as a gander, a goat, a hare, a cat, and a fox. This introduces us to a new aspect of the corn-spirit, which we must now examine. By doing so we shall not only have fresh examples of killing the god, but may hope also to clear up some points which remain obscure in the myths and worship of Adonis, Attis, Osiris, Dionysus, Demeter, and Virbius.

Amongst the many animals whose forms the corn-spirit is supposed to take are the wolf, dog, hare, fox, cock, goose, quail, cat, goat, cow (ox, bull), pig, and horse. In one or other of these shapes the corn-spirit is often believed to be present in the corn, and to be caught or killed in the last sheaf. As the corn is being cut the animal flees before the reapers, and if a reaper is taken ill on the field, he is supposed to have stumbled unwittingly on the corn-spirit, who has thus punished the profane intruder. It is said "The Rye-wolf has got hold of him," "The Harvest-goat has given him a push." The person who cuts the last corn or binds the last sheaf gets the name of the animal, as the Rye-wolf, the Rye-sow, the Oats-goat, and so forth, and retains the name sometimes for a year. Also the animal is frequently represented by a puppet made out of the last sheaf or of wood, flowers, and so on, which is carried home amid rejoicings on the last harvest-waggon. Even where the last sheaf is not made up in animal shape, it is often called the Rye-wolf, the Hare, Goat, and so forth. Generally each kind of crop is supposed to have its special animal, which is caught in the last sheaf, and called the Rye-wolf,

the Barley-wolf, the Oats-wolf, the Pea-wolf, or the Potato-wolf, according to the crop, but sometimes the figure of the animal is only made up once for all at getting in the last crop of the whole harvest. Sometimes the creature is believed to be killed by the last stroke of the sickle or scythe. But oftener it is thought to live so long as there is corn still unthreshed, and to be caught in the last sheaf threshed. Hence the man who gives the last stroke with the flail is told that he has got the Corn-sow, the Threshing-dog, or the like. When the threshing is finished, a puppet is made in the form of the animal, and this is carried by the thresher of the last sheaf to a neighbouring farm, where the threshing is still going on. This again shows that the corn-spirit is believed to live wherever the corn is still being threshed. Sometimes the thresher of the last sheaf himself represents the animal, and if the people of the next farm, who are still threshing, catch him, they treat him like the animal he represents, by shutting him up in the pig-sty, calling him with the cries commonly addressed to pigs, and so forth. These general statements will now be illustrated by examples.

§ 2 *The Corn-spirit as a Wolf or a Dog* —We begin with the corn-spirit conceived as a wolf or a dog. This conception is common in France, Germany, and Slavonic countries. Thus, when the wind sets the corn in wave-like motion the peasants often say, "The Wolf is going over, or through, the corn," "The Rye-wolf is rushing over the field," "The Wolf is in the corn," "The mad Dog is in the corn," "The big Dog is there." When children wish to go into the corn-fields to pluck ears or gather the blue corn-flowers, they are warned not to do so, for "The big Dog sits in the corn," or "The Wolf sits in the corn, and will tear you in pieces," "The Wolf will eat you." The wolf against whom the children are warned is not a common wolf, for he is often spoken of as the Corn-wolf, Rye-wolf, or the like, thus they say, "The Rye-wolf will come and eat you up, children," "The Rye-wolf will carry you off," and so forth. Still he has all the outward appearance of a wolf. For in the neighbourhood of Feilenhof (East Prussia), when a wolf was seen running through a field, the peasants used to watch whether he carried his tail in the air or dragged it on the ground. If he dragged it on the ground, they went after him, and thanked him for bringing them a blessing, and even set tit-bits before him. But if he carried his tail high, they cursed him and tried to kill him. Here the wolf is the corn-spirit whose fertilising power is in his tail.

Both dog and wolf appear as embodiments of the corn-spirit in harvest-customs. Thus in some parts of Silesia the person who cuts or binds the last sheaf is called the Wheat-dog or the Peas-pug. But it is in the harvest-customs of the north-east of France that the idea of the Corn-dog comes out most clearly. Thus when a harvester, through sickness, weariness, or laziness, cannot or will not keep up with the reaper in front of him, they say, "The White Dog passed near him," "He has the White Bitch," or "The White Bitch has

bitten him " In the Vosges the Harvest-May is called the " Dog of the harvest," and the person who cuts the last handful of hay or wheat is said to " kill the Dog " About Lons-le-Saulnier, in the Jura, the last sheaf is called the Bitch In the neighbourhood of Verdun the regular expression for finishing the reaping is, " They are going to kill the Dog ", and at Epinal they say, according to the crop, " We will kill the Wheat-dog, or the Rye-dog, or the Potato-dog " In Lorraine it is said of the man who cuts the last corn, " He is killing the Dog of the harvest " At Dux, in the Tyrol, the man who gives the last stroke at threshing is said to " strike down the Dog "; and at Ahnebergen, near Stade, he is called, according to the crop, Corn-pug, Rye-pug, Wheat-pug

So with the wolf In Silesia, when the reapers gather round the last patch of standing corn to reap it they are said to be about " to catch the Wolf " In various parts of Mecklenburg, where the belief in the Corn-wolf is particularly prevalent, every one fears to cut the last corn, because they say that the Wolf is sitting in it ; hence every reaper exerts himself to the utmost in order not to be the last, and every woman similarly fears to bind the last sheaf because " the Wolf is in it " So both among the reapers and the binders there is a competition not to be the last to finish And in Germany generally it appears to be a common saying that " the Wolf sits in the last sheaf " In some places they call out to the reaper, " Beware of the Wolf "; or they say, " He is chasing the Wolf out of the corn " In Mecklenburg the last bunch of standing corn is itself commonly called the Wolf, and the man who reaps it " has the Wolf," the animal being described as the Rye-wolf, the Wheat-wolf, the Barley-wolf, and so on according to the particular crop The reaper of the last corn is himself called Wolf or the Rye-wolf, if the crop is rye, and in many parts of Mecklenburg he has to support the character by pretending to bite the other harvesters or by howling like a wolf The last sheaf of corn is also called the Wolf or the Rye-wolf or the Oats-wolf according to the crop, and of the woman who binds it they say, " The Wolf is biting her," " She has the Wolf," " She must fetch the Wolf " (out of the corn) Moreover, she herself is called Wolf , they cry out to her, " Thou art the Wolf," and she has to bear the name for a whole year , sometimes, according to the crop, she is called the Rye-wolf or the Potato-wolf In the island of Rugen not only is the woman who binds the last sheaf called Wolf, but when she comes home she bites the lady of the house and the stewardess, for which she receives a large piece of meat Yet nobody likes to be the Wolf The same woman may be Rye-wolf, Wheat-wolf, and Oats-wolf, if she happens to bind the last sheaf of rye, wheat, and oats. At Buir, in the district of Cologne, it was formerly the custom to give to the last sheaf the shape of a wolf It was kept in the barn till all the corn was threshed Then it was brought to the farmer and he had to sprinkle it with beer or brandy. At Brunshaupten in Mecklenburg the young woman who bound the last sheaf of wheat



used to take a handful of stalks out of it and make "the Wheat-wolf" with them; it was the figure of a wolf about two feet long and half a foot high, the legs of the animal being represented by stiff stalks and its tail and mane by wheat-ears. This Wheat-wolf she carried back at the head of the harvesters to the village, where it was set up on a high place in the parlour of the farm and remained there for a long time. In many places the sheaf called the Wolf is made up in human form and dressed in clothes. This indicates a confusion of ideas between the corn-spirit conceived in human and in animal form. Generally the Wolf is brought home on the last waggon with joyful cries. Hence the last waggon-load itself receives the name of the Wolf.

Again, the Wolf is supposed to hide himself amongst the cut corn in the granary, until he is driven out of the last bundle by the strokes of the flail. Hence at Wanzleben, near Magdeburg, after the threshing the peasants go in procession, leading by a chain a man who is enveloped in the threshed-out straw and is called the Wolf. He represents the corn-spirit who has been caught escaping from the threshed corn. In the district of Treves it is believed that the Corn-wolf is killed at threshing. The men thresh the last sheaf till it is reduced to chopped straw. In this way they think that the Corn-wolf, who was lurking in the last sheaf, has been certainly killed.

In France also the Corn-wolf appears at harvest. Thus they call out to the reaper of the last corn, "You will catch the Wolf." Near Chambéry they form a ring round the last standing corn, and cry, "The Wolf is in there." In Finisterre, when the reaping draws near an end, the harvesters cry, "There is the Wolf, we will catch him." Each takes a swath to reap, and he who finishes first calls out, "I've caught the Wolf." In Guyenne, when the last corn has been reaped, they lead a wether all round the field. It is called "the Wolf of the field." Its horns are decked with a wreath of flowers and corn-ears, and its neck and body are also encircled with garlands and ribbons. All the reapers march, singing, behind it. Then it is killed on the field. In this part of France the last sheaf is called the *coujou-lage*, which, in the patois, means a wether. Hence the killing of the wether represents the death of the corn-spirit, considered as present in the last sheaf; but two different conceptions of the corn-spirit—as a wolf and as a wether—are mixed up together.

Sometimes it appears to be thought that the Wolf, caught in the last corn, lives during the winter in the farmhouse, ready to renew his activity as corn-spirit in the spring. Hence at midwinter, when the lengthening days begin to herald the approach of spring, the Wolf makes his appearance once more. In Poland a man, with a wolf's skin thrown over his head, is led about at Christmas, or a stuffed wolf is carried about by persons who collect money. There are facts which point to an old custom of leading about a man enveloped in leaves and called the Wolf, while his conductors collected money.

§ 3. *The Corn-spirit as a Cock*—Another form which the corn-

spirit often assumes is that of a cock. In Austria children are warned against straying in the corn-fields, because the Corn-cock sits there, and will peck their eyes out. In North Germany they say that "the Cock sits in the last sheaf", and at cutting the last corn the reapers cry, "Now we will chase out the Cock". When it is cut they say, "We have caught the Cock". At Braller, in Transylvania, when the reapers come to the last patch of corn, they cry, "Here we shall catch the Cock". At Furstenwalde, when the last sheaf is about to be bound, the master releases a cock, which he has brought in a basket, and lets it run over the field. All the harvesters chase it till they catch it. Elsewhere the harvesters all try to seize the last corn cut, he who succeeds in grasping it must crow, and is called Cock. Among the Wends it is or used to be customary for the farmer to hide a live cock under the last sheaf as it lay on the field, and when the corn was being gathered up, the harvester who lighted upon this sheaf had a right to keep the cock, provided he could catch it. This formed the close of the harvest-festival and was known as "the Cock-catching," and the beer which was served out to the reapers at this time went by the name of "Cock-beer". The last sheaf is called Cock, Cock-sheaf, Harvest-cock, Harvest-hen, Autumn-hen. A distinction is made between a Wheat-cock, Bean-cock, and so on, according to the crop. At Wunschensuhl, in Thuringen, the last sheaf is made into the shape of a cock, and called the Harvest-cock. A figure of a cock, made of wood, pasteboard, ears of corn, or flowers, is borne in front of the harvest-waggon, especially in Westphalia, where the cock carries in his beak fruits of the earth of all kinds. Sometimes the image of the cock is fastened to the top of a May-tree on the last harvest-waggon. Elsewhere a live cock, or a figure of one, is attached to a harvest-crown and carried on a pole. In Galicia and elsewhere this live cock is fastened to the garland of corn-ears or flowers, which the leader of the women-reapers carries on her head as she marches in front of the harvest procession. In Silesia a live cock is presented to the master on a plate. The harvest-supper is called Harvest-cock, Stubble-cock, etc., and a chief dish at it, at least in some places, is a cock. If a waggoner upsets a harvest-waggon, it is said that "he has spilt the Harvest cock," and he loses the cock, that is, the harvest-supper. The harvest-waggon, with the figure of the cock on it, is driven round the farmhouse before it is taken to the barn. Then the cock is nailed over or at the side of the house-door, or on the gable, and remains there till next harvest. In East Friesland the person who gives the last stroke at threshing is called the Clucking-hen, and grain is stiewed before him as if he were a hen.

Again, the corn-spirit is killed in the form of a cock. In parts of Germany, Hungary, Poland, and Picardy the reapers place a live cock in the corn which is to be cut last, and chase it over the field, or bury it up to the neck in the ground, afterwards they strike off its head with a sickle or scythe. In many parts of Westphalia, when the harvesters bring the wooden cock to the farmer, he gives them a

live cock, which they kill with whips or sticks, or behead with an old sword, or throw into the barn to the girls, or give to the mistress to cook. If the harvest-cock has not been spilt—that is, if no waggon has been upset—the harvesters have the right to kill the farmyard cock by throwing stones at it or beheading it. Where this custom has fallen into disuse, it is still common for the farmer's wife to make cockie-leekie for the harvesters, and to show them the head of the cock which has been killed for the soup. In the neighbourhood of Klausenburg, Transylvania, a cock is buried on the harvest-field in the earth, so that only its head appears. A young man then takes a scythe and cuts off the cock's head at a single sweep. If he fails to do this, he is called the Red Cock for a whole year, and people fear that next year's crop will be bad. Near Udvarhely, in Transylvania, a live cock is bound up in the last sheaf and killed with a spit. It is then skinned. The flesh is thrown away, but the skin and feathers are kept till next year, and in spring the grain from the last sheaf is mixed with the feathers of the cock and scattered on the field which is to be tilled. Nothing could set in a clearer light the identification of the cock with the spirit of the corn. By being tied up in the last sheaf and killed, the cock is identified with the corn, and its death with the cutting of the corn. By keeping its feathers till spring, then mixing them with the seed-corn taken from the very sheaf in which the bird had been bound, and scattering the feathers together with the seed over the field, the identity of the bird with the corn is again emphasised, and its quickening and fertilising power, as an embodiment of the corn-spirit, is intimated in the plainest manner. Thus the corn-spirit, in the form of a cock, is killed at harvest, but rises to fresh life and activity in spring. Again, the equivalence of the cock to the corn is expressed, hardly less plainly, in the custom of burying the bird in the ground, and cutting off its head (like the ears of corn) with the scythe.

§ 4 *The Corn-spirit as a Hare*—Another common embodiment of the corn-spirit is the hare. In Galloway the reaping of the last standing corn is called "cutting the Hare." The mode of cutting it is as follows. When the rest of the corn has been reaped, a handful is left standing to form the Hare. It is divided into three parts and plaited, and the ears are tied in a knot. The reapers then retire a few yards and each throws his or her sickle in turn at the Hare to cut it down. It must be cut below the knot, and the reapers continue to throw their sickles at it, one after the other, until one of them succeeds in severing the stalks below the knot. The Hare is then carried home and given to a maidservant in the kitchen, who places it over the kitchen-door on the inside. Sometimes the Hare used to be thus kept till the next harvest. In the parish of Minnigaff, when the Hare was cut, the unmarried reapers ran home with all speed, and the one who arrived first was the first to be married. In Germany also one of the names for the last sheaf is the Hare. Thus in some parts of Anhalt, when the corn has been reaped and only a few stalks are

left standing, they say, "The Hare will soon come," or the reapers cry to each other, "Look how the Hare comes jumping out" In East Prussia they say that the Hare sits in the last patch of standing corn, and must be chased out by the last reaper. The reapers hurry with their work, each being anxious not to have "to chase out the Hare"; for the man who does so, that is, who cuts the last corn, is much laughed at. At Aurich, as we have seen, an expression for cutting the last corn is "to cut off the Hare's tail" "He is killing the Hare" is commonly said of the man who cuts the last corn in Germany, Sweden, Holland, France, and Italy In Norway the man who is thus said to "kill the Hare" must give "hare's blood" in the form of brandy to his fellows to drink In Lesbos, when the reapers are at work in two neighbouring fields, each party tries to finish first in order to drive the Hare into their neighbour's field, the reapers who succeed in doing so believe that next year the crop will be better. A small sheaf of corn is made up and kept beside the holy picture till next harvest

§ 5 *The Corn-spirit as a Cat*—Again, the corn-spirit sometimes takes the form of a cat Near Kiel children are warned not to go into the corn-fields because "the Cat sits there." In the Eisenach Oberland they are told "The Corn-cat will come and fetch you," "The Corn-cat goes in the corn" In some parts of Silesia at mowing the last corn they say, "The Cat is caught", and at threshing, the man who gives the last stroke is called the Cat In the neighbourhood of Lyons the last sheaf and the harvest-supper are both called the Cat About Vesoul when they cut the last corn they say, "We have the Cat by the tail" At Briançon, in Dauphiné, at the beginning of reaping, a cat is decked out with ribbons, flowers, and ears of corn It is called the Cat of the ball-skin (*le chat de peau de balle*) If a reaper is wounded at his work, they make the cat lick the wound At the close of the reaping the cat is again decked out with ribbons and ears of corn, then they dance and make merry When the dance is over the girls solemnly strip the cat of its finery At Gruneberg, in Silesia, the reaper who cuts the last corn goes by the name of the Tom-cat He is enveloped in rye-stalks and green withes, and is furnished with a long plaited tail Sometimes as a companion he has a man similarly dressed, who is called the (female) Cat Their duty is to run after people whom they see and to beat them with a long stick Near Amiens the expression for finishing the harvest is, "They are going to kill the Cat", and when the last corn is cut they kill a cat in the farmyard At threshing, in some parts of France, a live cat is placed under the last bundle of corn to be threshed, and is struck dead with the flails Then on Sunday it is roasted and eaten as a holiday dish In the Vosges Mountains the close of haymaking or harvest is called "catching the cat," "killing the dog," or more rarely "catching the hare" The cat, the dog, or the hare is said to be fat or lean according as the crop is good or bad The man who cuts the last handful of hay or of wheat is said to catch the cat or the hare or to kill the dog.

§ 6. *The Corn-spirit as a Goat*—Further, the corn-spirit often appears in the form of a goat. In some parts of Prussia, when the corn bends before the wind, they say, "The Goats are chasing each other," "The wind is driving the Goats through the corn," "The Goats are browsing there," and they expect a very good harvest. Again they say, "The Oats-goat is sitting in the oats-field," "The Corn-goat is sitting in the rye-field." Children are warned not to go into the corn-fields to pluck the blue corn-flowers, or amongst the beans to pluck pods, because the Rye-goat, the Corn-goat, the Oats-goat, or the Bean-goat is sitting or lying there, and will carry them away or kill them. When a harvester is taken sick or lags behind his fellows at their work, they call out, "The Harvest-goat has pushed him," "He has been pushed by the Corn-goat." In the neighbourhood of Braunsberg (East Prussia) at binding the oats every harvester makes haste "lest the Corn-goat push him." At Oefoten, in Norway, each reaper has his allotted patch to reap. When a reaper in the middle has not finished reaping his piece after his neighbours have finished theirs, they say of him, "He remains on the island." And if the laggard is a man, they imitate the cry with which they call a he-goat, if a woman, the cry with which they call a she-goat. Near Straubing, in Lower Bavaria, it is said of the man who cuts the last corn that "he has the Corn-goat, or the Wheat-goat, or the Oats-goat," according to the crop. Moreover, two horns are set up on the last heap of corn, and it is called "the horned Goat." At Kreutzburg, East Prussia, they call out to the woman who is binding the last sheaf, "The Goat is sitting in the sheaf." At Gablingen, in Swabia, when the last field of oats upon a farm is being reaped, the reapers carve a goat out of wood. Ears of oats are inserted in its nostrils and mouth, and it is adorned with garlands of flowers. It is set up on the field and called the Oats-goat. When the reaping approaches an end, each reaper hastens to finish his piece first, he who is the last to finish gets the Oats-goat. Again, the last sheaf is itself called the Goat. Thus, in the valley of the Wiesent, Bavaria, the last sheaf bound on the field is called the Goat, and they have a proverb, "The field must bear a goat." At Spachbrucken, in Hesse, the last handful of corn which is cut is called the Goat, and the man who cuts it is much ridiculed. At Durrenbuchig and about Mosbach in Baden the last sheaf is also called the Goat. Sometimes the last sheaf is made up in the form of a goat, and they say, "The Goat is sitting in it." Again, the person who cuts or binds the last sheaf is called the Goat. Thus, in parts of Mecklenburg they call out to the woman who binds the last sheaf, "You are the Harvest-goat." Near Uelzen, in Hanover, the harvest festival begins with "the bringing of the Harvest-goat"; that is, the woman who bound the last sheaf is wrapt in straw, crowned with a harvest-wreath, and brought in a wheel-barrow to the village, where a round dance takes place. About Luneburg, also, the woman who binds the last corn is decked with a crown of corn-ears and is called the Corn-goat. At Munzesheim in Baden the reaper who cuts the last handful

of corn or oats is called the Corn-goat or the Oats-goat. In the Canton St Gall, Switzerland, the person who cuts the last handful of corn on the field, or drives the last harvest-waggon to the barn, is called the Corn-goat or the Rye-goat, or simply the Goat. In the Canton Thurgau he is called Corn-goat, like a goat he has a bell hung round his neck, is led in triumph, and drenched with liquor. In parts of Styria, also, the man who cuts the last corn is called Corn-goat, Oats-goat, or the like. As a rule, the man who thus gets the name of Corn-goat has to bear it a whole year till the next harvest.

According to one view, the corn-spirit, who has been caught in the form of a goat or otherwise, lives in the farmhouse or barn over winter. Thus, each farm has its own embodiment of the corn-spirit. But, according to another view, the corn-spirit is the genius or deity, not of the corn of one farm only, but of all the corn. Hence when the corn on one farm is all cut, he flees to another where there is still corn left standing. This idea is brought out in a harvest-custom which was formerly observed in Skye. The farmer who first finished reaping sent a man or woman with a sheaf to a neighbouring farmer who had not finished, the latter in his turn, when he had finished, sent on the sheaf to his neighbour who was still reaping, and so the sheaf made the round of the farms till all the corn was cut. The sheaf was called the *goabbar bhacagh*, that is, the Cripple Goat. The custom appears not to be extinct at the present day, for it was reported from Skye not very many years ago. The corn-spirit was probably thus represented as lame because he had been crippled by the cutting of the corn. Sometimes the old woman who brings home the last sheaf must limp on one foot.

But sometimes the corn-spirit, in the form of a goat, is believed to be slain on the harvest-field by the sickle or scythe. Thus, in the neighbourhood of Bernkastel, on the Moselle, the reapers determine by lot the order in which they shall follow each other. The first is called the fore-reaper, the last the tail-bearer. If a reaper overtakes the man in front he reaps past him, bending round so as to leave the slower reaper in a patch by himself. This patch is called the Goat; and the man for whom "the Goat is cut" in this way, is laughed and jeered at by his fellows for the rest of the day. When the tail-bearer cuts the last ears of corn, it is said, "He is cutting the Goat's neck off." In the neighbourhood of Grenoble, before the end of the reaping, a live goat is adorned with flowers and ribbons and allowed to run about the field. The reapers chase it and try to catch it. When it is caught, the farmer's wife holds it fast while the farmer cuts off its head. The goat's flesh serves to furnish the harvest-supper. A piece of the flesh is pickled and kept till the next harvest, when another goat is killed. Then all the harvesters eat of the flesh. On the same day the skin of the goat is made into a cloak, which the farmer, who works with his men, must always wear at harvest-time if rain or bad weather sets in. But if a reaper gets pains in his back, the farmer gives him the goat-skin to wear. The reason for this seems to be that the pains in the

back, being inflicted by the corn-spirit, can also be healed by it. Similarly, we saw that elsewhere, when a reaper is wounded at reaping, a cat, as the representative of the corn-spirit, is made to lick the wound. Esthonian reapers in the island of Mon think that the man who cuts the first ears of corn at harvest will get pains in his back, probably because the corn-spirit is believed to resent especially the first wound, and, in order to escape pains in the back, Saxon reapers in Transylvania gird their loins with the first handful of ears which they cut. Here, again, the corn-spirit is applied to for healing or protection, but in his original vegetable form, not in the form of a goat or a cat.

Further, the corn-spirit under the form of a goat is sometimes conceived as lurking among the cut corn in the barn, till he is driven from it by the threshing-flail. Thus in Baden the last sheaf to be threshed is called the Corn-goat, the Spelt-goat, or the Oats-goat according to the kind of grain. Again, near Marktl, in Upper Bavaria, the sheaves are called Straw-goats or simply Goats. They are laid in a great heap on the open field and threshed by two rows of men standing opposite each other, who, as they ply their flails, sing a song in which they say that they see the Straw-goat amongst the corn-stalks. The last Goat, that is, the last sheaf, is adorned with a wreath of violets and other flowers and with cakes strung together. It is placed right in the middle of the heap. Some of the threshers rush at it and tear the best of it out, others lay on with their flails so recklessly that heads are sometimes broken. At Oberinntal, in the Tyrol, the last thresher is called Goat. So at Haselberg, in West Bohemia, the man who gives the last stroke at threshing oats is called the Oats-goat. At Tettnang, in Wurtemberg, the thresher who gives the last stroke to the last bundle of corn before it is turned goes by the name of the He-goat, and it is said, "He has driven the He-goat away." The person who, after the bundle has been turned, gives the last stroke of all, is called the She-goat. In this custom it is implied that the corn is inhabited by a pair of corn-spirits, male and female.

Further, the corn-spirit, captured in the form of a goat at threshing, is passed on to a neighbour whose threshing is not yet finished. In Franche Comté, as soon as the threshing is over, the young people set up a straw figure of a goat on the farmyard of a neighbour who is still threshing. He must give them wine or money in return. At Ellwangen, in Wurtemberg, the effigy of a goat is made out of the last bundle of corn at threshing, four sticks form its legs, and two its horns. The man who gives the last stroke with the flail must carry the Goat to the barn of a neighbour who is still threshing and throw it down on the floor, if he is caught in the act, they tie the Goat on his back. A similar custom is observed at Indersdorf, in Upper Bavaria, the man who throws the straw Goat into the neighbour's barn imitates the bleating of a goat, if they catch him, they blacken his face and tie the Goat on his back. At Saverne, in Alsace, when

a farmer is a week or more behind his neighbours with his threshing, they set a real stuffed goat or fox before his door.

Sometimes the spirit of the corn in goat form is believed to be killed at threshing. In the district of Traunstein, Upper Bavaria, they think that the Oats-goat is in the last sheaf of oats. He is represented by an old rake set up on end, with an old pot for a head. The children are then told to kill the Oats-goat.

§ 7 *The Corn-spirit as a Bull, Cow, or Ox*—Another form which the corn-spirit often assumes is that of a bull, cow, or ox. When the wind sweeps over the corn they say at Comitz, in West Prussia, "The Steer is running in the corn", when the corn is thick and strong in one spot, they say in some parts of East Prussia, "The Bull is lying in the corn". When a harvester has overstrained and lamed himself, they say in the Graudenz district of West Prussia, "The Bull pushed him", in Lorraine they say, "He has the Bull". The meaning of both expressions is that he has unwittingly lighted upon the divine corn-spirit, who has punished the profane intruder with lameness. So near Chambéry when a reaper wounds himself with his sickle, it is said that he has "the wound of the Ox." In the district of Bunzlau (Silesia) the last sheaf is sometimes made into the shape of a horned ox, stuffed with tow and wrapt in corn-ears. This figure is called the Old Man. In some parts of Bohemia the last sheaf is made up in human form and called the Buffalo-bull. These cases show a confusion of the human with the animal shape of the corn-spirit. The confusion is like that of killing a wether under the name of a wolf. All over Swabia the last bundle of corn on the field is called the Cow; the man who cuts the last ears "has the Cow," and is himself called Cow or Barley-cow or Oats-cow, according to the crop; at the harvest-supper he gets a nosegay of flowers and corn-ears and a more liberal allowance of drink than the rest. But he is teased and laughed at, so no one likes to be the Cow. The Cow was sometimes represented by the figure of a woman made out of ears of corn and corn-flowers. It was carried to the farmhouse by the man who had cut the last handful of corn. The children ran after him and the neighbours turned out to laugh at him, till the farmer took the Cow from him. Here again the confusion between the human and the animal form of the corn-spirit is apparent. In various parts of Switzerland the reaper who cuts the last ears of corn is called Wheat-cow, Corn-cow, Oats-cow, or Corn-steer, and is the butt of many a joke. On the other hand, in the district of Rosenheim, Upper Bavaria, when a farmer is later of getting in his harvest than his neighbours, they set up on his land a Straw-bull, as it is called. This is a gigantic figure of a bull made of stubble on a framework of wood and adorned with flowers and leaves. Attached to it is a label on which are scrawled doggerel verses in ridicule of the man on whose land the Straw-bull is set up.

Again, the corn-spirit in the form of a bull or ox is killed on the harvest-field at the close of the reaping. At Pouilly, near Dijon,



when the last ears of corn are about to be cut, an ox adorned with ribbons, flowers, and ears of corn is led all round the field, followed by the whole troop of reapers dancing. Then a man disguised as the Devil cuts the last ears of corn and immediately slaughters the ox. Part of the flesh of the animal is eaten at the harvest-supper; part is pickled and kept till the first day of sowing in spring. At Pont à Mousson and elsewhere on the evening of the last day of reaping, a calf adorned with flowers and ears of corn is led thrice round the farmyard, being allured by a bait or driven by men with sticks, or conducted by the farmer's wife with a rope. The calf chosen for this ceremony is the calf which was born first on the farm in the spring of the year. It is followed by all the reapers with their tools. Then it is allowed to run free, the reapers chase it, and whoever catches it is called King of the Calf. Lastly, it is solemnly killed, at Lunéville the man who acts as butcher is the Jewish merchant of the village.

Sometimes again the corn-spirit hides himself amongst the cut corn in the barn to reappear in bull or cow form at threshing. Thus at Wurmlingen, in Thuringen, the man who gives the last stroke at threshing is called the Cow, or rather the Barley-cow, Oats-cow, Peas-cow, or the like, according to the crop. He is entirely enveloped in straw, his head is surmounted by sticks in imitation of horns, and two lads lead him by ropes to the well to drink. On the way thither he must low like a cow, and for a long time afterwards he goes by the name of the Cow. At Obermedlingen, in Swabia, when the threshing draws near an end, each man is careful to avoid giving the last stroke. He who does give it "gets the Cow," which is a straw figure dressed in an old ragged petticoat, hood, and stockings. It is tied on his back with a straw-rope, his face is blackened, and being bound with straw-ropes to a wheelbarrow he is wheeled round the village. Here, again, we meet with that confusion between the human and animal shape of the corn-spirit which we have noted in other customs. In Canton Schaffhausen the man who threshes the last corn is called the Cow, in Canton Thurgau, the Corn-bull, in Canton Zurich, the Thresher-cow. In the last-mentioned district he is wrapt in straw and bound to one of the trees in the orchard. At Arad, in Hungary, the man who gives the last stroke at threshing is enveloped in straw and a cow's hide with the horns attached to it. At Pessnitz, in the district of Dresden, the man who gives the last stroke with the flail is called Bull. He must make a straw-man and set it up before a neighbour's window. Here, apparently, as in so many cases, the corn-spirit is passed on to a neighbour who has not finished threshing. So at Herbrechtingen, in Thuringen, the effigy of a ragged old woman is flung into the barn of the farmer who is last with his threshing. The man who throws it in cries, "There is the Cow for you." If the threshers catch him they detain him over night and punish him by keeping him from the harvest-supper. In these latter customs the confusion between the human and the animal shape of the corn-spirit meets us again.

Further, the corn-spirit in bull form is sometimes believed to be killed at threshing. At Auxerre, in threshing the last bundle of corn, they call out twelve times, "We are killing the Bull." In the neighbourhood of Bordeaux, where a butcher kills an ox on the field immediately after the close of the reaping, it is said of the man who gives the last stroke at threshing that "he has killed the Bull." At Chambéry the last sheaf is called the sheaf of the Young Ox, and a race takes place to it in which all the reapers join. When the last stroke is given at threshing they say that "the Ox is killed", and immediately thereupon a real ox is slaughtered by the reaper who cut the last corn. The flesh of the ox is eaten by the threshers at supper.

We have seen that sometimes the young corn-spirit, whose task it is to quicken the corn of the coming year, is believed to be born as a Corn-baby on the harvest-field. Similarly in Berry the young corn-spirit is sometimes supposed to be born on the field in calf form, for when a binder has not rope enough to bind all the corn in sheaves, he puts aside the wheat that remains over and imitates the lowing of a cow. The meaning is that "the sheaf has given birth to a calf." In Puy-de-Dôme when a binder cannot keep up with the reaper whom he or she follows, they say "He (or she) is giving birth to the Calf." In some parts of Prussia, in similar circumstances, they call out to the woman, "The Bull is coming," and imitate the bellowing of a bull. In these cases the woman is conceived as the Corn-cow or old corn-spirit, while the supposed calf is the Corn-calf or young corn-spirit. In some parts of Austria a mythical calf (*Muhkalbchen*) is believed to be seen amongst the sprouting corn in spring and to push the children; when the corn waves in the wind they say, "The Calf is going about." Clearly, as Mannhardt observes, this calf of the spring-time is the same animal which is afterwards believed to be killed at reaping.

§ 8 *The Corn-spirit as a Horse or Mare* — Sometimes the corn-spirit appears in the shape of a horse or mare. Between Kalw and Stuttgart, when the corn bends before the wind, they say, "There runs the Horse." At Bohlingen, near Radolfzell in Baden, the last sheaf of oats is called the Oats-stallion. In Hertfordshire, at the end of the reaping, there is or used to be observed a ceremony called "crying the Mare." The last blades of corn left standing on the field are tied together and called the Mare. The reapers stand at a distance and throw their sickles at it, he who cuts it through "has the prize, with acciamations and good cheer." After it is cut the reapers cry thrice with a loud voice, "I have her!" Others answer thrice, "What have you?" — "A Mare! a Mare! a Mare!" — "Whose is she?" is next asked thrice. "A. B's," naming the owner thrice. "Whither will you send her?" — "To C. D.," naming some neighbour who has not reaped all his corn. In this custom the corn-spirit in the form of a mare is passed on from a farm where the corn is all cut to another farm where it is still standing, and where therefore the corn-spirit may be

supposed naturally to take refuge. In Shropshire the custom is similar. The farmer who finishes his harvest last, and who therefore cannot send the Mare to any one else, is said "to keep her all winter." The mocking offer of the Mare to a laggard neighbour was sometimes responded to by a mocking acceptance of her help. Thus an old man told an inquirer, "While we wun at supper, a mon cumm'd wi' a autar [halter] to fatch her away." At one place a real mare used to be sent, but the man who rode her was subjected to some rough treatment at the farmhouse to which he paid his unwelcome visit.

In the neighbourhood of Lille the idea of the corn-spirit in horse form is clearly preserved. When a harvester grows weary at his work, it is said, "He has the fatigue of the Horse." The first sheaf, called the "Cross of the Horse," is placed on a cross of boxwood in the barn, and the youngest horse on the farm must tread on it. The reapers dance round the last blades of corn, crying, "See the remains of the Horse." The sheaf made out of these last blades is given to the youngest horse of the parish (*commune*) to eat. This youngest horse of the parish clearly represents, as Mannhardt says, the corn-spirit of the following year, the Corn-foal, which absorbs the spirit of the old Corn-horse by eating the last corn cut; for, as usual, the old corn-spirit takes his final refuge in the last sheaf. The thresher of the last sheaf is said to "beat the Horse."

§ 9 *The Corn-spirit as a Pig (Boar or Sow)*—The last animal embodiment of the corn-spirit which we shall notice is the pig (boar or sow). In Thuringen, when the wind sets the young corn in motion, they sometimes say, "The Boar is rushing through the corn." Amongst the Esthonians of the island of Oesel the last sheaf is called the Rye-boar, and the man who gets it is saluted with a cry of "You have the Rye-boar on your back!" In reply he strikes up a song, in which he prays for plenty. At Kohlerwinkel, near Augsburg, at the close of the harvest, the last bunch of standing corn is cut down, stalk by stalk, by all the reapers in turn. He who cuts the last stalk "gets the Sow," and is laughed at. In other Swabian villages also the man who cuts the last corn "has the Sow," or "has the Rye-sow." At Bohlingen, near Radolfzell in Baden, the last sheaf is called the Rye-sow or the Wheat-sow, according to the crop, and at Rohrenbach in Baden the person who brings the last armful for the last sheaf is called the Corn-sow or the Oats-sow. At Friedingen, in Swabia, the thresher who gives the last stroke is called Sow—Barley-sow, Corn-sow, or the like, according to the crop. At Onstmettingen the man who gives the last stroke at threshing "has the Sow"; he is often bound up in a sheaf and dragged by a rope along the ground. And, generally, in Swabia the man who gives the last stroke with the flail is called Sow. He may, however, rid himself of this invidious distinction by passing on to a neighbour the straw-rope, which is the badge of his position as Sow. So he goes to a house and throws the straw-rope into it, crying, "There, I bring you the Sow." All the inmates give chase, and if they catch him they beat him, shut him

up for several hours in the pig-sty, and oblige him to take the "Sow" away again. In various parts of Upper Bavaria the man who gives the last stroke at threshing must "carry the Pig"—that is, either a straw effigy of a pig or merely a bundle of straw-ropes. This he carries to a neighbouring farm where the threshing is not finished, and throws it into the barn. If the threshers catch him they handle him roughly, beating him, blackening or dirtying his face, throwing him into filth, binding the Sow on his back, and so on, if the bearer of the Sow is a woman they cut off her hair. At the harvest supper or dinner the man who "carried the Pig" gets one or more dumplings made in the form of pigs. When the dumplings are served up by the maid-servant, all the people at table cry "Suz, suz, suz!" that being the cry used in calling pigs. Sometimes after dinner the man who "carried the Pig" has his face blackened, and is set on a cart and drawn round the village by his fellows, followed by a crowd crying "Suz, suz, suz!" as if they were calling swine. Sometimes, after being wheeled round the village, he is flung on the dunghill.

Again, the corn-spirit in the form of a pig plays his part at sowing-time as well as at harvest. At Neuautz, in Courland, when barley is sown for the first time in the year, the farmer's wife boils the chine of a pig along with the tail, and brings it to the sower on the field. He eats of it, but cuts off the tail and sticks it in the field, it is believed that the ears of corn will then grow as long as the tail. Here the pig is the corn-spirit, whose fertilising power is sometimes supposed to lie especially in his tail. As a pig he is put in the ground at sowing-time, and as a pig he reappears amongst the ripe corn at harvest. For amongst the neighbouring Esthonians, as we have seen, the last sheaf is called the Rye-boar. Somewhat similar customs are observed in Germany. In the Salza district, near Meiningen, a certain bone in the pig is called "the Jew on the winnowing-fan". The flesh of this bone is boiled on Shrove Tuesday, but the bone is put amongst the ashes which the neighbours exchange as presents on St. Peter's Day (the twenty-second of February), and then mix with the seed-corn. In the whole of Hesse, Meiningen, and other districts, people eat pea-soup with dried pig-ribs on Ash Wednesday or Candlemas. The ribs are then collected and hung in the room till sowing-time, when they are inserted in the sown field or in the seed-bag amongst the flax seed. This is thought to be an infallible specific against earth-fleas and moles, and to cause the flax to grow well and tall.

But the idea of the corn-spirit as embodied in pig form is nowhere more clearly expressed than in the Scandinavian custom of the Yule Boar. In Sweden and Denmark at Yule (Christmas) it is the custom to bake a loaf in the form of a boar-pig. This is called the Yule Boar. The corn of the last sheaf is often used to make it. All through Yule the Yule Boar stands on the table. Often it is kept till the sowing-time in spring, when part of it is mixed with the seed-corn and part given to the ploughman and plough-horses or plough-oxen to eat, in the expectation of a good harvest. In this custom

the corn-spirit, immanent in the last sheaf, appears at midwinter in the form of a boar made from the corn of the last sheaf, and his quickening influence on the corn is shown by mixing part of the Yule Boar with the seed-corn, and giving part of it to the ploughman and his cattle to eat. Similarly we saw that the Corn-wolf makes his appearance at mid-winter, the time when the year begins to verge towards spring. Formerly a real boar was sacrificed at Christmas, and apparently also a man in the character of the Yule Boar. This, at least, may perhaps be inferred from a Christmas custom still observed in Sweden. A man is wrapt up in a skin, and carries a wisp of straw in his mouth, so that the projecting straws look like the bristles of a boar. A knife is brought, and an old woman, with her face blackened, pretends to sacrifice him.

On Christmas Eve in some parts of the Esthonian island of Oesel they bake a long cake with the two ends turned up. It is called the Christmas Boar, and stands on the table till the morning of New Year's Day, when it is distributed among the cattle. In other parts of the island the Christmas Boar is not a cake but a little pig born in March, which the housewife fattens secretly, often without the knowledge of the other members of the family. On Christmas Eve the little pig is secretly killed, then roasted in the oven, and set on the table standing on all-fours, where it remains in this posture for several days. In other parts of the island, again, though the Christmas cake has neither the name nor the shape of a boar, it is kept till the New Year, when half of it is divided among all the members and all the quadrupeds of the family. The other half of the cake is kept till sowing-time comes round, when it is similarly distributed in the morning among human beings and beasts. In other parts of Esthonia, again, the Christmas Boar, as it is called, is baked of the first rye cut at harvest, it has a conical shape and a cross is impressed on it with a pig's bone or a key, or three dints are made in it with a buckle or a piece of charcoal. It stands with a light beside it on the table all through the festal season. On New Year's Day and Epiphany, before sunrise, a little of the cake is crumbled with salt and given to the cattle. The rest is kept till the day when the cattle are driven out to pasture for the first time in spring. It is then put in the herdsman's bag, and at evening is divided among the cattle to guard them from magic and harm. In some places the Christmas Boar is partaken of by farm-servants and cattle at the time of the barley sowing, for the purpose of thereby producing a heavier crop.

§ 10 *On the Animal Embodiments of the Corn-spirit*—So much for the animal embodiments of the corn-spirit as they are presented to us in the folk-customs of Northern Europe. These customs bring out clearly the sacramental character of the harvest-supper. The corn-spirit is conceived as embodied in an animal, this divine animal is slain, and its flesh and blood are partaken of by the harvesters. Thus, the cock, the hare, the cat, the goat, and the ox are eaten sacramentally by the harvesters, and the pig is eaten sacramentally

by ploughmen in spring. Again, as a substitute for the real flesh of the divine being, bread or dumplings are made in his image and eaten sacramentally, thus, pig-shaped dumplings are eaten by the harvesters, and loaves made in boar-shape (the Yule Boar) are eaten in spring by the ploughman and his cattle.

The reader has probably remarked the complete parallelism between the conceptions of the corn-spirit in human and in animal form. The parallel may be here briefly resumed. When the corn waves in the wind it is said either that the Corn-mother or that the Corn-wolf, etc., is passing through the corn. Children are warned against straying in corn-fields either because the Corn-mother or because the Corn-wolf, etc., is there. In the last corn cut or the last sheaf threshed either the Corn-mother or the Corn-wolf, etc., is supposed to be present. The last sheaf is itself called either the Corn-mother or the Corn-wolf, etc., and is made up in the shape either of a woman or of a wolf, etc. The person who cuts, binds, or threshes the last sheaf is called either the Old Woman or the Wolf, etc., according to the name bestowed on the sheaf itself. As in some places a sheaf made in human form and called the Maiden, the Mother of the Maize, etc., is kept from one harvest to the next in order to secure a continuance of the corn-spirit's blessing, so in some places the Harvest-cock and in others the flesh of the goat is kept for a similar purpose from one harvest to the next. As in some places the grain taken from the Corn-mother is mixed with the seed-corn in spring to make the crop abundant, so in some places the feathers of the cock, and in Sweden the Yule Boar, are kept till spring and mixed with the seed-corn for a like purpose. As part of the Corn-mother or Maiden is given to the cattle at Christmas or to the horses at the first ploughing, so part of the Yule Boar is given to the ploughing horses or oxen in spring. Lastly, the death of the corn-spirit is represented by killing or pretending to kill either his human or his animal representative, and the worshippers partake sacramentally either of the actual body and blood of the representative of the divinity, or of bread made in his likeness.

Other animal forms assumed by the corn-spirit are the fox, stag, roe, sheep, bear, ass, mouse, quail, stork, swan, and kite. If it is asked why the corn-spirit should be thought to appear in the form of an animal and of so many different animals, we may reply that to primitive man the simple appearance of an animal or bird among the corn is probably enough to suggest a mysterious link between the creature and the corn; and when we remember that in the old days, before fields were fenced in, all kinds of animals must have been free to roam over them, we need not wonder that the corn-spirit should have been identified even with large animals like the horse and cow, which nowadays could not, except by a rare accident, be found straying in an English corn-field. This explanation applies with peculiar force to the very common case in which the animal embodiment of the corn-spirit is believed to lurk in the last standing corn. For at harvest a number

of wild animals, such as hares, rabbits, and partridges, are commonly driven by the progress of the reaping into the last patch of standing corn, and make their escape from it as it is being cut down. So regularly does this happen that reapers and others often stand round the last patch of corn armed with sticks or guns, with which they kill the animals as they dart out of their last refuge among the stalks. Now, primitive man, to whom magical changes of shape seem perfectly credible, finds it most natural that the spirit of the corn, driven from his home in the ripe grain, should make his escape in the form of the animal which is seen to rush out of the last patch of corn as it falls under the scythe of the reaper. Thus the identification of the corn-spirit with an animal is analogous to the identification of him with a passing stranger. As the sudden appearance of a stranger near the harvest-field or threshing-floor is, to the primitive mind, enough to identify him as the spirit of the corn escaping from the cut or threshed corn, so the sudden appearance of an animal issuing from the cut corn is enough to identify it with the corn-spirit escaping from his ruined home. The two identifications are so analogous that they can hardly be dissociated in any attempt to explain them. Those who look to some other principle than the one here suggested for the explanation of the latter identification are bound to show that their theory covers the former identification also.

## CHAPTER XLIX

### ANCIENT DEITIES OF VEGETATION AS ANIMALS

§ 1 *Dionysus, the Goat and the Bull* — However we may explain it, the fact remains that in peasant folk-lore the corn-spirit is very commonly conceived and represented in animal form. May not this fact explain the relation in which certain animals stood to the ancient deities of vegetation, Dionysus, Demeter, Adonis, Attis, and Osiris?

To begin with Dionysus. We have seen that he was represented sometimes as a goat and sometimes as a bull. As a goat he can hardly be separated from the minor divinities, the Pans, Satyrs, and Silenuses, all of whom are closely associated with him and are represented more or less completely in the form of goats. Thus, Pan was regularly portrayed in sculpture and painting with the face and legs of a goat. The Satyrs were depicted with pointed goat-ears, and sometimes with sprouting horns and short tails. They were sometimes spoken of simply as goats, and in the drama their parts were played by men dressed in goatskins. Silenus is represented in art clad in a goatskin. Further, the Fauns, the Italian counterpart of the Greek Pans and Satyrs, are described as being half goats, with goat-feet and goat-horns. Again, all these minor goat-formed divinities partake more or less clearly of the character of woodland

deities. Thus, Pan was called by the Arcadians the Lord of the Wood. The Silenuses kept company with the tree-nymphs. The Fauns are expressly designated as woodland deities; and their character as such is still further brought out by their association, or even identification, with Silvanus and the Silvanuses, who, as their name of itself indicates, are spirits of the woods. Lastly, the association of the Satyrs with the Silenuses, Fauns, and Silvanuses proves that the Satyrs also were woodland deities. These goat-formed spirits of the woods have their counterparts in the folk-lore of Northern Europe. Thus, the Russian wood-spirits, called *Ljeschue* (from *ljes*, "wood"), are believed to appear partly in human shape, but with the horns, ears, and legs of goats. The *Ljeschi* can alter his stature at pleasure, when he walks in the wood he is as tall as the trees, when he walks in the meadows he is no higher than the grass. Some of the *Ljeschue* are spirits of the corn as well as of the wood; before harvest they are as tall as the corn-stalks, but after it they shrink to the height of the stubble. This brings out—what we have remarked before—the close connexion between tree-spirits and corn-spirits, and shows how easily the former may melt into the latter. Similarly the Fauns, though wood-spirits, were believed to foster the growth of the crops. We have already seen how often the corn-spirit is represented in folk-custom as a goat. On the whole, then, as Mannhardt argues, the Pans, Satyrs, and Fauns perhaps belong to a widely diffused class of wood-spirits conceived in goat-form. The fondness of goats for straying in woods and nibbling the bark of trees, to which indeed they are most destructive, is an obvious and perhaps sufficient reason why wood-spirits should so often be supposed to take the form of goats. The inconsistency of a god of vegetation subsisting upon the vegetation which he personifies is not one to strike the primitive mind. Such inconsistencies arise when the deity, ceasing to be immanent in the vegetation, comes to be regarded as its owner or lord, for the idea of owning the vegetation naturally leads to that of subsisting on it. Sometimes the corn-spirit, originally conceived as immanent in the corn, afterwards comes to be regarded as its owner, who lives on it and is reduced to poverty and want by being deprived of it. Hence he is often known as "the Poor Man" or "the Poor Woman." Occasionally the last sheaf is left standing on the field for "the Poor Old Woman" or for "the Old Rye-woman."

Thus the representation of wood-spirits in the form of goats appears to be both widespread and, to the primitive mind, natural. Therefore when we find, as we have done, that Dionysus—a tree-god—is sometimes represented in goat-form, we can hardly avoid concluding that this representation is simply a part of his proper character as a tree-god and is not to be explained by the fusion of two distinct and independent worships, in one of which he originally appeared as a tree-god and in the other as a goat.

Dionysus was also figured, as we have seen, in the shape of a bull. After what has gone before we are naturally led to expect that his



bull form must have been only another expression for his character as a deity of vegetation, especially as the bull is a common embodiment of the corn-spirit in Northern Europe, and the close association of Dionysus with Demeter and Persephone in the mysteries of Eleusis shows that he had at least strong agricultural affinities

The probability of this view will be somewhat increased if it can be shown that in other rites than those of Dionysus the ancients slew an ox as a representative of the spirit of vegetation. Thus they appear to have done in the Athenian sacrifice known as "the murder of the ox" (*bouphonia*). It took place about the end of June or beginning of July, that is, about the time when the threshing is nearly over in Attica. According to tradition the sacrifice was instituted to procure a cessation of drought and dearth which had afflicted the land. The ritual was as follows. Barley mixed with wheat, or cakes made of them, were laid upon the bronze altar of Zeus Polieus on the Acropolis. Oxen were driven round the altar, and the ox which went up to the altar and ate the offering on it was sacrificed. The axe and knife with which the beast was slain had been previously wetted with water brought by maidens called "water-carriers." The weapons were then sharpened and handed to the butchers, one of whom felled the ox with the axe and another cut its throat with the knife. As soon as he had felled the ox, the former threw the axe from him and fled, and the man who cut the beast's throat apparently imitated his example. Meantime the ox was skinned and all present partook of its flesh. Then the hide was stuffed with straw and sewed up, next the stuffed animal was set on its feet and yoked to a plough as if it were ploughing. A trial then took place in an ancient law-court presided over by the King (as he was called) to determine who had murdered the ox. The maidens who had brought the water accused the men who had sharpened the axe and knife; the men who had sharpened the axe and knife blamed the men who had handed these implements to the butchers; the men who had handed the implements to the butchers blamed the butchers, and the butchers laid the blame on the axe and knife, which were accordingly found guilty, condemned, and cast into the sea.

The name of this sacrifice,—"*the murder of the ox*,"—the pains taken by each person who had a hand in the slaughter to lay the blame on some one else, together with the formal trial and punishment of the axe or knife or both, prove that the ox was here regarded not merely as a victim offered to a god, but as itself a sacred creature, the slaughter of which was sacrilege or murder. This is borne out by a statement of Varro that to kill an ox was formerly a capital crime in Attica. The mode of selecting the victim suggests that the ox which tasted the corn was viewed as the corn-deity taking possession of his own. This interpretation is supported by the following custom. In Beauce, in the district of Orleans, on the twenty-fourth or twenty-fifth of April they make a straw man called "*the great mondard*." For they say that the old *mondard* is now dead and it is necessary to make a new

one The straw man is carried in solemn procession up and down the village and at last is placed upon the oldest apple-tree. There he remains till the apples are gathered, when he is taken down and thrown into the water, or he is burned and his ashes cast into water. But the person who plucks the first fruit from the tree succeeds to the title of "the great *mondard*" Here the straw figure, called "the great *mondard*" and placed on the oldest apple-tree in spring, represents the spirit of the tree, who, dead in winter, revives when the apple-blossoms appear on the boughs. Thus the person who plucks the first fruit from the tree and thereby receives the name of "the great *mondard*" must be regarded as a representative of the tree-spirit. Primitive peoples are usually reluctant to taste the annual first-fruits of any crop, until some ceremony has been performed which makes it safe and pious for them to do so. The reason of this reluctance appears to be a belief that the first-fruits either belong to or actually contain a divinity. Therefore when a man or animal is seen boldly to appropriate the sacred first-fruits, he or it is naturally regarded as the divinity himself in human or animal form taking possession of his own. The time of the Athenian sacrifice, which fell about the close of the threshing, suggests that the wheat and barley laid upon the altar were a harvest offering; and the sacramental character of the subsequent repast—all partaking of the flesh of the divine animal—would make it parallel to the harvest-suppers of modern Europe, in which, as we have seen, the flesh of the animal which stands for the corn-spirit is eaten by the harvesters. Again, the tradition that the sacrifice was instituted in order to put an end to drought and famine is in favour of taking it as a harvest festival. The resurrection of the corn-spirit, enacted by setting up the stuffed ox and yoking it to the plough, may be compared with the resurrection of the tree-spirit in the person of his representative, the Wild Man.

The ox appears as a representative of the corn-spirit in other parts of the world. At Great Bassam, in Guinea, two oxen are slain annually to procure a good harvest. If the sacrifice is to be effectual, it is necessary that the oxen should weep. So all the women of the village sit in front of the beasts, chanting, "The ox will weep, yes, he will weep!" From time to time one of the women walks round the beasts, throwing manioc meal or palm wine upon them, especially into their eyes. When tears roll down from the eyes of the oxen, the people dance, singing, "The ox weeps! the ox weeps!" Then two men seize the tails of the beasts and cut them off at one blow. It is believed that a great misfortune will happen in the course of the year if the tails are not severed at one blow. The oxen are afterwards killed, and their flesh is eaten by the chiefs. Here the tears of the oxen, like those of the human victims amongst the Khonds and the Aztecs, are probably a rain-charm. We have already seen that the virtue of the corn-spirit, embodied in animal form, is sometimes supposed to reside in the tail, and that the last handful of corn is sometimes conceived as the tail of the corn-spirit. In the Mithraic religion this conception

is graphically set forth in some of the numerous sculptures which represent Mithras kneeling on the back of a bull and plunging a knife into its flank, for on certain of these monuments the tail of the bull ends in three stalks of corn, and in one of them corn-stalks instead of blood are seen issuing from the wound inflicted by the knife. Such representations certainly suggest that the bull, whose sacrifice appears to have formed a leading feature in the Mithraic ritual, was conceived, in one at least of its aspects, as an incarnation of the corn-spirit.

Still more clearly does the ox appear as a personification of the corn-spirit in a ceremony which is observed in all the provinces and districts of China to welcome the approach of spring. On the first day of spring, usually on the third or fourth of February, which is also the beginning of the Chinese New Year, the governor or prefect of the city goes in procession to the east gate of the city, and sacrifices to the Divine Husbandman, who is represented with a bull's head on the body of a man. A large effigy of an ox, cow, or buffalo has been prepared for the occasion, and stands outside of the east gate, with agricultural implements beside it. The figure is made of differently-coloured pieces of paper pasted on a framework either by a blind man or according to the directions of a necromancer. The colours of the paper prognosticate the character of the coming year, if red prevails, there will be many fires; if white, there will be floods and rain, and so with the other colours. The mandarins walk slowly round the ox, beating it severely at each step with rods of various hues. It is filled with five kinds of grain, which pour forth when the effigy is broken by the blows of the rods. The paper fragments are then set on fire, and a scramble takes place for the burning fragments, because the people believe that whoever gets one of them is sure to be fortunate throughout the year. A live buffalo is next killed, and its flesh is divided among the mandarins. According to one account, the effigy of the ox is made of clay, and, after being beaten by the governor, is stoned by the people till they break it in pieces, "from which they expect an abundant year." Here the corn-spirit appears to be plainly represented by the corn-filled ox, whose fragments may therefore be supposed to bring fertility with them.

On the whole we may perhaps conclude that both as a goat and as a bull Dionysus was essentially a god of vegetation. The Chinese and European customs which I have cited may perhaps shed light on the custom of rending a live bull or goat at the rites of Dionysus. The animal was torn in fragments, as the Khond victim was cut in pieces, in order that the worshippers might each secure a portion of the life-giving and fertilising influence of the god. The flesh was eaten raw as a sacrament, and we may conjecture that some of it was taken home to be buried in the fields, or otherwise employed so as to convey to the fruits of the earth the quickening influence of the god of vegetation. The resurrection of Dionysus, related in his myth, may have been enacted in his rites by stuffing and setting up the slain ox, as was done at the Athenian *bouphonia*.

§ 2 *Demeter, the Pig and the Horse*—Passing next to the corn goddess Demeter, and remembering that in European folk-lore the pig is a common embodiment of the corn-spirit, we may now ask whether the pig, which was so closely associated with Demeter, may not have been originally the goddess herself in animal form? The pig was sacred to her, in art she was portrayed carrying or accompanied by a pig; and the pig was regularly sacrificed in her mysteries, the reason assigned being that the pig injures the corn and is therefore an enemy of the goddess. But after an animal has been conceived as a god, or a god as an animal, it sometimes happens, as we have seen, that the god sloughs off his animal form and becomes purely anthropomorphic, and that then the animal, which at first had been slain in the character of the god, comes to be viewed as a victim offered to the god on the ground of its hostility to the deity, in short, the god is sacrificed to himself on the ground that he is his own enemy. This happened to Dionysus, and it may have happened to Demeter also. And in fact the rites of one of her festivals, the Thesmophoria, bear out the view that originally the pig was an embodiment of the corn-goddess herself, either Demeter or her daughter and double Persephone. The Attic Thesmophoria was an autumn festival, celebrated by women alone in October, and appears to have represented with mourning rites the descent of Persephone (or Demeter) into the lower world, and with joy her return from the dead. Hence the name Descent or Ascent variously applied to the first, and the name *Kalligeneia* (fair-born) applied to the third day of the festival. Now it was customary at the Thesmophoria to throw pigs, cakes of dough, and branches of pine-trees into "the chasms of Demeter and Persephone," which appear to have been sacred caverns or vaults. In these caverns or vaults there were said to be serpents, which guarded the caverns and consumed most of the flesh of the pigs and dough-cakes which were thrown in. Afterwards—apparently at the next annual festival—the decayed remains of the pigs, the cakes, and the pine-branches were fetched by women called "drawers," who, after observing rules of ceremonial purity for three days, descended into the caverns, and, frightening away the serpents by clapping their hands, brought up the remains and placed them on the altar. Whoever got a piece of the decayed flesh and cakes, and sowed it with the seed-corn in his field, was believed to be sure of a good crop.

To explain the rude and ancient ritual of the Thesmophoria the following legend was told. At the moment when Pluto carried off Persephone, a swineherd called Eubuleus chanced to be herding his swine on the spot, and his herd was engulfed in the chasm down which Pluto vanished with Persephone. Accordingly at the Thesmophoria pigs were annually thrown into caverns to commemorate the disappearance of the swine of Eubuleus. It follows from this that the casting of the pigs into the vaults at the Thesmophoria formed part of the dramatic representation of Persephone's descent into the lower world; and as no image of Persephone appears to have been

thrown in, we may infer that the descent of the pigs was not so much an accompaniment of her descent as the descent itself, in short, that the pigs were Peisephone. Afterwards when Persephone or Demeter (for the two are equivalent) took on human form, a reason had to be found for the custom of throwing pigs into caverns at her festival; and this was done by saying that when Pluto carried off Persephone there happened to be some swine browsing near, which were swallowed up along with her. The story is obviously a forced and awkward attempt to bridge over the gulf between the old conception of the corn-spirit as a pig and the new conception of her as an anthropomorphic goddess. A trace of the older conception survived in the legend that when the sad mother was searching for traces of the vanished Persephone the footprints of the lost one were obliterated by the footprints of a pig, originally, we may conjecture, the footprints of the pig were the footprints of Persephone and of Demeter herself. A consciousness of the intimate connexion of the pig with the corn lurks in the legend that the swineherd Eubuleus was a brother of Triptolemus, to whom Demeter first imparted the secret of the corn. Indeed, according to one version of the story, Eubuleus himself received, jointly with his brother Triptolemus, the gift of the corn from Demeter as a reward for revealing to her the fate of Persephone. Further, it is to be noted that at the Thesmophoria the women appear to have eaten swine's flesh. The meal, if I am right, must have been a solemn sacrament or communion, the worshippers partaking of the body of the god.

As thus explained, the Thesmophoria has its analogies in the folk-customs of Northern Europe which have been already described. Just as at the Thesmophoria—an autumn festival in honour of the corn-goddess—swine's flesh was partly eaten, partly kept in caverns till the following year, when it was taken up to be sown with the seed-corn in the fields for the purpose of securing a good crop, so in the neighbourhood of Grenoble the goat killed on the harvest-field is partly eaten at the harvest-supper, partly pickled and kept till the next harvest, so at Pouilly the ox killed on the harvest-field is partly eaten by the harvesters, partly pickled and kept till the first day of sowing in spring, probably to be then mixed with the seed, or eaten by the ploughmen, or both, so at Udvarhely the feathers of the cock which is killed in the last sheaf at harvest are kept till spring, and then sown with the seed on the field, so in Hesse and Meiningen the flesh of pigs is eaten on Ash Wednesday or Candlemas, and the bones are kept till sowing-time, when they are put into the field sown or mixed with the seed in the bag, so, lastly, the corn from the last sheaf is kept till Christmas, made into the Yule Boar, and afterwards broken and mixed with the seed-corn at sowing in spring. Thus, to put it generally, the corn-spirit is killed in animal form in autumn, part of his flesh is eaten as a sacrament by his worshippers; and part of it is kept till next sowing-time or harvest as a pledge and security for the continuance or renewal of the corn-spirit's energies.

If persons of fastidious taste should object that the Greeks never could have conceived Demeter and Persephone to be embodied in the form of pigs, it may be answered that in the cave of Phigalia in Arcadia the Black Demeter was portrayed with the head and mane of a horse on the body of a woman. Between the portrait of a goddess as a pig, and the portrait of her as a woman with a horse's head, there is little to choose in respect of barbarism. The legend told of the Phigalian Demeter indicates that the horse was one of the animal forms assumed in ancient Greece, as in modern Europe, by the corn-spirit. It was said that in her search for her daughter, Demeter assumed the form of a mare to escape the addresses of Poseidon, and that, offended at his importunity, she withdrew in dudgeon to a cave not far from Phigalia in the highlands of Western Arcadia. There, robed in black, she tarried so long that the fruits of the earth were perishing, and mankind would have died of famine if Pan had not soothed the angry goddess and persuaded her to quit the cave. In memory of this event, the Phigalians set up an image of the Black Demeter in the cave, it represented a woman dressed in a long robe, with the head and mane of a horse. The Black Demeter, in whose absence the fruits of the earth perish, is plainly a mythical expression for the bare wintry earth stripped of its summer mantle of green.

§ 3 *Attis, Adonis, and the Pig*—Passing now to Attis and Adonis, we may note a few facts which seem to show that these deities of vegetation had also, like other deities of the same class, their animal embodiments. The worshippers of Attis abstained from eating the flesh of swine. This appears to indicate that the pig was regarded as an embodiment of Attis. And the legend that Attis was killed by a boar points in the same direction. For after the examples of the goat Dionysus and the pig Demeter it may almost be laid down as a rule that an animal which is said to have injured a god was originally the god himself. Perhaps the cry of "Hyes Attes! Hyes Attes!" which was raised by the worshippers of Attis may be neither more nor less than "Pig Attis! Pig Attis!"—*hyes* being possibly a Phrygian form of the Greek *hys*, "a pig."

In regard to Adonis, his connexion with the boar was not always explained by the story that he had been killed by the animal. According to another story, a boar rent with his tusk the bark of the tree in which the infant Adonis was born. According to yet another story, he perished at the hands of Hephæstus on Mount Lebanon while he was hunting wild boars. These variations in the legend serve to show that, while the connexion of the boar with Adonis was certain, the reason of the connexion was not understood, and that consequently different stories were devised to explain it. Certainly the pig ranked as a sacred animal among the Syrians. At the great religious metropolis of Hierapolis on the Euphrates pigs were neither sacrificed nor eaten, and if a man touched a pig he was unclean for the rest of the day. Some people said this was because the pigs were unclean; others said it was because the pigs were sacred. This difference of opinion

points to a hazy state of religious thought in which the ideas of sanctity and uncleanness are not yet sharply distinguished, both being blent in a sort of vaporous solution to which we give the name of taboo. It is quite consistent with this that the pig should have been held to be an embodiment of the divine Adonis, and the analogies of Dionysus and Demeter make it probable that the story of the hostility of the animal to the god was only a late misapprehension of the old view of the god as embodied in a pig. The rule that pigs were not sacrificed or eaten by worshippers of Attis and presumably of Adonis does not exclude the possibility that in these rituals the pig was slain on solemn occasions as a representative of the god and consumed sacramentally by the worshippers. Indeed, the sacramental killing and eating of an animal implies that the animal is sacred, and that, as a general rule, it is spared.

The attitude of the Jews to the pig was as ambiguous as that of the heathen Syrians towards the same animal. The Greeks could not decide whether the Jews worshipped swine or abominated them. On the one hand they might not eat swine, but on the other hand they might not kill them. And if the former rule speaks for the uncleanness, the latter speaks still more strongly for the sanctity of the animal. For whereas both rules may, and one rule must, be explained on the supposition that the pig was sacred, neither rule must, and one rule cannot, be explained on the supposition that the pig was unclean. If, therefore, we prefer the former supposition, we must conclude that, originally at least, the pig was revered rather than abhorred by the Israelites. We are confirmed in this opinion by observing that down to the time of Isaiah some of the Jews used to meet secretly in gardens to eat the flesh of swine and mice as a religious rite. Doubtless this was a very ancient ceremony, dating from a time when both the pig and the mouse were venerated as divine, and when their flesh was partaken of sacramentally on rare and solemn occasions as the body and blood of gods. And in general it may perhaps be said that all so-called unclean animals were originally sacred, the reason for not eating them was that they were divine.

§ 4 *Osiris, the Pig and the Bull*—In ancient Egypt, within historical times, the pig occupied the same dubious position as in Syria and Palestine, though at first sight its uncleanness is more prominent than its sanctity. The Egyptians are generally said by Greek writers to have abhorred the pig as a foul and loathsome animal. If a man so much as touched a pig in passing, he stepped into the river with all his clothes on, to wash off the taint. To drink pig's milk was believed to cause leprosy to the drinker. Swineherds, though natives of Egypt, were forbidden to enter any temple, and they were the only men who were thus excluded. No one would give his daughter in marriage to a swineherd, or marry a swineherd's daughter, the swineherds married among themselves. Yet once a year the Egyptians sacrificed pigs to the moon and to Osiris, and not only sacrificed them, but ate of their flesh, though on any other

day of the year they would neither sacrifice them nor taste of their flesh. Those who were too poor to offer a pig on this day baked cakes of dough, and offered them instead. This can hardly be explained except by the supposition that the pig was a sacred animal which was eaten sacramentally by his worshippers once a year.

The view that in Egypt the pig was sacred is borne out by the very facts which, to moderns, might seem to prove the contrary. Thus the Egyptians thought, as we have seen, that to drink pig's milk produced leprosy. But exactly analogous views are held by savages about the animals and plants which they deem most sacred. Thus in the island of Wetar (between New Guinea and Celebes) people believe themselves to be variously descended from wild pigs, serpents, crocodiles, turtles, dogs, and eels; a man may not eat an animal of the kind from which he is descended, if he does so, he will become a leper, and go mad. Amongst the Omaha Indians of North America men whose totem is the elk believe that if they ate the flesh of the male elk they would break out in boils and white spots in different parts of their bodies. In the same tribe men whose totem is the red maize think that if they ate red maize they would have running sores all round their mouths. The Bush negroes of Surinam, who practise totemism, believe that if they ate the *capiai* (an animal like a pig) it would give them leprosy, perhaps the *capiai* is one of their totems. The Syrians, in antiquity, who esteemed fish sacred, thought that if they ate fish their bodies would break out in ulcers, and their feet and stomach would swell up. The Chasas of Orissa believe that if they were to injure their totemic animal they would be attacked by leprosy and their line would die out. These examples prove that the eating of a sacred animal is often believed to produce leprosy or other skin-diseases, so far, therefore, they support the view that the pig must have been sacred in Egypt, since the effect of drinking its milk was believed to be leprosy.

Again, the rule that, after touching a pig, a man had to wash himself and his clothes, also favours the view of the sanctity of the pig. For it is a common belief that the effect of contact with a sacred object must be removed, by washing or otherwise, before a man is free to mingle with his fellows. Thus the Jews wash their hands after reading the sacred scriptures. Before coming forth from the tabernacle after the sin-offering the high priest had to wash himself, and put off the garments which he had worn in the holy place. It was a rule of Greek ritual that, in offering an expiatory sacrifice, the sacrificer should not touch the sacrifice, and that, after the offering was made, he must wash his body and his clothes in a river or spring before he could enter a city or his own house. The Polynesians felt strongly the need of ridding themselves of the sacred contagion, if it may be so called, which they caught by touching sacred objects. Various ceremonies were performed for the purpose of removing this contagion. We have seen, for example, how in Tonga a man who happened to touch a sacred chief, or anything personally belonging to him, had to perform a certain ceremony before he could feed himself with his hands;



otherwise it was believed that he would swell up and die, or at least be afflicted with scrofula or some other disease. We have seen, too, what fatal effects are supposed to follow, and do actually follow, from contact with a sacred object in New Zealand. In short, primitive man believes that what is sacred is dangerous, it is pervaded by a sort of electrical sanctity which communicates a shock to, even if it does not kill, whatever comes in contact with it. Hence the savage is unwilling to touch or even to see that which he deems peculiarly holy. Thus Bechuanas, of the Crocodile clan, think it "hateful and unlucky" to meet or see a crocodile, the sight is thought to cause inflammation of the eyes. Yet the crocodile is their most sacred object; they call it their father, swear by it, and celebrate it in their festivals. The goat is the sacred animal of the Madenassana Bushmen, yet "to look upon it would be to render the man for the time impure, as well as to cause him undefined uneasiness." The Elk clan, among the Omaha Indians, believe that even to touch the male elk would be followed by an eruption of boils and white spots on the body. Members of the Reptile clan in the same tribe think that if one of them touches or smells a snake it will make his hair white. In Samoa people whose god was a butterfly believed that if they caught a butterfly it would strike them dead. Again, in Samoa the reddish-seared leaves of the banana-tree were commonly used as plates for handing food, but if any member of the Wild Pigeon family had used banana leaves for this purpose, it was supposed that he would suffer from rheumatic swellings or an eruption all over the body like chicken-pox. The Mori clan of the Bhils in Central India worship the peacock as their totem and make offerings of grain to it; yet members of the clan believe that were they even to set foot on the tracks of a peacock they would afterwards suffer from some disease, and if a woman sees a peacock she must veil her face and look away. Thus the primitive mind seems to conceive of holiness as a sort of dangerous virus, which a prudent man will shun as far as possible, and of which, if he should chance to be infected by it, he will carefully disinfect himself by some form of ceremonial purification.

In the light of these parallels the beliefs and customs of the Egyptians touching the pig are probably to be explained as based upon an opinion of the extreme sanctity rather than of the extreme uncleanness of the animal, or rather, to put it more correctly, they imply that the animal was looked on, not simply as a filthy and disgusting creature, but as a being endowed with high supernatural powers, and that as such it was regarded with that primitive sentiment of religious awe and fear in which the feelings of reverence and abhorrence are almost equally blended. The ancients themselves seem to have been aware that there was another side to the horror with which swine seemed to inspire the Egyptians. For the Greek astronomer and mathematician Eudoxus, who resided fourteen months in Egypt and conversed with the priests, was of opinion that the Egyptians spared the pig, not out of abhorrence, but from a regard to its utility

in agriculture ; for, according to him, when the Nile had subsided, herds of swine were turned loose over the fields to tread the seed down into the moist earth. But when a being is thus the object of mixed and implicitly contradictory feelings, he may be said to occupy a position of unstable equilibrium. In course of time one of the contradictory feelings is likely to prevail over the other, and according as the feeling which finally predominates is that of reverence or abhorrence, the being who is the object of it will rise into a god or sink into a devil. The latter, on the whole, was the fate of the pig in Egypt. For in historical times the fear and horror of the pig seem certainly to have outweighed the reverence and worship of which he may once have been the object, and of which, even in his fallen state, he never quite lost trace. He came to be looked on as an embodiment of Set or Typhon, the Egyptian devil and enemy of Osiris. For it was in the shape of a black pig that Typhon injured the eye of the god Horus, who burned him and instituted the sacrifice of the pig, the sun-god Ra having declared the beast abominable. Again, the story that Typhon was hunting a boar when he discovered and mangled the body of Osiris, and that this was the reason why pigs were sacrificed once a year, is clearly a modernised version of an older story that Osiris, like Adonis and Attis, was slain or mangled by a boar, or by Typhon in the form of a boar. Thus, the annual sacrifice of a pig to Osiris might naturally be interpreted as vengeance inflicted on the hostile animal that had slain or mangled the god. But, in the first place, when an animal is thus killed as a solemn sacrifice once and once only in the year, it generally or always means that the animal is divine, that he is spared and respected the rest of the year as a god and slain, when he is slain, also in the character of a god. In the second place, the examples of Dionysus and Demeter, if not of Attis and Adonis, have taught us that the animal which is sacrificed to a god on the ground that he is the god's enemy may have been, and probably was, originally the god himself. Therefore, the annual sacrifice of a pig to Osiris, coupled with the alleged hostility of the animal to the god, tends to show, first, that originally the pig was a god, and, second, that he was Osiris. At a later age, when Osiris became anthropomorphic and his original relation to the pig had been forgotten, the animal was first distinguished from him, and afterwards opposed as an enemy to him by mythologists who could think of no reason for killing a beast in connexion with the worship of a god except that the beast was the god's enemy, or, as Plutarch puts it, not that which is dear to the gods, but that which is the contrary, is fit to be sacrificed. At this later stage the havoc which a wild boar notoriously makes amongst the corn would supply a plausible reason for regarding him as the foe of the corn-spirit, though originally, if I am right, the very freedom with which the boar ranged at will through the corn led people to identify him with the corn-spirit, to whom he was afterwards opposed as an enemy.

The view which identifies the pig with Osiris derives not a little

support from the sacrifice of pigs to him on the very day on which, according to tradition, Osiris himself was killed, for thus the killing of the pig was the annual representation of the killing of Osiris, just as the throwing of the pigs into the caverns at the Thesmophoria was an annual representation of the descent of Persephone into the lower world, and both customs are parallel to the European practice of killing a goat, cock, and so forth, at harvest as a representative of the corn-spirit

Again, the theory that the pig, originally Osiris himself, afterwards came to be regarded as an embodiment of his enemy Typhon, is supported by the similar relation of red-haired men and red oxen to Typhon. For in regard to the red-haired men who were burned and whose ashes were scattered with winnowing-fans, we have seen fair grounds for believing that originally, like the red-haired puppies killed at Rome in spring, they were representatives of the corn-spirit himself, that is, of Osiris, and were slain for the express purpose of making the corn turn red or golden. Yet at a later time these men were explained to be representatives, not of Osiris, but of his enemy Typhon, and the killing of them was regarded as an act of vengeance inflicted on the enemy of the god. Similarly, the red oxen sacrificed by the Egyptians were said to be offered on the ground of their resemblance to Typhon, though it is more likely that originally they were slain on the ground of their resemblance to the corn-spirit Osiris. We have seen that the ox is a common representative of the corn-spirit and is slain as such on the harvest-field.

Osiris was regularly identified with the bull Apis of Memphis and the bull Mnevis of Heliopolis. But it is hard to say whether these bulls were embodiments of him as the corn-spirit, as the red oxen appear to have been, or whether they were not in origin entirely distinct deities who came to be fused with Osiris at a later time. The universality of the worship of these two bulls seems to put them on a different footing from the ordinary sacred animals whose worships were purely local. But whatever the original relation of Apis to Osiris may have been, there is one fact about the former which ought not to be passed over in a disquisition on the custom of killing a god. Although the bull Apis was worshipped as a god with much pomp and profound reverence, he was not suffered to live beyond a certain length of time which was prescribed by the sacred books, and on the expiry of which he was drowned in a holy spring. The limit, according to Plutarch, was twenty-five years, but it cannot always have been enforced, for the tombs of the Apis bulls have been discovered in modern times, and from the inscriptions on them it appears that in the twenty-second dynasty two of the holy steers lived more than twenty-six years.

§ 5 *Virbius and the Horse* —We are now in a position to hazard a conjecture as to the meaning of the tradition that Virbius, the first of the divine Kings of the Wood at Aricia, had been killed in the character of Hippolytus by horses. Having found, first, that spirits

of the corn are not infrequently represented in the form of horses, and, second, that the animal which in later legends is said to have injured the god was sometimes originally the god himself, we may conjecture that the horses by which Virbius or Hippolytus was said to have been slain were really embodiments of him as a deity of vegetation. The myth that he had been killed by horses was probably invented to explain certain features in his worship, amongst others the custom of excluding horses from his sacred grove. For myth changes while custom remains constant, men continue to do what their fathers did before them, though the reasons on which their fathers acted have been long forgotten. The history of religion is a long attempt to reconcile old custom with new reason, to find a sound theory for an absurd practice. In the case before us we may be sure that the myth is more modern than the custom and by no means represents the original reason for excluding horses from the grove. From their exclusion it might be inferred that horses could not be the sacred animals or embodiments of the god of the grove. But the inference would be rash. The goat was at one time a sacred animal or embodiment of Athena, as may be inferred from the practice of representing the goddess clad in a goat-skin (*aegis*). Yet the goat was neither sacrificed to her as a rule, nor allowed to enter her great sanctuary, the Acropolis at Athens. The reason alleged for this was that the goat injured the olive, the sacred tree of Athena. So far, therefore, the relation of the goat to Athena is parallel to the relation of the horse to Virbius, both animals being excluded from the sanctuary on the ground of injury done by them to the god. But from Varro we learn that there was an exception to the rule which excluded the goat from the Acropolis. Once a year, he says, the goat was driven on to the Acropolis for a necessary sacrifice. Now, as has been remarked before, when an animal is sacrificed once and once only in the year, it is probably slain, not as a victim offered to the god, but as a representative of the god himself. Therefore we may infer that if a goat was sacrificed on the Acropolis once a year, it was sacrificed in the character of Athena herself, and it may be conjectured that the skin of the sacrificed animal was placed on the statue of the goddess and formed the *aegis*, which would thus be renewed annually. Similarly at Thebes in Egypt rams were sacred and were not sacrificed. But on one day in the year a ram was killed, and its skin was placed on the statue of the god Ammon. Now, if we knew the ritual of the Arician grove better, we might find that the rule of excluding horses from it, like the rule of excluding goats from the Acropolis at Athens, was subject to an annual exception, a horse being once a year taken into the grove and sacrificed as an embodiment of the god Virbius. By the usual misunderstanding the horse thus killed would come in time to be regarded as an enemy offered up in sacrifice to the god whom he had injured, like the pig which was sacrificed to Demeter and Osiris or the goat which was sacrificed to Dionysus, and possibly to Athena. It is so easy for a writer to record a rule without noticing

an exception that we need not wonder at finding the rule of the Arician grove recorded without any mention of an exception such as I suppose. If we had had only the statements of Athenaeus and Pliny, we should have known only the rule which forbade the sacrifice of goats to Athena and excluded them from the Acropolis, without being aware of the important exception which the fortunate preservation of Varro's work has revealed to us.

The conjecture that once a year a horse may have been sacrificed in the Arician grove as a representative of the deity of the grove derives some support from the similar sacrifice of a horse which took place once a year at Rome. On the fifteenth of October in each year a chariot-race was run on the Field of Mars. Stabbed with a spear, the right-hand horse of the victorious team was then sacrificed to Mars for the purpose of ensuring good crops, and its head was cut off and adorned with a string of loaves. Thereupon the inhabitants of two wards—the Sacred Way and the Subura—contended with each other who should get the head. If the people of the Sacred Way got it, they fastened it to a wall of the king's house, if the people of the Subura got it, they fastened it to the Mamilian tower. The horse's tail was cut off and carried to the king's house with such speed that the blood dripped on the hearth of the house. Further, it appears that the blood of the horse was caught and preserved till the twenty-first of April, when the Vestal Virgins mixed it with the blood of the unborn calves which had been sacrificed six days before. The mixture was then distributed to shepherds, and used by them for fumigating their flocks.

In this ceremony the decoration of the horse's head with a string of loaves, and the alleged object of the sacrifice, namely, to procure a good harvest, seem to indicate that the horse was killed as one of those animal representatives of the corn-spirit of which we have found so many examples. The custom of cutting off the horse's tail is like the African custom of cutting off the tails of the oxen and sacrificing them to obtain a good crop. In both the Roman and the African custom the animal apparently stands for the corn-spirit, and its fructifying power is supposed to reside especially in its tail. The latter idea occurs, as we have seen, in European folk-lore. Again, the practice of fumigating the cattle in spring with the blood of the horse may be compared with the practice of giving the Old Wife, the Maiden, or the *cljack* sheaf as fodder to the horses in spring or the cattle at Christmas, and giving the Yule Boar to the ploughing oxen or horses to eat in spring. All these usages aim at ensuring the blessing of the corn-spirit on the homestead and its inmates and storing it up for another year.

The Roman sacrifice of the October horse, as it was called, carries us back to the early days when the Subura, afterwards a low and squalid quarter of the great metropolis, was still a separate village, whose inhabitants engaged in a friendly contest on the harvest-field with their neighbours of Rome, then a little rural town. The Field

of Mars on which the ceremony took place lay beside the Tiber, and formed part of the king's domain down to the abolition of the monarchy. For tradition ran that at the time when the last of the kings was driven from Rome the corn stood ripe for the sickle on the crown lands beside the river, but no one would eat the accursed grain and it was flung into the river in such heaps that, the water being low with the summer heat, it formed the nucleus of an island. The horse sacrifice was thus an old autumn custom observed upon the king's corn-fields at the end of the harvest. The tail and blood of the horse, as the chief parts of the corn-spirit's representative, were taken to the king's house and kept there; just as in Germany the harvest-cock is nailed on the gable or over the door of the farmhouse, and as the last sheaf, in the form of the Maiden, is carried home and kept over the fireplace in the Highlands of Scotland. Thus the blessing of the corn-spirit was brought to the king's house and hearth and, through them, to the community of which he was the head. Similarly in the spring and autumn customs of Northern Europe the Maypole is sometimes set up in front of the house of the mayor or burgomaster, and the last sheaf at harvest is brought to him as the head of the village. But while the tail and blood fell to the king, the neighbouring village of the Subura, which no doubt once had a similar ceremony of its own, was gratified by being allowed to compete for the prize of the horse's head. The Mamilian tower, to which the Suburans nailed the horse's head when they succeeded in carrying it off, appears to have been a peel-tower or keep of the old Mamilian family, the magnates of the village. The ceremony thus performed on the king's fields and at his house on behalf of the whole town and of the neighbouring village presupposes a time when each township performed a similar ceremony on its own fields. In the rural districts of Latium the villages may have continued to observe the custom, each on its own land, long after the Roman hamlets had merged their separate harvest-homes in the common celebration on the king's lands. There is no intrinsic improbability in the supposition that the sacred grove of Aricia, like the Field of Mars at Rome, may have been the scene of a common harvest celebration, at which a horse was sacrificed with the same rude rites on behalf of the neighbouring villages. The horse would represent the fructifying spirit both of the tree and of the corn, for the two ideas melt into each other, as we see in customs like the Harvest-May.

## CHAPTER L

### EATING THE GOD

§ 1. *The Sacrament of First-Fruits*—We have now seen that the corn-spirit is represented sometimes in human, sometimes in animal form, and that in both cases he is killed in the person of his repre-

sentative and eaten sacramentally. To find examples of actually killing the human representative of the corn-spirit we had naturally to go to savage races, but the harvest-suppers of our European peasants have furnished unmistakable examples of the sacramental eating of animals as representatives of the corn-spirit. But further, as might have been anticipated, the new corn is itself eaten sacramentally, that is, as the body of the corn-spirit. In Wermland, Sweden, the farmer's wife uses the grain of the last sheaf to bake a loaf in the shape of a little girl; this loaf is divided amongst the whole household and eaten by them. Here the loaf represents the corn-spirit conceived as a maiden; just as in Scotland the corn-spirit is similarly conceived and represented by the last sheaf made up in the form of a woman and bearing the name of the Maiden. As usual, the corn-spirit is believed to reside in the last sheaf, and to eat a loaf made from the last sheaf is, therefore, to eat the corn-spirit itself. Similarly at La Palisse, in France, a man made of dough is hung upon the fir-tree which is carried on the last harvest-waggon. The tree and the dough-man are taken to the mayor's house and kept there till the vintage is over. Then the close of the harvest is celebrated by a feast at which the mayor breaks the dough-man in pieces and gives the pieces to the people to eat.

In these examples the corn-spirit is represented and eaten in human shape. In other cases, though the new corn is not baked in loaves of human shape, still the solemn ceremonies with which it is eaten suffice to indicate that it is partaken of sacramentally, that is, as the body of the corn-spirit. For example, the following ceremonies used to be observed by Lithuanian peasants at eating the new corn. About the time of the autumn sowing, when all the corn had been got in and the threshing had begun, each farmer held a festival called Sabarios, that is, "the mixing or throwing together." He took nine good handfuls of each kind of crop—wheat, barley, oats, flax, beans, lentils, and the rest, and each handful he divided into three parts. The twenty-seven portions of each grain were then thrown on a heap and all mixed up together. The grain used had to be that which was first threshed and winnowed and which had been set aside and kept for this purpose. A part of the grain thus mixed was employed to bake little loaves, one for each of the household, the rest was mixed with more barley or oats and made into beer. The first beer brewed from this mixture was for the drinking of the farmer, his wife, and children, the second brew was for the servants. The beer being ready, the farmer chose an evening when no stranger was expected. Then he knelt down before the barrel of beer, drew a jugful of the liquor and poured it on the bung of the barrel, saying, "O fruitful earth, make rye and barley and all kinds of corn to flourish." Next he took the jug to the parlour, where his wife and children awaited him. On the floor of the parlour lay bound a black or white or speckled (not a red) cock and a hen of the same colour and of the same brood, which must have been hatched within the year. Then the farmer knelt down, with the jug in his

hand, and thanked God for the harvest and prayed for a good crop next year. Next all lifted up their hands and said, "O God, and thou, O earth, we give you this cock and hen as a free-will offering." With that the farmer killed the fowls with the blows of a wooden spoon for he might not cut their heads off. After the first prayer and after killing each of the birds he poured out a third of the beer. Then his wife boiled the fowls in a new pot which had never been used before. After that, a bushel was set, bottom upwards, on the floor, and on it were placed the little loaves mentioned above and the boiled fowls. Next the new beer was fetched, together with a ladle and three mugs, none of which was used except on this occasion. When the farmer had ladled the beer into the mugs, the family knelt down round the bushel. The father then uttered a prayer and drank off the three mugs of beer. The rest followed his example. Then the loaves and the flesh of the fowls were eaten, after which the beer went round again, till every one had emptied each of the three mugs nine times. None of the food should remain over, but if anything did happen to be left, it was consumed next morning with the same ceremonies. The bones were given to the dog to eat, if he did not eat them all up, the remains were buried under the dung in the cattle-stall. This ceremony was observed at the beginning of December. On the day on which it took place no bad word might be spoken.

Such was the custom about two hundred years or more ago. At the present day in Lithuania, when new potatoes or loaves made from the new corn are being eaten, all the people at table pull each other's hair. The meaning of this last custom is obscure, but a similar custom was certainly observed by the heathen Lithuanians at their solemn sacrifices. Many of the Esthonians of the island of Oesel will not eat bread baked of the new corn till they have first taken a bite at a piece of iron. The iron is here plainly a charm, intended to render harmless the spirit that is in the corn. In Sutherlandshire at the present day, when the new potatoes are dug all the family must taste them, otherwise "the spirits in them [the potatoes] take offence, and the potatoes would not keep." In one part of Yorkshire it is still customary for the clergyman to cut the first corn; and my informant believes that the corn so cut is used to make the communion bread. If the latter part of the custom is correctly reported (and analogy is all in its favour), it shows how the Christian communion has absorbed within itself a sacrament which is doubtless far older than Christianity.

The Aino or Ainu of Japan are said to distinguish various kinds of millet as male and female respectively, and these kinds, taken together, are called "the divine husband and wife cereal" (*Umurek haru kamui*). "Therefore before millet is pounded and made into cakes for general eating, the old men have a few made for themselves first to worship. When they are ready they pray to them very earnestly and say: 'O thou cereal deity, we worship thee. Thou hast grown very well this year, and thy flavour will be sweet. Thou art good. The goddess of fire will be glad, and we also shall rejoice greatly. O thou god, O



thou divine cereal, do thou nourish the people I now partake of thee. I worship thee and give thee thanks' After having thus prayed, they, the worshippers, take a cake and eat it, and from this time the people may all partake of the new millet. And so with many gestures of homage and words of prayer this kind of food is dedicated to the well-being of the Anu No doubt the cereal offering is regarded as a tribute paid to god, but that god is no other than the seed itself; and it is only a god in so far as it is beneficial to the human body "

At the close of the rice harvest in the East Indian island of Buru, each clan meets at a common sacramental meal, to which every member of the clan is bound to contribute a little of the new rice This meal is called "eating the soul of the rice," a name which clearly indicates the sacramental character of the repast Some of the rice is also set apart and offered to the spirits Amongst the Alfoors of Minahassa, in Celebes, the priest sows the first rice-seed and plucks the first ripe rice in each field This rice he roasts and grinds into meal, and gives some of it to each of the household Shortly before the rice-harvest in Bolang Mongondo, another district of Celebes, an offering is made of a small pig or a fowl Then the priest plucks a little rice, first on his own field and next on those of his neighbours All the rice thus plucked by him he dries along with his own, and then gives it back to the respective owners, who have it ground and boiled When it is boiled the women take it back, with an egg, to the priest, who offers the egg in sacrifice and returns the rice to the women. Of this rice every member of the family, down to the youngest child, must partake. After this ceremony every one is free to get in his rice

Amongst the Burghers or Badagas, a tribe of the Neilgherry Hills in Southern India, the first handful of seed is sown and the first sheaf reaped by a Curumbar, a man of a different tribe, the members of which the Burghers regard as sorcerers The grain contained in the first sheaf "is that day reduced to meal, made into cakes, and, being offered as a first-fruit oblation, is, together with the remainder of the sacrificed animal, partaken of by the Burgher and the whole of his family, as the meat of a federal offering and sacrifice" Among the Hindoos of Southern India the eating of the new rice is the occasion of a family festival called Pongol The new rice is boiled in a new pot on a fire which is kindled at noon on the day when, according to Hindoo astrologers, the sun enters the tropic of Capricorn The boiling of the pot is watched with great anxiety by the whole family, for as the milk boils, so will the coming year be If the milk boils rapidly, the year will be prosperous; but it will be the reverse if the milk boils slowly Some of the new boiled rice is offered to the image of Ganesa, then every one partakes of it In some parts of Northern India the festival of the new crop is known as *Navan*, that is, "new grain." When the crop is ripe, the owner takes the omens, goes to the field, plucks five or six ears of barley in the spring crop and one of the millets in the autumn harvest This is brought home, parched, and mixed with coarse sugar, butter, and curds. Some of it is thrown

on the fire in the name of the village gods and deceased ancestors : the rest is eaten by the family.

The ceremony of eating the new yams at Onitsha, on the Niger, is thus described " Each headman brought out six yams, and cut down young branches of palm-leaves and placed them before his gate, roasted three of the yams, and got some kola-nuts and fish After the yam is roasted, the *Libia*, or country doctor, takes the yam, scrapes it into a sort of meal, and divides it into halves, he then takes one piece, and places it on the lips of the person who is going to eat the new yam. The eater then blows up the steam from the hot yam, and afterwards pokes the whole into his mouth, and says, ' I thank God for being permitted to eat the new yam ', he then begins to chew it heartily, with fish likewise "

Among the Nandi of British East Africa, when the eleusine grain is ripening in autumn, every woman who owns a cornfield goes out into it with her daughters, and they all pluck some of the ripe grain Each of the women then fixes one grain in her necklace and chews another, which she rubs on her forehead, throat, and breast No mark of joy escapes them ; sorrowfully they cut a basketful of the new corn, and carrying it home place it in the loft to dry As the ceiling is of wickerwork, a good deal of the grain drops through the crevices and falls into the fire, where it explodes with a crackling noise The people make no attempt to prevent this waste, for they regard the crackling of the grain in the fire as a sign that the souls of the dead are partaking of it A few days later porridge is made from the new grain and served up with milk at the evening meal All the members of the family take some of the porridge and dab it on the walls and roofs of the huts, also they put a little in their mouths and spit it out towards the east and on the outside of the huts Then, holding up some of the grain in his hand, the head of the family prays to God for health and strength, and likewise for milk, and everybody present repeats the words of the prayer after him

Amongst the Caffres of Natal and Zululand, no one may eat of the new fruits till after a festival which marks the beginning of the Caffre year and falls at the end of December or the beginning of January All the people assemble at the king's kraal, where they feast and dance Before they separate the " dedication of the people " takes place Various fruits of the earth, as corn, mealies, and pumpkins, mixed with the flesh of a sacrificed animal and with " medicine," are boiled in great pots, and a little of this food is placed in each man's mouth by the king himself After thus partaking of the sanctified fruits, a man is himself sanctified for the whole year, and may immediately get in his crops It is believed that if any man were to partake of the new fruits before the festival, he would die, if he were detected, he would be put to death, or at least all his cattle would be taken from him The holness of the new fruits is well marked by the rule that they must be cooked in a special pot

which is used only for this purpose, and on a new fire kindled by a magician through the friction of two sticks which are called "husband and wife"

° Among the Bechuanas it is a rule that before they partake of the new crops they must purify themselves. The purification takes place at the commencement of the new year on a day in January which is fixed by the chief. It begins in the great kraal of the tribe, where all the adult males assemble. Each of them takes in his hand leaves of a gourd called by the natives *lerotse* (described as something between a pumpkin and a vegetable marrow), and having crushed the leaves he anoints with the expressed juice his big toes and his navel, many people indeed apply the juice to all the joints of their body, but the better-informed say that this is a vulgar departure from ancient custom. After this ceremony in the great kraal every man goes home to his own kraal, assembles all the members of his family, men, women, and children, and smears them all with the juice of the *lerotse* leaves. Some of the leaves are also pounded, mixed with milk in a large wooden dish, and given to the dogs to lap up. Then the porridge plate of each member of the family is rubbed with the *lerotse* leaves. When this purification has been completed, but not before, the people are free to eat of the new crops.

The Bororo Indians of Brazil think that it would be certain death to eat the new maize before it has been blessed by the medicine-man. The ceremony of blessing it is as follows. The half-ripe husk is washed and placed before the medicine-man, who by dancing and singing for several hours, and by incessant smoking, works himself up into a state of ecstasy, whereupon he bites into the husk, trembling in every limb and uttering shrieks from time to time. A similar ceremony is performed whenever a large animal or a large fish is killed. The Bororo are firmly persuaded that were any man to touch unconsecrated maize or meat, before the ceremony had been completed, he and his whole tribe would perish.

Amongst the Creek Indians of North America, the *busk* or festival of first-fruits was the chief ceremony of the year. It was held in July or August, when the corn was ripe, and marked the end of the old year and the beginning of the new one. Before it took place, none of the Indians would eat or even handle any part of the new harvest. Sometimes each town had its own busk, sometimes several towns united to hold one in common. Before celebrating the busk, the people provided themselves with new clothes and new household utensils and furniture, they collected their old clothes and rubbish, together with all the remaining grain and other old provisions, cast them together in one common heap, and consumed them with fire. As a preparation for the ceremony, all the fires in the village were extinguished, and the ashes swept clean away. In particular, the hearth or altar of the temple was dug up and the ashes carried out. Then the chief priest put some roots of the button-snake plant, with some green tobacco leaves and a little of the new fruits, at the bottom

of the fireplace, which he afterwards commanded to be covered up with white clay, and wetted over with clean water. A thick arbour of green branches of young trees was then made over the altar. Meanwhile the women at home were cleaning out their houses, renewing the old hearths, and scouring all the cooking vessels that they might be ready to receive the new fire and the new fruits. The public or sacred square was carefully swept of even the smallest crumbs of previous feasts, "for fear of polluting the first-fruit offerings." Also every vessel that had contained or had been used about any food during the expiring year was removed from the temple before sunset. Then all the men who were not known to have violated the law of the first-fruit offering and that of marriage during the year were summoned by a crier to enter the holy square and observe a solemn fast. But the women (except six old ones), the children, and all who had not attained the rank of warriors were forbidden to enter the square. Sentinels were also posted at the corners of the square to keep out all persons deemed impure and all animals. A strict fast was then observed for two nights and a day, the devotees drinking a bitter decoction of button-snake root "in order to vomit and purge their sinful bodies." That the people outside the square might also be purified, one of the old men laid down a quantity of green tobacco at a corner of the square, this was carried off by an old woman and distributed to the people without, who chewed and swallowed it "in order to afflict their souls." During this general fast, the women, children, and men of weak constitution were allowed to eat after mid-day, but not before. On the morning when the fast ended, the women brought a quantity of the old year's food to the outside of the sacred square. These provisions were then fetched in and set before the famished multitude, but all traces of them had to be removed before noon. When the sun was declining from the meridian, all the people were commanded by the voice of a crier to stay within doors, to do no bad act, and to be sure to extinguish and throw away every spark of the old fire. Universal silence now reigned. Then the high priest made the new fire by the friction of two pieces of wood, and placed it on the altar under the green arbour. This new fire was believed to atone for all past crimes except murder. Next a basket of new fruits was brought, the high priest took out a little of each sort of fruit, rubbed it with bear's oil, and offered it, together with some flesh, "to the bountiful holy spirit of fire, as a first-fruit offering, and an annual oblation for sin." He also consecrated the sacred emetics (the button-snake root and the cassina or black-drink) by pouring a little of them into the fire. The persons who had remained outside now approached, without entering, the sacred square, and the chief priest thereupon made a speech, exhorting the people to observe their old rites and customs, announcing that the new divine fire had purged away the sins of the past year, and earnestly warning the women that, if any of them had not extinguished the old fire, or had contracted any impurity, they must forthwith depart,

“lest the divine fire should spoil both them and the people” Some of the new fire was then set down outside the holy square, the women carried it home joyfully, and laid it on their unpolluted hearths. When several towns had united to celebrate the festival, the new fire might thus be carried for several miles. The new fruits were then dressed on the new fires and eaten with bear’s oil, which was deemed indispensable. At one point of the festival the men rubbed the new corn between their hands, then on their faces and breasts. During the festival which followed, the warriors, dressed in their wild martial array, their heads covered with white down and carrying white feathers in their hands, danced round the sacred arbour, under which burned the new fire. The ceremonies lasted eight days, during which the strictest continence was practised. Towards the conclusion of the festival the warriors fought a mock battle, then the men and women together, in three circles, danced round the sacred fire. Lastly, all the people smeared themselves with white clay and bathed in running water. They came out of the water believing that no evil could now befall them for what they had done amiss in the past. So they departed in joy and peace.

To this day, also, the remnant of the Seminole Indians of Florida, a people of the same stock as the Creeks, hold an annual purification and festival called the Green Corn Dance, at which the new corn is eaten. On the evening of the first day of the festival they quaff a nauseous “Black Drink,” as it is called, which acts both as an emetic and a purgative, they believe that he who does not drink of this liquor cannot safely eat the new green corn, and besides that he will be sick at some time in the year. While the liquor is being drunk, the dancing begins, and the medicine-men join in it. Next day they eat of the green corn, the following day they fast, probably from fear of polluting the sacred food in their stomachs by contact with common food; but the third day they hold a great feast.

Even tribes which do not till the ground sometimes observe analogous ceremonies when they gather the first wild fruits or dig the first roots of the season. Thus among the Salish and Tinneh Indians of North-West America, “before the young people eat the first berries or roots of the season, they always addressed the fruit or plant, and begged for its favour and aid. In some tribes regular First-fruit ceremonies were annually held at the time of picking the wild fruit or gathering the roots, and also among the salmon-eating tribes when the run of the ‘sockeye’ salmon began. These ceremonies were not so much thanksgivings, as performances to ensure a plentiful crop or supply of the particular object desired, for if they were not properly and reverently carried out there was danger of giving offence to the ‘spirits’ of the objects, and being deprived of them.” For example, these Indians are fond of the young shoots or suckers of the wild raspberry, and they observe a solemn ceremony at eating the first of them in season. The shoots are cooked in a new pot, the people assemble and stand in a great circle with closed eyes, while the pre-

siding chief or medicine-man invokes the spirit of the plant, begging that it will be propitious to them and grant them a good supply of suckers. After this part of the ceremony is over the cooked suckers are handed to the presiding officer in a newly carved dish, and a small portion is given to each person present, who reverently and decorously eats it.

The Thompson Indians of British Columbia cook and eat the sunflower root (*Balsamorhiza sagittata*, Nutt), but they used to regard it as a mysterious being, and observed a number of taboos in connexion with it, for example, women who were engaged in digging or cooking the root must practise continence, and no man might come near the oven where the women were baking the root. When young people ate the first berries, roots, or other products of the season, they addressed a prayer to the Sunflower-Root as follows: "I inform thee that I intend to eat thee. Mayest thou always help me to ascend, so that I may always be able to reach the tops of mountains, and may I never be clumsy! I ask this from thee, Sunflower-Root. Thou art the greatest of all in mystery." To omit this prayer would make the eater lazy and cause him to sleep long in the morning.

These customs of the Thompson and other Indian tribes of North-West America are instructive, because they clearly indicate the motive, or at least one of the motives, which underlies the ceremonies observed at eating the first fruits of the season. That motive in the case of these Indians is simply a belief that the plant itself is animated by a conscious and more or less powerful spirit, who must be propitiated before the people can safely partake of the fruits or roots which are supposed to be part of his body. Now if this is true of wild fruits and roots, we may infer with some probability that it is also true of cultivated fruits and roots, such as yams, and in particular that it holds good of the cereals, such as wheat, barley, oats, rice, and maize. In all cases it seems reasonable to infer that the scruples which savages manifest at eating the first fruits of any crop, and the ceremonies which they observe before they overcome their scruples, are due at least in large measure to a notion that the plant or tree is animated by a spirit or even a deity, whose leave must be obtained, or whose favour must be sought, before it is possible to partake with safety of the new crop. This indeed is plainly affirmed of the Aino—they call the millet "the divine cereal," "the cereal deity," and they pray to and worship him before they will eat of the cakes made from the new millet. And even where the indwelling divinity of the first fruits is not expressly affirmed, it appears to be implied both by the solemn preparations made for eating them and by the danger supposed to be incurred by persons who venture to partake of them without observing the prescribed ritual. In all such cases, accordingly, we may not improperly describe the eating of the new fruits as a sacrament or communion with a deity, or at all events with a powerful spirit.

Among the usages which point to this conclusion are the custom of employing either new or specially reserved vessels to hold the new

fruits, and the practice of purifying the persons of the communicants before it is lawful to engage in the solemn act of communion with the divinity. Of all the modes of purification adopted on these occasions none perhaps brings out the sacramental virtue of the rite so clearly as the Creek and Seminole practice of taking a purgative before swallowing the new corn. The intention is thereby to prevent the sacred food from being polluted by contact with common food in the stomach of the eater. For the same reason Catholics partake of the Eucharist fasting, and among the pastoral Masai of Eastern Africa the young warriors, who live on meat and milk exclusively, are obliged to eat nothing but milk for so many days and then nothing but meat for so many more, and before they pass from the one food to the other they must make sure that none of the old food remains in their stomachs, this they do by swallowing a very powerful purgative and emetic.

In some of the festivals which we have examined, the sacrament of first-fruits is combined with a sacrifice or presentation of them to gods or spirits, and in course of time the sacrifice of first-fruits tends to throw the sacrament into the shade, if not to supersede it. The mere fact of offering the first-fruits to the gods or spirits comes now to be thought a sufficient preparation for eating the new corn, the higher powers having received their share, man is free to enjoy the rest. This mode of viewing the new fruits implies that they are regarded no longer as themselves instinct with divine life, but merely as a gift bestowed by the gods upon man, who is bound to express his gratitude and homage to his divine benefactors by returning to them a portion of their bounty.

§ 2 *Eating the God among the Aztecs* —The custom of eating bread sacramentally as the body of a god was practised by the Aztecs before the discovery and conquest of Mexico by the Spaniards. Twice a year, in May and December, an image of the great Mexican god Huitzilopochtli or Vitzilipuztli was made of dough, then broken in pieces, and solemnly eaten by his worshippers. The May ceremony is thus described by the historian Acosta. "The Mexicans in the month of May made their principal feast to their god Vitzilipuztli, and two days before this feast, the virgins whereof I have spoken (the which were shut up and secluded in the same temple and were as it were religious women) did mingle a quantity of the seed of beets with roasted maize, and then they did mould it with honey, making an idol of that paste in bigness like to that of wood, putting instead of eyes grains of green glass, of blue or white, and for teeth grains of maize set forth with all the ornament and furniture that I have said. This being finished, all the noblemen came and brought it an exquisite and rich garment, like unto that of the idol, wherewith they did attire it. Being thus clad and deckt, they did set it in an azured chair and in a litter to carry it on their shoulders. The morning of this feast being come, an hour before day all the maidens came forth attired in white, with new ornaments, the which that day were called the Sisters of their god

Vitzilpuztl, they came crowned with garlands of maize roasted and parched, being like unto azahar or the flower of orange, and about their necks they had great chains of the same, which went bauldrick-wise under their left arm. Their cheeks were dyed with vermilion, their arms from the elbow to the wrist were covered with red parrots' feathers." Young men, dressed in red robes and crowned like the virgins with maize, then carried the idol in its litter to the foot of the great pyramid-shaped temple, up the steep and narrow steps of which it was drawn to the music of flutes, trumpets, cornets, and drums. "While they mounted up the idol all the people stood in the court with much reverence and fear. Being mounted to the top, and that they had placed it in a little lodge of roses which they held ready, presently came the young men, which strewed many flowers of sundry kinds, wherewith they filled the temple both within and without. This done, all the virgins came out of their convent, bringing pieces of paste compounded of beets and roasted maize, which was of the same paste whereof their idol was made and compounded, and they were of the fashion of great bones. They delivered them to the young men, who carried them up and laid them at the idol's feet, wherewith they filled the whole place that it could receive no more. They called these morsels of paste the flesh and bones of Vitzilpuztl. Having laid abroad these bones, presently came all the ancients of the temple, priests, Levites, and all the rest of the ministers, according to their dignities and antiquities (for herein there was a strict order amongst them) one after another, with their veils of diverse colours and works, every one according to his dignity and office, having garlands upon their heads and chains of flowers about their necks, after them came their gods and goddesses whom they worshipped, of diverse figures, attired in the same livery, then putting themselves in order about those morsels and pieces of paste, they used certain ceremonies with singing and dancing. By means whereof they were blessed and consecrated for the flesh and bones of this idol. This ceremony and blessing (whereby they were taken for the flesh and bones of the idol) being ended, they honoured those pieces in the same sort as their god. All the city came to this goodly spectacle, and there was a commandment very strictly observed throughout all the land, that the day of the feast of the idol of Vitzilpuztl they should eat no other meat but this paste, with honey, whereof the idol was made. And this should be eaten at the point of day, and they should drink no water nor any other thing till after noon. they held it for an ill sign, yea, for sacrilege to do the contrary. but after the ceremonies ended, it was lawful for them to eat anything. During the time of this ceremony they hid the water from their little children, admonishing all such as had the use of reason not to drink any water, which, if they did, the anger of God would come upon them, and they should die, which they did observe very carefully and strictly. The ceremonies, dancing, and sacrifice ended, they went to unclothe themselves, and the priests and superiors of the temple took the idol of paste, which they spoiled of all the



ornaments it had, and made many pieces, as well of the idol itself as of the truncheons which they consecrated, and then they gave them to the people in manner of a communion, beginning with the greater, and continuing unto the rest, both men, women, and little children, who received it with such tears, fear, and reverence as it was an admirable thing, saying that they did eat the flesh and bones of God, wherewith they were grieved. Such as had any sick folks demanded thereof for them, and carried it with great reverence and veneration."

From this interesting passage we learn that the ancient Mexicans, even before the arrival of Christian missionaries, were fully acquainted with the doctrine of transubstantiation and acted upon it in the solemn rites of their religion. They believed that by consecrating bread their priests could turn it into the very body of their god, so that all who thereupon partook of the consecrated bread entered into a mystic communion with the deity by receiving a portion of his divine substance into themselves. The doctrine of transubstantiation, or the magical conversion of bread into flesh, was also familiar to the Aryans of ancient India long before the spread and even the rise of Christianity. The Brahmans taught that the rice-cakes offered in sacrifice were substitutes for human beings, and that they were actually converted into the real bodies of men by the manipulation of the priest. We read that "when it (the rice-cake) still consists of rice-meal, it is the hair. When he pours water on it, it becomes skin. When he mixes it, it becomes flesh. for then it becomes consistent; and consistent also is the flesh. When it is baked, it becomes bone. for then it becomes somewhat hard, and hard is the bone. And when he is about to take it off (the fire) and sprinkles it with butter, he changes it into marrow. This is the completeness which they call the fivefold animal sacrifice."

Now, too, we can perfectly understand why on the day of their solemn communion with the deity the Mexicans refused to eat any other food than the consecrated bread which they revered as the very flesh and bones of their God, and why up till noon they might drink nothing at all, not even water. They feared no doubt to defile the portion of God in their stomachs by contact with common things. A similar pious fear led the Creek and Seminole Indians, as we saw, to adopt the more thoroughgoing expedient of rinsing out their bodies by a strong purgative before they dared to partake of the sacrament of first-fruits.

At the festival of the winter solstice in December the Aztecs killed their god Huitzilopochtli in effigy first and ate him afterwards. As a preparation for this solemn ceremony an image of the deity in the likeness of a man was fashioned out of seeds of various sorts, which were kneaded into a dough with the blood of children. The bones of the god were represented by pieces of acacia wood. This image was placed on the chief altar of the temple, and on the day of the festival the king offered incense to it. Early next day it was taken down and set on its feet in a great hall. Then a priest, who bore the name

ted the part of the god Quetzalcoatl, took a flint-tipped dart and it into the breast of the dough-image, piercing it through and h This was called "killing the god Huitzilopochtli so that his might be eaten" One of the priests cut out the heart of the and gave it to the king to eat. The rest of the image was l into minute pieces, of which every man great and small, down male children in the cradle, receive one to eat. But no woman taste a morsel The ceremony was called *teoqualo*, that is, s eaten "

another festival the Mexicans made little images like men, stood for the cloud-capped mountains These images were d of a paste of various seeds and were dressed in paper orna- Some people fashioned five, others ten, others as many as of them Having been made, they were placed in the oratory house and worshipped Four times in the course of the night gs of food were brought to them in tiny vessels, and people nd played the flute before them through all the hours of dark- At break of day the priests stabbed the images with a weaver's ment, cut off their heads, and tore out their hearts, which they ed to the master of the house on a green saucer. The bodies images were then eaten by all the family, especially by the s, "in order that by eating them they might be preserved from distempers, to which those persons who were negligent of o to those deities conceived themselves to be subject "

*Many Manni at Aricia* —We are now able to suggest an explana- the proverb "There are many Manni at Aricia" Certain made in the shape of men were called by the Romans *maniae*, appears that this kind of loaf was especially made at Aricia. Mania, the name of one of these loaves, was also the name of ther or Grandmother of Ghosts, to whom woollen effigies of nd women were dedicated at the festival of the Compitalia. effigies were hung at the doors of all the houses in Rome; gy was hung up for every free person in the house, and one of a different kind, for every slave The reason was that day the ghosts of the dead were believed to be going about, was hoped that, either out of good nature or through simple tence, they would carry off the effigies at the door instead of ng people in the house According to tradition, these woollen were substitutes for a former custom of sacrificing human

Upon data so fragmentary and uncertain, it is impossible d with confidence, but it seems worth suggesting that the m human form, which appear to have been baked at Aricia, sacramental bread, and that in the old days, when the divine i the Wood was annually slain, loaves were made in his image, e paste figures of the gods in Mexico, and were eaten sacra- y by his worshippers The Mexican sacraments in honour of opochtli were also accompanied by the sacrifice of human . The tradition that the founder of the sacred grove at Aricia

was a man named Manius, from whom many Manu were descended, would thus be an etymological myth invented to explain the name *maniae* as applied to these sacramental loaves. A dim recollection of the original connexion of the loaves with human sacrifices may perhaps be traced in the story that the effigies dedicated to Mania at the Compitalia were substitutes for human victims. The story itself, however, is probably devoid of foundation, since the practice of putting up dummies to divert the attention of ghosts or demons from living people is not uncommon.

For example, the Tibetans stand in fear of innumerable earth-demons, all of whom are under the authority of Old Mother Khon-ma. This goddess, who may be compared to the Roman Mania, the Mother or Grandmother of Ghosts, is dressed in golden-yellow robes, holds a golden noose in her hand, and rides on a ram. In order to bar the dwelling-house against the foul fiends, of whom Old Mother Khon-ma is mistress, an elaborate structure somewhat resembling a chandelier is fixed above the door on the outside of the house. It contains a ram's skull, a variety of precious objects such as gold-leaf, silver, and turquoise, also some dry food, such as rice, wheat, and pulse, and finally images or pictures of a man, a woman, and a house. "The object of these figures of a man, wife, and house is to deceive the demons should they still come in spite of this offering, and to mislead them into the belief that the foregoing pictures are the inmates of the house, so that they may wreak their wrath on these bits of wood and so save the real human occupants." When all is ready, a priest prays to Old Mother Khon-ma that she would be pleased to accept these dainty offerings and to close the open doors of the earth, in order that the demons may not come forth to infest and injure the household.

Again, effigies are often employed as a means of preventing or curing sickness, the demons of disease either mistake the effigies for living people or are persuaded or compelled to enter them, leaving the real men and women well and whole. Thus the Alfoors of Minahassa, in Celebes, will sometimes transport a sick man to another house, while they leave on his bed a dummy made up of a pillow and clothes. This dummy the demon is supposed to mistake for the sick man, who consequently recovers. Cure or prevention of this sort seems to find especial favour with the natives of Borneo. Thus, when an epidemic is raging among them, the Dyaks of the Katoengouw river set up wooden images at their doors in the hope that the demons of the plague may be deluded into carrying off the effigies instead of the people. Among the Oloh Ngadju of Borneo, when a sick man is supposed to be suffering from the assaults of a ghost, puppets of dough or rice-meal are made and thrown under the house as substitutes for the patient, who thus rids himself of the ghost. In certain of the western districts of Borneo if a man is taken suddenly and violently sick, the physician, who in this part of the world is generally an old woman, fashions a wooden image and brings it seven times into contact with the sufferer's head, while she says "This image serves to take the place of the sick man,

sickness, pass over into the image " Then, with some rice, salt, and tobacco in a little basket, the substitute is carried to the spot where the evil spirit is supposed to have entered into the man There it is set upright on the ground, after the physician has invoked the spirit as follows " O devil, here is an image which stands instead of the sick man Release the soul of the sick man and plague the image, for it is indeed prettier and better than he " Batak magicians can conjure the demon of disease out of the patient's body into an image made out of a banana-tree with a human face and wrapt up in magic herbs , the image is then hurriedly removed and thrown away or buried beyond the boundaries of the village Sometimes the image, dressed as a man or a woman according to the sex of the patient, is deposited at a cross-road or other thoroughfare, in the hope that some passer-by, seeing it, may start and cry out, " Ah ! So-and-So is dead " , for such an exclamation is supposed to delude the demon of disease into a belief that he has accomplished his fell purpose, so he takes himself off and leaves the sufferer to get well The Mai Darat, a Sakai tribe of the Malay Peninsula, attribute all kinds of diseases to the agency of spirits which they call *nyam* , fortunately, however, the magician can induce these maleficent beings to come out of the sick person and take up their abode in rude figures of grass, which are hung up outside the houses in little bell-shaped shrines decorated with peeled sticks During an epidemic of small-pox the Ewe negroes will sometimes clear a space outside of the town, where they erect a number of low mounds and cover them with as many little clay figures as there are people in the place Pots of food and water are also set out for the refreshment of the spirit of small-pox, who, it is hoped, will take the clay figures and spare the living folk , and to make assurance doubly sure the road into the town is barricaded against him

With these examples before us we may surmise that the woollen effigies, which at the festival of the Compitalia might be seen hanging at the doors of all the houses in ancient Rome, were not substitutes for human victims who had formerly been sacrificed at this season, but rather vicarious offerings presented to the Mother or Grandmother of Ghosts, in the hope that on her rounds through the city she would accept or mistake the effigies for the inmates of the house and so spare the living for another year It is possible that the puppets made of rushes, which in the month of May the pontiffs and Vestal Virgins annually threw into the Tiber from the old Sublician bridge at Rome, had originally the same significance , that is, they may have been designed to purge the city from demoniac influence by diverting the attention of the demons from human beings to the puppets and then toppling the whole uncanny crew, neck and crop, into the river, which would soon sweep them far out to sea In precisely the same way the natives of Old Calabar used periodically to rid their town of the devils which infested it by luring the unwary demons into a number of lamentable scarecrows, which they afterwards flung into the river. This interpretation of the Roman custom is supported to some extent

by the evidence of Plutarch, who speaks of the ceremony as "the greatest of purifications."

## CHAPTER LI

### HOMOEOPATHIC MAGIC OF A FLESH DIET

THE practice of killing a god has now been traced amongst peoples who have reached the agricultural stage of society. We have seen that the spirit of the corn, or of other cultivated plants, is commonly represented either in human or in animal form, and that in some places a custom has prevailed of killing annually either the human or the animal representative of the god. One reason for thus killing the corn-spirit in the person of his representative has been given implicitly in an earlier part of this work. we may suppose that the intention was to guard him or her (for the corn-spirit is often feminine) from the enfeeblement of old age by transferring the spirit, while still hale and hearty, to the person of a youthful and vigorous successor. Apart from the desirability of renewing his divine energies, the death of the corn-spirit may have been deemed inevitable under the sickles or the knives of the reapers, and his worshippers may accordingly have felt bound to acquiesce in the sad necessity. But, further, we have found a widespread custom of eating the god sacramentally, either in the shape of the man or animal who represents the god, or in the shape of bread made in human or animal form. The reasons for thus partaking of the body of the god are, from the primitive standpoint, simple enough. The savage commonly believes that by eating the flesh of an animal or man he acquires not only the physical, but even the moral and intellectual qualities which were characteristic of that animal or man, so when the creature is deemed divine, our simple savage naturally expects to absorb a portion of its divinity along with its material substance. It may be well to illustrate by instances this common faith in the acquisition of virtues or vices of many kinds through the medium of animal food, even when there is no pretence that the viands consist of the body or blood of a god. The doctrine forms part of the widely ramified system of sympathetic or homoeopathic magic.

Thus, for example, the Creeks, Cherokee, and kindred tribes of North American Indians "believe that nature is possest of such a property, as to transfuse into men and animals the qualities, either of the food they use, or of those objects that are presented to their senses, he who feeds on venison is, according to their physical system, swifter and more sagacious than the man who lives on the flesh of the clumsy bear, or helpless dunghill fowls, the slow-footed tame cattle, or the heavy wallowing swine. This is the reason that several of their old men recommend, and say, that formerly their greatest chieftains observed a constant rule in their diet, and seldom ate of any animal

of a gross quality, or heavy motion of body, fancying it conveyed a dullness through the whole system, and disabled them from exerting themselves with proper vigour in their martial, civil, and religious duties " The Zaparo Indians of Ecuador " will, unless from necessity, in most cases not eat any heavy meats, such as tapir and peccary, but confine themselves to birds, monkeys, deer, fish, etc., principally because they argue that the heavier meats make them unwieldy, like the animals who supply the flesh, impeding their agility, and unfitting them for the chase " Similarly some of the Brazilian Indians would eat no beast, bird, or fish that ran, flew, or swam slowly, lest by partaking of its flesh they should lose their agility and be unable to escape from their enemies. The Caribs abstained from the flesh of pigs lest it should cause them to have small eyes like pigs, and they refused to partake of tortoises from a fear that if they did so they would become heavy and stupid like the animal. Among the Fans of West Africa men in the prime of life never eat tortoises for a similar reason, they imagine that if they did so, their vigour and fleetness of foot would be gone. But old men may eat tortoises freely, because having already lost the power of running they can take no harm from the flesh of the slow-footed creature.

While many savages thus fear to eat the flesh of slow-footed animals lest they should themselves become slow-footed, the Bushmen of South Africa purposely ate the flesh of such creatures, and the reason which they gave for doing so exhibits a curious refinement of savage philosophy. They imagined that the game which they pursued would be influenced sympathetically by the food in the body of the hunter, so that if he had eaten of swift-footed animals, the quarry would be swift-footed also and would escape him, whereas if he had eaten of slow-footed animals, the quarry would also be slow-footed, and he would be able to overtake and kill it. For that reason hunters of gemsbok particularly avoided eating the flesh of the swift and agile springbok, indeed they would not even touch it with their hands, because they believed the springbok to be a very lively creature which did not go to sleep at night, and they thought that if they ate springbok, the gemsbok which they hunted would likewise not be willing to go to sleep, even at night. How, then, could they catch it?

The Namaquas abstain from eating the flesh of hares, because they think it would make them faint-hearted as a hare. But they eat the flesh of the lion, or drink the blood of the leopard or lion, to get the courage and strength of these beasts. The Bushmen will not give their children a jackal's heart to eat, lest it should make them timid like the jackal, but they give them a leopard's heart to eat to make them brave like the leopard. When a Wagogo man of East Africa kills a lion, he eats the heart in order to become brave like a lion, but he thinks that to eat the heart of a hen would make him timid. When a serious disease has attacked a Zulu kraal, the medicine-man takes the bone of a very old dog, or the bone of an old cow, bull, or other very old animal, and administers it to the

healthy as well as to the sick people, in order that they may live to be as old as the animal of whose bone they have partaken. So to restore the aged Aeson to youth, the witch Medea infused into his veins a decoction of the liver of the long-lived deer and the head of a crow that had outlived nine generations of men.

Among the Dyaks of North-West Borneo young men and warriors may not eat venison, because it would make them as timid as deer, but the women and very old men are free to eat it. However, among the Kayans of the same region, who share the same view as to the ill effect of eating venison, men will partake of the dangerous viand provided it is cooked in the open air, for then the timid spirit of the animal is supposed to escape at once into the jungle and not to enter into the eater. The Aino believe that the heart of the water-ousel is exceedingly wise, and that in speech the bird is most eloquent. Therefore whenever he is killed, he should be at once torn open and his heart wrenched out and swallowed before it has time to grow cold or suffer damage of any kind. If a man swallows it thus, he will become very fluent and wise, and will be able to argue down all his adversaries. In Northern India people fancy that if you eat the eyeballs of an owl you will be able like an owl to see in the dark.

When the Kansas Indians were going to war, a feast used to be held in the chief's hut, and the principal dish was dog's flesh, because, said the Indians, the animal who is so brave that he will let himself be cut in pieces in defence of his master, must needs inspire valour. Men of the Buru and Aru Islands, East Indies, eat the flesh of dogs in order to be bold and nimble in war. Amongst the Papuans of the Port Moresby and Motumotu districts, New Guinea, young lads eat strong pig, wallaby, and large fish, in order to acquire the strength of the animal or fish. Some of the natives of Northern Australia fancy that by eating the flesh of the kangaroo or emu they are enabled to jump or run faster than before. The Miris of Assam prize tiger's flesh as food for men, it gives them strength and courage. But "it is not suited for women, it would make them too strong-minded." In Corea the bones of tigers fetch a higher price than those of leopards as a means of inspiring courage. A Chinaman in Seoul bought and ate a whole tiger to make himself brave and fierce. In Norse legend, Ingiald, son of King Aunund, was timid in his youth, but after eating the heart of a wolf he became very bold, Hialto gained strength and courage by eating the heart of a bear and drinking its blood.

In Morocco lethargic patients are given ants to swallow, and to eat lion's flesh will make a coward brave, but people abstain from eating the hearts of fowls, lest thereby they should be rendered timid. When a child is late in learning to speak, the Turks of Central Asia will give it the tongues of certain birds to eat. A North American Indian thought that brandy must be a decoction of hearts and tongues, "because," said he, "after drinking it I fear nothing, and I talk wonderfully." In Java there is a tiny earthworm which now and then utters a shrill sound like that of the alarum of a small clock.

Hence when a public dancing girl has screamed herself hoarse in the exercise of her calling, the leader of the troop makes her eat some of these worms, in the belief that thus she will regain her voice and will, after swallowing them, be able to scream as shrilly as ever. The people of Darfur, in Central Africa, think that the liver is the seat of the soul, and that a man may enlarge his soul by eating the liver of an animal. "Whenever an animal is killed its liver is taken out and eaten, but the people are most careful not to touch it with their hands, as it is considered sacred; it is cut up in small pieces and eaten raw, the bits being conveyed to the mouth on the point of a knife, or the sharp point of a stick. Any one who may accidentally touch the liver is strictly forbidden to partake of it, which prohibition is regarded as a great misfortune for him." Women are not allowed to eat liver, because they have no soul.

Again, the flesh and blood of dead men are commonly eaten and drunk to inspire bravery, wisdom, or other qualities for which the men themselves were remarkable, or which are supposed to have their special seat in the particular part eaten. Thus among the mountain tribes of South-eastern Africa there are ceremonies by which the youths are formed into guilds or lodges, and among the rites of initiation there is one which is intended to infuse courage, intelligence, and other qualities into the novices. Whenever an enemy who has behaved with conspicuous bravery is killed, his liver, which is considered the seat of valour, his ears, which are supposed to be the seat of intelligence, the skin of his forehead, which is regarded as the seat of perseverance, his testicles, which are held to be the seat of strength, and other members, which are viewed as the seat of other virtues, are cut from his body and baked to cinders. The ashes are carefully kept in the horn of a bull, and, during the ceremonies observed at circumcision, are mixed with other ingredients into a kind of paste, which is administered by the tribal priest to the youths. By this means the strength, valour, intelligence, and other virtues of the slain are believed to be imparted to the eaters. When Basutos of the mountains have killed a very brave foe, they immediately cut out his heart and eat it, because this is supposed to give them his courage and strength in battle. When Sir Charles M'Carthy was killed by the Ashantees in 1824, it is said that his heart was devoured by the chiefs of the Ashantee army, who hoped by this means to imbibe his courage. His flesh was dried and parcelled out among the lower officers for the same purpose, and his bones were long kept at Coomassie as national fetishes. The Nauras Indians of New Granada ate the hearts of Spaniards when they had the opportunity, hoping thereby to make themselves as dauntless as the dreaded Castilian chivalry. The Sioux Indians used to reduce to powder the heart of a valiant enemy and swallow the powder, hoping thus to appropriate the dead man's valour.

But while the human heart is thus commonly eaten for the sake of imbuing the eater with the qualities of its original owner, it is not,



as we have already seen, the only part of the body which is consumed for this purpose. Thus warriors of the Theddora and Ngango tribes of South-eastern Australia used to eat the hands and feet of their slain enemies, believing that in this way they acquired some of the qualities and courage of the dead. The Kamilaroi of New South Wales ate the liver as well as the heart of a brave man to get his courage. In Tonquin also there is a popular superstition that the liver of a brave man makes brave any who partake of it. With a like intent the Chinese swallow the bile of notorious bandits who have been executed. The Dyaks of Sarawak used to eat the palms of the hands and the flesh of the knees of the slain in order to steady their own hands and strengthen their own knees. The Tolalaki, notorious head-hunters of Central Celebes, drink the blood and eat the brains of their victims that they may become brave. The Italones of the Philippine Islands drink the blood of their slain enemies, and eat part of the back of their heads and of their entrails raw to acquire their courage. For the same reason the Efugaos, another tribe of the Philippines, suck the brains of their foes. In like manner the Kai of German New Guinea eat the brains of the enemies they kill in order to acquire their strength. Among the Kimbunda of Western Africa, when a new king succeeds to the throne, a brave prisoner of war is killed in order that the king and nobles may eat his flesh, and so acquire his strength and courage. The notorious Zulu chief Matuana drank the gall of thirty chiefs, whose people he had destroyed, in the belief that it would make him strong. It is a Zulu fancy that by eating the centre of the forehead and the eyebrow of an enemy they acquire the power of looking steadfastly at a foe. Before every warlike expedition the people of Minahassa in Celebes used to take the locks of hair of a slain foe and dabble them in boiling water to extract the courage; this infusion of bravery was then drunk by the warriors. In New Zealand "the chief was an *atua* [god], but there were powerful and powerless gods, each naturally sought to make himself one of the former; the plan therefore adopted was to incorporate the spirits of others with their own, thus, when a warrior slew a chief, he immediately gouged out his eyes and swallowed them, the *atua tonga*, or divinity, being supposed to reside in that organ; thus he not only killed the body, but also possessed himself of the soul of his enemy, and consequently the more chiefs he slew the greater did his divinity become."

It is now easy to understand why a savage should desire to partake of the flesh of an animal or man whom he regards as divine. By eating the body of the god he shares in the god's attributes and powers. And when the god is a corn-god, the corn is his proper body, when he is a vine-god, the juice of the grape is his blood, and so by eating the bread and drinking the wine the worshipper partakes of the real body and blood of his god. Thus the drinking of wine in the rites of a vine-god like Dionysus is not an act of revelry, it is a solemn sacrament. Yet a time comes when reasonable men find it

hard to understand how any one in his senses can suppose that by eating bread or drinking wine he consumes the body or blood of a deity. "When we call corn Ceres and wine Bacchus," says Cicero, "we use a common figure of speech, but do you imagine that anybody is so insane as to believe that the thing he feeds upon is a god?"

## CHAPTER LII

### KILLING THE DIVINE ANIMAL

§ 1 *Killing the Sacred Buzzard*—In the preceding chapters we saw that many communities which have progressed so far as to subsist mainly by agriculture have been in the habit of killing and eating their farinaceous deities either in their proper form of corn, rice, and so forth, or in the borrowed shapes of animals and men. It remains to show that hunting and pastoral tribes, as well as agricultural peoples, have been in the habit of killing the beings whom they worship. Among the worshipful beings or gods, if indeed they deserve to be dignified by that name, whom hunters and shepherds adore and kill are animals pure and simple, not animals regarded as embodiments of other supernatural beings. Our first example is drawn from the Indians of California, who living in a fertile country under a serene and temperate sky, nevertheless rank near the bottom of the savage scale. The Acagchemem tribe adored the great buzzard, and once a year they celebrated a great festival called *Panes* or bird-feast in its honour. The day selected for the festival was made known to the public on the evening before its celebration and preparations were at once made for the erection of a special temple (*vanquech*), which seems to have been a circular or oval enclosure of stakes with the stuffed skin of a coyote or prairie-wolf set up on a hurdle to represent the god Chinigchinich. When the temple was ready, the bird was carried into it in solemn procession and laid on an altar erected for the purpose. Then all the young women, whether married or single, began to run to and fro, as if distracted, some in one direction and some in another, while the elders of both sexes remained silent spectators of the scene, and the captains, tricked out in paint and feathers, danced round their adored bird. These ceremonies being concluded, they seized upon the bird and carried it to the principal temple, all the assembly uniting in the grand display, and the captains dancing and singing at the head of the procession. Arrived at the temple, they killed the bird without losing a drop of its blood. The skin was removed entire and preserved with the feathers as a relic or for the purpose of making the festal garment or *paelt*. The carcase was buried in a hole in the temple, and the old women gathered round the grave weeping and moaning bitterly, while they threw various kinds of seeds or pieces of food on it, crying out, "Why did you run

away? Would you not have been better with us? you would have made *pimole* (a kind of gruel) as we do, and if you had not run away, you would not have become a *Panes*," and so on. When this ceremony was concluded, the dancing was resumed and kept up for three days and nights. They said that the *Panes* was a woman who had run off to the mountains and there been changed into a bird by the god Chinigchinich. They believed that though they sacrificed the bird annually, she came to life again and returned to her home in the mountains. Moreover they thought that "as often as the bird was killed, it became multiplied, because every year all the different Capitanes celebrated the same feast of *Panes*, and were firm in the opinion that the birds sacrificed were but one and the same female."

The unity in multiplicity thus postulated by the Californians is very noticeable and helps to explain their motive for killing the divine bird. The notion of the life of a species as distinct from that of an individual, easy and obvious as it seems to us, appears to be one which the Californian savage cannot grasp. He is unable to conceive the life of the species otherwise than as an individual life, and therefore as exposed to the same dangers and calamities which menace and finally destroy the life of the individual. Apparently he imagines that a species left to itself will grow old and die like an individual, and that therefore some step must be taken to save from extinction the particular species which he regards as divine. The only means he can think of to avert the catastrophe is to kill a member of the species in whose veins the tide of life is still running strong and has not yet stagnated among the fens of old age. The life thus diverted from one channel will flow, he fancies, more freshly and freely in a new one, in other words, the slain animal will revive and enter on a new term of life with all the spring and energy of youth. To us this reasoning is transparently absurd, but so too is the custom. A similar confusion, it may be noted, between the individual life and the life of the species was made by the Samoans. Each family had for its god a particular species of animal, yet the death of one of these animals, for example an owl, was not the death of the god, "he was supposed to be yet alive, and incarnate in all the owls in existence."

§ 2 *Killing the Sacred Ram*—The rude Californian rite which we have just considered has a close parallel in the religion of ancient Egypt. The Thebans and all other Egyptians who worshipped the Theban god Ammon held rams to be sacred, and would not sacrifice them. But once a year at the festival of Ammon they killed a ram, skinned it, and clothed the image of the god in the skin. Then they mourned over the ram and buried it in a sacred tomb. The custom was explained by a story that Zeus had once exhibited himself to Hercules clad in the fleece and wearing the head of a ram. Of course the ram in this case was simply the beast-god of Thebes, as the wolf was the beast-god of Lycopolis, and the goat was the beast-god of Mendes. In other words, the ram was Ammon himself. On the monuments, it is true, Ammon appears in semi-human form with

the body of a man and the head of a ram. But this only shows that he was in the usual chrysalis state through which beast-gods regularly pass before they emerge as full-blown anthropomorphic gods. The ram, therefore, was killed, not as a sacrifice to Ammon, but as the god himself, whose identity with the beast is plainly shown by the custom of clothing his image in the skin of the slain ram. The reason for thus killing the ram-god annually may have been that which I have assigned for the general custom of killing a god and for the special Californian custom of killing the divine buzzard. As applied to Egypt, this explanation is supported by the analogy of the bull-god Apis, who was not suffered to outlive a certain term of years. The intention of thus putting a limit to the life of the human god was, as I have argued, to secure him from the weakness and frailty of age. The same reasoning would explain the custom—probably an older one—of putting the beast-god to death annually, as was done with the ram of Thebes.

303 17 858

One point in the Theban ritual—the application of the skin to the image of the god—deserves particular attention. If the god was at first the living ram, his representation by an image must have originated later. But how did it originate? One answer to this question is perhaps furnished by the practice of preserving the skin of the animal which is slain as divine. The Californians, as we have seen, preserved the skin of the buzzard, and the skin of the goat, which is killed on the harvest-field as a representative of the corn-spirit, is kept for various superstitious purposes. The skin in fact was kept as a token or memorial of the god, or rather as containing in it a part of the divine life, and it had only to be stuffed or stretched upon a frame to become a regular image of him. At first an image of this kind would be renewed annually, the new image being provided by the skin of the slain animal. But from annual images to permanent images the transition is easy. We have seen that the older custom of cutting a new May-tree every year was superseded by the practice of maintaining a permanent Maypole, which was, however, annually decked with fresh leaves and flowers, and even surmounted each year by a fresh young tree. Similarly when the stuffed skin, as a representative of the god, was replaced by a permanent image of him in wood, stone, or metal, the permanent image was annually clad in the fresh skin of the slain animal. When this stage had been reached, the custom of killing the ram came naturally to be interpreted as a sacrifice offered to the image, and was explained by a story like that of Ammon and Hercules.

17791

§ 3 *Killing the Sacred Serpent*—West Africa appears to furnish another example of the annual killing of a sacred animal and the preservation of its skin. The negroes of Issapoo, in the island of Fernando Po, regard the cobra-capella as their guardian deity, who can do them good or ill, bestow riches or inflict disease and death. The skin of one of these reptiles is hung tail downwards from a branch of the highest tree in the public square, and the placing of it on the

tree is an annual ceremony As soon as the ceremony is over, all children born within the past year are carried out and their hands made to touch the tail of the serpent's skin The latter custom is clearly a way of placing the infants under the protection of the tribal god Similarly in Senegambia a python is expected to visit every child of the Python clan within eight days after birth, and the Psylli, a Snake clan of ancient Africa, used to expose their infants to snakes in the belief that the snakes would not harm true-born children of the clan

§ 4. *Killing the Sacred Turtles*—In the Californian, Egyptian, and Fernando Po customs the worship of the animal seems to have no relation to agriculture, and may therefore be presumed to date from the hunting or pastoral stage of society. The same may be said of the following custom, though the Zuni Indians of New Mexico, who practise it, are now settled in walled villages or towns of a peculiar type, and practise agriculture and the arts of pottery and weaving. But the Zuni custom is marked by certain features which appear to place it in a somewhat different class from the preceding cases It may be well therefore to describe it at full length in the words of an eye-witness

“With midsummer the heat became intense My brother [*i.e.* adopted Indian brother] and I sat, day after day, in the cool under-rooms of our house,—the latter [*sic*] busy with his quaint forge and crude appliances, working Mexican coins over into bangles, girdles, ear-rings, buttons, and what not, for savage ornament Though his tools were wonderfully rude, the work he turned out by dint of combined patience and ingenuity was remarkably beautiful One day as I sat watching him, a procession of fifty men went hastily down the hill, and off westward over the plain They were solemnly led by a painted and shell-bedecked priest, and followed by the torch-bearing Shu-lu-wit-si or God of Fire After they had vanished, I asked old brother what it all meant

“‘They are going,’ said he, ‘to the city of the Ka-ka and the home of our others’

“Four days after, towards sunset, costumed and masked in the beautiful paraphernalia of the Ka-k’ok-shi, or ‘Good Dance,’ they returned in file up the same pathway, each bearing in his arms a basket filled with living, squirming turtles, which he regarded and carried as tenderly as a mother would her infant Some of the wretched reptiles were carefully wrapped in soft blankets, their heads and forefeet protruding,—and, mounted on the backs of the plume-bedecked pilgrims, made ludicrous but solemn caricatures of little children in the same position While I was at supper upstairs that evening, the governor’s brother-in-law came in He was welcomed by the family as if a messenger from heaven He bore in his tremulous fingers one of the much-abused and rebellious turtles Paint still adhered to his hands and bare feet, which led me to infer that he had formed one of the sacred embassy

“‘So you went to Ka-thlu-el-lon, did you?’ I asked

" 'E'e,' replied the weary man, in a voice husky with long chanting, as he sank, almost exhausted, on a roll of skins which had been placed for him, and tenderly laid the turtle on the floor. No sooner did the creature find itself at liberty than it made off as fast as its lame legs would take it. Of one accord, the family forsook dish, spoon, and drinking-cup, and grabbing from a sacred meal-bowl whole handfuls of the contents, hurriedly followed the turtle about the room, into dark corners, around water-jars, behind the grinding-troughs, and out into the middle of the floor again, praying and scattering meal on its back as they went. At last, strange to say, it approached the foot-sore man who had brought it.

" 'Ha !' he exclaimed with emotion ; ' see it comes to me again ; ah, what great favours the fathers of all grant me this day,' and, passing his hand gently over the sprawling animal, he inhaled from his palm deeply and long, at the same time invoking the favour of the gods. Then he leaned his chin upon his hand, and with large, wistful eyes regarded his ugly captive as it sprawled about, blinking its meal-bedimmed eyes, and clawing the smooth floor in memory of its native element. At this juncture I ventured a question.

" ' Why do you not let him go, or give him some water ? '

" Slowly the man turned his eyes toward me, an odd mixture of pain, indignation, and pity on his face, while the worshipful family stared at me with holy horror.

" ' Poor younger brother ! ' he said at last, ' know you not how precious it is ? It die ? It will *not* die, I tell you, it cannot die '

" ' But it will die if you don't feed it and give it water '

" ' I tell you it *cannot* die, it will only change houses to-morrow, and go back to the home of its brothers. Ah, well ! How should *you* know ? ' he mused. Turning to the blinded turtle again. ' Ah ! my poor dear lost child or parent, my sister or brother to have been ! Who knows which ? Maybe my own great-grandfather or mother ! ' And with this he fell to weeping most pathetically, and, tremulous with sobs, which were echoed by the women and children, he buried his face in his hands. Filled with sympathy for his grief, however mistaken, I raised the turtle to my lips and kissed its cold shell, then depositing it on the floor, hastily left the grief-stricken family to their sorrows. Next day, with prayers and tender beseechings, plumes, and offerings, the poor turtle was killed, and its flesh and bones were removed and deposited in the little river, that it might ' return once more to eternal life among its comrades in the dark waters of the lake of the dead ' The shell, carefully scraped and dried, was made into a dance-rattle, and, covered by a piece of buckskin, it still hangs from the smoke-stained rafters of my brother's house. Once a Navajo tried to buy it for a ladle, loaded with indignant reproaches, he was turned out of the house. Were any one to venture the suggestion that the turtle no longer lived, his remark would cause a flood of tears, and he would be reminded that it had only ' changed houses and gone to live for ever in the home of " our lost others." ' "

In this custom we find expressed in the clearest way a belief in the transmigration of human souls into the bodies of turtles. The theory of transmigration is held by the Moqui Indians, who belong to the same race as the Zuni. The Moquis are divided into totem clans—the Bear clan, Deer clan, Wolf clan, Hare clan, and so on; they believe that the ancestors of the clans were bears, deer, wolves, hares, and so forth, and that at death the members of each clan become bears, deer, and so on according to the particular clan to which they belonged. The Zuni are also divided into clans, the totems of which agree closely with those of the Moquis, and one of their totems is the turtle. Thus their belief in transmigration into the turtle is probably one of the regular articles of their totem faith. What then is the meaning of killing a turtle in which the soul of a kinsman is believed to be present? Apparently the object is to keep up a communication with the other world in which the souls of the departed are believed to be assembled in the form of turtles. It is a common belief that the spirits of the dead return occasionally to their old homes, and accordingly the unseen visitors are welcomed and feasted by the living, and then sent upon their way. In the Zuni ceremony the dead are fetched home in the form of turtles, and the killing of the turtles is the way of sending back the souls to the spirit-land. Thus the general explanation given above of the custom of killing a god seems inapplicable to the Zuni custom, the true meaning of which is somewhat obscure. Nor is the obscurity which hangs over the subject entirely dissipated by a later and fuller account which we possess of the ceremony. From it we learn that the ceremony forms part of the elaborate ritual which these Indians observe at the midsummer solstice for the purpose of ensuring an abundant supply of rain for the crops. Envoys are despatched to bring “their otherselves, the tortoises,” from the sacred lake Kothluwalawa, to which the souls of the dead are believed to repair. When the creatures have thus been solemnly brought to Zuni, they are placed in a bowl of water and dances are performed beside them by men in costume, who personate gods and goddesses. “After the ceremonial the tortoises are taken home by those who caught them and are hung by their necks to the rafters till morning, when they are thrown into pots of boiling water. The eggs are considered a great delicacy. The meat is seldom touched except as a medicine, which is curative for cutaneous diseases. Part of the meat is deposited in the river with *kôhakwa* (white shell beads) and turquoise beads as offerings to Council of the Gods.” This account at all events confirms the inference that the tortoises are supposed to be reincarnations of the human dead, for they are called the “otherselves” of the Zuni, indeed, what else should they be than the souls of the dead in the bodies of tortoises seeing that they come from the haunted lake? As the principal object of the prayers uttered and of the dances performed at these midsummer ceremonies appears to be to procure rain for the crops, it may be that the intention of bringing the tortoises to Zuni and dancing before them is to intercede with the ancestral spirits, incarnate in the animals, that

they may be pleased to exert their power over the waters of heaven for the benefit of their living descendants.

§ 5 *Killing the Sacred Bear*—Doubt also hangs at first sight over the meaning of the bear-sacrifice offered by the Aino or Ainu, a primitive people who are found in the Japanese island of Yezo or Yesso, as well as in Saghalien and the southern of the Kurile Islands. It is not quite easy to define the attitude of the Aino towards the bear. On the one hand they give it the name of *kamui* or "god", but as they apply the same word to strangers, it may mean no more than a being supposed to be endowed with superhuman, or at all events extraordinary, powers. Again, it is said that "the bear is their chief divinity", "in the religion of the Aino the bear plays a chief part", "amongst the animals it is especially the bear which receives an idolatrous veneration", "they worship it after their fashion", "there is no doubt that this wild beast inspires more of the feeling which prompts worship than the inanimate forces of nature, and the Aino may be distinguished as bear-worshippers". Yet, on the other hand, they kill the bear whenever they can, "in bygone years the Ainu considered bear-hunting the most manly and useful way in which a person could possibly spend his time", "the men spend the autumn, winter, and spring in hunting deer and bears. Part of their tribute or taxes is paid in skins, and they subsist on the dried meat", bear's flesh is indeed one of their staple foods, they eat it both fresh and salted, and the skins of bears furnish them with clothing. In fact, the worship of which writers on this subject speak appears to be paid chiefly to the dead animal. Thus, although they kill a bear whenever they can, "in the process of dissecting the carcass they endeavour to conciliate the deity, whose representative they have slain, by making elaborate obeisances and deprecatory salutations", "when a bear has been killed the Ainu sit down and admire it, make their salaams to it, worship it, and offer presents of *mao*", "when a bear is trapped or wounded by an arrow, the hunters go through an apologetic or propitiatory ceremony". The skulls of slain bears receive a place of honour in their huts, or are set up on sacred posts outside the huts, and are treated with much respect. libations of millet beer, and of *sake*, an intoxicating liquor, are offered to them, and they are addressed as "divine preservers" or "precious divinities". The skulls of foxes are also fastened to the sacred posts outside the huts, they are regarded as charms against evil spirits, and are consulted as oracles. Yet it is expressly said, "The live fox is revered just as little as the bear, rather they avoid it as much as possible, considering it a wily animal". The bear can hardly, therefore, be described as a sacred animal of the Aino, nor yet as a totem, for they do not call themselves bears, and they kill and eat the animal freely. However, they have a legend of a woman who had a son by a bear, and many of them who dwell in the mountains pride themselves on being descended from a bear. Such people are called "Descendants of the bear" (*Kimur Kamui sanikiri*), and in the pride of their heart they will say, "As



for me, I am a child of the god of the mountains, I am descended from the divine one who rules in the mountains," meaning by "the god of the mountains" no other than the bear. It is therefore possible that, as our principal authority, the Rev. J. Batchelor, believes, the bear may have been the totem of an Aino clan; but even if that were so it would not explain the respect shown for the animal by the whole Aino people.

But it is the bear-festival of the Aino which concerns us here. Towards the end of winter a bear cub is caught and brought into the village. If it is very small, it is suckled by an Aino woman, but should there be no woman able to suckle it, the little animal is fed from the hand or the mouth. During the day it plays about in the hut with the children and is treated with great affection. But when the cub grows big enough to pain people by hugging or scratching them, he is shut up in a strong wooden cage, where he stays generally for two or three years, fed on fish and millet porridge, till it is time for him to be killed and eaten. But "it is a peculiarly striking fact that the young bear is not kept merely to furnish a good meal, rather he is regarded and honoured as a fetish, or even as a sort of higher being." In Yezo the festival is generally celebrated in September or October. Before it takes place the Aino apologise to their gods, alleging that they have treated the bear kindly as long as they could, now they can feed him no longer, and are obliged to kill him. A man who gives a bear-feast invites his relations and friends, in a small village nearly the whole community takes part in the feast, indeed, guests from distant villages are invited and generally come, allured by the prospect of getting drunk for nothing. The form of invitation runs somewhat as follows: "I, so and so, am about to sacrifice the dear little divine thing who resides among the mountains. My friends and masters, come ye to the feast, we will then unite in the great pleasure of sending the god away. Come." When all the people are assembled in front of the cage, an orator chosen for the purpose addresses the bear and tells it that they are about to send it forth to its ancestors. He craves pardon for what they are about to do to it, hopes it will not be angry, and comforts it by assuring the animal that many of the sacred whittled sticks (*mao*) and plenty of cakes and wine will be sent with it on the long journey. One speech of this sort which Mr. Batchelor heard ran as follows: "O thou divine one, thou wast sent into the world for us to hunt. O thou precious little divinity, we worship thee, pray hear our prayer. We have nourished thee and brought thee up with a deal of pains and trouble, all because we love thee so. Now, as thou hast grown big, we are about to send thee to thy father and mother. When thou comest to them please speak well of us, and tell them how kind we have been, please come to us again and we will sacrifice thee." Having been secured with ropes, the bear is then let out of the cage and assailed with a shower of blunt arrows in order to rouse it to fury. When it has spent itself in vain struggles, it is tied up to a stake, gagged and strangled, its neck being placed between two poles, which are then

violently compressed, all the people eagerly helping to squeeze the animal to death. An arrow is also discharged into the beast's heart by a good marksman, but so as not to shed blood, for they think that it would be very unlucky if any of the blood were to drip on the ground. However, the men sometimes drink the warm blood of the bear "that the courage and other virtues it possesses may pass into them"; and sometimes they besmear themselves and their clothes with the blood in order to ensure success in hunting. When the animal has been strangled to death, it is skinned and its head is cut off and set in the east window of the house, where a piece of its own flesh is placed under its snout, together with a cup of its own meat boiled, some millet dumplings, and dried fish. Prayers are then addressed to the dead animal, amongst other things it is sometimes invited, after going away to its father and mother, to return into the world in order that it may again be reared for sacrifice. When the bear is supposed to have finished eating its own flesh, the man who presides at the feast takes the cup containing the boiled meat, salutes it, and divides the contents between all the company present. Every person, young and old alike, must taste a little. The cup is called "the cup of offering" because it has just been offered to the dead bear. When the rest of the flesh has been cooked, it is shared out in like manner among all the people, everybody partaking of at least a morsel, not to partake of the feast would be equivalent to excommunication, it would be to place the recreant outside the pale of Aino fellowship. Formerly every particle of the bear, except the bones, had to be eaten up at the banquet, but this rule is now relaxed. The head, on being detached from the skin, is set up on a long pole beside the sacred wands (*inao*) outside of the house, where it remains till nothing but the bare white skull is left. Skulls so set up are worshipped not only at the time of the festival, but very often as long as they last. The Aino assured Mr Batchelor that they really do believe the spirits of the worshipful animals to reside in the skulls, that is why they address them as "divine preservers" and "precious divinities".

The ceremony of killing the bear was witnessed by Dr B Scheube on the tenth of August at Kunnui, which is a village on Volcano Bay in the island of Yezo or Yesso. As his description of the rite contains some interesting particulars not mentioned in the foregoing account, it may be worth while to summarise it.

On entering the hut he found about thirty Aino present, men, women, and children, all dressed in their best. The master of the house first offered a libation on the fireplace to the god of the fire, and the guests followed his example. Then a libation was offered to the house-god in his sacred corner of the hut. Meanwhile the housewife, who had nursed the bear, sat by herself, silent and sad, bursting now and then into tears. Her grief was obviously unaffected, and it deepened as the festival went on. Next, the master of the house and some of the guests went out of the hut and offered libations before the bear's cage. A few drops were presented to the bear in a saucer,

which he at once upset. Then the women and girls danced round the cage, their faces turned towards it, their knees slightly bent, rising and hopping on their toes. As they danced they clapped their hands and sang a monotonous song. The housewife and a few old women, who might have nursed many bears, danced tearfully, stretching out their arms to the bear, and addressing it in terms of endearment. The young folks were less affected, they laughed as well as sang. Disturbed by the noise, the bear began to rush about his cage and howl lamentably. Next libations were offered at the *mao* (*inabos*) or sacred wands which stand outside of an Aino hut. These wands are about a couple of feet high, and are whittled at the top into spiral shavings. Five new wands with bamboo leaves attached to them had been set up for the festival. This is regularly done when a bear is killed; the leaves mean that the animal may come to life again. Then the bear was let out of his cage, a rope was thrown round his neck, and he was led about in the neighbourhood of the hut. While this was being done the men, headed by a chief, shot at the beast with arrows tipped with wooden buttons. Dr Scheube had to do so also. Then the bear was taken before the sacred wands, a stick was put in his mouth, nine men knelt on him and pressed his neck against a beam. In five minutes the animal had expired without uttering a sound. Meantime the women and girls had taken post behind the men, where they danced, lamenting, and beating the men who were killing the bear. The bear's carcass was next placed on the mat before the sacred wands, and a sword and quiver, taken from the wands, were hung round the beast's neck. Being a she-bear, it was also adorned with a necklace and ear-rings. Then food and drink were offered to it, in the shape of millet-broth, millet-cakes, and a pot of *sake*. The men now sat down on mats before the dead bear, offered libations to it, and drank deep. Meanwhile the women and girls had laid aside all marks of sorrow, and danced merrily, none more merrily than the old women. When the mirth was at its height two young Aino, who had let the bear out of his cage, mounted the roof of the hut and threw cakes of millet among the company, who all scrambled for them without distinction of age or sex. The bear was next skinned and disembowelled, and the trunk severed from the head, to which the skin was left hanging. The blood, caught in cups, was eagerly swallowed by the men. None of the women or children appeared to drink the blood, though custom did not forbid them to do so. The liver was cut in small pieces and eaten raw, with salt, the women and children getting their share. The flesh and the rest of the vitals were taken into the house to be kept till the next day but one, and then to be divided among the persons who had been present at the feast. Blood and liver were offered to Dr Scheube. While the bear was being disembowelled, the women and girls danced the same dance which they had danced at the beginning—not, however, round the cage, but in front of the sacred wands. At this dance the old women, who had been merry a moment before, again shed tears freely. After the brain had been extracted from the bear's

head and swallowed with salt, the skull, detached from the skin, was hung on a pole beside the sacred wands. The stick with which the bear had been gagged was also fastened to the pole, and so were the sword and quiver which had been hung on the carcase. The latter were removed in about an hour, but the rest remained standing. The whole company, men and women, danced noisily before the pole, and another drinking-bout, in which the women joined, closed the festival.

Perhaps the first published account of the bear-feast of the Aino is one which was given to the world by a Japanese writer in 1652. It has been translated into French and runs thus: "When they find a young bear, they bring it home, and the wife suckles it. When it is grown they feed it with fish and fowl and kill it in winter for the sake of the liver, which they esteem an antidote to poison, the worms, colic, and disorders of the stomach. It is of a very bitter taste, and is good for nothing if the bear has been killed in summer. This butchery begins in the first Japanese month. For this purpose they put the animal's head between two long poles, which are squeezed together by fifty or sixty people, both men and women. When the bear is dead they eat his flesh, keep the liver as a medicine, and sell the skin, which is black and commonly six feet long, but the longest measure twelve feet. As soon as he is skinned, the persons who nourished the beast begin to bewail him, afterwards they make little cakes to regale those who helped them."

The Aino of Saghalien rear bear cubs and kill them with similar ceremonies. We are told that they do not look upon the bear as a god but only as a messenger whom they despatch with various commissions to the god of the forest. The animal is kept for about two years in a cage, and then killed at a festival, which always takes place in winter and at night. The day before the sacrifice is devoted to lamentation, old women relieving each other in the duty of weeping and groaning in front of the bear's cage. Then about the middle of the night or very early in the morning an orator makes a long speech to the beast, reminding him how they have taken care of him, and fed him well, and bathed him in the river, and made him warm and comfortable. "Now," he proceeds, "we are holding a great festival in your honour. Be not afraid. We will not hurt you. We will only kill you and send you to the god of the forest who loves you. We are about to offer you a good dinner, the best you have ever eaten among us, and we will all weep for you together. The Aino who will kill you is the best shot among us. There he is, he weeps and asks your forgiveness, you will feel almost nothing, it will be done so quickly. We cannot feed you always, as you will understand. We have done enough for you, it is now your turn to sacrifice yourself for us. You will ask God to send us, for the winter, plenty of otters and sables, and for the summer, seals and fish in abundance. Do not forget our messages, we love you much, and our children will never forget you." When the bear has partaken

of his last meal amid the general emotion of the spectators, the old women weeping afresh and the men uttering stifled cries, he is strapped, not without difficulty and danger, and being let out of the cage is led on leash or dragged, according to the state of his temper, thrice round his cage, then round his master's house, and lastly round the house of the orator. Thereupon he is tied up to a tree, which is decked with sacred whittled sticks (*mao*) of the usual sort, and the orator again addresses him in a long harangue, which sometimes lasts till the day is beginning to break. "Remember," he cries, "remember! I remind you of your whole life and of the services we have rendered you. It is now for you to do your duty. Do not forget what I have asked of you. You will tell the gods to give us riches, that our hunters may return from the forest laden with rare furs and animals good to eat; that our fishers may find troops of seals on the shore and in the sea, and that their nets may crack under the weight of the fish. We have no hope but in you. The evil spirits laugh at us, and too often they are unfavourable and malignant to us, but they will bow before you. We have given you food and joy and health; now we kill you in order that you may in return send riches to us and to our children." To this discourse the bear, more and more surly and agitated, listens without conviction, round and round the tree he paces and howls lamentably, till, just as the first beams of the rising sun light up the scene, an archer speeds an arrow to his heart. No sooner has he done so, than the marksman throws away his bow and flings himself on the ground, and the old men and women do the same, weeping and sobbing. Then they offer the dead beast a repast of rice and wild potatoes, and having spoken to him in terms of pity and thanked him for what he has done and suffered, they cut off his head and paws and keep them as sacred things. A banquet on the flesh and blood of the bear follows. Women were formerly excluded from it, but now they share with the men. The blood is drunk warm by all present, the flesh is boiled, custom forbids it to be roasted. And as the relics of the bear may not enter the house by the door, and Aino houses in Saghalien have no windows, a man gets up on the roof and lets the flesh, the head, and the skin down through the smoke-hole. Rice and wild potatoes are then offered to the head, and a pipe, tobacco, and matches are considerably placed beside it. Custom requires that the guests should eat up the whole animal before they depart. the use of salt and pepper at the meal is forbidden, and no morsel of the flesh may be given to the dogs. When the banquet is over, the head is carried away into the depth of the forest and deposited on a heap of bears' skulls, the bleached and mouldering relics of similar festivals in the past.

The Gilyaks, a Tunguzian people of Eastern Siberia, hold a bear-festival of the same sort once a year in January. "The bear is the object of the most refined solicitude of an entire village and plays the chief part in their religious ceremonies." An old she-bear is shot and her cub is reared, but not suckled, in the village. When the

bear is big enough he is taken from his cage and dragged through the village. But first they lead him to the bank of the river, for this is believed to ensure abundance of fish to each family. He is then taken into every house in the village, where fish, brandy, and so forth are offered to him. Some people prostrate themselves before the beast. His entrance into a house is supposed to bring a blessing; and if he snuffs at the food offered to him, this also is a blessing. Nevertheless they tease and worry, poke and tickle the animal continually, so that he is surly and snappish. After being thus taken to every house, he is tied to a peg and shot dead with arrows. His head is then cut off, decked with shavings, and placed on the table where the feast is set out. Here they beg pardon of the beast and worship him. Then his flesh is roasted and eaten in special vessels of wood finely carved. They do not eat the flesh raw nor drink the blood, as the Aino do. The brain and entrails are eaten last; and the skull, still decked with shavings, is placed on a tree near the house. Then the people sing and both sexes dance in ranks, as bears.

One of these bear-festivals was witnessed by the Russian traveller L. von Schrenck and his companions at the Gilyak village of Tebach in January 1856. From his detailed report of the ceremony we may gather some particulars which are not noticed in the briefer accounts which I have just summarised. The bear, he tells us, plays a great part in the life of all the peoples inhabiting the region of the Amoor and Siberia as far as Kamtchatka, but among none of them is his importance greater than among the Gilyaks. The immense size which the animal attains in the valley of the Amoor, his ferocity whetted by hunger, and the frequency of his appearance, all combine to make him the most dreaded beast of prey in the country. No wonder, therefore, that the fancy of the Gilyaks is busied with him and surrounds him, both in life and in death, with a sort of halo of superstitious fear. Thus, for example, it is thought that if a Gilyak falls in combat with a bear, his soul transmigrates into the body of the beast. Nevertheless his flesh has an irresistible attraction for the Gilyak palate, especially when the animal has been kept in captivity for some time and fattened on fish, which gives the flesh, in the opinion of the Gilyaks, a peculiarly delicious flavour. But in order to enjoy this dainty with impunity they deem it needful to perform a long series of ceremonies, of which the intention is to delude the living bear by a show of respect, and to appease the anger of the dead animal by the homage paid to his departed spirit. The marks of respect begin as soon as the beast is captured. He is brought home in triumph and kept in a cage, where all the villagers take it in turns to feed him. For although he may have been captured or purchased by one man, he belongs in a manner to the whole village. His flesh will furnish a common feast, and hence all must contribute to support him in his life. The length of time he is kept in captivity depends on his age. Old bears are kept only a few months; cubs are kept

till they are full-grown. A thick layer of fat on the captive bear gives the signal for the festival, which is always held in winter, generally in December but sometimes in January or February. At the festival witnessed by the Russian travellers, which lasted a good many days, three bears were killed and eaten. More than once the animals were led about in procession and compelled to enter every house in the village, where they were fed as a mark of honour, and to show that they were welcome guests. But before the beasts set out on this round of visits, the Gilyaks played at skipping-rope in presence, and perhaps, as L. von Schrenck inclined to believe, in honour of the animals. The night before they were killed, the three bears were led by moonlight a long way on the ice of the frozen river. That night no one in the village might sleep. Next day, after the animals had been again led down the steep bank to the river, and conducted thrice round the hole in the ice from which the women of the village drew their water, they were taken to an appointed place not far from the village and shot to death with arrows. The place of sacrifice or execution was marked as holy by being surrounded with whittled sticks, from the tops of which shavings hung in curls. Such sticks are with the Gilyaks, as with the Aino, the regular symbols that accompany all religious ceremonies.

When the house has been arranged and decorated for their reception, the skins of the bears, with their heads attached to them, are brought into it, not however by the door, but through a window, and then hung on a sort of scaffold opposite the hearth on which the flesh is to be cooked. The boiling of the bears' flesh among the Gilyaks is done only by the oldest men, whose high privilege it is, women and children, young men and boys have no part in it. The task is performed slowly and deliberately, with a certain solemnity. On the occasion described by the Russian travellers the kettle was first of all surrounded with a thick wreath of shavings, and then filled with snow, for the use of water to cook bear's flesh is forbidden. Meanwhile a large wooden trough, richly adorned with arabesques and carvings of all sorts, was hung immediately under the snouts of the bears, on one side of the trough was carved in relief a bear, on the other side a toad. When the carcasses were being cut up, each leg was laid on the ground in front of the bears, as if to ask their leave, before being placed in the kettle, and the boiled flesh was fished out of the kettle with an iron hook, and set in the trough before the bears, in order that they might be the first to taste of their own flesh. As fast, too, as the fat was cut in strips it was hung up in front of the bears, and afterwards laid in a small wooden trough on the ground before them. Last of all the inner organs of the beasts were cut up and placed in small vessels. At the same time the women made bandages out of parti-coloured rags, and after sunset these bandages were tied round the bears' snouts just below the eyes "in order to dry the tears that flowed from them."

As soon as the ceremony of wiping away poor bruin's tears had

been performed, the assembled Gilyaks set to work in earnest to devour his flesh. The broth obtained by boiling the meat had already been partaken of. The wooden bowls, platters, and spoons out of which the Gilyaks eat the broth and flesh of the bears on these occasions are always made specially for the purpose at the festival and only then, they are elaborately ornamented with carved figures of bears and other devices that refer to the animal or the festival, and the people have a strong superstitious scruple against parting with them. After the bones had been picked clean they were put back in the kettle in which the flesh had been boiled. And when the festal meal was over, an old man took his stand at the door of the house with a branch of fir in his hand, with which, as the people passed out, he gave a light blow to every one who had eaten of the bear's flesh or fat, perhaps as a punishment for their treatment of the worshipful animal. In the afternoon the women performed a strange dance. Only one woman danced at a time, throwing the upper part of her body into the oddest postures, while she held in her hands a branch of fir or a kind of wooden castanets. The other women meanwhile played an accompaniment by drumming on the beams of the house with clubs. Von Schrenk believed that after the flesh of the bear has been eaten the bones and the skull are solemnly carried out by the oldest people to a place in the forest not far from the village. There all the bones except the skull are buried. After that a young tree is felled a few inches above the ground, its stump cleft, and the skull wedged into the cleft. When the grass grows over the spot, the skull disappears from view, and that is the end of the bear.

Another description of the bear-festivals of the Gilyaks has been given us by Mr. Leo Sternberg. It agrees substantially with the foregoing accounts, but a few particulars in it may be noted. According to Mr. Sternberg, the festival is usually held in honour of a deceased relation. The next of kin either buys or catches a bear cub and nurtures it for two or three years till it is ready for the sacrifice. Only certain distinguished guests (*Narch-en*) are privileged to partake of the bear's flesh, but the host and members of his clan eat a broth made from the flesh, great quantities of this broth are prepared and consumed on the occasion. The guests of honour (*Narch-en*) must belong to the clan into which the host's daughters and the other women of his clan are married. One of these guests, usually the host's son-in-law, is entrusted with the duty of shooting the bear dead with an arrow. The skin, head, and flesh of the slain bear are brought into the house not through the door but through the smoke-hole, a quiver full of arrows is laid under the head and beside it are deposited tobacco, sugar, and other food. The soul of the bear is supposed to carry off the souls of these things with it on the far journey. A special vessel is used for cooking the bear's flesh, and the fire must be kindled by a sacred apparatus of flint and steel, which belongs to the clan and is handed down from generation to generation, but which is never used to light fires except on these solemn occasions. Of all the many viands cooked



for the consumption of the assembled people a portion is placed in a special vessel and set before the bear's head. this is called "feeding the head" After the bear has been killed, dogs are sacrificed in couples of male and female. Before being throttled, they are fed and invited to go to their lord on the highest mountain, to change their skins, and to return next year in the form of bears. The soul of the dead bear departs to the same lord, who is also lord of the *primaeval forest*, it goes away laden with the offerings that have been made to it, and attended by the souls of the dogs and also by the souls of the sacred whittled sticks, which figure prominently at the festival.

The Goldi, neighbours of the Gilyaks, treat the bear in much the same way. They hunt and kill it, but sometimes they capture a live bear and keep him in a cage, feeding him well and calling him their son and brother. Then at a great festival he is taken from his cage, paraded about with marked consideration, and afterwards killed and eaten. "The skull, jaw-bones, and ears are then suspended on a tree, as an antidote against evil spirits, but the flesh is eaten and much relished, for they believe that all who partake of it acquire a zest for the chase, and become courageous."

The Orotchi, another Tunguzian people of the region of the Amoor, hold bear-festivals of the same general character. Any one who catches a bear cub considers it his bounden duty to rear it in a cage for about three years, in order at the end of that time to kill it publicly and eat the flesh with his friends. The feasts being public, though organised by individuals, the people try to have one in each Orotchi village every year in turn. When the bear is taken out of his cage, he is led about by means of ropes to all the huts, accompanied by people armed with lances, bows, and arrows. At each hut the bear and bear-leaders are treated to something good to eat and drink. This goes on for several days until all the huts, not only in that village but also in the next, have been visited. The days are given up to sport and noisy jollity. Then the bear is tied to a tree or wooden pillar and shot to death by the arrows of the crowd, after which its flesh is roasted and eaten. Among the Orotchi of the Tundja River women take part in the bear-feasts, while among the Orotchi of the River Vi the women will not even touch bear's flesh.

In the treatment of the captive bear by these tribes there are features which can hardly be distinguished from worship. Such, for example, are the prayers offered to it both alive and dead, the offerings of food, including portions of its own flesh, laid before the animal's skull, and the Gilyak custom of leading the living beast to the river in order to ensure a supply of fish, and of conducting him from house to house in order that every family may receive his blessing, just as in Europe a May-tree or a personal representative of the tree-spirit used to be taken from door to door in spring for the sake of diffusing among all and sundry the fresh energies of reviving nature. Again, the solemn participation in his flesh and blood, and particularly the Aino custom of sharing the contents of the cup which had been consecrated by being

set before the dead beast, are strongly suggestive of a sacrament, and the suggestion is confirmed by the Gilyak practice of reserving special vessels to hold the flesh and cooking it on a fire kindled by a sacred apparatus which is never employed except on these religious occasions. Indeed our principal authority on Aino religion, the Rev John Batchelor, frankly describes as worship the ceremonious respect which the Aino pay to the bear, and he affirms that the animal is undoubtedly one of their gods. Certainly the Aino appear to apply their name for god (*kamui*) freely to the bear; but, as Mr. Batchelor himself points out, that word is used with many different shades of meaning and is applied to a great variety of objects, so that from its application to the bear we cannot safely argue that the animal is actually regarded as a deity. Indeed we are expressly told that the Aino of Saghalien do not consider the bear to be a god but only a messenger to the gods, and the message with which they charge the animal at its death bears out the statement. Apparently the Gilyaks also look on the bear in the light of an envoy despatched with presents to the Lord of the Mountain, on whom the welfare of the people depends. At the same time they treat the animal as a being of a higher order than man, in fact as a minor deity, whose presence in the village, so long as he is kept and fed, diffuses blessings, especially by keeping at bay the swarms of evil spirits who are constantly lying in wait for people, stealing their goods and destroying their bodies by sickness and disease. Moreover, by partaking of the flesh, blood, or broth of the bear, the Gilyaks, the Aino, and the Goldi are all of opinion that they acquire some portion of the animal's mighty powers, particularly his courage and strength. No wonder, therefore, that they should treat so great a benefactor with marks of the highest respect and affection.

Some light may be thrown on the ambiguous attitude of the Aino to bears by comparing the similar treatment which they accord to other creatures. For example, they regard the eagle-owl as a good deity who by his hooting warns men of threatened evil and defends them against it, hence he is loved, trusted, and devoutly worshipped as a divine mediator between men and the Creator. The various names applied to him are significant both of his divinity and of his mediatorship. Whenever an opportunity offers, one of these divine birds is captured and kept in a cage, where he is greeted with the endearing titles of "Beloved god" and "Dear little divinity." Nevertheless the time comes when the dear little divinity is throttled and sent away in his capacity of mediator to take a message to the superior gods or to the Creator himself. The following is the form of prayer addressed to the eagle-owl when it is about to be sacrificed: "Beloved deity, we have brought you up because we loved you, and now we are about to send you to your father. We herewith offer you food, *inao*, wine, and cakes; take them to your parent, and he will be very pleased. When you come to him say, 'I have lived a long time among the Ainu, where an Ainu father and an Ainu mother reared me. I now come to thee. I have brought a variety of good things. I saw while living in Ainu-

land a great deal of distress. I observed that some of the people were possessed by demons, some were wounded by wild animals, some were hurt by landslides, others suffered shipwreck, and many were attacked by disease. The people are in great straits. My father, hear me, and hasten to look upon the Ainu and help them.' If you do this, your father will help us."

Again, the Ainu keep eagles in cages, worship them as divinities, and ask them to defend the people from evil. Yet they offer the bird in sacrifice, and when they are about to do so they pray to him, saying "O precious divinity, O thou divine bird, pray listen to my words. Thou dost not belong to this world, for thy home is with the Creator and his golden eagles. This being so, I present thee with these *mao* and cakes and other precious things. Do thou ride upon the *mao* and ascend to thy home in the glorious heavens. When thou arrivest, assemble the deities of thy own kind together and thank them for us for having governed the world. Do thou come again, I beseech thee, and rule over us. O my precious one, go thou quietly." Once more, the Ainu revere hawks, keep them in cages, and offer them in sacrifice. At the time of killing one of them the following prayer should be addressed to the bird. "O divine hawk, thou art an expert hunter, please cause thy cleverness to descend on me." If a hawk is well treated in captivity and prayed to after this fashion when he is about to be killed, he will surely send help to the hunter.

Thus the Ainu hopes to profit in various ways by slaughtering the creatures, which, nevertheless, he treats as divine. He expects them to carry messages for him to their kindred or to the gods in the upper world, he hopes to partake of their virtues by swallowing parts of their bodies or in other ways, and apparently he looks forward to their bodily resurrection in this world, which will enable him again to catch and kill them, and again to reap all the benefits which he has already derived from their slaughter. For in the prayers addressed to the worshipful bear and the worshipful eagle before they are knocked on the head the creatures are invited to come again, which seems clearly to point to a faith in their future resurrection. If any doubt could exist on this head, it would be dispelled by the evidence of Mr. Batchelor, who tells us that the Ainu "are firmly convinced that the spirits of birds and animals killed in hunting or offered in sacrifice come and live again upon the earth clothed with a body; and they believe, further, that they appear here for the special benefit of men, particularly Ainu hunters." The Ainu, Mr. Batchelor tells us, "confessedly slays and eats the beast that another may come in its place and be treated in like manner", and at the time of sacrificing the creatures "prayers are said to them which form a request that they will come again and furnish viands for another feast, as if it were an honour to them to be thus killed and eaten, and a pleasure as well. Indeed such is the people's idea." These last observations, as the context shows, refer especially to the sacrifice of bears.

Thus among the benefits which the Ainu anticipates from the

slaughter of the worshipful animals not the least substantial is that of gorging himself on their flesh and blood, both on the present and on many a similar occasion hereafter ; and that pleasing prospect again is derived from his firm faith in the spiritual immortality and bodily resurrection of the dead animals. A like faith is shared by many savage hunters in many parts of the world and has given rise to a variety of quaint customs, some of which will be described presently. Meantime it is not unimportant to observe that the solemn festivals at which the Aino, the Gilyaks, and other tribes slaughter the tame caged bears with demonstrations of respect and sorrow, are probably nothing but an extension or glorification of similar rites which the hunter performs over any wild bear which he chances to kill in the forest. Indeed with regard to the Gilyaks we are expressly informed that this is the case. If we would understand the meaning of the Gilyak ritual, says Mr Sternberg, " we must above all remember that the bear-festivals are not, as is usually but falsely assumed, celebrated only at the killing of a house-bear but are held on every occasion when a Gilyak succeeds in slaughtering a bear in the chase. It is true that in such cases the festival assumes less imposing dimensions, but in its essence it remains the same. When the head and skin of a bear killed in the forest are brought into the village, they are accorded a triumphal reception with music and solemn ceremonial. The head is laid on a consecrated scaffold, fed, and treated with offerings, just as at the killing of a house-bear ; and the guests of honour (*Narch-en*) are also assembled. So, too, dogs are sacrificed, and the bones of the bear are preserved in the same place and with the same marks of respect as the bones of a house-bear. Hence the great winter festival is only an extension of the rite which is observed at the slaughter of every bear."

Thus the apparent contradiction in the practice of these tribes, who venerate and almost deify the animals which they habitually hunt, kill, and eat, is not so flagrant as at first sight it appears to us. The people have reasons, and some very practical reasons, for acting as they do. For the savage is by no means so illogical and unpractical as to superficial observers he is apt to seem, he has thought deeply on the questions which immediately concern him, he reasons about them, and though his conclusions often diverge very widely from ours, we ought not to deny him the credit of patient and prolonged meditation on some fundamental problems of human existence. In the present case, if he treats bears in general as creatures wholly subservient to human needs and yet singles out certain individuals of the species for homage which almost amounts to deification, we must not hastily set him down as irrational and inconsistent, but must endeavour to place ourselves at his point of view, to see things as he sees them, and to divest ourselves of the prepossessions which tinge so deeply our own views of the world. If we do so, we shall probably discover that, however absurd his conduct may appear to us, the savage nevertheless generally acts on a train of reasoning which seems to him in harmony

with the facts of his limited experience. This I propose to illustrate in the following chapter, where I shall attempt to show that the solemn ceremonial of the bear-festival among the Ainos and other tribes of North-eastern Asia is only a particularly striking example of the respect which on the principles of his rude philosophy the savage habitually pays to the animals which he kills and eats.

## CHAPTER LIII

### THE PROPITIATION OF WILD ANIMALS BY HUNTERS

THE explanation of life by the theory of an indwelling and practically immortal soul is one which the savage does not confine to human beings but extends to the animate creation in general. In so doing he is more liberal and perhaps more logical than the civilised man, who commonly denies to animals that privilege of immortality which he claims for himself. The savage is not so proud; he commonly believes that animals are endowed with feelings and intelligence like those of men, and that, like men, they possess souls which survive the death of their bodies either to wander about as disembodied spirits or to be born again in animal form.

Thus to the savage, who regards all living creatures as practically on a footing of equality with man, the act of killing and eating an animal must wear a very different aspect from that which the same act presents to us, who regard the intelligence of animals as far inferior to our own and deny them the possession of immortal souls. Hence on the principles of his rude philosophy the primitive hunter who slays an animal believes himself exposed to the vengeance either of its disembodied spirit or of all the other animals of the same species, whom he considers as knit together, like men, by the ties of kin and the obligations of the blood feud, and therefore as bound to resent the injury done to one of their number. Accordingly the savage makes it a rule to spare the life of those animals which he has no pressing motive for killing, at least such fierce and dangerous animals as are likely to exact a bloody vengeance for the slaughter of one of their kind. Crocodiles are animals of this sort. They are only found in hot countries, where, as a rule, food is abundant and primitive man has therefore little reason to kill them for the sake of their tough and unpalatable flesh. Hence it is a custom with some savages to spare crocodiles, or rather only to kill them in obedience to the law of blood feud, that is, as a retaliation for the slaughter of men by crocodiles. For example, the Dyaks of Borneo will not kill a crocodile unless a crocodile has first killed a man. "For why, say they, should they commit an act of aggression, when he and his kindred can so easily repay them? But should the alligator take a human life, revenge becomes a sacred duty of the living relatives, who will trap the man-

eater in the spirit of an officer of justice pursuing a criminal Others, even then, hang back, reluctant to embroil themselves in a quarrel which does not concern them. The man-eating alligator is supposed to be pursued by a righteous Nemesis, and whenever one is caught they have a profound conviction that it must be the guilty one, or his accomplice "

Like the Dyaks, the natives of Madagascar never kill a crocodile "except in retaliation for one of their friends who has been destroyed by a crocodile They believe that the wanton destruction of one of these reptiles will be followed by the loss of human life, in accordance with the principle of *lex talionis* " The people who live near the lake Itasy in Madagascar make a yearly proclamation to the crocodiles, announcing that they will revenge the death of some of their friends by killing as many crocodiles in return, and warning all well-disposed crocodiles to keep out of the way, as they have no quarrel with them, but only with their evil-minded relations who have taken human life. Various tribes of Madagascar believe themselves to be descended from crocodiles, and accordingly they view the scaly reptile as, to all intents and purposes, a man and a brother If one of the animals should so far forget himself as to devour one of his human kinsfolk, the chief of the tribe, or in his absence an old man familiar with the tribal customs, repairs at the head of the people to the edge of the water, and summons the family of the culprit to deliver him up to the arm of justice A hook is then baited and cast into the river or lake Next day the guilty brother, or one of his family, is dragged ashore, and after his crime has been clearly brought home to him by a strict interrogation, he is sentenced to death and executed The claims of justice being thus satisfied and the majesty of the law fully vindicated, the deceased crocodile is lamented and buried like a kinsman ; a mound is raised over his relics and a stone marks the place of his head

Again, the tiger is another of those dangerous beasts whom the savage prefers to leave alone, lest by killing one of the species he should excite the hostility of the rest No consideration will induce a Sumatran to catch or wound a tiger except in self-defence or immediately after a tiger has destroyed a friend or relation When a European has set traps for tigers, the people of the neighbourhood have been known to go by night to the place and explain to the animals that the traps are not set by them nor with their consent The inhabitants of the hills near Rajamahall, in Bengal, are very averse to killing a tiger, unless one of their kinsfolk has been carried off by one of the beasts In that case they go out for the purpose of hunting and slaying a tiger, and when they have succeeded they lay their bows and arrows on the carcase and invoke God, declaring that they slew the animal in retaliation for the loss of a kinsman. Vengeance having been thus taken, they swear not to attack another tiger except under similar provocation

The Indians of Carolina would not molest snakes when they came

upon them, but would pass by on the other side of the path, believing that if they were to kill a serpent the reptile's kindred would destroy some of their brethren, friends, or relations in return. So the Seminole Indians spared the rattlesnake, because they feared that the soul of the dead rattlesnake would incite its kinsfolk to take vengeance. The Cherokee regard the rattlesnake as the chief of the snake tribe and fear and respect him accordingly. Few Cherokee will venture to kill a rattlesnake, unless they cannot help it, and even then they must atone for the crime by craving pardon of the snake's ghost either in their own person or through the mediation of a priest, according to a set formula. If these precautions are neglected, the kinsfolk of the dead snake will send one of their number as an avenger of blood, who will track down the murderer and sting him to death. No ordinary Cherokee dares to kill a wolf, if he can possibly help it, for he believes that the kindred of the slain beast would surely avenge its death, and that the weapon with which the deed had been done would be quite useless for the future, unless it were cleaned and exorcised by a medicine-man. However, certain persons who know the proper rites of atonement for such a crime can kill wolves with impunity, and they are sometimes hired to do so by people who have suffered from the raids of the wolves on their cattle or fish-traps. In Jebel-Nuba, a district of the Eastern Sudan, it is forbidden to touch the nests or remove the young of a species of black birds, resembling our blackbirds, because the people believe that the parent birds would avenge the wrong by causing a stormy wind to blow, which would destroy the harvest.

But the savage clearly cannot afford to spare all animals. He must either eat some of them or starve, and when the question thus comes to be whether he or the animal must perish, he is forced to overcome his superstitious scruples and take the life of the beast. At the same time he does all he can to appease his victims and their kinsfolk. Even in the act of killing them he testifies his respect for them, endeavours to excuse or even conceal his share in procuring their death, and promises that their remains will be honourably treated. By thus robbing death of its terrors he hopes to reconcile his victims to their fate and to induce their fellows to come and be killed also. For example, it was a principle with the Kamtchatkans never to kill a land or sea animal without first making excuses to it and begging that the animal would not take it ill. Also they offered it cedar-nuts and so forth, to make it think that it was not a victim but a guest at a feast. They believed that this hindered other animals of the same species from growing shy. For instance, after they had killed a bear and feasted on its flesh, the host would bring the bear's head before the company, wrap it in grass, and present it with a variety of trifles. Then he would lay the blame of the bear's death on the Russians, and bid the beast wreak his wrath upon them. Also he would ask the bear to inform the other bears how well he had been treated, that they too might come without fear. Seals, sea-lions,

and other animals were treated by the Kamtchatkans with the same ceremonious respect. Moreover, they used to insert sprigs of a plant resembling bear's wort in the mouths of the animals they killed, after which they would exhort the grinning skulls to have no fear but to go and tell it to their fellows, that they also might come and be caught and so partake of this splendid hospitality. When the Ostiaks have hunted and killed a bear, they cut off its head and hang it on a tree. Then they gather round in a circle and pay it divine honours. Next they run towards the carcase uttering lamentations and saying, "Who killed you? It was the Russians. Who cut off your head? It was a Russian axe. Who skinned you? It was a knife made by a Russian." They explain, too, that the feathers which sped the arrow on its flight came from the wing of a strange bird, and that they did nothing but let the arrow go. They do all this because they believe that the wandering ghost of the slain bear would attack them on the first opportunity, if they did not thus appease it. Or they stuff the skin of the slain bear with hay; and after celebrating their victory with songs of mockery and insult, after spitting on and kicking it, they set it up on its hind legs, "and then, for a considerable time, they bestow on it all the veneration due to a guardian god." When a party of Koryak have killed a bear or a wolf, they skin the beast and dress one of themselves in the skin. Then they dance round the skin-clad man, saying that it was not they who killed the animal, but some one else, generally a Russian. When they kill a fox they skin it, wrap the body in grass, and bid him go tell his companions how hospitably he has been received, and how he has received a new cloak instead of his old one. A fuller account of the Koryak ceremonies is given by a more recent writer. He tells us that when a dead bear is brought to the house, the women come out to meet it, dancing with firebrands. The bear-skin is taken off along with the head; and one of the women puts on the skin, dances in it, and entreats the bear not to be angry, but to be kind to the people. At the same time they offer meat on a wooden platter to the dead beast, saying, "Eat, friend." Afterwards a ceremony is performed for the purpose of sending the dead bear, or rather his spirit, away back to his home. He is provided with provisions for the journey in the shape of puddings or reindeer-flesh packed in a grass bag. His skin is stuffed with grass and carried round the house, after which he is supposed to depart towards the rising sun. The intention of the ceremonies is to protect the people from the wrath of the slain bear and his kinsfolk, and so to ensure success in future bear-hunts. The Finns used to try to persuade a slain bear that he had not been killed by them, but had fallen from a tree, or met his death in some other way; moreover, they held a funeral festival in his honour, at the close of which bards expatiated on the homage that had been paid to him, urging him to report to the other bears the high consideration with which he had been treated, in order that they also, following his example, might come and be slain. When the Lapps



had succeeded in killing a bear with impunity, they thanked him for not hurting them and for not breaking the clubs and spears which had given him his death wounds, and they prayed that he would not visit his death upon them by sending storms or in any other way. His flesh then furnished a feast.

The reverence of hunters for the bear whom they regularly kill and eat may thus be traced all along the northern region of the Old World, from Bering Straits to Lappland. It reappears in similar forms in North America. With the American Indians a bear hunt was an important event for which they prepared by long fasts and purgations. Before setting out they offered expiatory sacrifices to the souls of bears slain in previous hunts, and besought them to be favourable to the hunters. When a bear was killed the hunter lit his pipe, and putting the mouth of it between the bear's lips, blew into the bowl, filling the beast's mouth with smoke. Then he begged the bear not to be angry at having been killed, and not to thwart him afterwards in the chase. The carcase was roasted whole and eaten, not a morsel of the flesh might be left over. The head, painted red and blue, was hung on a post and addressed by orators, who heaped praise on the dead beast. When men of the Bear clan in the Ottawa tribe killed a bear, they made him a feast of his own flesh, and addressed him thus: "Cherish us no grudge because we have killed you. You have sense; you see that our children are hungry. They love you and wish to take you into their bodies. Is it not glorious to be eaten by the children of a chief?" Amongst the Nootka Indians of British Columbia, when a bear had been killed, it was brought in and seated before the head chief in an upright posture, with a chief's bonnet, wrought in figures, on its head, and its fur powdered over with white down. A tray of provisions was then set before it, and it was invited by words and gestures to eat. After that the animal was skinned, boiled, and eaten.

A like respect is testified for other dangerous creatures by the hunters who regularly trap and kill them. When Caffre hunters are in the act of showering spears on an elephant, they call out, "Don't kill us, great captain, don't strike or tread upon us, mighty chief." When he is dead they make their excuses to him, pretending that his death was a pure accident. As a mark of respect they bury his trunk with much solemn ceremony, for they say that "the elephant is a great lord, his trunk is his hand." Before the Amaxosa Caffres attack an elephant they shout to the animal and beg him to pardon them for the slaughter they are about to perpetrate, professing great submission to his person and explaining clearly the need they have of his tusks to enable them to procure beads and supply their wants. When they have killed him they bury in the ground, along with the end of his trunk, a few of the articles they have obtained for the ivory, thus hoping to avert some mishap that would otherwise befall them. Amongst some tribes of Eastern Africa, when a lion is killed, the carcase is brought before the king, who does homage to it by prostrating himself on the

ground and rubbing his face on the muzzle of the beast. In some parts of Western Africa if a negro kills a leopard he is bound fast and brought before the chiefs for having killed one of their peers. The man defends himself on the plea that the leopard is chief of the forest and therefore a stranger. He is then set at liberty and rewarded. But the dead leopard, adorned with a chief's bonnet, is set up in the village, where nightly dances are held in its honour. The Baganda greatly fear the ghosts of buffaloes which they have killed, and they always appease these dangerous spirits. On no account will they bring the head of a slain buffalo into a village or into a garden of plantains. They always eat the flesh of the head in the open country. Afterwards they place the skull in a small hut built for the purpose, where they pour out beer as an offering and pray to the ghost to stay where he is and not to harm them.

Another formidable beast whose life the savage hunter takes with joy, yet with fear and trembling, is the whale. After the slaughter of a whale the maritime Koryak of North-eastern Siberia hold a communal festival, the essential part of which "is based on the conception that the whale killed has come on a visit to the village, that it is staying for some time, during which it is treated with great respect, that it then returns to the sea to repeat its visit the following year, that it will induce its relatives to come along, telling them of the hospitable reception that has been accorded to it. According to the Koryak ideas, the whales, like all other animals, constitute one tribe, or rather family, of related individuals, who live in villages like the Koryak. They avenge the murder of one of their number, and are grateful for kindnesses that they may have received." When the inhabitants of the Isle of St. Mary, to the north of Madagascar, go a-whaling, they single out the young whales for attack and "humbly beg the mother's pardon, stating the necessity that drives them to kill her progeny, and requesting that she will be pleased to go below while the deed is doing, that her maternal feelings may not be outraged by witnessing what must cause her so much uneasiness." An Ajumba hunter having killed a female hippopotamus on Lake Azyngo in West Africa, the animal was decapitated and its quarters and bowels removed. Then the hunter, naked, stepped into the hollow of the ribs, and kneeling down in the bloody pool washed his whole body with the blood and excretions of the animal, while he prayed to the soul of the hippopotamus not to bear him a grudge for having killed her and so blighted her hopes of future maternity, and he further entreated the ghost not to stir up other hippopotamuses to avenge her death by butting at and capsizing his canoe.

The ounce, a leopard-like creature, is dreaded for its depredations by the Indians of Brazil. When they have caught one of these animals in a snare, they kill it and carry the body home to the village. There the women deck the carcase with feathers of many colours, put bracelets on its legs, and weep over it, saying, "I pray thee not to take vengeance on our little ones for having been caught and killed through

thine own ignorance. For it was not we who deceived thee, it was thyself. Our husbands only set the trap to catch animals that are good to eat they never thought to take thee in it Therefore, let not thy soul counsel thy fellows to avenge thy death on our little ones!" When a Blackfoot Indian has caught eagles in a trap and killed them, he takes them home to a special lodge, called the eagles' lodge, which has been prepared for their reception outside of the camp. Here he sets the birds in a row on the ground, and propping up their heads on a stick, puts a piece of dried meat in each of their mouths in order that the spirits of the dead eagles may go and tell the other eagles how well they are being treated by the Indians So when Indian hunters of the Orinoco region have killed an animal, they open its mouth and pour into it a few drops of the liquor they generally carry with them, in order that the soul of the dead beast may inform its fellows of the welcome it has met with, and that they too, cheered by the prospect of the same kind reception, may come with alacrity to be killed When a Teton Indian is on a journey and he meets a grey spider or a spider with yellow legs, he kills it, because some evil would befall him if he did not But he is very careful not to let the spider know that he kills it, for if the spider knew, his soul would go and tell the other spiders, and one of them would be sure to avenge the death of his relation So in crushing the insect, the Indian says, "O Grandfather Spider, the Thunder-beings kill you" And the spider is crushed at once and believes what is told him His soul probably runs and tells the other spiders that the Thunder-beings have killed him, but no harm comes of that For what can grey or yellow-legged spiders do to the Thunder-beings?

But it is not merely dangerous creatures with whom the savage desires to keep on good terms It is true that the respect which he pays to wild beasts is in some measure proportioned to their strength and ferocity Thus the savage Stiens of Cambodia, believing that all animals have souls which roam about after their death, beg an animal's pardon when they kill it, lest its soul should come and torment them Also they offer it sacrifices, but these sacrifices are proportioned to the size and strength of the animal The ceremonies which they observe at the death of an elephant are conducted with much pomp and last seven days Similar distinctions are drawn by North American Indians "The bear, the buffalo, and the beaver are *manidos* [divinities] which furnish food The bear is formidable, and good to eat They render ceremonies to him, begging him to allow himself to be eaten, although they know he has no fancy for it We kill you, but you are not annihilated. His head and paws are objects of homage . . . Other animals are treated similarly from similar reasons . . . Many of the animal *manidos*, not being dangerous, are often treated with contempt—the terrapin, the weasel, polecat, etc." The distinction is instructive Animals which are feared, or are good to eat, or both, are treated with ceremonious respect, those which are neither formidable nor good to eat are despised. We have had examples of reverence paid to animals

which are both feared and eaten. It remains to prove that similar respect is shown to animals which, without being feared, are either eaten or valued for their skins.

When Siberian sable-hunters have caught a sable, no one is allowed to see it, and they think that if good or evil be spoken of the captured sable no more sables will be caught. A hunter has been known to express his belief that the sables could hear what was said of them as far off as Moscow. He said that the chief reason why the sable hunt was now so unproductive was that some live sables had been sent to Moscow. There they had been viewed with astonishment as strange animals, and the sables cannot abide that. Another, though minor, cause of the diminished take of sables was, he alleged, that the world is now much worse than it used to be, so that nowadays a hunter will sometimes hide the sable which he has got instead of putting it into the common stock. This also, said he, the sables cannot abide. Alaskan hunters preserve the bones of sables and beavers out of reach of the dogs for a year and then bury them carefully, "lest the spirits who look after the beavers and sables should consider that they are regarded with contempt, and hence no more should be killed or trapped." The Canadian Indians were equally particular not to let their dogs gnaw the bones, or at least certain of the bones, of beavers. They took the greatest pains to collect and preserve these bones, and, when the beaver had been caught in a net, they threw them into the river. To a Jesuit who argued that the beavers could not possibly know what became of their bones, the Indians replied, "You know nothing about catching beavers and yet you will be prating about it. Before the beaver is stone dead, his soul takes a turn in the hut of the man who is killing him and makes a careful note of what is done with his bones. If the bones are given to the dogs, the other beavers would get word of it and would not let themselves be caught. Whereas, if their bones are thrown into the fire or a river, they are quite satisfied, and it is particularly gratifying to the net which caught them." Before hunting the beaver they offered a solemn prayer to the Great Beaver, and presented him with tobacco; and when the chase was over, an orator pronounced a funeral oration over the dead beavers. He praised their spirit and wisdom. "You will hear no more," said he, "the voice of the chieftains who commanded you and whom you chose from among all the warrior beavers to give you laws. Your language, which the medicine-men understand perfectly, will be heard no more at the bottom of the lake. You will fight no more battles with the otters, your cruel foes. No, beavers! But your skins shall serve to buy arms, we will carry your smoked hams to our children, we will keep the dogs from eating your bones, which are so hard."

The elan, deer, and elk were treated by the American Indians with the same punctilious respect, and for the same reason. Their bones might not be given to the dogs nor thrown into the fire, nor might their fat be dropped upon the fire, because the souls of the dead

animals were believed to see what was done to their bodies and to tell it to the other beasts, living and dead. Hence, if their bodies were ill-used, the animals of that species would not allow themselves to be taken, neither in this world nor in the world to come. Among the Chiquites of Paraguay a sick man would be asked by the medicine-man whether he had not thrown away some of the flesh of the deer or turtle, and if he answered yes, the medicine-man would say, "That is what is killing you. The soul of the deer or turtle has entered into your body to avenge the wrong you did it." The Canadian Indians would not eat the embryos of the elk, unless at the close of the hunting season; otherwise the mother-elks would be shy and refuse to be caught.

In the Timor-laut islands of the Indian Archipelago the skulls of all the turtles which a fisherman has caught are hung up under his house. Before he goes out to catch another, he addresses himself to the skull of the last turtle that he killed, and having inserted betel between its jaws, he prays the spirit of the dead animal to entice its kinsfolk in the sea to come and be caught. In the Poso district of Central Celebes hunters keep the jawbones of deer and wild pigs which they have killed and hang them up in their houses near the fire. Then they say to the jawbones, "Ye cry after your comrades, that your grandfathers, or nephews, or children may not go away." Their notion is that the souls of the dead deer and pigs tarry near their jawbones and attract the souls of living deer and pigs, which are thus drawn into the toils of the hunter. Thus the wily savage employs dead animals as decoys to lure living animals to their doom.

The Lengua Indians of the Gran Chaco love to hunt the ostrich, but when they have killed one of these birds and are bringing home the carcase to the village, they take steps to outwit the resentful ghost of their victim. They think that when the first natural shock of death is passed, the ghost of the ostrich pulls himself together and makes after his body. Acting on this sage calculation, the Indians pluck feathers from the breast of the bird and strew them at intervals along the track. At every bunch of feathers the ghost stops to consider, "Is this the whole of my body or only a part of it?" The doubt gives him pause, and when at last he has made up his mind fully at all the bunches, and has further wasted valuable time by the zigzag course which he invariably pursues in going from one to another, the hunters are safe at home, and the bilked ghost may stalk in vain round about the village, which he is too timid to enter.

The Esquimaux about Bering Strait believe that the souls of dead sea-beasts, such as seals, walrus, and whales, remain attached to their bladders, and that by returning the bladders to the sea they can cause the souls to be reincarnated in fresh bodies and so multiply the game which the hunters pursue and kill. Acting on this belief every hunter carefully removes and preserves the bladders of all the sea-beasts that he kills, and at a solemn festival held once a year in winter these bladders, containing the souls of all the sea-beasts that have been killed throughout the year, are honoured with dances

and offerings of food in the public assembly-room, after which they are taken out on the ice and thrust through holes into the water, for the simple Esquimaux imagine that the souls of the animals, in high good humour at the kind treatment they have experienced, will thereafter be born again as seals, walrus, and whales, and in that form will flock willingly to be again speared, harpooned, or otherwise done to death by the hunters

For like reasons, a tribe which depends for its subsistence, chiefly or in part, upon fishing is careful to treat the fish with every mark of honour and respect. The Indians of Peru "adored the fish that they caught in greatest abundance, for they said that the first fish that was made in the world above (for so they named Heaven) gave birth to all other fish of that species, and took care to send them plenty of its children to sustain their tribe. For this reason they worshipped sardines in one region, where they killed more of them than of any other fish, in others, the skate; in others, the dogfish, in others, the golden fish for its beauty, in others, the crawfish; in others, for want of larger gods, the crabs, where they had no other fish, or where they knew not how to catch and kill them. In short, they had whatever fish was most serviceable to them as their gods." The Kwakiutl Indians of British Columbia think that when a salmon is killed its soul returns to the salmon country. Hence they take care to throw the bones and offal into the sea, in order that the soul may reanimate them at the resurrection of the salmon. Whereas if they burned the bones the soul would be lost, and so it would be quite impossible for that salmon to rise from the dead. In like manner the Ottawa Indians of Canada, believing that the souls of dead fish passed into other bodies of fish, never burned fish bones, for fear of displeasing the souls of the fish, who would come no more to the nets. The Hurons also refrained from throwing fish bones into the fire, lest the souls of the fish should go and warn the other fish not to let themselves be caught, since the Hurons would burn their bones. Moreover, they had men who preached to the fish and persuaded them to come and be caught. A good preacher was much sought after, for they thought that the exhortations of a clever man had a great effect in drawing the fish to the nets. In the Huron fishing village where the French missionary Sagard stayed, the preacher to the fish prided himself very much on his eloquence, which was of a florid order. Every evening after supper, having seen that all the people were in their places and that a strict silence was observed, he preached to the fish. His text was that the Hurons did not burn fish bones. "Then enlarging on this theme with extraordinary unction, he exhorted and conjured and invited and implored the fish to come and be caught and to be of good courage and to fear nothing, for it was all to serve their friends who honoured them and did not burn their bones." The natives of the Duke of York Island annually decorate a canoe with flowers and ferns, lade it, or are supposed to lade it, with shell-money, and set it adrift to compensate the fish for their fellows who have

been caught and eaten. It is especially necessary to treat the first fish caught with consideration in order to conciliate the rest of the fish, whose conduct may be supposed to be influenced by the reception given to those of their kind which were the first to be taken. Accordingly the Maoris always put back into the sea the first fish caught, "with a prayer that it may tempt other fish to come and be caught."

Still more stringent are the precautions taken when the fish are the first of the season. On salmon rivers, when the fish begin to run up the stream in spring, they are received with much deference by tribes who, like the Indians of the Pacific Coast of North America, subsist largely upon a fish diet. In British Columbia the Indians used to go out to meet the first fish as they came up the river. "They paid court to them, and would address them thus: 'You fish, you fish, you are all chiefs, you are; you are all chiefs'" Amongst the Tlingit of Alaska the first halibut of the season is carefully handled and addressed as a chief, and a festival is given in his honour, after which the fishing goes on. In spring, when the winds blow soft from the south and the salmon begin to run up the Klamath river, the Karoks of California dance for salmon, to ensure a good catch. One of the Indians, called the Kareya or God-man, retires to the mountains and fasts for ten days. On his return the people flee, while he goes to the river, takes the first salmon of the catch, eats some of it, and with the rest kindles the sacred fire in the sweating-house. "No Indian may take a salmon before this dance is held, nor for ten days after it, even if his family are starving." The Karoks also believe that a fisherman will take no salmon if the poles of which his spearing-booth is made were gathered on the river-side, where the salmon might have seen them. The poles must be brought from the top of the highest mountain. The fisherman will also labour in vain if he uses the same poles a second year in booths or weirs, "because the old salmon will have told the young ones about them." There is a favourite fish of the Aino which appears in their rivers about May and June. They prepare for the fishing by observing rules of ceremonial purity, and when they have gone out to fish, the women at home must keep strict silence or the fish would hear them and disappear. When the first fish is caught he is brought home and passed through a small opening at the end of the hut, but not through the door, for if he were passed through the door, "the other fish would certainly see him and disappear." This may partly explain the custom observed by other savages of bringing game in certain cases into their huts, not by the door, but by the window, the smoke-hole, or by a special opening at the back of the hut.

With some savages a special reason for respecting the bones of game, and generally of the animals which they eat, is a belief that, if the bones are preserved, they will in course of time be reclothed with flesh, and thus the animal will come to life again. It is, therefore, clearly for the interest of the hunter to leave the bones intact.

since to destroy them would be to diminish the future supply of game. Many of the Minnetaree Indians "believe that the bones of those bisons which they have slain and divested of flesh rise again clothed with renewed flesh, and quickened with life, and become fat, and fit for slaughter the succeeding June" Hence on the western prairies of America the skulls of buffaloes may be seen arranged in circles and symmetrical piles, awaiting the resurrection After feasting on a dog, the Dacotas carefully collect the bones, scrape, wash, and bury them, "partly, as it is said, to testify to the dog-species, that in feasting upon one of their number no disrespect was meant to the species itself, and partly also from a belief that the bones of the animal will rise and reproduce another" In sacrificing an animal the Lapps regularly put aside the bones, eyes, ears, heart, lungs, sexual parts (if the animal was a male), and a morsel of flesh from each limb Then, after eating the remainder of the flesh, they laid the bones and the rest in anatomical order in a coffin and buried them with the usual rites, believing that the god to whom the animal was sacrificed would reclothe the bones with flesh and restore the animal to life in Jabme-Aimo, the subterranean world of the dead Sometimes, as after feasting on a bear, they seem to have contented themselves with thus burying the bones Thus the Lapps expected the resurrection of the slain animal to take place in another world, resembling in this respect the Kamtchatkans, who believed that every creature, down to the smallest fly, would rise from the dead and live underground. On the other hand, the North American Indians looked for the resurrection of the animals in the present world. The habit, observed especially by Mongolian peoples, of stuffing the skin of a sacrificed animal, or stretching it on a framework, points rather to a belief in a resurrection of the latter sort The objection commonly entertained by primitive peoples to break the bones of the animals which they have eaten or sacrificed may be based either on a belief in the resurrection of the animals, or on a fear of intimidating other creatures of the same species and offending the ghosts of the slain animals The reluctance of North American Indians and Esquimaux to let dogs gnaw the bones of animals is perhaps only a precaution to prevent the bones from being broken

But after all the resurrection of dead game may have its inconveniences, and accordingly some hunters take steps to prevent it by hamstringing the animal so as to prevent it or its ghost from getting up and running away. This is the motive alleged for the practice by Koui hunters in Laos, they think that the spells which they utter in the chase may lose their magical virtue, and that the slaughtered animal may consequently come to life again and escape. To prevent that catastrophe they therefore hamstring the beast as soon as they have butchered it When an Esquimaux of Alaska has killed a fox, he carefully cuts the tendons of all the animal's legs in order to prevent the ghost from reanimating the body and walking about But hamstringing the carcass is not the only measure which the prudent savage



adopts for the sake of disabling the ghost of his victim. In old days, when the Aino went out hunting and killed a fox first, they took care to tie its mouth up tightly in order to prevent the ghost of the animal from sallying forth and warning its fellows against the approach of the hunter. The Gilyaks of the Amoor River put out the eyes of the seals they have killed, lest the ghosts of the slain animals should know their slayers and avenge their death by spoiling the seal-hunt.

Besides the animals which primitive man dreads for their strength and ferocity, and those which he reveres on account of the benefits which he expects from them, there is another class of creatures which he sometimes deems it necessary to conciliate by worship and sacrifice. These are the vermin that infest his crops and his cattle. To rid himself of these deadly foes the farmer has recourse to many superstitious devices, of which, though some are meant to destroy or intimidate the vermin, others aim at propitiating them and persuading them by fair means to spare the fruits of the earth and the herds. Thus Esthonian peasants, in the island of Oesel, stand in great awe of the weevil, an insect which is exceedingly destructive to the grain. They give it a fine name, and if a child is about to kill a weevil they say, "Don't do it; the more we hurt him, the more he hurts us." If they find a weevil they bury it in the earth instead of killing it. Some even put the weevil under a stone in the field and offer corn to it. They think that thus it is appeased and does less harm. Amongst the Saxons of Transylvania, in order to keep sparrows from the corn, the sower begins by throwing the first handful of seed backwards over his head, saying, "That is for you, sparrows." To guard the corn against the attacks of leaf-flies he shuts his eyes and scatters three handful of oats in different directions. Having made this offering to the leaf-flies he feels sure that they will spare the corn. A Transylvanian way of securing the crops against all birds, beasts, and insects, is this: after he has finished sowing, the sower goes once more from end to end of the field imitating the gesture of sowing, but with an empty hand. As he does so he says, "I sow this for the animals; I sow it for everything that flies and creeps, that walks and stands, that sings and springs, in the name of God the Father, etc." The following is a German way of freeing a garden from caterpillars. After sunset or at midnight the mistress of the house, or another female member of the family, walks all round the garden dragging a broom after her. She may not look behind her, and must keep murmuring, "Good evening, Mother Caterpillar, you shall come with your husband to church." The garden gate is left open till the following morning.

Sometimes in dealing with vermin the farmer aims at hitting a happy mean between excessive rigour on the one hand and weak indulgence on the other; kind but firm, he tempers severity with mercy. An ancient Greek treatise on farming advises the husbandman who would rid his lands of mice to act thus: "Take a sheet of paper and write on it as follows: 'I adjure you, ye mice here present, that ye neither injure me nor suffer another mouse to do so. I give

you yonder field' (here you specify the field), 'but if ever I catch you here again, by the Mother of the Gods I will rend you in seven pieces' Write this, and stick the paper on an unhewn stone in the field before sunrise, taking care to keep the written side up" In the Ardennes they say that to get rid of rats you should repeat the following words "*Erat verbum, apud Deum vestrum* Male rats and female rats, I conjure you, by the great God, to go out of my house, out of all my habitations, and to betake yourselves to such and such a place, there to end your days *Decretis, reversis et desembarassis virgo potens, clemens, justitiae*" Then write the same words on pieces of paper, fold them up, and place one of them under the door by which the rats are to go forth, and the other on the road which they are to take. This exorcism should be performed at sunrise. Some years ago an American farmer was reported to have written a civil letter to the rats, telling them that his crops were short, that he could not afford to keep them through the winter, that he had been very kind to them, and that for their own good he thought they had better leave him and go to some of his neighbours who had more grain This document he pinned to a post in his barn for the rats to read

Sometimes the desired object is supposed to be attained by treating with high distinction one or two chosen individuals of the obnoxious species, while the rest are pursued with relentless rigour. In the East Indian island of Bali, the mice which ravage the rice-fields are caught in great numbers, and burned in the same way that corpses are burned But two of the captured mice are allowed to live, and receive a little packet of white linen. Then the people bow down before them, as before gods, and let them go When the farms of the Sea Dyaks or Ibans of Sarawak are much pestered by birds and insects, they catch a specimen of each kind of vermin (one sparrow, one grasshopper, and so on), put them in a tiny boat of bark well-stocked with provisions, and then allow the little vessel with its obnoxious passengers to float down the river. If that does not drive the pests away, the Dyaks resort to what they deem a more effectual mode of accomplishing the same purpose. They make a clay crocodile as large as life and set it up in the fields, where they offer it food, rice-spirit, and cloth, and sacrifice a fowl and a pig before it Mollified by these attentions, the ferocious animal very soon gobbles up all the creatures that devour the crops In Albania, if the fields or vineyards are ravaged by locusts or beetles, some of the women will assemble with dishevelled hair, catch a few of the insects, and march with them in a funeral procession to a spring or stream, in which they drown the creatures Then one of the women sings, "O locusts and beetles who have left us bereaved," and the dirge is taken up and repeated by all the women in chorus. Thus by celebrating the obsequies of a few locusts and beetles, they hope to bring about the death of them all When caterpillars invaded a vineyard or field in Syria, the virgins were gathered, and one of the caterpillars was taken and a girl made its mother. Then they bewailed and buried it. Thereafter they conducted the "mother" to the place

where the caterpillars were, consoling her, in order that all the caterpillars might leave the garden.

## CHAPTER LIV

### TYPES OF ANIMAL SACRAMENT

§ 1. *The Egyptian and the Aino Types of Sacrament*—We are now perhaps in a position to understand the ambiguous behaviour of the Aino and Gilyaks towards the bear. It has been shown that the sharp line of demarcation which we draw between mankind and the lower animals does not exist for the savage. To him many of the other animals appear as his equals or even his superiors, not merely in brute force but in intelligence; and if choice or necessity leads him to take their lives, he feels bound, out of regard to his own safety, to do it in a way which will be as inoffensive as possible not merely to the living animal, but to its departed spirit and to all the other animals of the same species, which would resent an affront put upon one of their kind much as a tribe of savages would revenge an injury or insult offered to a tribesman. We have seen that among the many devices by which the savage seeks to atone for the wrong done by him to his animal victims one is to show marked deference to a few chosen individuals of the species, for such behaviour is apparently regarded as entitling him to exterminate with impunity all the rest of the species upon which he can lay hands. This principle perhaps explains the attitude, at first sight puzzling and contradictory, of the Aino towards the bear. The flesh and skin of the bear regularly afford them food and clothing; but since the bear is an intelligent and powerful animal, it is necessary to offer some satisfaction or atonement to the bear species for the loss which it sustains in the death of so many of its members. This satisfaction or atonement is made by rearing young bears, treating them, so long as they live, with respect, and killing them with extraordinary marks of sorrow and devotion. So the other bears are appeased, and do not resent the slaughter of their kind by attacking the slayers or deserting the country, which would deprive the Aino of one of their means of subsistence.

Thus the primitive worship of animals conforms to two types, which are in some respects the converse of each other. On the one hand, animals are worshipped, and are therefore neither killed nor eaten. On the other hand, animals are worshipped because they are habitually killed and eaten. In both types of worship the animal is revered on account of some benefit, positive or negative, which the savage hopes to receive from it. In the former worship the benefit comes either in the positive shape of protection, advice, and help which the animal affords the man, or in the negative shape of abstinence from injuries which it is in the power of the animal to inflict. In the latter worship the benefit takes the material form of the animal's flesh and skin. The two types of worship are in some measure antithetical. In the

one, the animal is not eaten because it is revered, in the other, it is revered because it is eaten. But both may be practised by the same people, as we see in the case of the North American Indians, who, while they apparently revere and spare their totem animals, also revere the animals and fish upon which they subsist. The aborigines of Australia have totemism in the most primitive form known to us; but there is no clear evidence that they attempt, like the North American Indians, to conciliate the animals which they kill and eat. The means which the Australians adopt to secure a plentiful supply of game appear to be primarily based, not on conciliation, but on sympathetic magic, a principle to which the North American Indians also resort for the same purpose. Hence, as the Australians undoubtedly represent a ruder and earlier stage of human progress than the American Indians, it would seem that before hunters think of worshipping the game as a means of ensuring an abundant supply of it, they seek to attain the same end by sympathetic magic. This, again, would show—what there is good reason for believing—that sympathetic magic is one of the earliest means by which man endeavours to adapt the agencies of nature to his needs.

Corresponding to the two distinct types of animal worship, there are two distinct types of the custom of killing the animal god. On the one hand, when the revered animal is habitually spared, it is nevertheless killed—and sometimes eaten—on rare and solemn occasions. Examples of this custom have been already given and an explanation of them offered. On the other hand, when the revered animal is habitually killed, the slaughter of any one of the species involves the killing of the god, and is atoned for on the spot by apologies and sacrifices, especially when the animal is a powerful and dangerous one, and, in addition to this ordinary and everyday atonement, there is a special annual atonement, at which a select individual of the species is slain with extraordinary marks of respect and devotion. Clearly the two types of sacramental killing—the Egyptian and the Aino types, as we may call them for distinction—are liable to be confounded by an observer, and, before we can say to which type any particular example belongs, it is necessary to ascertain whether the animal sacramentally slain belongs to a species which is habitually spared, or to one which is habitually killed by the tribe. In the former case the example belongs to the Egyptian type of sacrament, in the latter to the Aino type.

The practice of pastoral tribes appears to furnish examples of both types of sacrament. "Pastoral tribes," says Adolf Bastian, "being sometimes obliged to sell their herds to strangers who may handle the bones disrespectfully, seek to avert the danger which such a sacrilege would entail by consecrating one of the herd as an object of worship, eating it sacramentally in the family circle with closed doors, and afterwards treating the bones with all the ceremonious respect which, strictly speaking, should be accorded to every head of cattle, but which, being punctually paid to the representative animal,

is deemed to be paid to all. Such family meals are found among various peoples, especially those of the Caucasus. When amongst the Abchases the shepherds in spring eat their common meal with their loins girt and their staves in their hands, this may be looked upon both as a sacrament and as an oath of mutual help and support. For the strongest of all oaths is that which is accompanied with the eating of a sacred substance, since the perjured person cannot possibly escape the avenging god whom he has taken into his body and assimilated." This kind of sacrament is of the Aino or expiatory type, since it is meant to atone to the species for the possible ill-usage of individuals. An expiation, similar in principle but different in details, is offered by the Kalmucks to the sheep, whose flesh is one of their staple foods. Rich Kalmucks are in the habit of consecrating a white ram under the title of "the ram of heaven" or "the ram of the spirit." The animal is never shorn and never sold; but when it grows old and its owner wishes to consecrate a new one, the old ram must be killed and eaten at a feast to which the neighbours are invited. On a lucky day, generally in autumn when the sheep are fat, a sorcerer kills the old ram, after sprinkling it with milk. Its flesh is eaten, the skeleton, with a portion of the fat, is burned on a turf altar, and the skin, with the head and feet, is hung up.

An example of a sacrament of the Egyptian type is furnished by the Todas, a pastoral people of Southern India, who subsist largely upon the milk of their buffaloes. Amongst them "the buffalo is to a certain degree held sacred" and "is treated with great kindness, even with a degree of adoration, by the people." They never eat the flesh of the cow buffalo, and as a rule abstain from the flesh of the male. But to the latter rule there is a single exception. Once a year all the adult males of the village join in the ceremony of killing and eating a very young male calf—seemingly under a month old. They take the animal into the dark recesses of the village wood, where it is killed with a club made from the sacred tree of the Todas (the *Millingtonia*). A sacred fire having been made by the rubbing of sticks, the flesh of the calf is roasted on the embers of certain trees, and is eaten by the men alone, women being excluded from the assembly. This is the only occasion on which the Todas eat buffalo flesh. The Madi or Moru tribe of Central Africa, whose chief wealth is their cattle, though they also practise agriculture, appear to kill a lamb sacramentally on certain solemn occasions. The custom is thus described by Dr. Felkin. "A remarkable custom is observed at stated times—once a year, I am led to believe. I have not been able to ascertain what exact meaning is attached to it. It appears, however, to relieve the people's minds, for beforehand they evince much sadness, and seem very joyful when the ceremony is duly accomplished. The following is what takes place. A large concourse of people of all ages assemble, and sit down round a circle of stones, which is erected by the side of a road (really a narrow path). A very choice lamb is then fetched by a boy, who leads it four times round the assembled people. As it passes they

pluck off little bits of its fleece and place them in their hair, or on to some other part of their body. The lamb is then led up to the stones, and there killed by a man belonging to a kind of priestly order, who takes some of the blood and sprinkles it four times over the people. He then applies it individually. On the children he makes a small ring of blood over the lower end of the breast bone, on women and girls he makes a mark above the breasts, and the men he touches on each shoulder. He then proceeds to explain the ceremony, and to exhort the people to show kindness. . . . When this discourse, which is at times of great length, is over, the people rise, each places a leaf on or by the circle of stones, and then they depart with signs of great joy. The lamb's skull is hung on a tree near the stones, and its flesh is eaten by the poor. This ceremony is observed on a small scale at other times. If a family is in any great trouble, through illness or bereavement, their friends and neighbours come together and a lamb is killed, this is thought to avert further evil. The same custom prevails at the grave of departed friends, and also on joyful occasions, such as the return of a son home after a very prolonged absence." The sorrow thus manifested by the people at the annual slaughter of the lamb seems to show that the lamb slain is a sacred or divine animal, whose death is mourned by his worshippers, just as the death of the sacred buzzard was mourned by the Californians and the death of the Theban ram by the Egyptians. The smearing each of the worshippers with the blood of the lamb is a form of communion with the divinity, the vehicle of the divine life is applied externally instead of being taken internally, as when the blood is drunk or the flesh eaten.

§ 2 *Processions with Sacred Animals*—The form of communion in which the sacred animal is taken from house to house, that all may enjoy a share of its divine influence, has been exemplified by the Gilyak custom of promenading the bear through the village before it is slain. A similar form of communion with the sacred snake is observed by a Snake tribe in the Punjaub. Once a year in the month of September the snake is worshipped by all castes and religions for nine days only. At the end of August the Mirasans, especially those of the Snake tribe, make a snake of dough which they paint black and red, and place on a winnowing basket. This basket they carry round the village, and on entering any house they say "God be with you all! May every ill be far! May our patron's (Gugga's) word thrive!" Then they present the basket with the snake, saying "A small cake of flour · a little bit of butter if you obey the snake, you and yours shall thrive!" Strictly speaking, a cake and butter should be given, but it is seldom done. Every one, however, gives something, generally a handful of dough or some corn. In houses where there is a new bride or whence a bride has gone, or where a son has been born, it is usual to give a rupee and a quarter, or some cloth. Sometimes the bearers of the snake also sing:

"Give the snake a piece of cloth, and he will send a lively bride!"

When every house has been thus visited, the dough snake is buried and a small grave is erected over it. Thither during the nine days of September the women come to worship. They bring a basin of curds, a small portion of which they offer at the snake's grave, kneeling on the ground and touching the earth with their foreheads. Then they go home and divide the rest of the curds among the children. Here the dough snake is clearly a substitute for a real snake. Indeed, in districts where snakes abound the worship is offered, not at the grave of the dough snake, but in the jungles where snakes are known to be. Besides this yearly worship, performed by all the people, the members of the Snake tribe worship in the same way every morning after a new moon. The Snake tribe is not uncommon in the Punjaub. Members of it will not kill a snake, and they say that its bite does not hurt them. If they find a dead snake, they put clothes on it and give it a regular funeral.

Ceremonies closely analogous to this Indian worship of the snake have survived in Europe into recent times, and doubtless date from a very primitive paganism. The best-known example is the "hunting of the wren." By many European peoples—the ancient Greeks and Romans, the modern Italians, Spaniards, French, Germans, Dutch, Danes, Swedes, English, and Welsh—the wren has been designated the king, the little king, the king of birds, the hedge king, and so forth, and has been reckoned amongst those birds which it is extremely unlucky to kill. In England it is supposed that if any one kills a wren or harries its nest he will infallibly break a bone or meet with some dreadful misfortune within the year; sometimes it is thought that the cows will give bloody milk. In Scotland the wren is called "the Lady of Heaven's hen," and boys say :

*" Malisons, malisons, mair than ten,  
That harry the Ladye of Heaven's hen ! "*

At Saint Donan, in Brittany, people believe that if children touch the young wrens in the nest they will suffer from the fire of St. Lawrence, that is, from pimples on the face, legs, and so on. In other parts of France it is thought that if a person kills a wren or harries its nest his house will be struck by lightning, or that the fingers with which he did the deed will shrivel up and drop off, or at least be maimed, or that his cattle will suffer in their feet.

Notwithstanding such beliefs, the custom of annually killing the wren has prevailed widely both in this country and in France. In the Isle of Man down to the eighteenth century the custom was observed on Christmas Eve, or rather Christmas morning. On the twenty-fourth of December, towards evening, all the servants got a holiday; they did not go to bed all night, but rambled about till the bells rang in all the churches at midnight. When prayers were over, they went to hunt the wren, and having found one of these birds they killed it and fastened it to the top of a long pole with its wings extended. Thus

they carried it in procession to every house, chanting the following rhyme :

*" We hunted the wren for Robin the Bobbin,  
We hunted the wren for Jack of the Can,  
We hunted the wren for Robin the Bobbin,  
We hunted the wren for every one "*

When they had gone from house to house and collected all the money they could, they laid the wren on a bier and carried it in procession to the parish churchyard, where they made a grave and buried it " with the utmost solemnity, singing dirges over her in the Manks language, which they call her knell , after which Christmas begins " The burial over, the company outside the churchyard formed a circle and danced to music

A writer of the eighteenth century says that in Ireland the wren " is still hunted and killed by the peasants on Christmas Day, and on the following (St Stephen's Day) he is carried about, hung by the leg, in the centre of two hoops, crossing each other at right angles, and a procession made in every village, of men, women, and children, singing an Irish catch, importing him to be the king of all birds " Down to the present time the " hunting of the wren " still takes place in parts of Leinster and Connaught On Christmas Day or St. Stephen's Day the boys hunt and kill the wren, fasten it in the middle of a mass of holly and ivy on the top of a broomstick, and on St. Stephen's Day go about with it from house to house, singing

*" The wren, the wren, the king of all birds,  
St Stephen's Day was caught in the furze ;  
Although he is little, his family's great,  
I pray you, good landlady, give us a treat "*

Money or food (bread, butter, eggs, etc ) were given them, upon which they feasted in the evening.

In the first half of the nineteenth century similar customs were still observed in various parts of the south of France Thus at Carcassone, every year on the first Sunday of December the young people of the street Saint Jean used to go out of the town armed with sticks, with which they beat the bushes, looking for wrens The first to strike down one of these birds was proclaimed King Then they returned to the town in procession, headed by the King, who carried the wren on a pole On the evening of the last day of the year the King and all who had hunted the wren marched through the streets of the town to the light of torches, with drums beating and fifes playing in front of them At the door of every house they stopped, and one of them wrote with chalk on the door *vive le roi !* with the number of the year which was about to begin On the morning of Twelfth Day the King again marched in procession with great pomp, wearing a crown and a blue mantle and carrying a sceptre In front of him was borne the wren fastened to the top of a pole, which was adorned with a verdant wreath of olive, of oak, and sometimes of mistletoe grown on an oak.



After hearing high mass in the parish church of St Vincent, surrounded by his officers and guards, the King visited the bishop, the mayor, the magistrates, and the chief inhabitants, collecting money to defray the expenses of the royal banquet which took place in the evening and wound up with a dance.

The parallelism between this custom of "hunting the wren" and some of those which we have considered, especially the Gilyak procession with the bear, and the Indian one with the snake, seems too close to allow us to doubt that they all belong to the same circle of ideas. The worshipful animal is killed with special solemnity once a year, and before or immediately after death he is promenaded from door to door, that each of his worshippers may receive a portion of the divine virtues that are supposed to emanate from the dead or dying god. Religious processions of this sort must have had a great place in the ritual of European peoples in prehistoric times, if we may judge from the numerous traces of them which have survived in folk-custom. For example, on the last day of the year, or Hogmanay as it was called, it used to be customary in the Highlands of Scotland for a man to dress himself up in a cow's hide and thus attired to go from house to house, attended by young fellows, each of them armed with a staff, to which a bit of raw hide was tied. Round every house the hide-clad man used to run thrice *deiseal*, that is, according to the course of the sun, so as to keep the house on his right hand, while the others pursued him, beating the hide with their staves and thereby making a loud noise like the beating of a drum. In this disorderly procession they also struck the walls of the house. On being admitted, one of the party, standing within the threshold, pronounced a blessing on the family in these words: "May God bless the house and all that belongs to it, cattle, stones, and timber! In plenty of meat, of bed and body clothes, and health of men may it ever abound!" Then each of the party singed in the fire a little bit of the hide which was tied to his staff, and having done so he applied the singed hide to the nose of every person and of every domestic animal belonging to the house. This was imagined to secure them from diseases and other misfortunes, particularly from witchcraft, throughout the ensuing year. The whole ceremony was called *callumn* because of the great noise made in beating the hide. It was observed in the Hebrides, including St. Kilda, down to the second half of the eighteenth century at least, and it seems to have survived well into the nineteenth century.

## CHAPTER LV

### THE TRANSFERENCE OF EVIL

§ 1 *The Transference to Inanimate Objects*—We have now traced the practice of killing a god among peoples in the hunting, pastoral, and agricultural stages of society, and I have attempted to explain

the motives which led men to adopt so curious a custom One aspect of the custom still remains to be noticed. The accumulated misfortunes and sins of the whole people are sometimes laid upon the dying god, who is supposed to bear them away for ever, leaving the people innocent and happy. The notion that we can transfer our guilt and sufferings to some other being who will bear them for us is familiar to the savage mind It arises from a very obvious confusion between the physical and the mental, between the material and the immaterial Because it is possible to shift a load of wood, stones, or what not, from our own back to the back of another, the savage fancies that it is equally possible to shift the burden of his pains and sorrows to another, who will suffer them in his stead Upon this idea he acts, and the result is an endless number of very unamiable devices for palming off upon some one else the trouble which a man shrinks from bearing himself In short, the principle of vicarious suffering is commonly understood and practised by races who stand on a low level of social and intellectual culture In the following pages I shall illustrate the theory and the practice as they are found among savages in all their naked simplicity, undisguised by the refinements of metaphysics and the subtleties of theology.

The devices to which the cunning and selfish savage resorts for the sake of easing himself at the expense of his neighbour are manifold ; only a few typical examples out of a multitude can be cited At the outset it is to be observed that the evil of which a man seeks to rid himself need not be transferred to a person , it may equally well be transferred to an animal or a thing, though in the last case the thing is often only a vehicle to convey the trouble to the first person who touches it. In some of the East Indian islands they think that epilepsy can be cured by striking the patient on the face with the leaves of certain trees and then throwing them away. The disease is believed to have passed into the leaves, and to have been thrown away with them. To cure toothache some of the Australian blacks apply a heated spear-thrower to the cheek The spear-thrower is then cast away, and the toothache goes with it in the shape of a black stone called *karrutch* Stones of this kind are found in old mounds and sandhills They are carefully collected and thrown in the direction of enemies in order to give them toothache. The Bahima, a pastoral people of Uganda, often suffer from deep-seated abscesses. " their cure for this is to transfer the disease to some other person by obtaining herbs from the medicine-man, rubbing them over the place where the swelling is, and burying them in the road where people continually pass ; the first person who steps over these buried herbs contracts the disease, and the original patient recovers "

Sometimes in case of sickness the malady is transferred to an effigy as a preliminary to passing it on to a human being Thus among the Baganda the medicine-man would sometimes make a model of his patient in clay , then a relative of the sick man would rub the image over the sufferer's body and either bury it in the road or hide it in

the grass by the wayside The first person who stepped over the image or passed by it would catch the disease Sometimes the effigy was made out of a plantain-flower tied up so as to look like a person ; it was used in the same way as the clay figure. But the use of images for this maleficent purpose was a capital crime , any person caught in the act of burying one of them in the public road would surely have been put to death.

In the western district of the island of Timor, when men or women are making long and tiring journeys, they fan themselves with leafy branches, which they afterwards throw away on particular spots where their forefathers did the same before them The fatigue which they felt is thus supposed to have passed into the leaves and to be left behind Others use stones instead of leaves. Similarly in the Babar Archipelago tired people will strike themselves with stones, believing that they thus transfer to the stones the weariness which they felt in their own bodies They then throw away the stones in places which are specially set apart for the purpose A like belief and practice in many distant parts of the world have given rise to those cairns or heaps of sticks and leaves which travellers often observe beside the path, and to which every passing native adds his contribution in the shape of a stone, or stick, or leaf Thus in the Solomon and Banks' Islands the natives are wont to throw sticks, stones, or leaves upon a heap at a place of steep descent, or where a difficult path begins, saying, " There goes my fatigue " The act is not a religious rite, for the thing thrown on the heap is not an offering to spiritual powers, and the words which accompany the act are not a prayer It is nothing but a magical ceremony for getting rid of fatigue, which the simple savage fancies he can embody in a stick, leaf, or stone, and so cast it from him.

§ 2 *The Transference to Animals* —Animals are often employed as a vehicle for carrying away or transferring the evil When a Moor has a headache he will sometimes take a lamb or a goat and beat it till it falls down, believing that the headache will thus be transferred to the animal In Morocco most wealthy Moors keep a wild boar in their stables, in order that the jinn and evil spirits may be diverted from the horses and enter into the boar Amongst the Caffres of South Africa, when other remedies have failed, " natives sometimes adopt the custom of taking a goat into the presence of a sick man, and confess the sins of the kraal over the animal Sometimes a few drops of blood from the sick man are allowed to fall on the head of the goat, which is turned out into an uninhabited part of the veldt The sickness is supposed to be transferred to the animal, and to become lost in the desert " In Arabia, when the plague is raging, the people will sometimes lead a camel through all the quarters of the town in order that the animal may take the pestilence on itself Then they strangle it in a sacred place and imagine that they have rid themselves of the camel and of the plague at one blow. It is said that when smallpox is raging the savages of Formosa will drive the demon of disease into

a sow, then cut off the animal's ears and burn them or it, believing that in this way they rid themselves of the plague

Amongst the Malagasy the vehicle for carrying away evils is called a *faditra* "The *faditra* is anything selected by the *sikidy* [divining board] for the purpose of taking away any hurtful evils or diseases that might prove injurious to an individual's happiness, peace, or prosperity. The *faditra* may be either ashes, cut money, a sheep, a pumpkin, or anything else the *sikidy* may choose to direct. After the particular article is appointed, the priest counts upon it all the evils that may prove injurious to the person for whom it is made, and which he then charges the *faditra* to take away for ever. If the *faditra* be ashes, it is blown, to be carried away by the wind. If it be cut money, it is thrown to the bottom of deep water, or where it can never be found. If it be a sheep, it is carried away to a distance on the shoulders of a man, who runs with all his might, mumbling as he goes, as if in the greatest rage against the *faditra*, for the evils it is bearing away. If it be a pumpkin, it is carried on the shoulders to a little distance, and there dashed upon the ground with every appearance of fury and indignation." A Malagasy was informed by a diviner that he was doomed to a bloody death, but that possibly he might avert his fate by performing a certain rite. Carrying a small vessel full of blood upon his head, he was to mount upon the back of a bullock; while thus mounted, he was to spill the blood upon the bullock's head, and then send the animal away into the wilderness, whence it might never return.

The Bataks of Sumatra have a ceremony which they call "making the curse to fly away." When a woman is childless, a sacrifice is offered to the gods of three grasshoppers, representing a head of cattle, a buffalo, and a horse. Then a swallow is set free, with a prayer that the curse may fall upon the bird and fly away with it. "The entrance into a house of an animal which does not generally seek to share the abode of man is regarded by the Malays as ominous of misfortune. If a wild bird flies into a house, it must be carefully caught and smeared with oil, and must then be released in the open air, a formula being recited in which it is bidden to fly away with all the ill-luck and misfortunes of the occupier." In antiquity Greek women seem to have done the same with swallows which they caught in the house: they poured oil on them and let them fly away, apparently for the purpose of removing ill-luck from the household. The Huzuls of the Carpathians imagine that they can transfer freckles to the first swallow they see in spring by washing their face in flowing water and saying, "Swallow, swallow, take my freckles, and give me rosy cheeks."

Among the Badagas of the Neilgherry Hills in Southern India, when a death has taken place, the sins of the deceased are laid upon a buffalo calf. For this purpose the people gather round the corpse and carry it outside of the village. There an elder of the tribe, standing at the head of the corpse, recites or chants a long list of sins such as any Badaga may commit, and the people repeat the last words of each

line after him The confession of sins is thrice repeated. "By a conventional mode of expression, the sum total of sins a man may do is said to be thirteen hundred. Admitting that the deceased has committed them all, the performer cries aloud, 'Stay not their flight to God's pure feet.' As he closes, the whole assembly chants aloud 'Stay not their flight.' Again the performer enters into details, and cries, 'He killed the crawling snake. It is a sin.' In a moment the last word is caught up, and all the people cry 'It is a sin' As they shout, the performer lays his hand upon the calf The sin is transferred to the calf. Thus the whole catalogue is gone through in this impressive way. But this is not enough. As the last shout 'Let all be well' dies away, the performer gives place to another, and again confession is made, and all the people shout 'It is a sin.' A third time it is done. Then, still in solemn silence, the calf is let loose. Like the Jewish scapegoat, it may never be used for secular work" At a Badaga funeral witnessed by the Rev A. C. Clayton the buffalo calf was led thrice round the bier, and the dead man's hand was laid on its head. "By this act, the calf was supposed to receive all the sins of the deceased. It was then driven away to a great distance, that it might contaminate no one, and it was said that it would never be sold, but looked on as a dedicated sacred animal" "The idea of this ceremony is, that the sins of the deceased enter the calf, or that the task of his absolution is laid on it. They say that the calf very soon disappears, and that it is never after heard of."

§ 3 *The Transference to Men*—Again, men sometimes play the part of scapegoat by diverting to themselves the evils that threaten others When a Cingalese is dangerously ill, and the physicians can do nothing, a devil-dancer is called in, who by making offerings to the devils, and dancing in the masks appropriate to them, conjures these demons of disease, one after the other, out of the sick man's body and into his own. Having thus successfully extracted the cause of the malady, the artful dancer lies down on a bier, and shamming death is carried to an open place outside the village. Here, being left to himself, he soon comes to life again, and hastens back to claim his reward. In 1590 a Scotch witch of the name of Agnes Sampson was convicted of curing a certain Robert Kers of a disease "laid upon him by a westland warlock when he was at Dumfries, whilk sickness she took upon herself, and kept the same with great groaning and torment till the morn, at whilk time there was a great din heard in the house" The noise was made by the witch in her efforts to shift the disease, by means of clothes, from herself to a cat or dog. Unfortunately the attempt partly miscarried The disease missed the animal and hit Alexander Douglas of Dalkeith, who dwined and died of it, while the original patient, Robert Kers, was made whole

"In one part of New Zealand an expiation for sin was felt to be necessary; a service was performed over an individual, by which all the sins of the tribe were supposed to be transferred to him, a fern stalk was previously tied to his person, with which he jumped into

the river, and there unbinding, allowed it to float away to the sea, bearing their sins with it." In great emergencies the sins of the Rajah of Manipur used to be transferred to somebody else, usually to a criminal, who earned his pardon by his vicarious sufferings. To effect the transference the Rajah and his wife, clad in fine robes, bathed on a scaffold erected in the bazaar, while the criminal crouched beneath it. With the water which dripped from them on him their sins also were washed away and fell on the human scapegoat. To complete the transference the Rajah and his wife made over their fine robes to their substitute, while they themselves, clad in new raiment, mixed with the people till evening. In Travancore, when a Rajah is near his end, they seek out a holy Brahman, who consents to take upon himself the sins of the dying man in consideration of the sum of ten thousand rupees. Thus prepared to immolate himself on the altar of duty, the saint is introduced into the chamber of death, and closely embraces the dying Rajah, saying to him, "O King, I undertake to bear all your sins and diseases. May your Highness live long and reign happily." Having thus taken to himself the sins of the sufferer, he is sent away from the country and never more allowed to return. At Utch Kurgan in Turkestan Mr. Schuyler saw an old man who was said to get his living by taking on himself the sins of the dead, and thenceforth devoting his life to prayer for their souls.

In Uganda, when an army had returned from war, and the gods warned the king by their oracles that some evil had attached itself to the soldiers, it was customary to pick out a woman slave from the captives, together with a cow, a goat, a fowl, and a dog from the booty, and to send them back under a strong guard to the borders of the country from which they had come. There their limbs were broken and they were left to die, for they were too crippled to crawl back to Uganda. In order to ensure the transference of the evil to these substitutes, bunches of grass were rubbed over the people and cattle and then tied to the victims. After that the army was pronounced clean and was allowed to return to the capital. So on his accession a new king of Uganda used to wound a man and send him away as a scapegoat to Bunyoro to carry away any uncleanness that might attach to the king or queen.

§ 4 *The Transference of Evil in Europe*—The examples of the transference of evil hitherto adduced have been mostly drawn from the customs of savage or barbarous peoples. But similar attempts to shift the burden of disease, misfortune, and sin from one's self to another person, or to an animal or thing, have been common also among the civilised nations of Europe, both in ancient and modern times. A Roman cure for fever was to pare the patient's nails, and stick the parings with wax on a neighbour's door before sunrise, the fever then passed from the sick man to his neighbour. Similar devices must have been resorted to by the Greeks, for in laying down laws for his ideal state, Plato thinks it too much to expect that

men should not be alarmed at finding certain wax figures adhering to their doors or to the tombstones of their parents, or lying at cross-roads. In the fourth century of our era Marcellus of Bordeaux prescribed a cure for warts, which has still a great vogue among the superstitious in various parts of Europe. You are to touch your warts with as many little stones as you have warts; then wrap the stones in an ivy leaf, and throw them away in a thoroughfare. Whoever picks them up will get the warts, and you will be rid of them. People in the Orkney Islands will sometimes wash a sick man, and then throw the water down at a gateway, in the belief that the sickness will leave the patient and be transferred to the first person who passes through the gate. A Bavarian cure for fever is to write upon a piece of paper, "Fever, stay away, I am not at home," and to put the paper in somebody's pocket. The latter then catches the fever, and the patient is rid of it. A Bohemian prescription for the same malady is this. Take an empty pot, go with it to a cross-road, throw it down, and run away. The first person who kicks against the pot will catch your fever, and you will be cured.

Often in Europe, as among savages, an attempt is made to transfer a pain or malady from a man to an animal. Grave writers of antiquity recommended that, if a man be stung by a scorpion, he should sit upon an ass with his face to the tail, or whisper in the animal's ear, "A scorpion has stung me", in either case, they thought, the pain would be transferred from the man to the ass. Many cures of this sort are recorded by Marcellus. For example, he tells us that the following is a remedy for toothache. Standing booted under the open sky on the ground, you catch a frog by the head, spit into its mouth, ask it to carry away the ache, and then let it go. But the ceremony must be performed on a lucky day and at a lucky hour. In Cheshire the ailment known as aphtha or thrush, which affects the mouth or throat of infants, is not uncommonly treated in much the same manner. A young frog is held for a few moments with its head inside the mouth of the sufferer, whom it is supposed to relieve by taking the malady to itself. "I assure you," said an old woman who had often superintended such a cure, "we used to hear the poor frog whooping and coughing, mortal bad, for days after; it would have made your heart ache to hear the poor creature coughing as it did about the garden." A Northamptonshire, Devonshire, and Welsh cure for a cough is to put a hair of the patient's head between two slices of buttered bread and give the sandwich to a dog. The animal will thereupon catch the cough and the patient will lose it. Sometimes an ailment is transferred to an animal by sharing food with it. Thus in Oldenburg, if you are sick of a fever you set a bowl of sweet milk before a dog and say, "Good luck, you hound! may you be sick and I be sound!" Then when the dog has lapped some of the milk, you take a swig at the bowl; and then the dog must lap again, and then you must swig again, and when you and the dog have done it the third time, he will have the fever and you will be quit of it.

A Bohemian cure for fever is to go out into the forest before the sun is up and look for a snipe's nest. When you have found it, take out one of the young birds and keep it beside you for three days. Then go back into the wood and set the snipe free. The fever will leave you at once. The snipe has taken it away. So in Vedic times the Hindoos of old sent consumption away with a blue jay. They said, "O consumption, fly away, fly away with the blue jay! With the wild rush of the storm and the whirlwind, oh, vanish away!" In the village of Llandegla in Wales there is a church dedicated to the virgin martyr St. Tecla, where the falling sickness is, or used to be, cured by being transferred to a fowl. The patient first washed his limbs in a sacred well hard by, dropped fourpence into it as an offering, walked thrice round the well, and thrice repeated the Lord's prayer. Then the fowl, which was a cock or a hen according as the patient was a man or a woman, was put into a basket and carried round first the well and afterwards the church. Next the sufferer entered the church and lay down under the communion table till break of day. After that he offered sixpence and departed, leaving the fowl in the church. If the bird died, the sickness was supposed to have been transferred to it from the man or woman, who was now rid of the disorder. As late as 1855 the old parish clerk of the village remembered quite well to have seen the birds staggering about from the effects of the fits which had been transferred to them.

Often the sufferer seeks to shift his burden of sickness or ill-luck to some inanimate object. In Athens there is a little chapel of St. John the Baptist built against an ancient column. Fever patients resort thither, and by attaching a waxed thread to the inner side of the column believe that they transfer the fever from themselves to the pillar. In the Mark of Brandenburg they say that if you suffer from giddiness you should strip yourself naked and run thrice round a flax-field after sunset, in that way the flax will get the giddiness and you will be rid of it.

But perhaps the thing most commonly employed in Europe as a receptacle for sickness and trouble of all sorts is a tree or bush. A Bulgarian cure for fever is to run thrice round a willow-tree at sunrise, crying, "The fever shall shake thee, and the sun shall warm me." In the Greek island of Karpathos the priest ties a red thread round the neck of a sick person. Next morning the friends of the patient remove the thread and go out to the hillside, where they tie the thread to a tree, thinking that they thus transfer the sickness to the tree. Italians attempt to cure fever in like manner by tethering it to a tree. The sufferer ties a thread round his left wrist at night, and hangs the thread on a tree next morning. The fever is thus believed to be tied up to the tree, and the patient to be rid of it, but he must be careful not to pass by that tree again, otherwise the fever would break loose from its bonds and attack him afresh. A Flemish cure for the ague is to go early in the morning to an old willow, tie three knots in one of its branches, say, "Good-morrow, Old One, I give



thee the cold, good-morrow, Old One," then turn and run away without looking round. In Sonnenberg, if you would rid yourself of gout you should go to a young fir-tree and tie a knot in one of its twigs, saying, "God greet thee, noble fir. I bring thee my gout. Here will I tie a knot and bind my gout into it. In the name," etc.

Another way of transferring gout from a man to a tree is this. Pare the nails of the sufferer's fingers and clip some hairs from his legs. Bore a hole in an oak, stuff the nails and hair in the hole, stop up the hole again, and smear it with cow's dung. If, for three months thereafter, the patient is free of gout, you may be sure the oak has it in his stead. In Cheshire if you would be rid of warts, you have only to rub them with a piece of bacon, cut a slit in the bark of an ash-tree, and slip the bacon under the bark. Soon the warts will disappear from your hand, only however to reappear in the shape of rough excrescences or knobs on the bark of the tree. At Berkhamstead, in Hertfordshire, there used to be certain oak-trees which were long celebrated for the cure of ague. The transference of the malady to the tree was simple but painful. A lock of the sufferer's hair was pegged into an oak, then by a sudden wrench he left his hair and his ague behind him in the tree.

## CHAPTER LVI

### THE PUBLIC EXPULSION OF EVILS

§ 1 *The Omnipresence of Demons*—In the foregoing chapter the primitive principle of the transference of ills to another person, animal, or thing was explained and illustrated. But similar means have been adopted to free a whole community from diverse evils that afflict it. Such attempts to dismiss at once the accumulated sorrows of a people are by no means rare or exceptional; on the contrary they have been made in many lands, and from being occasional they tend to become periodic and annual.

It needs some effort on our part to realise the frame of mind which prompts these attempts. Bred in a philosophy which strips nature of personality and reduces it to the unknown cause of an orderly series of impressions on our senses, we find it hard to put ourselves in the place of the savage, to whom the same impressions appear in the guise of spirits or the handiwork of spirits. For ages the army of spirits, once so near, has been receding farther and farther from us, banished by the magic wand of science from hearth and home, from ruined cell and ivied tower, from haunted glade and lonely mere, from the riven murky cloud that belches forth the lightning, and from those fairer clouds that pillow the silver moon or fret with flakes of burning red the golden eve. The spirits are gone even from their last stronghold in the sky, whose blue arch no

longer passes, except with children, for the screen that hides from mortal eyes the glories of the celestial world. Only in poets' dreams or impassioned flights of oratory is it given to catch a glimpse of the last flutter of the standards of the retreating host, to hear the beat of their invisible wings, the sound of their mocking laughter, or the swell of angel music dying away in the distance. Far otherwise is it with the savage. To his imagination the world still teems with those motley beings whom a more sober philosophy has discarded. Fairies and goblins, ghosts and demons, still hover about him both waking and sleeping. They dog his footsteps, dazzle his senses, enter into him, harass and deceive and torment him in a thousand freakish and mischievous ways. The mishaps that befall him, the losses he sustains, the pains he has to endure, he commonly sets down, if not to the magic of his enemies, to the spite or anger or caprice of the spirits. Their constant presence wearies him, their sleepless malignity exasperates him; he longs with an unspeakable longing to be rid of them altogether, and from time to time, driven to bay, his patience utterly exhausted, he turns fiercely on his persecutors and makes a desperate effort to chase the whole pack of them from the land, to clear the air of their swarming multitudes, that he may breathe more freely and go on his way unmolested, at least for a time. Thus it comes about that the endeavour of primitive people to make a clean sweep of all their troubles generally takes the form of a grand hunting out and expulsion of devils or ghosts. They think that if they can only shake off these their accursed tormentors, they will make a fresh start in life, happy and innocent, the tales of Eden and the old poetic golden age will come true again.

§ 2 *The Occasional Expulsion of Evils* — We can therefore understand why those general clearances of evil, to which from time to time the savage resorts, should commonly take the form of a forcible expulsion of devils. In these evil spirits primitive man sees the cause of many if not of most of his troubles, and he fancies that if he can only deliver himself from them, things will go better with him. The public attempts to expel the accumulated ills of a whole community may be divided into two classes, according as the expelled evils are immaterial and invisible or are embodied in a material vehicle or scapegoat. The former may be called the direct or immediate expulsion of evils, the latter the indirect or mediate expulsion, or the expulsion by scapegoat. We begin with examples of the former.

In the island of Rook, between New Guinea and New Britain, when any misfortune has happened, all the people run together, scream, curse, howl, and beat the air with sticks to drive away the devil, who is supposed to be the author of the mishap. From the spot where the mishap took place they drive him step by step to the sea, and on reaching the shore they redouble their shouts and blows in order to expel him from the island. He generally retires to the sea or to the island of Lottin. The natives of New Britain ascribe sickness, drought, the failure of crops, and in short all mis-

fortunes, to the influence of wicked spirits So at times when many people sicken and die, as at the beginning of the rainy season, all the inhabitants of a district, armed with branches and clubs, go out by moonlight to the fields, where they beat and stamp on the ground with wild howls till morning, believing that this drives away the devils, and for the same purpose they rush through the village with burning torches The natives of New Caledonia are said to believe that all evils are caused by a powerful and malignant spirit, hence in order to rid themselves of him they will from time to time dig a great pit, round which the whole tribe gathers After cursing the demon, they fill up the pit with earth, and trample on the top with loud shouts This they call burying the evil spirit Among the Dieri tribe of Central Australia, when a serious illness occurs, the medicine-men expel Cootchie or the devil by beating the ground in and outside of the camp with the stuffed tail of a kangaroo, until they have chased the demon away to some distance from the camp

When a village has been visited by a series of disasters or a severe epidemic, the inhabitants of Minahassa in Celebes lay the blame upon the devils who are infesting the village and who must be expelled from it Accordingly, early one morning all the people, men, women, and children, quit their homes, carrying their household goods with them, and take up their quarters in temporary huts which have been erected outside the village Here they spend several days, offering sacrifices and preparing for the final ceremony At last the men, some wearing masks, others with their faces blackened, and so on, but all armed with swords, guns, pikes, or brooms, steal cautiously and silently back to the deserted village Then, at a signal from the priest, they rush furiously up and down the streets and into and under the houses (which are raised on piles above the ground), yelling and striking on walls, doors, and windows, to drive away the devils Next, the priests and the rest of the people come with the holy fire and march nine times round each house and thrice round the ladder that leads up to it, carrying the fire with them Then they take the fire into the kitchen, where it must burn for three days continuously. The devils are now driven away, and great and general is the joy.

The Alfoors of Halmahera attribute epidemics to the devil who comes from other villages to carry them off So, in order to rid the village of the disease, the sorcerer drives away the devil From all the villagers he receives a costly garment and places it on four vessels, which he takes to the forest and leaves at the spot where the devil is supposed to be Then with mocking words he bids the demon abandon the place In the Kei Islands to the south-west of New Guinea, the evil spirits, who are quite distinct from the souls of the dead, form a mighty host Almost every tree and every cave is the lodging-place of one of these fiends, who are moreover extremely irascible and apt to fly out on the smallest provocation They manifest their displeasure by sending sickness and other calamities. Hence

in times of public misfortune, as when an epidemic is raging, and all other remedies have failed, the whole population go forth with the priest at their head to a place at some distance from the village. Here at sunset they erect a couple of poles with a cross-bar between them, to which they attach bags of rice, wooden models of pivot-guns, gongs, bracelets, and so on. Then, when everybody has taken his place at the poles and a death-like silence reigns, the priest lifts up his voice and addresses the spirits in their own language as follows: "Ho! ho! ho! ye evil spirits who dwell in the trees, ye evil spirits who live in the grottoes, ye evil spirits who lodge in the earth, we give you these pivot-guns, these gongs, etc. Let the sickness cease and not so many people die of it." Then everybody runs home as fast as their legs can carry them.

In the island of Nias, when a man is seriously ill and other remedies have been tried in vain, the sorcerer proceeds to exorcise the devil who is causing the illness. A pole is set up in front of the house, and from the top of the pole a rope of palm-leaves is stretched to the roof of the house. Then the sorcerer mounts the roof with a pig, which he kills and allows to roll from the roof to the ground. The devil, anxious to get the pig, lets himself down hastily from the roof by the rope of palm-leaves, and a good spirit, invoked by the sorcerer, prevents him from climbing up again. If this remedy fails, it is believed that other devils must still be lurking in the house. So a general hunt is made after them. All the doors and windows in the house are closed, except a single dormer-window in the roof. The men, shut up in the house, hew and slash with their swords right and left to the clash of gongs and the rub-a-dub of drums. Terrified at this onslaught, the devils escape by the dormer-window, and sliding down the rope of palm-leaves take themselves off. As all the doors and windows, except the one in the roof, are shut, the devils cannot get into the house again. In the case of an epidemic, the proceedings are similar. All the gates of the village, except one, are closed; every voice is raised, every gong and drum beaten, every sword brandished. Thus the devils are driven out and the last gate is shut behind them. For eight days thereafter the village is in a state of siege, no one being allowed to enter it.

When cholera has broken out in a Burmese village the able-bodied men scramble on the roofs and lay about them with bamboos and billets of wood, while all the rest of the population, old and young, stand below and thump drums, blow trumpets, yell, scream, beat floors, walls, tin pans, everything to make a din. This uproar, repeated on three successive nights, is thought to be very effective in driving away the cholera demons. When smallpox first appeared amongst the Kumis of South-eastern India, they thought it was a devil come from Aracan. The villages were placed in a state of siege, no one being allowed to leave or enter them. A monkey was killed by being dashed on the ground, and its body was hung at the village gate. Its blood, mixed with small river pebbles, was sprinkled on

the houses, the threshold of every house was swept with the monkey's tail, and the fiend was adjured to depart

When an epidemic is raging on the Gold Coast of West Africa, the people will sometimes turn out, armed with clubs and torches, to drive the evil spirits away. At a given signal the whole population begin with frightful yells to beat in every corner of the houses, then rush like mad into the streets waving torches and striking frantically in the empty air. The uproar goes on till somebody reports that the cowed and daunted demons have made good their escape by a gate of the town or village, the people stream out after them, pursue them for some distance into the forest, and warn them never to return. The expulsion of the devils is followed by a general massacre of all the cocks in the village or town, lest by their unseasonable crowing they should betray to the banished demons the direction they must take to return to their old homes. When sickness was prevalent in a Huron village, and all other remedies had been tried in vain, the Indians had recourse to the ceremony called *Lonouyroya*, "which is the principal invention and most proper means, so they say, to expel from the town or village the devils and evil spirits which cause, induce, and import all the maladies and infirmities which they suffer in body and mind." Accordingly, one evening the men would begin to rush like madmen about the village, breaking and upsetting whatever they came across in the wigwams. They threw fire and burning brands about the streets, and all night long they ran howling and singing without cessation. Then they all dreamed of something, a knife, dog, skin, or whatever it might be, and when morning came they went from wigwam to wigwam asking for presents. These they received silently, till the particular thing was given them which they had dreamed about. On receiving it they uttered a cry of joy and rushed from the hut, amid the congratulations of all present. The health of those who received what they had dreamed of was believed to be assured, whereas those who did not get what they had set their hearts upon regarded their fate as sealed.

Sometimes, instead of chasing the demon of disease from their homes, savages prefer to leave him in peaceable possession, while they themselves take to flight and attempt to prevent him from following in their tracks. Thus when the Patagonians were attacked by small-pox, which they attributed to the machinations of an evil spirit, they used to abandon their sick and flee, slashing the air with their weapons and throwing water about in order to keep off the dreadful pursuer, and when after several days' march they reached a place where they hoped to be beyond his reach, they used by way of precaution to plant all their cutting weapons with the sharp edges turned towards the quarter from which they had come, as if they were repelling a charge of cavalry. Similarly, when the Lules or Tonocotes Indians of the Gran Chaco were attacked by an epidemic, they regularly sought to evade it by flight, but in so doing they always followed a sinuous, not a straight, course; because they said that when the disease made after them he would be so exhausted by the turnings and windings of the route

that he would never be able to come up with them. When the Indians of New Mexico were decimated by smallpox or other infectious disease, they used to shift their quarters every day, retreating into the most sequestered parts of the mountains and choosing the thorniest thickets they could find, in the hope that the smallpox would be too afraid of scratching himself on the thorns to follow them. When some Chins on a visit to Rangoon were attacked by cholera, they went about with drawn swords to scare away the demon, and they spent the day hiding under bushes so that he might not be able to find them.

§ 3 *The Periodic Expulsion of Evils* —The expulsion of evils, from being occasional, tends to become periodic. It comes to be thought desirable to have a general riddance of evil spirits at fixed times, usually once a year, in order that the people may make a fresh start in life, freed from all the malignant influences which have been long accumulating about them. Some of the Australian blacks annually expelled the ghosts of the dead from their territory. The ceremony was witnessed by the Rev W. Ridley on the banks of the River Barwan. "A chorus of twenty, old and young, were singing and beating time with boomerangs. Suddenly, from under a sheet of bark darted a man with his body whitened by pipeclay, his head and face coloured with lines of red and yellow, and a tuft of feathers fixed by means of a stick two feet above the crown of his head. He stood twenty minutes perfectly still, gazing upwards. An aboriginal who stood by told me he was looking for the ghosts of dead men. At last he began to move very slowly, and soon rushed to and fro at full speed, flourishing a branch as if to drive away some foes invisible to us. When I thought this pantomime must be almost over, ten more, similarly adorned, suddenly appeared from behind the trees, and the whole party joined in a brisk conflict with their mysterious assailants. . . . At last, after some rapid evolutions in which they put forth all their strength, they rested from the exciting toil which they had kept up all night and for some hours after sunrise, they seemed satisfied that the ghosts were driven away for twelve months. They were performing the same ceremony at every station along the river, and I am told it is an annual custom."

Certain seasons of the year mark themselves naturally out as appropriate moments for a general expulsion of devils. Such a moment occurs towards the close of an Arctic winter, when the sun reappears on the horizon after an absence of weeks or months. Accordingly, at Point Barrow, the most northerly extremity of Alaska, and nearly of America, the Esquimaux choose the moment of the sun's reappearance to hunt the mischievous spirit *Tuñia* from every house. The ceremony was witnessed by the members of the United States Polar Expedition, who wintered at Point Barrow. A fire was built in front of the council-house, and an old woman was posted at the entrance to every house. The men gathered round the council-house, while the young women and girls drove the spirit out of every house with their knives, stabbing viciously under the bunk and deer-skins,

and calling upon Tuña to be gone When they thought he had been driven out of every hole and corner, they thrust him down through the hole in the floor and chased him into the open air with loud cries and frantic gestures Meanwhile the old woman at the entrance of the house made passes with a long knife in the air to keep him from returning Each party drove the spirit towards the fire and invited him to go into it All were by this time drawn up in a semicircle round the fire, when several of the leading men made specific charges against the spirit, and each after his speech brushed his clothes violently, calling on the spirit to leave him and go into the fire Two men now stepped forward with rifles loaded with blank cartridges, while a third brought a vessel of urine and flung it on the flames At the same time one of the men fired a shot into the fire, and as the cloud of steam rose it received the other shot, which was supposed to finish Tuña for the time being

In late autumn, when storms rage over the land and break the icy fetters by which the frozen sea is as yet but slightly bound, when the loosened floes are driven against each other and break with loud crashes, and when the cakes of ice are piled in wild disorder one upon another, the Esquimaux of Baffin Land fancy they hear the voices of the spirits who people the mischief-laden air Then the ghosts of the dead knock wildly at the huts, which they cannot enter, and woe to the hapless wight whom they catch, he soon sickens and dies Then the phantom of a huge hairless dog pursues the real dogs, which expire in convulsions and cramps at sight of him All the countless spirits of evil are abroad, striving to bring sickness and death, foul weather and failure in hunting on the Esquimaux Most dreaded of all these spectral visitants are Sedna, mistress of the nether world, and her father, to whose share dead Esquimaux fall While the other spirits fill the air and the water, she rises from under ground It is then a busy season for the wizards In every house you may hear them singing and praying, while they conjure the spirits, seated in a mystic gloom at the back of the hut, which is dimly lit by a lamp burning low The hardest task of all is to drive away Sedna, and this is reserved for the most powerful enchanter A rope is coiled on the floor of a large hut in such a way as to leave a small opening at the top, which represents the breathing hole of a seal Two enchanters stand beside it, one of them grasping a spear as if he were watching a seal-hole in winter, the other holding the harpoon-line A third sorcerer sits at the back of the hut chanting a magic song to lure Sedna to the spot Now she is heard approaching under the floor of the hut, breathing heavily, now she emerges at the hole, now she is harpooned and sinks away in angry haste, dragging the harpoon with her, while the two men hold on to the line with all their might The struggle is severe, but at last by a desperate wrench she tears herself away and returns to her dwelling in Adlivun When the harpoon is drawn up out of the hole it is found to be splashed with blood, which the enchanters proudly exhibit as a proof of their prowess Thus Sedna

and the other evil spirits are at last driven away, and next day a great festival is celebrated by old and young in honour of the event. But they must still be cautious, for the wounded Sedna is furious and will seize any one she may find outside of his hut, so they all wear amulets on the top of their hoods to protect themselves against her. These amulets consist of pieces of the first garments that they wore after birth.

The Iroquois inaugurated the new year in January, February, or March (the time varied) with a "festival of dreams" like that which the Hurons observed on special occasions. The whole ceremonies lasted several days, or even weeks, and formed a kind of saturnalia. Men and women, variously disguised, went from wigwam to wigwam smashing and throwing down whatever they came across. It was a time of general license, the people were supposed to be out of their senses, and therefore not to be responsible for what they did. Accordingly, many seized the opportunity of paying off old scores by belabouring obnoxious persons, drenching them with ice-cold water, and covering them with filth or hot ashes. Others seized burning brands or coals and flung them at the heads of the first persons they met. The only way of escaping from these persecutors was to guess what they had dreamed of. On one day of the festival the ceremony of driving away evil spirits from the village took place. Men clothed in the skins of wild beasts, their faces covered with hideous masks, and their hands with the shell of the tortoise, went from hut to hut making frightful noises, in every hut they took the fuel from the fire and scattered the embers and ashes about the floor with their hands. The general confession of sins which preceded the festival was probably a preparation for the public expulsion of evil influences, it was a way of stripping the people of their moral burdens, that these might be collected and cast out.

In September the Incas of Peru celebrated a festival called Situa, the object of which was to banish from the capital and its vicinity all disease and trouble. The festival fell in September because the rains begin about this time, and with the first rains there was generally much sickness. As a preparation for the festival the people fasted on the first day of the moon after the autumnal equinox. Having fasted during the day, and the night being come, they baked a coarse paste of maize. This paste was made of two sorts. One was kneaded with the blood of children aged from five to ten years, the blood being obtained by bleeding the children between the eyebrows. These two kinds of paste were baked separately, because they were for different uses. Each family assembled at the house of the eldest brother to celebrate the feast, and those who had no elder brother went to the house of their next relation of greater age. On the same night all who had fasted during the day washed their bodies, and taking a little of the blood-kneaded paste, rubbed it over their head, face, breast, shoulders, arms, and legs. They did this in order that the paste might take away all their infirmities. After this the head of the family



anointed the threshold with the same paste, and left it there as a token that the inmates of the house had performed their ablutions and cleansed their bodies. Meantime the High Priest performed the same ceremonies in the temple of the Sun. As soon as the Sun rose, all the people worshipped and besought him to drive all evils out of the city, and then they broke their fast with the paste that had been kneaded without blood. When they had paid their worship and broken their fast, which they did at a stated hour, in order that all might adore the Sun as one man, an Inca of the blood royal came forth from the fortress, as a messenger of the Sun, richly dressed, with his mantle girded round his body, and a lance in his hand. The lance was decked with feathers of many hues, extending from the blade to the socket, and fastened with rings of gold. He ran down the hill from the fortress brandishing his lance, till he reached the centre of the great square, where stood the golden urn, like a fountain, that was used for the sacrifice of the fermented juice of the maize. Here four other Incas of the blood royal awaited him, each with a lance in his hand, and his mantle girded up to run. The messenger touched their four lances with his lance, and told them that the Sun bade them, as his messengers, drive the evils out of the city. The four Incas then separated and ran down the four royal roads which led out of the city to the four quarters of the world. While they ran, all the people, great and small, came to the doors of their houses, and with great shouts of joy and gladness shook their clothes, as if they were shaking off dust, while they cried, "Let the evils be gone. How greatly desired has this festival been by us. O Creator of all things, permit us to reach another year, that we may see another feast like this." After they had shaken their clothes, they passed their hands over their heads, faces, arms, and legs, as if in the act of washing. All this was done to drive the evils out of their houses, that the messengers of the Sun might banish them from the city; and it was done not only in the streets through which the Incas ran, but generally in all quarters of the city. Moreover, they all danced, the Inca himself amongst them, and bathed in the rivers and fountains, saying that their maladies would come out of them. Then they took great torches of straw, bound round with cords. These they lighted, and passed from one to the other, striking each other with them, and saying, "Let all harm go away." Meanwhile the runners ran with their lances for a quarter of a league outside the city, where they found four other Incas ready, who received the lances from their hands and ran with them. Thus the lances were carried by relays of runners for a distance of five or six leagues, at the end of which the runners washed themselves and their weapons in rivers, and set up the lances, in sign of a boundary within which the banished evils might not return.

The negroes of Guinea annually banish the devil from all their towns with much ceremony at a time set apart for the purpose. At Axim, on the Gold Coast, this annual expulsion is preceded by a feast of eight days, during which mirth and jollity, skipping, dancing, and

singing prevail, and "a perfect lampooning liberty is allowed, and scandal so highly exalted, that they may freely sing of all the faults, villainies, and frauds of their superiors as well as inferiors, without punishment, or so much as the least interruption" On the eighth day they hunt out the devil with a dismal cry, running after him and pelting him with sticks, stones, and whatever comes to hand When they have driven him far enough out of the town, they all return In this way he is expelled from more than a hundred towns at the same time To make sure that he does not return to their houses, the women wash and scour all their wooden and earthen vessels, "to free them from all uncleanness and the devil"

At Cape Coast Castle, on the Gold Coast, the ceremony was witnessed on the ninth of October 1844 by an Englishman, who has described it as follows "To-night the annual custom of driving the evil spirit, Abonsam, out of the town has taken place As soon as the eight o'clock gun fired in the fort the people began firing muskets in their houses, turning all their furniture out of doors, beating about in every corner of the rooms with sticks, etc., and screaming as loudly as possible, in order to frighten the devil Being driven out of the houses, as they imagine, they sallied forth into the streets, throwing lighted torches about, shouting, screaming, beating sticks together, rattling old pans, making the most horrid noise, in order to drive him out of the town into the sea The custom is preceded by four weeks' dead silence; no gun is allowed to be fired, no drum to be beaten, no palaver to be made between man and man If, during these weeks, two natives should disagree and make a noise in the town, they are immediately taken before the king and fined heavily If a dog or pig, sheep or goat be found at large in the street, it may be killed, or taken by anyone, the former owner not being allowed to demand any compensation This silence is designed to deceive Abonsam, that, being off his guard, he may be taken by surprise, and frightened out of the place If anyone die during the silence, his relatives are not allowed to weep until the four weeks have been completed"

Sometimes the date of the annual expulsion of devils is fixed with reference to the agricultural seasons Thus among the Hos of Togoland, in West Africa, the expulsion is performed annually before the people partake of the new yams The chiefs summon the priests and magicians and tell them that the people are now to eat the new yams and be merry, therefore they must cleanse the town and remove the evils Accordingly the evil spirits, witches, and all the ills that infest the people are conjured into bundles of leaves and creepers, fastened to poles, which are carried away and set up in the earth on various roads outside the town During the following night no fire may be lit and no food eaten Next morning the women sweep out their hearths and houses, and deposit the sweepings on broken wooden plates Then the people pray, saying, "All ye sicknesses that are in our body and plague us, we are come to-day to throw you out" Thereupon they run as fast as they can in the direction of Mount Adaklu, smiting

their mouths and screaming, "Out to-day! Out to-day! That which kills anybody, out to-day! Ye evil spirits, out to-day! and all that causes our heads to ache, out to-day! Anlo and Adaklu are the places whither all ill shall betake itself!" When they have come to a certain tree on Mount Adaklu, they throw everything away and return home

At Kiriwina, in South-eastern New Guinea, when the new yams had been harvested, the people feasted and danced for many days, and a great deal of property, such as armlets, native money, and so forth, was displayed conspicuously on a platform erected for the purpose. When the festivities were over, all the people gathered together and expelled the spirits from the village by shouting, beating the posts of the houses, and overturning everything under which a wily spirit might be supposed to lurk. The explanation which the people gave to a missionary was that they had entertained and feasted the spirits and provided them with riches, and it was now time for them to take their departure. Had they not seen the dances, and heard the songs, and gorged themselves on the souls of the yams, and appropriated the souls of the money and all the other fine things set out on the platform? What more could the spirits want? So out they must go.

Among the Hos of North-eastern India the great festival of the year is the harvest home, held in January, when the granaries are full of grain, and the people, to use their own expression, are full of devilry. "They have a strange notion that at this period, men and women are so overcharged with vicious propensities, that it is absolutely necessary for the safety of the person to let off steam by allowing for a time full vent to the passions." The ceremonies open with a sacrifice to the village god of three fowls, a cock and two hens, one of which must be black. Along with them are offered flowers of the Palas tree (*Butea frondosa*), bread made from rice-flour, and sesamum seeds. These offerings are presented by the village priest, who prays that during the year about to begin they and their children may be preserved from all misfortune and sickness, and that they may have seasonable rain and good crops. Prayer is also made in some places for the souls of the dead. At this time an evil spirit is supposed to infest the place, and to get rid of it men, women, and children go in procession round and through every part of the village with sticks in their hands, as if beating for game, singing a wild chant, and shouting vociferously, till they feel assured that the evil spirit must have fled. Then they give themselves up to feasting and drinking rice-beer, till they are in a fit state for the wild debauch which follows. The festival now "becomes a saturnale, during which servants forget their duty to their masters, children their reverence for parents, men their respect for women, and women all notions of modesty, delicacy, and gentleness; they become raging bacchantes." Usually the Hos are quiet and reserved in manner, decorous and gentle to women. But during this festival "their natures appear to undergo a temporary change. Sons and daughters revile their parents in gross language, and parents

their children, men and women become almost like animals in the indulgence of their amorous propensities." The Mundaris, kinsmen and neighbours of the Hos, keep the festival in much the same manner. "The resemblance to a Saturnale is very complete, as at this festival the farm labourers are feasted by their masters, and allowed the utmost freedom of speech in addressing them. It is the festival of the harvest home, the termination of one year's toil, and a slight respite from it before they commence again."

Amongst some of the Hindoo Koosh tribes, as among the Hos and Mundaris, the expulsion of devils takes place after harvest. When the last crop of autumn has been got in, it is thought necessary to drive away evil spirits from the granaries. A kind of porridge is eaten, and the head of the family takes his matchlock and fires it into the floor. Then, going outside, he sets to work loading and firing till his powder-horn is exhausted, while all his neighbours are similarly employed. The next day is spent in rejoicings. In Chitral this festival is called "devil-driving." On the other hand the Khonds of India expel the devils at seed-time instead of at harvest. At this time they worship Pitteri Pennu, the god of increase and of gain in every shape. On the first day of the festival a rude car is made of a basket set upon a few sticks, tied upon bamboo rollers for wheels. The priest takes this car first to the house of the lineal head of the tribe, to whom precedence is given in all ceremonies connected with agriculture. Here he receives a little of each kind of seed and some feathers. He then takes the car to all the other houses in the village, each of which contributes the same things. Lastly, the car is conducted to a field without the village, attended by all the young men, who beat each other and strike the air violently with long sticks. The seed thus carried out is called the share of the "evil spirits, spoilers of the seed." "These are considered to be driven out with the car; and when it and its contents are abandoned to them, they are held to have no excuse for interfering with the rest of the seed-corn."

The people of Bali, an island to the east of Java, have periodical expulsions of devils upon a great scale. Generally the time chosen for the expulsion is the day of the "dark moon" in the ninth month. When the demons have been long unmolested the country is said to be "warm," and the priest issues orders to expel them by force, lest the whole of Bali should be rendered uninhabitable. On the day appointed the people of the village or district assemble at the principal temple. Here at a cross-road offerings are set out for the devils. After prayers have been recited by the priests, the blast of a horn summons the devils to partake of the meal which has been prepared for them. At the same time a number of men step forward and light their torches at the holy lamp which burns before the chief priest. Immediately afterwards, followed by the bystanders, they spread in all directions and march through the streets and lanes crying, "Depart! go away!" Wherever they pass, the people who have stayed at home hasten, by a deafening clatter on doors, beams, rice-blocks, and so forth, to take

their share in the expulsion of devils Thus chased from the houses, the fiends flee to the banquet which has been set out for them , but here the priest receives them with curses which finally drive them from the district. When the last devil has taken his departure, the uproar is succeeded by a dead silence, which lasts during the next day also. The devils, it is thought, are anxious to return to their old homes, and in order to make them think that Bali is not Bali but some desert island, no one may stir from his own abode for twenty-four hours. Even ordinary household work, including cooking, is discontinued. Only the watchmen may show themselves in the streets. Wreaths of thorns and leaves are hung at all the entrances to warn strangers from entering. Not till the third day is this state of siege raised, and even then it is forbidden to work at the rice-fields or to buy and sell in the market. Most people still stay at home, whiling away the time with cards and dice.

In Tonquin a *theekydaw* or general expulsion of malevolent spirits commonly took place once a year, especially if there was a great mortality amongst men, the elephants or horses of the general's stable, or the cattle of the country, " the cause of which they attribute to the malicious spirits of such men as have been put to death for treason, rebellion, and conspiring the death of the king, general, or princes, and that in revenge of the punishment they have suffered, they are bent to destroy everything and commit horrible violence. To prevent which their superstition has suggested to them the institution of this *theekydaw*, as a proper means to drive the devil away, and purge the country of evil spirits " The day appointed for the ceremony was generally the twenty-fifth of February, one month after the beginning of the new year, which fell on the twenty-fifth of January. The intermediate month was a season of feasting, merry-making of all kinds, and general license. During the whole month the great seal was kept shut up in a box, face downwards, and the law was, as it were, laid asleep. All courts of justice were closed, debtors could not be seized; small crimes, such as petty larceny, fighting, and assault, escaped with impunity, only treason and murder were taken account of and the malefactors detained till the great seal should come into operation again. At the close of the saturnalia the wicked spirits were driven away. Great masses of troops and artillery having been drawn up with flying colours and all the pomp of war, " the general beginneth then to offer meat offerings to the criminal devils and malevolent spirits (for it is usual and customary likewise amongst them to feast the condemned before their execution), inviting them to eat and drink, when presently he accuses them in a strange language, by characters and figures, etc, of many offences and crimes committed by them, as to their having disquieted the land, killed his elephants and horses, etc, for all which they justly deserve to be chastised and banished the country. Whereupon three great guns are fired as the last signal; upon which all the artillery and musquets are discharged, that, by their most terrible noise the devils may be driven away; and they are

so blind as to believe for certain, that they really and effectually put them to flight "

In Cambodia the expulsion of evil spirits took place in March Bits of broken statues and stones, considered as the abode of the demons, were collected and brought to the capital. Here as many elephants were collected as could be got together On the evening of the full moon volleys of musketry were fired and the elephants charged furiously to put the devils to flight The ceremony was performed on three successive days. In Siam the banishment of demons is annually carried into effect on the last day of the old year. A signal gun is fired from the palace, it is answered from the next station, and so on from station to station, till the firing has reached the outer gate of the city. Thus the demons are driven out step by step As soon as this is done a consecrated rope is fastened round the circuit of the city walls to prevent the banished demons from returning. The rope is made of tough couch-grass and is painted in alternate stripes of red, yellow, and blue.

Annual expulsions of demons, witches, or evil influences appear to have been common among the heathen of Europe, if we may judge from the relics of such customs among their descendants at the present day. Thus among the heathen Wotyaks, a Finnish people of Eastern Russia, all the young girls of the village assemble on the last day of the year or on New Year's Day, armed with sticks, the ends of which are split in nine places. With these they beat every corner of the house and yard, saying, "We are driving Satan out of the village" Afterwards the sticks are thrown into the river below the village, and as they float down stream Satan goes with them to the next village, from which he must be driven out in turn In some villages the expulsion is managed otherwise The unmarried men receive from every house in the village groats, flesh, and brandy These they take to the fields, light a fire under a fir-tree, boil the groats, and eat of the food they have brought with them, after pronouncing the words, "Go away into the wilderness, come not into the house" Then they return to the village and enter every house where there are young women They take hold of the young women and throw them into the snow, saying, "May the spirits of disease leave you" The remains of the groats and the other food are then distributed among all the houses in proportion to the amount that each contributed, and each family consumes its share. According to a Wotyak of the Malmyz district the young men throw into the snow whomever they find in the houses, and this is called "driving out Satan"; moreover, some of the boiled groats are cast into the fire with the words, "O god, afflict us not with sickness and pestilence, give us not up as a prey to the spirits of the wood" But the most antique form of the ceremony is that observed by the Wotyaks of the Kasan Government First of all a sacrifice is offered to the Devil at noon. Then all the men assemble on horseback in the centre of the village, and decide with which house they shall begin. When this question, which often gives rise to hot disputes, is settled, they tether

their horses to the paling, and arm themselves with whips, clubs of lime-wood, and bundles of lighted twigs. The lighted twigs are believed to have the greatest terrors for Satan. Thus armed, they proceed with frightful cries to beat every corner of the house and yard, then shut the door, and spit at the ejected fiend. So they go from house to house, till the Devil has been driven from every one. Then they mount their horses and ride out of the village, yelling wildly and brandishing their clubs in every direction. Outside of the village they fling away the clubs and spit once more at the Devil. The Cheremiss, another Finnish people of Eastern Russia, chase Satan from their dwellings by beating the walls with cudgels of lime-wood. For the same purpose they fire guns, stab the ground with knives, and insert burning chips of wood in the crevices. Also they leap over bonfires, shaking out their garments as they do so, and in some districts they blow on long trumpets of lime-tree bark to frighten him away. When he has fled to the wood, they pelt the trees with some of the cheese-cakes and eggs which furnished the feast.

In Christian Europe the old heathen custom of expelling the powers of evil at certain times of the year has survived to modern times. Thus in some villages of Calabria the month of March is inaugurated with the expulsion of the witches. It takes place at night to the sound of the church bells, the people running about the streets and crying, "March is come." They say that the witches roam about in March, and the ceremony is repeated every Friday evening during the month. Often, as might have been anticipated, the ancient pagan rite has attached itself to church festivals. In Albania on Easter Eve the young people light torches of resinous wood and march in procession, swinging them, through the village. At last they throw the torches into the river, crying, "Ha, Kore! we throw you into the river, like these torches, that you may never return." Silesian peasants believe that on Good Friday the witches go their rounds and have great power for mischief. Hence about Oels, near Strehlitz, the people on that day arm themselves with old brooms and drive the witches from house and home, from farmyard and cattle-stall, making a great uproar and clatter as they do so.

In Central Europe the favourite time for expelling the witches is, or was, Walpurgis Night, the Eve of May Day, when the baleful powers of these mischievous beings were supposed to be at their height. In the Tyrol, for example, as in other places, the expulsion of the powers of evil at this season goes by the name of "Burning out the Witches." It takes place on May Day, but people have been busy with their preparations for days before. On a Thursday at midnight bundles are made up of resinous splinters, black and red spotted hemlock, caperspurge, rosemary, and twigs of the sloe. These are kept and burned on May Day by men who must first have received plenary absolution from the Church. On the last three days of April all the houses are cleansed and fumigated with jumper berries and

rue On May Day, when the evening bell has rung and the twilight is falling, the ceremony of " Burning out the Witches " begins Men and boys make a racket with whips, bells, pots, and pans , the women carry censers , the dogs are unchained and run barking and yelping about. As soon as the church bells begin to ring, the bundles of twigs, fastened on poles, are set on fire and the incense is ignited Then all the house-bells and dinner-bells are rung, pots and pans are clashed, dogs bark, every one must make a noise And amid this hubbub all scream at the pitch of their voices .

*" Witch flee, flee from here, or it will go ill with thee "*

Then they run seven times round the houses, the yards, and the village So the witches are smoked out of their lurking-places and driven away. The custom of expelling the witches on Walpurgis Night is still, or was down to recent years, observed in many parts of Bavaria and among the Germans of Bohemia Thus in the Bohmerwald Mountains all the young fellows of the village assemble after sunset on some height, especially at a cross-road, and crack whips for a while in unison with all their strength This drives away the witches , for so far as the sound of the whips is heard, these maleficent beings can do no harm In some places, while the young men are cracking their whips, the herdsman wind their horns, and the long-drawn notes, heard far off in the silence of night, are very effectual for banning the witches

Another witching time is the period of twelve days between Christmas and Epiphany. Hence in some parts of Silesia the people burn pine-resin all night long between Christmas and the New Year in order that the pungent smoke may drive witches and evil spirits far away from house and homestead , and on Christmas Eve and New Year's Eve they fire shots over fields and meadows, into shrubs and trees, and wrap straw round the fruit-trees, to prevent the spirits from doing them harm On New Year's Eve, which is Saint Sylvester's Day, Bohemian lads, armed with guns, form themselves into circles and fire thrice into the air This is called " Shooting the Witches " and is supposed to frighten the witches away The last of the mystic twelve days is Epiphany or Twelfth Night, and it has been selected as a proper season for the expulsion of the powers of evil in various parts of Europe Thus at Brunnen, on the Lake of Lucerne, boys go about in procession on Twelfth Night carrying torches and making a great noise with horns, bells, whips, and so forth to frighten away two female spirits of the wood, Strudel and Strattel The people think that if they do not make enough noise there will be little fruit that year Again, in Labruguiere, a canton of southern France, on the eve of Twelfth Day the people run through the streets, jangling bells, clattering kettles, and doing everything to make a discordant noise Then by the light of torches and blazing faggots they set up a prodigious hue and cry, an ear-splitting uproar, hoping thereby to chase all the wandering ghosts and devils from the town.



## CHAPTER LVII

## PUBLIC SCAPEGOATS

§ 1. *The Expulsion of Embodied Evils* — Thus far we have dealt with that class of the general expulsion of evils which I have called direct or immediate. In this class the evils are invisible, at least to common eyes, and the mode of deliverance consists for the most part in beating the empty air and raising such a hubbub as may scare the mischievous spirits and put them to flight. It remains to illustrate the second class of expulsions, in which the evil influences are embodied in a visible form or are at least supposed to be loaded upon a material medium, which acts as a vehicle to draw them off from the people, village, or town.

The Pomos of California celebrate an expulsion of devils every seven years, at which the devils are represented by disguised men. "Twenty or thirty men array themselves in harlequin rig and barbaric paint, and put vessels of pitch on their heads; then they secretly go out into the surrounding mountains. These are to personify the devils. A herald goes up to the top of the assembly-house, and makes a speech to the multitude. At a signal agreed upon in the evening the masqueraders come in from the mountains, with the vessels of pitch flaming on their heads, and with all the frightful accessories of noise, motion, and costume which the savage mind can devise in representation of demons. The terrified women and children flee for life, the men huddle them inside a circle, and, on the principle of fighting the devil with fire, they swing blazing firebrands in the air, yell, whoop, and make frantic dashes at the marauding and bloodthirsty devils, so creating a terrific spectacle, and striking great fear into the hearts of the assembled hundreds of women, who are screaming and fainting and clinging to their valorous protectors. Finally the devils succeed in getting into the assembly-house, and the bravest of the men enter and hold a parley with them. As a conclusion of the whole farce, the men summon courage, the devils are expelled from the assembly-house, and with a prodigious row and racket of sham fighting are chased away into the mountains." In spring, as soon as the willow-leaves were full grown on the banks of the river, the Mandan Indians celebrated their great annual festival, one of the features of which was the expulsion of the devil. A man, painted black to represent the devil, entered the village from the prairie, chased and frightened the women, and acted the part of a buffalo bull in the buffalo dance, the object of which was to ensure a plentiful supply of buffaloes during the ensuing year. Finally he was chased from the village, the women pursuing him with hisses and gibes, beating him with sticks, and pelting him with dirt.

Some of the native tribes of Central Queensland believe in a noxious being called Molonga, who prowls unseen and would kill men and

violate women if certain ceremonies were not performed. These ceremonies last for five nights and consist of dances, in which only men, fantastically painted and adorned, take part. On the fifth night Molonga himself, personified by a man tricked out with red ochre and feathers and carrying a long feather-tipped spear, rushes forth from the darkness at the spectators and makes as if he would run them through. Great is the excitement, loud are the shrieks and shouts, but after another feigned attack the demon vanishes in the gloom. On the last night of the year the palace of the Kings of Cambodia is purged of devils. Men painted as fiends are chased by elephants about the palace courts. When they have been expelled, a consecrated thread of cotton is stretched round the palace to keep them out. In Munzerabad, a district of Mysore in Southern India, when cholera or smallpox has broken out in a parish, the inhabitants assemble and conjure the demon of the disease into a wooden image, which they carry, generally at midnight, into the next parish. The inhabitants of that parish in like manner pass the image on to their neighbours, and thus the demon is expelled from one village after another, until he comes to the bank of a river into which he is finally thrown.

Oftener, however, the expelled demons are not represented at all, but are understood to be present invisibly in the material and visible vehicle which conveys them away. Here, again, it will be convenient to distinguish between occasional and periodical expulsions. We begin with the former.

§ 2 *The Occasional Expulsion of Evils in a Material Vehicle* — The vehicle which conveys away the demons may be of various kinds. A common one is a little ship or boat. Thus, in the southern district of the island of Ceram, when a whole village suffers from sickness, a small ship is made and filled with rice, tobacco, eggs, and so forth, which have been contributed by all the people. A little sail is hoisted on the ship. When all is ready, a man calls out in a very loud voice, "O all ye sicknesses, ye smallpoxes, agues, measles, etc., who have visited us so long and wasted us so sorely, but who now cease to plague us, we have made ready this ship for you, and we have furnished you with provender sufficient for the voyage. Ye shall have no lack of food nor of betel-leaves nor of areca nuts nor of tobacco. Depart, and sail away from us directly; never come near us again, but go to a land which is far from here. Let all the tides and winds waft you speedily thither, and so convey you thither that for the time to come we may live sound and well, and that we may never see the sun rise on you again." Then ten or twelve men carry the vessel to the shore, and let it drift away with the land-breeze, feeling convinced that they are free from sickness for ever, or at least till the next time. If sickness attacks them again, they are sure it is not the same sickness, but a different one, which in due time they dismiss in the same manner. When the demon-laden bark is lost to sight, the bearers return to the village, whereupon a man cries out, "The sicknesses are now gone,

vanished, expelled, and sailed away." At this all the people come running out of their houses, passing the word from one to the other with great joy, beating on gongs and on tinkling instruments

Similar ceremonies are commonly resorted to in other East Indian islands. Thus in Timor-laut, to mislead the demons who are causing sickness, a small proa, containing the image of a man and provisioned for a long voyage, is allowed to drift away with wind and tide. As it is being launched, the people cry, "O sickness, go from here; turn back; what do you here in this poor land?" Three days after this ceremony a pig is killed, and part of the flesh is offered to Dudilaa, who lives in the sun. One of the oldest men says, "Old sir, I beseech you make well the grand-children, children, women, and men, that we may be able to eat pork and rice and to drink palm-wine. I will keep my promise. Eat your share, and make all the people in the village well." If the proa is stranded at any inhabited spot, the sickness will break out there. Hence a stranded proa excites much alarm amongst the coast population, and they immediately burn it, because demons fly from fire. In the island of Buru the proa which carries away the demons of disease is about twenty feet long, rigged out with sails, oars, anchor, and so on, and well stocked with provisions. For a day and a night the people beat gongs and drums, and rush about to frighten the demons. Next morning ten stalwart young men strike the people with branches, which have been previously dipped in an earthen pot of water. As soon as they have done so, they run down to the beach, put the branches on board the proa, launch another boat in great haste, and tow the disease-burdened bark far out to sea. There they cast it off, and one of them calls out, "Grandfather Smallpox, go away—go willingly away—go visit another land, we have made you food ready for the voyage, we have now nothing more to give." When they have landed, all the people bathe together in the sea. In this ceremony the reason for striking the people with the branches is clearly to rid them of the disease-demons, which are then supposed to be transferred to the branches. Hence the haste with which the branches are deposited in the proa and towed away to sea. So in the inland districts of Ceram, when smallpox or other sickness is raging, the priest strikes all the houses with consecrated branches, which are then thrown into the river, to be carried down to the sea, exactly as amongst the Wotyaks of Russia the sticks which have been used for expelling the devils from the village are thrown into the river, that the current may sweep the baleful burden away. The plan of putting puppets in the boat to represent sick persons, in order to lure the demons after them, is not uncommon. For example, most of the pagan tribes on the coast of Borneo seek to drive away epidemic disease as follows. They carve one or more rough human images from the pith of the sago palm and place them on a small raft or boat or full-rigged Malay ship together with rice and other food. The boat is decked with blossoms of the areca palm and with ribbons made from its leaves,

and thus adorned the little craft is allowed to float out to sea with the ebb-tide, bearing, as the people fondly think or hope, the sickness away with it

Often the vehicle which carries away the collected demons or ills of a whole community is an animal or scapegoat. In the Central Provinces of India, when cholera breaks out in a village, every one retires after sunset to his house. The priests then parade the streets, taking from the roof of each house a straw, which is burnt with an offering of rice, ghee, and turmeric, at some shrine to the east of the village. Chickens daubed with vermilion are driven away in the direction of the smoke, and are believed to carry the disease with them. If they fail, goats are tried, and last of all pigs. When cholera rages among the Bhars, Mallans, and Kurmis of India, they take a goat or a buffalo—in either case the animal must be a female, and as black as possible—then having tied some grain, cloves, and red lead in a yellow cloth on its back they turn it out of the village. The animal is conducted beyond the boundary and not allowed to return. Sometimes the buffalo is marked with a red pigment and driven to the next village, where he carries the plague with him.

Amongst the Dinkas, a pastoral people of the White Nile, each family possesses a sacred cow. When the country is threatened with war, famine, or any other public calamity, the chiefs of the village require a particular family to surrender their sacred cow to serve as a scapegoat. The animal is driven by the women to the brink of the river and across it to the other bank, there to wander in the wilderness and fall a prey to ravening beasts. Then the women return in silence and without looking behind them, were they to cast a backward glance, they imagine that the ceremony would have no effect. In 1857, when the Aymara Indians of Bolivia and Peru were suffering from a plague, they loaded a black llama with the clothes of the plague-stricken people, sprinkled brandy on the clothes, and then turned the animal loose on the mountains, hoping that it would carry the pest away with it.

Occasionally the scapegoat is a man. For example, from time to time the gods used to warn the King of Uganda that his foes the Banyoro were working magic against him and his people to make them die of disease. To avert such a catastrophe the king would send a scapegoat to the frontier of Bunyoro, the land of the enemy. The scapegoat consisted of either a man and a boy or a woman and her child, chosen because of some mark or bodily defect, which the gods had noted and by which the victims were to be recognised. With the human victims were sent a cow, a goat, a fowl, and a dog; and a strong guard escorted them to the land which the god had indicated. There the limbs of the victims were broken and they were left to die a lingering death in the enemy's country, being too crippled to crawl back to Uganda. The disease or plague was thought to have been thus transferred to the victims and to have been conveyed back in their persons to the land from which it came.

Some of the aboriginal tribes of China, as a protection against pestilence, select a man of great muscular strength to act the part of scapegoat. Having besmeared his face with paint, he performs many antics with the view of enticing all pestilential and noxious influences to attach themselves to him only. He is assisted by a priest. Finally the scapegoat, hotly pursued by men and women beating gongs and tom-toms, is driven with great haste out of the town or village. In the Punjaub a cure for the murrain is to hire a man of the Chamar caste, turn his face away from the village, brand him with a red-hot sickle, and let him go out into the jungle taking the murrain with him. He must not look back.

§ 3 *The Periodic Expulsion of Evils in a Material Vehicle*—The mediate expulsion of evils by means of a scapegoat or other material vehicle, like the immediate expulsion of them in invisible form, tends to become periodic, and for a like reason. Thus every year, generally in March, the people of Leti, Moa, and Lakor, islands of the Indian Archipelago, send away all their diseases to sea. They make a proa about six feet long, rig it with sails, oars, rudder, and other gear, and every family deposits in it some rice, fruit, a fowl, two eggs, insects that ravage the fields, and so on. Then they let it drift away to sea, saying, "Take away from here all kinds of sickness, take them to other islands, to other lands, distribute them in places that lie eastward, where the sun rises." The Biasas of Borneo annually send to sea a little bark laden with the sins and misfortunes of the people. The crew of any ship that falls in with the ill-omened bark at sea will suffer all the sorrows with which it is laden. A like custom is annually observed by the Dusuns of the Tuaran district in British North Borneo. The ceremony is the most important of the whole year. Its aim is to bring good luck to the village during the ensuing year by solemnly expelling all the evil spirits that may have collected in or about the houses throughout the last twelve months. The task of routing out the demons and banishing them devolves chiefly on women. Dressed in their finest array, they go in procession through the village. One of them carries a small sucking pig in a basket on her back; and all of them bear wands, with which they belabour the little pig at the appropriate moment; its squeals help to attract the vagrant spirits. At every house the women dance and sing, clashing castanets or cymbals of brass and jingling bunches of little brass bells in both hands. When the performance has been repeated at every house in the village, the procession defiles down to the river, and all the evil spirits, which the performers have chased from the houses, follow them to the edge of the water. There a raft has been made ready and moored to the bank. It contains offerings of food, cloth, cooking-pots, and swords, and the deck is crowded with figures of men, women, animals, and birds, all made out of the leaves of the sago palm. The evil spirits now embark on the raft, and when they are all aboard, it is pushed off and allowed to float down with the current, carrying the demons with it. Should the raft

run aground near the village, it is shoved off with all speed, lest the invisible passengers should seize the opportunity of landing and returning to the village. Finally, the sufferings of the little pig, whose squeals served to decoy the demons from their lurking-places, are terminated by death, for it is killed and its carcase thrown away.

Every year, at the beginning of the dry season, the Nicobar Islanders carry the model of a ship through their villages. The devils are chased out of the huts, and driven on board the little ship, which is then launched and suffered to sail away with the wind. The ceremony has been described by a catechist, who witnessed it at Car Nicobar in July 1897. For three days the people were busy preparing two very large floating cars, shaped like canoes, fitted with sails, and loaded with certain leaves, which possessed the valuable property of expelling devils. While the young people were thus engaged, the exorcists and the elders sat in a house singing songs by turns; but often they would come forth, pace the beach armed with rods, and forbid the devil to enter the village. The fourth day of the solemnity bore a name which means "Expelling the Devil by Sails." In the evening all the villagers assembled, the women bringing baskets of ashes and bunches of devil-expelling leaves. These leaves were then distributed to everybody, old and young. When all was ready, a band of robust men, attended by a guard of exorcists, carried one of the cars down to the sea on the right side of the village graveyard, and set it floating in the water. As soon as they had returned, another band of men carried the other car to the beach and floated it similarly in the sea to the left of the graveyard. The demon-laden barks being now launched, the women threw ashes from the shore, and the whole crowd shouted, saying, "Fly away, devil, fly away, never come again!" The wind and the tide being favourable, the canoes sailed quickly away, and that night all the people feasted together with great joy, because the devil had departed in the direction of Chowra. A similar expulsion of devils takes place once a year in other Nicobar villages, but the ceremonies are held at different times in different places.

Amongst many of the aboriginal tribes of China, a great festival is celebrated in the third month of every year. It is held by way of a general rejoicing over what the people believe to be a total annihilation of the ills of the past twelve months. The destruction is supposed to be effected in the following way. A large earthenware jar filled with gunpowder, stones, and bits of iron is buried in the earth. A train of gunpowder, communicating with the jar, is then laid; and a match being applied, the jar and its contents are blown up. The stones and bits of iron represent the ills and disasters of the past year, and the dispersion of them by the explosion is believed to remove the ills and disasters themselves. The festival is attended with much revelling and drunkenness.

At Old Calabar on the coast of Guinea, the devils and ghosts are, or used to be, publicly expelled once in two years. Among the spirits

thus driven from their haunts are the souls of all the people who died since the last lustration of the town. About three weeks or a month before the expulsion, which according to one account takes place in the month of November, rude effigies representing men and animals, such as crocodiles, leopards, elephants, bullocks, and birds, are made of wicker-work or wood, and being hung with strips of cloth and bedizened with gew-gaws, are set before the door of every house. About three o'clock in the morning of the day appointed for the ceremony the whole population turns out into the streets, and proceeds with a deafening uproar and in a state of the wildest excitement to drive all lurking devils and ghosts into the effigies, in order that they may be banished with them from the abodes of men. For this purpose bands of people roam through the streets knocking on doors, firing guns, beating drums, blowing on horns, ringing bells, clattering pots and pans, shouting and hallooing with might and main, in short making all the noise it is possible for them to raise. The hubbub goes on till the approach of dawn, when it gradually subsides and ceases altogether at sunrise. By this time the houses have been thoroughly swept, and all the frightened spirits are supposed to have huddled into the effigies or their fluttering drapery. In these wicker figures are also deposited the sweepings of the houses and the ashes of yesterday's fires. Then the demon-laden images are hastily snatched up, carried in tumultuous procession down to the brink of the river, and thrown into the water to the tuck of drums. The ebb-tide bears them away seaward, and thus the town is swept clean of ghosts and devils for another two years.

Similar annual expulsions of embodied evils are not unknown in Europe. On the evening of Easter Sunday the gypsies of Southern Europe take a wooden vessel like a band-box, which rests cradle-wise on two cross pieces of wood. In this they place herbs and simples, together with the dried carcase of a snake, or lizard, which every person present must first have touched with his fingers. The vessel is then wrapt in white and red wool, carried by the oldest man from tent to tent, and finally thrown into running water, not, however, before every member of the band has spat into it once, and the sorceress has uttered some spells over it. They believe that by performing this ceremony they dispel all the illnesses that would otherwise have afflicted them in the course of the year, and that if any one finds the vessel and opens it out of curiosity, he and his will be visited by all the maladies which the others have escaped.

The scapegoat by means of which the accumulated ills of a whole year are publicly expelled is sometimes an animal. For example, among the Garos of Assam, "besides the sacrifices for individual cases of illness, there are certain ceremonies which are observed once a year by a whole community or village, and are intended to safeguard its members from dangers of the forest, and from sickness and mishap during the coming twelve months. The principal of these is the Asongtata ceremony. Close to the outskirts of every big

village a number of stones may be noticed stuck into the ground, apparently without order or method. These are known by the name of *asong*, and on them is offered the sacrifice which the Asongtata demands. The sacrifice of a goat takes place, and a month later, that of a *langur* (*Entellus* monkey) or a bamboo-rat is considered necessary. The animal chosen has a rope fastened round its neck and is led by two men, one on each side of it, to every house in the village. It is taken inside each house in turn, the assembled villagers, meanwhile, beating the walls from the outside, to frighten and drive out any evil spirits which may have taken up their residence within. The round of the village having been made in this manner, the monkey or rat is led to the outskirts of the village, killed by a blow of a *dao*, which disembowels it, and then crucified on bamboos set up in the ground. Round the crucified animal long, sharp bamboo stakes are placed, which form *chevaux de frise* round about it. These commemorate the days when such defences surrounded the villages on all sides to keep off human enemies, and they are now a symbol to ward off sickness and dangers to life from the wild animals of the forest. The *langur* required for the purpose is hunted down some days before, but should it be found impossible to catch one, a brown monkey may take its place, a hullock may not be used. Here the crucified ape or rat is the public scapegoat, which by its vicarious sufferings and death relieves the people from all sickness and mishap in the coming year.

Again, on one day of the year the Bhotiyas of Juhar, in the Western Himalayas, take a dog, intoxicate him with spirits and bhang or hemp, and having fed him with sweetmeats, lead him round the village and let him loose. They then chase and kill him with sticks and stones, and believe that, when they have done so, no disease or misfortune will visit the village during the year. In some parts of Breadalbane it was formerly the custom on New Year's Day to take a dog to the door, give him a bit of bread, and drive him out, saying, "Get away, you dog! Whatever death of men or loss of cattle would happen in this house to the end of the present year, may it all light on your head!" On the Day of Atonement, which was the tenth day of the seventh month, the Jewish high-priest laid both his hands on the head of a live goat, confessed over it all the iniquities of the Children of Israel, and, having thereby transferred the sins of the people to the beast, sent it away into the wilderness.

The scapegoat upon whom the sins of the people are periodically laid, may also be a human being. At Onitsha, on the Niger, two human beings used to be annually sacrificed to take away the sins of the land. The victims were purchased by public subscription. All persons who, during the past year, had fallen into gross sins, such as incendiarism, theft, adultery, witchcraft, and so forth, were expected to contribute 28 *ngugas*, or a little over £2. The money thus collected was taken into the interior of the country and expended in the purchase of two sickly persons "to be offered as a sacrifice for all these abomin-



able crimes—one for the land and one for the river ” A man from a neighbouring town was hired to put them to death On the twenty-seventh of February 1858 the Rev. J. C Taylor witnessed the sacrifice of one of these victims The sufferer was a woman, about nineteen or twenty years of age They dragged her alive along the ground, face downwards, from the king's house to the river, a distance of two miles, the crowds who accompanied her crying, “ Wickedness ! wickedness ! ” The intention was “ to take away the iniquities of the land The body was dragged along in a merciless manner, as if the weight of all their wickedness was thus carried away ” Similar customs are said to be still secretly practised every year by many tribes in the delta of the Niger in spite of the vigilance of the British Government Among the Yoruba negroes of West Africa “ the human victim chosen for sacrifice, and who may be either a freeborn or a slave, a person of noble or wealthy parentage, or one of humble birth, is, after he has been chosen and marked out for the purpose, called an *Oluwo* He is always well fed and nourished and supplied with whatever he should desire during the period of his confinement When the occasion arrives for him to be sacrificed and offered up, he is commonly led about and paraded through the streets of the town or city of the Sovereign who would sacrifice him for the well-being of his government and of every family and individual under it, in order that he might carry off the sin, guilt, misfortune and death of all without exception Ashes and chalk would be employed to hide his identity by the one being freely thrown over his head, and his face painted with the latter, whilst individuals would often rush out of their houses to lay their hands upon him that they might thus transfer to him their sin, guilt, trouble, and death ” This parade over, he is taken to an inner sanctuary and beheaded His last words or dying groans are the signal for an outburst of joy among the people assembled outside, who believe that the sacrifice has been accepted and the divine wrath appeased

In Siam it used to be the custom on one day of the year to single out a woman broken down by debauchery, and carry her on a litter through all the streets to the music of drums and hautboys The mob insulted her and pelted her with dirt, and after having carried her through the whole city, they threw her on a dunghill or a hedge of thorns outside the ramparts, forbidding her ever to enter the walls again They believed that the woman thus drew upon herself all the malign influences of the air and of evil spirits The Bataks of Sumatra offer either a red horse or a buffalo as a public sacrifice to purify the land and obtain the favour of the gods Formerly, it is said, a man was bound to the same stake as the buffalo, and when they killed the animal, the man was driven away, no one might receive him, converse with him, or give him food Doubtless he was supposed to carry away the sins and misfortunes of the people

Sometimes the scapegoat is a divine animal The people of Malabar share the Hindoo reverence for the cow, to kill and eat which

"they esteem to be a crime as heinous as homicide or wilful murder" Nevertheless the "Bramans transfer the sins of the people into one or more Cows, which are then carry'd away, both the Cows and the Sins wherewith these Beasts are charged, to what place the Braman shall appoint" When the ancient Egyptians sacrificed a bull, they invoked upon its head all the evils that might otherwise befall themselves and the land of Egypt, and thereupon they either sold the bull's head to the Greeks or cast it into the river. Now, it cannot be said that in the times known to us the Egyptians worshipped bulls in general, for they seem to have commonly killed and eaten them. But a good many circumstances point to the conclusion that originally all cattle, bulls as well as cows, were held sacred by the Egyptians. For not only were all cows esteemed holy by them and never sacrificed, but even bulls might not be sacrificed unless they had certain natural marks, a priest examined every bull before it was sacrificed; if it had the proper marks, he put his seal on the animal in token that it might be sacrificed, and if a man sacrificed a bull which had not been sealed, he was put to death. Moreover, the worship of the black bulls Apis and Mnevis, especially the former, played an important part in Egyptian religion, all bulls that died a natural death were carefully buried in the suburbs of the cities, and their bones were afterwards collected from all parts of Egypt and interred in a single spot, and at the sacrifice of a bull in the great rites of Isis all the worshippers beat their breasts and mourned. On the whole, then, we are perhaps entitled to infer that bulls were originally, as cows were always, esteemed sacred by the Egyptians, and that the slain bull upon whose head they laid the misfortunes of the people was once a divine scapegoat. It seems not improbable that the lamb annually slain by the Madis of Central Africa is a divine scapegoat, and the same supposition may partly explain the Zuni sacrifice of the turtle.

Lastly, the scapegoat may be a divine man. Thus, in November the Gonds of India worship Ghansyam Deo, the protector of the crops, and at the festival the god himself is said to descend on the head of one of the worshippers, who is suddenly seized with a kind of fit and, after staggering about, rushes off into the jungle, where it is believed that, if left to himself, he would die mad. However, they bring him back, but he does not recover his senses for one or two days. The people think that one man is thus singled out as a scapegoat for the sins of the rest of the village. In the temple of the Moon the Albanians of the Eastern Caucasus kept a number of sacred slaves, of whom many were inspired and prophesied. When one of these men exhibited more than usual symptoms of inspiration or insanity, and wandered solitary up and down the woods, like the Gond in the jungle, the high priest had him bound with a sacred chain and maintained him in luxury for a year. At the end of the year he was anointed with unguents and led forth to be sacrificed. A man whose business it was to slay these human victims, and to whom practice had given dexterity, advanced from the crowd and thrust a sacred spear into

the victim's side, piercing his heart. From the manner in which the slain man fell, omens were drawn as to the welfare of the commonwealth. Then the body was carried to a certain spot where all the people stood upon it as a purificatory ceremony. This last circumstance clearly indicates that the sins of the people were transferred to the victim, just as the Jewish priest transferred the sins of the people to the scapegoat by laying his hands on the animal's head; and since the man was believed to be possessed by the divine spirit, we have here an undoubted example of a man-god slain to take away the sins and misfortunes of the people.

In Tibet the ceremony of the scapegoat presents some remarkable features. The Tibetan new year begins with the new moon which appears about the fifteenth of February. For twenty-three days afterwards the government of Lhasa, the capital, is taken out of the hands of the ordinary rulers and entrusted to the monk of the Debang monastery who offers to pay the highest sum for the privilege. The successful bidder is called the Jalno, and he announces his accession to power in person, going through the streets of Lhasa with a silver stick in his hand. Monks from all the neighbouring monasteries and temples assemble to pay him homage. The Jalno exercises his authority in the most arbitrary manner for his own benefit, as all the fines which he exacts are his by purchase. The profit he makes is about ten times the amount of the purchase money. His men go about the streets in order to discover any conduct on the part of the inhabitants that can be found fault with. Every house in Lhasa is taxed at this time, and the slightest offence is punished with unsparing rigour by fines. This severity of the Jalno drives all working classes out of the city till the twenty-three days are over. But if the laily go out, the clergy come in. All the Buddhist monasteries of the country for miles round about open their gates and disgorge their inmates. All the roads that lead down into Lhasa from the neighbouring mountains are full of monks hurrying to the capital, some on foot, some on horseback, some riding asses or lowing oxen, all carrying their prayer-books and culinary utensils. In such multitudes do they come that the streets and squares of the city are encumbered with their swarms, and incarnadined with their red cloaks. The disorder and confusion are indescribable. Bands of the holy men traverse the streets chanting prayers or uttering wild cries. They meet, they jostle, they quarrel, they fight, bloody noses, black eyes, and broken heads are freely given and received. All day long, too, from before the peep of dawn till after darkness has fallen, these red-cloaked monks hold services in the dim incense-laden air of the great Machindranath temple, the cathedral of Lhasa; and thither they crowd thrice a day to receive their doles of tea and soup and money. The cathedral is a vast building, standing in the centre of the city, and surrounded by bazaars and shops. The idols in it are richly inlaid with gold and precious stones.

Twenty-four days after the Jalno has ceased to have authority,

he assumes it again, and for ten days acts in the same arbitrary manner as before. On the first of the ten days the priests again assemble at the cathedral, pray to the gods to prevent sickness and other evils among the people, "and, as a peace-offering, sacrifice one man. The man is not killed purposely, but the ceremony he undergoes often proves fatal. Grain is thrown against his head, and his face is painted half white, half black." Thus grotesquely disguised, and carrying a coat of skin on his arm, he is called the King of the Years, and sits daily in the market-place, where he helps himself to whatever he likes and goes about shaking a black yak's tail over the people, who thus transfer their bad luck to him. On the tenth day, all the troops in Lhasa march to the great temple and form in line before it. The King of the Years is brought forth from the temple and receives small donations from the assembled multitude. He then ridicules the Jalno, saying to him, "What we perceive through the five senses is no illusion. All you teach is untrue," and the like. The Jalno, who represents the Grand Lama for the time being, contests these heretical opinions; the dispute waxes warm, and at last both agree to decide the questions at issue by a cast of the dice, the Jalno offering to change places with the scapegoat should the throw be against him. If the King of the Years wins, much evil is prognosticated; but if the Jalno wins, there is great rejoicing, for it proves that his adversary has been accepted by the gods as a victim to bear all the sins of the people of Lhasa. Fortune, however, always favours the Jalno, who throws sixes with unvarying success, while his opponent turns up only ones. Nor is this so extraordinary as at first sight it might appear; for the Jalno's dice are marked with nothing but sixes and his adversary's with nothing but ones. When he sees the finger of Providence thus plainly pointed against him, the King of the Years is terrified and flees away upon a white horse, with a white dog, a white bird, salt, and so forth, which have all been provided for him by the government. His face is still painted half white and half black, and he still wears his leathern coat. The whole populace pursues him, hooting, yelling, and firing blank shots in volleys after him. Thus driven out of the city, he is detained for seven days in the great chamber of horrors at the Samyas monastery, surrounded by monstrous and terrific images of devils and skins of huge serpents and wild beasts. Thence he goes away into the mountains of Chetang, where he has to remain an outcast for several months or a year in a narrow den. If he dies before the time is out, the people say it is an auspicious omen, but if he survives, he may return to Lhasa and play the part of scapegoat over again the following year.

This quaint ceremonial, still annually observed in the secluded capital of Buddhism—the Rome of Asia—is interesting because it exhibits, in a clearly marked religious stratification, a series of divine redeemers themselves redeemed, of vicarious sacrifices vicariously atoned for, of gods undergoing a process of fossilisation, who, while they retain the privileges, have disburdened themselves of the pains and penalties of divinity. In the Jalno we may without undue

straining discern a successor of those temporary kings, those mortal gods, who purchase a short lease of power and glory at the price of their lives. That he is the temporary substitute of the Grand Lama is certain; that he is, or was once, liable to act as scapegoat for the people is made nearly certain by his offer to change places with the real scapegoat—the King of the Years—if the arbitrament of the dice should go against him. It is true that the conditions under which the question is now put to the hazard have reduced the offer to an idle form. But such forms are no mere mushroom growths, springing up of themselves in a night. If they are now lifeless formalities, empty husks devoid of significance, we may be sure that they once had a life and a meaning, if at the present day they are blind alleys leading nowhere, we may be certain that in former days they were paths that led somewhere, if only to death. That death was the goal to which of old the Tibetan scapegoat passed after his brief period of license in the market-place, is a conjecture that has much to commend it. Analogy suggests it; the blank shots fired after him, the statement that the ceremony often proves fatal, the belief that his death is a happy omen, all confirm it. We need not wonder then that the Jalno, after paying so dear to act as deputy-deity for a few weeks, should have preferred to die by deputy rather than in his own person when his time was up. The painful but necessary duty was accordingly laid on some poor devil, some social outcast, some wretch with whom the world had gone hard, who readily agreed to throw away his life at the end of a few days if only he might have his fling in the meantime. For observe that while the time allowed to the original deputy—the Jalno—was measured by weeks, the time allowed to the deputy's deputy was cut down to days, ten days according to one authority, seven days according to another. So short a rope was doubtless thought a long enough tether for so black or sickly a sheep, so few sands in the hour-glass, slipping so fast away, sufficed for one who had wasted so many precious years. Hence in the jack-pudding who now masquerades with motley countenance in the market-place of Lhasa, sweeping up misfortune with a black yak's tail, we may fairly see the substitute of a substitute, the vicar of a vicar, the proxy on whose back the heavy burden was laid when it had been lifted from nobler shoulders. But the clue, if we have followed it aright, does not stop at the Jalno; it leads straight back to the pope of Lhasa himself, the Grand Lama, of whom the Jalno is merely the temporary vicar. The analogy of many customs in many lands points to the conclusion that, if this human divinity stoops to resign his ghostly power for a time into the hands of a substitute, it is, or rather was once, for no other reason than that the substitute might die in his stead. Thus through the mist of ages unillumined by the lamp of history, the tragic figure of the pope of Buddhism—God's vicar on earth for Asia—looms dim and sad as the man-god who bore his people's sorrows, the Good Shepherd who laid down his life for the sheep.

§ 4. *On Scapegoats in General.*—The foregoing survey of the custom

of publicly expelling the accumulated evils of a village or town or country suggests a few general observations

In the first place, it will not be disputed that what I have called the immediate and the mediate expulsions of evil are identical in intention ; in other words, that whether the evils are conceived of as invisible or as embodied in a material form, is a circumstance entirely subordinate to the main object of the ceremony, which is simply to effect a total clearance of all the ills that have been infesting a people. If any link were wanting to connect the two kinds of expulsion, it would be furnished by such a practice as that of sending the evils away in a litter or a boat For here, on the one hand, the evils are invisible and intangible ; and, on the other hand, there is a visible and tangible vehicle to convey them away And a scapegoat is nothing more than such a vehicle

In the second place, when a general clearance of evils is resorted to periodically, the interval between the celebrations of the ceremony is commonly a year, and the time of year when the ceremony takes place usually coincides with some well-marked change of season, such as the beginning or end of winter in the arctic and temperate zones, and the beginning or end of the rainy season in the tropics The increased mortality which such climatic changes are apt to produce, especially amongst ill-fed, ill-clothed, and ill-housed savages, is set down by primitive man to the agency of demons, who must accordingly be expelled Hence, in the tropical regions of New Britain and Peru, the devils are or were driven out at the beginning of the rainy season ; hence, on the dreary coasts of Baffin Land, they are banished at the approach of the bitter arctic winter. When a tribe has taken to husbandry, the time for the general expulsion of devils is naturally made to agree with one of the great epochs of the agricultural year, as sowing, or harvest, but, as these epochs themselves naturally coincide with changes of season, it does not follow that the transition from the hunting or pastoral to the agricultural life involves any alteration in the time of celebrating this great annual rite. Some of the agricultural communities of India and the Hindoo Koosh, as we have seen, hold their general clearance of demons at harvest, others at sowing-time. But, at whatever season of the year it is held, the general expulsion of devils commonly marks the beginning of the new year For, before entering on a new year, people are anxious to rid themselves of the troubles that have harassed them in the past ; hence it comes about that in so many communities the beginning of the new year is inaugurated with a solemn and public banishment of evil spirits

In the third place, it is to be observed that this public and periodic expulsion of devils is commonly preceded or followed by a period of general license, during which the ordinary restraints of society are thrown aside, and all offences, short of the gravest, are allowed to pass unpunished In Guinea and Tonquin the period of license precedes the public expulsion of demons, and the suspension of the

ordinary government in Lhasa previous to the expulsion of the scapegoat is perhaps a relic of a similar period of universal license. Amongst the Hos of India the period of license follows the expulsion of the devil. Amongst the Iroquois it hardly appears whether it preceded or followed the banishment of evils. In any case, the extraordinary relaxation of all ordinary rules of conduct on such occasions is doubtless to be explained by the general clearance of evils which precedes or follows it. On the one hand, when a general riddance of evil and absolution from all sin is in immediate prospect, men are encouraged to give the rein to their passions, trusting that the coming ceremony will wipe out the score which they are running up so fast. On the other hand, when the ceremony has just taken place, men's minds are freed from the oppressive sense, under which they generally labour, of an atmosphere surcharged with devils; and in the first revulsion of joy they overleap the limits commonly imposed by custom and morality. When the ceremony takes place at harvest-time, the elation of feeling which it excites is further stimulated by the state of physical wellbeing produced by an abundant supply of food.

Fourthly, the employment of a divine man or animal as a scapegoat is especially to be noted, indeed, we are here directly concerned with the custom of banishing evils only in so far as these evils are believed to be transferred to a god who is afterwards slain. It may be suspected that the custom of employing a divine man or animal as a public scapegoat is much more widely diffused than appears from the examples cited. For, as has already been pointed out, the custom of killing a god dates from so early a period of human history that in later ages, even when the custom continues to be practised, it is liable to be misinterpreted. The divine character of the animal or man is forgotten, and he comes to be regarded merely as an ordinary victim. This is especially likely to be the case when it is a divine man who is killed. For when a nation becomes civilised, if it does not drop human sacrifices altogether, it at least selects as victims only such wretches as would be put to death at any rate. Thus the killing of a god may sometimes come to be confounded with the execution of a criminal.

If we ask why a dying god should be chosen to take upon himself and carry away the sins and sorrows of the people, it may be suggested that in the practice of using the divinity as a scapegoat we have a combination of two customs which were at one time distinct and independent. On the one hand we have seen that it has been customary to kill the human or animal god in order to save his divine life from being weakened by the inroads of age. On the other hand we have seen that it has been customary to have a general expulsion of evils and sins once a year. Now, if it occurred to people to combine these two customs, the result would be the employment of the dying god as a scapegoat. He was killed, not originally to take away sin, but to save the divine life from the degeneracy of old age, but, since he had to be killed at any rate, people may have thought that they might as well seize the opportunity to lay upon him the burden of their sufferings.

and sins, in order that he might bear it away with him to the unknown world beyond the grave

The use of the divinity as a scapegoat clears up the ambiguity which, as we saw, appears to hang about the European folk-custom of "carrying out Death." Grounds have been shown for believing that in this ceremony the so-called Death was originally the spirit of vegetation, who was annually slain in spring, in order that he might come to life again with all the vigour of youth. But, as I pointed out, there are certain features in the ceremony which are not explicable on this hypothesis alone. Such are the marks of joy with which the effigy of Death is carried out to be buried or burnt, and the fear and abhorrence of it manifested by the bearers. But these features become at once intelligible if we suppose that the Death was not merely the dying god of vegetation, but also a public scapegoat, upon whom were laid all the evils that had afflicted the people during the past year. Joy on such an occasion is natural and appropriate, and if the dying god appears to be the object of that fear and abhorrence which are properly due not to himself, but to the sins and misfortunes with which he is laden, this arises merely from the difficulty of distinguishing, or at least of marking the distinction, between the bearer and the burden. When the burden is of a baleful character, the bearer of it will be feared and shunned just as much as if he were himself instinct with those dangerous properties of which, as it happens, he is only the vehicle. Similarly we have seen that disease-laden and sin-laden boats are dreaded and shunned by East Indian peoples. Again, the view that in these popular customs the Death is a scapegoat as well as a representative of the divine spirit of vegetation derives some support from the circumstance that its expulsion is always celebrated in spring and chiefly by Slavonic peoples. For the Slavonic year began in spring, and thus, in one of its aspects, the ceremony of "carrying out Death" would be an example of the widespread custom of expelling the accumulated evils of the old year before entering on a new one.

## CHAPTER LVIII

### HUMAN SCAPEGOATS IN CLASSICAL ANTIQUITY

§ 1. *The Human Scapegoat in Ancient Rome*—We are now prepared to notice the use of the human scapegoat in classical antiquity. Every year on the fourteenth of March a man clad in skins was led in procession through the streets of Rome, beaten with long white rods, and driven out of the city. He was called Mamurius Veturius, that is, "the old Mars," and as the ceremony took place on the day preceding the first full moon of the old Roman year (which began on the first of March), the skin-clad man must have represented the Mars of the past year, who was driven out at the beginning of a new one. Now Mars was



originally not a god of war but of vegetation. For it was to Mars that the Roman husbandman prayed for the prosperity of his corn and his vines, his fruit-trees and his copses; it was to Mars that the priestly college of the Arval Brothers, whose business it was to sacrifice for the growth of the crops, addressed their petitions almost exclusively, and it was to Mars, as we saw, that a horse was sacrificed in October to secure an abundant harvest. Moreover, it was to Mars, under his title of "Mars of the woods" (*Mars Silvanus*), that farmers offered sacrifice for the welfare of their cattle. We have already seen that cattle are commonly supposed to be under the special patronage of tree-gods. Once more, the consecration of the vernal month of March to Mars seems to point him out as the deity of the sprouting vegetation. Thus the Roman custom of expelling the old Mars at the beginning of the new year in spring is identical with the Slavonic custom of "carrying out Death," if the view here taken of the latter custom is correct. The similarity of the Roman and Slavonic customs has been already remarked by scholars, who appear, however, to have taken Mamurius Veturius and the corresponding figures in the Slavonic ceremonies to be representatives of the old year rather than of the old god of vegetation. It is possible that ceremonies of this kind may have come to be thus interpreted in later times even by the people who practised them. But the personification of a period of time is too abstract an idea to be primitive. However, in the Roman, as in the Slavonic, ceremony, the representative of the god appears to have been treated not only as a deity of vegetation but also as a scapegoat. His expulsion implies this, for there is no reason why the god of vegetation, as such, should be expelled the city. But it is otherwise if he is also a scapegoat, it then becomes necessary to drive him beyond the boundaries, that he may carry his sorrowful burden away to other lands. And, in fact, Mamurius Veturius appears to have been driven away to the land of the Oscans, the enemies of Rome.

§ 2 *The Human Scapegoat in Ancient Greece*—The ancient Greeks were also familiar with the use of a human scapegoat. In Plutarch's native town of Chaeronea a ceremony of this kind was performed by the chief magistrate at the Town Hall, and by each householder at his own home. It was called the "expulsion of hunger." A slave was beaten with rods of the *agnus castus*, and turned out of doors with the words, "Out with hunger, and in with wealth and health." When Plutarch held the office of chief magistrate of his native town he performed this ceremony at the Town Hall, and he has recorded the discussion to which the custom afterwards gave rise.

But in civilised Greece the custom of the scapegoat took darker forms than the innocent rite over which the amiable and pious Plutarch presided. Whenever Marseilles, one of the busiest and most brilliant of Greek colonies, was ravaged by a plague, a man of the poorer classes used to offer himself as a scapegoat. For a whole year he was maintained at the public expense, being fed on choice and pure food. At the expiry of the year he was dressed in sacred garments, decked with

holy branches, and led through the whole city, while prayers were uttered that all the evils of the people might fall on his head. He was then cast out of the city or stoned to death by the people outside of the walls. The Athenians regularly maintained a number of degraded and useless beings at the public expense, and when any calamity, such as plague, drought, or famine, befell the city, they sacrificed two of these outcasts as scapegoats. One of the victims was sacrificed for the men and the other for the women. The former wore round his neck a string of black, the latter a string of white figs. Sometimes, it seems, the victim slain on behalf of the women was a woman. They were led about the city and then sacrificed, apparently by being stoned to death outside the city. But such sacrifices were not confined to extraordinary occasions of public calamity, it appears that every year, at the festival of the Thargelia in May, two victims, one for the men and one for the women, were led out of Athens and stoned to death. The city of Abdera in Thrace was publicly purified once a year, and one of the burghers, set apart for the purpose, was stoned to death as a scapegoat or vicarious sacrifice for the life of all the others, six days before his execution he was excommunicated, "in order that he alone might bear the sins of all the people."

From the Lover's Leap, a white bluff at the southern end of their island, the Leucadians used annually to hurl a criminal into the sea as a scapegoat. But to lighten his fall they fastened live birds and feathers to him, and a flotilla of small boats waited below to catch him and convey him beyond the boundary. Probably these humane precautions were a mitigation of an earlier custom of flinging the scapegoat into the sea to drown. The Leucadian ceremony took place at the time of a sacrifice to Apollo, who had a temple or sanctuary on the spot. Elsewhere it was customary to cast a young man every year into the sea, with the prayer, "Be thou our offscouring." This ceremony was supposed to rid the people of the evils by which they were beset, or according to a somewhat different interpretation it redeemed them by paying the debt they owed to the sea-god. As practised by the Greeks of Asia Minor in the sixth century before our era, the custom of the scapegoat was as follows. When a city suffered from plague, famine, or other public calamity, an ugly or deformed person was chosen to take upon himself all the evils which afflicted the community. He was brought to a suitable place, where dried figs, a barley loaf, and cheese were put into his hand. These he ate. Then he was beaten seven times upon his genital organs with squills and branches of the wild fig and other wild trees, while the flutes played a particular tune. Afterwards he was burned on a pyre built of the wood of forest trees, and his ashes were cast into the sea. A similar custom appears to have been annually celebrated by the Asiatic Greeks at the harvest festival of the Thargelia.

In the ritual just described the scourging of the victim with squills, branches of the wild fig, and so forth, cannot have been intended to aggravate his sufferings, otherwise any stick would have been good

enough to beat him with. The true meaning of this part of the ceremony has been explained by W. Mannhardt. He points out that the ancients attributed to squills a magical power of averting evil influences, and that accordingly they hung them up at the doors of their houses and made use of them in purificatory rites. Hence the Arcadian custom of whipping the image of Pan with squills at a festival, or whenever the hunters returned empty-handed, must have been meant, not to punish the god, but to purify him from the harmful influences which were impeding him in the exercise of his divine functions as a god who should supply the hunter with game. Similarly the object of beating the human scapegoat on the genital organs with squills and so on must have been to release his reproductive energies from any restraint or spell under which they might be laid by demoniacal or other malignant agency, and as the Thargelia at which he was annually sacrificed was an early harvest festival celebrated in May, we must recognise in him a representative of the creative and fertilising god of vegetation. The representative of the god was annually slain for the purpose I have indicated, that of maintaining the divine life in perpetual vigour, untainted by the weakness of age, and before he was put to death it was not unnatural to stimulate his reproductive powers in order that these might be transmitted in full activity to his successor, the new god or new embodiment of the old god, who was doubtless supposed immediately to take the place of the one slain. Similar reasoning would lead to a similar treatment of the scapegoat on special occasions, such as drought or famine. If the crops did not answer to the expectation of the husbandman, this would be attributed to some failure in the generative powers of the god whose function it was to produce the fruits of the earth. It might be thought that he was under a spell or was growing old and feeble. Accordingly he was slain in the person of his representative, with all the ceremonies already described, in order that, born young again, he might infuse his own youthful vigour into the stagnant energies of nature. On the same principle we can understand why Mamurius Veturius was beaten with rods, why the slave at the Chaeronean ceremony was beaten with the *agnus castus* (a tree to which magical properties were ascribed), why the effigy of Death in some parts of Europe is assailed with sticks and stones, and why at Babylon the criminal who played the god was scourged before he was crucified. The purpose of the scourging was not to intensify the agony of the divine sufferer, but on the contrary to dispel any malignant influences by which at the supreme moment he might conceivably be beset.

Thus far I have assumed that the human victims at the Thargelia represented the spirits of vegetation in general, but it has been well remarked by Mr. W. R. Paton that these poor wretches seem to have masqueraded as the spirits of fig-trees in particular. He points out that the process of caprificatio, as it is called, that is, the artificial fertilisation of the cultivated fig-trees by hanging strings of wild figs among the boughs, takes place in Greece and Asia Minor in June about

a month after the date of the Thargelia, and he suggests that the hanging of the black and white figs round the necks of the two human victims, one of whom represented the men and the other the women, may have been a direct imitation of the process of caprification designed, on the principle of imitative magic, to assist the fertilisation of the fig-trees. And since caprification is in fact a marriage of the male fig-tree with the female fig-tree, Mr Paton further supposes that the loves of the trees may, on the same principle of imitative magic, have been simulated by a mock or even a real marriage between the two human victims, one of whom appears sometimes to have been a woman. On this view the practice of beating the human victims on their genitals with branches of wild fig-trees and with squills was a charm intended to stimulate the generative powers of the man and woman who for the time being personated the male and the female fig-trees respectively, and who by their union in marriage, whether real or pretended, were believed to help the trees to bear fruit.

The interpretation which I have adopted of the custom of beating the human scapegoat with certain plants is supported by many analogies. Thus among the Kai of German New Guinea, when a man wishes to make his banana shoots bear fruit quickly, he beats them with a stick cut from a banana-tree which has already borne fruit. Here it is obvious that fruitfulness is believed to inhere in a stick cut from a fruitful tree and to be imparted by contact to the young banana plants. Similarly in New Caledonia a man will beat his taro plants lightly with a branch, saying as he does so, "I beat this taro that it may grow," after which he plants the branch in the ground at the end of the field. Among the Indians of Brazil at the mouth of the Amazon, when a man wishes to increase the size of his generative organ, he strikes it with the fruit of a white aquatic plant called an *aninga*, which grows luxuriantly on the banks of the river. The fruit, which is inedible, resembles a banana, and is clearly chosen for this purpose on account of its shape. The ceremony should be performed three days before or after the new moon. In the county of Bekes, in Hungary, barren women are fertilised by being struck with a stick which has first been used to separate pairing dogs. Here a fertilising virtue is clearly supposed to be inherent in the stick and to be conveyed by contact to the women. The Toradjas of Central Celebes think that the plant *Dracaena terminalis* has a strong soul, because when it is lopped it soon grows up again. Hence when a man is ill, his friends will sometimes beat him on the crown of the head with *Dracaena* leaves in order to strengthen his weak soul with the strong soul of the plant.

These analogies, accordingly, support the interpretation which, following my predecessors W. Mannhardt and Mr W. R. Paton, I have given of the beating inflicted on the human victims at the Greek harvest festival of the Thargelia. That beating, being administered to the generative organs of the victims by fresh green plants and branches, is most naturally explained as a charm to increase the

reproductive energies of the men or women either by communicating to them the fruitfulness of the plants and branches, or by ridding them of maleficent influences, and this interpretation is confirmed by the observation that the two victims represented the two sexes, one of them standing for the men in general and the other for the women. The season of the year when the ceremony was performed, namely the time of the corn harvest, tallies well with the theory that the rite had an agricultural significance. Further, that it was above all intended to fertilise the fig-trees is strongly suggested by the strings of black and white figs which were hung round the necks of the victims, as well as by the blows which were given their genital organs with the branches of a wild fig-tree, since this procedure closely resembles the procedure which ancient and modern husbandmen in Greek lands have regularly resorted to for the purpose of actually fertilising their fig-trees. When we remember what an important part the artificial fertilisation of the date palm-tree appears to have played of old not only in the husbandry but in the religion of Mesopotamia, there seems no reason to doubt that the artificial fertilisation of the fig-tree may in like manner have vindicated for itself a place in the solemn ritual of Greek religion.

If these considerations are just, we must apparently conclude that while the human victims at the Thargelia certainly appear in later classical times to have figured chiefly as public scapegoats, who carried away with them the sins, misfortunes, and sorrows of the whole people, at an earlier time they may have been looked on as embodiments of vegetation, perhaps of the corn but particularly of the fig-trees, and that the beating which they received and the death which they died were intended primarily to brace and refresh the powers of vegetation then beginning to droop and languish under the torrid heat of the Greek summer.

The view here taken of the Greek scapegoat, if it is correct, obviates an objection which might otherwise be brought against the main argument of this book. To the theory that the priest of Aricia was slain as a representative of the spirit of the grove, it might have been objected that such a custom has no analogy in classical antiquity. But reasons have now been given for believing that the human being periodically and occasionally slain by the Asiatic Greeks was regularly treated as an embodiment of a divinity of vegetation. Probably the persons whom the Athenians kept to be sacrificed were similarly treated as divine. That they were social outcasts did not matter. On the primitive view a man is not chosen to be the mouth-piece or embodiment of a god on account of his high moral qualities or social rank. The divine afflatus descends equally on the good and the bad, the lofty and the lowly. If then the civilised Greeks of Asia and Athens habitually sacrificed men whom they regarded as incarnate gods, there can be no inherent improbability in the supposition that at the dawn of history a similar custom was observed by the semi-barbarous Latins in the Arician Grove.

But to clinch the argument, it is clearly desirable to prove that the custom of putting to death a human representative of a god was known and practised in ancient Italy elsewhere than in the Arician Grove. This proof I now propose to adduce.

§ 3 *The Roman Saturnalia*—We have seen that many peoples have been used to observe an annual period of license, when the customary restraints of law and morality are thrown aside, when the whole population give themselves up to extravagant mirth and jollity, and when the darker passions find a vent which would never be allowed them in the more staid and sober course of ordinary life. Such outbursts of the pent-up forces of human nature, too often degenerating into wild orgies of lust and crime, occur most commonly at the end of the year, and are frequently associated, as I have had occasion to point out, with one or other of the agricultural seasons, especially with the time of sowing or of harvest. Now, of all these periods of license the one which is best known and which in modern language has given its name to the rest is the Saturnalia. This famous festival fell in December, the last month of the Roman year, and was popularly supposed to commemorate the merry reign of Saturn, the god of sowing and of husbandry, who lived on earth long ago as a righteous and beneficent king of Italy, drew the rude and scattered dwellers on the mountains together, taught them to till the ground, gave them laws, and ruled in peace. His reign was the fabled Golden Age: the earth brought forth abundantly. no sound of war or discord troubled the happy world. no baleful love of lucre worked like poison in the blood of the industrious and contented peasantry. Slavery and private property were alike unknown: all men had all things in common. At last the good god, the kindly king, vanished suddenly, but his memory was cherished to distant ages, shrines were reared in his honour, and many hills and high places in Italy bore his name. Yet the bright tradition of his reign was crossed by a dark shadow: his altars are said to have been stained with the blood of human victims, for whom a more merciful age afterwards substituted effigies. Of this gloomy side of the god's religion there is little or no trace in the descriptions which ancient writers have left us of the Saturnalia. Feasting and revelry and all the mad pursuit of pleasure are the features that seem to have especially marked this carnival of antiquity, as it went on for seven days in the streets and public squares and houses of ancient Rome from the seventeenth to the twenty-third of December.

But no feature of the festival is more remarkable, nothing in it seems to have struck the ancients themselves more than the license granted to slaves at this time. The distinction between the free and the servile classes was temporarily abolished. The slave might rail at his master, intoxicate himself like his betters, sit down at table with them, and not even a word of reproof would be administered to him for conduct which at any other season might have been punished with stripes, imprisonment, or death. Nay, more, masters actually

changed places with their slaves and waited on them at table, and not till the serf had done eating and drinking was the board cleared and dinner set for his master. So far was this inversion of ranks carried, that each household became for a time a mimic republic in which the high offices of state were discharged by the slaves, who gave their orders and laid down the law as if they were indeed invested with all the dignity of the consulship, the praetorship, and the bench. Like the pale reflection of power thus accorded to bondsmen at the Saturnalia was the mock kingship for which freemen cast lots at the same season. The person on whom the lot fell enjoyed the title of king, and issued commands of a playful and ludicrous nature to his temporary subjects. One of them he might order to mix the wine, another to drink, another to sing, another to dance, another to speak in his own dispraise, another to carry a flute-girl on his back round the house.

Now, when we remember that the liberty allowed to slaves at this festive season was supposed to be an imitation of the state of society in Saturn's time, and that in general the Saturnalia passed for nothing more or less than a temporary revival or restoration of the reign of that merry monarch, we are tempted to surmise that the mock king who presided over the revels may have originally represented Saturn himself. The conjecture is strongly confirmed, if not established, by a very curious and interesting account of the way in which the Saturnalia was celebrated by the Roman soldiers stationed on the Danube in the reign of Maximian and Diocletian. The account is preserved in a narrative of the martyrdom of St. Dasius, which was unearthed from a Greek manuscript in the Paris library, and published by Professor Franz Cumont of Ghent. Two briefer descriptions of the event and of the custom are contained in manuscripts at Milan and Berlin, one of them had already seen the light in an obscure volume printed at Urbino in 1727, but its importance for the history of the Roman religion, both ancient and modern, appears to have been overlooked until Professor Cumont drew the attention of scholars to all three narratives by publishing them together some years ago. According to these narratives, which have all the appearance of being authentic, and of which the longest is probably based on official documents, the Roman soldiers at Durostorum in Lower Moesia celebrated the Saturnalia year by year in the following manner. Thirty days before the festival they chose by lot from amongst themselves a young and handsome man, who was then clothed in royal attire to resemble Saturn. Thus arrayed and attended by a multitude of soldiers he went about in public with full license to indulge his passions and to taste of every pleasure, however base and shameful. But if his reign was merry, it was short and ended tragically, for when the thirty days were up and the festival of Saturn had come, he cut his own throat on the altar of the god whom he personated. In the year A.D. 303 the lot fell upon the Christian soldier Dasius, but he refused to play the part of the heathen god

and soil his last days by debauchery. The threats and arguments of his commanding officer Bassus failed to shake his constancy, and accordingly he was beheaded, as the Christian martyrologist records with minute accuracy, at Durostorum by the soldier John on Friday the twentieth day of November, being the twenty-fourth day of the moon, at the fourth hour

Since this narrative was published by Professor Cumont, its historical character, which had been doubted or denied, has received strong confirmation from an interesting discovery. In the crypt of the cathedral which crowns the promontory of Ancona there is preserved, among other remarkable antiquities, a white marble sarcophagus bearing a Greek inscription, in characters of the age of Justinian, to the following effect: "Here lies the holy martyr Dasius, brought from Durostorum." The sarcophagus was transferred to the crypt of the cathedral in 1848 from the church of San Pellegrino, under the high altar of which, as we learn from a Latin inscription let into the masonry, the martyr's bones still repose with those of two other saints. How long the sarcophagus was deposited in the church of San Pellegrino, we do not know, but it is recorded to have been there in the year 1650. We may suppose that the saint's relics were transferred for safety to Ancona at some time in the troubled centuries which followed his martyrdom, when Moesia was occupied and ravaged by successive hordes of barbarian invaders. At all events it appears certain from the independent and mutually confirmatory evidence of the martyrology and the monuments that Dasius was no mythical saint, but a real man, who suffered death for his faith at Durostorum in one of the early centuries of the Christian era. Finding the narrative of the nameless martyrologist thus established as to the principal fact recorded, namely, the martyrdom of St. Dasius, we may reasonably accept his testimony as to the manner and cause of the martyrdom, all the more because his narrative is precise, circumstantial, and entirely free from the miraculous element. Accordingly I conclude that the account which he gives of the celebration of the Saturnalia among the Roman soldiers is trustworthy.

This account sets in a new and lurid light the office of the King of the Saturnalia, the ancient Lord of Misrule, who presided over the winter revels at Rome in the time of Horace and of Tacitus. It seems to prove that his business had not always been that of a mere harlequin or merry-andrew whose only care was that the revelry should run high and the fun grow fast and furious, while the fire blazed and crackled on the hearth, while the streets swarmed with festive crowds, and through the clear frosty air, far away to the north, Soracte showed his coronal of snow. When we compare this comic monarch of the gay, the civilised metropolis with his grim counterpart of the rude camp on the Danube, and when we remember the long array of similar figures, ludicrous yet tragic, who in other ages and in other lands, wearing mock crowns and wrapped in sceptred palls, have played their little pranks for a few brief hours or days, then passed before their



time to a violent death, we can hardly doubt that in the King of the Saturnalia at Rome, as he is depicted by classical writers, we see only a feeble emasculated copy of that original, whose strong features have been fortunately preserved for us by the obscure author of the *Martyrdom of St Dasius*. In other words, the martyrologist's account of the Saturnalia agrees so closely with the accounts of similar rites elsewhere, which could not possibly have been known to him, that the substantial accuracy of his description may be regarded as established, and further, since the custom of putting a mock king to death as a representative of a god cannot have grown out of a practice of appointing him to preside over a holiday revel, whereas the reverse may very well have happened, we are justified in assuming that in an earlier and more barbarous age it was the universal practice in ancient Italy, wherever the worship of Saturn prevailed, to choose a man who played the part and enjoyed all the traditionary privileges of Saturn for a season, and then died, whether by his own or another's hand, whether by the knife or the fire or on the gallows-tree, in the character of the good god who gave his life for the world. In Rome itself and other great towns the growth of civilization had probably mitigated this cruel custom long before the Augustan age, and transformed it into the innocent shape it wears in the writings of the few classical writers who bestow a passing notice on the holiday King of the Saturnalia. But in remoter districts the older and sterner practice may long have survived, and even if after the unification of Italy the barbarous usage was suppressed by the Roman government, the memory of it would be handed down by the peasants and would tend from time to time, as still happens with the lowest forms of superstition among ourselves, to lead to a recrudescence of the practice, especially among the rude soldiery on the outskirts of the empire over whom the once iron hand of Rome was beginning to relax its grasp.

The resemblance between the Saturnalia of ancient and the Carnival of modern Italy has often been remarked, but in the light of all the facts that have come before us, we may well ask whether the resemblance does not amount to identity. We have seen that in Italy, Spain, and France, that is, in the countries where the influence of Rome has been deepest and most lasting, a conspicuous feature of the Carnival is a burlesque figure personifying the festive season, which after a short career of glory and dissipation is publicly shot, burnt, or otherwise destroyed, to the feigned grief or genuine delight of the populace. If the view here suggested of the Carnival is correct, this grotesque personage is no other than a direct successor of the old King of the Saturnalia, the master of the revels, the real man who personated Saturn and, when the revels were over, suffered a real death in his assumed character. The King of the Bean on Twelfth Night and the mediæval Bishop of Fools, Abbot of Unreason, or Lord of Misrule are figures of the same sort and may perhaps have had a similar origin. Whether that was so or not, we may conclude with a fair degree of probability that if the King of the Wood at Aricia lived and died as

an incarnation of a sylvan deity, he had of old a parallel at Rome in the men who, year by year, were slain in the character of King Saturn, the god of the sown and sprouting seed.

## CHAPTER LIX

### KILLING THE GOD IN MEXICO

By no people does the custom of sacrificing the human representative of a god appear to have been observed so commonly and with so much solemnity as by the Aztecs of ancient Mexico. With the ritual of these remarkable sacrifices we are well acquainted, for it has been fully described by the Spaniards who conquered Mexico in the sixteenth century, and whose curiosity was naturally excited by the discovery in this distant region of a barbarous and cruel religion which presented many curious points of analogy to the doctrine and ritual of their own church. "They took a captive," says the Jesuit Acosta, "such as they thought good, and afore they did sacrifice him unto their idols, they gave him the name of the idol, to whom he should be sacrificed, and apparelled him with the same ornaments like their idol, saying, that he did represent the same idol. And during the time that this representation lasted, which was for a year in some feasts, in others six months, and in others less, they revered and worshipped him in the same manner as the proper idol, and in the meantime he did eat, drink, and was merry. When he went through the streets, the people came forth to worship him, and every one brought him an alms, with children and sick folks, that he might cure them, and bless them, suffering him to do all things at his pleasure, only he was accompanied with ten or twelve men lest he should fly. And he (to the end he might be revered as he passed) sometimes sounded upon a small flute, that the people might prepare to worship him. The feast being come, and he grown fat, they killed him, opened him, and ate him, making a solemn sacrifice of him."

This general description of the custom may now be illustrated by particular examples. Thus at the festival called *Toxcatl*, the greatest festival of the Mexican year, a young man was annually sacrificed in the character of *Tezcatlipoca*, "the god of gods," after having been maintained and worshipped as that great deity in person for a whole year. According to the old Franciscan monk Sahagun, our best authority on the Aztec religion, the sacrifice of the human god fell at Easter or a few days later, so that, if he is right, it would correspond in date as well as in character to the Christian festival of the death and resurrection of the Redeemer. More exactly he tells us that the sacrifice took place on the first day of the fifth Aztec month, which according to him began on the twenty-third or twenty-seventh day of April.

At this festival the great god died in the person of one human representative and came to life again in the person of another, who was destined to enjoy the fatal honour of divinity for a year and to perish, like all his predecessors, at the end of it. The young man singled out for this high dignity was carefully chosen from among the captives on the ground of his personal beauty. He had to be of unblemished body, slim as a reed and straight as a pillar, neither too tall nor too short. If through high living he grew too fat, he was obliged to reduce himself by drinking salt water. And in order that he might behave in his lofty station with becoming grace and dignity he was carefully trained to comport himself like a gentleman of the first quality, to speak correctly and elegantly, to play the flute, to smoke cigars and to snuff at flowers with a dandified air. He was honourably lodged in the temple, where the nobles waited on him and paid him homage, bringing him meat and serving him like a prince. The king himself saw to it that he was apparelled in gorgeous attire, "for already he esteemed him as a god." Eagle down was gummed to his head and white cock's feathers were stuck in his hair, which drooped to his girdle. A wreath of flowers like roasted maize crowned his brows, and a garland of the same flowers passed over his shoulders and under his arm-pits. Golden ornaments hung from his nose, golden armlets adorned his arms, golden bells jingled on his legs at every step he took, earrings of turquoise dangled from his ears, bracelets of turquoise bedecked his wrists; necklaces of shells encircled his neck and depended on his breast; he wore a mantle of network, and round his middle a rich waistcloth. When this bejewelled exquisite lounged through the streets playing on his flute, puffing at a cigar, and smelling at a nose-gay, the people whom he met threw themselves on the earth before him and prayed to him with sighs and tears, taking up the dust in their hands and putting it in their mouths in token of the deepest humiliation and subjection. Women came forth with children in their arms and presented them to him, saluting him as a god. For "he passed for our Lord God, the people acknowledged him as the Lord." All who thus worshipped him on his passage he saluted gravely and courteously. Lest he should flee, he was everywhere attended by a guard of eight pages in the royal livery, four of them with shaven crowns like the palace-slaves, and four of them with the flowing locks of warriors; and if he contrived to escape, the captain of the guard had to take his place as the representative of the god and to die in his stead. Twenty days before he was to die, his costume was changed, and four damsels delicately nurtured and bearing the names of four goddesses—the Goddess of Flowers, the Goddess of the Young Maize, the Goddess "Our Mother among the Water," and the Goddess of Salt—were given him to be his brides, and with them he consorted. During the last five days divine honours were showered on the destined victim. The king remained in his palace while the whole court went after the human god. Solemn banquets and dances followed each other in regular succession and at appointed places. On the last day the young

man, attended by his wives and pages, embarked in a canoe covered with a royal canopy and was ferried across the lake to a spot where a little hill rose from the edge of the water. It was called the Mountain of Parting, because there his wives bade him a last farewell. Then, accompanied only by his pages, he repaired to a small and lonely temple by the wayside. Like the Mexican temples in general, it was built in the form of a pyramid, and as the young man ascended the stairs he broke at every step one of the flutes on which he had played in the days of his glory. On reaching the summit he was seized and held down by the priests on his back upon a block of stone, while one of them cut open his breast, thrust his hand into the wound, and wrenching out his heart held it up in sacrifice to the sun. The body of the dead god was not, like the bodies of common victims, sent rolling down the steps of the temple, but was carried down to the foot, where the head was cut off and spitted on a pike. Such was the regular end of the man who personated the greatest god of the Mexican pantheon.

The honour of living for a short time in the character of a god and dying a violent death in the same capacity was not restricted to men in Mexico, women were allowed, or rather compelled, to enjoy the glory and to share the doom as representatives of goddesses. Thus at a great festival in September, which was preceded by a strict fast of seven days, they sanctified a young slave girl of twelve or thirteen years, the prettiest they could find, to represent the Maize Goddess Chicomecohuatl. They invested her with the ornaments of the goddess, putting a mitre on her head and maize-cobs round her neck and in her hands, and fastening a green feather upright on the crown of her head to imitate an ear of maize. This they did, we are told, in order to signify that the maize was almost ripe at the time of the festival, but because it was still tender they chose a girl of tender years to play the part of the Maize Goddess. The whole long day they led the poor child in all her finery, with the green plume nodding on her head, from house to house dancing merrily to cheer people after the dulness and privations of the fast.

In the evening all the people assembled at the temple, the courts of which they lit up by a multitude of lanterns and candles. There they passed the night without sleeping, and at midnight, while the trumpets, flutes, and horns discoursed solemn music, a portable framework or palanquin was brought forth, bedecked with festoons of maize-cobs and peppers and filled with seeds of all sorts. This the bearers set down at the door of the chamber in which the wooden image of the goddess stood. Now the chamber was adorned and wreathed, both outside and inside, with wreaths of maize-cobs, peppers, pumpkins, roses, and seeds of every kind, a wonder to behold, the whole floor was covered deep with these verdant offerings of the pious. When the music ceased, a solemn procession came forth of priests and dignitaries, with flaring lights and smoking censers, leading in their midst the girl who played the part of the goddess. Then they made

her mount the framework, where she stood upright on the maize and peppers and pumpkins with which it was strewed, her hands resting on two banisters to keep her from falling. Then the priests swung the smoking censers round her, the music struck up again, and while it played, a great dignitary of the temple suddenly stepped up to her with a razor in his hand and adroitly shore off the green feather she wore on her head, together with the hair in which it was fastened, snipping the lock off by the root. The feather and the hair he then presented to the wooden image of the goddess with great solemnity and elaborate ceremonies, weeping and giving her thanks for the fruits of the earth and the abundant crops which she had bestowed on the people that year, and as he wept and prayed, all the people, standing in the courts of the temple, wept and prayed with him. When that ceremony was over, the girl descended from the framework and was escorted to the place where she was to spend the rest of the night. But all the people kept watch in the courts of the temple by the light of torches till break of day.

The morning being come, and the courts of the temple being still crowded by the multitude, who would have deemed it sacrilege to quit the precincts, the priests again brought forth the damsel attired in the costume of the goddess, with the mitre on her head and the cobs of maize about her neck. Again she mounted the portable framework or palanquin and stood on it, supporting herself by her hands on the banisters. Then the elders of the temple lifted it on their shoulders, and while some swung burning censers and others played on instruments or sang, they carried it in procession through the great courtyard to the hall of the god Huitzilopochtli and then back to the chamber, where stood the wooden image of the Maize Goddess, whom the girl personated. There they caused the damsel to descend from the palanquin and to stand on the heaps of corn and vegetables that had been spread in profusion on the floor of the sacred chamber. While she stood there all the elders and nobles came in a line, one behind the other, carrying saucers full of dry and clotted blood which they had drawn from their ears by way of penance during the seven days' fast. One by one they squatted on their haunches before her, which was the equivalent of falling on their knees with us, and scraping the crust of blood from the saucer cast it down before her as an offering in return for the benefits which she, as the embodiment of the Maize Goddess, had conferred upon them. When the men had thus humbly offered their blood to the human representative of the goddess, the women, forming a long line, did so likewise, each of them dropping on her hams before the girl and scraping her blood from the saucer. The ceremony lasted a long time, for great and small, young and old, all without exception had to pass before the incarnate deity and make their offering. When it was over, the people returned home with glad hearts to feast on flesh and viands of every sort as merrily, we are told, as good Christians at Easter partake of meat and other carnal mercies after the long abstinence of Lent. And when they had eaten and

drunk their fill and rested after the night watch, they returned quite refreshed to the temple to see the end of the festival. And the end of the festival was this. The multitude being assembled, the priests solemnly incensed the girl who personated the goddess; then they threw her on her back on the heap of corn and seeds, cut off her head, caught the gushing blood in a tub, and sprinkled the blood on the wooden image of the goddess, the walls of the chamber, and the offerings of corn, peppers, pumpkins, seeds, and vegetables which cumbered the floor. After that they flayed the headless trunk, and one of the priests made shift to squeeze himself into the bloody skin. Having done so they clad him in all the robes which the girl had worn, they put the mitre on his head, the necklace of golden maize-cobs about his neck, the maize-cobs of feathers and gold in his hands, and thus arrayed they led him forth in public, all of them dancing to the tuck of drum, while he acted as fogleman, skipping and posturing at the head of the procession as briskly as he could be expected to do, incommoded as he was by the tight and clammy skin of the girl and by her clothes, which must have been much too small for a grown man.

In the foregoing custom the identification of the young girl with the Maize Goddess appears to be complete. The golden maize-cobs which she wore round her neck, the artificial maize-cobs which she carried in her hands, the green feather which was stuck in her hair in imitation (we are told) of a green ear of maize, all set her forth as a personification of the corn-spirit, and we are expressly informed that she was specially chosen as a young girl to represent the young maize, which at the time of the festival had not yet fully ripened. Further, her identification with the corn and the corn-goddess was clearly announced by making her stand on the heaps of maize and there receive the homage and blood-offerings of the whole people, who thereby returned her thanks for the benefits which in her character of a divinity she was supposed to have conferred upon them. Once more, the practice of beheading her on a heap of corn and seeds and sprinkling her blood, not only on the image of the Maize Goddess, but on the piles of maize, peppers, pumpkins, seeds, and vegetables, can seemingly have had no other object but to quicken and strengthen the crops of corn and the fruits of the earth in general by infusing into their representatives the blood of the Corn Goddess herself. The analogy of this Mexican sacrifice, the meaning of which appears to be indisputable, may be allowed to strengthen the interpretation which I have given of other human sacrifices offered for the crops. If the Mexican girl, whose blood was sprinkled on the maize, indeed personated the Maize Goddess, it becomes more than ever probable that the girl whose blood the Pawnees similarly sprinkled on the seed corn personated in like manner the female Spirit of the Corn, and so with the other human beings whom other races have slaughtered for the sake of promoting the growth of the crops.

Lastly, the concluding act of the sacred drama, in which the body of the dead Maize Goddess was flayed and her skin worn, together

with all her sacred insignia, by a man who danced before the people in this grim attire, seems to be best explained on the hypothesis that it was intended to ensure that the divine death should be immediately followed by the divine resurrection. If that was so, we may infer with some degree of probability that the practice of killing a human representative of a deity has commonly, perhaps always, been regarded merely as a means of perpetuating the divine energies in the fulness of youthful vigour, untainted by the weakness and frailty of age, from which they must have suffered if the deity had been allowed to die a natural death.

These Mexican rites suffice to prove that human sacrifices of the sort I suppose to have prevailed at Aricia were, as a matter of fact, regularly offered by a people whose level of culture was probably not inferior, if indeed it was not distinctly superior, to that occupied by the Italian races at the early period to which the origin of the Arician priesthood must be referred. The positive and indubitable evidence of the prevalence of such sacrifices in one part of the world may reasonably be allowed to strengthen the probability of their prevalence in places for which the evidence is less full and trustworthy. Taken all together, the facts which we have passed in review seem to show that the custom of killing men whom their worshippers regard as divine has prevailed in many parts of the world.

## CHAPTER LX

### BETWEEN HEAVEN AND EARTH

§ 1 *Not to touch the Earth* —At the outset of this book two questions were proposed for answer. Why had the priest of Aricia to slay his predecessor? And why, before doing so, had he to pluck the Golden Bough? Of these two questions the first has now been answered. The priest of Aricia, if I am right, was one of those sacred kings or human divinities on whose life the welfare of the community and even the course of nature in general are believed to be intimately dependent. It does not appear that the subjects or worshippers of such a spiritual potentate form to themselves any very clear notion of the exact relationship in which they stand to him, probably their ideas on the point are vague and fluctuating, and we should err if we attempted to define the relationship with logical precision. All that the people know, or rather imagine, is that somehow they themselves, their cattle, and their crops are mysteriously bound up with their divine king, so that according as he is well or ill the community is healthy or sickly, the flocks and herds thrive or languish with disease, and the fields yield an abundant or a scanty harvest. The worst evil which they can conceive of is the natural death of their ruler, whether he succumb to sickness or old age, for in the opinion of his followers such a death

would entail the most disastrous consequences on themselves and their possessions, fatal epidemics would sweep away man and beast, the earth would refuse her increase, nay, the very frame of nature itself might be dissolved. To guard against these catastrophes it is necessary to put the king to death while he is still in the full bloom of his divine manhood, in order that his sacred life, transmitted in unabated force to his successor, may renew its youth, and thus by successive transmissions through a perpetual line of vigorous incarnations may remain eternally fresh and young, a pledge and security that men and animals shall in like manner renew their youth by a perpetual succession of generations, and that seedtime and harvest, and summer and winter, and rain and sunshine shall never fail. That, if my conjecture is right, was why the priest of Aricia, the King of the Wood at Nemi, had regularly to perish by the sword of his successor.

But we have still to ask, What was the Golden Bough? and why had each candidate for the Arician priesthood to pluck it before he could slay the priest? These questions I will now try to answer.

It will be well to begin by noticing two of those rules or taboos by which, as we have seen, the life of divine kings or priests is regulated. The first of the rules to which I would call the reader's attention is that the divine personage may not touch the ground with his foot. This rule was observed by the supreme pontiff of the Zapotecs in Mexico, he profaned his sanctity if he so much as touched the ground with his foot. Montezuma, emperor of Mexico, never set foot on the ground, he was always carried on the shoulders of noblemen, and if he lighted anywhere they laid rich tapestry for him to walk upon. For the Mikado of Japan to touch the ground with his foot was a shameful degradation, indeed, in the sixteenth century, it was enough to deprive him of his office. Outside his palace he was carried on men's shoulders, within it he walked on exquisitely wrought mats. The king and queen of Tahiti might not touch the ground anywhere but within their hereditary domains, for the ground on which they trod became sacred. In travelling from place to place they were carried on the shoulders of sacred men. They were always accompanied by several pairs of these sanctified attendants, and when it became necessary to change their bearers, the king and queen vaulted on to the shoulders of their new bearers without letting their feet touch the ground. It was an evil omen if the king of Dosuma touched the ground, and he had to perform an expiatory ceremony. Within his palace the king of Persia walked on carpets on which no one else might tread, outside of it he was never seen on foot but only in a chariot or on horseback. In old days the king of Siam never set foot upon the earth, but was carried on a throne of gold from place to place. Formerly neither the kings of Uganda, nor their mothers, nor their queens might walk on foot outside of the spacious enclosures in which they lived. Whenever they went forth they were carried on the shoulders of men of the Buffalo clan, several of whom accompanied any of these royal personages on a journey and took it in turn to bear



the burden The king sat astride the bearer's neck with a leg over each shoulder and his feet tucked under the bearer's arms When one of these royal carriers grew tired he shot the king on to the shoulders of a second man without allowing the royal feet to touch the ground In this way they went at a great pace and travelled long distances in a day, when the king was on a journey The bearers had a special hut in the king's enclosure in order to be at hand the moment they were wanted Among the Bakuba, or rather Bushongo, a nation in the southern region of the Congo, down to a few years ago persons of the royal blood were forbidden to touch the ground, they must sit on a hide, a chair, or the back of a slave, who crouched on hands and feet; their feet rested on the feet of others When they travelled they were carried on the backs of men, but the king journeyed in a litter supported on shafts. Among the Ibo people about Awka, in Southern Nigeria, the priest of the Earth has to observe many taboos, for example, he may not see a corpse, and if he meets one on the road he must hide his eyes with his wristlet He must abstain from many foods, such as eggs, birds of all sorts, mutton, dog, bush-buck, and so forth He may neither wear nor touch a mask, and no masked man may enter his house If a dog enters his house, it is killed and thrown out As priest of the Earth he may not sit on the bare ground, nor eat things that have fallen on the ground, nor may earth be thrown at him According to ancient Brahmanic ritual a king at his inauguration trod on a tiger's skin and a golden plate, he was shod with shoes of boar's skin, and so long as he lived thereafter he might not stand on the earth with his bare feet

But besides persons who are permanently sacred or tabooed and are therefore permanently forbidden to touch the ground with their feet, there are others who enjoy the character of sanctity or taboo only on certain occasions, and to whom accordingly the prohibition in question only applies at the definite seasons during which they exhale the odour of sanctity Thus among the Kayans or Bahaus of Central Borneo, while the priestesses are engaged in the performance of certain rites they may not step on the ground, and boards are laid for them to tread on Warriors, again, on the war-path are surrounded, so to say, by an atmosphere of taboo, hence some Indians of North America might not sit on the bare ground the whole time they were out on a warlike expedition In Laos the hunting of elephants gives rise to many taboos, one of them is that the chief hunter may not touch the earth with his foot Accordingly, when he alights from his elephant, the others spread a carpet of leaves for him to step upon

Apparently holiness, magical virtue, taboo, or whatever we may call that mysterious quality which is supposed to pervade sacred or tabooed persons, is conceived by the primitive philosopher as a physical substance or fluid, with which the sacred man is charged just as a Leyden jar is charged with electricity, and exactly as the electricity in the jar can be discharged by contact with a good conductor, so the holiness or magical virtue in the man can be discharged and drained

away by contact with the earth, which on this theory serves as an excellent conductor for the magical fluid. Hence in order to preserve the charge from running to waste, the sacred or tabooed personage must be carefully prevented from touching the ground, in electrical language he must be insulated, if he is not to be emptied of the precious substance or fluid with which he, as a vial, is filled to the brim. And in many cases apparently the insulation of the tabooed person is recommended as a precaution not merely for his own sake but for the sake of others, for since the virtue of holiness or taboo is, so to say, a powerful explosive which the smallest touch may detonate, it is necessary in the interest of the general safety to keep it within narrow bounds, lest breaking out it should blast, blight, and destroy whatever it comes into contact with.

§ 2 *Not to see the Sun*—The second rule to be here noted is that the sun may not shine upon the divine person. This rule was observed both by the Mikado and by the pontiff of the Zapotecs. The latter “was looked upon as a god whom the earth was not worthy to hold, nor the sun to shine upon.” The Japanese would not allow that the Mikado should expose his sacred person to the open air, and the sun was not thought worthy to shine on his head. The Indians of Granada, in South America, “kept those who were to be rulers or commanders, whether men or women, locked up for several years when they were children, some of them seven years, and this so close that they were not to see the sun, for if they should happen to see it they forfeited their lordship, eating certain sorts of food appointed, and those who were their keepers at certain times went into their retreat or prison and scourged them severely.” Thus, for example, the heir to the throne of Bogota, who was not the son but the sister’s son of the king, had to undergo a rigorous training from his infancy. He lived in complete retirement in a temple, where he might not see the sun nor eat salt nor converse with a woman. He was surrounded by guards who observed his conduct and noted all his actions. If he broke a single one of the rules laid down for him, he was deemed infamous and forfeited all his rights to the throne. So, too, the heir to the kingdom of Sogamoso, before succeeding to the crown, had to fast for seven years in the temple, being shut up in the dark and not allowed to see the sun or light. The prince who was to become Inca of Peru had to fast for a month without seeing light.

§ 3 *The Seclusion of Girls at Puberty*—Now it is remarkable that the foregoing two rules—not to touch the ground and not to see the sun—are observed either separately or conjointly by girls at puberty in many parts of the world. Thus amongst the negroes of Loango girls at puberty are confined in separate huts, and they may not touch the ground with any part of their bare body. Among the Zulus and kindred tribes of South Africa, when the first signs of puberty show themselves “while a girl is walking, gathering wood, or working in the field, she runs to the river and hides herself among the reeds for the day, so as not to be seen by men. She covers her head carefully with

her blanket that the sun may not shine on it and shrivel her up into a withered skeleton, as would result from exposure to the sun's beams After dark she returns to her home and is secluded " in a hut for some time With the Awa-nkonde, a tribe at the northern end of Lake Nyassa, it is a rule that after her first menstruation a girl must be kept apart, with a few companions of her own sex, in a darkened house The floor is covered with dry banana leaves, but no fire may be lit in the house, which is called " the house of the Awasungu," that is, " of maidens who have no hearts "

In New Ireland girls are confined for four or five years in small cages, being kept in the dark and not allowed to set foot on the ground The custom has been thus described by an eye-witness " I heard from a teacher about some strange custom connected with some of the young girls here, so I asked the chief to take me to the house where they were The house was about twenty-five feet in length, and stood in a reed and bamboo enclosure, across the entrance to which a bundle of dried grass was suspended to show that it was strictly ' *tabu* ' Inside the house were three conical structures about seven or eight feet in height, and about ten or twelve feet in circumference at the bottom, and for about four feet from the ground, at which point they tapered off to a point at the top These cages were made of the broad leaves of the pandanus-tree, sewn quite close together so that no light and little or no air could enter On one side of each is an opening which is closed by a double door of plaited cocoa-nut tree and pandanus-tree leaves About three feet from the ground there is a stage of bamboos which forms the floor In each of these cages we were told there was a young woman confined, each of whom had to remain for at least four or five years, without ever being allowed to go outside the house. I could scarcely credit the story when I heard it, the whole thing seemed too horrible to be true I spoke to the chief, and told him that I wished to see the inside of the cages, and also to see the girls that I might make them a present of a few beads He told me that it was ' *tabu*,' forbidden for any men but their own relations to look at them, but I suppose the promised beads acted as an inducement, and so he sent away for some old lady who had charge, and who alone is allowed to open the doors While we were waiting we could hear the girls talking to the chief in a querulous way as if objecting to something or expressing their fears The old woman came at length and certainly she did not seem a very pleasant jailor or guardian, nor did she seem to favour the request of the chief to allow us to see the girls, as she regarded us with anything but pleasant looks However, she had to undo the door when the chief told her to do so, and then the girls peeped out at us, and, when told to do so, they held out their hands for the beads I, however, purposely sat at some distance away and merely held out the beads to them, as I wished to draw them quite outside, that I might inspect the inside of the cages This desire of mine gave rise to another difficulty, as these girls were not allowed to put their feet to the ground all the time they were confined in these

places. However, they wished to get the beads, and so the old lady had to go outside and collect a lot of pieces of wood and bamboo, which she placed on the ground, and then going to one of the girls, she helped her down and held her hand as she stepped from one piece of wood to another until she came near enough to get the beads I held out to her. I then went to inspect the inside of the cage out of which she had come, but could scarcely put my head inside of it, the atmosphere was so hot and stifling. It was clean and contained nothing but a few short lengths of bamboo for holding water. There was only room for the girl to sit or lie down in a crouched position on the bamboo platform, and when the doors are shut it must be nearly or quite dark inside. The girls are never allowed to come out except once a day to bathe in a dish or wooden bowl placed close to each cage. They say that they perspire profusely. They are placed in these stifling cages when quite young, and must remain there until they are young women, when they are taken out and have each a great marriage feast provided for them. One of them was about fourteen or fifteen years old, and the chief told us that she had been there for five years, but would soon be taken out now. The other two were about eight and ten years old, and they have to stay there for several years longer."

In Kabadi, a district of British New Guinea, "daughters of chiefs, when they are about twelve or thirteen years of age, are kept indoors for two or three years, never being allowed, under any pretence, to descend from the house, and the house is so shaded that the sun cannot shine on them." Among the Yabim and Bukaua, two neighbouring and kindred tribes on the coast of Northern New Guinea, a girl at puberty is secluded for some five or six weeks in an inner part of the house, but she may not sit on the floor, lest her uncleanness should cleave to it, so a log of wood is placed for her to squat on. Moreover, she may not touch the ground with her feet, hence if she is obliged to quit the house for a short time, she is muffled up in mats and walks on two halves of a coco-nut shell, which are fastened like sandals to her feet by creeping plants. Among the Ot Danoms of Borneo girls at the age of eight or ten years are shut up in a little room or cell of the house, and cut off from all intercourse with the world for a long time. The cell, like the rest of the house, is raised on piles above the ground, and is lit by a single small window opening on a lonely place, so that the girl is in almost total darkness. She may not leave the room on any pretext whatever, not even for the most necessary purposes. None of her family may see her all the time she is shut up, but a single slave woman is appointed to wait on her. During her lonely confinement, which often lasts seven years, the girl occupies herself in weaving mats or with other handiwork. Her bodily growth is stunted by the long want of exercise, and when, on attaining womanhood, she is brought out, her complexion is pale and wax-like. She is now shown the sun, the earth, the water, the trees, and the flowers, as if she were newly born. Then a great feast is made, a slave is killed, and the girl is smeared with his blood. In Ceram girls at puberty were formerly

shut up by themselves in a hut which was kept dark In Yap, one of the Caroline Islands, should a girl be overtaken by her first menstruation on the public road, she may not sit down on the earth, but must beg for a coco-nut shell to put under her She is shut up for several days in a small hut at a distance from her parents' house, and afterwards she is bound to sleep for a hundred days in one of the special houses which are provided for the use of menstuous women.

In the island of Mabuiag, Torres Straits, when the signs of puberty appear on a girl, a circle of bushes is made in a dark corner of the house Here, decked with shoulder-belts, armlets, leglets just below the knees, and anklets, wearing a chaplet on her head, and shell ornaments in her ears, on her chest, and on her back, she squats in the midst of the bushes, which are piled so high round about her that only her head is visible. In this state of seclusion she must remain for three months All this time the sun may not shine upon her, but at night she is allowed to slip out of the hut, and the bushes that hedge her in are then changed She may not feed herself or handle food, but is fed by one or two old women, her maternal aunts, who are especially appointed to look after her One of these women cooks food for her at a special fire in the forest The girl is forbidden to eat turtle or turtle eggs during the season when the turtles are breeding, but no vegetable food is refused her No man, not even her own father, may come into the house while her seclusion lasts, for if her father saw her at this time he would certainly have bad luck in his fishing, and would probably smash his canoe the very next time he went out in it At the end of the three months she is carried down to a fresh-water creek by her attendants, hanging on to their shoulders in such a way that her feet do not touch the ground, while the women of the tribe form a ring round her, and thus escort her to the beach Arrived at the shore, she is stripped of her ornaments, and the bearers stagger with her into the creek, where they immerse her, and all the other women join in splashing water over both the girl and her bearers When they come out of the water one of the two attendants makes a heap of grass for her charge to squat upon The other runs to the reef, catches a small crab, tears off its claws, and hastens back with them to the creek Here in the meantime a fire has been kindled, and the claws are roasted at it The girl is then fed by her attendants with the roasted claws After that she is freshly decorated, and the whole party marches back to the village in a single rank, the girl walking in the centre between her two old aunts, who hold her by the wrists The husbands of her aunts now receive her and lead her into the house of one of them, where all partake of food, and the girl is allowed once more to feed herself in the usual manner A dance follows, in which the girl takes a prominent part, dancing between the husbands of the two aunts who had charge of her in her retirement

Among the Yaraikanna tribe of Cape York Peninsula, in Northern Queensland, a girl at puberty is said to live by herself for a month or six weeks, no man may see her, though any woman may. She

stays in a hut or shelter specially made for her, on the floor of which she lies supine. She may not see the sun, and towards sunset she must keep her eyes shut until the sun has gone down, otherwise it is thought that her nose will be diseased. During her seclusion she may eat nothing that lives in salt water, or a snake would kill her. An old woman waits upon her and supplies her with roots, yams, and water. Some Australian tribes are wont to bury their girls at such seasons more or less deeply in the ground, perhaps in order to hide them from the light of the sun.

Among the Indians of California a girl at her first menstruation "was thought to be possessed of a particular degree of supernatural power, and this was not always regarded as entirely defiling or malevolent. Often, however, there was a strong feeling of the power of evil inherent in her condition. Not only was she secluded from her family and the community, but an attempt was made to seclude the world from her. One of the injunctions most strongly laid upon her was not to look about her. She kept her head bowed and was forbidden to see the world and the sun. Some tribes covered her with a blanket. Many of the customs in this connexion resembled those of the North Pacific Coast most strongly, such as the prohibition to the girl to touch or scratch her head with her hand, a special implement being furnished her for the purpose. Sometimes she could eat only when fed and in other cases fasted altogether."

Among the Chinook Indians who inhabited the coast of Washington State, when a chief's daughter attained to puberty, she was hidden for five days from the view of the people; she might not look at them nor at the sky, nor might she pick berries. It was believed that if she were to look at the sky, the weather would be bad, that if she picked berries, it would rain, and that when she hung her towel of cedar-bark on a spruce-tree, the tree withered up at once. She went out of the house by a separate door and bathed in a creek far from the village. She fasted for some days, and for many days more she might not eat fresh food.

Amongst the Aht or Nootka Indians of Vancouver Island, when girls reach puberty they are placed in a sort of gallery in the house "and are there surrounded completely with mats, so that neither the sun nor any fire can be seen. In this cage they remain for several days. Water is given them, but no food. The longer a girl remains in this retirement the greater honour is it to the parents, but she is disgraced for life if it is known that she has seen fire or the sun during this initiatory ordeal." Pictures of the mythical thunder-bird are painted on the screens behind which she hides. During her seclusion she may neither move nor lie down, but must always sit in a squatting posture. She may not touch her hair with her hands, but is allowed to scratch her head with a comb or a piece of bone provided for the purpose. To scratch her body is also forbidden, as it is believed that every scratch would leave a scar. For eight months after reaching maturity she may not eat any fresh food, particularly salmon, moreover, she must eat by herself, and use a cup and dish of her own.

In the Tsetsaut tribe of British Columbia a girl at puberty wears a large hat of skin which comes down over her face and screens it from the sun. It is believed that if she were to expose her face to the sun or to the sky, rain would fall. The hat protects her face also against the fire, which ought not to strike her skin; to shield her hands she wears mittens. In her mouth she carries the tooth of an animal to prevent her own teeth from becoming hollow. For a whole year she may not see blood unless her face is blackened, otherwise she would grow blind. For two years she wears the hat and lives in a hut by herself, although she is allowed to see other people. At the end of two years a man takes the hat from her head and throws it away. In the Bilqula or Bella Coola tribe of British Columbia, when a girl attains puberty she must stay in the shed which serves as her bedroom, where she has a separate fireplace. She is not allowed to descend to the main part of the house, and may not sit by the fire of the family. For four days she is bound to remain motionless in a sitting posture. She fasts during the day, but is allowed a little food and drink very early in the morning. After the four days' seclusion she may leave her room, but only through a separate opening cut in the floor, for the houses are raised on piles. She may not yet come into the chief room. In leaving the house she wears a large hat which protects her face against the rays of the sun. It is believed that if the sun were to shine on her face her eyes would suffer. She may pick berries on the hills, but may not come near the river or sea for a whole year. Were she to eat fresh salmon she would lose her senses, or her mouth would be changed into a long beak.

Amongst the Tlingit (Thlinket) or Kolosh Indians of Alaska, when a girl showed signs of womanhood she used to be confined to a little hut or cage, which was completely blocked up with the exception of a small air-hole. In this dark and filthy abode she had to remain a year, without fire, exercise, or associates. Only her mother and a female slave might supply her with nourishment. Her food was put in at the little window, she had to drink out of the wing-bone of a white-headed eagle. The time of her seclusion was afterwards reduced in some places to six or three months or even less. She had to wear a sort of hat with long flaps, that her gaze might not pollute the sky, for she was thought unfit for the sun to shine upon, and it was imagined that her look would destroy the luck of a hunter, fisher, or gambler, turn things to stone, and do other mischief. At the end of her confinement her old clothes were burnt, new ones were made, and a feast was given, at which a slit was cut in her under lip parallel to the mouth, and a piece of wood or shell was inserted to keep the aperture open. Among the Koniags, an Esquimau people of Alaska, a girl at puberty was placed in a small hut in which she had to remain on her hands and feet for six months, then the hut was enlarged a little so as to allow her to straighten her back, but in this posture she had to remain for six months more. All this time she was regarded as an unclean being with whom no one might hold intercourse.

When symptoms of puberty appeared on a girl for the first time, the Guaranis of Southern Brazil, on the borders of Paraguay, used to sew her up in her hammock, leaving only a small opening in it to allow her to breathe. In this condition, wrapt up and shrouded like a corpse, she was kept for two or three days or so long as the symptoms lasted, and during this time she had to observe a most rigorous fast. After that she was entrusted to a matron, who cut the girl's hair and enjoined her to abstain most strictly from eating flesh of any kind until her hair should be grown long enough to hide her ears. In similar circumstances the Chiriguanos of South-eastern Bolivia hoisted the girl in her hammock to the roof, where she stayed for a month. The second month the hammock was let half-way down from the roof, and in the third month old women, armed with sticks, entered the hut and ran about striking everything they met, saying they were hunting the snake that had wounded the girl.

Among the Matacos or Mataguayos, an Indian tribe of the Gran Chaco, a girl at puberty has to remain in seclusion for some time. She lies covered up with branches or other things in a corner of the hut, seeing no one and speaking to no one, and during this time she may eat neither flesh nor fish. Meantime a man beats a drum in front of the house. Among the Yuracares, an Indian tribe of Eastern Bolivia, when a girl perceives the signs of puberty, her father constructs a little hut of palm leaves near the house. In this cabin he shuts up his daughter so that she cannot see the light, and there she remains fasting rigorously for four days.

Amongst the Macusis of British Guiana, when a girl shows the first signs of puberty, she is hung in a hammock at the highest point of the hut. For the first few days she may not leave the hammock by day, but at night she must come down, light a fire, and spend the night beside it, else she would break out in sores on her neck, throat, and other parts of her body. So long as the symptoms are at their height, she must fast rigorously. When they have abated, she may come down and take up her abode in a little compartment that is made for her in the darkest corner of the hut. In the morning she may cook her food, but it must be at a separate fire and in a vessel of her own. After about ten days the magician comes and undoes the spell by muttering charms and breathing on her and on the more valuable of the things with which she has come in contact. The pots and drinking-vessels which she used are broken and the fragments buried. After her first bath, the girl must submit to be beaten by her mother with thin rods without uttering a cry. At the end of the second period she is again beaten, but not afterwards. She is now "clean," and can mix again with people. Other Indians of Guiana, after keeping the girl in her hammock at the top of the hut for a month, expose her to certain large ants, whose bite is very painful. Sometimes, in addition to being stung with ants, the sufferer has to fast day and night so long as she remains slung up on high in her hammock, so that when she comes down she is reduced to a skeleton.



When a Hindoo maiden reaches maturity she is kept in a dark room for four days, and is forbidden to see the sun. She is regarded as unclean; no one may touch her. Her diet is restricted to boiled rice, milk, sugar, curd, and tamarind without salt. On the morning of the fifth day she goes to a neighbouring tank, accompanied by five women whose husbands are alive. Smeared with turmeric water, they all bathe and return home, throwing away the mat and other things that were in the room. The Rarhi Brahmans of Bengal compel a girl at puberty to live alone, and do not allow her to see the face of any male. For three days she remains shut up in a dark room, and has to undergo certain penances. Fish, flesh, and sweetmeats are forbidden her, she must live upon rice and ghee. Among the Tiyans of Malabar a girl is thought to be polluted for four days from the beginning of her first menstruation. During this time she must keep to the north side of the house, where she sleeps on a grass mat of a particular kind, in a room festooned with garlands of young coco-nut leaves. Another girl keeps her company and sleeps with her, but she may not touch any other person, tree or plant. Further, she may not see the sky, and woe betide her if she catches sight of a crow or a cat! Her diet must be strictly vegetarian, without salt, tamarinds, or chillies. She is armed against evil spirits by a knife, which is placed on the mat or carried on her person.

In Cambodia a girl at puberty is put to bed under a mosquito curtain, where she should stay a hundred days. Usually, however, four, five, ten, or twenty days are thought enough, and even this, in a hot climate and under the close meshes of the curtain, is sufficiently trying. According to another account, a Cambodian maiden at puberty is said to "enter into the shade." During her retirement, which, according to the rank and position of her family, may last any time from a few days to several years, she has to observe a number of rules, such as not to be seen by a strange man, not to eat flesh or fish, and so on. She goes nowhere, not even to the pagoda. But this state of seclusion is discontinued during eclipses, at such times she goes forth and pays her devotions to the monster who is supposed to cause eclipses by catching the heavenly bodies between his teeth. This permission to break her rule of retirement and appear abroad during an eclipse seems to show how literally the injunction is interpreted which forbids maidens entering on womanhood to look upon the sun.

A superstition so widely diffused as this might be expected to leave traces in legends and folk-tales. And it has done so. The old Greek story of Danae, who was confined by her father in a subterranean chamber or a brazen tower, but impregnated by Zeus, who reached her in the shape of a shower of gold, perhaps belongs to this class of tales. It has its counterpart in the legend which the Kirghiz of Siberia tell of their ancestry. A certain Khan had a fair daughter, whom he kept in a dark iron house, that no man might see her. An old woman tended her, and when the girl was grown

to maidenhood she asked the old woman, "Where do you go so often?" "My child," said the old dame, "there is a bright world. In that bright world your father and mother live, and all sorts of people live there. That is where I go." The maiden said, "Good mother, I will tell nobody, but show me that bright world." So the old woman took the girl out of the iron house. But when she saw the bright world, the girl tottered and fainted, and the eye of God fell upon her, and she conceived. Her angry father put her in a golden chest and sent her floating away (fairy gold can float in fairyland) over the wide sea. The shower of gold in the Greek story, and the eye of God in the Kirghiz legend, probably stand for sunlight and the sun. The idea that women may be impregnated by the sun is not uncommon in legends, and there are even traces of it in marriage customs.

§ 4 *Reasons for the Seclusion of Girls at Puberty*—The motive for the restraints so commonly imposed on girls at puberty is the deeply engrained dread which primitive man universally entertains of menstruous blood. He fears it at all times but especially on its first appearance, hence the restrictions under which women lie at their first menstruation are usually more stringent than those which they have to observe at any subsequent recurrence of the mysterious flow. Some evidence of the fear and of the customs based on it has been cited in an earlier part of this work, but as the terror, for it is nothing less, which the phenomenon periodically strikes into the mind of the savage has deeply influenced his life and institutions, it may be well to illustrate the subject with some further examples.

Thus in the Encounter Bay tribe of South Australia there is, or used to be, a "superstition which obliges a woman to separate herself from the camp at the time of her monthly illness, when, if a young man or boy should approach, she calls out, and he immediately makes a circuit to avoid her. If she is neglectful upon this point, she exposes herself to scolding, and sometimes to severe beating by her husband or nearest relation, because the boys are told from their infancy that if they see the blood they will early become grey-headed, and their strength will fail prematurely." The Dieri of Central Australia believe that if women at these times were to eat fish or bathe in a river the fish would all die and the water would dry up. The Arunta of the same region forbid menstruous women to gather the *irriakura* bulbs, which form a staple article of diet for both men and women. They think that were a woman to break this rule, the supply of bulbs would fail.

In some Australian tribes the seclusion of menstruous women was even more rigid, and was enforced by severer penalties than a scolding or a beating. Thus "there is a regulation relating to camps in the Wakelbura tribe which forbids the women coming into the encampment by the same path as the men. Any violation of this rule would in a large camp be punished with death. The reason for this is the dread with which they regard the menstrual period of women. During such a time, a woman is kept entirely away from

the camp, half a mile at least. A woman in such a condition has boughs of some tree of her totem tied round her loins, and is constantly watched and guarded, for it is thought that should any male be so unfortunate as to see a woman in such a condition, he would die. If such a woman were to let herself be seen by a man, she would probably be put to death. When the woman has recovered, she is painted red and white, her head covered with feathers, and returns to the camp."

In Muralug, one of the Torres Straits Islands, a menstruous woman may not eat anything that lives in the sea, else the natives believe that the fisheries would fail. In Galela, to the west of New Guinea, women at their monthly periods may not enter a tobacco-field, or the plants would be attacked by disease. The Minangkabauers of Sumatra are persuaded that if a woman in her unclean state were to go near a rice-field the crop would be spoiled.

The Bushmen of South Africa think that, by a glance of a girl's eye at the time when she ought to be kept in strict retirement, men become fixed in whatever position they happen to occupy, with whatever they were holding in their hands, and are changed into trees that talk. Cattle-rearing tribes of South Africa hold that their cattle would die if the milk were drunk by a menstruous woman, and they fear the same disaster if a drop of her blood were to fall on the ground and the oxen were to pass over it. To prevent such a calamity women in general, not menstruous women only, are forbidden to enter the cattle enclosure, and more than that, they may not use the ordinary paths in entering the village or in passing from one hut to another. They are obliged to make circuitous tracks at the back of the huts in order to avoid the ground in the middle of the village where the cattle stand or lie down. These women's tracks may be seen at every Caffre village. Among the Baganda, in like manner, no menstruous woman might drink milk or come into contact with any milk-vessel, and she might not touch anything that belonged to her husband, nor sit on his mat, nor cook his food. If she touched anything of his at such a time it was deemed equivalent to wishing him dead or to actually working magic for his destruction. Were she to handle any article of his, he would surely fall ill, were she to touch his weapons, he would certainly be killed in the next battle. Further, the Baganda would not suffer a menstruous woman to visit a well, if she did so, they feared that the water would dry up, and that she herself would fall sick and die, unless she confessed her fault and the medicine-man made atonement for her. Among the Akikuyu of British East Africa, if a new hut is built in a village and the wife chances to menstruate in it on the day she lights the first fire there, the hut must be broken down and demolished the very next day. The woman may on no account sleep a second night in it, there is a curse both on her and on it.

According to the Talmud, if a woman at the beginning of her period passes between two men, she thereby kills one of them. Peasants

of the Lebanon think that menstruous women are the cause of many misfortunes, their shadow causes flowers to wither and trees to perish, it even arrests the movements of serpents, if one of them mounts a horse, the animal might die or at least be disabled for a long time

The Guayquines of the Orinoco believe that when a woman has her courses, everything upon which she steps will die, and that if a man treads on the place where she has passed, his legs will immediately swell up. Among the Bri-bri Indians of Costa Rica a married woman at her periods uses for plates only banana leaves, which, when she has done with them, she throws away in a sequestered spot, for should a cow find and eat them, the animal would waste away and perish. Also she drinks only out of a special vessel, because any person who should afterwards drink out of the same vessel would infallibly pine away and die

Among most tribes of North American Indians the custom was that women in their courses retired from the camp or the village and lived during the time of their uncleanness in special huts or shelters which were appropriated to their use. There they dwelt apart, eating and sleeping by themselves, warming themselves at their own fires, and strictly abstaining from all communications with men, who shunned them just as if they were stricken with the plague

Thus, to take examples, the Creek and kindred Indians of the United States compelled women at menstruation to live in separate huts at some distance from the village. There the women had to stay, at the risk of being surprised and cut off by enemies. It was thought "a most horrid and dangerous pollution" to go near the women at such times, and the danger extended to enemies who, if they slew the women, had to cleanse themselves from the pollution by means of certain sacred herbs and roots. The Stseelis Indians of British Columbia imagined that if a menstruous woman were to step over a bundle of arrows, the arrows would thereby be rendered useless and might even cause the death of their owner, and similarly that if she passed in front of a hunter who carried a gun, the weapon would never shoot straight again. Among the Chippeways and other Indians of the Hudson Bay Territory, menstruous women are excluded from the camp, and take up their abode in huts of branches. They wear long hoods, which effectually conceal the head and breast. They may not touch the household furniture nor any objects used by men, for their touch "is supposed to defile them, so that their subsequent use would be followed by certain mischief or misfortune," such as disease or death. They must drink out of a swan's bone. They may not walk on the common paths nor cross the tracks of animals. They "are never permitted to walk on the ice of rivers or lakes, or near the part where the men are hunting beaver, or where a fishing-net is set, for fear of averting their success. They are also prohibited at those times from partaking of the head of any animal, and even from walking in or crossing the track where the head of a deer, moose, beaver, and many other animals

have lately been carried, either on a sledge or on the back. To be guilty of a violation of this custom is considered as of the greatest importance ; because they firmly believe that it would be a means of preventing the hunter from having an equal success in his future excursions." So the Lapps forbid women at menstruation to walk on that part of the shore where the fishers are in the habit of setting out their fish , and the Esquimaux of Bering Strait believe that if hunters were to come near women in their courses they would catch no game. For a like reason the Carrier Indians will not suffer a menstuous woman to cross the tracks of animals , if need be, she is carried over them. They think that if she waded in a stream or a lake, the fish would die.

Amongst the civilised nations of Europe the superstitions which cluster round this mysterious aspect of woman's nature are not less extravagant than those which prevail among savages. In the oldest existing cyclopaedia—the *Natural History* of Pliny—the list of dangers apprehended from menstruation is longer than any furnished by mere barbarians. According to Pliny, the touch of a menstuous woman turned wine to vinegar, blighted crops, killed seedlings, blasted gardens, brought down the fruit from trees, dimmed mirrors, blunted razors, rusted iron and brass (especially at the waning of the moon), killed bees, or at least drove them from their hives, caused mares to miscarry, and so forth. Similarly, in various parts of Europe, it is still believed that if a woman in her courses enters a brewery the beer will turn sour , if she touches beer, wine, vinegar, or milk, it will go bad , if she makes jam, it will not keep , if she mounts a mare, it will miscarry , if she touches buds, they will wither , if she climbs a cherry tree, it will die. In Brunswick people think that if a menstuous woman assists at the killing of a pig the pork will putrefy. In the Greek island of Calymnos a woman at such times may not go to the well to draw water, nor cross a running stream, nor enter the sea. Her presence in a boat is said to raise storms.

Thus the object of secluding women at menstruation is to neutralise the dangerous influences which are supposed to emanate from them at such times. That the danger is believed to be especially great at the first menstruation appears from the unusual precautions taken to isolate girls at this crisis. Two of these precautions have been illustrated above, namely, the rules that the girl may not touch the ground nor see the sun. The general effect of these rules is to keep her suspended, so to say, between heaven and earth. Whether enveloped in her hammock and slung up to the roof, as in South America, or raised above the ground in a dark and narrow cage, as in New Ireland, she may be considered to be out of the way of doing mischief, since, being shut off both from the earth and from the sun, she can poison neither of these great sources of life by her deadly contagion. In short, she is rendered harmless by being, in electrical language, insulated. But the precautions thus taken to isolate or insulate the girl are dictated by a regard for her own safety as well as for the safety of others. For it is thought that she herself would

suffer if she were to neglect the prescribed regimen. Thus Zulu girls, as we have seen, believe that they would shrivel to skeletons if the sun were to shine on them at puberty, and the Macusis imagine that, if a young woman were to transgress the rules, she would suffer from sores on various parts of her body. In short, the girl is viewed as charged with a powerful force which, if not kept within bounds, may prove destructive both to herself and to all with whom she comes in contact. To repress this force within the limits necessary for the safety of all concerned is the object of the taboos in question.

The same explanation applies to the observance of the same rules by divine kings and priests. The uncleanness, as it is called, of girls at puberty and the sanctity of holy men do not, to the primitive mind, differ materially from each other. They are only different manifestations of the same mysterious energy which, like energy in general, is in itself neither good nor bad, but becomes beneficent or maleficent according to its application. Accordingly, if, like girls at puberty, divine personages may neither touch the ground nor see the sun, the reason is, on the one hand, a fear lest their divinity might, at contact with earth or heaven, discharge itself with fatal violence on either, and, on the other hand, an apprehension that the divine being, thus drained of his ethereal virtue, might thereby be incapacitated for the future performance of those magical functions, upon the proper discharge of which the safety of the people and even of the world is believed to hang. Thus the rules in question fall under the head of the taboos which we examined in an earlier part of this book; they are intended to preserve the life of the divine person and with it the life of his subjects and worshippers. Nowhere, it is thought, can his precious yet dangerous life be at once so safe and so harmless as when it is neither in heaven nor on earth, but, as far as possible, suspended between the two.

## CHAPTER LXI

### THE MYTH OF BALDER

A DEITY whose life might in a sense be said to be neither in heaven nor on earth but between the two was the Norse Balder, the good and beautiful god, the son of the great god Odín, and himself the wisest mildest, best beloved of all the immortals. The story of his death, as it is told in the younger or prose *Edda*, runs thus. Once on a time Balder dreamed heavy dreams which seemed to forebode his death. Thereupon the gods held a council and resolved to make him secure against every danger. So the goddess Frigg took an oath from fire and water, iron and all metals, stones and earth, from trees, sicknesses and poisons, and from all four-footed beasts, birds, and creeping things, that they would not hurt Balder. When this was done Balder was

deemed invulnerable, so the gods amused themselves by setting him in their midst, while some shot at him, others hewed at him, and others threw stones at him. But whatever they did, nothing could hurt him; and at this they were all glad. Only Loki, the mischief-maker, was displeased, and he went in the guise of an old woman to Frigg, who told him that the weapons of the gods could not wound Balder, since she had made them all swear not to hurt him. Then Loki asked, "Have all things sworn to spare Balder?" She answered, "East of Walhalla grows a plant called mistletoe, it seemed to me too young to swear." So Loki went and pulled the mistletoe and took it to the assembly of the gods. There he found the blind god Hother standing at the outside of the circle. Loki asked him, "Why do you not shoot at Balder?" Hother answered, "Because I do not see where he stands, besides I have no weapon." Then said Loki, "Do like the rest and show Balder honour, as they all do. I will show you where he stands, and do you shoot at him with this twig." Hother took the mistletoe and threw it at Balder, as Loki directed him. The mistletoe struck Balder and pierced him through and through, and he fell down dead. And that was the greatest misfortune that ever befell gods and men. For a while the gods stood speechless, then they lifted up their voices and wept bitterly. They took Balder's body and brought it to the sea-shore. There stood Balder's ship, it was called Ringhorn, and was the hugest of all ships. The gods wished to launch the ship and to burn Balder's body on it, but the ship would not stir. So they sent for a giantess called Hyrrockin. She came riding on a wolf and gave the ship such a push that fire flashed from the rollers and all the earth shook. Then Balder's body was taken and placed on the funeral pile upon his ship. When his wife Nanna saw that, her heart burst for sorrow and she died. So she was laid on the funeral pile with her husband, and fire was put to it. Balder's horse, too, with all its trappings, was burned on the pile.

Whether he was a real or merely a mythical personage, Balder was worshipped in Norway. On one of the bays of the beautiful Sogne Fiord, which penetrates far into the depths of the solemn Norwegian mountains, with their sombre pine-forests and their lofty cascades dissolving into spray before they reach the dark water of the fiord far below, Balder had a great sanctuary. It was called Balder's Grove. A palisade enclosed the hallowed ground, and within it stood a spacious temple with the images of many gods, but none of them was worshipped with such devotion as Balder. So great was the awe with which the heathen regarded the place that no man might harm another there, nor steal his cattle, nor defile himself with women. But women cared for the images of the gods in the temple, they warmed them at the fire, anointed them with oil, and dried them with cloths.

Whatever may be thought of an historical kernel underlying a mythical husk in the legend of Balder, the details of the story suggest that it belongs to that class of myths which have been dramatised in ritual, or, to put it otherwise, which have been performed as

magical ceremonies for the sake of producing those natural effects which they describe in figurative language. A myth is never so graphic and precise in its details as when it is, so to speak, the book of the words which are spoken and acted by the performers of the sacred rite. That the Norse story of Balder was a myth of this sort will become probable if we can prove that ceremonies resembling the incidents in the tale have been performed by Norsemen and other European peoples. Now the main incidents in the tale are two—first, the pulling of the mistletoe, and second, the death and burning of the god, and both of them may perhaps be found to have had their counterparts in yearly rites observed, whether separately or conjointly, by people in various parts of Europe. These rites will be described and discussed in the following chapters. We shall begin with the annual festivals of fire and shall reserve the pulling of the mistletoe for consideration later on.

## CHAPTER LXII

### THE FIRE-FESTIVALS OF EUROPE

§ 1 *The Fire-festivals in general*—All over Europe the peasants have been accustomed from time immemorial to kindle bonfires on certain days of the year, and to dance round or leap over them. Customs of this kind can be traced back on historical evidence to the Middle Ages, and their analogy to similar customs observed in antiquity goes with strong internal evidence to prove that their origin must be sought in a period long prior to the spread of Christianity. Indeed the earliest proof of their observance in Northern Europe is furnished by the attempts made by Christian synods in the eighth century to put them down as heathenish rites. Not uncommonly effigies are burned in these fires, or a pretence is made of burning a living person in them, and there are grounds for believing that anciently human beings were actually burned on these occasions. A brief view of the customs in question will bring out the traces of human sacrifice, and will serve at the same time to throw light on their meaning.

The seasons of the year when these bonfires are most commonly lit are spring and midsummer, but in some places they are kindled also at the end of autumn or during the course of the winter, particularly on Hallow E'en (the thirty-first of October), Christmas Day, and the Eve of Twelfth Day. Space forbids me to describe all these festivals at length; a few specimens must serve to illustrate their general character. We shall begin with the fire-festivals of spring, which usually fall on the first Sunday of Lent (*Quadragesima* or *Invocavit*), Easter Eve, and May Day.

§ 2 *The Lenten Fires*—The custom of kindling bonfires on the first Sunday in Lent has prevailed in Belgium, the north of France, and many parts of Germany. Thus in the Belgian Ardennes for a week



or a fortnight before the "day of the great fire," as it is called, children go about from farm to farm collecting fuel. At Grand Halleux any one who refuses their request is pursued next day by the children, who try to blacken his face with the ashes of the extinct fire. When the day has come, they cut down bushes, especially juniper and broom, and in the evening great bonfires blaze on all the heights. It is a common saying that seven bonfires should be seen if the village is to be safe from conflagrations. If the Meuse happens to be frozen hard at the time, bonfires are lit also on the ice. At Grand Halleux they set up a pole called *makral*, or "the witch," in the midst of the pile, and the fire is kindled by the man who was last married in the village. In the neighbourhood of Morlanwelz a straw man is burnt in the fire. Young people and children dance and sing round the bonfires, and leap over the embers to secure good crops or a happy marriage within the year, or as a means of guarding themselves against colic. In Brabant on the same Sunday, down to the beginning of the nineteenth century, women and men disguised in female attire used to go with burning torches to the fields, where they danced and sang comic songs for the purpose, as they alleged, of driving away "the wicked sower," who is mentioned in the Gospel for the day. At Pâturages, in the province of Hamaut, down to about 1840 the custom was observed under the name of *Escouvion* or *Scouvion*. Every year on the first Sunday of Lent, which was called the Day of the Little Scouvion, young folks and children used to run with lighted torches through the gardens and orchards. As they ran they cried at the pitch of their voices

*"Bear apples, bear pears, and cherries all black  
To Scouvion!"*

At these words the torch-bearer whirled his blazing brand and hurled it among the branches of the apple-trees, the pear-trees, and the cherry-trees. The next Sunday was called the Day of the Great Scouvion, and the same race with lighted torches among the trees of the orchards was repeated in the afternoon till darkness fell.

In the French department of the Ardennes the whole village used to dance and sing round the bonfires which were lighted on the first Sunday in Lent. Here, too, it was the person last married, sometimes a man and sometimes a woman, who put the match to the fire. The custom is still kept up very commonly in the district. Cats used to be burnt in the fire or roasted to death by being held over it; and while they were burning the shepherds drove their flocks through the smoke and flames as a sure means of guarding them against sickness and witchcraft. In some communes it was believed that the livelier the dance round the fire, the better would be the crops that year.

In the French province of Franche-Comté, to the west of the Jura Mountains, the first Sunday of Lent is known as the Sunday of the Firebrands (*Brandons*), on account of the fires which it is customary to kindle on that day. On the Saturday or the Sunday the village

lads harness themselves to a cart and drag it about the streets, stopping at the doors of the houses where there are girls and begging for a faggot. When they have got enough, they cart the fuel to a spot at some little distance from the village, pile it up, and set it on fire. All the people of the parish come out to see the bonfire. In some villages, when the bells have rung the Angelus, the signal for the observance is given by cries of, "To the fire! to the fire!" Lads, lasses, and children dance round the blaze, and when the flames have died down they vie with each other in leaping over the red embers. He or she who does so without singeing his or her garments will be married within the year. Young folk also carry lighted torches about the streets or the fields, and when they pass an orchard they cry out, "More fruit than leaves!" Down to recent years at Laviron, in the department of Doubs, it was the young married couples of the year who had charge of the bonfires. In the midst of the bonfire a pole was planted with a wooden figure of a cock fastened to the top. Then there were races, and the winner received the cock as a prize.

In Auvergne fires are everywhere kindled on the evening of the first Sunday in Lent. Every village, every hamlet, even every waid, every isolated farm has its bonfire or *figo*, as it is called, which blazes up as the shades of night are falling. The fires may be seen flaring on the heights and in the plains, the people dance and sing round about them and leap through the flames. Then they proceed to the ceremony of the *Grannas-mias*. A *granno-mio* is a torch of straw fastened to the top of a pole. When the pyre is half consumed, the bystanders kindle the torches at the expiring flames and carry them into the neighbouring orchards, fields, and gardens, wherever there are fruit-trees. As they march they sing at the top of their voices, "Granno my friend, Granno my father, Granno my mother." Then they pass the burning torches under the branches of every tree, singing

*"Brando, brandounci tsaque brantso, in plan panet!"*

that is, "Firebrand burn, every branch a basketful!" In some villages the people also run across the sown fields and shake the ashes of the torches on the ground, also they put some of the ashes in the fowls' nests, in order that the hens may lay plenty of eggs throughout the year. When all these ceremonies have been performed, everybody goes home and feasts, the special dishes of the evening are fritters and pancakes. Here the application of the fire to the fruit-trees, to the sown fields, and to the nests of the poultry is clearly a charm intended to ensure fertility, and the Granno to whom the invocations are addressed, and who gives his name to the torches, may possibly be, as Dr Pommerol suggests, no other than the ancient Celtic god Grannus, whom the Romans identified with Apollo, and whose worship is attested by inscriptions found not only in France but in Scotland and on the Danube.

The custom of carrying lighted torches of straw (*brandons*) about the orchards and fields to fertilise them on the first Sunday of Lent

seems to have been common in France, whether it was accompanied with the practice of kindling bonfires or not. Thus in the province of Picardy "on the first Sunday of Lent people carried torches through the fields, exorcising the field-mice, the darnel, and the smut. They imagined that they did much good to the gardens and caused the onions to grow large. Children ran about the fields, torch in hand, to make the land more fertile." At Verges, a village between the Jura and the Combe d'Ain, the torches at this season were kindled on the top of a mountain, and the bearers went to every house in the village, demanding roasted peas and obliging all couples who had been married within the year to dance. In Berry, a district of Central France, it appears that bonfires are not lighted on this day, but when the sun has set the whole population of the villages, armed with blazing torches of straw, disperse over the country and scour the fields, the vineyards, and the orchards. Seen from afar, the multitude of moving lights, twinkling in the darkness, appear like will-o'-the-wisps chasing each other across the plains, along the hillsides, and down the valleys. While the men wave their flambeaus about the branches of the fruit-trees, the women and children tie bands of wheaten-straw round the tree-trunks. The effect of the ceremony is supposed to be to avert the various plagues from which the fruits of the earth are apt to suffer, and the bands of straw fastened round the stems of the trees are believed to render them fruitful.

In Germany, Austria, and Switzerland at the same season similar customs have prevailed. Thus in the Eifel Mountains, Rhenish Prussia, on the first Sunday in Lent young people used to collect straw and brushwood from house to house. These they carried to an eminence and piled up round a tall, slim beech-tree, to which a piece of wood was fastened at right angles to form a cross. The structure was known as the "hut" or "castle." Fire was set to it and the young people marched round the blazing "castle" bare-headed, each carrying a lighted torch and praying aloud. Sometimes a straw-man was burned in the "hut." People observed the direction in which the smoke blew from the fire. If it blew towards the corn-fields, it was a sign that the harvest would be abundant. On the same day, in some parts of the Eifel, a great wheel was made of straw and dragged by three horses to the top of a hill. Thither the village boys marched at nightfall, set fire to the wheel, and sent it rolling down the slope. At Oberstattfeld the wheel had to be provided by the young man who was last married. About Echternach in Luxemburg the same ceremony is called "burning the witch." At Voralberg in the Tyrol, on the first Sunday in Lent, a slender young fir-tree is surrounded with a pile of straw and firewood. To the top of the tree is fastened a human figure called the "witch," made of old clothes and stuffed with gunpowder. At night the whole is set on fire and boys and girls dance round it, swinging torches and singing rhymes in which the words "corn in the winnowing-basket, the plough in the earth" may be distinguished. In Swabia on the first Sunday in Lent a figure

called the "witch" or the "old wife" or "winter's grandmother" is made up of clothes and fastened to a pole. This is stuck in the middle of a pile of wood, to which fire is applied. While the "witch" is burning, the young people throw blazing discs into the air. The discs are thin round pieces of wood, a few inches in diameter, with notched edges to imitate the rays of the sun or stars. They have a hole in the middle, by which they are attached to the end of a wand. Before the disc is thrown it is set on fire, the wand is swung to and fro, and the impetus thus communicated to the disc is augmented by dashing the rod sharply against a sloping board. The burning disc is thus thrown off, and mounting high into the air, describes a long fiery curve before it reaches the ground. The charred embers of the burned "witch" and discs are taken home and planted in the flax-fields the same night, in the belief that they will keep vermin from the fields. In the Rhon Mountains, situated on the borders of Hesse and Bavaria, the people used to march to the top of a hill or eminence on the first Sunday in Lent. Children and lads carried torches, brooms daubed with tar, and poles swathed in straw. A wheel, wrapt in combustibles, was kindled and rolled down the hill, and the young people rushed about the fields with their burning torches and brooms, till at last they flung them in a heap, and standing round them, struck up a hymn or a popular song. The object of running about the fields with the blazing torches was to "drive away the wicked sower." Or it was done in honour of the Virgin, that she might preserve the fruits of the earth throughout the year and bless them. In neighbouring villages of Hesse, between the Rhon and the Vogel Mountains, it is thought that wherever the burning wheels roll, the fields will be safe from hail and storm.

In Switzerland, also, it is or used to be customary to kindle bonfires on high places on the evening of the first Sunday in Lent, and the day is therefore popularly known as Spark Sunday. The custom prevailed, for example, throughout the canton of Lucerne. Boys went about from house to house begging for wood and straw, then piled the fuel on a conspicuous mountain or hill round about a pole, which bore a straw effigy called "the witch." At nightfall the pile was set on fire, and the young folks danced wildly round it, some of them cracking whips or ringing bells, and when the fire burned low enough, they leaped over it. This was called "burning the witch." In some parts of the canton also they used to wrap old wheels in straw and thorns, put a light to them, and send them rolling and blazing down hill. The more bonfires could be seen sparkling and flaring in the darkness, the more fruitful was the year expected to be, and the higher the dancers leaped beside or over the fire, the higher, it was thought, would grow the flax. In some districts it was the last married man or woman who must kindle the bonfire.

It seems hardly possible to separate from these bonfires, kindled on the first Sunday in Lent, the fires in which, about the same season, the effigy called Death is burned as part of the ceremony of "carrying

out Death " We have seen that at Spachendorf, in Austrian Silesia, on the morning of Rupert's Day (Shrove Tuesday?), a straw-man, dressed in a fur coat and a fur cap, is laid in a hole outside the village and there burned, and that while it is blazing every one seeks to snatch a fragment of it, which he fastens to a branch of the highest tree in his garden or buries in his field, believing that this will make the crops to grow better The ceremony is known as the "burying of Death " Even when the straw-man is not designated as Death, the meaning of the observance is probably the same, for the name Death, as I have tried to show, does not express the original intention of the ceremony At Cobern in the Eifel Mountains the lads make up a straw-man on Shrove Tuesday The effigy is formally tried and accused of having perpetrated all the thefts that have been committed in the neighbourhood throughout the year Being condemned to death, the straw-man is led through the village, shot, and burned upon a pyre They dance round the blazing pile, and the last bride must leap over it In Oldenburg on the evening of Shrove Tuesday people used to make long bundles of straw, which they set on fire, and then ran about the fields waving them, shrieking, and singing wild songs Finally they burned a straw-man on the field In the district of Dusseldorf the straw-man burned on Shrove Tuesday was made of an unthreshed sheaf of corn On the first Monday after the spring equinox the urchins of Zurich drag a straw-man on a little cart through the streets, while at the same time the girls carry about a May-tree When vespers ring, the straw-man is burned In the district of Aachen on Ash Wednesday a man used to be encased in peas-straw and taken to an appointed place Here he slipped quietly out of his straw casing, which was then burned, the children thinking that it was the man who was being burned In the Val di Ledro (Tyrol) on the last day of the Carnival a figure is made up of straw and brushwood and then burned The figure is called the Old Woman, and the ceremony "burning the Old Woman "

§ 3 *The Easter Fires*—Another occasion on which these fire-festivals are held is Easter Eve, the Saturday before Easter Sunday On that day it has been customary in Catholic countries to extinguish all the lights in the churches, and then to make a new fire, sometimes with flint and steel, sometimes with a burning-glass At this fire is lit the great Paschal or Easter candle, which is then used to rekindle all the extinguished lights in the church In many parts of Germany a bonfire is also kindled, by means of the new fire, on some open space near the church It is consecrated, and the people bring sticks of oak, walnut, and beech, which they char in the fire, and then take home with them Some of these charred sticks are thereupon burned at home in a newly-kindled fire, with a prayer that God will preserve the homestead from fire, lightning, and hail Thus every house receives "new fire " Some of the sticks are kept throughout the year and laid on the hearth-fire during heavy thunder-storms to prevent the house from being struck by lightning, or they are inserted

in the roof with the like intention Others are placed in the fields, gardens, and meadows, with a prayer that God will keep them from blight and hail Such fields and gardens are thought to thrive more than others, the corn and the plants that grow in them are not beaten down by hail, nor devoured by mice, vermin, and beetles; no witch harms them, and the ears of corn stand close and full The charred sticks are also applied to the plough The ashes of the Easter bonfire, together with the ashes of the consecrated palm-branches, are mixed with the seed at sowing A wooden figure called Judas is sometimes burned in the consecrated bonfire, and even where this custom has been abolished the bonfire itself in some places goes by the name of "the burning of Judas"

The essentially pagan character of the Easter fire festival appears plainly both from the mode in which it is celebrated by the peasants and from the superstitious beliefs which they associate with it All over Northern and Central Germany, from Altmark and Anhalt on the east, through Brunswick, Hanover, Oldenburg, the Harz district, and Hesse to Westphalia the Easter bonfires still blaze simultaneously on the hill-tops As many as forty may sometimes be counted within sight at once Long before Easter the young people have been busy collecting firewood, every farmer contributes, and tar-barrels, petroleum cases, and so forth go to swell the pile Neighbouring villages vie with each other as to which shall send up the greatest blaze The fires are always kindled, year after year, on the same hill, which accordingly often takes the name of Easter Mountain It is a fine spectacle to watch from some eminence the bonfires flaring up one after another on the neighbouring heights As far as their light reaches, so far, in the belief of the peasants, the fields will be fruitful, and the houses on which they shine will be safe from conflagration or sickness At Volkmarsen and other places in Hesse the people used to observe which way the wind blew the flames, and then they sowed flax seed in that direction, confident that it would grow well. Brands taken from the bonfires preserve houses from being struck by lightning, and the ashes increase the fertility of the fields, protect them from mice, and mixed with the drinking-water of cattle make the animals thrive and ensure them against plague As the flames die down, young and old leap over them, and cattle are sometimes driven through the smouldering embers In some places tar-barrels or wheels wrapt in straw used to be set on fire, and then sent rolling down the hillside In others the boys light torches and wisps of straw at the bonfires and rush about brandishing them in their hands

In Munsterland these Easter fires are always kindled upon certain definite hills, which are hence known as Easter or Paschal Mountains The whole community assembles about the fire The young men and maidens, singing Easter hymns, march round and round the fire, till the blaze dies down Then the girls jump over the fire in a line, one after the other, each supported by two young men who hold her hands and run beside her In the twilight boys with blazing bundles of straw

run over the fields to make them fruitful At Delmenhorst, in Oldenburg, it used to be the custom to cut down two trees, plant them in the ground side by side, and pile twelve tar-barrels against each. Brushwood was then heaped about the trees, and on the evening of Easter Saturday the boys, after rushing about with blazing bean-poles in their hands, set fire to the whole. At the end of the ceremony the urchins tried to blacken each other and the clothes of grown-up people In the Altmark it is believed that as far as the blaze of the Easter bonfire is visible, the corn will grow well throughout the year, and no conflagration will break out At Braunrode, in the Harz Mountains, it was the custom to burn squirrels in the Easter bonfire In the Altmark, bones were burned in it

Near Forchheim, in Upper Franken, a straw-man called the Judas used to be burned in the churchyards on Easter Saturday. The whole village contributed wood to the pyre on which he perished, and the charred sticks were afterwards kept and planted in the fields on Walpurgis Day (the first of May) to preserve the wheat from blight and mildew About a hundred years ago or more the custom at Althenneberg, in Upper Bavaria, used to be as follows On the afternoon of Easter Saturday the lads collected wood, which they piled in a corn-field, while in the middle of the pile they set up a tall wooden cross all swathed in straw. After the evening service they lighted their lanterns at the consecrated candle in the church, and ran with them at full speed to the pyre, each striving to get there first The first to arrive set fire to the heap No woman or girl might come near the bonfire, but they were allowed to watch it from a distance As the flames rose the men and lads rejoiced and made merry, shouting, "We are burning the Judas!" The man who had been the first to reach the pyre and to kindle it was rewarded on Easter Sunday by the women, who gave him coloured eggs at the church door The object of the whole ceremony was to keep off the hail At other villages of Upper Bavaria the ceremony, which took place between nine and ten at night on Easter Saturday, was called "burning the Easter Man" On a height about a mile from the village the young fellows set up a tall cross enveloped in straw, so that it looked like a man with his arms stretched out This was the Easter Man No lad under eighteen years of age might take part in the ceremony One of the young men stationed himself beside the Easter Man, holding in his hand a consecrated taper which he had brought from the church and lighted The rest stood at equal intervals in a great circle round the cross At a given signal they raced thrice round the circle, and then at a second signal ran straight at the cross and at the lad with the lighted taper beside it, the one who reached the goal first had the right of setting fire to the Easter Man Great was the jubilation while he was burning When he had been consumed in the flames, three lads were chosen from among the rest, and each of the three drew a circle on the ground with a stick thrice round the ashes Then they all left the spot On Easter Monday the villagers gathered the ashes

and strewed them on their fields, also they planted in the fields palm-branches which had been consecrated on Palm Sunday, and sticks which had been charred and hallowed on Good Friday, all for the purpose of protecting their fields against showers of hail. In some parts of Swabia the Easter fires might not be kindled with iron or steel or flint, but only by the friction of wood.

The custom of the Easter fires appears to have prevailed all over Central and Western Germany from north to south. We find it also in Holland, where the fires were kindled on the highest eminences, and the people danced round them and leaped through the flames or over the glowing embers. Here too, as often in Germany, the materials for the bonfire were collected by the young folk from door to door. In many parts of Sweden firearms are discharged in all directions on Easter Eve, and huge bonfires are lighted on hills and eminences. Some people think that the intention is to keep off the Troll and other evil spirits who are especially active at this season.

§ 4 *The Beltane Fires*—In the Central Highlands of Scotland bonfires, known as the Beltane fires, were formerly kindled with great ceremony on the first of May, and the traces of human sacrifices at them were particularly clear and unequivocal. The custom of lighting the bonfires lasted in various places far into the eighteenth century, and the descriptions of the ceremony by writers of that period present such a curious and interesting picture of ancient heathendom surviving in our own country that I will reproduce them in the words of their authors. The fullest of the descriptions is the one bequeathed to us by John Ramsay, laird of Ochertyre, near Crieff, the patron of Burns and the friend of Sir Walter Scott. He says: "But the most considerable of the Druidical festivals is that of Beltane, or May-day, which was lately observed in some parts of the Highlands with extraordinary ceremonies . . . Like the other public worship of the Druids, the Beltane feast seems to have been performed on hills or eminences. They thought it degrading to him whose temple is the universe, to suppose that he would dwell in any house made with hands. Their sacrifices were therefore offered in the open air, frequently upon the tops of hills, where they were presented with the grandest views of nature, and were nearest the seat of warmth and order. And, according to tradition, such was the manner of celebrating this festival in the Highlands within the last hundred years. But since the decline of superstition, it has been celebrated by the people of each hamlet on some hill or rising ground around which their cattle were pasturing. Thither the young folks repaired in the morning, and cut a trench, on the summit of which a seat of turf was formed for the company. And in the middle a pile of wood or other fuel was placed, which of old they kindled with *tem-eigin*—i.e., forced-fire or *need-fire*. Although, for many years past, they have been contented with common fire, yet we shall now describe the process, because it will hereafter appear that recourse is still had to the *tem-eigin* upon extraordinary emergencies,



“The night before, all the fires in the country were carefully extinguished, and next morning the materials for exciting this sacred fire were prepared. The most primitive method seems to be that which was used in the islands of Skye, Mull, and Tiree. A well-seasoned plank of oak was procured, in the midst of which a hole was bored. A wimble of the same timber was then applied, the end of which they fitted to the hole. But in some parts of the mainland the machinery was different. They used a frame of green wood, of a square form, in the centre of which was an axle-tree. In some places three times three persons, in others three times nine, were required for turning round by turns the axle-tree or wimble. If any of them had been guilty of murder, adultery, theft, or other atrocious crime, it was imagined either that the fire would not kindle, or that it would be devoid of its usual virtue. So soon as any sparks were emitted by means of the violent friction, they applied a species of agaric which grows on old birch-trees, and is very combustible. This fire had the appearance of being immediately derived from heaven, and manifold were the virtues ascribed to it. They esteemed it a preservative against witchcraft, and a sovereign remedy against malignant diseases, both in the human species and in cattle, and by it the strongest poisons were supposed to have their nature changed.

“After kindling the bonfire with the *tein-eggin* the company prepared their victuals. And as soon as they had finished their meal, they amused themselves a while in singing and dancing round the fire. Towards the close of the entertainment, the person who officiated as master of the feast produced a large cake baked with eggs and scalloped round the edge, called *am bonnach beal-tine—i e*, the Beltane cake. It was divided into a number of pieces, and distributed in great form to the company. There was one particular piece which whoever got was called *cailleach beal-tine—i e*, the Beltane *carline*, a term of great reproach. Upon his being known, part of the company laid hold of him and made a show of putting him into the fire, but the majority interposing, he was rescued. And in some places they laid him flat on the ground, making as if they would quarter him. Afterwards, he was pelted with egg-shells, and retained the odious appellation during the whole year. And while the feast was fresh in people’s memory, they affected to speak of the *cailleach beal-tine* as dead.”

In the parish of Callander, a beautiful district of western Perthshire, the Beltane custom was still in vogue towards the end of the eighteenth century. It has been described as follows by the parish minister of the time. “Upon the first day of May, which is called *Beltan*, or *Bal-tem* day, all the boys in a township or hamlet meet in the moors. They cut a table in the green sod, of a round figure, by casting a trench in the ground, of such circumference as to hold the whole company. They kindle a fire, and dress a repast of eggs and milk in the consistence of a custard. They knead a cake of oatmeal, which is toasted at the embers against a stone. After the custard is eaten up, they divide the cake into so many portions, as similar as possible to one

another in size and shape, as there are persons in the company. They daub one of these portions all over with charcoal, until it be perfectly black. They put all the bits of the cake into a bonnet. Every one, blindfold, draws out a portion. He who holds the bonnet is entitled to the last bit. Whoever draws the black bit is the *devoted* person who is to be sacrificed to *Baal*, whose favour they mean to implore, in rendering the year productive of the sustenance of man and beast. There is little doubt of these inhuman sacrifices having been once offered in this country, as well as in the east, although they now pass from the act of sacrificing, and only compel the *devoted* person to leap three times through the flames, with which the ceremonies of this festival are closed."

Thomas Pennant, who travelled in Perthshire in the year 1769, tells us that "on the first of May, the herdsmen of every village hold their Bel-tien, a rural sacrifice. They cut a square trench on the ground, leaving the turf in the middle, on that they make a fire of wood, on which they dress a large caudle of eggs, butter, oatmeal and milk, and bring besides the ingredients of the caudle, plenty of beer and whisky, for each of the company must contribute something. The rites begin with spilling some of the caudle on the ground, by way of libation. On that every one takes a cake of oatmeal, upon which are raised nine square knobs, each dedicated to some particular being, the supposed preserver of their flocks and herds, or to some particular animal, the real destroyer of them. Each person then turns his face to the fire, breaks off a knob, and flinging it over his shoulders, says, 'This I give to thee, preserve thou my horses, this to thee, preserve thou my sheep, and so on.' After that, they use the same ceremony to the noxious animals. 'This I give to thee, O fox! spare thou my lambs, this to thee, O hooded crow! this to thee, O eagle!' When the ceremony is over, they dine on the caudle, and after the feast is finished, what is left is hid by two persons deputed for that purpose, but on the next Sunday they reassemble, and finish the reliques of the first entertainment."

Another writer of the eighteenth century has described the Beltane festival as it was held in the parish of Logierait in Perthshire. He says. "On the first of May, O S, a festival called *Beltan* is annually held here. It is chiefly celebrated by the cow-herds, who assemble by scores in the fields, to dress a dinner for themselves, of boiled milk and eggs. These dishes they eat with a sort of cakes baked for the occasion, and having small lumps in the form of *mipples*, raised all over the surface." In this last account no mention is made of bonfires, but they were probably lighted, for a contemporary writer informs us that in the parish of Kirkmichael, which adjoins the parish of Logierait on the east, the custom of lighting a fire in the fields and baking a consecrated cake on the first of May was not quite obsolete in his time. We may conjecture that the cake with knobs was formerly used for the purpose of determining who should be the "Beltane carline" or victim doomed to the flames. A trace of this custom

survived, perhaps, in the custom of baking oatmeal cakes of a special kind and rolling them down hill about noon on the first of May; for it was thought that the person whose cake broke as it rolled would die or be unfortunate within the year. These cakes, or bannocks as we call them in Scotland, were baked in the usual way, but they were washed over with a thin batter composed of whipped egg, milk or cream, and a little oatmeal. This custom appears to have prevailed at or near Kingussie in Inverness-shire.

In the north-east of Scotland the Beltane fires were still kindled in the latter half of the eighteenth century, the herdsmen of several farms used to gather dry wood, kindle it, and dance three times "southways" about the burning pile. But in this region, according to a later authority, the Beltane fires were lit not on the first but on the second of May, Old Style. They were called bone-fires. The people believed that on that evening and night the witches were abroad and busy casting spells on cattle and stealing cows' milk. To counteract their machinations, pieces of rowan-tree and woodbine, but especially of rowan-tree, were placed over the doors of the cow-houses, and fires were kindled by every farmer and cottar. Old thatch, straw, furze, or broom was piled in a heap and set on fire a little after sunset. While some of the bystanders kept tossing the blazing mass, others hoisted portions of it on pitchforks or poles and ran hither and thither, holding them as high as they could. Meantime the young people danced round the fire or ran through the smoke shouting, "Fire! blaze and burn the witches, fire! fire! burn the witches." In some districts a large round cake of oat or barley meal was rolled through the ashes. When all the fuel was consumed, the people scattered the ashes far and wide, and till the night grew quite dark they continued to run through them, crying, "Fire! burn the witches."

In the Hebrides "the Beltane bannock is smaller than that made at St Michael's, but is made in the same way, it is no longer made in Uist, but Father Allan remembers seeing his grandmother make one about twenty-five years ago. There was also a cheese made, generally on the first of May, which was kept to the next Beltane as a sort of charm against the bewitching of milk-produce. The Beltane customs seem to have been the same as elsewhere. Every fire was put out and a large one lit on the top of the hill, and the cattle driven round it sunwards (*dessil*), to keep off murrain all the year. Each man would take home fire wherewith to kindle his own."

In Wales also the custom of lighting Beltane fires at the beginning of May used to be observed, but the day on which they were kindled varied from the eve of May Day to the third of May. The flame was sometimes elicited by the friction of two pieces of oak, as appears from the following description. "The fire was done in this way. Nine men would turn their pockets inside out, and see that every piece of money and all metals were off their persons. Then the men went into the nearest woods, and collected sticks of nine different kinds of trees. These were carried to the spot where the fire had

to be built There a circle was cut in the sod, and the sticks were set crosswise All around the circle the people stood and watched the proceedings One of the men would then take two bits of oak, and rub them together until a flame was kindled This was applied to the sticks, and soon a large fire was made Sometimes two fires were set up side by side These fires, whether one or two, were called *coelcerth* or bonfire Round cakes of oatmeal and brown meal were split in four, and placed in a small flour-bag, and everybody present had to pick out a portion The last bit in the bag fell to the lot of the bag-holder Each person who chanced to pick up a piece of brown-meal cake was compelled to leap three times over the flames, or to run thrice between the two fires, by which means the people thought they were sure of a plentiful harvest Shouts and screams of those who had to face the ordeal could be heard ever so far, and those who chanced to pick the oatmeal portions sang and danced and clapped their hands in approval, as the holders of the brown bits leaped three times over the flames, or ran three times between the two fires "

The belief of the people that by leaping thrice over the bonfires or running thrice between them they ensured a plentiful harvest is worthy of note The mode in which this result was supposed to be brought about is indicated by another writer on Welsh folk-lore, according to whom it used to be held that "the bonfires lighted in May or Midsummer protected the lands from sorcery, so that good crops would follow. The ashes were also considered valuable as charms " Hence it appears that the heat of the fires was thought to fertilise the fields, not directly by quickening the seeds in the ground, but indirectly by counteracting the baleful influence of witchcraft or perhaps by burning up the persons of the witches

The Beltane fires seem to have been kindled also in Ireland, for Cormac, "or somebody in his name, says that *belltaine*, May-day, was so called from the 'lucky fire,' or the 'two fires,' which the druids of Erin used to make on that day with great incantations, and cattle, he adds, used to be brought to those fires, or to be driven between them, as a safeguard against the diseases of the year " The custom of driving cattle through or between fires on May Day or the eve of May Day persisted in Ireland down to a time within living memory

The first of May is a great popular festival in the more midland and southern parts of Sweden On the eve of the festival huge bonfires, which should be lighted by striking two flints together, blaze on all the hills and knolls Every large hamlet has its own fire, round which the young people dance in a ring The old folk notice whether the flames incline to the north or to the south In the former case, the spring will be cold and backward, in the latter, it will be mild and genial In Bohemia, on the eve of May Day, young people kindle fires on hills and eminences, at crossways, and in pastures, and dance round them They leap over the glowing embers or even through the flames The ceremony is called "burning the witches." In some

places an effigy representing a witch used to be burnt in the bonfire. We have to remember that the eve of May Day is the notorious Walpurgis Night, when the witches are everywhere speeding unseen through the air on their hellish errands. On this witching night children in Voigtland also light bonfires on the heights and leap over them. Moreover, they wave burning brooms or toss them into the air. So far as the light of the bonfire reaches, so far will a blessing rest on the fields. The kindling of the fires on Walpurgis Night is called "driving away the witches." The custom of kindling fires on the eve of May Day (Walpurgis Night) for the purpose of burning the witches is, or used to be, widespread in the Tyrol, Moravia, Saxony and Silesia.

§ 5 *The Midsummer Fires*—But the season at which these fire-festivals have been mostly generally held all over Europe is the summer solstice, that is Midsummer Eve (the twenty-third of June) or Midsummer Day (the twenty-fourth of June). A faint tinge of Christianity has been given to them by naming Midsummer Day after St John the Baptist, but we cannot doubt that the celebration dates from a time long before the beginning of our era. The summer solstice, or Midsummer Day, is the great turning-point in the sun's career, when, after climbing higher and higher day by day in the sky, the luminary stops and thenceforth retraces his steps down the heavenly road. Such a moment could not but be regarded with anxiety by primitive man so soon as he began to observe and ponder the courses of the great lights across the celestial vault, and having still to learn his own powerlessness in face of the vast cyclic changes of nature, he may have fancied that he could help the sun in his seeming decline—could prop his failing steps and rekindle the sinking flame of the red lamp in his feeble hand. In some such thoughts as these the midsummer festivals of our European peasantry may perhaps have taken their rise. Whatever their origin, they have prevailed all over this quarter of the globe, from Ireland on the west to Russia on the east, and from Norway and Sweden on the north to Spain and Greece on the south. According to a mediæval writer, the three great features of the midsummer celebration were the bonfires, the procession with torches round the fields, and the custom of rolling a wheel. He tells us that boys burned bones and filth of various kinds to make a foul smoke, and that the smoke drove away certain noxious dragons which at this time, excited by the summer heat, copulated in the air and poisoned the wells and rivers by dropping their seed into them, and he explains the custom of trundling a wheel to mean that the sun, having now reached the highest point in the ecliptic, begins thenceforward to descend.

The main features of the midsummer fire-festival resemble those which we have found to characterise the vernal festivals of fire. The similarity of the two sets of ceremonies will plainly appear from the following examples.

A writer of the first half of the sixteenth century informs us that

in almost every village and town of Germany public bonfires were kindled on the Eve of St John, and young and old, of both sexes, gathered about them and passed the time in dancing and singing. People on this occasion wore chaplets of mugwort and vervain, and they looked at the fire through bunches of larkspur which they held in their hands, believing that this would preserve their eyes in a healthy state throughout the year. As each departed, he threw the mugwort and vervain into the fire, saying, "May all my ill-luck depart and be burnt up with these." At Lower Konz, a village situated on a hillside overlooking the Moselle, the midsummer festival used to be celebrated as follows. A quantity of straw was collected on the top of the steep Stromberg Hill. Every inhabitant, or at least every householder, had to contribute his share of straw to the pile. At nightfall the whole male population, men and boys, mustered on the top of the hill, the women and girls were not allowed to join them, but had to take up their position at a certain spring half-way down the slope. On the summit stood a huge wheel completely encased in some of the straw which had been jointly contributed by the villagers, the rest of the straw was made into torches. From each side of the wheel the axle-tree projected about three feet, thus furnishing handles to the lads who were to guide it in its descent. The mayor of the neighbouring town of Sierck, who always received a basket of cherries for his services, gave the signal, a lighted torch was applied to the wheel, and as it burst into flame, two young fellows, strong-limbed and swift of foot, seized the handles and began running with it down the slope. A great shout went up. Every man and boy waved a blazing torch in the air, and took care to keep it alight so long as the wheel was trundling down the hill. The great object of the young men who guided the wheel was to plunge it blazing into the water of the Moselle, but they rarely succeeded in their efforts, for the vineyards which cover the greater part of the declivity impeded their progress, and the wheel was often burned out before it reached the river. As it rolled past the women and girls at the spring, they raised cries of joy which were answered by the men on the top of the mountain, and the shouts were echoed by the inhabitants of neighbouring villages who watched the spectacle from their hills on the opposite bank of the Moselle. If the fiery wheel was successfully conveyed to the bank of the river and extinguished in the water, the people looked for an abundant vintage that year, and the inhabitants of Konz had the right to exact a waggon-load of white wine from the surrounding vineyards. On the other hand, they believed that, if they neglected to perform the ceremony, the cattle would be attacked by giddiness and convulsions and would dance in their stalls.

Down at least to the middle of the nineteenth century the midsummer fires used to blaze all over Upper Bavaria. They were kindled especially on the mountains, but also far and wide in the lowlands, and we are told that in the darkness and stillness of night the moving

groups, lit up by the flickering glow of the flames, presented an impressive spectacle. Cattle were driven through the fire to cure the sick animals and to guard such as were sound against plague and harm of every kind throughout the year. Many a householder on that day put out the fire on the domestic hearth and rekindled it by means of a brand taken from the midsummer bonfire. The people judged of the height to which the flax would grow in the year by the height to which the flames of the bonfire rose; and whoever leaped over the burning pile was sure not to suffer from backache in reaping the corn at harvest. In many parts of Bavaria it was believed that the flax would grow as high as the young people leaped over the fire. In others the old folk used to plant three charred sticks from the bonfire in the fields, believing that this would make the flax grow tall. Elsewhere an extinguished brand was put in the roof of the house to protect it against fire. In the towns about Wurzburg the bonfires used to be kindled in the market-places, and the young people who jumped over them wore garlands of flowers, especially of mugwort and vervain, and carried sprigs of larkspur in their hands. They thought that such as looked at the fire holding a bit of larkspur before their face would be troubled by no malady of the eyes throughout the year. Further, it was customary at Wurzburg, in the sixteenth century, for the bishop's followers to throw burning discs of wood into the air from a mountain which overhangs the town. The discs were discharged by means of flexible rods, and in their flight through the darkness presented the appearance of fiery dragons.

Similarly in Swabia, lads and lasses, hand in hand, leap over the midsummer bonfire, praying that the hemp may grow three ells high, and they set fire to wheels of straw and send them rolling down the hill. Sometimes, as the people sprang over the midsummer bonfire they cried out, "Flax, flax! may the flax this year grow seven ells high!" At Rottenburg a rude effigy in human form, called the Angelman, used to be enveloped in flowers and then burnt in the midsummer fire by boys, who afterwards leaped over the glowing embers.

So in Baden the children collected fuel from house to house for the midsummer bonfire on St. John's Day, and lads and lasses leaped over the fire in couples. Here, as elsewhere, a close connexion was traced between these bonfires and the harvest. In some places it was thought that those who leaped over the fires would not suffer from backache at reaping. Sometimes, as the young folk sprang over the flames, they cried, "Grow, that the hemp may be three ells high!" This notion that the hemp or the corn would grow as high as the flames blazed or as the people jumped over them seems to have been widespread in Baden. It was held that the parents of the young people who bounded highest over the fire would have the most abundant harvest; and on the other hand, if a man contributed nothing to the bonfire, it was imagined that there would be no blessing on his crops, and that his hemp in particular would never grow. At Edersleben, near Sangerhausen, a high pole was planted in the ground and a tar-

barrel was hung from it by a chain which reached to the ground. The barrel was then set on fire and swung round the pole amid shouts of joy.

In Denmark and Norway also midsummer fires were kindled on St. John's Eve on roads, open spaces, and hills. People in Norway thought that the fires banished sickness from among the cattle. Even yet the fires are said to be lighted all over Norway on Midsummer Eve. They are kindled in order to keep off the witches, who are said to be flying from all parts that night to the Blocksberg, where the big witch lives. In Sweden the Eve of St. John (St. Hans) is the most joyous night of the whole year. Throughout some parts of the country, especially in the provinces of Bohus and Scania and in districts bordering on Norway, it is celebrated by the frequent discharge of firearms and by huge bonfires, formerly called Balder's Balefires (*Balder's Bålar*), which are kindled at dusk on hills and eminences and throw a glare of light over the surrounding landscape. The people dance round the fires and leap over or through them. In parts of Norrland on St. John's Eve the bonfires are lit at the cross-roads. The fuel consists of nine different sorts of wood, and the spectators cast into the flames a kind of toad-stool (*Baran*) in order to counteract the power of the Trolls and other evil spirits, who are believed to be abroad that night; for at that mystic season the mountains open and from their cavernous depths the uncanny crew pours forth to dance and disport themselves for a time. The peasants believe that should any of the Trolls be in the vicinity they will show themselves, and if an animal, for example a he or she goat, happens to be seen near the blazing, crackling pile, the peasants are firmly persuaded that it is no other than the Evil One in person. Further, it deserves to be remarked that in Sweden St. John's Eve is a festival of water as well as of fire, for certain holy springs are then supposed to be endowed with wonderful medicinal virtues, and many sick people resort to them for the healing of their infirmities.

In Austria the midsummer customs and superstitions resemble those of Germany. Thus in some parts of the Tyrol bonfires are kindled and burning discs hurled into the air. In the lower valley of the Inn a tatterdemalion effigy is carted about the village on Midsummer Day and then burned. He is called the *Lotter*, which has been corrupted into Luther. At Ambras, one of the villages where Martin Luther is thus burned in effigy, they say that if you go through the village between eleven and twelve on St. John's Night and wash yourself in three wells you will see all who are to die in the following year. At Gratz on St. John's Eve (the twenty-third of June) the common people used to make a puppet called the *Tatermann*, which they dragged to the bleaching ground, and pelted with burning besoms till it took fire. At Reutte, in the Tyrol, people believed that the flax would grow as high as they leaped over the midsummer bonfire, and they took pieces of charred wood from the fire and stuck them in their flax-fields the same night, leaving them there till the flax harvest had been got in. In Lower Austria bonfires are kindled on the heights,



and the boys caper round them, brandishing lighted torches drenched in pitch. Whoever jumps thrice across the fire will not suffer from fever within the year. Cart-wheels are often smeared with pitch, ignited, and sent rolling and blazing down the hillsides.

All over Bohemia bonfires still burn on Midsummer Eve. In the afternoon boys go about with handcarts from house to house collecting fuel and threatening with evil consequences the curmudgeons who refuse them a dole. Sometimes the young men fell a tall straight fir in the woods and set it up on a height, where the girls deck it with nosegays, wreaths of leaves, and red ribbons. Then brushwood is piled about it, and at nightfall the whole is set on fire. While the flames break out, the young men climb the tree and fetch down the wreaths which the girls had placed on it. After that lads and lasses stand on opposite sides of the fire and look at one another through the wreaths to see whether they will be true to each other and marry within the year. Also the girls throw the wreaths across the flames to the men, and woe to the awkward swain who fails to catch the wreath thrown him by his sweetheart. When the blaze has died down, each couple takes hands and leaps thrice across the fire. He or she who does so will be free from ague throughout the year, and the flax will grow as high as the young folks leap. A girl who sees nine bonfires on Midsummer Eve will marry before the year is out. The singed wreaths are carried home and carefully preserved throughout the year. During thunderstorms a bit of the wreath is burned on the hearth with a prayer, some of it is given to kine that are sick or calving, and some of it serves to fumigate house and cattle-stall, that man and beast may keep hale and well. Sometimes an old cart-wheel is smeared with resin, ignited, and sent rolling down the hill. Often the boys collect all the worn-out besoms they can get hold of, dip them in pitch, and having set them on fire wave them about or throw them high into the air. Or they rush down the hillside in troops, brandishing the flaming brooms and shouting. The stumps of the brooms and embers from the fire are preserved and stuck in cabbage gardens to protect the cabbages from caterpillars and gnats. Some people insert charred sticks and ashes from the midsummer bonfire in their sown fields and meadows, in their gardens and the roofs of their houses, as a talisman against lightning and foul weather, or they fancy that the ashes placed in the roof will prevent any fire from breaking out in the house. In some districts they crown or gird themselves with mugwort while the midsummer fire is burning, for this is supposed to be a protection against ghosts, witches, and sickness, in particular, a wreath of mugwort is a sure preventive of sore eyes. Sometimes the girls look at the bonfires through garlands of wild flowers, praying the fire to strengthen their eyes and eyelids. She who does this thrice will have no sore eyes all that year. In some parts of Bohemia they used to drive the cows through the midsummer fire to guard them against witchcraft.

In Slavonic countries, also, the midsummer festival is celebrated

with similar rites We have already seen that in Russia on the Eve of St. John young men and maidens jump over a bonfire in couples carrying a straw effigy of Kupalo in their arms In some parts of Russia an image of Kupalo is burnt or thrown into a stream on St John's Night Again, in some districts of Russia the young folk wear garlands of flowers and girdles of holy herbs when they spring through the smoke or flames, and sometimes they drive the cattle also through the fire in order to protect the animals against wizards and witches, who are then ravenous after milk In Little Russia a stake is driven into the ground on St John's Night, wrapt in straw, and set on fire As the flames rise the peasant women throw birchen boughs into them, saying, "May my flax be as tall as this bough!" In Ruthenia the bonfires are lighted by a flame procured by the friction of wood While the elders of the party are engaged in thus "churning" the fire, the rest maintain a respectful silence, but when the flame bursts from the wood, they break forth into joyous songs As soon as the bonfires are kindled, the young people take hands and leap in pairs through the smoke, if not through the flames, and after that the cattle in their turn are driven through the fire

In many parts of Prussia and Lithuania great fires are kindled on Midsummer Eve All the heights are ablaze with them, as far as the eye can see The fires are supposed to be a protection against witchcraft, thunder, hail, and cattle disease, especially if next morning the cattle are driven over the places where the fires burned Above all, the bonfires ensure the farmer against the arts of witches, who try to steal the milk from his cows by charms and spells That is why next morning you may see the young fellows who lit the bonfire going from house to house and receiving jugfuls of milk And for the same reason they stick burs and mugwort on the gate or the hedge through which the cows go to pasture, because that is supposed to be a preservative against witchcraft In Masuren, a district of Eastern Prussia inhabited by a branch of the Polish family, it is the custom on the evening of Midsummer Day to put out all the fires in the village Then an oaken stake is driven into the ground and a wheel is fixed on it as on an axle This wheel the villagers, working by relays, cause to revolve with great rapidity till fire is produced by friction. Every one takes home a lighted brand from the new fire and with it rekindles the fire on the domestic hearth In Serbia on Midsummer Eve herdsmen light torches of birch bark and march round the sheepfolds and cattle-stalls, then they climb the hills and there allow the torches to burn out

Among the Magyars in Hungary the midsummer fire-festival is marked by the same features that meet us in so many parts of Europe On Midsummer Eve in many places it is customary to kindle bonfires on heights and to leap over them, and from the manner in which the young people leap the bystanders predict whether they will marry soon On this day also many Hungarian swineherds make fire by rotating a wheel round a wooden axle wrapt in hemp, and through the fire thus made they drive their pigs to preserve them from sickness.

The Esthonians of Russia, who, like the Magyars, belong to the great Turanian family of mankind, also celebrate the summer solstice in the usual way. They think that the St John's fire keeps witches from the cattle, and they say that he who does not come to it will have his barley full of thistles and his oats full of weeds. In the Esthonian island of Oesel, while they throw fuel into the midsummer fire, they call out, "Weeds to the fire, flax to the field," or they fling three billets into the flames, saying, "Flax grow long!" And they take charred sticks from the bonfire home with them and keep them to make the cattle thrive. In some parts of the island the bonfire is formed by piling brushwood and other combustibles round a tree, at the top of which a flag flies. Whoever succeeds in knocking down the flag with a pole before it begins to burn will have good luck. Formerly the festivities lasted till daybreak, and ended in scenes of debauchery which looked doubly hideous by the growing light of a summer morning.

When we pass from the east to the west of Europe we still find the summer solstice celebrated with rites of the same general character. Down to about the middle of the nineteenth century the custom of lighting bonfires at midsummer prevailed so commonly in France that there was hardly a town or a village, we are told, where they were not kindled. People danced round and leaped over them, and took charred sticks from the bonfire home with them to protect the houses against lightning, conflagrations, and spells.

In Brittany, apparently, the custom of the midsummer bonfires is kept up to this day. When the flames have died down, the whole assembly kneels round about the bonfire and an old man prays aloud. Then they all rise and march thrice round the fire, at the third turn they stop and every one picks up a pebble and throws it on the burning pile. After that they disperse. In Brittany and Berry it is believed that a girl who dances round nine midsummer bonfires will marry within the year. In the valley of the Orne the custom was to kindle the bonfire just at the moment when the sun was about to dip below the horizon, and the peasants drove their cattle through the fires to protect them against witchcraft, especially against the spells of witches and wizards who attempted to steal the milk and butter. At Jumieges in Normandy, down to the first half of the nineteenth century, the midsummer festival was marked by certain singular features which bore the stamp of a very high antiquity. Every year, on the twenty-third of June, the Eve of St John, the Brotherhood of the Green Wolf chose a new chief or master, who had always to be taken from the hamlet of Conihout. On being elected, the new head of the brotherhood assumed the title of the Green Wolf, and donned a peculiar costume consisting of a long green mantle and a very tall green hat of a conical shape and without a brim. Thus arrayed he stalked solemnly at the head of the brothers, chanting the hymn of St John, the crucifix and holy banner leading the way, to a place called Chouquet. Here the procession was met by the priest, precentors, and choir, who conducted the brotherhood to the

parish church After hearing mass the company adjourned to the house of the Green Wolf, where a simple repast was served up to them At night a bonfire was kindled to the sound of hand-bells by a young man and a young woman, both decked with flowers Then the Green Wolf and his brothers, with their hoods down on their shoulders and holding each other by the hand, ran round the fire after the man who had been chosen to be the Green Wolf of the following year Though only the first and the last man of the chain had a hand free, their business was to surround and seize thrice the future Green Wolf, who in his efforts to escape belaboured the brothers with a long wand which he carried When at last they succeeded in catching him they carried him to the burning pile and made as if they would throw him on it This ceremony over, they returned to the house of the Green Wolf, where a supper, still of the most meagre fare, was set before them Up till midnight a sort of religious solemnity prevailed But at the stroke of twelve all this was changed Constraint gave way to license, pious hymns were replaced by Bacchanalian ditties, and the shrill quavering notes of the village fiddle hardly rose above the roar of voices that went up from the merry brotherhood of the Green Wolf Next day, the twenty-fourth of June or Midsummer Day, was celebrated by the same personages with the same noisy gaiety One of the ceremonies consisted in parading, to the sound of musketry, an enormous loaf of consecrated bread, which, rising in tiers, was surmounted by a pyramid of verdure adorned with ribbons After that the holy hand-bells, deposited on the step of the altar, were entrusted as insignia of office to the man who was to be the Green Wolf next year.

At Château-Thierry, in the department of Aisne, the custom of lighting bonfires and dancing round them at the midsummer festival of St John lasted down to about 1850, the fires were kindled especially when June had been rainy, and the people thought that the lighting of the bonfires would cause the rain to cease In the Vosges it is still customary to kindle bonfires upon the hill-tops on Midsummer Eve, the people believe that the fires help to preserve the fruits of the earth and ensure good crops

Bonfires were lit in almost all the hamlets of Poitou on the Eve of St John People marched round them thrice, carrying a branch of walnut in their hand. Shepherdesses and children passed sprigs of mullein (*verbascum*) and nuts across the flames, the nuts were supposed to cure toothache, and the mullein to protect the cattle from sickness and sorcery When the fire died down people took some of the ashes home with them, either to keep them in the house as a preservative against thunder or to scatter them on the fields for the purpose of destroying corn-cockles and darnel In Poitou also it used to be customary on the Eve of St John to trundle a blazing wheel wrapt in straw over the fields to fertilise them

In the mountainous part of Comminges, a province of Southern France, the midsummer fire is made by splitting open the trunk of a

tall tree, stuffing the crevice with shavings, and igniting the whole. A garland of flowers is fastened to the top of the tree, and at the moment when the fire is lighted the man who was last married has to climb up a ladder and bring the flowers down. In the flat parts of the same district the materials of the midsummer bonfires consist of fuel piled in the usual way, but they must be put together by men who have been married since the last midsummer festival, and each of these benedicts is obliged to lay a wreath of flowers on the top of the pile.

In Provence the midsummer fires are still popular. Children go from door to door begging for fuel, and they are seldom sent empty away. Formerly the priest, the mayor, and the aldermen used to walk in procession to the bonfire, and even deigned to light it, after which the assembly marched thrice round the burning pile. At Aix a nominal king, chosen from among the youth for his skill in shooting at a popinjay, presided over the midsummer festival. He selected his own officers, and escorted by a brilliant train marched to the bonfire, kindled it, and was the first to dance round it. Next day he distributed largesse to his followers. His reign lasted a year, during which he enjoyed certain privileges. He was allowed to attend the mass celebrated by the commander of the Knights of St John on St John's Day, the right of hunting was accorded to him, and soldiers might not be quartered in his house. At Marseilles also on this day one of the guilds chose a king of the *badache* or double axe; but it does not appear that he kindled the bonfire, which is said to have been lighted with great ceremony by the *préfet* and other authorities.

In Belgium the custom of kindling the midsummer bonfires has long disappeared from the great cities, but it is still kept up in rural districts and small towns. In that country the Eve of St Peter's Day (the twenty-ninth of June) is celebrated by bonfires and dances exactly like those which commemorate St John's Eve. Some people say that the fires of St Peter, like those of St John, are lighted in order to drive away dragons. In French Flanders down to 1789 a straw figure representing a man was always burned in the midsummer bonfire, and the figure of a woman was burned on St Peter's Day, the twenty-ninth of June. In Belgium people jump over the midsummer bonfires as a preventive of colic, and they keep the ashes at home to hinder fire from breaking out.

The custom of lighting bonfires at midsummer has been observed in many parts of our own country, and as usual people danced round and leaped over them. In Wales three or nine different kinds of wood and charred faggots carefully preserved from the last midsummer were deemed necessary to build the bonfire, which was generally done on rising ground. In the Vale of Glamorgan a cart-wheel swathed in straw used to be ignited and sent rolling down the hill. If it kept alight all the way down and blazed for a long time, an abundant harvest was expected. On Midsummer Eve people in the Isle of Man were wont to light fires to the windward of every field, so that the smoke might pass over the corn, and they folded their cattle and

carried blazing furze or gorse round them several times. In Ireland cattle, especially barren cattle, were driven through the midsummer fires, and the ashes were thrown on the fields to fertilise them, or live coals were carried into them to prevent blight. In Scotland the traces of midsummer fires are few, but at that season in the highlands of Perthshire cowherds used to go round their folds thrice, in the direction of the sun, with lighted torches. Thus they did to purify the flocks and herds and to keep them from falling sick.

The practice of lighting bonfires on Midsummer Eve and dancing or leaping over them is, or was till recently, common all over Spain and in some parts of Italy and Sicily. In Malta great fires are kindled in the streets and squares of the towns and villages on the Eve of St John (Midsummer Eve), formerly the Grand Master of the Order of St John used on that evening to set fire to a heap of pitch barrels placed in front of the sacred Hospital. In Greece, too, the custom of kindling fires on St John's Eve and jumping over them is said to be still universal. One reason assigned for it is a wish to escape from the fleas. According to another account, the women cry out, as they leap over the fire, "I leave my sins behind me." In Lesbos the fires on St John's Eve are usually lighted by threes, and the people spring thrice over them, each with a stone on his head, saying, "I jump the hare's fire, my head a stone!" In Calymnos the midsummer fire is supposed to ensure abundance in the coming year as well as deliverance from fleas. The people dance round the fires singing, with stones on their heads, and then jump over the blaze or the glowing embers. When the fire is burning low, they throw the stones into it, and when it is nearly out, they make crosses on their legs and then go straightway and bathe in the sea.

The custom of kindling bonfires on Midsummer Day or on Midsummer Eve is widely spread among the Mohammedan peoples of North Africa, particularly in Morocco and Algeria, it is common both to the Berbers and to many of the Arabs or Arabic-speaking tribes. In these countries Midsummer Day (the twenty-fourth of June, Old Style) is called *l'ânsăra*. The fires are lit in the courtyards, at cross-roads, in the fields, and sometimes on the threshing-floors. Plants which in burning give out a thick smoke and an aromatic smell are much sought after for fuel on these occasions, among the plants used for the purpose are giant-fennel, thyme, rue, chervil-seed, camomile, geranium, and penny-royal. People expose themselves, and especially their children, to the smoke, and drive it towards the orchards and the crops. Also they leap across the fires, in some places everybody ought to repeat the leap seven times. Moreover they take burning brands from the fires and carry them through the houses in order to fumigate them. They pass things through the fire, and bring the sick into contact with it, while they utter prayers for their recovery. The ashes of the bonfires are also reputed to possess beneficial properties; hence in some places people rub their hair or their bodies with them. In some places they think that by leaping over the fires

they rid themselves of all misfortune, and that childless couples thereby obtain offspring. Berbers of the Rif province, in Northern Morocco, make great use of fires at midsummer for the good of themselves, their cattle, and their fruit-trees. They jump over the bonfires in the belief that this will preserve them in good health, and they light fires under fruit-trees to keep the fruit from falling untimely. And they imagine that by rubbing a paste of the ashes on their hair they prevent the hair from falling off their heads. In all these Moroccan customs, we are told, the beneficial effect is attributed wholly to the smoke, which is supposed to be endued with a magical quality that removes misfortune from men, animals, fruit-trees, and crops.

The celebration of a midsummer festival by Mohammedan peoples is particularly remarkable, because the Mohammedan calendar, being purely lunar and uncorrected by intercalation, necessarily takes no note of festivals which occupy fixed points in the solar year, all strictly Mohammedan feasts, being pinned to the moon, slide gradually with that luminary through the whole period of the earth's revolution about the sun. This fact of itself seems to prove that among the Mohammedan peoples of Northern Africa, as among the Christian peoples of Europe, the midsummer festival is quite independent of the religion which the people publicly profess, and is a relic of a far older paganism.

§ 6 *The Hallowe'en Fires* — From the foregoing survey we may infer that among the heathen forefathers of the European peoples the most popular and widespread fire-festival of the year was the great celebration of Midsummer Eve or Midsummer Day. The coincidence of the festival with the summer solstice can hardly be accidental. Rather we must suppose that our pagan ancestors purposely timed the ceremony of fire on earth to coincide with the arrival of the sun at the highest point of his course in the sky. If that was so, it follows that the old founders of the midsummer rites had observed the solstices or turning-points of the sun's apparent path in the sky, and that they accordingly regulated their festal calendar to some extent by astronomical considerations.

But while this may be regarded as fairly certain for what we may call the aborigines throughout a large part of the continent, it appears not to have been true of the Celtic peoples who inhabited the Land's End of Europe, the islands and promontories that stretch out into the Atlantic Ocean on the north-west. The principal fire-festivals of the Celts, which have survived, though in a restricted area and with diminished pomp, to modern times and even to our own day, were seemingly timed without any reference to the position of the sun in the heaven. They were two in number, and fell at an interval of six months, one being celebrated on the eve of May Day and the other on Allhallow Even or Hallowe'en, as it is now commonly called, that is, on the thirty-first of October, the day preceding All Saints' or Allhallows' Day. These dates coincide with none of the four great hinges on which the solar year revolves, to wit, the solstices and the

equinoxes Nor do they agree with the principal seasons of the agricultural year, the sowing in spring and the reaping in autumn For when May Day comes, the seed has long been committed to the earth, and when November opens, the harvest has long been reaped and garnered, the fields lie bare, the fruit-trees are stripped, and even the yellow leaves are fast fluttering to the ground Yet the first of May and the first of November mark turning-points of the year in Europe, the one ushers in the genial heat and the rich vegetation of summer, the other heralds, if it does not share, the cold and barrenness of winter Now these particular points of the year, as has been well pointed out by a learned and ingenious writer, while they are of comparatively little moment to the European husbandman, do deeply concern the European herdsman, for it is on the approach of summer that he drives his cattle out into the open to crop the fresh grass, and it is on the approach of winter that he leads them back to the safety and shelter of the stall Accordingly it seems not improbable that the Celtic bisection of the year into two halves at the beginning of May and the beginning of November dates from a time when the Celts were mainly a pastoral people, dependent for their subsistence on their herds, and when accordingly the great epochs of the year for them were the days on which the cattle went forth from the homestead in early summer and returned to it again in early winter Even in Central Europe, remote from the region now occupied by the Celts, a similar bisection of the year may be clearly traced in the great popularity, on the one hand, of May Day and its Eve (Walpurgis Night), and, on the other hand, of the Feast of All Souls at the beginning of November, which under a thin Christian cloak conceals an ancient pagan festival of the dead Hence we may conjecture that everywhere throughout Europe the celestial division of the year according to the solstices was preceded by what we may call a terrestrial division of the year according to the beginning of summer and the beginning of winter

Be that as it may, the two great Celtic festivals of May Day and the first of November, or, to be more accurate, the Eves of these two days, closely resemble each other in the manner of their celebration and in the superstitions associated with them, and alike, by the antique character impressed upon both, betray a remote and purely pagan origin The festival of May Day or Beltane, as the Celts called it, which ushered in summer, has already been described, it remains to give some account of the corresponding festival of Hallowe'en, which announced the arrival of winter

Of the two feasts Hallowe'en was perhaps of old the more important, since the Celts would seem to have dated the beginning of the year from it rather than from Beltane In the Isle of Man, one of the fortresses in which the Celtic language and lore longest held out against the siege of the Saxon invaders, the first of November, Old Style, has been regarded as New Year's Day down to recent times Thus Manx mummers used to go round on Hallowe'en (Old Style), singing, in the



Manx language, a sort of Hogmanay song which began "To-night is New Year's Night, *Hogunnaa!*" In ancient Ireland, a new fire used to be kindled every year on Hallowe'en or the Eve of Samhain, and from this sacred flame all the fires in Ireland were rekindled. Such a custom points strongly to Samhain or All Saints' Day (the first of November) as New Year's Day, since the annual kindling of a new fire takes place most naturally at the beginning of the year, in order that the blessed influence of the fresh fire may last throughout the whole period of twelve months. Another confirmation of the view that the Celts dated their year from the first of November is furnished by the manifold modes of divination which were commonly resorted to by Celtic peoples on Hallowe'en for the purpose of ascertaining their destiny, especially their fortune in the coming year, for when could these devices for prying into the future be more reasonably put in practice than at the beginning of the year? As a season of omens and auguries Hallowe'en seems to have far surpassed Beltane in the imagination of the Celts; from which we may with some probability infer that they reckoned their year from Hallowe'en rather than Beltane. Another circumstance of great moment which points to the same conclusion is the association of the dead with Hallowe'en. Not only among the Celts but throughout Europe, Hallowe'en, the night which marks the transition from autumn to winter, seems to have been of old the time of year when the souls of the departed were supposed to revisit their old homes in order to warm themselves by the fire and to comfort themselves with the good cheer provided for them in the kitchen or the parlour by their affectionate kinsfolk. It was, perhaps, a natural thought that the approach of winter should drive the poor shivering hungry ghosts from the bare fields and the leafless woodlands to the shelter of the cottage with its familiar fireside. Did not the lowing kine then troop back from the summer pastures in the forests and on the hills to be fed and cared for in the stalls, while the bleak winds whistled among the swaying boughs and the snow-drifts deepened in the hollows? and could the good-man and the good-wife deny to the spirits of their dead the welcome which they gave to the cows?

But it is not only the souls of the departed who are supposed to be hovering unseen on the day "when autumn to winter resigns the pale year." Witches then speed on their errands of mischief, some sweeping through the air on besoms, others galloping along the roads on tabby-cats, which for that evening are turned into coal-black steeds. The fairies, too, are all let loose, and hobgoblins of every sort roam freely about.

Yet while a glamour of mystery and awe has always clung to Hallowe'en in the minds of the Celtic peasantry, the popular celebration of the festival has been, at least in modern times, by no means of a prevalingly gloomy cast, on the contrary it has been attended by picturesque features and merry pastimes, which rendered it the gayest night of all the year. Amongst the things which in the High-

lands of Scotland contributed to invest the festival with a romantic beauty were the bonfires which used to blaze at frequent intervals on the heights. "On the last day of autumn children gathered ferns, tar-barrels, the long thin stalks called *gàinns*, and everything suitable for a bonfire. These were placed in a heap on some eminence near the house, and in the evening set fire to. The fires were called *Samhagan*. There was one for each house, and it was an object of ambition who should have the biggest. Whole districts were brilliant with bonfires, and their glare across a Highland loch, and from many eminences, formed an exceedingly picturesque scene." Like the Beltane fires on the first of May, the Hallowe'en bonfires seem to have been kindled most commonly in the Perthshire Highlands. In the parish of Callander they still blazed down to near the end of the eighteenth century. When the fire had died down, the ashes were carefully collected in the form of a circle, and a stone was put in, near the circumference, for every person of the several families interested in the bonfire. Next morning, if any of these stones was found to be displaced or injured, the people made sure that the person represented by it was *fey* or devoted, and that he could not live twelve months from that day. At Balquhadder down to the latter part of the nineteenth century each household kindled its bonfire at Hallowe'en, but the custom was chiefly observed by children. The fires were lighted on any high knoll near the house, there was no dancing round them. Hallowe'en fires were also lighted in some districts of the north-east of Scotland, such as Buchan. Villagers and farmers alike must have their fire. In the villages the boys went from house to house and begged a peat from each householder, usually with the words, "Ge's a peat t' burn the witches." When they had collected enough peats, they piled them in a heap, together with straw, furze, and other combustible materials, and set the whole on fire. Then each of the youths, one after another, laid himself down on the ground as near to the fire as he could without being scorched, and thus lying allowed the smoke to roll over him. The others ran through the smoke and jumped over their prostrate comrade. When the heap was burned down, they scattered the ashes, vying with each other who should scatter them most.

In the northern part of Wales it used to be customary for every family to make a great bonfire called *Coel Coeth* on Hallowe'en. The fire was kindled on the most conspicuous spot near the house; and when it had nearly gone out every one threw into the ashes a white stone, which he had first marked. Then having said their prayers round the fire, they went to bed. Next morning, as soon as they were up, they came to search out the stones, and if any one of them was found to be missing, they had a notion that the person who threw it would die before he saw another Hallowe'en. According to Sir John Rhys, the habit of celebrating Hallowe'en by lighting bonfires on the hills is perhaps not yet extinct in Wales, and men still living can remember how the people who assisted at the bonfires would

wait till the last spark was out and then would suddenly take to their heels, shouting at the top of their voices, "The cropped black sow seize the hindmost!" The saying, as Sir John Rhys justly remarks, implies that originally one of the company became a victim in dead earnest. Down to the present time the saying is current in Carnarvonshire, where allusions to the cutty black sow are still occasionally made to frighten children. We can now understand why in Lower Brittany every person throws a pebble into the midsummer bonfire. Doubtless there, as in Wales and the Highlands of Scotland, omens of life and death have at one time or other been drawn from the position and state of the pebbles on the morning of All Saints' Day. The custom, thus found among three separate branches of the Celtic stock, probably dates from a period before their dispersion, or at least from a time when alien races had not yet driven home the wedges of separation between them.

In the Isle of Man also, another Celtic country, Hallowe'en was celebrated down to modern times by the kindling of fires, accompanied with all the usual ceremonies designed to prevent the baneful influence of fairies and witches.

§ 7 *The Midwinter Fires*—If the heathen of ancient Europe celebrated, as we have good reason to believe, the season of Midsummer with a great festival of fire, of which the traces have survived in many places down to our own time, it is natural to suppose that they should have observed with similar rites the corresponding season of Midwinter; for Midsummer and Midwinter, or, in more technical language, the summer solstice and the winter solstice, are the two great turning-points in the sun's apparent course through the sky, and from the standpoint of primitive man nothing might seem more appropriate than to kindle fires on earth at the two moments when the fire and heat of the great luminary in heaven begin to wane or to wax.

In modern Christendom the ancient fire-festival of the winter solstice appears to survive, or to have survived down to recent years, in the old custom of the Yule log, clog, or block, as it was variously called in England. The custom was widespread in Europe, but seems to have flourished especially in England, France, and among the South Slavs, at least the fullest accounts of the custom come from these quarters. That the Yule log was only the winter counterpart of the midsummer bonfire, kindled within doors instead of in the open air on account of the cold and inclement weather of the season, was pointed out long ago by our English antiquary John Brand; and the view is supported by the many quaint superstitions attaching to the Yule log, superstitions which have no apparent connexion with Christianity but carry their heathen origin plainly stamped upon them. But while the two solstitial celebrations were both festivals of fire, the necessity or desirability of holding the winter celebration within doors lent it the character of a private or domestic festivity, which contrasts strongly with the publicity of the summer celebration, at which the people gathered on some open space or

conspicuous height, kindled a huge bonfire in common, and danced and made merry round it together

Down to about the middle of the nineteenth century the old rite of the Yule log was kept up in some parts of Central Germany. Thus in the valleys of the Sieg and Lahn the Yule log, a heavy block of oak, was fitted into the floor of the hearth, where, though it glowed under the fire, it was hardly reduced to ashes within a year. When the new log was laid next year, the remains of the old one were ground to powder and strewed over the fields during the Twelve Nights, which was supposed to promote the growth of the crops. In some villages of Westphalia the practice was to withdraw the Yule log (*Christbrand*) from the fire so soon as it was slightly charred, it was then kept carefully to be replaced on the fire whenever a thunderstorm broke, because the people believed that lightning would not strike a house in which the Yule log was smouldering. In other villages of Westphalia the old custom was to tie up the Yule log in the last sheaf cut at harvest.

In several provinces of France, and particularly in Provence, the custom of the Yule log or *tréfour*, as it was called in many places, was long observed. A French writer of the seventeenth century denounces as superstitious "the belief that a log called the *tréfour* or Christmas brand, which you put on the fire for the first time on Christmas Eve and continue to put on the fire for a little while every day till Twelfth Night, can, if kept under the bed, protect the house for a whole year from fire and thunder, that it can prevent the inmates from having chilblains on their heels in winter, that it can cure the cattle of many maladies, that if a piece of it be steeped in the water which cows drink it helps them to calve, and lastly that if the ashes of the log be strewn on the fields it can save the wheat from mildew."

In some parts of Flanders and France the remains of the Yule log were regularly kept in the house under a bed as a protection against thunder and lightning, in Berry, when thunder was heard, a member of the family used to take a piece of the log and throw it on the fire, which was believed to avert the lightning. Again, in Perigord, the charcoal and ashes are carefully collected and kept for healing swollen glands, the part of the trunk which has not been burnt in the fire is used by ploughmen to make the wedge for their plough, because they allege that it causes the seeds to thrive better; and the women keep pieces of it till Twelfth Night for the sake of their chickens. Some people imagine that they will have as many chickens as there are sparks that fly out of the brands of the log when they shake them, and others place the extinct brands under the bed to drive away vermin. In various parts of France the charred log is thought to guard the house against sorcery as well as against lightning.

In England the customs and beliefs concerning the Yule log used to be similar. On the night of Christmas Eve, says the antiquary John Brand, "our ancestors were wont to light up candles of an uncommon size, called Christmas Candles, and lay a log of wood upon the fire,

called a Yule-clog or Christmas-block, to illuminate the house, and, as it were, to turn night into day " The old custom was to light the Yule log with a fragment of its predecessor, which had been kept throughout the year for the purpose, where it was so kept, the fiend could do no mischief The remains of the log were also supposed to guard the house against fire and lightning

To this day the ritual of bringing in the Yule log is observed with much solemnity among the Southern Slavs, especially the Serbians. The log is usually a block of oak, but sometimes of olive or beech. They seem to think that they will have as many calves, lambs, pigs, and kids as they strike sparks out of the burning log. Some people carry a piece of the log out to the fields to protect them against hail In Albania down to recent years it was a common custom to burn a Yule log at Christmas, and the ashes of the fire were scattered on the fields to make them fertile The Huzuls, a Slavonic people of the Carpathians, kindle fire by the friction of wood on Christmas Eve (Old Style, the fifth of January) and keep it burning till Twelfth Night

It is remarkable how common the belief appears to have been that the remains of the Yule log, if kept throughout the year, had power to protect the house against fire and especially against lightning As the Yule log was frequently of oak, it seems possible that this belief may be a relic of the old Aryan creed which associated the oak-tree with the god of thunder. Whether the curative and fertilising virtues ascribed to the ashes of the Yule log, which are supposed to heal cattle as well as men, to enable cows to calve, and to promote the fruitfulness of the earth, may not be derived from the same ancient source, is a question which deserves to be considered

§ 8 *The Need-fire*—The fire-festivals hitherto described are all celebrated periodically at certain stated times of the year But besides these regularly recurring celebrations the peasants in many parts of Europe have been wont from time immemorial to resort to a ritual of fire at irregular intervals in seasons of distress and calamity, above all when their cattle were attacked by epidemic disease No account of the popular European fire-festivals would be complete without some notice of these remarkable rites, which have all the greater claim on our attention because they may perhaps be regarded as the source and origin of all the other fire-festivals, certainly they must date from a very remote antiquity The general name by which they are known among the Teutonic peoples is need-fire Sometimes the need-fire was known as "wild fire," to distinguish it no doubt from the tame fire produced by more ordinary methods Among Slavonic peoples it is called "living fire"

The history of the custom can be traced from the early Middle Ages, when it was denounced by the Church as a heathen superstition, down to the first half of the nineteenth century, when it was still occasionally practised in various parts of Germany, England, Scotland, and Ireland Among Slavonic peoples it appears to have lingered even longer. The usual occasion for performing the rite was an

outbreak of plague or cattle-disease, for which the need-fire was believed to be an infallible remedy. The animals which were subjected to it included cows, pigs, horses, and sometimes geese. As a necessary preliminary to the kindling of the need-fire all other fires and lights in the neighbourhood were extinguished, so that not so much as a spark remained alight, for so long as even a night-light burned in a house, it was imagined that the need-fire could not kindle. Sometimes it was deemed enough to put out all the fires in the village, but sometimes the extinction extended to neighbouring villages or to a whole parish. In some parts of the Highlands of Scotland the rule was that all householders who dwelt within the two nearest running streams should put out their lights and fires on the day appointed. Usually the need-fire was made in the open air, but in some parts of Serbia it was kindled in a dark room, sometimes the place was a cross-way or a hollow in a road. In the Highlands of Scotland the proper places for performing the rite seem to have been knolls or small islands in rivers.

The regular method of producing the need-fire was by the friction of two pieces of wood; it might not be struck by flint and steel. Very exceptionally among some South Slavs we read of a practice of kindling a need-fire by striking a piece of iron on an anvil. Where the wood to be employed is specified, it is generally said to be oak, but on the Lower Rhine the fire was kindled by the friction of oak-wood or fir-wood. In Slavonic countries we hear of poplar, pear, and cornel wood being used for the purpose. Often the material is simply described as two pieces of dry wood. Sometimes nine different kinds of wood were deemed necessary, but rather perhaps to be burned in the bonfire than to be rubbed together for the production of the need-fire. The particular mode of kindling the need-fire varied in different districts, a very common one was this. Two poles were driven into the ground about a foot and a half from each other. Each pole had in the side facing the other a socket into which a smooth cross-piece or roller was fitted. The sockets were stuffed with linen, and the two ends of the roller were rammed tightly into the sockets. To make it more inflammable the roller was often coated with tar. A rope was then wound round the roller, and the free ends at both sides were gripped by two or more persons, who by pulling the rope to and fro caused the roller to revolve rapidly, till through the friction the linen in the sockets took fire. The sparks were immediately caught in tow or oakum and waved about in a circle until they burst into a bright glow, when straw was applied to it, and the blazing straw used to kindle the fuel that had been stacked to make the bonfire. Often a wheel, sometimes a cart-wheel or even a spinning-wheel, formed part of the mechanism, in Aberdeenshire it was called "the muckle wheel", in the island of Mull the wheel was turned from east to west over nine spindles of oak-wood. Sometimes we are merely told that two wooden planks were rubbed together. Sometimes it was prescribed that the cart-wheel used for fire-making and the axle

on which it turned should both be new. Similarly it was said that the rope which turned the roller should be new, if possible it should be woven of strands taken from a gallows rope with which people had been hanged, but this was a counsel of perfection rather than a strict necessity.

Various rules were also laid down as to the kind of persons who might or should make the need-fire. Sometimes it was said that the two persons who pulled the rope which twirled the roller should always be brothers or at least bear the same baptismal name; sometimes it was deemed sufficient if they were both chaste young men. In some villages of Brunswick people thought that if everybody who lent a hand in kindling the need-fire did not bear the same Christian name, they would labour in vain. In Silesia the tree employed to produce the need-fire used to be felled by a pair of twin brothers. In the western islands of Scotland the fire was kindled by eighty-one married men, who rubbed two great planks against each other, working in relays of nine; in North Uist the nine times nine who made the fire were all first-begotten sons, but we are not told whether they were married or single. Among the Serbians the need-fire is sometimes kindled by a boy and girl between eleven and fourteen years of age, who work stark naked in a dark room, sometimes it is made by an old man and an old woman also in the dark. In Bulgaria, too, the makers of need-fire strip themselves of their clothes, in Caithness they divested themselves of all kinds of metal. If after long rubbing of the wood no fire was elicited they concluded that some fire must still be burning in the village, so a strict search was made from house to house, any fire that might be found was put out, and the negligent householder punished or upbraided, indeed a heavy fine might be inflicted on him.

When the need-fire was at last kindled, the bonfire was lit from it, and as soon as the blaze had somewhat died down, the sick animals were driven over the glowing embers, sometimes in a regular order of precedence, first the pigs, next the cows, and last of all the horses. Sometimes they were driven twice or thrice through the smoke and flames, so that occasionally some of them were scorched to death. As soon as all the beasts were through, the young folk would rush wildly at the ashes and cinders, sprinkling and blackening each other with them, those who were most blackened would march in triumph behind the cattle into the village and would not wash themselves for a long time. From the bonfire people carried live embers home and used them to rekindle the fires in their houses. These brands, after being extinguished in water, they sometimes put in the mangers at which the cattle fed, and kept them there for a while. Ashes from the need-fire were also strewed on the fields to protect the crops against vermin, sometimes they were taken home to be employed as remedies in sickness, being sprinkled on the ailing part or mixed in water and drunk by the patient. In the western islands of Scotland and on the adjoining mainland, as soon as the fire on the domestic hearth had been rekindled from the need-

fire, a pot full of water was set on it, and the water thus heated was afterwards sprinkled upon the people infected with the plague or upon the cattle that were tainted by the murrain. Special virtue was attributed to the smoke of the bonfire, in Sweden fruit-trees and nets were fumigated with it, in order that the trees might bear fruit and the nets catch fish. In the Highlands of Scotland the need-fire was accounted a sovereign remedy for witchcraft. In the island of Mull, when the fire was kindled as a cure for the murrain, we hear of the rite being accompanied by the sacrifice of a sick heifer, which was cut in pieces and burnt. Slavonian and Bulgarian peasants conceive cattle-plague as a foul fiend or vampyre which can be kept at bay by interposing a barrier of fire between it and the herds. A similar conception may perhaps have originally everywhere underlain the use of the need-fire as a remedy for the murrain. It appears that in some parts of Germany the people did not wait for an outbreak of cattle-plague, but, taking time by the forelock, kindled a need-fire annually to prevent the calamity. Similarly in Poland the peasants are said to kindle fires in the village streets every year on St. Rochus's day and to drive the cattle thrice through them in order to protect the beasts against the murrain. We have seen that in the Hebrides the cattle were in like manner driven annually round the Beltane fires for the same purpose. In some cantons of Switzerland children still kindle a need-fire by the friction of wood for the sake of dispelling a mist.

## CHAPTER LXIII

### THE INTERPRETATION OF THE FIRE-FESTIVALS

§ I *On the Fire-festivals in general*—The foregoing survey of the popular fire-festivals of Europe suggests some general observations. In the first place we can hardly help being struck by the resemblance which the ceremonies bear to each other, at whatever time of the year and in whatever part of Europe they are celebrated. The custom of kindling great bonfires, leaping over them, and driving cattle through or round them would seem to have been practically universal throughout Europe, and the same may be said of the processions or races with blazing torches round fields, orchards, pastures, or cattle-stalls. Less widespread are the customs of hurling lighted discs into the air and trundling a burning wheel down hill. The ceremonial of the Yule log is distinguished from that of the other fire-festivals by the privacy and domesticity which characterise it, but this distinction may well be due simply to the rough weather of midwinter, which is apt not only to render a public assembly in the open air disagreeable, but also at any moment to defeat the object of the assembly by extinguishing the all-important fire under a downpour of rain or a fall of snow. Apart from these local or seasonal differences, the general resemblance between



the fire-festivals at all times of the year and in all places is tolerably close. And as the ceremonies themselves resemble each other, so do the benefits which the people expect to reap from them. Whether applied in the form of bonfires blazing at fixed points, or of torches carried about from place to place, or of embers and ashes taken from the smouldering heap of fuel, the fire is believed to promote the growth of the crops and the welfare of man and beast, either positively by stimulating them, or negatively by averting the dangers and calamities which threaten them from such causes as thunder and lightning, conflagration, blight, mildew, vermin, sterility, disease, and not least of all witchcraft

But we naturally ask, How did it come about that benefits so great and manifold were supposed to be attained by means so simple? In what way did people imagine that they could procure so many goods or avoid so many ills by the application of fire and smoke, of embers and ashes? Two different explanations of the fire-festivals have been given by modern enquirers. On the one hand it has been held that they are sun-charms or magical ceremonies intended, on the principle of imitative magic, to ensure a needful supply of sunshine for men, animals, and plants by kindling fires which mimic on earth the great source of light and heat in the sky. This was the view of Wilhelm Mannhardt. It may be called the solar theory. On the other hand it has been maintained that the ceremonial fires have no necessary reference to the sun but are simply purificatory in intention, being designed to burn up and destroy all harmful influences, whether these are conceived in a personal form as witches, demons, and monsters, or in an impersonal form as a sort of pervading taint or corruption of the air. This is the view of Dr Edward Westermarck and apparently of Professor Eugen Mogk. It may be called the purificatory theory. Obviously the two theories postulate two very different conceptions of the fire which plays the principal part in the rites. On the one view, the fire, like sunshine in our latitude, is a genial creative power which fosters the growth of plants and the development of all that makes for health and happiness; on the other view, the fire is a fierce destructive power which blasts and consumes all the noxious elements, whether spiritual or material, that menace the life of men, of animals, and of plants. According to the one theory the fire is a stimulant, according to the other it is a disinfectant, on the one view its virtue is positive, on the other it is negative.

Yet the two explanations, different as they are in the character which they attribute to the fire, are perhaps not wholly irreconcilable. If we assume that the fires kindled at these festivals were primarily intended to imitate the sun's light and heat, may we not regard the purificatory and disinfecting qualities, which popular opinion certainly appears to have ascribed to them, as attributes derived directly from the purificatory and disinfecting qualities of sunshine? In this way we might conclude that, while the imitation of sunshine in these ceremonies was primary and original, the purification attributed to

them was secondary and derivative. Such a conclusion, occupying an intermediate position between the two opposing theories and recognising an element of truth in both of them, was adopted by me in earlier editions of this work, but in the meantime Dr Westermarck has argued powerfully in favour of the purificatory theory alone, and I am bound to say that his arguments carry great weight, and that on a fuller review of the facts the balance of evidence seems to me to incline decidedly in his favour. However, the case is not so clear as to justify us in dismissing the solar theory without discussion, and accordingly I propose to adduce the considerations which tell for it before proceeding to notice those which tell against it. A theory which had the support of so learned and sagacious an investigator as W. Mannhardt is entitled to a respectful hearing.

§ 2 *The Solar Theory of the Fire-festivals*—In an earlier part of this work we saw that savages resort to charms for making sunshine, and it would be no wonder if primitive man in Europe did the same. Indeed, when we consider the cold and cloudy climate of Europe during a great part of the year, we shall find it natural that sun-charms should have played a much more prominent part among the superstitious practices of European peoples than among those of savages who live nearer the equator and who consequently are apt to get in the course of nature more sunshine than they want. This view of the festivals may be supported by various arguments drawn partly from their dates, partly from the nature of the rites, and partly from the influence which they are believed to exert upon the weather and on vegetation.

First, in regard to the dates of the festivals it can be no mere accident that two of the most important and widely spread of the festivals are timed to coincide more or less exactly with the summer and winter solstices, that is, with the two turning-points in the sun's apparent course in the sky when he reaches respectively his highest and his lowest elevation at noon. Indeed with respect to the mid-winter celebration of Christmas we are not left to conjecture, we know from the express testimony of the ancients that it was instituted by the church to supersede an old heathen festival of the birth of the sun, which was apparently conceived to be born again on the shortest day of the year, after which his light and heat were seen to grow till they attained their full maturity at midsummer. Therefore it is no very far-fetched conjecture to suppose that the Yule log, which figures so prominently in the popular celebration of Christmas, was originally designed to help the labouring sun of midwinter to rekindle his seemingly expiring light.

Not only the date of some of the festivals but the manner of their celebration suggests a conscious imitation of the sun. The custom of rolling a burning wheel down a hill, which is often observed at these ceremonies, might well pass for an imitation of the sun's course in the sky, and the imitation would be especially appropriate on Midsummer Day when the sun's annual declension begins. Indeed the custom

has been thus interpreted by some of those who have recorded it. Not less graphic, it may be said, is the mimicry of his apparent revolution by swinging a burning tar-barrel round a pole. Again, the common practice of throwing fiery discs, sometimes expressly said to be shaped like suns, into the air at the festivals may well be a piece of imitative magic. In these, as in so many cases, the magic force may be supposed to take effect through mimicry or sympathy · by imitating the desired result you actually produce it : by counterfeiting the sun's progress through the heavens you really help the luminary to pursue his celestial journey with punctuality and despatch. The name " fire of heaven," by which the midsummer fire is sometimes popularly known, clearly implies a consciousness of a connexion between the earthly and the heavenly flame.

Again, the manner in which the fire appears to have been originally kindled on these occasions has been alleged in support of the view that it was intended to be a mock-sun. As some scholars have perceived, it is highly probable that at the periodic festivals in former times fire was universally obtained by the friction of two pieces of wood. It is still so procured in some places both at the Easter and the Midsummer festivals, and it is expressly said to have been formerly so procured at the Beltane celebration both in Scotland and Wales. But what makes it nearly certain that this was once the invariable mode of kindling the fire at these periodic festivals is the analogy of the need-fire, which has almost always been produced by the friction of wood, and sometimes by the revolution of a wheel. It is a plausible conjecture that the wheel employed for this purpose represents the sun, and if the fires at the regularly recurring celebrations were formerly produced in the same way, it might be regarded as a confirmation of the view that they were originally sun-charms. In point of fact there is, as Kuhn has indicated, some evidence to show that the midsummer fire was originally thus produced. We have seen that many Hungarian swine-herds make fire on Midsummer Eve by rotating a wheel round a wooden axle wrapt in hemp, and that they drive their pigs through the fire thus made. At Obermedlingen, in Swabia, the " fire of heaven," as it was called, was made on St. Vitus's Day (the fifteenth of June) by igniting a cart-wheel, which, smeared with pitch and plaited with straw, was fastened on a pole twelve feet high, the top of the pole being inserted in the nave of the wheel. This fire was made on the summit of a mountain, and as the flame ascended, the people uttered a set form of words, with eyes and arms directed heavenward. Here the fixing of a wheel on a pole and igniting it suggests that originally the fire was produced, as in the case of the need-fire, by the revolution of a wheel. The day on which the ceremony takes place (the fifteenth of June) is near midsummer, and we have seen that in Masuren fire is, or used to be, actually made on Midsummer Day by turning a wheel rapidly about an oaken pole, though it is not said that the new fire so obtained is used to light a bonfire. However, we must bear in mind that in all such cases the use of a wheel may be merely a mechanical

device to facilitate the operation of fire-making by increasing the friction, it need not have any symbolical significance

Further, the influence which these fires, whether periodic or occasional, are supposed to exert on the weather and vegetation may be cited in support of the view that they are sun-charms, since the effects ascribed to them resemble those of sunshine. Thus, the French belief that in a rainy June the lighting of the midsummer bonfires will cause the rain to cease appears to assume that they can disperse the dark clouds and make the sun to break out in radiant glory, drying the wet earth and dripping trees. Similarly the use of the need-fire by Swiss children on foggy days for the purpose of clearing away the mist may very naturally be interpreted as a sun-charm. In the Vosges Mountains the people believe that the midsummer fires help to preserve the fruits of the earth and ensure good crops. In Sweden the warmth or cold of the coming season is inferred from the direction in which the flames of the May Day bonfire are blown, if they blow to the south, it will be warm, if to the north, cold. No doubt at present the direction of the flames is regarded merely as an augury of the weather, not as a mode of influencing it. But we may be pretty sure that this is one of the cases in which magic has dwindled into divination. So in the Eifel Mountains, when the smoke blows towards the corn-fields, this is an omen that the harvest will be abundant. But the older view may have been not merely that the smoke and flames prognosticated, but that they actually produced an abundant harvest, the heat of the flames acting like sunshine on the corn. Perhaps it was with this view that people in the Isle of Man lit fires to windward of their fields in order that the smoke might blow over them. So in South Africa, about the month of April, the Matabeles light huge fires to the windward of their gardens, "their idea being that the smoke, by passing over the crops, will assist the ripening of them." Among the Zulus also "medicine is burned on a fire placed to windward of the garden, the fumigation which the plants in consequence receive being held to improve the crop." Again, the idea of our European peasants that the corn will grow well as far as the blaze of the bonfire is visible, may be interpreted as a remnant of the belief in the quickening and fertilising power of the bonfires. The same belief, it may be argued, reappears in the notion that embers taken from the bonfires and inserted in the fields will promote the growth of the crops, and it may be thought to underlie the customs of sowing flax-seed in the direction in which the flames blow, of mixing the ashes of the bonfire with the seed-corn at sowing, of scattering the ashes by themselves over the field to fertilise it, and of incorporating a piece of the Yule log in the plough to make the seeds thrive. The opinion that the flax or hemp will grow as high as the flames rise or the people leap over them belongs clearly to the same class of ideas. Again, at Konz, on the banks of the Moselle, if the blazing wheel which was trundled down the hillside reached the river without being extinguished, this was hailed as a proof that the vintage would be abundant. So firmly was this belief

held that the successful performance of the ceremony entitled the villagers to levy a tax upon the owners of the neighbouring vineyards. Here the unextinguished wheel might be taken to represent an unclouded sun, which in turn would portend an abundant vintage. So the waggon-load of white wine which the villagers received from the vineyards round about might pass for a payment for the sunshine which they had procured for the grapes. Similarly in the Vale of Glamorgan a blazing wheel used to be trundled down hill on Midsummer Day, and if the fire were extinguished before the wheel reached the foot of the hill, the people expected a bad harvest; whereas if the wheel kept alight all the way down and continued to blaze for a long time, the farmers looked forward to heavy crops that summer. Here, again, it is natural to suppose that the rustic mind traced a direct connexion between the fire of the wheel and the fire of the sun, on which the crops are dependent.

But in popular belief the quickening and fertilising influence of the bonfires is not limited to the vegetable world, it extends also to animals. This plainly appears from the Irish custom of driving barren cattle through the midsummer fires, from the French belief that the Yule log steeped in water helps cows to calve, from the French and Serbian notion that there will be as many chickens, calves, lambs, and kids as there are sparks struck out of the Yule log, from the French custom of putting the ashes of the bonfires in the fowls' nests to make the hens lay eggs, and from the German practice of mixing the ashes of the bonfires with the drink of cattle in order to make the animals thrive. Further, there are clear indications that even human fecundity is supposed to be promoted by the genial heat of the fires. In Morocco the people think that childless couples can obtain offspring by leaping over the midsummer bonfire. It is an Irish belief that a girl who jumps thrice over the midsummer bonfire will soon marry and become the mother of many children, in Flanders women leap over the midsummer fires to ensure an easy delivery; in various parts of France they think that if a girl dances round nine fires she will be sure to marry within the year, and in Bohemia they fancy that she will do so if she merely sees nine of the bonfires. On the other hand, in Lechain people say that if a young man and woman, leaping over the midsummer fire together, escaped unsmirched, the young woman will not become a mother within twelve months the flames have not touched and fertilised her. In parts of Switzerland and France the lighting of the Yule log is accompanied by a prayer that the women may bear children, the she-goats bring forth kids, and the ewes drop lambs. The rule observed in some places that the bonfires should be kindled by the person who was last married seems to belong to the same class of ideas, whether it be that such a person is supposed to receive from, or to impart to, the fire a generative and fertilising influence. The common practice of lovers leaping over the fires hand in hand may very well have originated in a notion that thereby their marriage would be blessed with offspring, and the like motive would explain

the custom which obliges couples married within the year to dance to the light of torches. And the scenes of profligacy which appear to have marked the midsummer celebration among the Esthonians, as they once marked the celebration of May Day among ourselves, may have sprung, not from the mere licence of holiday-makers, but from a crude notion that such orgies were justified, if not required, by some mysterious bond which linked the life of man to the courses of the heavens at this turning-point of the year.

At the festivals which we are considering the custom of kindling bonfires is commonly associated with a custom of carrying lighted torches about the fields, the orchards, the pastures, the flocks and the herds; and we can hardly doubt that the two customs are only two different ways of attaining the same object, namely, the benefits which are believed to flow from the fire, whether it be stationary or portable. Accordingly if we accept the solar theory of the bonfires, we seem bound to apply it also to the torches, we must suppose that the practice of marching or running with blazing torches about the country is simply a means of diffusing far and wide the genial influence of the sunshine, of which these flickering flames are a feeble imitation. In favour of this view it may be said that sometimes the torches are carried about the fields for the express purpose of fertilising them, and with the same intention live coals from the bonfires are sometimes placed in the fields to prevent blight. On the eve of Twelfth Day in Normandy men, women, and children run wildly through the fields and orchards with lighted torches, which they wave about the branches and dash against the trunks of the fruit-trees for the sake of burning the moss and driving away the moles and field-mice. "They believe that the ceremony fulfils the double object of exorcising the vermin whose multiplication would be a real calamity, and of imparting fecundity to the trees, the fields, and even the cattle"; and they imagine that the more the ceremony is prolonged, the greater will be the crop of fruit next autumn. In Bohemia they say that the corn will grow as high as they fling the blazing besoms into the air. Nor are such notions confined to Europe. In Corea, a few days before the New Year festival, the eunuchs of the palace swing burning torches, chanting invocations the while, and this is supposed to ensure bountiful crops for the next season. The custom of trundling a burning wheel over the fields, which used to be observed in Poitou for the express purpose of fertilising them, may be thought to embody the same idea in a still more graphic form; since in this way the mock-sun itself, not merely its light and heat represented by torches, is made actually to pass over the ground which is to receive its quickening and kindly influence. Once more, the custom of carrying lighted brands round cattle is plainly equivalent to driving the animals through the bonfire; and if the bonfire is a sun-charm, the torches must be so also.

§ 3 *The Purificatory Theory of the Fire-festivals*—Thus far we have considered what may be said for the theory that at the European fire-festivals the fire is kindled as a charm to ensure an abundant supply

of sunshine for man and beast, for corn and fruits. It remains to consider what may be said against this theory and in favour of the view that in these rites fire is employed not as a creative but as a cleansing agent, which purifies men, animals, and plants by burning up and consuming the noxious elements, whether material or spiritual, which menace all living things with disease and death.

First, then, it is to be observed that the people who practise the fire-customs appear never to allege the solar theory in explanation of them, while on the contrary they do frequently and emphatically put forward the purificatory theory. This is a strong argument in favour of the purificatory and against the solar theory; for the popular explanation of a popular custom is never to be rejected except for grave cause. And in the present case there seems to be no adequate reason for rejecting it. The conception of fire as a destructive agent, which can be turned to account for the consumption of evil things, is so simple and obvious that it could hardly escape the minds even of the rude peasantry with whom these festivals originated. On the other hand the conception of fire as an emanation of the sun, or at all events as linked to it by a bond of physical sympathy, is far less simple and obvious; and though the use of fire as a charm to produce sunshine appears to be undeniable, nevertheless in attempting to explain popular customs we should never have recourse to a more recondite idea when a simpler one lies to hand and is supported by the explicit testimony of the people themselves. Now in the case of the fire-festivals the destructive aspect of fire is one upon which the people dwell again and again; and it is highly significant that the great evil against which the fire is directed appears to be witchcraft. Again and again we are told that the fires are intended to burn or repel the witches, and the intention is sometimes graphically expressed by burning an effigy of a witch in the fire. Hence, when we remember the great hold which the dread of witchcraft has had on the popular European mind in all ages, we may suspect that the primary intention of all these fire-festivals was simply to destroy or at all events get rid of the witches, who were regarded as the causes of nearly all the misfortunes and calamities that befall men, their cattle, and their crops.

This suspicion is confirmed when we examine the evils for which the bonfires and torches were supposed to provide a remedy. Foremost, perhaps, among these evils we may reckon the diseases of cattle, and of all the ills that witches are believed to work there is probably none which is so constantly insisted on as the harm they do to the herds, particularly by stealing the milk from the cows. Now it is significant that the need-fire, which may perhaps be regarded as the parent of the periodic fire-festivals, is kindled above all as a remedy for a murrain or other disease of cattle; and the circumstance suggests, what on general grounds seems probable, that the custom of kindling the need-fire goes back to a time when the ancestors of the European peoples subsisted chiefly on the products of their herds, and when agriculture as yet played a subordinate part in their lives. Witches

and wolves are the two great foes still dreaded by the herdsman in many parts of Europe, and we need not wonder that he should resort to fire as a powerful means of banning them both. Among Slavonic peoples it appears that the foes whom the need-fire is designed to combat are not so much living witches as vampyres and other evil spirits, and the ceremony aims rather at repelling these baleful beings than at actually consuming them in the flames. But for our present purpose these distinctions are immaterial. The important thing to observe is that among the Slavs the need-fire, which is probably the original of all the ceremonial fires now under consideration, is not a sun-charm, but clearly and unmistakably nothing but a means of protecting man and beast against the attacks of maleficent creatures, whom the peasant thinks to burn or scare by the heat of the fire, just as he might burn or scare wild animals.

Again, the bonfires are often supposed to protect the fields against hail and the homestead against thunder and lightning. But both hail and thunderstorms are frequently thought to be caused by witches, hence the fire which bans the witches necessarily serves at the same time as a talisman against hail, thunder, and lightning. Further, brands taken from the bonfires are commonly kept in the houses to guard them against conflagration, and though this may perhaps be done on the principle of homoeopathic magic, one fire being thought to act as a preventive of another, it is also possible that the intention may be to keep witch-incendiaries at bay. Again, people leap over the bonfires as a preventive of colic, and look at the flames steadily in order to preserve their eyes in good health; and both colic and sore eyes are in Germany, and probably elsewhere, set down to the machinations of witches. Once more, to leap over the midsummer fires or to circumambulate them is thought to prevent a person from feeling pains in his back at reaping; and in Germany such pains are called "witch-shots" and ascribed to witchcraft.

But if the bonfires and torches of the fire-festivals are to be regarded primarily as weapons directed against witches and wizards, it becomes probable that the same explanation applies not only to the flaming discs which are hurled into the air, but also to the burning wheels which are rolled down hill on these occasions; discs and wheels, we may suppose, are alike intended to burn the witches who hover invisible in the air or haunt unseen the fields, the orchards, and the vineyards on the hillside. Certainly witches are constantly thought to ride through the air on broomsticks or other equally convenient vehicles, and if they do so, how can you get at them so effectually as by hurling lighted missiles, whether discs, torches, or besoms, after them as they flit past overhead in the gloom? The South Slavonian peasant believes that witches ride in the dark hail-clouds, so he shoots at the clouds to bring down the hags, while he curses them, saying, "Curse, curse Herodias, thy mother is a heathen, damned of God and fettered through the Redeemer's blood." Also he brings out a pot of glowing charcoal on which he has thrown holy oil, laurel leaves,



and wormwood to make a smoke. The fumes are supposed to ascend to the clouds and stupefy the witches, so that they tumble down to earth. And in order that they may not fall soft, but may hurt themselves very much, the yokel hastily brings out a chair and tilts it bottom up so that the witch in falling may break her legs on the legs of the chair. Worse than that, he cruelly lays scythes, bill-hooks, and other formidable weapons edge upwards so as to cut and mangle the poor wretches when they drop plump upon them from the clouds.

On this view the fertility supposed to follow the application of fire in the form of bonfires, torches, discs, rolling wheels, and so forth, is not conceived as resulting directly from an increase of solar heat which the fire has magically generated; it is merely an indirect result obtained by freeing the reproductive powers of plants and animals from the fatal obstruction of witchcraft. And what is true of the reproduction of plants and animals may hold good also of the fertility of the human sexes. The bonfires are supposed to promote marriage and to procure offspring for childless couples. This happy effect need not flow directly from any quickening or fertilising energy in the fire; it may follow indirectly from the power of the fire to remove those obstacles which the spells of witches and wizards notoriously present to the union of man and wife.

On the whole, then, the theory of the purificatory virtue of the ceremonial fires appears more probable and more in accordance with the evidence than the opposing theory of their connexion with the sun.

## CHAPTER LXIV

### THE BURNING OF HUMAN BEINGS IN THE FIRES

§ 1. *The Burning of Effigies in the Fires* — We have still to ask, What is the meaning of burning effigies in the fire at these festivals? After the preceding investigation the answer to the question seems obvious. As the fires are often alleged to be kindled for the purpose of burning the witches, and as the effigy burnt in them is sometimes called "the Witch," we might naturally be disposed to conclude that all the effigies consumed in the flames on these occasions represent witches or warlocks, and that the custom of burning them is merely a substitute for burning the wicked men and women themselves, since on the principle of homoeopathic or imitative magic you practically destroy the witch herself in destroying her effigy. On the whole this explanation of the burning of straw figures in human shape at the festivals is perhaps the most probable.

Yet it may be that this explanation does not apply to all the cases, and that certain of them may admit and even require another interpretation. For the effigies so burned, as I have already remarked, can hardly be separated from the effigies of Death which are burned

or otherwise destroyed in spring, and grounds have been already given for regarding the so-called effigies of Death as really representatives of the tree-spirit or spirit of vegetation. Are the other effigies, which are burned in the spring and midsummer bonfires, susceptible of the same explanation? It would seem so. For just as the fragments of the so-called Death are stuck in the fields to make the crops grow, so the charred embers of the figure burned in the spring bonfires are sometimes laid on the fields in the belief that they will keep vermin from the crop. Again, the rule that the last married bride must leap over the fire in which the straw-man is burned on Shrove Tuesday, is probably intended to make her fruitful. But, as we have seen, the power of blessing women with offspring is a special attribute of tree-spirits; it is therefore a fair presumption that the burning effigy over which the bride must leap is a representative of the fertilising tree-spirit or spirit of vegetation. This character of the effigy, as representative of the spirit of vegetation, is almost unmistakable when the figure is composed of an unthreshed sheaf of corn or is covered from head to foot with flowers. Again, it is to be noted that, instead of a puppet, trees, either living or felled, are sometimes burned both in the spring and midsummer bonfires. Now, considering the frequency with which the tree-spirit is represented in human shape, it is hardly rash to suppose that when sometimes a tree and sometimes an effigy is burned in these fires, the effigy and the tree are regarded as equivalent to each other, each being a representative of the tree-spirit. This, again, is confirmed by observing, first, that sometimes the effigy which is to be burned is carried about simultaneously with a May-tree, the former being carried by the boys, the latter by the girls, and, second, that the effigy is sometimes tied to a living tree and burned with it. In these cases, we can scarcely doubt, the tree-spirit is represented, as we have found it represented before, in duplicate, both by the tree and by the effigy. That the true character of the effigy as a representative of the beneficent spirit of vegetation should sometimes be forgotten, is natural. The custom of burning a beneficent god is too foreign to later modes of thought to escape misinterpretation. Naturally enough the people who continued to burn his image came in time to identify it as the effigy of persons, whom, on various grounds, they regarded with aversion, such as Judas Iscariot, Luther, and a witch.

The general reasons for killing a god or his representative have been examined in a preceding chapter. But when the god happens to be a deity of vegetation, there are special reasons why he should die by fire. For light and heat are necessary to vegetable growth, and, on the principle of sympathetic magic, by subjecting the personal representative of vegetation to their influence, you secure a supply of these necessities for trees and crops. In other words, by burning the spirit of vegetation in a fire which represents the sun, you make sure that, for a time at least, vegetation shall have plenty of sun. It may be objected that, if the intention is simply to secure enough

sunshine for vegetation, this end would be better attained, on the principles of sympathetic magic, by merely passing the representative of vegetation through the fire instead of burning him. In point of fact this is sometimes done. In Russia, as we have seen, the straw figure of Kupalo is not burned in the midsummer fire, but merely carried backwards and forwards across it. But, for the reasons already given, it is necessary that the god should die, so next day Kupalo is stripped of her ornaments and thrown into a stream. In this Russian custom the passage of the image through the fire, if it is not simply a purification, may possibly be a sun-charm, the killing of the god is a separate act, and the mode of killing him—by drowning—is probably a rain-charm. But usually people have not thought it necessary to draw this fine distinction, for the various reasons already assigned, it is advantageous, they think, to expose the god of vegetation to a considerable degree of heat, and it is also advantageous to kill him, and they combine these advantages in a rough-and-ready way by burning him.

§ 2. *The Burning of Men and Animals in the Fires*—In the popular customs connected with the fire-festivals of Europe there are certain features which appear to point to a former practice of human sacrifice. We have seen reasons for believing that in Europe living persons have often acted as representatives of the tree-spirit and corn-spirit and have suffered death as such. There is no reason, therefore, why they should not have been burned, if any special advantages were likely to be attained by putting them to death in that way. The consideration of human suffering is not one which enters into the calculations of primitive man. Now, in the fire-festivals which we are discussing, the pretence of burning people is sometimes carried so far that it seems reasonable to regard it as a mitigated survival of an older custom of actually burning them. Thus in Aachen, as we saw, the man clad in peas-straw acts so cleverly that the children really believe he is being burned. At Jumièges in Normandy the man clad all in green, who bore the title of the Green Wolf, was pursued by his comrades, and when they caught him they feigned to fling him upon the midsummer bonfire. Similarly at the Beltane fires in Scotland the pretended victim was seized, and a show made of throwing him into the flames, and for some time afterwards people affected to speak of him as dead. Again, in the Hallowe'en bonfires of North-eastern Scotland we may perhaps detect a similar pretence in the custom observed by a lad of lying down as close to the fire as possible and allowing the other lads to leap over him. The titular king at Aix, who reigned for a year and danced the first dance round the midsummer bonfire, may perhaps in days of old have discharged the less agreeable duty of serving as fuel for that fire which in later times he only kindled. In the following customs Mannhardt is probably right in recognising traces of an old custom of burning a leaf-clad representative of the spirit of vegetation. At Wolfeck, in Austria, on Midsummer Day, a boy completely clad in green fir branches

goes from house to house, accompanied by a noisy crew, collecting wood for the bonfire As he gets the wood he sings :

*" Forest trees I want,  
No sour milk for me,*

*But beer and wine,  
So can the wood-man be jolly and gay "*

In some parts of Bavaria, also, the boys who go from house to house collecting fuel for the midsummer bonfire envelop one of their number from head to foot in green branches of firs, and lead him by a rope through the whole village. At Moosheim, in Wurtemberg, the festival of St John's Fire usually lasted for fourteen days, ending on the second Sunday after Midsummer Day. On this last day the bonfire was left in charge of the children, while the older people retired to a wood Here they encased a young fellow in leaves and twigs, who, thus disguised, went to the fire, scattered it, and trod it out All the people present fled at the sight of him

But it seems possible to go farther than this. Of human sacrifices offered on these occasions the most unequivocal traces, as we have seen, are those which, about a hundred years ago, still lingered at the Beltane fires in the Highlands of Scotland, that is, among a Celtic people who, situated in a remote corner of Europe and almost completely isolated from foreign influence, had till then conserved their old heathenism better perhaps than any other people in the West of Europe. It is significant, therefore, that human sacrifices by fire are known, on unquestionable evidence, to have been systematically practised by the Celts The earliest description of these sacrifices has been bequeathed to us by Julius Caesar. As conqueror of the hitherto independent Celts of Gaul, Caesar had ample opportunity of observing the national Celtic religion and manners, while these were still fresh and crisp from the native mint and had not yet been fused in the melting-pot of Roman civilisation With his own notes Caesar appears to have incorporated the observations of a Greek explorer, by name Posidonius, who travelled in Gaul about fifty years before Caesar carried the Roman arms to the English Channel The Greek geographer Strabo and the historian Diodorus seem also to have derived their descriptions of the Celtic sacrifices from the work of Posidonius, but independently of each other, and of Caesar, for each of the three derivative accounts contains some details which are not to be found in either of the others By combining them, therefore, we can restore the original account of Posidonius with some probability, and thus obtain a picture of the sacrifices offered by the Celts of Gaul at the close of the second century before our era The following seem to have been the main outlines of the custom Condemned criminals were reserved by the Celts in order to be sacrificed to the gods at a great festival which took place once in every five years. The more there were of such victims, the greater was believed to be the fertility of the land. If there were not enough criminals to furnish victims, captives taken in war were immolated to supply the deficiency. When the time came the victims were sacrificed by the Druids or

priests. Some they shot down with arrows, some they impaled, and some they burned alive in the following manner. Colossal images of wicker-work or of wood and grass were constructed, these were filled with live men, cattle, and animals of other kinds; fire was then applied to the images, and they were burned with their living contents.

Such were the great festivals held once every five years. But besides these quinquennial festivals, celebrated on so grand a scale, and with, apparently, so large an expenditure of human life, it seems reasonable to suppose that festivals of the same sort, only on a lesser scale, were held annually, and that from these annual festivals are lineally descended some at least of the fire-festivals which, with their traces of human sacrifices, are still celebrated year by year in many parts of Europe. The gigantic images constructed of osiers or covered with grass in which the Druids enclosed their victims remind us of the leafy framework in which the human representative of the tree-spirit is still so often encased. Hence, seeing that the fertility of the land was apparently supposed to depend upon the due performance of these sacrifices, Mannhardt interpreted the Celtic victims, cased in osiers and grass, as representatives of the tree-spirit or spirit of vegetation.

These wicker giants of the Druids seem to have had till lately, if not down to the present time, their representatives at the spring and midsummer festivals of modern Europe. At Douay, down at least to the early part of the nineteenth century, a procession took place annually on the Sunday nearest to the seventh of July. The great feature of the procession was a colossal figure, some twenty or thirty feet high, made of osiers, and called "the giant," which was moved through the streets by means of rollers and ropes worked by men who were enclosed within the effigy. The figure was armed as a knight with lance and sword, helmet and shield. Behind him marched his wife and his three children, all constructed of osiers on the same principle, but on a smaller scale. At Dunkirk the procession of the giants took place on Midsummer Day, the twenty-fourth of June. The festival, which was known as the *Folles of Dunkirk*, attracted multitudes of spectators. The giant was a huge figure of wicker-work, occasionally as much as forty-five feet high, dressed in a long blue robe with gold stripes, which reached to his feet, concealing the dozen or more men who made it dance and bob its head to the spectators. This colossal effigy went by the name of *Papa Reuss*, and carried in its pocket a bouncing infant of *Brobdignagian* proportions. The rear was brought up by the daughter of the giant, constructed, like her sire, of wicker-work, and little, if at all, inferior to him in size. Most towns and even villages of Brabant and Flanders have, or used to have, similar wicker giants which were annually led about to the delight of the populace, who loved these grotesque figures, spoke of them with patriotic enthusiasm, and never wearied of gazing at them. At Antwerp the giant was so big that no gate in the city was large enough to let him go through; hence he could not visit his

brother giants in neighbouring towns, as the other Belgian giants used to do on solemn occasions.

In England artificial giants seem to have been a standing feature of the midsummer festival. A writer of the sixteenth century speaks of "Midsommer pageants in London, where to make the people wonder, are set forth great and ugle gyants marching as if they were alive, and armed at all points, but within they are stuffed full of browne paper and tow, which the shrewd boyes, underpeering, do guilefully discover, and turne to a greate derision." At Chester the annual pageant on Midsummer Eve included the effigies of four giants, with animals, hobby-horses, and other figures. At Coventry it appears that the giant's wife figured beside the giant. At Burford, in Oxfordshire, Midsummer Eve used to be celebrated with great jollity by the carrying of a giant and a dragon up and down the town. The last survivor of these perambulating English giants lingered at Salisbury, where an antiquary found him mouldering to decay in the neglected hall of the Tailors' Company about the year 1844. His bodily framework was of lath and hoop, like the one which used to be worn by Jack-in-the-Green on May Day.

In these cases the giants merely figured in the processions. But sometimes they were burned in the summer bonfires. Thus the people of the Rue aux Ours in Paris used annually to make a great wicker-work figure, dressed as a soldier, which they promenaded up and down the streets for several days, and solemnly burned on the third of July, the crowd of spectators singing *Salve Regina*. A personage who bore the title of king presided over the ceremony with a lighted torch in his hand. The burning fragments of the image were scattered among the people, who eagerly scrambled for them. The custom was abolished in 1743. In Brie, Isle de France, a wicker-work giant, eighteen feet high, was annually burned on Midsummer Eve.

Again, the Druidical custom of burning live animals, enclosed in wicker-work, has its counterpart at the spring and midsummer festivals. At Luchon in the Pyrenees on Midsummer Eve "a hollow column, composed of strong wickerwork, is raised to the height of about sixty feet in the centre of the principal suburb, and interlaced with green foliage up to the very top; while the most beautiful flowers and shrubs procurable are artistically arranged in groups below, so as to form a sort of background to the scene. The column is then filled with combustible materials, ready for ignition. At an appointed hour—about 8 P.M.—a grand procession, composed of the clergy, followed by young men and maidens in holiday attire, pour forth from the town chanting hymns, and take up their position around the column. Meanwhile, bonfires are lit, with beautiful effect, in the surrounding hills. As many living serpents as could be collected are now thrown into the column, which is set on fire at the base by means of torches, armed with which about fifty boys and men dance around with frantic gestures. The serpents, to avoid the flames, wriggle their way to the top, whence they are seen lashing out laterally until finally obliged to



rites of fire, including their burnt sacrifices of men and animals, at the beginning of May or the beginning of November rather than at Midsummer

We have still to ask, What is the meaning of such sacrifices? Why were men and animals burnt to death at these festivals? If we are right in interpreting the modern European fire-festivals as attempts to break the power of witchcraft by burning or banning the witches and warlocks, it seems to follow that we must explain the human sacrifices of the Celts in the same manner, that is, we must suppose that the men whom the Druids burnt in wicker-work images were condemned to death on the ground that they were witches or wizards, and that the mode of execution by fire was chosen because burning alive is deemed the surest mode of getting rid of these noxious and dangerous beings. The same explanation would apply to the cattle and wild animals of many kinds which the Celts burned along with the men. They, too, we may conjecture, were supposed to be either under the spell of witchcraft or actually to be the witches and wizards, who had transformed themselves into animals for the purpose of prosecuting their infernal plots against the welfare of their fellow-creatures. This conjecture is confirmed by the observation that the victims most commonly burned in modern bonfires have been cats, and that cats are precisely the animals into which, with the possible exception of hares, witches were most usually supposed to transform themselves. Again, we have seen that serpents and foxes used sometimes to be burnt in the midsummer fires; and Welsh and German witches are reported to have assumed the form both of foxes and serpents. In short, when we remember the great variety of animals whose forms witches can assume at pleasure, it seems easy on this hypothesis to account for the variety of living creatures that have been burnt at festivals both in ancient Gaul and modern Europe, all these victims, we may surmise, were doomed to the flames, not because they were animals, but because they were believed to be witches who had taken the shape of animals for their nefarious purposes. One advantage of explaining the ancient Celtic sacrifices in this way is that it introduces, as it were, a harmony and consistency into the treatment which Europe has meted out to witches from the earliest times down to about two centuries ago, when the growing influence of rationalism discredited the belief in witchcraft and put a stop to the custom of burning witches. Be that as it may, we can now perhaps understand why the Druids believed that the more persons they sentenced to death, the greater would be the fertility of the land. To a modern reader the connexion at first sight may not be obvious between the activity of the hangman and the productivity of the earth. But a little reflection may satisfy him that when the criminals who perish at the stake or on the gallows are witches, whose delight it is to blight the crops of the farmer or to lay them low under storms of hail, the execution of these wretches is really calculated to ensure an abundant harvest by removing one of the



principal causes which paralyse the efforts and blast the hopes of the husbandman

The Druidical sacrifices which we are considering were explained in a different way by W. Mannhardt. He supposed that the men whom the Druids burned in wicker-work images represented the spirits of vegetation, and accordingly that the custom of burning them was a magical ceremony intended to secure the necessary sunshine for the crops. Similarly, he seems to have inclined to the view that the animals which used to be burnt in the bonfires represented the corn-spirit, which, as we saw in an earlier part of this work, is often supposed to assume the shape of an animal. This theory is no doubt tenable, and the great authority of W. Mannhardt entitles it to careful consideration. I adopted it in former editions of this book, but on reconsideration it seems to me on the whole to be less probable than the theory that the men and animals burnt in the fires perished in the character of witches. This latter view is strongly supported by the testimony of the people who celebrate the fire-festivals, since a popular name for the custom of kindling the fires is "burning the witches," effigies of witches are sometimes consumed in the flames, and the fires, their embers, or their ashes are supposed to furnish protection against witchcraft. On the other hand there is little to show that the effigies or the animals burnt in the fires are regarded by the people as representatives of the vegetation-spirit, and that the bonfires are sun-charms. With regard to serpents in particular, which used to be burnt in the midsummer fire at Luchon, I am not aware of any certain evidence that in Europe snakes have been regarded as embodiments of the tree-spirit or corn-spirit, though in other parts of the world the conception appears to be not unknown. Whereas the popular faith in the transformation of witches into animals is so general and deeply rooted, and the fear of these uncanny beings is so strong, that it seems safer to suppose that the cats and other animals which were burnt in the fire suffered death as embodiments of witches than that they perished as representatives of vegetation-spirits.

## CHAPTER LXV

### BALDER AND THE MISTLETOE

THE reader may remember that the preceding account of the popular fire-festivals of Europe was suggested by the myth of the Norse god Balder, who is said to have been slain by a branch of mistletoe and burnt in a great fire. We have now to enquire how far the customs which have been passed in review help to shed light on the myth. In this enquiry it may be convenient to begin with the mistletoe, the instrument of Balder's death.

From time immemorial the mistletoe has been the object of super-

stitious veneration in Europe It was worshipped by the Druids, as we learn from a famous passage of Pliny After enumerating the different kinds of mistletoe, he proceeds · " In treating of this subject, the admiration in which the mistletoe is held throughout Gaul ought not to pass unnoticed The Druids, for so they call their wizards, esteem nothing more sacred than the mistletoe and the tree on which it grows, provided only that the tree is an oak But apart from this they choose oak-woods for their sacred groves and perform no sacred rites without oak-leaves , so that the very name of Druids may be regarded as a Greek appellation derived from their worship of the oak For they believe that whatever grows on these trees is sent from heaven, and is a sign that the tree has been chosen by the god himself The mistletoe is very rarely to be met with , but when it is found, they gather it with solemn ceremony This they do above all on the sixth day of the moon, from whence they date the beginnings of their months, of their years, and of their thirty years' cycle, because by the sixth day the moon has plenty of vigour and has not run half its course. After due preparations have been made for a sacrifice and a feast under the tree, they hail it as the universal healer and bring to the spot two white bulls, whose horns have never been bound before A priest clad in a white robe climbs the tree and with a golden sickle cuts the mistletoe, which is caught in a white cloth Then they sacrifice the victims, praying that God may make his own gift to prosper with those upon whom he has bestowed it. They believe that a potion prepared from mistletoe will make barren animals to bring forth, and that the plant is a remedy against all poison "

In another passage Pliny tells us that in medicine the mistletoe which grows on an oak was esteemed the most efficacious, and that its efficacy was by some superstitious people supposed to be increased if the plant was gathered on the first day of the moon without the use of iron, and if when gathered it was not allowed to touch the earth , oak-mistletoe thus obtained was deemed a cure for epilepsy , carried about by women it assisted them to conceive ; and it healed ulcers most effectually, if only the sufferer chewed a piece of the plant and laid another piece on the sore Yet again, he says that mistletoe was supposed, like vinegar and an egg, to be an excellent means of extinguishing a fire.

If in these latter passages Pliny refers, as he apparently does, to the beliefs current among his contemporaries in Italy, it will follow that the Druids and the Italians were to some extent agreed as to the valuable properties possessed by mistletoe which grows on an oak , both of them deemed it an effectual remedy for a number of ailments, and both of them ascribed to it a quickening virtue, the Druids believing that a potion prepared from mistletoe would fertilise barren cattle, and the Italians holding that a piece of mistletoe carried about by a woman would help her to conceive a child Further, both peoples thought that if the plant were to exert its medicinal properties it must be gathered in a certain way and at a certain time. It might not be

cut with iron, hence the Druids cut it with gold, and it might not touch the earth, hence the Druids caught it in a white cloth. In choosing the time for gathering the plant, both peoples were determined by observation of the moon, only they differed as to the particular day of the moon, the Italians preferring the first, and the Druids the sixth.

With these beliefs of the ancient Gauls and Italians as to the wonderful medicinal properties of mistletoe we may compare the similar beliefs of the modern Aino of Japan. We read that they, "like many nations of the Northern origin, hold the mistletoe in peculiar veneration. They look upon it as a medicine, good in almost every disease, and it is sometimes taken in food and at others separately as a decoction. The leaves are used in preference to the berries, the latter being of too sticky a nature for general purposes. . . But many, too, suppose this plant to have the power of making the gardens bear plentifully. When used for this purpose, the leaves are cut up into fine pieces, and, after having been prayed over, are sown with the millet and other seeds, a little also being eaten with the food. Barren women have also been known to eat the mistletoe, in order to be made to bear children. That mistletoe which grows upon the willow is supposed to have the greatest efficacy. This is because the willow is looked upon by them as being an especially sacred tree."

Thus the Aino agree with the Druids in regarding mistletoe as a cure for almost every disease, and they agree with the ancient Italians that applied to women it helps them to bear children. Again, the Druidical notion that the mistletoe was an "all-healer" or panacea may be compared with a notion entertained by the Walos of Senegambia. These people "have much veneration for a sort of mistletoe, which they call *tob*; they carry leaves of it on their persons when they go to war as a preservative against wounds, just as if the leaves were real talismans (*gris-gris*). " The French writer who records this practice adds: "Is it not very curious that the mistletoe should be in this part of Africa what it was in the superstitions of the Gauls? This prejudice, common to the two countries, may have the same origin, blacks and whites will doubtless have seen, each of them for themselves, something supernatural in a plant which grows and flourishes without having roots in the earth. May they not have believed, in fact, that it was a plant fallen from the sky, a gift of the divinity?"

This suggestion as to the origin of the superstition is strongly confirmed by the Druidical belief, reported by Pliny, that whatever grew on an oak was sent from heaven and was a sign that the tree had been chosen by the god himself. Such a belief explains why the Druids cut the mistletoe, not with a common knife, but with a golden sickle, and why, when cut, it was not suffered to touch the earth; probably they thought that the celestial plant would have been profaned and its marvellous virtue lost by contact with the ground. With the ritual observed by the Druids in cutting the mistletoe we may compare the ritual which in Cambodia is prescribed in a similar

case. They say that when you see an orchid growing as a parasite on a tamarind tree, you should dress in white, take a new earthenware pot, then climb the tree at noon, break off the plant, put it in the pot and let the pot fall to the ground. After that you make in the pot a decoction which confers the gift of invulnerability. Thus just as in Africa the leaves of one parasitic plant are supposed to render the wearer invulnerable, so in Cambodia a decoction made from another parasitic plant is considered to render the same service to such as make use of it, whether by drinking or washing. We may conjecture that in both places the notion of invulnerability is suggested by the position of the plant, which, occupying a place of comparative security above the ground, appears to promise to its fortunate possessor a similar security from some of the ills that beset the life of man on earth. We have already met with examples of the store which the primitive mind sets on such vantage grounds.

Whatever may be the origin of these beliefs and practices concerning the mistletoe, certain it is that some of them have their analogies in the folk-lore of modern European peasants. For example, it is laid down as a rule in various parts of Europe that mistletoe may not be cut in the ordinary way but must be shot or knocked down with stones from the tree on which it is growing. Thus, in the Swiss canton of Aargau "all parasitic plants are esteemed in a certain sense holy by the country folk, but most particularly so the mistletoe growing on an oak. They ascribe great powers to it, but shrink from cutting it off in the usual manner. Instead of that they procure it in the following manner. When the sun is in Sagittarius and the moon is on the wane, on the first, third, or fourth day before the new moon, one ought to shoot down with an arrow the mistletoe of an oak and to catch it with the left hand as it falls. Such mistletoe is a remedy for every ailment of children." Here among the Swiss peasants, as among the Druids of old, special virtue is ascribed to mistletoe which grows on an oak. It may not be cut in the usual way. It must be caught as it falls to the ground; and it is esteemed a panacea for all diseases, at least of children. In Sweden, also, it is a popular superstition that if mistletoe is to possess its peculiar virtue, it must either be shot down out of the oak or knocked down with stones. Similarly, "so late as the early part of the nineteenth century, people in Wales believed that for the mistletoe to have any power, it must be shot or struck down with stones off the tree where it grew."

Again, in respect of the healing virtues of mistletoe the opinion of modern peasants, and even of the learned, has to some extent agreed with that of the ancients. The Druids appear to have called the plant, or perhaps the oak on which it grew, the "all-healer", and "all-healer" is said to be still a name of the mistletoe in the modern Celtic speech of Brittany, Wales, Ireland, and Scotland. On St John's morning (Midsummer morning) peasants of Piedmont and Lombardy go out to search the oak-leaves for the "oil of St John," which is supposed to heal all wounds made with cutting instruments.

Originally, perhaps, the "oil of St John" was simply the mistletoe, or a decoction made from it. For in Holstein the mistletoe, especially oak-mistletoe, is still regarded as a panacea for green wounds and as a sure charm to secure success in hunting, and at Lacauene, in the south of France, the old Druidical belief in the mistletoe as an antidote to all poisons still survives among the peasantry, they apply the plant to the stomach of the sufferer or give him a decoction of it to drink. Again, the ancient belief that mistletoe is a cure for epilepsy has survived in modern times not only among the ignorant but among the learned. Thus in Sweden persons afflicted with the falling sickness think they can ward off attacks of the malady by carrying about with them a knife which has a handle of oak mistletoe; and in Germany for a similar purpose pieces of mistletoe used to be hung round the necks of children. In the French province of Bourbonnais a popular remedy for epilepsy is a decoction of mistletoe which has been gathered on an oak on St John's Day and boiled with rye-flour. So at Bottesford in Lincolnshire a decoction of mistletoe is supposed to be a palliative for this terrible disease. Indeed mistletoe was recommended as a remedy for the falling sickness by high medical authorities in England and Holland down to the eighteenth century.

However, the opinion of the medical profession as to the curative virtues of mistletoe has undergone a radical alteration. Whereas the Druids thought that mistletoe cured everything, modern doctors appear to think that it cures nothing. If they are right, we must conclude that the ancient and widespread faith in the medicinal virtue of mistletoe is a pure superstition based on nothing better than the fanciful inferences which ignorance has drawn from the parasitic nature of the plant, its position high up on the branch of a tree seeming to protect it from the dangers to which plants and animals are subject on the surface of the ground. From this point of view we can perhaps understand why mistletoe has so long and so persistently been prescribed as a cure for the falling sickness. As mistletoe cannot fall to the ground because it is rooted on the branch of a tree high above the earth, it seems to follow as a necessary consequence that an epileptic patient cannot possibly fall down in a fit so long as he carries a piece of mistletoe in his pocket or a decoction of mistletoe in his stomach. Such a train of reasoning would probably be regarded even now as cogent by a large portion of the human species.

Again the ancient Italian opinion that mistletoe extinguishes fire appears to be shared by Swedish peasants, who hang up bunches of oak-mistletoe on the ceilings of their rooms as a protection against harm in general and conflagration in particular. A hint as to the way in which mistletoe comes to be possessed of this property is furnished by the epithet "thunder-besom," which people of the Aargau canton in Switzerland apply to the plant. For a thunder-besom is a shaggy, bushy excrescence on branches of trees, which is popularly believed to be produced by a flash of lightning; hence in Bohemia a thunder-besom burnt in the fire protects the house against being struck by

a thunder-bolt. Being itself a product of lightning it naturally serves, on homoeopathic principles, as a protection against lightning, in fact as a kind of lightning-conductor. Hence the fire which mistletoe in Sweden is designed especially to avert from houses may be fire kindled by lightning, though no doubt the plant is equally effective against conflagration in general

Again, mistletoe acts as a master-key as well as a lightning-conductor; for it is said to open all locks. But perhaps the most precious of all the virtues of mistletoe is that it affords efficient protection against sorcery and witchcraft. That, no doubt, is the reason why in Austria a twig of mistletoe is laid on the threshold as a preventive of nightmare, and it may be the reason why in the north of England they say that if you wish your dairy to thrive you should give your bunch of mistletoe to the first cow that calves after New Year's Day, for it is well known that nothing is so fatal to milk and butter as witchcraft. Similarly in Wales, for the sake of ensuring good luck to the dairy, people used to give a branch of mistletoe to the first cow that gave birth to a calf after the first hour of the New Year, and in rural districts of Wales, where mistletoe abounded, there was always a profusion of it in the farmhouses. When mistletoe was scarce, Welsh farmers used to say, "No mistletoe, no luck", but if there was a fine crop of mistletoe, they expected a fine crop of corn. In Sweden mistletoe is diligently sought after on St John's Eve, the people "believing it to be, in a high degree, possessed of mystic qualities, and that if a sprig of it be attached to the ceiling of the dwelling-house, the horse's stall, or the cow's crib, the Troll will then be powerless to injure either man or beast."

With regard to the time when the mistletoe should be gathered opinions have varied. The Druids gathered it above all on the sixth day of the moon, the ancient Italians apparently on the first day of the moon. In modern times some have preferred the full moon of March and others the waning moon of winter when the sun is in Sagittarius. But the favourite time would seem to be Midsummer Eve or Midsummer Day. We have seen that both in France and Sweden special virtues are ascribed to mistletoe gathered at Midsummer. The rule in Sweden is that "mistletoe must be cut on the night of Midsummer Eve when sun and moon stand in the sign of their might." Again, in Wales it was believed that a sprig of mistletoe gathered on St John's Eve (Midsummer Eve), or at any time before the berries appeared, would induce dreams of omen, both good and bad, if it were placed under the pillow of the sleeper. Thus mistletoe is one of the many plants whose magical or medicinal virtues are believed to culminate with the culmination of the sun on the longest day of the year. Hence it seems reasonable to conjecture that in the eyes of the Druids, also, who revered the plant so highly, the sacred mistletoe may have acquired a double portion of its mystic qualities at the solstice in June, and that accordingly they may have regularly cut it with solemn ceremony on Midsummer Eve.

Be that as it may, certain it is that the mistletoe, the instrument

of Balder's death, has been regularly gathered for the sake of its mystic qualities on Midsummer Eve in Scandinavia, Balder's home. The plant is found commonly growing on pear-trees, oaks, and other trees in thick damp woods throughout the more temperate parts of Sweden. Thus one of the two main incidents of Balder's myth is reproduced in the great midsummer festival of Scandinavia. But the other main incident of the myth, the burning of Balder's body on a pyre, has also its counterpart in the bonfires which still blaze, or blazed till lately, in Denmark, Norway, and Sweden on Midsummer Eve. It does not appear, indeed, that any effigy is burned in these bonfires, but the burning of an effigy is a feature which might easily drop out after its meaning was forgotten. And the name of Balder's balefires (*Balder's Bålar*), by which these midsummer fires were formerly known in Sweden, puts their connexion with Balder beyond the reach of doubt, and makes it probable that in former times either a living representative or an effigy of Balder was annually burned in them. Midsummer was the season sacred to Balder, and the Swedish poet Tegner, in placing the burning of Balder at midsummer, may very well have followed an old tradition that the summer solstice was the time when the good god came to his untimely end.

Thus it has been shown that the leading incidents of the Balder myth have their counterparts in those fire-festivals of our European peasantry which undoubtedly date from a time long prior to the introduction of Christianity. The pretence of throwing the victim chosen by lot into the Beltane fire, and the similar treatment of the man, the future Green Wolf, at the midsummer bonfire in Normandy, may naturally be interpreted as traces of an older custom of actually burning human beings on these occasions, and the green dress of the Green Wolf, coupled with the leafy envelope of the young fellow who trod out the midsummer fire at Moosheim, seems to hint that the persons who perished at these festivals did so in the character of tree-spirits or deities of vegetation. From all this we may reasonably infer that in the Balder myth on the one hand, and the fire-festivals and custom of gathering mistletoe on the other hand, we have, as it were, the two broken and dissevered halves of an original whole. In other words, we may assume with some degree of probability that the myth of Balder's death was not merely a myth, that is, a description of physical phenomena in imagery borrowed from human life, but that it was at the same time the story which people told to explain why they annually burned a human representative of the god and cut the mistletoe with solemn ceremony. If I am right, the story of Balder's tragic end formed, so to say, the text of the sacred drama which was acted year by year as a magical rite to cause the sun to shine, trees to grow, crops to thrive, and to guard man and beast from the baleful arts of fairies and trolls, of witches and warlocks. The tale belonged, in short, to that class of nature myths which are meant to be supplemented by ritual, here, as so often, myth stood to magic in the relation of theory to practice.

But if the victims—the human Balders—who died by fire, whether in spring or at midsummer, were put to death as living embodiments of tree-spirits or deities of vegetation, it would seem that Balder himself must have been a tree-spirit or deity of vegetation. It becomes desirable, therefore, to determine, if we can, the particular kind of tree or trees, of which a personal representative was burned at the fire-festivals. For we may be quite sure that it was not as a representative of vegetation in general that the victim suffered death. The idea of vegetation in general is too abstract to be primitive. Most probably the victim at first represented a particular kind of sacred tree. But of all European trees none has such claims as the oak to be considered as pre-eminently the sacred tree of the Aryans. We have seen that its worship is attested for all the great branches of the Aryan stock in Europe, hence we may certainly conclude that the tree was venerated by the Aryans in common before the dispersion, and that their primitive home must have lain in a land which was clothed with forests of oak.

Now, considering the primitive character and remarkable similarity of the fire-festivals observed by all the branches of the Aryan race in Europe, we may infer that these festivals form part of the common stock of religious observances which the various peoples carried with them in their wanderings from their old home. But, if I am right, an essential feature of those primitive fire-festivals was the burning of a man who represented the tree-spirit. In view, then, of the place occupied by the oak in the religion of the Aryans, the presumption is that the tree so represented at the fire-festivals must originally have been the oak. So far as the Celts and Lithuanians are concerned, this conclusion will perhaps hardly be contested. But both for them and for the Germans it is confirmed by a remarkable piece of religious conservatism. The most primitive method known to man of producing fire is by rubbing two pieces of wood against each other till they ignite, and we have seen that this method is still used in Europe for kindling sacred fires such as the need-fire, and that most probably it was formerly resorted to at all the fire-festivals under discussion. Now it is sometimes required that the need-fire, or other sacred fire, should be made by the friction of a particular kind of wood, and when the kind of wood is prescribed, whether among Celts, Germans, or Slavs, that wood appears to be generally the oak. But if the sacred fire was regularly kindled by the friction of oak-wood, we may infer that originally the fire was also fed with the same material. In point of fact, it appears that the perpetual fire of Vesta at Rome was fed with oak-wood, and that oak-wood was the fuel consumed in the perpetual fire which burned under the sacred oak at the great Lithuanian sanctuary of Romove. Further, that oak-wood was formerly the fuel burned in the midsummer fires may perhaps be inferred from the custom, said to be still observed by peasants in many mountain districts of Germany, of making up the cottage fire on Midsummer Day with a heavy block of oak-wood. The block



is so arranged that it smoulders slowly and is not finally reduced to charcoal till the expiry of a year. Then upon next Midsummer Day the charred embers of the old log are removed to make room for the new one, and are mixed with the seed-corn or scattered about the garden. This is believed to guard the food cooked on the hearth from witchcraft, to preserve the luck of the house, to promote the growth of the crops, and to keep them from blight and vermin. Thus the custom is almost exactly parallel to that of the Yule-log, which in parts of Germany, France, England, Serbia, and other Slavonic lands was commonly of oak-wood. The general conclusion is, that at those periodic or occasional ceremonies the ancient Aryans both kindled and fed the fire with the sacred oak-wood.

But if at these solemn rites the fire was regularly made of oak-wood, it follows that any man who was burned in it as a personification of the tree-spirit could have represented no tree but the oak. The sacred oak was thus burned in duplicate; the wood of the tree was consumed in the fire, and along with it was consumed a living man as a personification of the oak-spirit. The conclusion thus drawn for the European Aryans in general is confirmed in its special application to the Scandinavians by the relation in which amongst them the mistletoe appears to have stood to the burning of the victim in the midsummer fire. We have seen that among Scandinavians it has been customary to gather the mistletoe at midsummer. But so far as appears on the face of this custom, there is nothing to connect it with the midsummer fires in which human victims or effigies of them were burned. Even if the fire, as seems probable, was originally always made with oak-wood, why should it have been necessary to pull the mistletoe? The last link between the midsummer customs of gathering the mistletoe and lighting the bonfires is supplied by Balder's myth, which can hardly be disjoined from the customs in question. The myth suggests that a vital connexion may once have been believed to subsist between the mistletoe and the human representative of the oak who was burned in the fire. According to the myth, Balder could be killed by nothing in heaven or earth except the mistletoe; and so long as the mistletoe remained on the oak, he was not only immortal but invulnerable. Now, if we suppose that Balder was the oak, the origin of the myth becomes intelligible. The mistletoe was viewed as the seat of life of the oak, and so long as it was uninjured nothing could kill or even wound the oak. The conception of the mistletoe as the seat of life of the oak would naturally be suggested to primitive people by the observation that while the oak is deciduous, the mistletoe which grows on it is evergreen. In winter the sight of its fresh foliage among the bare branches must have been hailed by the worshippers of the tree as a sign that the divine life which had ceased to animate the branches yet survived in the mistletoe, as the heart of a sleeper still beats when his body is motionless. Hence when the god had to be killed—when the sacred tree had to be burnt—it was necessary to begin by breaking off the

mistletoe For so long as the mistletoe remained intact, the oak (so people might think) was invulnerable ; all the blows of their knives and axes would glance harmless from its surface But once tear from the oak its sacred heart—the mistletoe—and the tree nodded to its fall And when in later times the spirit of the oak came to be represented by a living man, it was logically necessary to suppose that, like the tree he personated, he could neither be killed nor wounded so long as the mistletoe remained uninjured The pulling of the mistletoe was thus at once the signal and the cause of his death

On this view the invulnerable Balder is neither more nor less than a personification of a mistletoe-bearing oak The interpretation is confirmed by what seems to have been an ancient Italian belief, that the mistletoe can be destroyed neither by fire nor water , for if the parasite is thus deemed indestructible, it might easily be supposed to communicate its own indestructibility to the tree on which it grows, so long as the two remain in conjunction Or, to put the same idea in mythical form, we might tell how the kindly god of the oak had his life securely deposited in the imperishable mistletoe which grew among the branches , how accordingly so long as the mistletoe kept its place there, the deity himself remained invulnerable , and how at last a cunning foe, let into the secret of the god's invulnerability, tore the mistletoe from the oak, thereby killing the oak-god and afterwards burning his body in a fire which could have made no impression on him so long as the incombustible parasite retained its seat among the boughs

But since the idea of a being whose life is thus, in a sense, outside himself, must be strange to many readers, and has, indeed, not yet been recognised in its full bearing on primitive superstition, it will be worth while to illustrate it by examples drawn both from story and custom The result will be to show that, in assuming this idea as the explanation of Balder's relation to the mistletoe, I assume a principle which is deeply engraved on the mind of primitive man

## CHAPTER LXVI

### THE EXTERNAL SOUL IN FOLK-TALES

In a former part of this work we saw that, in the opinion of primitive people, the soul may temporarily absent itself from the body without causing death Such temporary absences of the soul are often believed to involve considerable risk, since the wandering soul is liable to a variety of mishaps at the hands of enemies, and so forth But there is another aspect to this power of disengaging the soul from the body. If only the safety of the soul can be ensured during its absence, there is no reason why the soul should not continue absent for an indefinite time , indeed a man may, on a pure calculation of personal safety,

desire that his soul should never return to his body. Unable to conceive of life abstractly as a "permanent possibility of sensation" or a "continuous adjustment of internal arrangements to external relations," the savage thinks of it as a concrete material thing of a definite bulk, capable of being seen and handled, kept in a box or jar, and liable to be bruised, fractured, or smashed in pieces. It is not needful that the life, so conceived, should be in the man, it may be absent from his body and still continue to animate him by virtue of a sort of sympathy or action at a distance. So long as this object which he calls his life or soul remains unharmed, the man is well, if it is injured, he suffers, if it is destroyed, he dies. Or, to put it otherwise, when a man is ill or dies, the fact is explained by saying that the material object called his life or soul, whether it be in his body or out of it, has either sustained injury or been destroyed. But there may be circumstances in which, if the life or soul remains in the man, it stands a greater chance of sustaining injury than if it were stowed away in some safe and secret place. Accordingly, in such circumstances, primitive man takes his soul out of his body and deposits it for security in some snug spot, intending to replace it in his body when the danger is past. Or if he should discover some place of absolute security, he may be content to leave his soul there permanently. The advantage of this is that, so long as the soul remains unharmed in the place where he has deposited it, the man himself is immortal; nothing can kill his body, since his life is not in it.

Evidence of this primitive belief is furnished by a class of folk-tales of which the Norse story of "The giant who had no heart in his body" is perhaps the best-known example. Stories of this kind are widely diffused over the world, and from their number and the variety of incident and of details in which the leading idea is embodied we may infer that the conception of an external soul is one which has had a powerful hold on the minds of men at an early stage of history. For folk-tales are a faithful reflection of the world as it appeared to the primitive mind; and we may be sure that any idea which commonly occurs in them, however absurd it may seem to us, must once have been an ordinary article of belief. This assurance, so far as it concerns the supposed power of disengaging the soul from the body for a longer or shorter time, is amply corroborated by a comparison of the folk-tales in question with the actual beliefs and practices of savages. To this we shall return after some specimens of the tales have been given. The specimens will be selected with a view of illustrating both the characteristic features and the wide diffusion of this class of tales.

In the first place, the story of the external soul is told, in various forms, by all Aryan peoples from Hindoostan to the Hebrides. A very common form of it is this. A warlock, giant, or other fairyland being is invulnerable and immortal because he keeps his soul hidden far away in some secret place, but a fair princess, whom he holds enthralled in his enchanted castle, wiles his secret from him and reveals it to the hero, who seeks out the warlock's soul, heart, life, or death.

(as it is variously called), and by destroying it, simultaneously kills the warlock. Thus a Hindoo story tells how a magician called Punchkin held a queen captive for twelve years, and would fain marry her, but she would not have him. At last the queen's son came to rescue her, and the two plotted together to kill Punchkin. So the queen spoke the magician fair, and pretended that she had at last made up her mind to marry him. "And do tell me," she said, "are you quite immortal? Can death never touch you? And are you too great an enchanter ever to feel human suffering?" "It is true," he said, "that I am not as others. Far, far away, hundreds of thousands of miles from this, there lies a desolate country covered with thick jungle. In the midst of the jungle grows a circle of palm trees, and in the centre of the circle stand six chattees full of water, piled one above another. Below the sixth chattee is a small cage, which contains a little green parrot,—on the life of the parrot depends my life,—and if the parrot is killed I must die. It is, however," he added, "impossible that the parrot should sustain any injury, both on account of the inaccessibility of the country, and because, by my appointment, many thousand genii surround the palm trees, and kill all who approach the place." But the queen's young son overcame all difficulties, and got possession of the parrot. He brought it to the door of the magician's palace, and began playing with it. Punchkin, the magician, saw him, and, coming out, tried to persuade the boy to give him the parrot. "Give me my parrot!" cried Punchkin. Then the boy took hold of the parrot and tore off one of his wings; and as he did so the magician's right arm fell off. Punchkin then stretched out his left arm, crying, "Give me my parrot!" The prince pulled off the parrot's second wing, and the magician's left arm tumbled off. "Give me my parrot!" cried he, and fell on his knees. The prince pulled off the parrot's right leg, the magician's right leg fell off, the prince pulled off the parrot's left leg, down fell the magician's left. Nothing remained of him except the trunk and the head; but still he rolled his eyes, and cried, "Give me my parrot!" "Take your parrot, then," cried the boy; and with that he wrung the bird's neck, and threw it at the magician, and, as he did so, Punchkin's head twisted round, and, with a fearful groan, he died! In another Hindoo tale an ogre is asked by his daughter, "Papa, where do you keep your soul?" "Sixteen miles away from this place," he said, "is a tree. Round the tree are tigers, and bears, and scorpions, and snakes; on the top of the tree is a very great fat snake, on his head is a little cage; in the cage is a bird, and my soul is in that bird." The end of the ogre is like that of the magician in the previous tale. As the bird's wings and legs are torn off, the ogre's arms and legs drop off; and when its neck is wrung he falls down dead. In a Bengalee story it is said that all the ogres dwell in Ceylon, and that all their lives are in a single lemon. A boy cuts the lemon in pieces, and all the ogres die.

In a Siamese or Cambodian story, probably derived from India, we are told that Thossakan or Ravana, the King of Ceylon, was able

by magic art to take his soul out of his body and leave it in a box at home, while he went to the wars. Thus he was invulnerable in battle. When he was about to give battle to Rama, he deposited his soul with a hermit called Fire-eye, who was to keep it safe for him. So in the fight Rama was astounded to see that his arrows struck the king without wounding him. But one of Rama's allies, knowing the secret of the king's invulnerability, transformed himself by magic into the likeness of the king, and going to the hermit asked back his soul. On receiving it he soared up into the air and flew to Rama, brandishing the box and squeezing it so hard that all the breath left the King of Ceylon's body, and he died. In a Bengalee story a prince going into a far country planted with his own hands a tree in the courtyard of his father's palace, and said to his parents, "This tree is my life. When you see the tree green and fresh, then know that it is well with me, when you see the tree fade in some parts, then know that I am in an ill case; and when you see the whole tree fade, then know that I am dead and gone." In another Indian tale a prince, setting forth on his travels, left behind him a barley plant, with instructions that it should be carefully tended and watched; for if it flourished, he would be alive and well, but if it drooped, then some mischance was about to happen to him. And so it fell out. For the prince was beheaded, and as his head rolled off, the barley plant snapped in two and the ear of barley fell to the ground.

In Greek tales, ancient and modern, the idea of an external soul is not uncommon. When Meleager was seven days old, the Fates appeared to his mother and told her that Meleager would die when the brand which was blazing on the hearth had burnt down. So his mother snatched the brand from the fire and kept it in a box. But in after-years, being enraged at her son for slaying her brothers, she burnt the brand in the fire and Meleager expired in agonies, as if flames were preying on his vitals. Again, Nisus King of Megara had a purple or golden hair on the middle of his head, and it was fated that whenever the hair was pulled out the king should die. When Megara was besieged by the Cretans, the king's daughter Scylla fell in love with Minos, their king, and pulled out the fatal hair from her father's head. So he died. In a modern Greek folk-tale a man's strength lies in three golden hairs on his head. When his mother pulls them out, he grows weak and timid and is slain by his enemies. In another modern Greek story the life of an enchanter is bound up with three doves which are in the belly of a wild boar. When the first dove is killed, the magician grows sick; when the second is killed, he grows very sick, and when the third is killed, he dies. In another Greek story of the same sort an ogre's strength is in three singing birds which are in a wild boar. The hero kills two of the birds, and then coming to the ogre's house finds him lying on the ground in great pain. He shows the third bird to the ogre, who begs that the hero will either let it fly away or give it to him to eat. But the hero wrings the bird's neck, and the ogre dies on the spot.

In a modern Roman version of "Aladdin and the Wonderful Lamp" the magician tells the princess, whom he holds captive in a floating rock in mid-ocean, that he will never die. The princess reports this to the prince her husband, who has come to rescue her. The prince replies, "It is impossible but that there should be some one thing or other that is fatal to him, ask him what that one fatal thing is." So the princess asked the magician, and he told her that in the wood was a hydra with seven heads; in the middle head of the hydra was a leveret, in the head of the leveret was a bird, in the bird's head was a precious stone, and if this stone were put under his pillow he would die. The prince procured the stone, and the princess laid it under the magician's pillow. No sooner did the enchanter lay his head on the pillow than he gave three terrible yells, turned himself round and round three times, and died.

Stories of the same sort are current among Slavonic peoples. Thus a Russian story tells how a warlock called Koshchei the Deathless carried off a princess and kept her prisoner in his golden castle. However, a prince made up to her one day as she was walking alone and disconsolate in the castle garden, and cheered by the prospect of escaping with him she went to the warlock and coaxed him with false and flattering words, saying, "My dearest friend, tell me, I pray you, will you never die?" "Certainly not," says he. "Well," says she, "and where is your death? is it in your dwelling?" "To be sure it is," says he, "it is in the broom under the threshold." Thereupon the princess seized the broom and threw it on the fire, but although the broom burned, the deathless Koshchei remained alive, indeed not so much as a hair of him was singed. Balked in her first attempt, the artful hussy pouted and said, "You do not love me true, for you have not told me where your death is, yet I am not angry, but love you with all my heart." With these fawning words she besought the warlock to tell her truly where his death was. So he laughed and said, "Why do you wish to know? Well then, out of love I will tell you where it lies. In a certain field there stand three green oaks, and under the roots of the largest oak is a worm, and if ever this worm is found and crushed, that instant I shall die." When the princess heard these words, she went straight to her lover and told him all, and he searched till he found the oaks and dug up the worm and crushed it. Then he hurried to the warlock's castle, but only to learn from the princess that the warlock was still alive. Then she fell to wheedling and coaxing Koshchei once more, and this time, overcome by her wiles, he opened his heart to her and told her the truth. "My death," said he, "is far from here and hard to find, on the wide ocean. In that sea is an island, and on the island there grows a green oak, and beneath the oak is an iron chest, and in the chest is a small basket, and in the basket is a hare, and in the hare is a duck, and in the duck is an egg, and he who finds the egg and breaks it, kills me at the same time." The prince naturally procured the fateful egg and with it in his hands he confronted the deathless warlock. The monster

would have killed him, but the prince began to squeeze the egg. At that the warlock shrieked with pain, and turning to the false princess, who stood by smirking and smiling, "Was it not out of love for you," said he, "that I told you where my death was? And is this the return you make to me?" With that he grabbed at his sword, which hung from a peg on the wall, but before he could reach it, the prince had crushed the egg, and sure enough the deathless warlock found his death at the same moment. "In one of the descriptions of Koshchei's death, he is said to be killed by a blow on the forehead inflicted by the mysterious egg—that last link in the magic chain by which his life is darkly bound. In another version of the same story, but told of a snake, the fatal blow is struck by a small stone found in the yolk of an egg, which is inside a duck, which is inside a hare, which is inside a stone, which is on an island."

Amongst peoples of the Teutonic stock stories of the external soul are not wanting. In a tale told by the Saxons of Transylvania it is said that a young man shot at a witch again and again. The bullets went clean through her but did her no harm, and she only laughed and mocked at him. "Silly earthworm," she cried, "shoot as much as you like. It does me no harm. For know that my life resides not in me but far, far away. In a mountain is a pond, on the pond swims a duck, in the duck is an egg, in the egg burns a light, that light is my life. If you could put out that light, my life would be at an end. But that can never, never be." However, the young man got hold of the egg, smashed it, and put out the light, and with it the witch's life went out also. In a German story a cannibal called Body without Soul or Soulless keeps his soul in a box, which stands on a rock in the middle of the Red Sea. A soldier gets possession of the box and goes with it to Soulless, who begs the soldier to give him back his soul. But the soldier opens the box, takes out the soul, and flings it backward over his head. At the same moment the cannibal drops dead to the ground.

In another German story an old warlock lives with a damsel all alone in the midst of a vast and gloomy wood. She fears that being old he may die and leave her alone in the forest. But he reassures her. "Dear child," he said, "I cannot die, and I have no heart in my breast." But she importuned him to tell her where his heart was. So he said, "Far, far from here in an unknown and lonesome land stands a great church. The church is well secured with iron doors, and round about it flows a broad deep moat. In the church flies a bird and in the bird is my heart. So long as the bird lives, I live. It cannot die of itself, and no one can catch it; therefore I cannot die, and you need have no anxiety." However the young man, whose bride the damsel was to have been before the warlock spirited her away, contrived to reach the church and catch the bird. He brought it to the damsel, who stowed him and it away under the warlock's bed. Soon the old warlock came home. He was ailing, and said so. The girl wept and said, "Alas, daddy is dying, he has a heart in his breast."

after all " "Child," replied the warlock, "hold your tongue I *can't* die It will soon pass over " At that the young man under the bed gave the bird a gentle squeeze ; and as he did so, the old warlock felt very unwell and sat down Then the young man gripped the bird tighter, and the warlock fell senseless from his chair "Now squeeze him dead," cried the damsel Her lover obeyed, and when the bird was dead, the old warlock also lay dead on the floor

In the Norse tale of "the giant who had no heart in his body," the giant tells the captive princess, "Far, far away in a lake lies an island, on that island stands a church, in that church is a well, in that well swims a duck, in that duck there is an egg, and in that egg there lies my heart " The hero of the tale, with the help of some animals to whom he had been kind, obtains the egg and squeezes it, at which the giant screams piteously and begs for his life But the hero breaks the egg in pieces and the giant at once bursts In another Norse story a hill-ogre tells the captive princess that she will never be able to return home unless she finds the grain of sand which lies under the ninth tongue of the ninth head of a certain dragon , but if that grain of sand were to come over the rock in which the ogres live, they would all burst " and the rock itself would become a gilded palace, and the lake green meadows " The hero finds the grain of sand and takes it to the top of the high rock in which the ogres live So all the ogres burst and the rest falls out as one of the ogres had foretold

In a Celtic tale, recorded in the West Highlands of Scotland, a giant is questioned by a captive queen as to where he keeps his soul At last, after deceiving her several times, he confides to her the fatal secret "There is a great flagstone under the threshold There is a wether under the flag There is a duck in the wether's belly, and an egg in the belly of the duck, and it is in the egg that my soul is " On the morrow when the giant was gone, the queen contrived to get possession of the egg and crushed it in her hands, and at that very moment the giant, who was coming home in the dusk, fell down dead In another Celtic tale, a sea beast has carried off a king's daughter, and an old smith declares that there is no way of killing the beast but one. "In the island that is in the midst of the loch is Eilid Chaisfhion—the white-footed hind, of the slenderest legs, and the swiftest step, and though she should be caught, there would spring a hoodie out of her, and though the hoodie should be caught, there would spring a trout out of her, but there is an egg in the mouth of the trout, and the soul of the beast is in the egg, and if the egg breaks, the beast is dead " As usual the egg is broken and the beast dies

In an Irish story we read how a giant kept a beautiful damsel a prisoner in his castle on the top of a hill, which was white with the bones of the champions who had tried in vain to rescue the fair captive. At last the hero, after hewing and slashing at the giant all to no purpose, discovered that the only way to kill him was to rub a mole on the giant's right breast with a certain egg, which was in a duck, which was in a chest, which lay locked and bound at the bottom of the sea.



With the help of some obliging animals, the hero made himself master of the precious egg and slew the giant by merely striking it against the mole on his right breast. Similarly in a Breton story there figures a giant whom neither fire nor water nor steel can harm. He tells his seventh wife, whom he has just married after murdering all her predecessors, "I am immortal, and no one can hurt me unless he crushes on my breast an egg, which is in a pigeon, which is in the belly of a hare, this hare is in the belly of a wolf, and this wolf is in the belly of my brother, who dwells a thousand leagues from here. So I am quite easy on that score." A soldier contrived to obtain the egg and crush it on the breast of the giant, who immediately expired. In another Breton tale the life of a giant resides in an old box-tree which grows in his castle garden, and to kill him it is necessary to sever the tap-root of the tree at a single blow of an axe without injuring any of the lesser roots. This task the hero, as usual, successfully accomplishes, and at the same moment the giant drops dead.

The notion of an external soul has now been traced in folk-tales told by Aryan peoples from India to Ireland. We have still to show that the same idea occurs commonly in the popular stories of peoples who do not belong to the Aryan stock. In the ancient Egyptian tale of "The Two Brothers," which was written down in the reign of Rameses II, about 1300 B.C., we read how one of the brothers enchanted his heart and placed it in the flower of an acacia tree, and how, when the flower was cut at the instigation of his wife, he immediately fell down dead, but revived when his brother found the lost heart in the berry of the acacia and threw it into a cup of fresh water.

In the story of Seyf el-Mulook in the *Arabian Nights* the junnee tells the captive daughter of the King of India, "When I was born, the astrologers declared that the destruction of my soul would be effected by the hand of one of the sons of the human kings. I therefore took my soul, and put it into the crop of a sparrow, and I imprisoned the sparrow in a little box, and put this into another small box, and thus I put within seven other small boxes, and I put these within seven chests, and the chests I put into a coffer of marble within the verge of this circumambient ocean, for this part is remote from the countries of mankind, and none of mankind can gain access to it." But Seyf el-Mulook got possession of the sparrow and strangled it, and the junnee fell upon the ground a heap of black ashes. In a Kabyle story an ogre declares that his fate is far away in an egg, which is in a pigeon, which is in a camel, which is in the sea. The hero procures the egg and crushes it between his hands, and the ogre dies. In a Magyar folk-tale, an old witch detains a young prince called Ambrose in the bowels of the earth. At last she confided to him that she kept a wild boar in a silken meadow, and if it were killed, they would find a hare inside, and inside the hare a pigeon, and inside the pigeon a small box, and inside the box one black and one shining beetle. The shining beetle held her life, and the black one held her power, if these two beetles died, then her life would come to an end also. When the old hag went

out, Ambrose killed the wild boar, and took out the hare ; from the hare he took the pigeon, from the pigeon the box, and from the box the two beetles , he killed the black beetle, but kept the shining one alive So the witch's power left her immediately, and when she came home, she had to take to her bed Having learned from her how to escape from his prison to the upper air, Ambrose killed the shining beetle, and the old hag's spirit left her at once In a Kalmuck tale we read how a certain khan challenged a wise man to show his skill by stealing a precious stone on which the khan's life depended The sage contrived to purloin the talisman while the khan and his guards slept , but not content with this he gave a further proof of his dexterity by bonneting the slumbering potentate with a bladder This was too much for the khan Next morning he informed the sage that he could overlook everything else, but that the indignity of being bonneted with a bladder was more than he could bear , and he ordered his facetious friend to instant execution Pained at this exhibition of royal ingratitude, the sage dashed to the ground the talisman which he still held in his hand , and at the same instant blood flowed from the nostrils of the khan, and he gave up the ghost

In a Tartar poem two heroes named Ak Molot and Bulat engage in mortal combat Ak Molot pierces his foe through and through with an arrow, grapples with him, and dashes him to the ground, but all in vain, Bulat could not die At last when the combat has lasted three years, a friend of Ak Molot sees a golden casket hanging by a white thread from the sky, and bethinks him that perhaps this casket contains Bulat's soul So he shot through the white thread with an arrow, and down fell the casket. He opened it, and in the casket sat ten white birds, and one of the birds was Bulat's soul. Bulat wept when he saw that his soul was found in the casket. But one after the other the birds were killed, and then Ak Molot easily slew his foe In another Tartar poem, two brothers going to fight two other brothers take out their souls and hide them in the form of a white herb with six stalks in a deep pit But one of their foes sees them doing so and digs up their souls, which he puts into a golden ram's horn, and then sticks the ram's horn in his quiver The two warriors whose souls have thus been stolen know that they have no chance of victory, and accordingly make peace with their enemies. In another Tartar poem a terrible demon sets all the gods and heroes at defiance At last a valiant youth fights the demon, binds him hand and foot, and slices him with his sword But still the demon is not slain So the youth asked him, " Tell me, where is your soul hidden ? For if your soul had been hidden in your body, you must have been dead long ago " The demon replied, " On the saddle of my horse is a bag In the bag is a serpent with twelve heads In the serpent is my soul When you have killed the serpent, you have killed me also " So the youth took the saddle-bag from the horse and killed the twelve-headed serpent, whereupon the demon expired. In another Tartar poem a hero called Kok Chan deposits with a maiden

a golden ring, in which is half his strength. Afterwards when Kōk Chan is wrestling long with a hero and cannot kill him, a woman drops into his mouth the ring which contains half his strength. Thus inspired with fresh force he slays his enemy.

In a Mongolian story the hero Joro gets the better of his enemy the lama Tschoridong in the following way. The lama, who is an enchanter, sends out his soul in the form of a wasp to sting Joro's eyes. But Joro catches the wasp in his hand, and by alternately shutting and opening his hand he causes the lama alternately to lose and recover consciousness. In a Tartar poem two youths cut open the body of an old witch and tear out her bowels, but all to no purpose, she still lives. On being asked where her soul is, she answers that it is in the middle of her shoe-sole in the form of a seven-headed speckled snake. So one of the youths slices her shoe-sole with his sword, takes out the speckled snake, and cuts off its seven heads. Then the witch dies. Another Tartar poem describes how the hero Kartaga grappled with the Swan-woman. Long they wrestled. Moons waxed and waned and still they wrestled; years came and went, and still the struggle went on. But the piebald horse and the black horse knew that the Swan-woman's soul was not in her. Under the black earth flow nine seas; where the seas meet and form one, the sea comes to the surface of the earth. At the mouth of the nine seas rises a rock of copper, it rises to the surface of the ground, it rises up between heaven and earth, this rock of copper. At the foot of the copper rock is a black chest, in the black chest is a golden casket, and in the golden casket is the soul of the Swan-woman. Seven little birds are the soul of the Swan-woman, if the birds are killed the Swan-woman will die straightway. So the horses ran to the foot of the copper rock, opened the black chest, and brought back the golden casket. Then the piebald horse turned himself into a bald-headed man, opened the golden casket, and cut off the heads of the seven birds. So the Swan-woman died. In another Tartar poem the hero, pursuing his sister who has driven away his cattle, is warned to desist from the pursuit because his sister has carried away his soul in a golden sword and a golden arrow, and if he pursues her she will kill him by throwing the golden sword or shooting the golden arrow at him.

A Malay poem relates how once upon a time in the city of Indrapoora there was a certain merchant who was rich and prosperous, but he had no children. One day as he walked with his wife by the river they found a baby girl, fair as an angel. So they adopted the child and called her Bidasari. The merchant caused a golden fish to be made, and into this fish he transferred the soul of his adopted daughter. Then he put the golden fish in a golden box full of water, and hid it in a pond in the midst of his garden. In time the girl grew to be a lovely woman. Now the King of Indrapoora had a fair young queen, who lived in fear that the king might take to himself a second wife. So, hearing of the charms of Bidasari, the queen resolved to put her out of the way. She lured the girl to the palace

and tortured her cruelly, but Bidasari could not die, because her soul was not in her. At last she could stand the torture no longer and said to the queen, "If you wish me to die, you must bring the box which is in the pond in my father's garden" So the box was brought and opened, and there was the golden fish in the water. The girl said, "My soul is in that fish. In the morning you must take the fish out of the water, and in the evening you must put it back into the water. Do not let the fish lie about, but bind it round your neck. If you do this, I shall soon die" So the queen took the fish out of the box and fastened it round her neck, and no sooner had she done so than Bidasari fell into a swoon. But in the evening, when the fish was put back into the water, Bidasari came to herself again. Seeing that she thus had the girl in her power, the queen sent her home to her adopted parents. To save her from further persecution her parents resolved to remove their daughter from the city. So in a lonely and desolate spot they built a house and brought Bidasari thither. There she dwelt alone, undergoing vicissitudes that corresponded with the vicissitudes of the golden fish in which was her soul. All day long, while the fish was out of the water, she remained unconscious, but in the evening, when the fish was put into the water, she revived. One day the king was out hunting, and coming to the house where Bidasari lay unconscious, was smitten with her beauty. He tried to waken her, but in vain. Next day, towards evening, he repeated his visit, but still found her unconscious. However, when darkness fell, she came to herself and told the king the secret of her life. So the king returned to the palace, took the fish from the queen, and put it in water. Immediately Bidasari revived, and the king took her to wife.

Another story of an external soul comes from Nias, an island to the west of Sumatra. Once on a time a chief was captured by his enemies, who tried to put him to death but failed. Water would not drown him nor fire burn him nor steel pierce him. At last his wife revealed the secret. On his head he had a hair as hard as a copper wire, and with this wire his life was bound up. So the hair was plucked out, and with it his spirit fled.

A West African story from Southern Nigeria relates how a king kept his soul in a little brown bird, which perched on a tall tree beside the gate of the palace. The king's life was so bound up with that of the bird that whoever should kill the bird would simultaneously kill the king and succeed to the kingdom. The secret was betrayed by the queen to her lover, who shot the bird with an arrow and thereby slew the king and ascended the vacant throne. A tale told by the Ba-Ronga of South Africa sets forth how the lives of a whole family were contained in one cat. When a girl of the family, named Titishan, married a husband, she begged her parents to let her take the precious cat with her to her new home. But they refused, saying, "You know that our life is attached to it", and they offered to give her an antelope or even an elephant instead of it. But nothing would

satisfy her but the cat. So at last she carried it off with her and shut it up in a place where nobody saw it ; even her husband knew nothing about it. One day, when she went to work in the fields, the cat escaped from its place of concealment, entered the hut, put on the warlike trappings of the husband, and danced and sang. Some children, attracted by the noise, discovered the cat at its antics, and when they expressed their astonishment, the animal only capered the more and insulted them besides. So they went to the owner and said, " There is somebody dancing in your house, and he insulted us " " Hold your tongues," said he, " I'll soon put a stop to your lies " So he went and hid behind the door and peeped in, and there sure enough was the cat prancing about and singing. He fired at it, and the animal dropped down dead. At the same moment his wife fell to the ground in the field where she was at work ; said she, " I have been killed at home " But she had strength enough left to ask her husband to go with her to her parents' village, taking with him the dead cat wrapt up in a mat. All her relatives assembled, and bitterly they reproached her for having insisted on taking the animal with her to her husband's village. As soon as the mat was unrolled and they saw the dead cat, they all fell down lifeless one after the other. So the Clan of the Cat was destroyed ; and the bereaved husband closed the gate of the village with a branch, and returned home, and told his friends how in killing the cat he had killed the whole clan, because their lives depended on the life of the cat.

Ideas of the same sort meet us in stories told by the North American Indians. Thus the Navajoes tell of a certain mythical being called " the Maiden that becomes a Bear," who learned the art of turning herself into a bear from the prairie wolf. She was a great warrior and quite invulnerable, for when she went to war she took out her vital organs and hid them, so that no one could kill her, and when the battle was over she put the organs back in their places again. The Kwakiutl Indians of British Columbia tell of an ogress, who could not be killed because her life was in a hemlock branch. A brave boy met her in the woods, smashed her head with a stone, scattered her brains, broke her bones, and threw them into the water. Then, thinking he had disposed of the ogress, he went into her house. There he saw a woman rooted to the floor, who warned him, saying, " Now do not stay long. I know that you have tried to kill the ogress. It is the fourth time that somebody has tried to kill her. She never dies ; she has nearly come to life. There in that covered hemlock branch is her life. Go there, and as soon as you see her enter, shoot her life. Then she will be dead " Hardly had she finished speaking when sure enough in came the ogress, singing as she walked. But the boy shot at her life, and she fell dead to the floor.

## CHAPTER LXVII

## THE EXTERNAL SOUL IN FOLK-CUSTOM

§ 1 *The External Soul in Inanimate Things* — Thus the idea that the soul may be deposited for a longer or shorter time in some place of security outside the body, or at all events in the hair, is found in the popular tales of many races. It remains to show that the idea is not a mere figment devised to adorn a tale, but is a real article of primitive faith, which has given rise to a corresponding set of customs.

We have seen that in the tales the hero, as a preparation for battle, sometimes removes his soul from his body, in order that his body may be invulnerable and immortal in the combat. With a like intention the savage removes his soul from his body on various occasions of real or imaginary peril. Thus among the people of Minahassa in Celebes, when a family moves into a new house, a priest collects the souls of the whole family in a bag, and afterwards restores them to their owners, because the moment of entering a new house is supposed to be fraught with supernatural danger. In Southern Celebes, when a woman is brought to bed, the messenger who fetches the doctor or the midwife always carries with him something made of iron, such as a chopping-knife, which he delivers to the doctor. The doctor must keep the thing in his house till the confinement is over, when he gives it back, receiving a fixed sum of money for doing so. The chopping-knife, or whatever it is, represents the woman's soul, which at this critical time is believed to be safer out of her body than in it. Hence the doctor must take great care of the object, for were it lost, the woman's soul would assuredly, they think, be lost with it.

Among the Dyaks of Pinoeh, a district of South-eastern Borneo, when a child is born, a medicine-man is sent for, who conjures the soul of the infant into half a coco-nut, which he thereupon covers with a cloth and places on a square platter or charger suspended by cords from the roof. This ceremony he repeats at every new moon for a year. The intention of the ceremony is not explained by the writer who describes it, but we may conjecture that it is to place the soul of the child in a safer place than its own frail little body. This conjecture is confirmed by the reason assigned for a similar custom observed elsewhere in the Indian Archipelago. In the Kei Islands, when there is a newly-born child in a house, an empty coco-nut, split and spliced together again, may sometimes be seen hanging beside a rough wooden image of an ancestor. The soul of the infant is believed to be temporarily deposited in the coco-nut in order that it may be safe from the attacks of evil spirits, but when the child grows bigger and stronger, the soul will take up its permanent abode in its own body. Similarly among the Esquimaux of Alaska, when a child is sick, the medicine-man will sometimes extract its soul from its body and place it for safe-keeping in an amulet, which for further security he deposits in his own

medicine-bag It seems probable that many amulets have been similarly regarded as soul-boxes, that is, as safes in which the souls of the owners are kept for greater security. An old Mang'anje woman in the West Shire district of British Central Africa used to wear round her neck an ivory ornament, hollow, and about three inches long, which she called her life or soul Naturally, she would not part with it, a planter tried to buy it of her, but in vain When Mr James Macdonald was one day sitting in the house of a Hlubi chief, awaiting the appearance of that great man, who was busy decorating his person, a native pointed to a pair of magnificent ox-horns, and said, "Ntame has his soul in these horns" The horns were those of an animal which had been sacrificed, and they were held sacred A magician had fastened them to the roof to protect the house and its inmates from the thunder-bolt. "The idea," adds Mr Macdonald, "is in no way foreign to South African thought A man's soul there may dwell in the roof of his house, in a tree, by a spring of water, or on some mountain scaur" Among the natives of the Gazelle Peninsula in New Britain there is a secret society which goes by the name of Ingnet or Ingiet On his entrance into it every man receives a stone in the shape either of a human being or of an animal, and henceforth his soul is believed to be knit up in a manner with the stone If it breaks, it is an evil omen for him, they say that the thunder has struck the stone and that he who owns it will soon die If nevertheless the man survives the breaking of his soul-stone, they say that it was not a proper soul-stone and he gets a new one instead The emperor Romanus Lecapenus was once informed by an astronomer that the life of Simeon, prince of Bulgaria, was bound up with a certain column in Constantinople, so that if the capital of the column were removed, Simeon would immediately die. The emperor took the hint and removed the capital, and at the same hour, as the emperor learned by enquiry, Simeon died of heart disease in Bulgaria.

Again, we have seen that in folk-tales a man's soul or strength is sometimes represented as bound up with his hair, and that when his hair is cut off he dies or grows weak So the natives of Amboyna used to think that their strength was in their hair and would desert them if it were shorn A criminal under torture in a Dutch Court of that island persisted in denying his guilt till his hair was cut off, when he immediately confessed One man, who was tried for murder, endured without flinching the utmost ingenuity of his torturers till he saw the surgeon standing with a pair of shears On asking what this was for, and being told that it was to cut his hair, he begged they would not do it, and made a clean breast In subsequent cases, when torture failed to wring a confession from a prisoner, the Dutch authorities made a practice of cutting off his hair

Here in Europe it used to be thought that the maleficent powers of witches and wizards resided in their hair, and that nothing could make any impression on these miscreants so long as they kept their hair on. Hence in France it was customary to shave the whole bodies of persons

charged with sorcery before handing them over to the torturer Millaeus witnessed the torture of some persons at Toulouse, from whom no confession could be wrung until they were stripped and completely shaven, when they readily acknowledged the truth of the charge. A woman also, who apparently led a pious life, was put to the torture on suspicion of witchcraft, and bore her agonies with incredible constancy, until complete depilation drove her to admit her guilt. The noted inquisitor Sprenger contented himself with shaving the head of the suspected witch or wizard; but his more thoroughgoing colleague Cumanus shaved the whole bodies of forty-seven women before committing them all to the flames. He had high authority for this rigorous scrutiny, since Satan himself, in a sermon preached from the pulpit of North Berwick church, comforted his many servants by assuring them that no harm could befall them "sa lang as their hair wes on, and sould newir latt ane teir fall fra thair ene". Similarly in Bastar, a province of India, "if a man is adjudged guilty of witchcraft, he is beaten by the crowd, his hair is shaved, the hair being supposed to constitute his power of mischief, his front teeth are knocked out, in order, it is said, to prevent him from muttering incantations . . . Women suspected of sorcery have to undergo the same ordeal; if found guilty, the same punishment is awarded, and after being shaved, their hair is attached to a tree in some public place". So among the Bhils of India, when a woman was convicted of witchcraft and had been subjected to various forms of persuasion, such as hanging head downwards from a tree and having pepper put into her eyes, a lock of hair was cut from her head and buried in the ground, "that the last link between her and her former powers of mischief might be broken". In like manner among the Aztecs of Mexico, when wizards and witches "had done their evil deeds, and the time came to put an end to their detestable life, some one laid hold of them and cropped the hair on the crown of their heads, which took from them all their power of sorcery and enchantment, and then it was that by death they put an end to their odious existence".

§ 2 *The External Soul in Plants* —Further it has been shown that in folk-tales the life of a person is sometimes so bound up with the life of a plant that the withering of the plant will immediately follow or be followed by the death of the person. Among the M'Bengas in Western Africa, about the Gaboon, when two children are born on the same day, the people plant two trees of the same kind and dance round them. The life of each of the children is believed to be bound up with the life of one of the trees; and if the tree dies or is thrown down, they are sure that the child will soon die. In the Cameroons, also, the life of a person is believed to be sympathetically bound up with that of a tree. The chief of Old Town in Calabar kept his soul in a sacred grove near a spring of water. When some Europeans, in frolic or ignorance, cut down part of the grove, the spirit was most indignant and threatened the perpetrators of the deed, according to the king, with all manner of evil.



Some of the Papuans unite the life of a new-born babe sympathetically with that of a tree by driving a pebble into the bark of the tree. This is supposed to give them complete mastery over the child's life, if the tree is cut down, the child will die. After a birth the Maoris used to bury the navel-string in a sacred place and plant a young sapling over it. As the tree grew, it was a *tolu ora* or sign of life for the child, if it flourished, the child would prosper; if it withered and died, the parents augured the worst for the little one. In some parts of Fiji the navel-string of a male infant is planted together with a coco-nut or the slip of a breadfruit-tree, and the child's life is supposed to be intimately connected with that of the tree. Amongst the Dyaks of Landak and Tajan, districts of Dutch Borneo, it is customary to plant a fruit-tree for a baby, and henceforth in the popular belief the fate of the child is bound up with that of the tree. If the tree shoots up rapidly, it will go well with the child; but if the tree is dwarfed or shrivelled, nothing but misfortune can be expected for its human counterpart.

It is said that there are still families in Russia, Germany, England, France, and Italy who are accustomed to plant a tree at the birth of a child. The tree, it is hoped, will grow with the child, and it is tended with special care. The custom is still pretty general in the canton of Aargau in Switzerland; an apple-tree is planted for a boy and a pear-tree for a girl, and the people think that the child will flourish or dwindle with the tree. In Mecklenburg the afterbirth is thrown out at the foot of a young tree, and the child is then believed to grow with the tree. Near the Castle of Dalhousie, not far from Edinburgh, there grows an oak-tree, called the Edgewell Tree, which is popularly believed to be linked to the fate of the family by a mysterious tie; for they say that when one of the family dies, or is about to die, a branch falls from the Edgewell Tree. Thus, on seeing a great bough drop from the tree on a quiet, still day in July 1874, an old forester exclaimed, "The laird's deid noo!" and soon after news came that Fox Maule, eleventh Earl of Dalhousie, was dead.

In England children are sometimes passed through a cleft ash-tree as a cure for rupture or rickets, and thenceforward a sympathetic connexion is supposed to exist between them and the tree. An ash-tree which had been used for this purpose grew at the edge of Shirley Heath, on the road from Hockly House to Birmingham. "Thomas Chillingworth, son of the owner of an adjoining farm, now about thirty-four, was, when an infant of a year old, passed through a similar tree, now perfectly sound, which he preserves with so much care that he will not suffer a single branch to be touched, for it is believed the life of the patient depends on the life of the tree, and the moment that is cut down, be the patient ever so distant, the rupture returns, and a mortification ensues, and terminates in death, as was the case in a man driving a waggon on the very road in question." "It is not uncommon, however," adds the writer, "for persons to survive for a time the felling of the tree." The ordinary mode of effecting the cure

is to split a young ash-sapling longitudinally for a few feet and pass the child, naked, either three times or three times three through the fissure at sunrise. In the West of England it is said that the passage should be "against the sun." As soon as the ceremony has been performed, the tree is bound tightly up and the fissure plastered over with mud or clay. The belief is that just as the cleft in the tree closes up, so the rupture in the child's body will be healed, but that if the rift in the tree remains open, the rupture in the child will remain too, and if the tree were to die, the death of the child would surely follow.

A similar cure for various diseases, but especially for rupture and rickets, has been commonly practised in other parts of Europe, as Germany, France, Denmark, and Sweden, but in these countries the tree employed for the purpose is usually not an ash but an oak, sometimes a willow-tree is allowed or even prescribed instead. In Mecklenburg, as in England, the sympathetic relation thus established between the tree and the child is believed to be so close that if the tree is cut down the child will die.

§ 3 *The External Soul in Animals* — But in practice, as in folk-tales, it is not merely with inanimate objects and plants that a person is occasionally believed to be united by a bond of physical sympathy. The same bond, it is supposed, may exist between a man and an animal, so that the welfare of the one depends on the welfare of the other, and when the animal dies the man dies also. The analogy between the custom and the tales is all the closer because in both of them the power of thus removing the soul from the body and stowing it away in an animal is often a special privilege of wizards and witches. Thus the Yakuts of Siberia believe that every shaman or wizard keeps his soul, or one of his souls, incarnate in an animal which is carefully concealed from all the world. "Nobody can find my external soul," said one famous wizard, "it lies hidden far away in the stony mountains of Edzhigansk." Only once a year, when the last snows melt and the earth turns black, do these external souls of wizards appear in the shape of animals among the dwellings of men. They wander everywhere, yet none but wizards can see them. The strong ones sweep roaring and noisily along, the weak steal about quietly and furtively. Often they fight, and then the wizard whose external soul is beaten falls ill or dies. The weakest and most cowardly wizards are they whose souls are incarnate in the shape of dogs, for the dog gives his human double no peace, but gnaws his heart and tears his body. The most powerful wizards are they whose external souls have the shape of stallions, elks, black bears, eagles, or boars. Again, the Samoyeds of the Turukhinsk region hold that every shaman has a familiar spirit in the shape of a boar, which he leads about by a magic belt. On the death of the boar the shaman himself dies; and stories are told of battles between wizards, who send their spirits to fight before they encounter each other in person. The Malays believe that "the soul of a person may pass into another person or into an animal, or rather

that such a mysterious relation can arise between the two that the fate of the one is wholly dependent on that of the other "

Among the Melanesians of Mota, one of the New Hebrides islands, the conception of an external soul is carried out in the practice of daily life. In the Mota language the word *tamanuu* signifies " something animate or inanimate which a man has come to believe to have an existence intimately connected with his own . . . It was not every one in Mota who had his *tamanuu* , only some men fancied that they had this relation to a lizard, a snake, or it might be a stone , sometimes the thing was sought for and found by drinking the infusion of certain leaves and heaping together the dregs , then whatever living thing was first seen in or upon the heap was the *tamanuu* . It was watched but not fed or worshipped , the natives believed that it came at call, and that the life of the man was bound up with the life of his *tamanuu*, if a living thing, or with its safety , should it die, or if not living get broken or be lost, the man would die. Hence in case of sickness they would send to see if the *tamanuu* was safe and well "

The theory of an external soul deposited in an animal appears to be very prevalent in West Africa, particularly in Nigeria, the Cameroons, and the Gaboon. Among the Fans of the Gaboon every wizard is believed at initiation to unite his life with that of some particular wild animal by a rite of blood-brotherhood , he draws blood from the ear of the animal and from his own arm, and inoculates the animal with his own blood, and himself with the blood of the beast. Henceforth such an intimate union is established between the two that the death of the one entails the death of the other. The alliance is thought to bring to the wizard or sorcerer a great accession of power, which he can turn to his advantage in various ways. In the first place, like the warlock in the fairy tales who has deposited his life outside of himself in some safe place, the Fan wizard now deems himself invulnerable. Moreover, the animal with which he has exchanged blood has become his familiar, and will obey any orders he may choose to give it , so he makes use of it to injure and kill his enemies. For that reason the creature with whom he establishes the relation of blood-brotherhood is never a tame or domestic animal, but always a ferocious and dangerous wild beast, such as a leopard, a black serpent, a crocodile, a hippopotamus, a wild boar, or a vulture. Of all these creatures the leopard is by far the commonest familiar of Fan wizards, and next to it comes the black serpent ; the vulture is the rarest. Witches as well as wizards have their familiars , but the animals with which the lives of women are thus bound up generally differ from those to which men commit their external souls. A witch never has a panther for her familiar, but often a venomous species of serpent, sometimes a horned viper, sometimes a black serpent, sometimes a green one that lives in banana-trees , or it may be a vulture, an owl, or other bird of night. In every case the beast or bird with which the witch or wizard has contracted this mystic alliance is an individual, never a species ; and when the individual animal

dies the alliance is naturally at an end, since the death of the animal is supposed to entail the death of the man.

Similar beliefs are held by the natives of the Cross River valley within the provinces of the Cameroons. Groups of people, generally the inhabitants of a village, have chosen various animals, with which they believe themselves to stand on a footing of intimate friendship or relationship. Amongst such animals are hippopotamuses, elephants, leopards, crocodiles, gorillas, fish, and serpents, all of them creatures which are either very strong or can easily hide themselves in the water or a thicket. This power of concealing themselves is said to be an indispensable condition of the choice of animal familiars, since the animal friend or helper is expected to injure his owner's enemy by stealth; for example, if he is a hippopotamus, he will bob up suddenly out of the water and capsize the enemy's canoe. Between the animals and their human friends or kinsfolk such a sympathetic relation is supposed to exist that the moment the animal dies the man dies also, and similarly the instant the man perishes so does the beast. From this it follows that the animal kinsfolk may never be shot at or molested for fear of injuring or killing the persons whose lives are knit up with the lives of the brutes. This does not, however, prevent the people of a village, who have elephants for their animal friends, from hunting elephants. For they do not respect the whole species but merely certain individuals of it, which stand in an intimate relation to certain individual men and women, and they imagine that they can always distinguish these brother elephants from the common herd of elephants which are mere elephants and nothing more. The recognition indeed is said to be mutual. When a hunter, who has an elephant for his friend, meets a human elephant, as we may call it, the noble animal lifts up a paw and holds it before his face, as much as to say, "Don't shoot." Were the hunter so inhuman as to fire on and wound such an elephant, the person whose life was bound up with the elephant would fall ill.

The Balong of the Cameroons think that every man has several souls, of which one is in his body and another in an animal, such as an elephant, a wild pig, a leopard, and so forth. When a man comes home, feeling ill, and says, "I shall soon die," and dies accordingly, the people aver that one of his souls has been killed in a wild pig or a leopard, and that the death of the external soul has caused the death of the soul in his body. A similar belief in the external souls of living people is entertained by the Ibos, an important tribe of the Niger delta. They think that a man's spirit can quit his body for a time during life and take up its abode in an animal. A man who wishes to acquire this power procures a certain drug from a wise man and mixes it with his food. After that his soul goes out and enters into an animal. If it should happen that the animal is killed while the man's soul is lodged in it, the man dies; and if the animal be wounded, the man's body will presently be covered with boils. This belief instigates to many deeds of darkness; for a sly rogue will sometimes surreptitiously

administer the magical drug to his enemy in his food, and having thus smuggled the other's soul into an animal will destroy the creature, and with it the man whose soul is lodged in it

The negroes of Calabar, at the mouth of the Niger, believe that every person has four souls, one of which always lives outside of his or her body in the form of a wild beast in the forest. This external soul, or bush soul, as Miss Kingsley calls it, may be almost any animal, for example, a leopard, a fish, or a tortoise, but it is never a domestic animal and never a plant. Unless he is gifted with second sight, a man cannot see his own bush soul, but a diviner will often tell him what sort of creature his bush soul is, and after that the man will be careful not to kill any animal of that species, and will strongly object to any one else doing so. A man and his sons have usually the same sort of animals for their bush souls, and so with a mother and her daughters. But sometimes all the children of a family take after the bush soul of their father, for example, if his external soul is a leopard, all his sons and daughters will have leopards for their external souls. And on the other hand, sometimes they all take after their mother; for instance, if her external soul is a tortoise, all the external souls of her sons and daughters will be tortoises too. So intimately bound up is the life of the man with that of the animal which he regards as his external or bush soul, that the death or injury of the animal necessarily entails the death or injury of the man. And, conversely, when the man dies, his bush soul can no longer find a place of rest, but goes mad and rushes into the fire or charges people and is knocked on the head, and that is an end of it.

Near Eket in North Calabar there is a sacred lake, the fish of which are carefully preserved because the people believe that their own souls are lodged in the fish, and that with every fish killed a human life would be simultaneously extinguished. In the Calabar River not very many years ago there used to be a huge old crocodile, popularly supposed to contain the external soul of a chief who resided in the flesh at Duke Town. Sporting vice-consuls used from time to time to hunt the animal, and once an officer contrived to hit it. Forthwith the chief was laid up with a wound in his leg. He gave out that a dog had bitten him, but no doubt the wise shook their heads and refused to be put off with so flimsy a pretext. Again, among several tribes on the banks of the Niger between Lokoja and the delta there prevails "a belief in the possibility of a man possessing an *alter ego* in the form of some animal such as a crocodile or a hippopotamus. It is believed that such a person's life is bound up with that of the animal to such an extent that whatever affects the one produces a corresponding impression upon the other, and that if one dies the other must speedily do so too. It happened not very long ago that an Englishman shot a hippopotamus close to a native village, the friends of a woman who died the same night in the village demanded and eventually obtained five pounds as compensation for the murder of the woman."

Amongst the Zapotecs of Central America, when a woman was about to be confined, her relations assembled in the hut, and began to draw on the floor figures of different animals, rubbing each one out as soon as it was completed. This went on till the moment of birth, and the figure that then remained sketched upon the ground was called the child's *tona* or second self. "When the child grew old enough, he procured the animal that represented him and took care of it, as it was believed that health and existence were bound up with that of the animal's, in fact that the death of both would occur simultaneously," or rather that when the animal died the man would die too. Among the Indians of Guatemala and Honduras the *nagual* or *naual* is "that animate or inanimate object, generally an animal, which stands in a parallel relation to a particular man, so that the weal and woe of the man depend on the fate of the *nagual*." According to an old writer, many Indians of Guatemala "are deluded by the devil to believe that their life dependeth upon the life of such and such a beast (which they take unto them as their familiar spirit), and think that when that beast dieth they must die, when he is chased, their hearts pant, when he is faint, they are faint, nay, it happeneth that by the devil's delusion they appear in the shape of that beast (which commonly by their choice is a buck, or doe, a lion, or tigre, or dog, or eagle) and in that shape have been shot at and wounded." The Indians were persuaded that the death of their *nagual* would entail their own. Legend affirms that in the first battles with the Spaniards on the plateau of Quetzaltenango the *naguals* of the Indian chiefs fought in the form of serpents. The *nagual* of the highest chief was especially conspicuous, because it had the form of a great bird, resplendent in green plumage. The Spanish general Pedro de Alvarado killed the bird with his lance, and at the same moment the Indian chief fell dead to the ground.

In many tribes of South-eastern Australia each sex used to regard a particular species of animals in the same way that a Central American Indian regarded his *nagual*, but with this difference, that whereas the Indian apparently knew the individual animal with which his life was bound up, the Australians only knew that each of their lives was bound up with some one animal of the species, but they could not say with which. The result naturally was that every man spared and protected all the animals of the species with which the lives of the men were bound up, and every woman spared and protected all the animals of the species with which the lives of the women were bound up, because no one knew but that the death of any animal of the respective species might entail his or her own; just as the killing of the green bird was immediately followed by the death of the Indian chief, and the killing of the parrot by the death of Punchkin in the fairy tale. Thus, for example, the Wotjobaluk tribe of South-eastern Australia "held that 'the life of Ngününgünüt (the Bat) is the life of a man, and the life of Yártatgürk (the Nightjar) is the life of a woman,' and that when either of these creatures is killed the life of

some man or of some woman is shortened. In such a case every man or every woman in the camp feared that he or she might be the victim, and from this cause great fights arose in this tribe. I learn that in these fights, men on one side and women on the other, it was not at all certain which would be victorious, for at times the women gave the men a severe drubbing with their yamsticks, while often women were injured or killed by spears." The Wotjobaluk said that the bat was the man's "brother" and that the nightjar was his "wife." The particular species of animals with which the lives of the sexes were believed to be respectively bound up varied somewhat from tribe to tribe. Thus whereas among the Wotjobaluk the bat was the animal of the men, at Gunbower Creek on the Lower Murray the bat seems to have been the animal of the women, for the natives would not kill it for the reason that "if it was killed, one of their lubras [women] would be sure to die in consequence." But whatever the particular sorts of creature with which the lives of men and women were believed to be bound up, the belief itself and the fights to which it gave rise are known to have prevailed over a large part of South-eastern Australia, and probably they extended much farther. The belief was a very serious one, and so consequently were the fights which sprang from it. Thus among some tribes of Victoria "the common bat belongs to the men, who protect it against injury, even to the half-killing of their wives for its sake. The fern owl, or large goatsucker, belongs to the women, and, although a bird of evil omen, creating terror at night by its cry, it is jealously protected by them. If a man kills one, they are as much enraged as if it was one of their children, and will strike him with their long poles."

The jealous protection thus afforded by Australian men and women to bats and owls respectively (for bats and owls seem to be the creatures usually allotted to the two sexes) is not based upon purely selfish considerations. For each man believes that not only his own life but the lives of his father, brothers, sons, and so on are bound up with the lives of particular bats, and that therefore in protecting the bat species he is protecting the lives of all his male relations as well as his own. Similarly, each woman believes that the lives of her mother, sisters, daughters, and so forth, equally with her own, are bound up with the lives of particular owls, and that in guarding the owl species she is guarding the lives of all her female relations besides her own. Now, when men's lives are thus supposed to be contained in certain animals, it is obvious that the animals can hardly be distinguished from the men, or the men from the animals. If my brother John's life is in a bat, then, on the one hand, the bat is my brother as well as John, and, on the other hand, John is in a sense a bat, since his life is in a bat. Similarly, if my sister Mary's life is in an owl, then the owl is my sister and Mary is an owl. This is a natural enough conclusion, and the Australians have not failed to draw it. When the bat is the man's animal, it is called his brother, and when the owl is the woman's animal, it is called her sister. And conversely a man

addresses a woman as an owl, and she addresses him as a bat. So with the other animals allotted to the sexes respectively in other tribes. For example, among the Kurnai all emu-wrens were "brothers" of the men, and all the men were emu-wrens; all superb warblers were "sisters" of the women, and all the women were superb warblers.

But when a savage names himself after an animal, calls it his brother, and refuses to kill it, the animal is said to be his totem. Accordingly in the tribes of South-eastern Australia which we have been considering the bat and the owl, the emu-wren and the superb warbler may properly be described as totems of the sexes. But the assignation of a totem to a sex is comparatively rare, and has hitherto been discovered nowhere but in Australia. Far more commonly the totem is appropriated not to a sex, but to a clan, and is hereditary either in the male or female line. The relation of an individual to the clan totem does not differ in kind from his relation to the sex totem, he will not kill it, he speaks of it as his brother, and he calls himself by its name. Now if the relations are similar, the explanation which holds good of the one ought equally to hold good of the other. Therefore the reason why a clan revere a particular species of animals or plants (for the clan totem may be a plant) and call themselves after it, would seem to be a belief that the life of each individual of the clan is bound up with some one animal or plant of the species, and that his or her death would be the consequence of killing that particular animal or destroying that particular plant. This explanation of totemism squares very well with Sir George Grey's definition of a totem or *kobong* in Western Australia. He says "A certain mysterious connexion exists between a family and its *kobong*, so that a member of the family will never kill an animal of the species to which his *kobong* belongs, should he find it asleep, indeed he always kills it reluctantly, and never without affording it a chance to escape. This arises from the family belief that some one individual of the species is their nearest friend, to kill whom would be a great crime, and to be carefully avoided. Similarly, a native who has a vegetable for his *kobong* may not gather it under certain circumstances, and at a particular period of the year." Here it will be observed that though each man spares all the animals or plants of the species, they are not all equally precious to him, far from it, out of the whole species there is only one which is specially dear to him, but as he does not know which the dear one is, he is obliged to spare them all from fear of injuring the one. Again, this explanation of the clan totem harmonises with the supposed effect of killing one of the totem species. "One day one of the blacks killed a crow. Three or four days afterwards a Boortwa (crow) [*i.e.* a man of the Crow clan] named Larry died. He had been ailing for some days, but the killing of his *wingong* [totem] hastened his death." Here the killing of the crow caused the death of a man of the Crow clan, exactly as, in the case of the sex-totems, the killing of a bat causes the death of a Bat-man or the killing of an owl causes the death of an Owl-woman. Similarly, the killing of his



*nagual* causes the death of a Central American Indian, the killing of his bush soul causes the death of a Calabar negro, the killing of his *tamannu* causes the death of a Banks Islander, and the killing of the animal in which his life is stowed away causes the death of the giant or warlock in the fairy tale

Thus it appears that the story of "The giant who had no heart in his body" may perhaps furnish the key to the relation which is supposed to subsist between a man and his totem. The totem, on this theory, is simply the receptacle in which a man keeps his life, as Punchkin kept his life in a parrot, and Bidasari kept her soul in a golden fish. It is no valid objection to this view that when a savage has both a sex totem and a clan totem his life must be bound up with two different animals, the death of either of which would entail his own. If a man has more vital places than one in his body, why, the savage may think, should he not have more vital places than one outside it? Why, since he can put his life outside himself, should he not transfer one portion of it to one animal and another to another? The divisibility of life, or, to put it otherwise, the plurality of souls, is an idea suggested by many familiar facts, and has commended itself to philosophers like Plato, as well as to savages. It is only when the notion of a soul, from being a quasi-scientific hypothesis, becomes a theological dogma that its unity and indivisibility are insisted upon as essential. The savage, unshackled by dogma, is free to explain the facts of life by the assumption of as many souls as he thinks necessary. Hence, for example, the Caribs supposed that there was one soul in the head, another in the heart, and other souls at all the places where an artery is felt pulsating. Some of the Hidatsa Indians explain the phenomena of gradual death, when the extremities appear dead first, by supposing that man has four souls, and that they quit the body, not simultaneously, but one after the other, dissolution being only complete when all four have departed. Some of the Dyaks of Borneo and the Malays of the Peninsula believe that every man has seven souls. The Alfoors of Poso in Celebes are of opinion that he has three. The natives of Laos suppose that the body is the seat of thirty spirits, which reside in the hands, the feet, the mouth, the eyes, and so on. Hence, from the primitive point of view, it is perfectly possible that a savage should have one soul in his sex totem and another in his clan totem. However, as I have observed, sex totems have been found nowhere but in Australia; so that as a rule the savage who practises totemism need not have more than one soul out of his body at a time.

If this explanation of the totem as a receptacle in which a man keeps his soul or one of his souls is correct, we should expect to find some totemic people of whom it is expressly said that every man amongst them is believed to keep at least one soul permanently out of his body, and that the destruction of this external soul is supposed to entail the death of its owner. Such a people are the Bataks of Sumatra. The Bataks are divided into exogamous clans (*margas*) with descent in the male line, and each clan is forbidden to eat the

flesh of a particular animal. One clan may not eat the tiger, another the ape, another the crocodile, another the dog, another the cat, another the dove, another the white buffalo, and another the locust. The reason given by members of a clan for abstaining from the flesh of the particular animal is either that they are descended from animals of that species, and that their souls after death may transmigrate into the animals, or that they or their forefathers have been under certain obligations to the creatures. Sometimes, but not always, the clan bears the name of the animal. Thus the Bataks have totemism in full. But, further, each Batak believes that he has seven or, on a more moderate computation, three souls. One of these souls is always outside the body, but nevertheless whenever it dies, however far away it may be at the time, that same moment the man dies also. The writer who mentions this belief says nothing about the Batak totems, but on the analogy of the Australian, Central American, and African evidence we may conjecture that the external soul, whose death entails the death of the man, is housed in the totemic animal or plant.

Against this view it can hardly be thought to militate that the Batak does not in set terms affirm his external soul to be in his totem, but alleges other grounds for respecting the sacred animal or plant of his clan. For if a savage seriously believes that his life is bound up with an external object, it is in the last degree unlikely that he will let any stranger into the secret. In all that touches his inmost life and beliefs the savage is exceedingly suspicious and reserved, Europeans have resided among savages for years without discovering some of their capital articles of faith, and in the end the discovery has often been the result of accident. Above all, the savage lives in an intense and perpetual dread of assassination by sorcery, the most trifling relics of his person—the clippings of his hair and nails, his spittle, the remnants of his food, his very name—all these may, he fancies, be turned by the sorcerer to his destruction, and he is therefore anxiously careful to conceal or destroy them. But if in matters such as these, which are but the outposts and outworks of his life, he is so shy and secretive, how close must be the concealment, how impenetrable the reserve in which he enshrouds the inner keep and citadel of his being! When the princess in the fairy tale asks the giant where he keeps his soul, he often gives false or evasive answers, and it is only after much coaxing and wheedling that the secret is at last wrung from him. In his jealous reticence the giant resembles the timid and furtive savage, but whereas the exigencies of the story demand that the giant should at last reveal his secret, no such obligation is laid on the savage, and no inducement that can be offered is likely to tempt him to imperil his soul by revealing its hiding-place to a stranger. It is therefore no matter for surprise that the central mystery of the savage's life should so long have remained a secret, and that we should be left to piece it together from scattered hints and fragments and from the recollections of it which linger in fairy tales.

§ 4. *The Ritual of Death and Resurrection.*—This view of totemism

throws light on a class of religious rites of which no adequate explanation, so far as I am aware, has yet been offered. Amongst many savage tribes, especially such as are known to practise totemism, it is customary for lads at puberty to undergo certain initiatory rites, of which one of the commonest is a pretence of killing the lad and bringing him to life again. Such rites become intelligible if we suppose that their substance consists in extracting the youth's soul in order to transfer it to his totem. For the extraction of his soul would naturally be supposed to kill the youth or at least to throw him into a death-like trance, which the savage hardly distinguishes from death. His recovery would then be attributed either to the gradual recovery of his system from the violent shock which it had received, or, more probably, to the infusion into him of fresh life drawn from the totem. Thus the essence of these initiatory rites, so far as they consist in a simulation of death and resurrection, would be an exchange of life or souls between the man and his totem. The primitive belief in the possibility of such an exchange of souls comes clearly out in a story of a Basque hunter who affirmed that he had been killed by a bear, but that the bear had, after killing him, breathed its own soul into him, so that the bear's body was now dead, but he himself was a bear, being animated by the bear's soul. This revival of the dead hunter as a bear is exactly analogous to what, on the theory here suggested, is supposed to take place in the ceremony of killing a lad at puberty and bringing him to life again. The lad dies as a man and comes to life again as an animal, the animal's soul is now in him, and his human soul is in the animal. With good right, therefore, does he call himself a Bear or a Wolf, etc., according to his totem, and with good right does he treat the bears or the wolves, etc., as his brethren, since in these animals are lodged the souls of himself and his kindred.

Examples of this supposed death and resurrection at initiation are as follows. In the Wonghi or Wonghibon tribe of New South Wales the youths on approaching manhood are initiated at a secret ceremony, which none but initiated men may witness. Part of the proceedings consists in knocking out a tooth and giving a new name to the novice, indicative of the change from youth to manhood. While the teeth are being knocked out an instrument known as a bull-roarer, which consists of a flat piece of wood with serrated edges tied to the end of a string, is swung round so as to produce a loud humming noise. The uninitiated are not allowed to see this instrument. Women are forbidden to witness the ceremonies under pain of death. It is given out that the youths are each met in turn by a mythical being called Thuremlin (more commonly known as Daramulun), who takes the youth to a distance, kills him, and in some instances cuts him up, after which he restores him to life and knocks out a tooth. Their belief in the power of Thuremlin is said to be undoubted.

The Ualaroi of the Upper Darling River said that at initiation the boy met a ghost, who killed him and brought him to life again as a

young man Among the natives on the Lower Lachlan and Murray Rivers it was Thrumalun (Daramulun) who was thought to slay and resuscitate the novices In the Unmatjera tribe of Central Australia women and children believe that a spirit called Twanyirika kills the youth and afterwards brings him to life again during the period of initiation The rites of initiation in this tribe, as in the other Central tribes, comprise the operations of circumcision and sub-incision, and as soon as the second of these has been performed on him, the young man receives from his father a sacred stick (*churinga*), with which, he is told, his spirit was associated in the remotest past While he is out in the bush recovering from his wounds, he must swing the bull-roarer, or a being who lives up in the sky will swoop down and carry him off In the Binbinga tribe, on the western coast of the Gulf of Carpentaria, the women and children believe that the noise of the bull-roarer at initiation is made by a spirit named Katajalina, who lives in an ant-hill and comes out and eats up the boy, afterwards restoring him to life Similarly among their neighbours the Anula the women imagine that the droning sound of the bull-roarer is produced by a spirit called Gnabaia, who swallows the lads at initiation and afterwards disgorges them in the form of initiated men

Among the tribes settled on the southern coast of New South Wales, of which the Coast Murring tribe may be regarded as typical, the drama of resurrection from the dead was exhibited in a graphic form to the novices at initiation The ceremony has been described for us by an eye-witness A man, disguised with stringy bark fibre, lay down in a grave and was lightly covered up with sticks and earth In his hand he held a small bush, which appeared to be growing in the soil, and other bushes were stuck in the ground to heighten the effect Then the novices were brought and placed beside the grave Next, a procession of men, disguised in stringy bark fibre, drew near They represented a party of medicine-men, guided by two reverend seniors, who had come on pilgrimage to the grave of a brother medicine-man, who lay buried there When the little procession, chanting an invocation to Daramulun, had defiled from among the rocks and trees into the open, it drew up on the side of the grave opposite to the novices, the two old men taking up a position in the rear of the dancers For some time the dance and song went on till the tree that seemed to grow from the grave began to quiver "Look there!" cried the men to the novices, pointing to the trembling leaves. As they looked, the tree quivered more and more, then was violently agitated and fell to the ground, while amid the excited dancing of the dancers and the chanting of the choir the supposed dead man spurned from him the superincumbent mass of sticks and leaves, and springing to his feet danced his magic dance in the grave itself, and exhibited in his mouth the magic substances which he was supposed to have received from Daramulun in person.

Some tribes of Northern New Guinea—the Yabim, Bukaua, Kai, and Tami—like many Australian tribes, require every male member of the tribe to be circumcised before he ranks as a full-grown man ; and the tribal initiation, of which circumcision is the central feature, is conceived by them, as by some Australian tribes, as a process of being swallowed and disgorged by a mythical monster, whose voice is heard in the humming sound of the bull-roarer. Indeed the New Guinea tribes not only impress this belief on the minds of women and children, but enact it in a dramatic form at the actual rites of initiation, at which no woman or uninitiated person may be present. For this purpose a hut about a hundred feet long is erected either in the village or in a lonely part of the forest. It is modelled in the shape of the mythical monster, at the end which represents his head it is high, and it tapers away at the other end. A betel-palm, grubbed up with the roots, stands for the backbone of the great being and its clustering fibres for his hair, and to complete the resemblance the butt end of the building is adorned by a native artist with a pair of goggle eyes and a gaping mouth. When after a tearful parting from their mothers and women folk, who believe or pretend to believe in the monster that swallows their dear ones, the awe-struck novices are brought face to face with this imposing structure, the huge creature emits a sullen growl, which is in fact no other than the humming note of bull-roarers swung by men concealed in the monster's belly. The actual process of deglutition is variously enacted. Among the Tami it is represented by causing the candidates to defile past a row of men who hold bull-roarers over their heads, among the Kai it is more graphically set forth by making them pass under a scaffold on which stands a man, who makes a gesture of swallowing and takes in fact a gulp of water as each trembling novice passes beneath him. But the present of a pig, opportunely offered for the redemption of the youth, induces the monster to relent and disgorge his victim ; the man who represents the monster accepts the gift vicariously, a gurgling sound is heard, and the water which had just been swallowed descends in a jet on the novice. This signifies that the young man has been released from the monster's belly. However, he has now to undergo the more painful and dangerous operation of circumcision. It follows immediately, and the cut made by the knife of the operator is explained to be a bite or scratch which the monster inflicted on the novice in spewing him out of his capacious maw. While the operation is proceeding, a prodigious noise is made by the swinging of bull-roarers to represent the roar of the dreadful being who is in the act of swallowing the young men.

When, as sometimes happens, a lad dies from the effect of the operation, he is buried secretly in the forest, and his sorrowing mother is told that the monster has a pig's stomach as well as a human stomach, and that unfortunately her son slipped into the wrong stomach, from which it was impossible to extricate him. After they have been circumcised the lads must remain for some months in seclusion, shun-

ning all contact with women and even the sight of them. They live in the long hut which represents the monster's belly. When at last the lads, now ranking as initiated men, are brought back with great pomp and ceremony to the village, they are received with sobs and tears of joy by the women, as if the grave had given up its dead. At first the young men keep their eyes rigidly closed or even sealed with a plaster of chalk, and they appear not to understand the words of command which are given them by an elder. Gradually, however, they come to themselves as if awaking from a stupor, and next day they bathe and wash off the crust of white chalk with which their bodies had been coated.

It is highly significant that all these tribes of New Guinea apply the same word to the bull-roarer and to the monster, who is supposed to swallow the novices at circumcision, and whose fearful roar is represented by the hum of the harmless wooden instruments. Further, it deserves to be noted that in three languages out of the four the same word which is applied to the bull-roarer and to the monster means also a ghost or spirit of the dead, while in the fourth language (the Kai) it signifies "grandfather." From this it seems to follow that the being who swallows and disgorges the novices at initiation is believed to be a powerful ghost or ancestral spirit, and that the bull-roarer, which bears his name, is his material representative. That would explain the jealous secrecy with which the sacred implement is kept from the sight of women. While they are not in use, the bull-roarers are stowed away in the men's club-houses, which no woman may enter; indeed no woman or uninitiated person may set eyes on a bull-roarer under pain of death. Similarly among the Tugeri or Kaya-Kaya, a large Papuan tribe on the south coast of Dutch New Guinea, the name of the bull-roarer, which they call *sosom*, is given to a mythical giant, who is supposed to appear every year with the south-east monsoon. When he comes, a festival is held in his honour and bull-roarers are swung. Boys are presented to the giant, and he kills them, but considerably brings them to life again.

In certain districts of Viti Levu, the largest of the Fijian Islands, the drama of death and resurrection used to be acted with much solemnity before the eyes of young men at initiation. In a sacred enclosure they were shown a row of dead or seemingly dead men lying on the ground, their bodies cut open and covered with blood, their entrails protruding. But at a yell from the high priest the counterfeit dead men started to their feet and ran down to the river to cleanse themselves from the blood and guts of pigs with which they were beslobbered. Soon they marched back to the sacred enclosure as if come to life, clean, fresh, and garlanded, swaying their bodies in time to the music of a solemn hymn, and took their places in front of the novices. Such was the drama of death and resurrection.

The people of Rook, an island between New Guinea and New Britain, hold festivals at which one or two disguised men, their heads

covered with wooden masks, go dancing through the village, followed by all the other men. They demand that the circumcised boys who have not yet been swallowed by Marsaba (the devil) shall be given up to them. The boys, trembling and shrieking, are delivered to them, and must creep between the legs of the disguised men. Then the procession moves through the village again, and announces that Marsaba has eaten up the boys, and will not disgorge them till he receives a present of pigs, taro, and so forth. So all the villagers, according to their means, contribute provisions, which are then consumed in the name of Marsaba.

In the west of Ceram boys at puberty are admitted to the Kakian association. Modern writers have commonly regarded this association as primarily a political league instituted to resist foreign domination. In reality its objects are purely religious and social, though it is possible that the priests may have occasionally used their powerful influence for political ends. The society is in fact merely one of those widely-diffused primitive institutions of which a chief object is the initiation of young men. In recent years the true nature of the association has been duly recognised by the distinguished Dutch ethnologist, J. G. F. Riedel. The Kakian house is an oblong wooden shed, situated under the darkest trees in the depth of the forest, and is built to admit so little light that it is impossible to see what goes on in it. Every village has such a house. Thither the boys who are to be initiated are conducted blindfold, followed by their parents and relations. Each boy is led by the hand by two men, who act as his sponsors or guardians, looking after him during the period of initiation. When all are assembled before the shed, the high priest calls aloud upon the devils. Immediately a hideous uproar is heard to proceed from the shed. It is made by men with bamboo trumpets, who have been secretly introduced into the building by a back door, but the women and children think it is made by the devils, and are much terrified. Then the priests enter the shed, followed by the boys, one at a time. As soon as each boy has disappeared within the precincts, a dull chopping sound is heard, a fearful cry rings out, and a sword or spear, dripping with blood, is thrust through the roof of the shed. This is a token that the boy's head has been cut off, and that the devil has carried him away to the other world, there to regenerate and transform him. So at sight of the bloody sword the mothers weep and wail, crying that the devil has murdered their children. In some places, it would seem, the boys are pushed through an opening made in the shape of a crocodile's jaws or a cassowary's beak, and it is then said that the devil has swallowed them. The boys remain in the shed for five or nine days. Sitting in the dark, they hear the blast of the bamboo trumpets, and from time to time the sound of musket shots and the clash of swords. Every day they bathe, and their faces and bodies are smeared with a yellow dye, to give them the appearance of having been swallowed by the devil. During his stay in the Kakian house each boy has one or two crosses tattooed with thorns on his

breast or arm. When they are not sleeping, the lads must sit in a crouching posture without moving a muscle. As they sit in a row cross-legged, with their hands stretched out, the chief takes his trumpet, and placing the mouth of it on the hands of each lad, speaks through it in strange tones, imitating the voice of the spirits. He warns the lads, under pain of death, to observe the rules of the Kakian society, and never to reveal what has passed in the Kakian house. The novices are also told by the priests to behave well to their blood relations, and are taught the traditions and secrets of the tribe.

Meantime the mothers and sisters of the lads have gone home to weep and mourn. But in a day or two the men who acted as guardians or sponsors to the novices return to the village with the glad tidings that the devil, at the intercession of the priests, has restored the lads to life. The men who bring this news come in a fainting state and daubed with mud, like messengers freshly arrived from the nether world. Before leaving the Kakian house, each lad receives from the priest a stick adorned at both ends with cock's or cassowary's feathers. The sticks are supposed to have been given to the lads by the devil at the time when he restored them to life, and they serve as a token that the youths have been in the spirit land. When they return to their homes they totter in their walk, and enter the house backward, as if they had forgotten how to walk properly, or they enter the house by the back door. If a plate of food is given to them, they hold it upside down. They remain dumb, indicating their wants by signs only. All this is to show that they are still under the influence of the devil or the spirits. Their sponsors have to teach them all the common acts of life, as if they were newborn children. Further, upon leaving the Kakian house the boys are strictly forbidden to eat of certain fruits until the next celebration of the rites has taken place. And for twenty or thirty days their hair may not be combed by their mothers or sisters. At the end of that time the high priest takes them to a lonely place in the forest, and cuts off a lock of hair from the crown of each of their heads. After these initiatory rites the lads are deemed men, and may marry, it would be a scandal if they married before.

In the region of the Lower Congo a simulation of death and resurrection is, or rather used to be, practised by the members of a guild or secret society called *ndembo*. "In the practice of *Ndembo* the initiating doctors get some one to fall down in a pretended fit, and in that state he is carried away to an enclosed place outside the town. This is called 'dying *Ndembo*.' Others follow suit, generally boys and girls, but often young men and women. They are supposed to have died. But the parents and friends supply food, and after a period varying, according to custom, from three months to three years, it is arranged that the doctor shall bring them to life again. . . . When the doctor's fee has been paid, and money (goods) saved for a feast, the *Ndembo* people are brought to life. At first they pretend to know no one and nothing, they do not even know how to



masticate food, and friends have to perform that office for them. They want everything nice that any one uninitiated may have, and beat them if it is not granted, or even strangle and kill people. They do not get into trouble for this, because it is thought that they do not know better. Sometimes they carry on the pretence of talking gibberish, and behaving as if they had returned from the spirit-world. After this they are known by another name, peculiar to those who have 'died Ndembo.' . We hear of the custom far along on the upper river, as well as in the cataract region."

Among some of the Indian tribes of North America there exist certain religious associations which are only open to candidates who have gone through a pretence of being killed and brought to life again. In 1766 or 1767 Captain Jonathan Carver witnessed the admission of a candidate to an association called "the friendly society of the Spirit" (*Wakon-Kitchewah*) among the Naudowessies, a Siouan or Dacotan tribe in the region of the great lakes. The candidate knelt before the chief, who told him that "he himself was now agitated by the same spirit which he should in a few moments communicate to him; that it would strike him dead, but that he would instantly be restored again to life, to this he added, that the communication, however terrifying, was a necessary introduction to the advantages enjoyed by the community into which he was on the point of being admitted. As he spoke this, he appeared to be greatly agitated, till at last his emotions became so violent, that his countenance was distorted, and his whole frame convulsed. At this juncture he threw something that appeared both in shape and colour like a small bean, at the young man, which seemed to enter his mouth, and he instantly fell as motionless as if he had been shot." For a time the man lay like dead, but under a shower of blows he showed signs of consciousness, and finally, discharging from his mouth the bean, or whatever it was that the chief had thrown at him, he came to life. In other tribes, for example, the Ojebways, Winnebagoes, and Dacotas or Sioux, the instrument by which the candidate is apparently slain is the medicine-bag. The bag is made of the skin of an animal (such as the otter, wild cat, serpent, bear, raccoon, wolf, owl, weasel), of which it roughly preserves the shape. Each member of the society has one of these bags, in which he keeps the odds and ends that make up his "medicine" or charms. "They believe that from the miscellaneous contents in the belly of the skin bag or animal there issues a spirit or breath, which has the power, not only to knock down and kill a man, but also to set him up and restore him to life." The mode of killing a man with one of these medicine-bags is to thrust it at him, he falls like dead, but a second thrust of the bag restores him to life.

A ceremony witnessed by the castaway John R. Jewitt during his captivity among the Indians of Nootka Sound doubtless belongs to this class of customs. The Indian king or chief "discharged a pistol close to his son's ear, who immediately fell down as if killed, upon which all the women of the house set up a most lamentable cry,

tearing handfuls of hair from their heads, and exclaiming that the prince was dead ; at the same time a great number of the inhabitants rushed into the house armed with their daggers, muskets, etc , enquiring the cause of their outcry These were immediately followed by two others dressed in wolf skins, with masks over their faces representing the head of that animal The latter came in on their hands and feet in the manner of a beast, and taking up the prince, carried him off upon their backs, retiring in the same manner they entered " In another place Jewitt mentions that the young prince—a lad of about eleven years of age—wore a mask in imitation of a wolf's head Now, as the Indians of this part of America are divided into totem clans, of which the Wolf clan is one of the principal, and as the members of each clan are in the habit of wearing some portion of the totem animal about their person, it is probable that the prince belonged to the Wolf clan, and that the ceremony described by Jewitt represented the killing of the lad in order that he might be born anew as a wolf, much in the same way that the Basque hunter supposed himself to have been killed and to have come to life again as a bear

This conjectural explanation of the ceremony has, since it was first put forward, been to some extent confirmed by the researches of Dr Franz Boas among these Indians , though it would seem that the community to which the chief's son thus obtained admission was not so much a totem clan as a secret society called Tlokoala, whose members imitated wolves Every new member of the society must be initiated by the wolves At night a pack of wolves, personated by Indians dressed in wolf-skins and wearing wolf-masks, make their appearance, seize the novice, and carry him into the woods When the wolves are heard outside the village, coming to fetch away the novice, all the members of the society blacken their faces and sing, " Among all the tribes is great excitement, because I am Tlokoala " Next day the wolves bring back the novice dead, and the members of the society have to revive him The wolves are supposed to have put a magic stone into his body, which must be removed before he can come to life Till this is done the pretended corpse is left lying outside the house Two wizards go and remove the stone, which appears to be quartz, and then the novice is resuscitated. Among the Niska Indians of British Columbia, who are divided into four principal clans with the raven, the wolf, the eagle, and the bear for their respective totems, the novice at initiation is always brought back by an artificial totem animal Thus when a man was about to be initiated into a secret society called Olala, his friends drew their knives and pretended to kill him In reality they let him slip away, while they cut off the head of a dummy which had been adroitly substituted for him Then they laid the decapitated dummy down and covered it over, and the women began to mourn and wail His relations gave a funeral banquet and solemnly burnt the effigy. In short, they held a regular funeral. For a whole year the novice remained absent and was seen by none but members of the secret society But at the end of that time he

came back alive, carried by an artificial animal which represented his totem

In these ceremonies the essence of the rite appears to be the killing of the novice in his character of a man and his restoration to life in the form of the animal which is thenceforward to be, if not his guardian spirit, at least linked to him in a peculiarly intimate relation. It is to be remembered that the Indians of Guatemala, whose life was bound up with an animal, were supposed to have the power of appearing in the shape of the particular creature with which they were thus sympathetically united. Hence it seems not unreasonable to conjecture that in like manner the Indians of British Columbia may imagine that their life depends on the life of some one of that species of creature to which they assimilate themselves by their costume. At least if that is not an article of belief with the Columbian Indians of the present day, it may very well have been so with their ancestors in the past, and thus may have helped to mould the rites and ceremonies both of the totem clans and of the secret societies. For though these two sorts of communities differ in respect of the mode in which membership of them is obtained—a man being born into his totem clan but admitted into a secret society later in life—we can hardly doubt that they are near akin and have their root in the same mode of thought. That thought, if I am right, is the possibility of establishing a sympathetic relation with an animal, a spirit, or other mighty being, with whom a man deposits for safe-keeping his soul or some part of it, and from whom he receives in return a gift of magical powers.

Thus, on the theory here suggested, wherever totemism is found, and wherever a pretence is made of killing and bringing to life again the novice at initiation, there may exist or have existed not only a belief in the possibility of permanently depositing the soul in some external object—animal, plant, or what not—but an actual intention of so doing. If the question is put, why do men desire to deposit their life outside their bodies? the answer can only be that, like the giant in the fairy tale, they think it safer to do so than to carry it about with them, just as people deposit their money with a banker rather than carry it on their persons. We have seen that at critical periods the life or soul is sometimes temporarily stowed away in a safe place till the danger is past. But institutions like totemism are not resorted to merely on special occasions of danger, they are systems into which every one, or at least every male, is obliged to be initiated at a certain period of life. Now the period of life at which initiation takes place is regularly puberty, and this fact suggests that the special danger which totemism and systems like it are intended to obviate is supposed not to arise till sexual maturity has been attained, in fact, that the danger apprehended is believed to attend the relation of the sexes to each other. It would be easy to prove by a long array of facts that the sexual relation is associated in the primitive mind with many serious perils, but the exact nature of the danger appre-

hended is still obscure We may hope that a more exact acquaintance with savage modes of thought will in time disclose this central mystery of primitive society, and will thereby furnish the clue, not only to totemism, but to the origin of the marriage system.

## CHAPTER LXVIII

### THE GOLDEN BOUGH

THUS the view that Balder's life was in the mistletoe is entirely in harmony with primitive modes of thought. It may indeed sound like a contradiction that, if his life was in the mistletoe, he should nevertheless have been killed by a blow from the plant But when a person's life is conceived as embodied in a particular object, with the existence of which his own existence is inseparably bound up, and the destruction of which involves his own, the object in question may be regarded and spoken of indifferently as his life or his death, as happens in the fairy tales Hence if a man's death is in an object, it is perfectly natural that he should be killed by a blow from it In the fairy tales Koshchei the Deathless is killed by a blow from the egg or the stone in which his life or death is secreted, the ogres burst when a certain gram of sand—doubtless containing their life or death—is carried over their heads, the magician dies when the stone in which his life or death is contained is put under his pillow, and the Tartar hero is warned that he may be killed by the golden arrow or golden sword in which his soul has been stowed away.

The idea that the life of the oak was in the mistletoe was probably suggested, as I have said, by the observation that in winter the mistletoe growing on the oak remains green while the oak itself is leafless But the position of the plant—growing not from the ground but from the trunk or branches of the tree—might confirm this idea. Primitive man might think that, like himself, the oak-spirit had sought to deposit his life in some safe place, and for this purpose had pitched on the mistletoe, which, being in a sense neither on earth nor in heaven, might be supposed to be fairly out of harm's way. In a former chapter we saw that primitive man seeks to preserve the life of his human divinities by keeping them poised between earth and heaven, as the place where they are least likely to be assailed by the dangers that encompass the life of man on earth We can therefore understand why it has been a rule both of ancient and of modern folk-medicine that the mistletoe should not be allowed to touch the ground; were it to touch the ground, its healing virtue would be gone This may be a survival of the old superstition that the plant in which the life of the sacred tree was concentrated should not be exposed to the risk incurred by contact with the earth. In an Indian legend, which offers a parallel to the Balder myth, Indra

swore to the demon Namuci that he would slay him neither by day nor by night, neither with staff nor with bow, neither with the palm of the hand nor with the fist, neither with the wet nor with the dry. But he killed him in the morning twilight by sprinkling over him the foam of the sea. The foam of the sea is just such an object as a savage might choose to put his life in, because it occupies that sort of intermediate or nondescript position between earth and sky or sea and sky in which primitive man sees safety. It is therefore not surprising that the foam of the river should be the totem of a clan in India.

Again, the view that the mistletoe owes its mystic character partly to its not growing on the ground is confirmed by a parallel superstition about the mountain-ash or rowan-tree. In Jutland a rowan that is found growing out of the top of another tree is esteemed "exceedingly effective against witchcraft" since it does not grow on the ground, witches have no power over it, if it is to have its full effect it must be cut on Ascension Day. Hence it is placed over doors to prevent the ingress of witches. In Sweden and Norway, also, magical properties are ascribed to a "flying-rowan" (*flögrönn*), that is to a rowan which is found growing not in the ordinary fashion on the ground but on another tree, or on a roof, or in a cleft of the rock, where it has sprouted from seed scattered by birds. They say that a man who is out in the dark should have a bit of "flying-rowan" with him to chew, else he runs a risk of being bewitched and of being unable to stir from the spot. Just as in Scandinavia the parasitic rowan is deemed a countercharm to sorcery, so in Germany the parasitic mistletoe is still commonly considered a protection against witchcraft, and in Sweden, as we saw, the mistletoe which is gathered on Midsummer Eve is attached to the ceiling of the house, the horse's stall or the cow's crib, in the belief that this renders the Troll powerless to injure man or beast.

The view that the mistletoe was not merely the instrument of Balder's death, but that it contained his life, is countenanced by the analogy of a Scottish superstition. Tradition ran that the fate of the Hays of Errol, an estate in Perthshire, near the Firth of Tay, was bound up with the mistletoe that grew on a certain great oak. A member of the Hay family has recorded the old belief as follows: "Among the low country families the badges are now almost generally forgotten, but it appears by an ancient MS. and the tradition of a few old people in Perthshire, that the badge of the Hays was the mistletoe. There was formerly in the neighbourhood of Errol, and not far from the Falcon stone, a vast oak of an unknown age, and upon which grew a profusion of the plant. Many charms and legends were considered to be connected with the tree, and the duration of the family of Hay was said to be united with its existence. It was believed that a sprig of the mistletoe cut by a Hay on Allhallowmas eve, with a new dirk, and after surrounding the tree three times sunwise, and pronouncing a certain spell, was a sure charm against

all glamour or witchery, and an infallible guard in the day of battle. A spray gathered in the same manner was placed in the cradle of infants, and thought to defend them from being changed for elf-bairns by the fairies. Finally, it was affirmed, that when the root of the oak had perished, 'the grass should grow in the hearth of Errol, and a raven should sit in the falcon's nest' The two most unlucky deeds which could be done by one of the name of Hay was, to kill a white falcon, and to cut down a limb from the oak of Errol. When the old tree was destroyed I could never learn. The estate has been sold out of the family of Hay, and of course it is said that the fatal oak was cut down a short time before." The old superstition is recorded in verses which are traditionally ascribed to Thomas the Rhymer:

*While the mistletoe bats on Errol's ark,  
And that ark stands fast,  
The Hays shall flourish, and their good grey hawk  
Shall nocht flinch before the blast*

*But when the root of the ark decays,  
And the mistletoe dwines on its withered breast,  
The grass shall grow on Errol's hearthstane,  
And the corbie roup in the falcon's nest*

It is not a new opinion that the Golden Bough was the mistletoe. True, Virgil does not identify but only compares it with mistletoe. But this may be only a poetical device to cast a mystic glamour over the humble plant. Or, more probably, his description was based on a popular superstition that at certain times the mistletoe blazed out into a supernatural golden glory. The poet tells how two doves, guiding Aeneas to the gloomy vale in whose depth grew the Golden Bough, alighted upon a tree, "whence shone a flickering gleam of gold. As in the woods in winter cold the mistletoe—a plant not native to its tree—is green with fresh leaves and twines its yellow berries about the boles, such seemed upon the shady holm-oak the leafy gold, so rustled in the gentle breeze the golden leaf." Here Virgil definitely describes the Golden Bough as growing on a holm-oak, and compares it with the mistletoe. The inference is almost inevitable that the Golden Bough was nothing but the mistletoe seen through the haze of poetry or of popular superstition.

Now grounds have been shown for believing that the priest of the Arician grove—the King of the Wood—personified the tree on which grew the Golden Bough. Hence if that tree was the oak, the King of the Wood must have been a personification of the oak-spirit. It is, therefore, easy to understand why, before he could be slain, it was necessary to break the Golden Bough. As an oak-spirit, his life or death was in the mistletoe on the oak, and so long as the mistletoe remained intact, he, like Balder, could not die. To slay him, therefore, it was necessary to break the mistletoe, and probably, as in the case of Balder, to throw it at him. And to complete the

parallel, it is only necessary to suppose that the King of the Wood was formerly burned, dead or alive, at the midsummer fire festival which, as we have seen, was annually celebrated in the Arician grove. The perpetual fire which burned in the grove, like the perpetual fire which burned in the temple of Vesta at Rome and under the oak at Romove, was probably fed with the sacred oak-wood, and thus it would be in a great fire of oak that the King of the Wood formerly met his end. At a later time, as I have suggested, his annual tenure of office was lengthened or shortened, as the case might be, by the rule which allowed him to live so long as he could prove his divine right by the strong hand. But he only escaped the fire to fall by the sword.

Thus it seems that at a remote age in the heart of Italy, beside the sweet Lake of Nemi, the same fiery tragedy was annually enacted which Italian merchants and soldiers were afterwards to witness among their rude kindred, the Celts of Gaul, and which, if the Roman eagles had ever swooped on Norway, might have been found repeated with little difference among the barbarous Aryans of the North. The rite was probably an essential feature in the ancient Aryan worship of the oak.

It only remains to ask, Why was the mistletoe called the Golden Bough? The whitish-yellow of the mistletoe berries is hardly enough to account for the name, for Virgil says that the bough was altogether golden, stem as well as leaves. Perhaps the name may be derived from the rich golden yellow which a bough of mistletoe assumes when it has been cut and kept for some months, the bright tint is not confined to the leaves, but spreads to the stalks as well, so that the whole branch appears to be indeed a Golden Bough. Breton peasants hang up great bunches of mistletoe in front of their cottages, and in the month of June these bunches are conspicuous for the bright golden tinge of their foliage. In some parts of Brittany, especially about Morbihan, branches of mistletoe are hung over the doors of stables and byres to protect the horses and cattle, probably against witchcraft.

The yellow colour of the withered bough may partly explain why the mistletoe has been sometimes supposed to possess the property of disclosing treasures in the earth; for on the principles of homoeopathic magic there is a natural affinity between a yellow bough and yellow gold. This suggestion is confirmed by the analogy of the marvellous properties popularly ascribed to the mythical fern-seed, which is popularly supposed to bloom like gold or fire on Midsummer Eve. Thus in Bohemia it is said that "on St John's Day fern-seed blooms with golden blossoms that gleam like fire." Now it is a property of this mythical fern-seed that whoever has it, or will ascend a mountain holding it in his hand on Midsummer Eve, will discover a vein of gold or will see the treasures of the earth shining with a bluish flame. In Russia they say that if you succeed in catching the wondrous bloom of the fern at midnight on Midsummer Eve you have only to throw it

up to the air, and it will fall like a star on the very spot where a treasure is hidden. In Prussia they are said to gather fern-seed at midnight on Midsummer Eve, and keep it till Palm Sunday of the following year; then they strew the seed on the ground where they think the treasure may be. To do so, you must imagine that hidden treasure is somewhere on the hillside on Midsummer Eve, and that fern-seed is scattered all over the country, with the usual precautions, to be ready to pick it up and to be paid to the prince. In the Swiss canton of Glarus, the fern-seed is said to be a fern on St. John's night in the month of June. The story is, that the devil himself sometimes takes the form of a fern, and that he who procures the fern-seed, thereby obtains the key to all the treasures hidden in the earth. And in the Tyrol and other parts of Germany, it is said, if money is buried, the money will never be found again, unless the fern-seed is scattered. So, whenever the fern-seed is scattered, the devil is said to be at work, and if he ever catches it will be the end of the world. In the Tyrol, they say, if you scatter fern-seed on a hillside, you will find a treasure of money.

... applied to ... similar reason it ... But while ... described as glowing ... for gathering ... that is, the ... celebration ... the very object of the ... derivative ... of the sun's fire at ... the summer and winter solstices ... to ... Midsummer Day ... in a white ... Here the blood is ... thus directly ... golden, ... of the sun's golden fire

the power of revealing  
the people in Sweden make  
the forest-land of wood one of which  
the rod on the ground  
the rod begins to  
Now, if the iron detector covers gold, it must  
be gathered at the Golden Pough; and if it is gathered at the  
the Golden Pough, like the golden fern-seed, be an  
The question cannot be answered with a



simple affirmative We have seen that the old Aryans perhaps kindled the solstitial and other ceremonial fires in part as sun-charms, that is, with the intention of supplying the sun with fresh fire, and as these fires were usually made by the friction or combustion of oak-wood, it may have appeared to the ancient Aryan that the sun was periodically recruited from the fire which resided in the sacred oak. In other words, the oak may have seemed to him the original storehouse or reservoir of the fire which was from time to time drawn out to feed the sun. But if the life of the oak was conceived to be in the mistletoe, the mistletoe must on that view have contained the seed or germ of the fire which was elicited by friction from the wood of the oak. Thus, instead of saying that the mistletoe was an emanation of the sun's fire, it might be more correct to say that the sun's fire was regarded as an emanation of the mistletoe. No wonder, then, that the mistletoe shone with a golden splendour, and was called the Golden Bough. Probably, however, like fern-seed, it was thought to assume its golden aspect only at those stated times, especially midsummer, when fire was drawn from the oak to light up the sun. At Pulverbatch, in Shropshire, it was believed within living memory that the oak-tree blooms on Midsummer Eve and the blossom withers before daylight. A maiden who wishes to know her lot in marriage should spread a white cloth under the tree at night, and in the morning she will find a little dust, which is all that remains of the flower. She should place the pinch of dust under her pillow, and then her future husband will appear to her in her dreams. This fleeting bloom of the oak, if I am right, was probably the mistletoe in its character of the Golden Bough. The conjecture is confirmed by the observation that in Wales a real sprig of mistletoe gathered on Midsummer Eve is similarly placed under the pillow to induce prophetic dreams, and further the mode of catching the imaginary bloom of the oak in a white cloth is exactly that which was employed by the Druids to catch the real mistletoe when it dropped from the bough of the oak, severed by the golden sickle. As Shropshire borders on Wales, the belief that the oak blooms on Midsummer Eve may be Welsh in its immediate origin, though probably the belief is a fragment of the primitive Aryan creed. In some parts of Italy, as we saw, peasants still go out on Midsummer morning to search the oak-trees for the "oil of St John," which, like the mistletoe, heals all wounds, and is, perhaps, the mistletoe itself in its glorified aspect. Thus it is easy to understand how a title like the Golden Bough, so little descriptive of its usual appearance on the tree, should have been applied to the seemingly insignificant parasite. Further, we can perhaps see why in antiquity mistletoe was believed to possess the remarkable property of extinguishing fire, and why in Sweden it is still kept in houses as a safeguard against conflagration. Its fiery nature marks it out, on homoeopathic principles, as the best possible cure or preventive of injury by fire.

These considerations may partially explain why Virgil makes Aeneas carry a glorified bough of mistletoe with him on his descent

into the gloomy subterranean world. The poet describes how at the very gates of hell there stretched a vast and gloomy wood, and how the hero, following the flight of two doves that lured him on, wandered into the depths of the immemorial forest till he saw afar off through the shadows of the trees the flickering light of the Golden Bough illuminating the matted boughs overhead. If the mistletoe, as a yellow withered bough in the sad autumn woods, was conceived to contain the seed of fire, what better companion could a forlorn wanderer in the nether shades take with him than a bough that would be a lamp to his feet as well as a rod and staff to his hands? Armed with it he might boldly confront the dreadful spectres that would cross his path on his adventurous journey. Hence when Aeneas, emerging from the forest, comes to the banks of Styx, winding slow with sluggish stream through the infernal marsh, and the surly ferryman refuses him passage in his boat, he has but to draw the Golden Bough from his bosom and hold it up, and straightway the blusterer quails at the sight and meekly receives the hero into his crazy bark, which sinks deep in the water under the unusual weight of the living man. Even in recent times, as we have seen, mistletoe has been deemed a protection against witches and trolls, and the ancients may well have credited it with the same magical virtue. And if the parasite can, as some of our peasants believe, open all locks, why should it not have served as an "open Sesame" in the hands of Aeneas to unlock the gates of death?

Now, too, we can conjecture why Virbius at Nemi came to be confounded with the sun. If Virbius was, as I have tried to show, a tree-spirit, he must have been the spirit of the oak on which grew the Golden Bough, for tradition represented him as the first of the Kings of the Wood. As an oak-spirit he must have been supposed periodically to rekindle the sun's fire, and might therefore easily be confounded with the sun itself. Similarly we can explain why Balder, an oak-spirit, was described as "so fair of face and so shining that a light went forth from him," and why he should have been so often taken to be the sun. And in general we may say that in primitive society, when the only known way of making fire is by the friction of wood, the savage must necessarily conceive of fire as a property stored away, like sap or juice, in trees, from which he has laboriously to extract it. The Senal Indians of California "profess to believe that the whole world was once a globe of fire, whence that element passed up into the trees, and now comes out whenever two pieces of wood are rubbed together." Similarly the Maidu Indians of California hold that "the earth was primarily a globe of molten matter, and from that the principle of fire ascended through the roots into the trunk and branches of trees, whence the Indians can extract it by means of their drill." In Namoluk, one of the Caroline Islands, they say that the art of making fire was taught men by the gods Olofaet, the cunning master of flames, gave fire to the bird *mwi* and bade him carry it to earth in his bill. So the bird flew from tree to

tree and stored away the slumbering force of the fire in the wood, from which men can elicit it by friction. In the ancient Vedic hymns of India the fire-god Agni "is spoken of as born in wood, as the embryo of plants, or as distributed in plants. He is also said to have entered into all plants or to strive after them. When he is called the embryo of trees or of trees as well as plants, there may be a side-glance at the fire produced in forests by the friction of the boughs of trees."

A tree which has been struck by lightning is naturally regarded by the savage as charged with a double or triple portion of fire, for has he not seen the mighty flash enter into the trunk with his own eyes? Hence perhaps we may explain some of the many superstitious beliefs concerning trees that have been struck by lightning. When the Thompson Indians of British Columbia wished to set fire to the houses of their enemies, they shot at them arrows which were either made from a tree that had been struck by lightning or had splinters of such wood attached to them. Wendish peasants of Saxony refuse to burn in their stoves the wood of trees that have been struck by lightning, they say that with such fuel the house would be burnt down. In like manner the Thonga of South Africa will not use such wood as fuel nor warm themselves at a fire which has been kindled with it. On the contrary, when lightning sets fire to a tree, the Winamwanga of Northern Rhodesia put out all the fires in the village and plaster the fireplaces afresh, while the head men convey the lightning-kindled fire to the chief, who prays over it. The chief then sends out the new fire to all his villages, and the villagers reward his messengers for the boon. This shows that they look upon fire kindled by lightning with reverence, and the reverence is intelligible, for they speak of thunder and lightning as God himself coming down to earth. Similarly the Maidu Indians of California believe that a Great Man created the world and all its inhabitants, and that lightning is nothing but the Great Man himself descending swiftly out of heaven and rending the trees with his flaming arm.

It is a plausible theory that the reverence which the ancient peoples of Europe paid to the oak, and the connexion which they traced between the tree and their sky-god, were derived from the much greater frequency with which the oak appears to be struck by lightning than any other tree of our European forests. This peculiarity of the tree has seemingly been established by a series of observations instituted within recent years by scientific enquirers who have no mythological theory to maintain. However we may explain it, whether by the easier passage of electricity through oakwood than through any other timber, or in some other way, the fact itself may well have attracted the notice of our rude forefathers, who dwelt in the vast forests which then covered a large part of Europe, and they might naturally account for it in their simple religious way by supposing that the great sky-god, whom they worshipped and whose awful voice they heard in the roll of thunder, loved the oak above all the trees of the wood and often descended into it from the murky

cloud in a flash of lightning, leaving a token of his presence or of his passage in the riven and blackened trunk and the blasted foliage. Such trees would thenceforth be encircled by a nimbus of glory as the visible seats of the thundering sky-god. Certain it is that, like some savages, both Greeks and Romans identified their great god of the sky and of the oak with the lightning flash which struck the ground, and they regularly enclosed such a stricken spot and treated it thereafter as sacred. It is not rash to suppose that the ancestors of the Celts and Germans in the forests of Central Europe paid a like respect for like reasons to a blasted oak.

This explanation of the Aryan reverence for the oak and of the association of the tree with the great god of the thunder and the sky, was suggested or implied long ago by Jacob Grimm, and has been in recent years powerfully reinforced by Mr W Warde Fowler. It appears to be simpler and more probable than the explanation which I formerly adopted, namely, that the oak was worshipped primarily for the many benefits which our rude forefathers derived from the tree, particularly for the fire which they drew by friction from its wood, and that the connexion of the oak with the sky was an after-thought based on the belief that the flash of lightning was nothing but the spark which the sky-god up aloft elicited by rubbing two pieces of oak wood against each other, just as his savage worshipper kindled fire in the forest on earth. On that theory the god of the thunder and the sky was derived from the original god of the oak, on the present theory, which I now prefer, the god of the sky and the thunder was the great original deity of our Aryan ancestors, and his association with the oak was merely an inference based on the frequency with which the oak was seen to be struck by lightning. If the Aryans, as some think, roamed the wide steppes of Russia or Central Asia with their flocks and herds before they plunged into the gloom of the European forests, they may have worshipped the god of the blue or cloudy firmament and the flashing thunderbolt long before they thought of associating him with the blasted oaks in their new home.

Perhaps the new theory has the further advantage of throwing light on the special sanctity ascribed to mistletoe which grows on an oak. The mere rarity of such a growth on an oak hardly suffices to explain the extent and the persistence of the superstition. A hint of its real origin is possibly furnished by the statement of Pliny that the Druids worshipped the plant because they believed it to have fallen from heaven and to be a token that the tree on which it grew was chosen by the god himself. Can they have thought that the mistletoe dropped on the oak in a flash of lightning? The conjecture is confirmed by the name *thunder-besom* which is applied to mistletoe in the Swiss canton of Aargau, for the epithet clearly implies a close connexion between the parasite and the thunder, indeed "*thunder-besom*" is a popular name in Germany for any bushy nest-like excrescence growing on a branch, because such a parasitic growth is actually believed by the ignorant to be a product of lightning.

If there is any truth in this conjecture, the real reason why the Druids worshipped a mistletoe-bearing oak above all other trees of the forest was a belief that every such oak had not only been struck by lightning but bore among its branches a visible emanation of the celestial fire, so that in cutting the mistletoe with mystic rites they were securing for themselves all the magical properties of a thunderbolt. If that was so, we must apparently conclude that the mistletoe was deemed an emanation of the lightning rather than, as I have thus far argued, of the midsummer sun. Perhaps, indeed, we might combine the two seemingly divergent views by supposing that in the old Aryan creed the mistletoe descended from the sun on Midsummer Day in a flash of lightning. But such a combination is artificial and unsupported, so far as I know, by any positive evidence. Whether on mythical principles the two interpretations can really be reconciled with each other or not, I will not presume to say, but even should they prove to be discrepant, the inconsistency need not have prevented our rude forefathers from embracing both of them at the same time with an equal fervour of conviction, for like the great majority of mankind the savage is above being hidebound by the trammels of a pedantic logic. In attempting to track his devious thought through the jungle of crass ignorance and blind fear, we must always remember that we are treading enchanted ground, and must beware of taking for solid realities the cloudy shapes that cross our path or hover and gibber at us through the gloom. We can never completely replace ourselves at the standpoint of primitive man, see things with his eyes, and feel our hearts beat with the emotions that stirred his. All our theories concerning him and his ways must therefore fall far short of certainty, the utmost we can aspire to in such matters is a reasonable degree of probability.

To conclude these enquiries we may say that if Balder was indeed, as I have conjectured, a personification of a mistletoe-bearing oak, his death by a blow of the mistletoe might on the new theory be explained as a death by a stroke of lightning. So long as the mistletoe, in which the flame of the lightning smouldered, was suffered to remain among the boughs, so long no harm could befall the good and kindly god of the oak, who kept his life stowed away for safety between earth and heaven in the mysterious parasite, but when once that seat of his life, or of his death, was torn from the branch and hurled at the trunk, the tree fell—the god died—smitten by a thunderbolt.

And what we have said of Balder in the oak forests of Scandinavia may perhaps, with all due diffidence in a question so obscure and uncertain, be applied to the priest of Diana, the King of the Wood, at Aricia in the oak forests of Italy. He may have personated in flesh and blood the great Italian god of the sky, Jupiter, who had kindly come down from heaven in the lightning flash to dwell among men in the mistletoe—the thunder-besom—the Golden Bough—growing on the sacred oak in the dells of Nemi. If that was so, we need not wonder that the priest guarded with drawn sword the mystic

bough which contained the god's life and his own. The goddess whom he served and married was herself, if I am right, no other than the Queen of Heaven, the true wife of the sky-god. For she, too, loved the solitude of the woods and the lonely hills, and sailing overhead on clear nights in the likeness of the silver moon looked down with pleasure on her own fair image reflected on the calm, the burnished surface of the lake, Diana's Mirror.

## CHAPTER LXIX

### FAREWELL TO NEMI

WE are at the end of our enquiry, but as often happens in the search after truth, if we have answered one question, we have raised many more, if we have followed one track home, we have had to pass by others that opened off it and led, or seemed to lead, to far other goals than the sacred grove at Nemi. Some of these paths we have followed a little way, others, if fortune should be kind, the writer and the reader may one day pursue together. For the present we have journeyed far enough together, and it is time to part. Yet before we do so, we may well ask ourselves whether there is not some more general conclusion, some lesson, if possible, of hope and encouragement, to be drawn from the melancholy record of human error and folly which has engaged our attention in this book.

If then we consider, on the one hand, the essential similarity of man's chief wants everywhere and at all times, and on the other hand, the wide difference between the means he has adopted to satisfy them in different ages, we shall perhaps be disposed to conclude that the movement of the higher thought, so far as we can trace it, has on the whole been from magic through religion to science. In magic man depends on his own strength to meet the difficulties and dangers that beset him on every side. He believes in a certain established order of nature on which he can surely count, and which he can manipulate for his own ends. When he discovers his mistake, when he recognises sadly that both the order of nature which he had assumed and the control which he had believed himself to exercise over it were purely imaginary, he ceases to rely on his own intelligence and his own unaided efforts, and throws himself humbly on the mercy of certain great invisible beings behind the veil of nature, to whom he now ascribes all those far-reaching powers which he once arrogated to himself. Thus in the acuter minds magic is gradually superseded by religion, which explains the succession of natural phenomena as regulated by the will, the passion, or the caprice of spiritual beings like man in kind, though vastly superior to him in power.

But as time goes on this explanation in its turn proves to be unsatisfactory. For it assumes that the succession of natural events

is not determined by immutable laws, but is to some extent variable and irregular, and this assumption is not borne out by closer observation. On the contrary, the more we scrutinise that succession the more we are struck by the rigid uniformity, the punctual precision with which, wherever we can follow them, the operations of nature are carried on. Every great advance in knowledge has extended the sphere of order and correspondingly restricted the sphere of apparent disorder in the world, till now we are ready to anticipate that even in regions where chance and confusion appear still to reign, a fuller knowledge would everywhere reduce the seeming chaos to cosmos. Thus the keener minds, still pressing forward to a deeper solution of the mysteries of the universe, come to reject the religious theory of nature as inadequate, and to revert in a measure to the older standpoint of magic by postulating explicitly, what in magic had only been implicitly assumed, to wit, an inflexible regularity in the order of natural events, which, if carefully observed, enables us to foresee their course with certainty and to act accordingly. In short, religion, regarded as an explanation of nature, is displaced by science.

But while science has this much in common with magic that both rest on a faith in order as the underlying principle of all things, readers of this work will hardly need to be reminded that the order presupposed by magic differs widely from that which forms the basis of science. The difference flows naturally from the different modes in which the two orders have been reached. For whereas the order on which magic reckons is merely an extension, by false analogy, of the order in which ideas present themselves to our minds, the order laid down by science is derived from patient and exact observation of the phenomena themselves. The abundance, the solidity, and the splendour of the results already achieved by science are well fitted to inspire us with a cheerful confidence in the soundness of its method. Here at last, after groping about in the dark for countless ages, man has hit upon a clue to the labyrinth, a golden key that opens many locks in the treasury of nature. It is probably not too much to say that the hope of progress—moral and intellectual as well as material—in the future is bound up with the fortunes of science, and that every obstacle placed in the way of scientific discovery is a wrong to humanity.

Yet the history of thought should warn us against concluding that because the scientific theory of the world is the best that has yet been formulated, it is necessarily complete and final. We must remember that at bottom the generalisations of science or, in common parlance, the laws of nature are merely hypotheses devised to explain that ever-shifting phantasmagoria of thought which we dignify with the high-sounding names of the world and the universe. In the last analysis magic, religion, and science are nothing but theories of thought; and as science has supplanted its predecessors, so it may hereafter be itself superseded by some more perfect hypothesis, perhaps by some totally different way of looking at the phenomena—of registering the shadows on the screen—of which we in this generation can form no idea. The

advance of knowledge is an infinite progression towards a goal that for ever recedes We need not murmur at the endless pursuit

*Fatti non foste a viver come bruti  
Ma per seguir virtute e conoscenza*

Great things will come of that pursuit, though we may not enjoy them Brighter stars will rise on some voyager of the future—some great Ulysses of the realms of thought—than shine on us The dreams of magic may one day be the waking realities of science But a dark shadow lies athwart the far end of this fair prospect For however vast the increase of knowledge and of power which the future may have in store for man, he can scarcely hope to stay the sweep of those great forces which seem to be making silently but relentlessly for the destruction of all this starry universe in which our earth swims as a speck or mote In the ages to come man may be able to predict, perhaps even to control, the wayward courses of the winds and clouds, but hardly will his puny hands have strength to speed afresh our slackening planet in its orbit or rekindle the dying fire of the sun Yet the philosopher who trembles at the idea of such distant catastrophes may console himself by reflecting that these gloomy apprehensions, like the earth and the sun themselves, are only parts of that unsubstantial world which thought has conjured up out of the void, and that the phantoms which the subtle enchantress has evoked to-day she may ban to-morrow They too, like so much that to common eyes seems solid, may melt into air, into thin air

Without dipping so far into the future, we may illustrate the course which thought has hitherto run by likening it to a web woven of three different threads—the black thread of magic, the red thread of religion, and the white thread of science, if under science we may include those simple truths, drawn from observation of nature, of which men in all ages have possessed a store Could we then survey the web of thought from the beginning, we should probably perceive it to be at first a chequer of black and white, a patchwork of true and false notions, hardly tinged as yet by the red thread of religion But carry your eye farther along the fabric and you will remark that, while the black and white chequer still runs through it, there rests on the middle portion of the web, where religion has entered most deeply into its texture, a dark crimson stain, which shades off insensibly into a lighter tint as the white thread of science is woven more and more into the tissue To a web thus chequered and stained, thus shot with threads of diverse hues, but gradually changing colour the farther it is unrolled, the state of modern thought, with all its divergent aims and conflicting tendencies, may be compared Will the great movement which for centuries has been slowly altering the complexion of thought be continued in the near future? or will a reaction set in which may arrest progress and even undo much that has been done? To keep up our parable, what will be the colour of the web which the Fates are now weaving on the humming loom of time? will it be white or red? We



cannot tell    A faint glimmering light illumines the backward portion  
of the web    Clouds and thick darkness hide the other end

Our long voyage of discovery is over and our bark has drooped her weary sails in port at last. Once more we take the road to Nemi. It is evening, and as we climb the long slope of the Appian Way up to the Alban Hills, we look back and see the sky aflame with sunset, its golden glory resting like the aureole of a dying saint over Rome and touching with a crest of fire the dome of St. Peter's. The sight once seen can never be forgotten, but we turn from it and pursue our way darkling along the mountain side, till we come to Nemi and look down on the lake in its deep hollow, now fast disappearing in the evening shadows. The place has changed but little since Diana received the homage of her worshippers in the sacred grove. The temple of the sylvan goddess, indeed, has vanished and the King of the Wood no longer stands sentinel over the Golden Bough. But Nemi's woods are still green, and as the sunset fades above them in the west, there comes to us, borne on the swell of the wind, the sound of the church bells of Rome ringing the Angelus. *Ave Maria!* Sweet and solemn they chime out from the distant city and die lingeringly away across the wide Campagnan marshes. *Le roi est mort, vive le roi!* *Ave Maria!*

# INDEX

- Abbas the Great, Shah of Persia, 289  
 Abbot of Unreason, 586  
 Abchases of the Caucasus, 534  
 Abduction of souls by demons, 186  
 Absence and recall of the soul, 180  
 Abstinence, 136, 138  
 Abydos, 366, specially associated with Osiris, 367  
 Abeokuta, the Alake of, 295  
 Abipones of Paraguay, 254  
 Abonsam, an evil spirit, 555  
 Abuzzi, the Carnival in the, 303  
 Abscesses, cure for, 539  
 Abyssinia, rain-making in, 66, rain-making priests on the borders of, 107  
 Acagchemem tribe of California, 499  
 Acaill, Book of, 273  
 Acosta, J de, 587  
 Acts, tabooed, 194-202  
 Adam of Bremen, 160  
 Adon, a Semitic title, 325  
 Adonis, and Aphrodite (Venus), 7, 8, 328, the myth of, 324-7, in Syria, 327-9, in Cyprus, 329-35, ritual of, 335-41, the gardens of, 341-7, in relation to the pig, 471  
 Adonis, the river, 328, 336  
 Adoption, pretence of birth at, 14  
 Adultery of wife thought to spoil the luck of absent husband, 23, 24  
 Aegira, priestess of Earth at, 94  
 Aegis, Athena and the, 477  
 Aeneas, and the Golden Bough, 3, 163, 703, 706, 707, his vision of the glories of Rome, 149  
 Aeolus, King of the Winds, 81  
 Aesculapius, 5, 111, 301  
 Afghanistan, ceremony at the reception of strangers in, 196  
 Africa, magicians, especially rain-makers, as chiefs and kings in, 84-6, human gods in, 98, rules of life or taboos observed by kings in, 169-72, reluctance of people to tell their own names in, 247, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 595, dread and seclusion of menstuous women in, 604, birth-trees in, 681  
 Africa, British Central, heart of lion eaten to make eater brave in, 495  
 —, East, seclusion and purification of man-slayers in, 214, infanticide in, 293, propitiation of dead lions in, 522  
 —, North, charms to render bridegroom impotent in, 241, Midsummer fires in, 631  
 —, South, rat's hair as a charm in, 31, continence in war in, 211, seclusion of man-slayers in, 214, disposal of cut hair and nails in, 235, magic use of spittle in, 237, personal names tabooed in, 247, rites of initiation in, 497, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 595, dread of menstuous women in, 604, story of the external soul in, 677  
 —, West, magical functions of chiefs in, 85, reverence for silk-cotton trees in, 112, kings forced to accept office in, 176, fetish kings in, 177, traps set for souls in, 187, purification after a journey in, 197, custom as to blood shed on the ground, 229, rain-charms, 234, negroes of, 236, human sacrifices in, 433, 570, propitiation of dead leopard in, 523, the external soul in, 684, ritual of death and resurrection in, 697  
 Afterbirth, contagious magic of, 39-41  
 Agar Dinka, the, 270  
 Agaric, superstitions as to, 618  
 Agdestis, a man-monster, 349  
 Age of magic, 55, 56  
 Agni, Indian fire-god, 708  
 Agricultural year, expulsion of demons timed to coincide with seasons of the, 575  
 Agrionia, festival at Orchomenus, 291  
 Agu, Mount, in Togo, wind-fetish on, 81, fetish priest on, 169  
 Ague, cure for, 545, 546  
 Aht or Nootka Indians, 599  
 Amos, 481, 496, 515, 528, 530, 532, of Japan, 252, 505, 506, 660, of Saghalien, 20, 509  
 Akikuyu of British East Africa, 145, 604

- Aladdin and the Wonderful Lamp**, Roman version of, 671  
**Alake**, the, of Abeokuta, 295  
**Alaska**, respect of hunters for dead sables and bears in, 525, expulsion of evils in, 551, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 600  
**Alba Longa**, 148, kings of, 149  
**Alban dynasty**, 149, hills, 148, lake, 149, mountain, 149, 150, 167  
**Albania**, milk-stones in, 34, mock lamentations for locusts and beetles in, 531, expulsion of Kore on Easter Eve in, 560, the Yule log in, 638  
**Albanians of the Caucasus**, 251, 571  
**Albigenses worshipped each other**, 101  
**Alchemy leads up to chemistry**, 92  
**Aleuts of Alaska**, 221  
**Alexandria**, festival of Adonis at, 335  
**Alexandrian calendar**, 374, year, 373  
**Alfai**, rain-making priest, 107  
**Alfoors**, of the island of Buru, 250, of Central Celebes, 181, 690, of Halmahera, 548, of Minahassa, 94, 95, 186, 482, 492, of Poso, 248  
**Algeria**, Midsummer fires in, 631  
**Algidus**, Mount, 150, 164  
**Algonquins**, 144  
**All-healer**, name applied to mistletoe, 659-61  
**All Saints' Day**, 634, 636  
**All Souls**, feast of, 360  
**Allan**, John Hay, on the Hays of Errol, 702  
**Allatu**, Babylonian goddess, 326, 327  
**All-Hallows (All Saints' Day)**, 173  
**Almond**, causes virgin to conceive, 347, the father of all things, 347  
**Alpheus**, the sacred, 110  
**Alqamar**, tribe of nomads, 64  
**Alsace**, May-trees in, 121, the Little May Rose in, 125, stuffed goat or fox at threshing in, 457, cats burnt in Easter bonfires in, 656  
**Altmark**, the May Bride at Whitsuntide in the, 135, Easter bonfires in the, 615, 616  
**Alvarado**, Pedro de, Spanish general, 687  
**Amazosa Caffres**, 522  
**Amazon**, Indians at the mouth of the, 581  
**Amboyne**, rice in bloom treated like a pregnant woman, 115, ceremony to fertilise clove-trees in, 137, fear to lose the shadow at noon in, 191, sick people sprinkled with pungent spices in, 196, superstition regarding hair in, 680  
**America**, power of medicine men in North, 87, continence in Central, 138, the Corn Mother in, 412, personification of maize in North, 419, first-fruit ceremonies in, 486, 487  
**American Indians**, 29, 63, 82, 87, 111, 136, 138, 214, 244, 246, 252, 253, 256, 264, 522 *See also* North American Indians  
**Amethysts as charms**, 34, 85  
**Ammon**, the god, 142, 477, 500  
**Amoy**, spirits who draw away the souls of children at, 186  
**Amphictyon**, king of Athens, 155  
**Amulets**, 109, 242, 243, 679, 680  
**Amulius Silvius**, 149  
**Anabis**, human god at, 96  
**Anaitis**, Persian goddess, 331  
**Anatomie of Abuses**, 123  
**Ancestor**, wooden image of, 679  
**Ancestors**, prayers to, 71, sacrifices to, 72, souls of, in trees, 115, names of, bestowed on their reincarnations, 256  
**Ancus Marcius**, Roman king, 158  
**Andaman Islanders**, 192  
**Anderida**, forest of, 109  
**Andes**, the Peruvian, 79, the Colombian, 104  
**Anemone**, the scarlet, 336  
**Angamis**, Eastern, of Manipur, 64  
**Angola**, the Matiamvo of, 271  
**Angoni**, the, 73, 214  
**Angoniland**, rain-making in, 63  
**Angoy**, king of, 273  
**Anhour**, Egyptian god, 265  
**Animal**, killing the divine, 499-518, and man, sympathetic relation between, 700  
**Animals**, homeopathic magic of, 31, association of ideas common to the, 54, rain-making by means of, 72, injured through their shadows, 190, propitiation of the spirits of slain, 217, 220, torn to pieces and devoured in religious rites, 390, 391, so-called unclean, originally sacred, 472, belief in the descent of men from, 473, resurrection of, 516, 528, 529, wild, propitiation of, 518-32, two forms of the worship of, 532, processions with sacred, 535, transference of evil to, 540-42, as scapegoats, 540, 565, 568, 570, 576, burnt at festivals, 655, 656, perhaps deemed embodiments of witches, 657, 658, external soul in, 683-91  
**Animism**, the Buddhist, not a philosophical theory, 112, passing into polytheism, 117  
**Anjea**, mythical being, 39  
**Anna Kuari**, an Oraon goddess, 434  
**Annam**, ceremonies observed when a whale is washed ashore in, 223  
**Anointing stones**, in order to avert bullets from absent warriors, 26, in a rain-charm, 76  
**Anointment**, of weapon which caused wound, 41, of priest at installation, 174  
**Anthropomorphism of the spirits of nature**, 423  
**Antigonos**, King, 97  
**Antioch**, festival of Adonis at, 336, 346  
**Antrim**, harvest customs in, 404  
**Ants**, bites of, used in purificatory ceremonies, 195, 601, for lethargic patients, 496

- Anubis**, the jackal-headed god, 366, 367, 374  
**Anula** tribe of Northern Australia, 64, 72, 693  
**Apaches**, the, 76, 211  
**Apalai** Indians, 195  
**Ape**, a Batak totem, 691  
**Aphrodite**, 4, and **Adonis**, 7, 327, 335, the mourning, of the Lebanon, 329, sanctuary of, 330, and **Cinyras** and **Pygmalion**, 332, her blood dyes white roses red, 336  
**Apis**, sacred Egyptian bull, 335, 365, 476, 501  
**Apollo**, prophetess of, 95, image of, in sacred cave at **Hylae**, 95, and **Artemis**, 120, at **Delphi**, 265, his musical contest with **Marsyas**, 354, identified with the Celtic **Grannus**, 611  
**Apollo** **Diradiotes**, inspired priestess at temple of, 94  
**Apologies** offered to trees, 113, 115, 116, by savages to the animals they kill, 520, 523  
**Apoyaos**, head-hunters, 433  
**Apple-tree**, barren women roll under, to obtain offspring, 120, straw man placed on oldest, 467, torches thrown at, 610, as life-index of boy, 682  
**Arab** charms, 31, 242, name for the scarlet anemone, 336  
**Arabia**, belief as to shadows in ancient, 190, camel as scapegoat in, 540  
**Arabian Nights**, story of the external soul in the, 674  
**Arabs**, of **Moab**, 32, 378, of North Africa, 70  
**Araucanians** of South America, 245  
**Archigallus**, high priest of **Attis**, 349, 353  
**Arctic** regions, ceremonies at the re-appearance of the sun in the, 551  
**Arden**, forest of, 110  
**Ardennes**, effigies of **Carnival** in the, 305, exorcising rats in the, 531, bonfires on the first Sunday in **Lent**, 609, 656, **Lenten** fires and customs in the French, 610  
**Aricia**, 1, 2, many **Manu** at, 6, 491, its distance from the sanctuary, 106, the priest of, 582, 592, 593, 703  
**Arician** grove, 5, 6, 301, 477-9, 491, 582, 704  
**Arizona**, aridity of, 76  
**Armenia**, rain-making in, 70, cut hair, nails, and extracted teeth preserved in, 236, sacred prostitution of girls before marriage in, 331  
**Arrows**, in homoeopathic magic, 29, in contagious magic, 41, fire-tipped, shot at sun during an eclipse, 78, shot as a rain-charm, 99  
**Arsacid** house, divinity of **Parthian** kings of the, 104  
**Art**, sylvan deities in classical, 117  
**Artemis**, 120, 140, 141, and **Hippolytus**, 4-7, and **Apollo**, 120, of **Ephesus**, 141, 349, at **Perga**, 330, the Hanged, 355  
**Aru Islands**, custom of not sleeping after a death in the, 182, dog's flesh eaten to make eater brave, 496  
**Arunta** of Central Australia, 17, 603  
**Arval** Brothers, 224, 578  
**Aryan** god of thunder, 638  
**Aryans**, magical powers ascribed to kings, 89, in Europe, 110, 159, 161, 163, 656, 665, descent of kingship through women, 155, of ancient India, 490, their use of the sacred oak-wood, 666, stories of the external soul, 668, reverence for the oak, 709  
**Ascension** Day, 312, 702  
**Ascetic** idealism of the East, 139  
**Ash-tree** in popular cures, 546, 682  
**Ash** Wednesday, 302, 304, 305, 461, 614  
**Ashantees**, 497  
**Ashes**, in magic, 30-32, 72, 76, of human victims scattered on fields, 378-80, 433, 436-8, 442, 443, of bonfires, use of, 611, 615, 621, 635, 645, 646, of **Midsummer** fires, 626, 629, 631, 632, of the **Yule** log, 637, of the need-fire, 640  
**Asia** Minor, pontiffs in, 9, human scapegoats in, 579  
**Asongtata**, annual ceremony performed by the **Garos** of **Assam**, 568  
**Asopus**, the river, 143  
**Aspalis**, a form of **Artemis**, 355  
**Ass**, in cure for scorpion's bite, 544  
**Assam**, the hill tribes of, taboos observed by the headman and his wife, 173, and by warriors, 212, parents named after their children in, 248, head-hunting in, 441, the **Asongtata** ceremony in, 568  
**Assumption** of the Virgin, festival of, 360  
**Astarte**, a great Babylonian goddess, 327, 335, 346  
**Athamas**, king of **Alus**, 290-92  
**Athena** and the *aegis*, 477  
**Athenian** sacrifice of the *bouphonia*, 466  
**Athenians**, decree divine honours to **Demetrius Poliorcetes** and his father **Antigonus**, 97, prayed to **Zeus** for rain, 159, their tribute of youths and maidens to **Minos**, 280, sacrifice to **Dionysus** for the fruits of the land, 386, their use of human scapegoats, 579  
**Athens**, king and queen at, 9, titular king at, 106, marriage of **Dionysus** at, 142, female kinship at, 155, sacred spots struck by lightning at, 159, the Commemoration of the Dead at, 340, **Dionysus** of the Black Goatskin at, 390, annual sacrifice of a goat on the **Acropolis** of, 477, fever transferred to pillar at, 545  
**Atonement**, Jewish Day of, 569  
**Attica**, summer festival of **Adonis** in, 336, Flowery **Dionysus** in, 387, time of

- threshing in, 466, killing an ox formerly a capital crime in, 466
- Attis, and Cybele, 4, 5, 8, myth and ritual of, 347-52, as a god of vegetation, 352, 353, human representatives of, 353-6, his relation to Lityerses, 440, killed by a boar, 471
- Augustine, 359, 382
- Augustus as a ruler, 46
- Aun or On, king of Sweden, 278, 290
- Aurelia Aemilia, a sacred harlot, 331
- Australia, magical ceremonies in, 17, charms in, 32, contagious magic in, 38, 39, 42, 44, 45, magic practised but religion nearly unknown in aboriginal, 55, rain-making in, 64, 65, 72, 76, detaining the sun or hastening its descent in, 80, dust columns thought to be spirits in, 82, government of old men in aboriginal, 83, ceremony observed at approaching the camp of another tribe, 197, totemism in, 533, annual expulsion of ghosts in, 550, dread and seclusion of women at menstruation in, 603, initiation of young men in, 692
- , Central, magical ceremonies for the supply of food in, 17, charm to promote the growth of beards in, 32, contagious magic of wounds in, 42, headmen of totem clans public magicians in, 83, concealment of personal names in, 245, avoidance of the names of the dead in, 252, magical rites for the revival of nature in, 323, expelling the devil in, 548
- , Northern, homoeopathic magic of flesh diet in, 496
- , South-eastern, contagious magic of footprints in, 44, and of bodily impressions, 45, sex totems in, 687-9
- , Western, belief as to the placenta in, 39
- Australian aborigines (blacks), 38, 39, 55, 80, 179, 190, 205, 207, 229, 234, 244, 251, 253, 254, 349, 533, 539, 551
- Austria, charm to make fruit trees bear in, 28, belief in the sensitiveness of trees, 113, harvest customs in, 405, children warned against the Corn-cock in, 451, mythical calf in the corn in, 459, Midsummer fires in, 625, the mistletoe in, 663
- Autumn-hen, last sheaf called, 451
- Auvergne, Lenten fires in, 611
- Auxerre, harvest customs in, 401, 459
- Auxesia and Damia, 7
- Awa-nkonde, the, 596
- "Awasungu, house of the," 596
- Axe, that slew ox, condemned, 466
- Axo-mama (Potato-mother), 413
- Aymara Indians, 73, 565
- Azadirachta Indica*, 72
- Aztecs, 488, 587, 681
- Ba-Pedi of South Africa, 209, 211, 220
- Ba-Ronga of South Africa, 677
- Ba-Thonga of South Africa, 211, 220
- Baal, prophets of, 66
- Baba, name given to last sheaf, 404
- Babar Archipelago, ceremony to obtain a child for barren woman in the, 14, saturnalia at marriage of Sun and Earth, 136-7, fatigue transferred to stones in the, 540
- Babylon, theocratic despotism of ancient, 48, sanctuary of Bel at, 142, mortality of the high gods of, 265, festival of Zagmuk at, 281, festival of Sacaea at, 282, sanctified harlotry at, 330
- Babylonia, divinity of the early kings, 104, worship of Adonis in, 325
- Bacchanals of Thrace, ivy eaten by, 95, tore Pentheus in pieces, 378, 392, wore horns, 390
- Bacchic frenzy, 291
- Bacchus or Dionysus, 386 *See* Dionysus
- Badagas of the Neilgherry Hills, 482, 541, 542
- Badonsachen, king of Burma, 99
- Baduwis of Java, 225
- Baffin Land, expulsion of Sedna in, 552
- Bag, souls of persons deposited in a, 186, 675, 679, soul of dying chief caught in a, 294, 295
- Baganda of Central Africa, 40, 98, 137, 145, 523, 539, 604
- Bagba, a wind-fetish, 81, 170
- Bageshu of East Africa, 214
- Bagobos of Mindanao, 180, 355, 433
- Bahaus *See* Kayans
- Bahima, of Central Africa, 257, of Uganda, 539
- Bailly, J S, French astronomer, 337
- Balder, the myth of, 607-9, and the mistletoe, 608, 658-67, 701, 702, 710
- Balder's Balefires, 625, 664
- Bali, island of, rice personified as husband and wife in, 418, expulsion of devils in, 557
- Ball-players, homoeopathic charms employed by, 29
- Balls, gold and silver, to imitate the sun and moon, 121
- Balong of the Cameroons, 685
- Bangala of the Upper Congo, 247
- Banjars in West Africa, 86
- Banks' Islands, magical stones in the, 33, making sunshine in the, 78-9, ghosts in stones in the, 190, ceremony for getting rid of fatigue in the, 540
- Banting in Sarawak, rules observed during absence of warriors at, 25
- Bantu tribes, 209, 215
- Banyoro, the, 85, 565
- Barea of East Africa, 107
- Barenton, the fountain of, 76, 77
- Bari of the Upper Nile, 85
- Barley, oldest cereal cultivated by the Aryans, 399

- Barley-cow, 457, 458, -mother, 399, -sow, 460, -wolf, 448, 449  
 Baronga, the, of South Africa, 67, 71  
 Barren women *See under* Women  
 Bashalange, reception of subject chiefs by head chief among the, 198  
 Basque hunter transformed into bear, 692, 699  
 Bastard, name given to last sheaf, 406  
 Bastian, Adolf, 533  
 Basutos, 38, 192, 214  
 Bataks of Sumatra, 14, 40, 82, 184, 198, 541, 570, 690, 691  
 Batavia, rain-making in, 72  
 Batchelor, Rev J, 506, 515, 516  
 Bathing as a rain-charm, 70  
 Bats, the lives of men in, 687, 688  
 Bavaria, charms in, 28, magic in, 29, 40, 42, 43, greasing weapon instead of wound in, 42, green bushes placed at doors of newly married pairs in, 119, the May-pole in, 124, the *Walber* in, 126, saying as to crossed legs in, 240, Whitsuntide mummers in Lower, 297, carrying out Death in, 307, contests between Summer and Winter in, 316, the corn-spirit in, 402, harvest customs in, 405, 426-8, 454, 456, 457, 461, cure for fever in, 544, expulsion of witches in, 561, Easter fires in, 616, Midsummer fires in, 623, 653  
 Bean, King of the, 586  
 Bean-cock, 451, -goat, 454  
 Bear, taboos concerning, 221, custom observed after killing a, 222, killing the sacred, 505  
 Beards, magic to promote growth of, 32  
 Beasts, sacred, held responsible for the course of nature in ancient Egypt, 87  
 Beating a man's garment instead of the man, 44, with rods in rain-making, 66, frogs, as a rain-charm, 73  
 Beauce and Perche, 40  
 Bechuanas, the, of South Africa, 31, 73, 197, 474, 484  
 Bed-clothes, contagious magic of bodily impressions on, 45  
 Bede, on the succession of Pictish kings, 156  
 Bedouins attack whirlwinds, 83  
 Beeches of Latium, 150  
 Beech-tree, in sacred grove of Diana, 8, burnt in Lenten bonfire, 612  
 Beena marriage, 152  
 Beer, continence observed at brewing, 219  
 Beetle, in magic, 31, superstitious precautions against beetles, 531, external soul in a, 674  
 Belgium, Lenten fires in, 609, Midsummer fires in, 630  
 Bella Coola Indians, 600  
 Bells, used in exorcism, 195, 568, to conjure spirits, 199, worn as amulets, 226, rung as a protection against witches, 560, 561  
 Beltane fires, 617-22, 653, cakes, 618-21; carline, 618  
 Benares, Hindoo gentleman worshipped as a god at, 100  
 Bengal, marriage ceremony at the digging of wells, 144, rule of succession of kings of, 277, ceremony over a Karma-tree in, 342, human sacrifices in, 434, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 602, stories of the external soul in, 670  
 Benin, king of, worshipped as a god, 99, 200, human sacrifices in, 433  
 Bera Pennu, Earth goddess, 434  
 Berawans of Sarawak, 15  
 Berbers of North Africa, 631  
 Berlin, treatment of navel-string in, 40  
 Besisis of the Malay Peninsula, 191  
 Besoms, burning, flung into the air to make corn grow, 647  
 Bethlehem, the Star of, 347  
 Betsileo of Madagascar, 229  
 Bhars of India, 565  
 Bhotiyas of Juhar, 569  
 Biajas of Borneo, the, 566  
 Bibih, off New Guinea, the natives reputed to make wind, 80  
 Bidasari and the golden fish, Malay story of, 676  
 Bilaspur or Bilaspore, twirling spindles forbidden in, 20, temporary rajah in, 287  
 Bilqula *See* Bella Coola  
 Binbinga tribe of Northern Australia, 693  
 Birch-trees, 121, 128, 627  
 Bird, soul conceived as a, 181  
 Birds, cause headache through clipped hair, 234, 237, absent warriors called, 247, tongues of, eaten, 496, as scapegoats, 541, 545, external souls in, 670, 672, 675-7  
 Birth, pretence of, 14, 15, 197, 406, 421, a man's fortune determined by the day and hour of his, 37, new, 351, 697  
 Birth-trees, in Africa, 681, in Europe, 682  
 Bitch, last sheaf called the, 449  
 Bithynia, song of reapers in, 425  
 Black colour in rain-making ceremonies, 67, animals in rain-charms, 72, 161  
 Blackfoot Indians, 21, 22, 524  
 Blindness, charm to cause, 30  
 Blood, sympathetic connection between a wounded person and his shed, 43, human, in rain-making ceremonies, 65, as a means of inspiration, 94, put on door-posts, 175, of childbirth, 209, 229, smeared on person as a purification, 221, tabooed, 227-30, royal, not to be shed on the ground, 228, unwillingness to shed, 228, received on bodies of kinsfolk, 229, drops of, effaced, 229, of chief sacred, 230, fetish priests allowed to drink fresh, 238, Day of, in the festival of Attis, 349, 353, bath of bull's, in the rites of Attis, 351, remission of

- sins through the shedding of, 356, sprinkled on seed and scattered on field, 432, 434, 438, of sacrificial horse, 478, of men drunk to acquire their qualities, 497, 498, as a means of communion with a deity, 535, of children used to knead a paste, 553, girls at puberty forbidden to see, 600, menstruous, 603, 604
- Blood-brotherhood, 113, -covenant, 202
- Blu-u Kayans of Borneo, 195
- Boa-constrictor, Caffres' dread of, 222
- Boar, in magic, 31, and Adonis, 325, 471, Attis killed by a, 347, 471, corn-spirit as, 460, the Yule, 461, 462, Christmas, 462
- Boas, Dr Franz, 699
- Boba, name given to the last sheaf, 405
- Bodio, fetish king, 86
- Boeotians, the, 143, 371
- Bogota, rigorous training of the heir to the throne of, 595
- Bohemia, Midsummer tree burned in, 122, throwing Death into the water in, 125, May King and Queen in, 130-32, Whitsuntide mummers in, 298, 299, carrying out Death in, 309, 310, bringing in Summer in, 311, the last sheaf in, 404, harvest customs in, 429, 456, 457, cure for fever in, 544, expulsion of witches in, 561, bonfires in, 621, 626, charm to make corn grow high in, 647, fern-seed on St John's Day in, 704, 705
- Boils, 473
- Bolivia, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 601
- Bombay, belief as to absence of sleeper's soul in, 183
- Bones, of dead in magic, 30, 71, human, buried as a rain-charm, 72, departing souls bottled up in hollow, 180, used as charms, 201, 495, cakes baked in the shape of, 489, of animals, treatment of, 525-9, burnt in bonfires, 616
- Bonfires, Midsummer, 122, 622, 629, 645, leaping over, 318, 610, supposed to protect against conflagration, 610, lit by persons last married, 610, a protection against sickness, witchcraft, and sorcery, 610, 620, 621, fertilising influence of, 645, 646, protect fields against hail and homesteads against thunder and lightning, 649
- Boni, Commendatore G, 163
- Bontoc, the natives of, 433
- Bormus or Borimus, 425, 442
- Borneo, the Dyaks of, 14, rules observed by camphor-hunters in, 21, telepathy in war in, 25, hooks to catch souls in, 180, rice used to prevent soul from wandering, 181, precautions against strangers in, 195, use of puppets as substitutes for living persons, 492, sickness expelled in a ship from, 564, expulsion of evils in, 566, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 597, birth custom in, 679, tree as life-index in, 682
- Bororos of Brazil, 181, 484
- Bosnian Turks, 15
- Bough, the Golden *See* Golden Bough
- Bouphonia*, Athenian sacrifice, 466
- Boys, at initiation, 692, 696
- Brahma, Vishnu, and Siva, the Hindoo trinity, 52
- Brahmans, 33, 67, 79, 100, 227, 245, 285, 288, 343, 490
- Brains of enemies eaten, 498
- Branches, used in rain-charm, 63, 64, in exorcism, 197, fatigue and sickness transferred to, 540, 564
- Brand, John, 636, 637
- Brandy, North American Indian theory of, 496
- Bray, Mrs, 446
- Brazil, Indians of, 88, 181, 495, 523, 581, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 601
- Bread, leavened, Flamen Dialis forbidden to touch, 174, fast from, in mourning for Attis, 350, communion, 481, eaten sacramentally, 488, 498
- Bread-fruit, 33
- Breath, of chief sacred, 205, 231, caught by his successor, 294
- Brethren and Sisters of the Free Spirit, 101
- Breton superstitions as to tides, 35, peasants' way of getting rain, 76, stories of the external soul, 674, peasants and the mistletoe, 704
- Brewing, continence observed at, 219
- Bribri Indians, the, 208, 605
- Bride, the Whitsuntide, 132, 135, the May, 135, races for a, 156, fishing-net thrown over, 242, of the Nile, 370, name given to last sheaf, 408
- Bride and bridegroom, the Whitsuntide, 133, the Midsummer, 133, all knots on their garments unloosed, 241
- Bridegroom, the Whitsuntide, 133, of May, 133, 320
- Bridget in Scotland and the Isle of Man, 134
- Brigit, a Celtic goddess, 135
- Brimo and Brimos in the mysteries of Eleusis, 143
- British Columbia *See* Columbia, British
- Brittany, belief as to death at ebb-tide in, 35, the Mother-sheaf in Upper, 401, Midsummer fires in, 628, mistletoe as a protection against witchcraft in, 704, fern-seed on Midsummer Eve in, 705
- Brooke, Rajah, of Sarawak, 89
- Brotherhood of the Green Wolf, 628
- Brothers, childless persons named after their younger, 248, ancient Egyptian story of the Two, 674
- and sisters, marriage of, 332
- Brothers-in-law, their names not to be pronounced, 250, 251
- Brown, Dr George, 84

- Buddha, images of, drenched as a rain-charm, 77, the Footprint of, 235  
 Buddhas, living, 102  
 Buddhism, 112, and Christianity, 361  
 Buffalo, sacrificed for human victim, 436, a Batak totem, 691  
 Buffalo-bull, last sheaf called, 457  
 Buffaloes, propitiation of dead, 523, the resurrection of, 529, revered by the Todas, 534, as scapegoats, 565  
 Buginese of Celebes, 33  
 Building, continence during, 220  
 Bukaua of New Guinea, 597, 694  
 Bulgaria, 15, charms in, 30, 31, peasants threaten fruit trees to make them bear, 114, superstitions in, 240, harvest customs in, 405, cure for fever in, 545, need-fire in, 640  
 Bull, in relation to Dionysus, 389, 390, corn-spirit as, 457, 465, at threshing, 458, 459  
 Bull's blood, bath of, in rites of Attis, 351  
 Bull-roarers, 692-5  
 Bullets, magical treatment of, 19, magical modes of averting, 26  
 Bullocks as scapegoats, 541  
 Bulls, sacred, of Ancient Egypt, 476  
 Bunyoro, king of, 199, 270  
 Burghers or Badagas *See* Badagas  
 Burglars, charms employed by, 30  
 Burial customs, 35, 175, 185, 190  
 Burma, priestly king in, 226, 227, king's name tabooed in, 257, custom of threshing in, 418, expulsion of demons in, 549  
 Burne, Miss C S, 446  
 Buru, East Indian island, girl sacrificed to crocodile in, 145, eating the soul of the rice in, 482, dog's flesh eaten in, 496  
 Burying the Carnival, 301-7  
 Bush negroes of Surinam, 166, 473  
 Bushmen of South Africa, 495, 604  
 Busiris, backbone of Osiris at, 367, ritual of Osiris at, 375, "the house of Osiris," 443  
 Busiris, king of Egypt, 443  
 Butter, time for making, 35  
 Buzzard, killing the sacred, 499  
 Byblus, Adonis at, 327, Osiris and Isis at, 364  
 Cacongo, king of, 199  
 Cactus, the sacred, 23  
 Cadiz, death at low tide at, 35  
 Caesar, Julius, 46, 653  
 Caffres, the, 222, 235, 247-9, 522, of Sofala, 33, of Natal and Zululand, 483  
*Caillach* (Old Wife), name given to last corn cut, 403, 409  
 Cairo, ceremony of cutting the dams at, 370  
 Cajaboneros Indians, the, 138  
 Calabar, expulsion of demons at Old, 492, 567, soul of chief in sacred grove at, 681, belief of negroes regarding external souls, 686  
 Calabashes, souls shut up in, 188  
 Calabria, Easter custom in, 345, annual expulsion of witches in, 560  
 Calendar, the ancient Greek, 279, regulation of the early, an affair of religion, 280, the Egyptian, 368, the Alexandrian, 373, of Esne, 373, the Mohammedan, 632  
 Calf, killed at harvest, 458, mythical, in the corn, 459  
 Calicut, rule of succession observed by the kings of, 275-7, 296  
 California, the shaman in, 88, killing the sacred buzzard in, 499, Indians of, 599, 707  
 Caligula and the priest of Nemi, 3  
 Cambodia, homoeopathic magic used by hunters in, 18, human incarnation of god in, 95, kings of, 108, 167, 224, 266, 284, 289, superstitions regarding the head in, 230, annual expulsion of demons in, 559, palace purged of demons, 563, seclusion of girls at puberty, 602, ritual at cutting a parasitic orchid in, 660, 661  
 Cambodian story of the external soul, 668  
 Camel, plague transferred to, 540  
 Cameroons, the external soul in the, 681, theory of, 685  
 Camomile, burnt in Midsummer fire, 631  
 Camp shifted after a death, 252  
 Campbell, Major-General John, 436, 437  
 —, Rev J G, 403  
 Camphor, 21, 24  
 Canadian Indians, 525, 526  
 Candlemas, 134, 461  
 Candles, 3, magical, 30, of human tallow, 56  
 Cannibal feast, legendary, at the Boeotian Orchomenus, 292  
 Cannibalism, 233, 391, 497  
 Caprification, 580  
 Car Nicobar, expulsion of devils in, 567  
 Caramantran, death of, 304  
 Caribs, the, 27, 495, 690  
 Carinthia, Green George in, 126, ceremony at the installation of a prince of, 287, custom at threshing in, 429  
 Carlin or Carline, "the Old Woman," in Scotland, 403  
 Carnival, dances at the, 28, burying the, 298, 301-7, the burial and resurrection of the, 315, at Rome in the rites of Attis, 350, in relation to the Saturnalia, 586, effigy burnt at end of, 614  
 Carolina, Indians of, 519  
 Caroline Islands, 40, 218, traditionary origin of fire in the, 707  
 Carpathus, laying out of corpses in, 243  
 Carrier Indians of North-West America, 18, 219, 606  
 "Carrying out Death," 125, 302, 307-16, 577, 613, 614  
 Carthage, Christians worshipping each other at, 101, the effeminate priests of the Great Mother at, 356



- Carthaginian sacrifice of children to Moloch, 281
- Carver, Captain Jonathan, 698
- Castration, 347, 350
- Cat, in homoeopathic magic, 32, in rain-charm, 72, corn-spirit as, 453, killed at harvest, 453, a representative of the devil, 656, story of a clan whose souls were all in one, 677, a Batak totem, 691 *See also* Cats
- Cat's cradle as a charm, 20, 79, forbidden to boys among the Esquimaux, 20
- Catat, Dr, 193
- Caterpillars, precautions against, 531
- Catholic Church, 335, 345
- Catholic custom of dedicating candles, 3, as to partaking of the Eucharist, 488
- Catlin, George, 88
- Cats, burnt in bonfires, 610, 656, perhaps burnt as witches, 657
- Cattle, magical stones for increase of, 33, influence of tree-spirits on, 119, crowned, 126, protected against wolves by charms, 242, last sheaf given to, 400, 407, 408, 412, Yule Boar given to the, 462, driven through, round, or between bonfires, 615, 620, 621, 624, 626-8, 640, 641, protected against sorcery by sprigs of mullein, 629, lighted brands carried round, 647
- Cattle disease, Midsummer fires a protection against, 627, plague, need-fire kindled as a remedy for, 641
- Caucasus, rain-making in the, 70, sacraments of pastoral tribes in the, 534
- Cayor in Senegal, the king of, 172
- Cazembes of Angola, the, 203
- Cecrops, king of Athens, 155
- Cedar, sacred, 95
- Cedar-tree, girl sacrificed to a, 112
- Celebes, rain-charms in, 70, hooking souls in, 180, customs at childbirth in, 180, ceremonies for recovering souls in, 186, propitiation of souls of slain enemies in, 112, planting the rice in, 416, customs as to eating the new rice in, 482, the external soul in, 679
- Celtic sacrifices, 653, 657, tales of the external soul, 673
- Celts, their worship of the oak, 110, 160, annual sacrifice to Artemis, 141, fire-festivals of the, 632
- Ceram, island of, sickness expelled in a ship from, 563, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 597, the Kakian association in, 696
- Ceres, the, in France, 401
- Cetchwayo, king of Zululand, 257
- Ceylon, ogres in, 669, king of, and his external soul, 669, 670
- Chaka, the Zulu despot, 86
- Chams of Cochinchina, 29, 220
- Charms, to ensure long life, 35, to prevent the sun from going down, 79, to facilitate childbirth, 238
- Chasas of Orissa, 473
- Chastity observed for sake of absent persons, 23, 24, as a virtue not understood by savages, 139 *See also* Continence
- Chatti, German tribe, 232
- Cheese, the Beltane, 620
- Chent-Ament, title of Osiris, 375
- Cheremiss of Caucasus, the, 262, 560
- Cherokees, the, 29, 40, 372, 520
- Chibchas, the, 104
- Chicomecohuatl, Mexican goddess, 589
- Chiefs, supernatural power of, in Melanesia, 84, as magicians, 84; punished for drought and dearth, 86, tabooed, 202, sacred, 205, foods tabooed to, 238, names of, tabooed, 257-9
- Chilcotin Indians, 78
- Child, name given to last sheaf, 406; born on harvest field, pretence of, 406
- Childbed, woman in, thought to control the wind, 80, souls of women dying in, live in trees, 115, taboos on women in, 208
- Childbirth, precautions taken with mother at, 180, 181, women tabooed at, 207, 208, knots untied at, 238, homoeopathic magic to facilitate, 239
- Children, taboos observed by, 21, 22, buried to the neck as a rain-charm, 75, parents named after their, 248, sacrificed, 281, 293, 380, 431, blood of, used to knead a paste, 553
- Chilote Indians, 237
- China, emperors of, 9, charms in, 35, geomancy in, 36, modes of compelling the rain-god to give rain in, 74, trees planted on graves in, 115, convulsions attributed to the action of demons in, 186, custom as to shadows at funerals in, 190, ceremony at the beginning of spring in, 468, popular superstitions in, 498, human scapegoats in, 566, expulsion of evils in, 567
- Chinese empire, incarnate human gods in the, 103
- Chimigchinich, Californian god, 499, 500
- Chinna Kimeidy, in India, 436
- Chinook Indians, 256, 599
- Chins, the, 551
- Chippeway Indians, 605
- Chiquites Indians of Paraguay, 526
- Chiriguano of South America, 601
- Chitome or Chitombé, a pontiff of Congo, 170, 266, 296
- Chittagong, 239
- Choctaws, the, 215
- Cholera, demon of, 549, 551, 563, sent away in animal scapegoats, 565
- Christ, his Nativity, 358, his crucifixion, 359, his resurrection, 359, 360
- Christian festivals displace heathen festivals, 360
- Christianity, its conflict with the Mithraic religion, 358, and Buddhism, 361

- Christians, pretenders to divinity among, 101
- Christmas, festival of, borrowed from the Mithraic religion, 358, heathen origin of, 359
- Christmas Boar, 462, candles, 637
- Church bells, a protection against witchcraft, 560
- Ciminian forest, the, 110
- Cingalese cure by means of devil-dancers, 542
- Cinyras, father of Adonis, 327, 328, 332
- Circassia, custom as to pear-trees in, 119
- Circe, the land of, 150
- Circumcision, 229, 694
- Claudius, the Emperor, 3, 348
- Clayton, Rev A C, 542
- Clothes, magic sympathy between a person and his, 43, 44
- Clotilde, Queen, 232
- Clove trees treated like pregnant women, 115
- Cloves, ceremony to make them grow, 137
- Clucking-hen at threshing, 451
- Clyack* sheaf, 408, 425
- Coast Murring tribe of New South Wales, 693
- Cobra, ceremony after killing a, 222
- Coca-mother, among the Peruvians, 413
- Coco-nuts sacred in Northern India, 119
- Cock, corn-spirit as, 450, name given to last sheaf, 451
- Cockatoos, magical multiplication of, 17
- Coel Coeth*, Hallowe'en bonfire, 635
- Coins, from the eyes of corpses, 31, portraits of kings not stamped on, 193
- Columbia, British, use of magical images to procure fish in, 18, taboos imposed on parents of twins in, 66, belief regarding a physician and his patient's soul, 189, Indians' dislike of telling their own names, 246, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 600, rites of initiation in, 699
- Combs, when not to be used, 24, 174, 215, 216
- Commagney, the priory of, 77
- Communion with deity by eating new fruits, 487
- Communion bread, 481
- Compitalia, festival of the, 491
- Conception in women caused by trees, 119
- Congo, recall of stray souls among the tribes, 184, conjuring spirits before drinking in the, 199, royal persons forbidden to touch the ground, 594, rites of initiation on the Lower, 697
- Connaught, taboos observed by the ancient kings of, 173
- "Consort, the divine," 142
- Constantine, the Emperor, 331
- Consumption, cure for, 545
- Contact or contagion in magic, law of, 11
- Continence, required during search for sacred cactus, 23, practised before fertility ceremonies, 136, practised in order to make crops grow, 138, enjoined on people during rounds of sacred pontiff, 170, of priests, 170, on eve of period of taboo, 173, during war, 210, 211, after victory, 212, by hunters and fishers, 217, by workers in salt-pans, 219, at brewing, 219, at house-building, 220, at making and repairing dams, 220, by lion-killers and bear-killers, 221, 222, at festival of first-fruits, 486
- Cords, knotted, in magic, 241
- Corea, kings responsible for rain and crops, 87, offerings to souls of the dead in trees in, 115, king not to be touched, 224, means of inspiring courage in, 496, use of torches to ensure good crops in, 647
- Corinthians make images of Dionysus out of a pine-tree, 387
- Cormac Mac Art, king of Ireland, 273
- Corn, spirit of the, embodied in human beings, 419, double personification of, as mother and daughter, 420
- Corn-baby, 459, -bull, 458, -cat, 453, -cock, 451, -cow, 457, -foal, 460, -goat, 454, -pug, 449, -sow, 448, 460, -steer, 457, -wolf, 450
- god, Adonis as a, 338, Attis as a, 353, Osiris as a, 376
- mother, 143, 399, 412
- reapers, songs of the, 424
- spirit, Adonis as a, 338, represented by human victims, 339, represented as a dead old man, 372, killing the, 425, 431, slain in his human representatives, 438-47, how representative was chosen, 439, as an animal, 447-64
- Corn-medicine festival, 419, 420
- Cornwall, temporary king in, 287
- Cos, sanctuary of Aesculapius in, 111, harvest-home in, 396
- Costa Rica, 605
- Cottonwood trees, the shades or spirits of, 111, 112
- Courland, custom at sowing in, 461
- Cow, ceremony of rebirth from a golden, 197, sacred to Isis, 373, corn-spirit as, 457, as scapegoat, 565, 571, witches steal milk from, 648, mistletoe given to, 663
- Creator, the grave of the, 264
- Creek Indians, 211, 484, 605
- Cretan festival of Dionysus, 389, 390
- Crete, milk-stones in, 34
- Crevaux, J, 195
- Criminals shorn to make them confess, 680
- Cripple Goat, last sheaf called, 455
- Crocodile, girl sacrificed to a, 145
- Crocodiles, Malay charm to catch, 19, spared by savages out of respect, 518

- Cronus, his sacrifice of his son, 293  
 Crops, charms to promote the growth of the, 28, 288, 610, 613, 614, 624, 645, intercourse of the sexes to promote the growth of the, 136, human victims sacrificed for the, 355, 431, superstitious devices to get rid of vermin in the, 530, supposed to be spoiled by menstruous women, 604, 606  
 "Cross of the Horse," first sheaf called, 460  
 Cross-road, fever deposited at, 544, offerings at, 557, ceremonies at, 561, Midsummer fires lighted at, 625  
 "Crying the Mare" in Hertfordshire, 459  
 "Crying the neck" in Devonshire, 445  
 Crystals, magic of, 38, 76, 85  
 Cumanus, the inquisitor, 681  
 Cumont, Professor Franz, 584  
 Cup-and-ball as a charm, 80  
 Cybele, Mother of the Gods, 347, worship of, 348  
 Cynaetha, festival of Dionysus at, 390  
 Cyprus, sacred prostitution in, 330  
 Cytisorus, son of Phrixus, 290, 291  
 Cyzicus, council chamber at, 225  
  
 Dacotas, 529  
 Daedala, festival of the, 143  
 Dahomey, the king of, 172, 199, 257  
 Dairi, the, or Mikado of Japan, 168, 169  
 Dairies, sacred, of the Todas, 175  
 Dalai Lama of Lhasa, 103  
 Dalmatia, belief as to the souls of trees in, 112  
 Damia and Auxesia, 7  
 Dams, continence at making, 220, in Egypt, 369, 370  
 Danae, the story of, 602  
 Dances, of women while men are away fighting, 26, 27, to make hemp grow, 28, for rain, 64, round sacred trees, 118, round the May-pole, 122, 124, 126, round bonfires, 122, 610-12, 614, 620, 621, 625, 628-30, to fertilise gardens, 137, of king, 200, of successful head-hunters, 212, to propitiate souls of slain foes, 212, of victory, 213, of harvesters, 401, 427, 460, at festival of first-fruits, 486, at burial of the wren, 537, masked, 542  
 Danger Island, snares for souls in, 187  
 Danish magic of footprints, 44  
 Danzig, disposal of cut hair at, 235, last sheaf at harvest at, 400  
 Daramulun, a mythical being, 692, 693  
 Darfur, Sultan of, 200, people of, believe the liver to be the seat of the soul, 497  
 Date-palm, artificial fertilisation of the, 582  
 Day of Blood, in rites of Attis, 350, of Atonement, 569  
 De Barros, Portuguese historian, 277  
 Dead, the, homoeopathic magic of, 30, spirits of, 47, making rain by means of, 71, trees animated by the souls of, 115, sacrifices to, 175, taboos on persons who have handled, 205, names of, tabooed, 251-6, appear to the living in dreams, 256, festival of, 373, 633, worship of, 414, ghosts of, 551  
 Dead Sunday, 302  
 Death, pretence of, 16, "carrying out," 125, 302, 307-16, 577, 613, 614, at ebb tide, 167, 168, mourners forbidden to sleep in a house after a, 182, custom of covering up mirrors after a, 192, from imagination, 204, ritual of, and resurrection, 691-711  
 Deir el Bahari, paintings at, 142  
 Deities duplicated through dialectical differences in their names, 164, 165, of vegetation as animals, 464-79  
 Deity, savage conception of, 92  
 Demeter, married to Zeus at Eleusis, 142, and Persephone, 393-8, 420, etymology of her name, 399, in relation to the pig, 469, horse-headed, of Phigalia, 471, Black, 471  
 Demetrius Poliorcetes, deified, 97  
 Demons, of trees, 116, abduction of souls by, 186, and ghosts averse to iron, 226, deceived by effigies, 492, of disease exorcised, 542, omnipresence of, 546, of cholera, 549, 551, men disguised as, 562, conjured into images, 568  
 Déné Indians, the, 208  
 Denmark, Whitsuntide customs in, 133, Yule Boar in, 461, Midsummerfires in, 625  
 Departmental kings of nature, 106-9  
 Depilation, 681  
 Deputy, expedient of dying by, 278, 289  
 Devil-dancers, 542  
 Devils *See* Demons  
 Devonshire, harvest customs in, 445  
 Dharmē, the Sun-god, 145  
 DI, Aryan root meaning "bright," 164  
 Diana, 1, 3, 8, the Tauric, 2, 3, 6, goddess of childbirth, 3, 141, goddess of fertility, 139-42, 163, and Dianus, 161-7  
 "Diana's Mirror," 1, 711  
 Dianus and Diana, 161-7  
 Dieri of Central Australia, the, 64, 65, 115, 548, 603  
 Dinkas, the, 269, 565  
 Diodorus Siculus, 365  
 Dione, wife of Zeus at Dodona, 151, the old consort of Zeus, 165  
 Dionysus, 142, 265, 378, god of the vine, 386, god of trees, 387, the Flowery, 387, god of agriculture and the corn, 387, and the winnowing fan, 388, horned, 390, live animals rent in the rites of, 390, 391, as a goat, 390, 464, human sacrifices in his rites, 392, torn in pieces at Thebes, 392, as a bull, 464, 465, relations to Pans, Satyrs, and Silenuses, 464, his resurrection perhaps enacted in his rites, 468

- Disease, demons of, expelled, 196, 542, transferred to other people and to effigies, 539, sent away in little ships, 563
- Divination, 256, 634, 635
- Divine animal, killing the, 499, as scape-goat, 570, 576
- "Divine Consort, the," 142
- Divine Husbandman, in China, 468
- Divining rods, 705
- Divinities, human, bound by many rules, 262
- Divinity of kings, 162, growth of the conception of the, 162, 163
- Divorce of spiritual from temporal power, 175-8
- Dobrizhoffer, Father M., 254, 255
- Dodona, oracular spring at, 147, Zeus and Dione at, 151, oracular oak at, 159
- Dodwell, E., 397
- Dog, black, sacrificed for rain, 73, used to stop rain, 75, prohibition to touch or name, 174, corn-spirit as, 448, of the harvest, 449
- Dogs crowned, 3
- Dollar-bird associated with rain, 72
- Donar or Thunar, German thunder-god, 160
- Doors opened to facilitate childbirth, 239, to facilitate death, 243
- Dos Santos, J., 97
- Dosuma, king of, 593
- Doves, external soul in, 670, Aeneas led to the Golden Bough by, 703
- Dragon, rain-god represented as, 74, or serpent of water, 146, at Midsummer, effigy of, 655
- Dramas, magical, 140, 324, sacred, 374
- Dreams, absence of soul in, 181, belief of savages in the reality of, 181, festival of, 553
- Drenching people with water as a rain-charm, 69, 70, 341, 342
- "Drink, Black," an emetic, 486
- Drinking and eating, taboos on, 198, 199, modes of drinking for tabooed persons, 199, 208, 211, 219
- Drought, supposed to be caused by the unburied dead, 72, chiefs and kings punished for, 86, supposed to be caused by a concealed miscarriage, 209
- Druidical festivals, so-called, 617
- Druids, 110, 249, 653, 654, 657, 659, of Ireland, 621, and the mistletoe, 709, 710
- Duchesne, Mgr., 360
- Dugong fishing, taboos in connection with, 217
- Dulyn, the tarn of, on Snowdon, 76
- Dunkirk, the Follies of, 654
- Durian-tree, the, 113
- Dusuns of Borneo, the, 225, 566
- Dyaks, of Borneo, 14, 16, 25, 182, 248, 249, 413, 496, 518, of Landak, 682, of Pinoeh, 679, of Sarawak, 498, Sea, 239, 531, of Tajan, 682
- Eagle, the bird of Jove, 149
- Eagle-hunters, 21, 22
- Eagle-owl worshipped by the Ainos, 515
- Earth, inspired priestess of, 94, marriage of the Sun and, 145, image of, praying to Zeus for rain, 159, Lithuanian prayers to the, 480, the priest of, 594
- Earth demons, 492, goddess, 396, 434-7
- Earthworms eaten by dancing girl, 497
- East, ascetic idealism of the, 139
- East Indian Islands, magic in the, 18, 21; epilepsy transferred to leaves in the, 539, demons of sickness expelled in little ships, 564
- East Indies, pregnant women forbidden to tie knots, 238, reluctance of persons to tell their own names, 246, bringing back the Soul of the Rice, 372, the Rice-mother in the, 413
- Easter, resemblance of the festival of, to the rites of Adonis, 345, assimilated to the spring festival of Attis, 359, controversy as to the origin of, 361
- Easter Eve, ceremonies on, 400, 560, Saturday, new fire on, 614, Sunday, ceremony observed by gypsies on, 568, Monday, festival on, 126, candle, 614, fires, 614
- Eating, out of sacred vessels, 169, together, 202, and drinking, taboos on, 198, eating the god, 479-94, 498, the soul of the rice, 482
- Ebb tide, death at, 35
- Eclipse, ceremonies at an, 78
- Ecuador, human sacrifices in, 431
- Edgewell Tree, the, 682
- Effigies, 468, 491, 492, 539, 568, 609, 612-614, 622, 624, 625, 630, 648, 650, 655, 658, of Carnival, 302, of Death, 307, 311, of Judas, 615, of Kupalo, Kostroma, and Yarilo, 318, of Osiris, 376, 382, of Shrove Tuesday, 305
- Efgaos, the, of the Philippines, 498
- Egbas, the, of West Africa, 273
- Egeria, water-nymph, 4, 8, 147, 151, 152, 164
- Egerius Baebius or Laevius, 5
- Egg-shells, the breaking of, 201
- Egypt, the Nativity of the Sun at the winter solstice in, 358, in early June, 369, the gods flee into, 391, the corn-spirit in, 443
- , ancient, theocratic despotism of, 48; magicians in, 52, 261, confusion of magic and religion in, 53, ceremonies for the regulation of the sun, 78, kings blamed for the failure of the crops in, 87, sacred beast responsible for the course of nature in, 87, human gods in, 96, 265, kings of, 104, 142, 174, 238, 333, 378; queen of, 142, personal names in, 245; reapers' lamentations and invocations to Isis in, 338, 371, 424, 443, 444, sacrifice of red-haired men in, 378, 379; human sacrifices in, 443, religious attitude to

- pigs in, 472, rams sacred in, 500, bulls as scapegoats in, 571, story of the external soul in, 674
- Egypt, Lower, Sais in, 373
- , Upper, temporary kings in, 286
- Egyptian calendar, 368, festivals, 368, 369, religion, 370, types of sacrament, 532-5
- Elders, council of, in savage communities, 47
- Elephant hunters, 23, 594
- Elephants, ceremonies observed at the slaughter of, 522, 524, lives of persons bound up with those of, 685
- Eleusine grain, 483
- Eleusinian mysteries, 142, 393-5, 397, 398, priests, 259
- Eleusis, rites of Demeter at, 376, 397, Demeter at, 393, Rarian plain at, 394
- Elfin race averse to iron, 226
- Elipandus of Toledo, 101
- Elys, Dionysus hailed as a bull by the women of, 390
- Elisha, the prophet, 334
- Elk clan of the Omaha Indians, 474
- Embalming as a means of prolonging the life of the soul, 265
- Emblca officinalis* sacred in Northern India, 119
- Emin Pasha, 196
- Empedocles, his claim to divinity, 96
- Emu-wrens, 689
- Encounter Bay tribe, 603
- Endymion, 4, 156
- England, belief as to death at ebb tide in, 35, anointing the weapon instead of the wound in, 42, May-trees and May-bushes in, 121, village May-poles in, 123, Jack-in-the-Green in, 129, undoing locks and bolts at a death in, 243, Harvest Queen in, 405, harvest customs in, 406, 459, 460, killing the wren in, 536, the Yule log in, 637, the mistletoe in, 662, 663, birth-trees in, 682, cure for rupture or rickets in, 682
- Epilepsy transferred to leaves, 539
- Epiphany, 359, 462, 561
- Ergamenes, king of Meroe, 266
- Erman, Professor, 377
- Escuvion* or *Scuvion*, in Belgium, 610
- Esne, festal calendar of, 373
- Esquimaux, 20, 82, 179, 244, 317, 529, of Alaska, 551, 679, of Baffin Land, 552, of Bering Strait, 193, 220, 221, 227, 526, 606, of Iglulik, 79
- Esthonia, Shrove Tuesday customs in, 315, harvest customs in, 456, 460, Christmas Boar in, 462, Midsummer fires in, 628
- Esthonians, 81, 225, 228, 307, 481, 530
- Ethiopia, kings of, 200, 273
- Eubuleus, legendary swine-herd, 469, 470
- Eucharist, 488
- Eudoxus of Cnidus, 474
- Eunuch priests, 349, 352
- Europe, dancing or leaping high to make crops grow in, 28, the Hand of Glory in, 30, belief as to death at ebb tide in, 35, treatment of the navel-string and after-birth in, 40, contagious magic in, 44, confusion of magic and religion in, 53, 54, belief in magic in modern, 56, ram-making ceremonies in, 69, the May-pole or May-tree in, 119, 120, midsummer festival in modern, 153, fear of having one's likeness taken in, 194, belief as to consummation of marriage being impeded by locks and knots, 240, the Corn-mother in Northern, 399-412; comparison between the Lityerses story and harvest customs in, 426-31, "hunting the wren" in, 536, transference of evil in, 543-6, annual expulsion of demons among the heathen of, 559, annual expulsion of witches in Central, 560, expulsion of embodied evils in, 568, the mistletoe in, 661, superstitions as to menstruous women in, 606, fire-festivals of, 609-41, Midsummer fires in, 622, need-fire in, 638
- Evil, transference of, 538-46, to animals, 540-42, to men, 542-3, in Europe, 543-6
- Evils, expulsion of, public, 546, occasional, 547, periodic, 551, embodied, 562, occasional, in a material vehicle, 563, periodic, in a material vehicle, 568
- Ewe-speaking peoples of the Slave Coast, the, 112, 198, taboos observed by their kings, 172
- Exogamy, 152
- Eyeos, the, 172, 273
- Ezekiel, the prophet, 327
- Face, of sleeper not to be painted or disfigured, 183, taboos on showing the, 199, of human scapegoat painted half white, half black, 573
- Faces, veiled to avert evil influences, 200, blackened, 213, 462
- Faditras* among the Malagasy, 541
- Fairies, averse to iron, 226
- Falling sickness transferred to fowls, 545, mistletoe a remedy for, 662
- Fan tribe, the, 85
- Fans of the Gaboon, 684, of West Africa, 495
- Fans in homoeopathic magic, 26
- Fasting obligatory, 23, 26, of Catholics, 488, of girls at puberty, 600, 601
- Father, called after his child, 247, and mother, names not to be mentioned, 250, of a god, 333, 334
- Father-in-law, his name not to be mentioned, 249-51
- Father May, 126, 127
- Fatigue transferred to leaves, 540
- Fauns, rustic Italian gods, 464
- Fazoql, kings of, 266
- Feast of all Souls, 633, of yams, 200
- Feet of enemies eaten, 498

Felkin, Dr R W, 534  
 Feloupes of Senegambia, 74  
 Female kinship or mother-kin defined, 152, indifference to paternity of kings under, 154, at Athens, 155, among the Aryans, 155  
 Fern-seed, 704, 705  
 Fernando Po, taboos observed by the kings of, 172, 238  
 Fertilisation, artificial, 114, 378, 580, 582, of barren women, 581  
 Fertility, Diana as a goddess of, 8, of women, magical images designed to ensure the, 14  
 Fetish kings in West Africa, 177  
 Feuillet, Madame Octave, 306  
 Fever, cures for, 343-5  
 Fig, artificial fertilisation of the, 378, human scapegoat beaten with branches of the wild, 579  
 Fig-tree, the sacred, 136, artificial fertilisation of the, 580, 582  
 Fiji Islands, the, conception of the soul in, 179, notion of the absence of the soul in dreams in, 182, catching away souls in, 187, supposed effect of using chief's dishes or clothes in, 202, custom at cutting a chief's hair in, 233, birth-trees in, 682, drama of death and resurrection in, 695  
 Finland, cattle protected by the woodland spirits in, 141  
 Finnish-Ugrian peoples, sacred groves of the, 111  
 Finnish wizards and witches, 81  
 Finns, 521  
 Fire, the god of, 23, kept burning for the sake of absent warriors, 26, supposed to be subject to Catholic priests, 53, used to stop rain, 64, as a charm to rekindle the sun, 78, and Water, kings of, 108, 176, 266, kindled by friction, 161, 534, 617, 618, 620, 627, 639, 644, 707, purification by, 197, 198, 213, 648, "new," 485, 614, sacred, 486, 534, "living," 638, "wild," 638, made by means of a wheel, 639, of heaven, 644, extinguished by mistletoe, 659, 662, 706, primitive ideas as to the origin of, 707  
*See also* Bonfires, Fires, Need-fire  
 Fire-festivals of Europe, the, 609, interpretation of, 641, solar theory of, 642, 643, purificatory theory of, 642, 647, at the solstices, 643, a protection against witchcraft, 648, their relation to *Druidism*, 654  
 Fires, perpetual, 3, 161, 163, 665, 704, the Lenten, 609, Easter, 614, Beltane, 617, Midsummer, 622, Hallowe'en, 632, 635, Midwinter, 636, extinguished before lighting the need-fire, 639, burning of effigies in the, 650, burning of men and women in the, 652, the solstitial, perhaps sun-charms, 706

First-fruits, 170, 177, 396, 431, 467, 479, 482, 487  
 Fish, magical image to procure, 18, sacred, 473, treated with respect by fishing tribes, 527, external soul in a golden, 676  
 Fishers tabooed, 216  
 Fishing, homoeopathic magic in, 18  
 Flamen Dialis, the, 151, 235, 244, rules of life prescribed for, 174  
 Flaminica, the, 151, rules observed by, 174  
 Flanders, Midsummer fires in, 630, 646, the Yule log in, 637  
 Flax, homoeopathic magic at sowing, 28, prayers of old Prussians for the growth of, 288, giddiness transferred to, 545, leaping over bonfires to make it grow tall, 613, 624, 626  
 Flax-mother, 399  
 Flight of the king, at Rome, 157  
 Flowers, goddess of, 588  
 Flute, magical, made from human leg-bone, 30, skill of Marsyas on the, 354  
 Folk-customs, the external soul in, 678-701  
 Folk-tales, the external soul in, 667-78  
 Food, homoeopathic magic for supply of, 17, eaten dry, 21, 29, 68, tabooed, 21, 22, 238, taboos on leaving food over, 200  
 Fools, Bishop of, 586  
 Footprints, contagious magic of, 44, 45  
 Foreskins used in rain-making, 65  
 Fowler, W Warde, 709  
 Foxes, burnt in Midsummer fires, 656, 657, witches turn into, 657  
 Framin in West Africa, dance of women at, 26  
 France, contagious magic in, 44, peasants ascribe magical powers to priests, 53, 54, images of saints dipped in water as a rain-charm in, 77, kings of, touch for scrofula, 90, custom of the Harvest-May in, 118, May customs in, 121, the May-pole in, 124, harvest customs in, 341, 448-50, 453, 455, 457-9, the Corn-mother in, 401, the dough man in, 480, hunting the wren in, 537, the King of the Bean in, 586, expulsion of witches in, 561, Lenten fires in, 610, Midsummer fires in, 628-30, 645, the Yule log in, 637, wicker-work giants burnt in, 655, mistletoe in, 662, birth-trees in, 682  
 Franche-Comte, dances in, to make hemp grow, 28, the goat at threshing in, 456  
 Frey, the Scandinavian god of fertility, 143  
 Fricktal, Switzerland, the Whitsuntide Lout in, 128, the Whitsuntide Basket in, 129  
 Friction, fire kindled by *See under* Fire  
 Friesland, East, the clucking hen at threshing in, 451  
 Frigg, the Norse goddess, and Balder, 607  
 Frog in magic, 31, 73, 131, maladies transferred to frogs, 544

- Frog-flayer, the, in Whitsuntide pageant, 130
- Frosinone in Latium, burning an effigy of the Carnival at, 302
- Fruit-trees, fertilised by fruitful women, 28, homoeopathic magic in relation to, 29, threatened to make them bear fruit, 113, worshippers of Osiris forbidden to injure, 380, wrapt in straw as a precaution against evil spirits, 561, fires lit under, 632, fumigated with smoke of need-fire, 641, fertilised by burning torches, 647
- Fuegian charm to make the wind drop, 80
- Fumigation, with laurel, 95, of flocks, 478, with juniper and rue, 560, of fruit-trees and nets, 641, of crops, 645
- Funeral customs, 185, 190, 227, 542, rites, 367, 375
- Gaboon, theory of the external soul in the, 684
- Gabriel, the archangel, 13, 241
- Galela, dread of menstruous women in, 604
- Galelareese of Halmahera, 19, 29-31
- Galicia, harvest customs in, 451
- Gallas, 98, 118, kings of the, 10
- Galli, the emasculated priests of Attis, 348
- Ganesa, the image of, 482
- Gardens of Adonis, 341-7
- Garos of Assam, 72, 568
- Gascon peasants, their belief in the magical power of priests, 54
- Gatschet, A S, 255
- Gaul, ancient, human sacrifices in, 653, the mistletoe in, 659
- Gauri, harvest goddess, 420
- Gayos of Sumatra, 141
- Gazelle Peninsula, 251, the Ingnet society in the, 680
- Geomancy in China, 36
- Germany, contagious magic in, 39, 42, 45, worship of women in ancient, 97, tree-worship in, 110, Harvest May in, 118, use of May trees in, 119, Midsummer trees in, 122, races at Whitsuntide in, 124, worship of the oak in, 160, belief as to the escape of the soul in, 182, superstition as to cut hair in, 234, the Corn-mother in, 399, the Old Woman in, 400, names given to the last sheaf in, 401, harvest customs, 402, 408, 427, 449, 451, 453, 454, 458-60, the Corn-spirit in, 448, the harvest cock in, 451, 479, pigs' bones in connection with sowing in, 461, Lenten fires in, 612, Easter fires in, 614, Midsummer fires in, 623, the Yule log in, 637, need-fire in, 641, mistletoe in, 662, 702, oak-wood for cottage fires at Midsummer in, 665, stories of the external soul in, 672, birth-trees in, 682
- Gerontocracy in Australia, 83
- Getae, human god among the, 97
- Ghansyam Deo, a deity of the Gonds, 571
- Ghosts, 84, 185, 190, 207, 216, 226, 253, 491, 551, of the slain, 112-15, 227, of animals, dread of, 223, 520-24, 526
- Giant who had no heart in his body, stories of the, 668, 673, mythical, supposed to kill and resuscitate lads at initiation, 695
- Giants, wicker-work, 654, 655
- Giddiness, cure for, 545
- Gilyaks of the Amoor, 510-14, 517, 530
- Gingiro, king of, 270
- Gippsland blacks, 248
- Girl, annually sacrificed to cedar tree, 112, sacrificed to a crocodile, 145, sacrificed for the crops, 432, and boy, need-fire kindled by, 640
- Girls, married to nets, 144, used in rain-making, 210, seclusion of, at puberty, 595-607
- Glory, the Hand of, 30
- Gnabaia, an Australian spirit, 693
- Goajiros of Colombia, 252
- Goat, blood of, sucked by priest as means of inspiration, 94, sacrificed, 356, 391, 436, in relation to Dionysus, 390, 464, corn-spirit as, 454, last sheaf in form of a, 454, killed on harvest-field, 455, effigy of a, 456, sacred animal of a Bushman tribe, 474, relation of, to Athena, 477, evils transferred to, 540, as scapegoat, 565
- God, savage ideas of, 92, the killing and resurrection of a, 301, 538, the Dying and Reviving, 386, killed in animal form, 391, the animal enemy of, originally identical with the god, 391, 469, 475, eating the, 479-94, 498, dying, as scapegoat, 539, 576, killing of the, in Mexico, 587-92 *See also* Gods
- God-man, a source of danger, 202
- Goddesses, of fertility served by eunuch priests, 349, personated by women, 589
- Gods, appeal to the pity of, as a rain-charm, 75, incarnate human, 91-106, 162, conception of, slowly evolved, 91, and goddesses, dramatic weddings of, 140, the marriage of the, 142-5, created by men in their own likeness, 260, their names tabooed, 260-62, mortality of the, 264-5, death and resurrection of, 385-6, 388, distinguished from spirits, 411
- Gold Coast, negroes of the, 118, expulsion of demons on the, 550, 554, 555
- Golden Bough, 3, 593, 701-11
- Fleece, ram with, 290
- Goldi, bear-festivals of the, 514
- Goliath, straw man stabbed at Whitsuntide, 133
- Gonds of India, the, 433, 571
- Good Friday, ceremony in Greek churches on, 345, expulsion of witches on, 560
- Gorillas, lives of persons bound up with those of, 685

- Gossips of St John, 344  
 Gouri, Indian goddess of fertility, 343  
 Gout, remedy for, 196, transferred to trees, 546  
 Gran Chaco, Indians of, 182, 601  
 Granada, youthful rulers secluded in, 595  
 Grandmother, name given to last sheaf, 401  
 Grannas-mias, torches, 611  
 Grannus, a Celtic deity, 611  
 Grass king, the, 130, 299  
 Grass knotted as a charm, 242  
 Grasshoppers, in homoeopathic magic, 37, sacrifice of, 541  
 Grave, soul fetched from, 185, of Zeus, 265, of Dionysus, 265, 389, of Osiris, 365, 378, dance at initiation in a, 693  
 Grave-clothes, homoeopathic magic of, in China, 35, no buttons in, 243  
 Graves, rain-charms at, 67, 71, trees planted on, 115  
 Greasing the weapon instead of wound, 41  
 Great Mother, last sheaf called, 401  
 Grebo people of Sierra Leone, 174  
 Greece, priestly kings in, 9, ceremony performed by persons supposed to have been dead, 15, homoeopathic magic in, 16, 34, sacrifice of pregnant victims to ensure fertility in, 28, contagious magic in, 44, rain-making in, 69, 77, sanctity of kings and chiefs in Homeric, 89, forests of, 110, tree worship in, 111, custom as to foundations of new buildings in, 191, custom as to man-slayers in, 216, names of the priests of the Eleusinian mysteries not to be mentioned in, 259, the eight years' cycle in, 279, human sacrifices in, 290, mode of riding the fields of mice in, 530, scapegoats in, 541, 578, Midsummer fires in, 631, stories of the external soul in, 670  
 Greek belief that the sun rode in a chariot, 79, calendar, 279, charms, 31, 32, Church, ceremonies on Good Friday in the, 345, divinities who died and rose again, 386, maxim not to look at one's reflection in water, 192, maxim not to wear rings, 243, mythology, Adonis in, 325, 327, ritual of expiatory sacrifices, 473, sanctuaries, iron not to be brought into, 224, superstitions as to certain woollen garments and stones, 32  
 Green Corn Dance, 486  
 — George, 126, 128  
 — Wolf, Brotherhood of the, 628, 664  
 Greenland, woman in child-bed thought to control the wind in, 80, belief in the mortality of the gods in, 264  
 Grey, Sir George, 689  
 Grimm, Jacob, 709  
 Grove, Arician, 5, 163, 301, Balder's, 608, soul of chief in a sacred, 681  
 Groves, sacred, 110, 111, to Diana, 140  
 Guanches of Teneriffe, 75  
 Guaraní Indians, 29, 601  
 Guatemala, the Indians of, 687  
 Guayaquil, Indians of, 431  
 Guaycurus, the, 82  
 Guayquiries of the Orinoco, 605  
 Guana, Indians of, 181, 601  
 Guinea, priestly kings in, 169, belief of negroes in dreams, 182, human sacrifices in, 433, annual sacrifice of oxen at Great Bassam, 467, expulsion of the devil in, 554, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 597  
 Gunputty, elephant-headed god, 100  
 Gypsies, Green George among the, 126, annual ceremony performed by the, 568  
 Hag (*wrach*), name given to the last corn cut in Wales, 403, 404  
 Haida Indians, 27, 35  
 Hair, used in magic, 13, 233-5, charms, 28, 29, 32, tabooed, 231, disposal of cut, 233, external soul in, 670, strength bound up with, 680, of criminals, wizards, and witches shorn, 681  
 Hair-cutting, ceremonies at, 233  
 Halfdan the Black, Norwegian king, 379  
 Hallowe'en, 609, fires, 632-6, divinations at, 634, witches, fairies, and hobgoblins let loose at, 634, and Beltane, the two chief fire festivals of the British Celts, 656  
 Halmahera, driving away devils in, 548  
 Hand of Glory, 30  
 Hands, tabooed, 204-6, 208, 210, 212, 214, 233, not to be clasped, 240, of enemies eaten, 498  
 Hannibal, his retirement from Italy, 348  
 Hanover, harvest customs in, 400, 401, 454, Easter bonfires in, 615  
 Hare, corn-spirit as, 452  
 Hares not eaten lest they make the eaters timid, 495, witches changed into, 657  
 Haroekoe, East Indian island, fishermen's magic in, 18  
 Harpocrates, the younger Horus, 364  
 Harran, mourning for Tammuz in, 338, legend of Tammuz in, 442, human sacrifices in, 444  
 Harvest, rain-charm at, 341, custom of the Arabs of Moab at, 372, 378, expulsion of devils after, 557, 575  
 Harvest child, 406, cock, 451, customs, 400-10, goat, 454, hen, 451, May, 118, 124, mother, 401  
 Harz Mountains, 42, Carnival in the, 307  
 Hawaii, capture of souls by sorcerers in, 188, festival of Macahity in, 282, 283  
 Hawk, Isis in the form of a, 364  
 Hawks revered by the Amos, 516  
 Hawthorn at doors on May Day, 121  
 Hays of Errol, 702  
 Head, prohibition to touch the, 207, 230, 231, regarded as sacred, 230, tabooed, 230-31, supposed to be the residence of spirits, 230, of horse in Roman sacrifice, 478 *See also* Heads



- Head-hunters, 433  
 Headache, caused by clipped hair, 234, 237, transferred to animal, 540  
 Heads, of lac gatherers not to be cleansed, 21, of man-slayers shaved, 215, of dead kings removed and kept, 295 *See also* Head  
 Heart, of Dionysus, 388, 389, of jackal not eaten lest it make the eater timid, 495, of lion or leopard eaten, 495, of water-ouzel eaten to acquire wisdom and eloquence, 496, of wolf and of bear eaten to acquire courage, 496  
 Hearts, of men and animals offered to the sun, 79, 589, of dead kings eaten by their successors, 295, of men sacrificed, 431, of men eaten to acquire their qualities, 497  
 Heaven, between, and earth, 592-607, fire of, 644, Queen of, 711  
 Hebrew prophets, their ethical religion, 51  
 Heitsi-eibib, Hottentot god or hero, 264  
 Helen of the Tree, 356  
 Helogabalus, sun-god at Emesa, 330  
 Helle and Phrixus, children of King Athamas, 290  
 Hemp, promoting the growth of, 28, 624  
 Hen, sacrificed by woodman after felling tree, 112, heart of, not eaten, 495  
 Hera, adoption of Hercules by, 14, and Zeus, their marriage, 143  
 Hercules, 14, 425, 443  
 Hercynian forest, 109  
 Herdsmen dread witches and wolves, 649  
 Hermotimus of Clazomenae, 185  
 Hermutruide, legendary queen of Scotland, 155  
 Hialto, how he became brave, 496  
 Hidatsa Indians, 111, 690  
 Highlands of Scotland, the, magic to catch fish in, 18, St Bride's Day in, 134, iron as a charm against fairies in, 226, saying about combing hair at night in, 234, knots untied at marriage in, 241, beating the cow's hide in, 538, Beltane fires in, 617-20, Hallowe'en fires in, 635, need-fire in, 641, story of the external soul in, 673  
 Hilaria, festival of joy, 350  
 Hindoo charm, 30, marriage, 34, trinity, 52, superstition, 114  
 Hindoo Koosh, sacred cedar of the, 95, expulsion of demons in the, 557, 575  
 Hindus, 15, 101, 180, 343, 602, 669, of Southern India, 482  
 Hippasus, torn to pieces by Bacchanals, 292  
 Hippodamia and Pelops, 156  
 Hippolytus, 4, 5, 301, 477  
 Hippopotamus, ceremony after killing a, 523  
 Hogmanay, Highland custom on, 538, song in the Isle of Man, 634  
 Holiness, and pollution not differentiated by savages, 222, conceived as a dangerous virus, 474, as a dangerous physical substance which needs to be insulated, 594  
 Holland, "killing the Hare" in, 452, Easter fires in, 617, the mistletoe in, 662  
 Honduras, Indians of, 687  
 Honey-wine, continence at brewing, 219  
 Hooks used in magic, 27, to catch souls, 180, 185  
 Horns, blown to ban witches, 561, to expel demons, 568  
 Horse, prohibition to see a, 172, prohibition to ride, 174, last sheaf given to, 408, 460, corn-spirit as a, 459, "fatigue of the," 460, "Cross of the," 460, Virbius and the, 476, sacrificed to Mars, 478, 578, red, sacrificed as a purification of the land, 570  
 Horse-headed Demeter, 471  
 Horses, Hippolytus killed by, 5, 301, excluded from Arician grove, 5, 477, sacrificed to the sun, 79, driven through the need-fire, 639, 640  
 Horus, his eye injured by Typhon, 475, the younger, son of Isis and the dead Osiris, 364, 367  
 Hos, of North-eastern India, 556, of Togoland, 232, 239, 241, 555  
 Hother, the blind god, and Balder, 608  
 Hottentots, 45, 80, 221, 265  
 House, taboos observed after building a new, 117, ceremony on entering a new, 186, taboos on quitting the, 200  
 House-building, 30, continence observed at, 220  
 Housebreakers, charms employed by, 30  
 Howitt, A W, 44, 234  
 Hudson Bay Territory, 605  
 Huichol Indians of Mexico, 23, 32  
 Huizilopochtli, or Vitzilpuztli, a great Mexican god, 488  
 Human sacrifices *See under* Sacrifices  
 Hungary, Whitsuntide Queen in, 131, continence at sowing in, 138, harvest cock in, 451, custom at threshing in, 458, women fertilised by being struck with certain sticks in, 581, Midsummer fires in, 627, 644  
 Hunters, employ homoeopathic magic to ensure a catch, 18, taboos observed by and for, 19, 20, 23, employ contagious magic of footprints, 45, tabooed, 216, chastity of, 217, propitiation of wild animals by, 518-32, luck of, spoiled by menstruous women, 605-6  
 Hurons, 144, 179, 527, 550  
 Husband, taboos observed in his absence, 21-25, his name not to be pronounced, 248, 249, and wife, name given to two fire-sticks, 484  
 Huzuls of the Carpathians, 20, 234, 541, 638

Hyaenas, supposed power over men's shadows, 190  
*Hymn to Demeter*, Homeric, 393  
Hymns to Demetrius Poliorcetes, 97, to Tammuz, 326  
Hyrockin, a giantess, 608  
  
Ibadan, king of, 295  
Ibans of Sarawak, 531  
Ibn Batutah, 145  
Ibos of the lower Niger, 685  
Iddah, divinity claimed by king of, 99  
Ignorrotas, the, 115  
Ijebu tribe, 281  
Ilocanes of Luzon, the, 113  
Images, magical, 13, 14, dipped in water as a rain-charm, 77, of Osiris made of vegetable mould, 374-7, vicarious use of, 492, of gods, suggested origin of, 501, demons conjured into, 563, 568, colossal, filled with human victims and burnt, 654  
Imagination, death from, 204  
Immortality, Egyptian hope of, centred in Osiris, 367, 376, 382, hope of, associated with the Eleusinian mysteries, 398  
Impregnation of women by the sun, 603  
Inca, fast of the future, 595  
Incarnation, of gods in human form, 91, examples of temporary, 93, of divine spirit in Shilluk kings, 267, 268  
Incas of Peru, 40, 104, 236, 553  
Incense, inhaled to produce inspiration, 95, used in exorcism, 195, burnt at the rites of Adonis, 337, burnt in honour of the Queen of Heaven, 337, burnt as a protection against witches, 561  
Incest, 141, 332  
India, ascendancy of sorcerers over gods in modern, 52, rain-charm in, 71, incarnate human gods in, 93, 100, ceremony of rebirth in, 197, story of the transference of human souls in, 184, images of Siva and Parvati married in, 319-20, human sacrifices in, 433, use of animals as scapegoats in, 565, girls secluded at puberty in, 602, torture of suspected witches in, 681  
—, ancient, ceremony performed by persons supposed to have been dead in, 15, magical nature of ritual in, 53, magical power of kings in, 89, maxim not to look at one's reflection in water in, 192  
—, Central Provinces of, rain-charms in, 73, sacred trees in, 119, peacock worshipped among the Bhils of, 474, expulsion of disease in, 565  
—, North-eastern, harvest home festival in, 556  
—, Northern, the *Embluca officinalis* sacred in, 119, coco-nuts sacred in, 119, eyes of owl eaten in, 497  
—, South-eastern, precautions against demon of smallpox in, 549

India, Southern, inspired priest in, 94, husband's name tabooed in, 249, kings formerly killed after a twelve years' reign in, 274, ceremonies at eating the new rice in, 482, expulsion of demon in, 563  
Indian ceremonies analogous to the rites of Adonis, 336, legend parallel to Balder myth, 701  
— Archipelago, the, head-hunting in, 441, expulsion of diseases in, 566, birth-custom in, 679  
Indonesian ideas of the rice soul, 414, treatment of the growing rice as a breeding woman, 414  
Indra, great Indian god, 67, 701  
Industrial progress essential to intellectual progress, 48, evolution from uniformity to diversity of function, 106  
Infanticide, 293  
Infants, exposed to attacks of demons, 226, 245, tabooed, 231  
Infidelity of wife thought to injure absent husband, 23, 25  
Ingiald, son of King Aunund, 496  
Ingnet or Ingiet, a secret society, 680  
Initiation, rites of, 692, 693  
Innovations, the savage distrust of, 225  
Ino and Melicertes, 290, 291  
Inquisition, the, 101, 102  
Insects, homoeopathic magic of, 31, charms to protect the fields against, 530, 531  
Inspiration, 93, two modes of producing temporary, 94, prophetic, 334, savage theory of, 356  
Intellectual progress dependent on economic progress, 48  
Invulnerability, conferred by decoction of a parasitic orchid, 660, of Balder, 667, attained through blood brotherhood with animal, 684  
Invulnerable warlock or giant, stories of the, 668  
Ireland, woman burnt as a witch in, 56, magical powers of kings in, 89, belief as to green boughs on May Day in, 119, May Day in, 121, May Queen in, 131, taboos observed by kings in ancient, 173, cut hair preserved against the day of judgment in, 236, old kings of, might not have any blemish, 273, harvest customs in, 404, hunting the wren in, 537, Beltane fires in, 621, Hallowe'en in, 634, Midsummer fires in, 646, story of the external soul in, 673  
Iron, tabooed, 221, 224, used as a charm against spirits, 225, 481, mistletoe gathered without the use of, 660  
Iron-Beard, Dr, a Whitsuntide mummer, 297, 300, 307  
Iroquois, the, 112, 553  
Ishtar, great Babylonian goddess, 325, 330

- Isis, how she discovered the name of Ra, 260, sister and wife of Osiris, 363, 382, her many names, 382, a corn-goddess, 382, her discovery of wheat and barley, 382; identified with Demeter, 383, popularity of her worship in the Roman Empire, 383, resemblance to the Virgin Mary, 383, dirge of, 424
- Islay, the island of, 403
- Isle de France, the May-tree and Father May in, 126, harvest customs in, 427, 430, Midsummer giant burnt in, 655
- Isle of Man, the, 81, St Bridget in, 135, hunting the wren in, 536, Midsummer fires in, 630, 645, old New Year's Day in, 633, Hogmanay song in, 634, Hallowe'en in, 636
- Israelites, 210, 472
- Issapoo, negroes of, 501
- Italones, the, 498
- Italy, disposal of loose hair by women in, 236, "killing the Hare" at harvest in, 453, resemblance between the Carnival of modern and the Saturnalia of ancient, 586, Midsummer fires in, 631, the mistletoe in, 659, birth-trees in, 682
- , ancient, spinning on highroads forbidden to women, 20, forests of, 110, tree-worship in, 111, oaks sacred to Jupiter in, 160
- Itonamas of South America, 180
- Ivy, eaten by Bacchanals, 95, prohibition to touch or name, 174, sacred to Attis, 352, sacred to Osiris, 381, associated with Dionysus, 387
- Ja-Luo tribes of Kavirondo, 215
- Jablonski, P E, 384
- Jabme-Aimo, abode of the dead, 529
- Jack-in-the-Green, 129, 299
- Jackal's heart not eaten lest it make the eater timid, 495
- Jagas, a tribe of Angola, 293
- Jambi in Sumatra, temporary kings in, 287
- Jana, another form of Diana, 164-5
- Janus, 164, 165, 167, as a god of doors, 166, explanation of the two-headed, 166
- Japan, black dog sacrificed for rain in the mountains of, 73, rain-making by means of a stone in, 76, ceremony to make trees bear fruit in, 114, the Mikado of, 168, bear festival of the Aino in, 505, the mistletoe in, 660
- Jar, the evils of a whole year shut up in a, 567
- Jars, wind kept by priests in, 170
- Jaundice, 15, 16
- Java, 30, rain-charms in, 66, 68, 72, sexual intercourse to promote the growth of rice in, 136, custom when child is first set on the ground, 181, remedy for gout or rheumatism in, 196, superstitions as to the head in, 230, ceremony at rice-harvest in, 418, earthworms eaten by dancing girls in, 496
- Jawbones, magical use of, 18, 78, of slain animals propitiated by hunters, 526
- Jaws of corpse tied up to prevent the escape of the soul, 180
- Jay, blue, as scapegoat, 545
- Jeoud, sacrificed by his father, 293
- Jerome on the worship of Adonis, 346
- of Prague, 118
- Jerusalem, the Temple at, 225, mourning for Tammuzat, 326, religious music at, 334
- Jewish hunters, 228
- Jewitt, John R, 698
- Jews, attitude of, to the pig, 472, their ablutions, 473, use of scapegoats, 569, 572
- Jinn, 145, 540
- Jinnee of the sea, virgins married to a, 146
- Judah, idolatrous kings of, 79
- Judas, effigies of, burnt, 615, 616
- Jukos, the, of Nigeria, 270
- Julian, the Emperor, 109, 336, 346
- Juniper berries, houses fumigated with, 560
- Juno, 150, 151, 164, 165, Moneta, 150
- Jupiter, Roman kings in the character of, 148, 152, as god of the oak, the rain, and the thunder, 160, and Juno, doubles of Janus (Dianus) and Diana, 164, and Dionysus, 388
- Capitoline, 148, 150, Elcicus, 149, Latian, 150, Liber, temple of, 225
- Jutland, superstitions about a parasitic rowan in, 702
- Juturna, a water nymph, 165
- Kabyle story of the external soul, 674
- Kachins of Burma, 219
- Kadiak, island off Alaska, 208
- Kai, tribe in New Guinea, 498, 581, 694
- Kakian association in Ceram, 696
- Kalamba, a Congo chief, 198
- Kali, Indian goddess, 94
- Kalmucks, the, 534, story of the external soul among the, 675
- Kamilaroi, the, 498
- Kamtchatkans, the, 78, 520, 529
- Kangaroo, eaten to make eater swift-footed, 496
- Kansas Indians, 496
- Kapus or Reddis in Madras Presidency, 73
- Kara-Kirghiz, the, 120
- Karens of Burma, 183, 185, 230, 415
- Karma-tree, ceremony over a, 342
- Karo-Bataks of Sumatra, 40, 185, 233
- Karok Indians of California, 528
- Karpathos, island of, 545
- Katajalina, an Australian spirit, 693
- Kavirondo, tribes of, purification of man-slayers among the, 215
- Kayans of Borneo, 82, 117, 211, 221, 414, 496
- Kei Islands, the, magical telepathy in, 24, 26, treatment of the navel-string in, 40, expulsion of demons in, 548, birth custom in, 679
- Kekchi Indians of Guatemala, 138

- Keramin tribe of New South Wales, 76  
 Keremet, a god of the Wotyaks, 144  
 Kettles used to mimic thunder, 77  
 Key of the field, 430  
 Keys, bunch of, as a charm, 226  
 Khalfj, old canal at Cairo, 370  
 Khan, ceremony at visiting a Tartar, 198, the Great, 228  
 Khon-ma, Tibetan goddess, 492  
 Khonds, the, 256, 434, 557  
 Khor-Adar Dinka, the, 270  
 Kibanga, king of, 270  
 Kickapoo Indians, 214  
 Kid, surname of Dionysus, 390  
 Kidneys tabooed to Malagasy soldiers, 22  
 Killer, of the Elephant, official who throttles sick kings, 271, of the Rye-woman, 428  
 Killing the spirit of the wind, 82, the divine king, 264-83, the tree-spirit, 296-323, the divine animal, 499-518, a god, 533, 538, 587-92  
 Kimbunda, the, of West Africa, 498  
 King, the killing of the divine, 264-83, his life sympathetically bound up with the prosperity of the country, 267, 268, 592, sacrifice of his son, 289-93, responsible for weather and crops, 292  
*See also* Kings  
 King and Queen, at Athens, 9, at Whitsuntide, 132, 299, of May, 132, 299, 320  
 King, the Grass, 130, 299, the Leaf, 130, the Roman, as Jupiter, 148  
 King of the Bean, 586, of the Calf, 458, of Fire, 108, 176, 266, of Rain, 70, of Rain and Storm, 107, of Sacred Rites at Rome, 9, 106, 152, 157, of Water, 108, 176, 266, of the Wood at Nemi, 1, 3, 8, 106, 140, 147, 163, 164, 167, 269, 296, 300, 301, 586, 593, 703, 710, of the Years at Lhassa, 573, 574  
 King Hop in Siam, 284, 285  
 King's evil, 90, 204  
 — Race at Whitsuntide, 129  
 Kings, priestly, 9, 169, 203, Teutonic, 9, magicians as, 83-91, touch for scrofula, 90, divinity of, 91, as gods in India, 100, temples built in honour of, 104, sacrifices to, 104, of nature, 106-9, of rain, 108, of fire and water, 108, Roman, 147-9, 151, 152, supernatural powers attributed to, 149, 168, pater-nity of, 154, their lives regulated by strict rules, 168, 194, taboos observed by, 171, beaten before coronation, 176, portraits of, not on coins, 193, guarded against the magic of strangers, 198, not to be seen eating and drinking, 198, forbidden to leave their palaces, 200, tabooed, 202, foods tabooed to, 238, names of, tabooed, 257-9, killed when strength fails, 265, attacks on, permitted, 267, 275, worshipped after death, 268, killed at the end of a fixed term, 274, dying by deputy, 278, temporary, 283-9, torn in pieces, traditions of, 378, trace of the custom of slaying them annually, 440  
 Kingship, evolution of the sacred, 105, descent of the, in the female line, 152, 154, 155, burdens and restrictions attaching to the early, 168, 175, tenure of the, 279-81  
 Kingsley, Miss, on soul-traps, 188  
 Kinship of men with crocodiles, 519  
 Kiowa Indians, 253  
 Kirghiz, the, 156, 249, 602  
 Kirm, last corn cut, 406, 407  
 Kiwai, natives of, 379  
 Klamath Indians of Oregon, 255  
 Knife as charm against spirits, 226, not to be left edge upwards, 227  
 Knives, not used at meals after a funeral, 227, of special pattern used in reaping rice, 414  
 Knots, tying up the wind in, 81, prohibition to wear, 174, untied at child-birth, 238, 240, thought to prevent the consummation of marriage, 240, thought to cause sickness and disease, 241, used to cure disease, win a lover, or stop a runaway, 242, magical virtue of, 242-3, tied in branches of trees as remedies, 545  
 Koniags of Alaska, 600  
 Koran, on magical knots, 241  
 Kore, Maiden, title of Persephone, 420  
 Kore, expelled on Easter Eve in Albania, 560  
 Koryaks, the, 156, 521, 523  
 Koschei the Deathless, story of, 671  
 Kostroma, funeral of, in Russia, 318  
 Kostrubonko, death and resurrection of, 317  
 Kouli hunters in Laos, 529  
 Krishna, Hindoo god, 101  
 Kublai Khan, 228  
 Kuhn, Adalbert, 644  
 Kukulu, priestly king, 169  
 Kumis of South-eastern India, 549  
 Kunama, the, 107  
 Kupalo, mythical being, 317-18, 627, 632  
 Kurmis of India, 565  
 Kurnai of Victoria, 190, 689  
 Kuruvikharans of Southern India, 94  
 Kwakiutl Indians, 66, 527, 678  
  
 Labyrinth, the Cretan, 280  
 Lac, taboos observed in gathering, 21  
 Lada, mythical being in Russia, 318  
 Ladder, for the use of a tree-spirit, 116, to facilitate the descent of the sun, 136  
 Lafitau, J. F., 256  
 Lagos, in West Africa, 295, 433  
 Lagrange, Father, 338  
 Lake-dwellers of Europe, 399  
 Lakor, island of, 566  
 Laluba, the, of the Upper Nile, 85  
 Lama of Tibet, the Grand, 102-3

- Lamb**, blood of, tasted by priestess to procure inspiration, 94, as expiatory victim, 224, thrown into lake as an offering, 390, killed sacramentally, 534  
**Laments** for Tammuz, 326, for Osiris, 366  
**Lamps**, dedication of, 3, to light ghosts to their old homes, 374  
**Landen**, the battlefield of, 340  
**Language**, special, 99, change of, caused by taboo, 254, 255, 257  
**Lanqueneros**, the, 138  
**Laos**, in Siam, taboos observed at, 21, 23, 219, 594  
**Lapis manalis** used in rain-making ceremony at Rome, 78  
**Lappland**, tying up the wind in, 81  
**Lapps**, the, 221, 238, 243, 256, 521, 529, 606  
**Latin League**, the, 150, 167  
**Latinus**, King, 149  
**Latium**, ancient, the woods of, 150, succession to the kingdom in, 152-8  
**Latukas** of the Upper Nile, 85, 87, 229  
**Laurel**, 95, 148  
**Laus of Manu**, 89, 100  
**Le Mole**, on the Lake of Nemi, 4  
**Leaf Man**, the Little, 128, King, 130  
**Leaping**, to make crops grow high, 28, over bonfires, 560, 610, 613, 621, 624-6, 630, 631, 646, 656  
**Learchus**, son of King Athamas, 290, 291  
**Leaves**, disease transferred to, 539, fatigue transferred to, 540, used to expel demons, 567  
**Lechraim**, 646, burying the Carnival in, 307  
**Legs** not to be crossed, 239, 240  
**Leinster**, taboos observed by the ancient kings of, 173  
**Lemon**, external souls of ogres in a, 669  
**Lendu** tribe of Central Africa, 85  
**Lengua** Indians, the, 82, 88, 253, 294, 526  
**Lent**, personification of, 304  
**Lenten** fires, 609  
**Leo** the Great, 359  
**Leopard's** blood drunk or heart eaten to make eater brave, 495  
**Leopards**, 523, external human souls in, 684-6  
**Lepers** sacrificed by the Mexicans, 444  
**Leprosy**, 473  
**Lerida** in Catalonia, funeral of the Carnival at, 304  
**Letot** leaves used in purification, 484  
**Leti**, island of, marriage of the Sun and Earth in, 136, annual expulsion of diseases in, 566  
**Leto**, 120  
**Letts** of Russia, swing to make the flax grow high, 289  
**Leucadians**, 579  
**Leucippe**, daughter of Minyas, 292  
**Lewis**, the island of, 81  
**Lhota** Naga, the, 433  
**Libyans**, the Alitemnian, 156  
**Licence**, periods of, 158, 553, 555, 558, 575, 583  
**Lightning**, magical imitation of, 63, imitation of, by kings, 77, 149, talismans against, 614, 615, 626, 637, 638, 649, regarded as a god descending out of heaven, 708, strikes oak oftener than any other tree, 708, 709, places struck by, enclosed and deemed sacred, 709  
**Lime-trees**, sacred, 161  
**Linus** or Ailinus, Phoenician vintage song, 425, 442  
**Lion**, purification of killer of a, 221, flesh or heart eaten to make eater brave, 495  
**Lithuania**, tree-worship in, 110, sacred groves in, 118, May Day in, 126, last sheaf in, 405, harvest customs in, 406, 428, ceremonies observed at eating the new corn in, 480, 481, Midsummer fires in, 627  
**Lithuanians**, 161, 227, 665  
**Lityerses**, 424-47  
**Lizard**, soul in form of, 182, or snake, in ceremony for riddance of evils, 568  
**Ljeschie**, Russian wood-spirits, 465  
**Llama**, black, as scapegoat, 565  
**Loango**, king of, 86, 98, 199-201, taboos observed by kings of, 171, food tabooed to priests in, 238, girls secluded at puberty in, 595  
**Locks** unlocked at childbirth, 238, 239, thought to prevent consummation of marriage, 240, unlocked to facilitate death, 243, mistletoe as a master-key to open all, 663  
**Locusts**, chiefs held responsible for ravages of, 87, superstitious precautions against, 531  
**Logan**, W, 276  
**Loki** and Balder, 608  
**Lokoya**, the, of the Upper Nile, 85  
**Lolos** of Western China, the, 183  
**Lombok**, island of, 418  
**Longevity**, charms to ensure, 35  
**"Longevity garments"** in China, 36  
**Loom** not to be touched by a man, 211  
**"Lord of the Heavenly Hosts"** in Siam, 284  
**Lorraine**, harvest customs in, 428, 449, 457  
**Love** charms, 44  
**"Love Chase"** among the Kirghiz, 156  
**Loyalty** Islands, recall of a lost soul in the, 185  
**Lules** or Tonocotes of the Gran Chaco, 550  
**Lusatia**, "carrying out Death" in, 310-13  
**Luxor**, paintings at, 142  
**Lycurgus**, king of the Thracian Edonians, 378, 379, 392  
**Lydia**, religious prostitution in, 331, festival of Dionysus in, 390  
**Ma**, goddess at Comana in Pontus, 331  
**Mabuaig**, continence observed during turtle-season, 217, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 598

- Macahity, a Hawaiian festival, 282, 283  
M'Carthy, Sir Charles, eaten by the Ashantees to make them brave, 497  
Macdonald, Rev James, 18, 680  
Macedonian calendar, 443  
MacGregor, Sir William, 84  
Macpherson, Major S C, 437  
Macusis of British Guiana, 181, 601  
Madagascar, king of, as high priest, 9, foods tabooed in, 22, custom of women while men are at war in, 26, magical use of stones in, 33, modes of counter-acting evil omens, 37, fear of being photographed in, 193, taboo on mentioning personal names in, 246, names of chiefs and kings tabooed, 258, crocodiles respected in, 519 *See also* Malagasy  
Madanassana Bushmen, 474  
Madi tribe of Central Africa, 534  
Madonna and Isis, their resemblance, 383  
Madura, inspired mediums in, 95  
Magic, principles of, 11, sympathetic, 10-48, 200, 202, 211, 219, 233, 237, 386, 403, 533, homoeopathic or imitative, 11-37, 63, 221, 239, 240, 341, 444, 494-9, 581, 642, 704, contagious, 11, 37-45, 230, 233, 235, positive and negative, 19, 21, 29, public and private, 45-61; and religion, 48-60, 64, 90, 92, 162, 324, and science, 48, 49, 712, attraction of, 49, the Age of, 55, 56, universality of belief in, 55, 56, fallacy of, 59, 90, movement of thought from magic through religion to science, 711  
Magician, public, 45, 60, and priest, 52  
Magicians, claim to compel the gods, 52, professional, 61, as kings, 83-91, develop into gods and kings, 92, the oldest professional class in the evolution of society, 105, Egyptian, 52, 261  
Magnets thought to keep brothers at unity, 34  
Magondi, a Mashona chief, 98  
Magyar story of the external soul, 674  
Maharajas as incarnations of Krishna, 101  
Mahrattas, 100  
Mai Darat, a Sakai tribe, 493  
Maiden, the (Persephone), the descent of, 371, name given to the last corn cut in the Highlands of Scotland, 403, 409  
*Maidhdeanbuain*, "the shorn maiden," 407  
Maidu Indians of California, 707, 708  
Maize, goddess of, 28, magic to promote its growth, 28, and increase, 33, personified as an Old Woman who Never Dies, 419, goddess of the young, 588  
Maize-mother, the, 412, 413  
Makololo, the, of South Africa, 236  
Makrizi, Arab historian, 64  
Malabar, custom of *Thalavetti-parothiam* in, 278, cows as scapegoats in, 570, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 602  
Malagasy, 217, 519, *fadistras* among the, 541  
Malay charms and magic, 13, 19, 28, 80, taboos, 21  
Malays, the, 88, 113, 179, 181, 183, 184, 188, 230, 248, 413, 417, 541, 676, 683  
Maldiv Islands, virgin sacrificed as bride to a junnee of the sea in the, 146  
Mallans of India, 565  
Malta, Midsummer fires in, 631, Phoenician temples of, 330, fires on St John's Eve in, 631  
Mamurius Veturius, 577, 580  
Man, Isle of *See* Isle of Man  
Man-god, 10, 60, 92, 203, 265  
Mandan Indians, 419, 562  
Mandelings of Sumatra, the, 116, 239  
Maneros, chant of Egyptian reapers, 365, 371, 372, 424  
Mangaia, Pacific island, separation of religious and civil authority in, 177  
Mangaians, the, 191  
Mani of Chitombe or Jumba, 234  
Manu at Aricia, many, 491  
Manipur, Rajah of, and his human scapegoat, 543  
Manius Egerius, 6, 492  
Mannhardt, W, 118, 127, 129, 316, 399, 401, 402, 419, 459, 460, 465, 580, 642, 643, 654, 658  
Man-slayers tabooed, 212-16  
*Manu, the Laws of*, 89  
Maori chiefs, 204, 230, 231, 235, 259  
Maoris, 114, 197, 205, 210, 233, 234, 528, 682  
Maraves, the, of South Africa, 116  
Marcellus of Bordeaux, 16, 17, 544  
Mare, corn-spirit as, 459  
Marena (Winter or Death) on Midsummer Eve in Russia, 318  
Marigolds in magic, 44  
Marimos, Bechuana tribe, 433  
Marquesans, 180, 231-3  
Marquesas or Washington Islands, human gods in the, 96  
Marriage, of men and women to trees, 8, treading on a stone at, 33, the pole-star at, 34, of the Sun and Earth, 136, 145, the Sacred, 139-46, of the Gods, 142-5, consummation of, prevented by knots, 240, mock or real, of human victims, 581  
Marriott, Fitzgerald, 26  
Mars, 577, 578, temple of, 77, the planet, 444, Field of, 478  
Mars Silvanus, 578  
Marsaba, a devil, 696  
Marseilles, human scapegoats at, 578, Midsummer king of the double axe at, 630  
Marsh marigold, hoop wreathed with, 121  
Marsyas, his musical contest with Apollo, 354, perhaps a double of Attis, 354  
Martens, magic to snare, 18  
Masai of East Africa, 219, 232, 238  
Mashona of South Africa, 98

- Masks worn by devil-dancers, 542, at expulsion of demons, 548, 553, by members of a secret Wolf society, 699
- Maspero, Sir Gaston, 53
- "Mass of the Holy Spirit," 53
- Mass of Saint Sécaire, 54
- Massagetæ sacrifice horses to the sun, 79
- Masset, in Queen Charlotte Islands, dances of Haida women at, 27
- Matabele, the, 72, 645
- Matacos or Mataguayos, the, 601
- Matiamvo, a potentate in Angola, 271
- Matuana, Zulu chief, 498
- May, King of, 129, 130, 299, King and Queen of, 157, 320, Queen of, 129, 131
- May Bride, 135, 317, 320, Bridegroom, 133, Lady, in Cambridge, 127, Rose, the Little, 125
- Day, celebration of, 119-35, 316, 621, "Burning out of the Witches" on, 560, bonfires on, 617-22
- May-bushes, 119, 129, 130, 132, -garlands, 121, -poles, 119, 120, 122-4, 132, 479, -trees, 119-21, 123, 124, 297, 299, 311, 314, 614, 651
- Mbaya Indians, the, 293
- M'Bengas of the Gaboon, 681
- Mecca, pilgrims to, 238
- Mecklenburg, magic in, 44, locks unlocked at childbirth in, 239, harvest customs in, 430, 449, 454, treatment of the after-birth in, 682
- Medea and Aeson, 496
- Medicine bag, at initiation, 698
- men, 64, 85, 87, 88, 92, 105, 180, 183-7, 484, 520, 679, 693
- Melanesia, homoeopathic magic of stones in, 33, contagious magic of wounds in, 41, confusion of magic and religion in, 52, supernatural power of chiefs in, 84, continence while yam vines are being trained in, 138, malignant spirits in, 192, disposal of cut hair and nails in, 235, names of relations by marriage tabooed in, 251, conception of the external soul in, 684
- Melanesians, 52, 246
- Melicertes, son of King Athamas, 290, 291
- Melos, milk-stones in, 34
- Memphis, head of Osiris at, 366
- Men, evil transferred to, 542, disguised as demons, 562, 563, as scapegoats, 565, divine, as scapegoats, 571, 576, disguised as women, 610
- Menedemus, sacrifices to, 224
- Menelik, Emperor of Abyssinia, 66
- Menstruation, women tabooed at, 207, seclusion of girls at, 595, reasons for secluding women at, 606
- Meriahs, human victims sacrificed among the Khonds, 434, 437
- Merlin, the wizard, 76
- Meroe, Ethiopian kings of, 266
- Mesopotamia, artificial fertilisation of the date-palm in, 582
- Messiah, pretended, in America, 102
- Metsik, a forest-spirit, 315
- Mexican kings, their oath, 87, 104, sacraments, 488, temples, 589
- Mexicans, the ancient, 79, 380, 432
- Mexico, ancient, festival in honour of the goddess of maize, 28, treatment of the navel-string in, 40, human sacrifices in, 380, 431, 432, killing the god in, 587-92
- Micah, the prophet, 51
- Mice, in magic, 39, eaten by the Jews as a religious rite, 472, superstitious precautions of farmers against, 530, 531
- Midsummer, death of the spirit of vegetation celebrated at, 319, bonfire at, called "fire of heaven," 644, procession of giants at, 654, sacred to Balder, 664
- Midsummer bonfires, 122, 622 *See also* Midsummer fires
- Bride and Bridegroom, 133
- Day, ancient Roman festival of, 153 *See also* St John's Day
- Eve, in Sweden, 122, in Russia, 318, trolls and evil spirits abroad on, 625, oak thought to bloom on, 706 *See also* St John's Eve
- festival, in Europe, 153, 622, named after St John, 343, the most important of the year among the primitive Aryans of Europe, 656
- fires, 622-32; animals burnt in, 655
- Midwinter fires, 636
- Mikado of Japan, 168, 169, 176, 202, 593, 595
- Miklucho-Maclay, Baron, 197
- Milk, women's, promoted by milk-stones, 34, of cows, thought to be promoted by green boughs, 119, customs observed when the king of Bunyoro drinks, 199, of pig thought to cause leprosy, 472, 473, omens from boiling, 482, taboos referring to, 488, not to be drunk by menstruous women, 604, stolen by witches from cows, 620, 627, 628, 648
- Milk-stones, magical, 34
- Milkmen of the Todas sacred or divine, 100, taboos of, 175
- Millet, homoeopathic magic of, 29, the deity of, 481
- Minangkabauers of Sumatra, 180, 183, 415, 604
- Minahassa, inspired priests in, 95, ceremony at house-warming in, 186, 679, names of parents-in-law tabooed in, 250, sowing and plucking the new rice in, 482, dummies to deceive demons in, 492, hair of slain foe used to impart courage in, 498, expulsion of devils in, 548
- Minnetaree Indians, 419, 529
- Minos, king of Cnossus, 280

- Minotaur, the legend of the, 280  
 Minyas, king of Orchomenus, 291  
 Miracles, god-man expected to work, 93  
 Miris of Assam, 496  
 Mirrors, superstitions as to, 192  
 Mirzapur, rearing of silkworms in, 218  
 Miscarriage in childbed, dread of, 209  
 Misrule, Lord of, 585, 586  
 Missouri, the cottonwood trees in the valley of, 111  
 Mistletoe, 160, 658, 659, 701, Balder and the, 608, 658-67, 701, 702, 710, and the Golden Bough, 703-4  
 Mistress, sanctuary of the, at Lycosura, 243, "of Turquoise," 330  
 Mithra, Persian deity, 358  
 Mithraic religion, 467  
 Mnevis, sacred Egyptian bull, 366, 476  
 Moab, Arabs of, 32, 378, king of, 293, wilderness of, 334  
 Mock sun, 79, execution, 283, kings, 284, marriage of human victims, 581  
 Moffat, Dr R, 86  
 Mogk, Professor Eugen, 642  
 Mohammed bewitched by a Jew, 241  
 Mohammedan calendar, lunar, 632  
 Mohammedans, celebration of Midsummer festival by, 632  
 Moloch, sacrifice of children to, 281  
 Molonga, a demon of Queensland, 562  
 Moluccas, the, clove-trees in blossom treated like pregnant women in, 115, fear of offending forest spirits in, 117, abduction of souls in, 186  
 Mombasa, king of, 99  
 Mon, island of, 456  
 Monarchy, in ancient Greece and Rome, 9, rise of, essential to emergence of mankind from savagery, 47  
 Mondard, the great, 466  
 Money, magical stones to bring, 33  
 Mongolia, incarnate human gods in, 103, story of the external soul in, 676  
 Mongols, 103, 252, 529  
 Monkey sacrificed for riddance of evils, 569  
 Montanus the Phrygian, 101  
 Montezuma, king of Mexico, 104, 593  
 Moon, the, and Endymion, 4, ceremony at an eclipse of, 78, charm to hasten, 80, Diana conceived as, 141, ceremony at new, 175, human victims sacrificed to, 444, pigs sacrificed to, 472, the "dark," 557, temple of, 571, reflected in Diana's Mirror, 711  
 Mooraba Gosseyn, a Brahman, 100  
 Moors of Morocco, 540  
 Moquis of Arizona, 225, 504  
 Moravia, "carrying out Death" in, 310, 313, harvest customs in, 408, fires to burn witches in, 622  
 Mori clan of the Bhils, 474  
 Morning Star, the, 346, human sacrifice enjoined by, 432  
 Morocco, iron a protection against demons in, 226, annual temporary king in, 286, homoeopathic magic in, 496, boars used to divert evil spirits in, 540, Midsummer fires in, 631, 632, 646  
 Moru tribe of Central Africa, 534  
 Mosyni or Mosynoeci, the, 200  
 Mota, in the New Hebrides, conception of the external soul in, 684  
 Mother, of a god, 333, of the gods, 5, 348, 356, the Great (Cybele), 353, of the Maize, 413, of the Rice, 415, or Grand-mother of Ghosts, 491-3  
 Mother-corn, 405, -sheaf, 401  
 — Goddess of Western Asia, 330, 331  
 — -kin, 152, 248, 332  
 — -in-law, savage's dread of his, 190  
 Motu of New Guinea, 246  
 Motumotu, the, 81, 192, 246  
 Mourners, tabooed, 205, change their names, 253  
 Mouse, soul in form of, 182  
 Moxos Indians of Bolivia, 23  
 Mozcas, the, 104  
 Mukasa, god of the Victoria Nyanza lake, 145  
 Mukylén, the Earth-wife among the Wotyaks, 144  
 Mullen, used as a charm, 629  
 Mummies, 126, 127, the Whitsuntide, 296-301, at Hallowe'en in Isle of Man, 633  
 Mundaris of Assam, 118, 557  
 Mundas of Bengal, 342  
 Munster, taboos observed by the ancient kings of, 173  
 Mura-muras, appealed to for rain, 65  
 Murderers, taboos imposed on, 216  
 Murram, need-fire kindled as a remedy for, 641  
 Music, as a means of prophetic inspiration, 334, and religion, 334-5  
 Muysca Indians of Colombia, 104  
 Muzumbas or Zimbab, the, 97  
 Myrrh, the mother of Adonis, 337  
 Mysteries, Eleusinian *See* Eleusinian mysteries  
 "Naaman, wounds of the," 336  
 Nagual, external soul, 687  
 Nails, used in magic, 44, knocked into trees, 127, used as charms against faeries, 226  
 Nails, parings of, used in magic, 13, 233, swallowed by attendants, 229, disposal of, 233-7  
 Namaquas, 495  
 Names tabooed personal, 244-8, of relations, 249-51, of the dead, 251-6, of kings and other sacred persons, 257-9, of gods, 260-62  
 Namuci and Indra, legend of, 702  
 Nana, mother of Attis, 347  
 Nandi of East Africa, 214, 235, 247, 372, 483



- Nanumea, island of, precautions against strangers in, 195
- Narcissus and his reflection, 192
- Narrinyeri of South Australia, 201
- Natal, the Caffres of, 483
- Natchez Indians of North America, 63, 215
- Nativity of the Sun at the winter solstice, 358
- Nature, conception of the immutable laws of, not primitive, 91-2, the order and uniformity of, 162
- Nauras Indians of New Granada, 497
- Navajoes of New Mexico, 678
- Navel-string, 39-41, 119
- Ndembo*, secret society on the Lower Congo, 697
- Nebseri, the papyrus of, 380
- "Neck, crying the," in Devonshire, 445
- Need-fire, 617, 638-41
- Nekht, the papyrus of, 380
- Nemi, 1, 4, 5, 8, priest of Diana at, 1, 8, 106, 161, 167, lake of, 1, 704, sacred grove of, 1, 4, 8, 140-42, 147, at evening, 714
- Nephele, wife of King Athamas, 290
- Nephtys, sister of Osiris, 363
- Net to catch the sun, 79
- Nets, marriage of girls to, 144, to catch souls, 182, as amulets, 242, fumigated with smoke of need-fire, 641
- New birth, through blood in the rites of Attis, 351, savage theory of, 356, of novices at initiation, 697
- New Britain, rain-making in, 63, the Sulka of, 64, 76, magical powers ascribed to chiefs in, 84, avoidance of wife's mother in, 191, expulsion of devils in, 547-8, secret society in, 680
- New Caledonia, rain-making by means of a human skeleton in, 71, making sunshine and drought in, 78, detaining the soul in the body in, 180, ideas as to reflections in, 192, burying the evil spirit in, 548, taro plants beaten to make them grow in, 581
- New Guinea, charm to hasten the moon in, 80, charm for making wind in, 80, constitution of society in, 84, leavings of food destroyed in, 201, seclusion and purification of man-slayers in, 213, continence observed during the turtle season in, 217, dread of sorcery in, 229
- , British, charms used by hunters in, 18, charm against snake-bite in, 31, no despots in, 84, double chieftainship in the Mekeo district of, 178, a widower an outcast in, 207, changes in language caused by fear of naming the dead in, 255, girls secluded at puberty in, 597
- , Dutch, 213, names of relations by marriage tabooed in, 250
- , Northern, rites of initiation in, 694, 695
- , South-eastern, annual expulsion of demons in, 556
- New Hebrides, contagious magic in the, 43, magic of refuse of food in the, 201, conception of the external soul in the, 684
- New Ireland, 596
- New Mexico, the aridity of, 76, the Indians of, 502, 551
- New South Wales, natives of, bury their dead at flood-tide, 35, tribes of, 38, way of stopping rain in, 64, the drama of resurrection at initiation in, 692, 693
- New Year, Chinese, 468, the Celtic, on November first, 633
- New Year's Day, 558, 569, Eve, 538, 561
- New Zealand, sanctity of chiefs in, 204, sacredness of chiefs' blood and heads in, 230, 231, customs at hair-cutting in, 233, magic use of spittle in, 237, names of chiefs tabooed in, 259, effect of contact with a sacred object in, 474, eyes of slain chief swallowed by warriors in, 498, human scapegoats in, 542
- Ngarigo tribe of New South Wales, 498
- Ngoio, a province of Congo, rule of succession to the chiefship in, 283
- Nias, island of, magic in, 18, natives of, believe in demons of trees, 116, conception of the soul in, 179, detaining the soul in the body in, 180, taboos observed by hunters in, 218, superstition as to personal names in, 245, succession to the chieftainship in, 294, expulsion of demons in, 549, story of the external soul in, 677
- Nicaragua, the Indians of, 138
- Nicholson, General, worshipped as a god, 100
- Nicknames, 247
- Nicobar Islands, heavy rains attributed to the wrath of spirits in the, 225, custom of mourners in the, 253, changes in language caused by fear of naming the dead, 255, expulsion of demons in the, 567
- Niger, belief as to external human souls lodged in animals on the, 686
- Nigeria, Northern, custom of putting kings to death in, 271
- , Southern, the priest of the Earth in, 594, theory of the external soul in, 677, 684, 685
- Nightingale in magic, 32
- Nightjars, the lives of women in, 687
- Nile, the rise and fall of the, 369, thought to be swollen by the tears of Isis, 370, the "bride" of the, 370, money and offerings of gold thrown into the, 371
- , the Upper, medicine-men as chiefs among the tribes of, 85, Kings of the Rain on, 107
- , the White, 266, 565
- Nine, a number used in magical ceremonies, etc, 18, 241, 242, 284, 480, 618, 620, 625, 626, 628, 639
- Niska Indians of British Columbia, 699

- Nisus, king of Megara, story of, 670  
 Noessa Lut, magic in, 18  
 Nonnus, on death of Dionysus, 388  
 Noon, fear to lose the shadow at, 191  
 Nootka Indians, 66, 179, 217, 522, 599, 698, wizard, 18  
 Normandy, burial of Shrove Tuesday in, 305, harvest customs in, 429, Brotherhood of the Green Wolf in, 628-9, processions on the eve of Twelfth Day in, 647  
 Norrland, Midsummer bonfires in, 625  
 Norse stories of the external soul, 673  
 North-American Indians, 210, 228, 494, 496, 524, 529, 533, 594, 605, 678, 698  
 Norway, 133, harvest customs in, 428, 429, 453, 454, Midsummer fires in, 625, superstitions about a parasitic rowan in, 702  
 Nubas of Jebel-Nuba, 203  
 Nufoors of Dutch New Guinea, 246, 250  
 Numa, 4, 147, 149, 151, 158, 164  
 Nut, Egyptian sky-goddess, mother of Osiris, 362, 363  
 Nuts passed across Midsummer fires, 629  
 Nyakang, first of the Shilluk kings, 267  
 Nyanza, Lake, incarnate human god of, 98  
 Nyassa, Lake, 596
- Oak, the worship of the, 159-61, 659, 710, effigy of Death buried under an, 309, the principal sacred tree of the Aryans, 665, human representatives of the oak perhaps originally burnt at the fire-festivals, 665, 666, life of, in mistletoe, 701, supposed to bloom on Midsummer Eve, 706, struck by lightning oftener than any other tree, 708  
 Oak branch, in rain-charm, 77, crown, sacred to Jupiter and Juno, 148, 151, god, 151, 161, leaves, 148, 661, mistletoe, an "all-healer," 660-62, nymphs, at Rome, 147, -spirit, 701, 703, -trees, sacrifices to, 161, and ague transferred to, 546  
 — wood, perpetual fire of, 161, 704, used for the Yule log, 637, 638, 666, used to kindle the Beltane fires, the need-fire, and the Midsummer fires, 618, 620, 639, 665  
 Oaths, on stones, 33, taken by Mexican kings, 87, 104  
 Oats Bride, 408, -cow, 457, 458, -goat, 447, 454, 457, -mother, 400, -sow, 460, -stallion, 459, -wolf, 448, 449  
 O'Brien, Murrough, 229  
 Octennial cycle based on an attempt to harmonise lunar and solar time, 279-80  
 October horse, sacrifice of the, 478  
 Odin, sacrifice of king's sons to, 278-9, 290, legend of the deposition of, 279, human sacrifices to, 354  
 O'Donovan, E, 242  
 Offspring, charms to procure, 14, 15  
 Ogres in stories of the external soul, 669, 670
- Oil, in magic, 23, 25, 26, 76, of St John 661, 662, 706, human victim anointed with, 435  
 Ointment, magical, 41  
 Ojebway Indians, 13, 45, 78, 113, 211, 245  
 Olala, secret society of Niska Indians, 699  
 Old Calabar, 119, 493, expulsion of devils and ghosts in, 567  
 Old Man, Arab custom of burying the, 378, the last sheaf called the, 402, 426, 427, 457  
 — men, savage communities ruled by, 47  
 — Rye woman, 428, 465  
 — Wife, name given to last corn cut, 403  
 — Witch, burning the, 429  
 — Woman, of the Corn, 372, last ears of corn called, 400, last sheaf called, 402, killing the, 428, burning the, 614  
 — Woman who Never Dies, North American Indian personification of maize, 419  
 Oldenberg, Professor, 67  
 Oldfield, A, 251  
 Oleae, the, at Orchomenus, 291, 292  
 Olive wood, sacred images carved of, 7  
 Olofaet, a fire-god, in Namoluk, 707  
 Oloh Ngadju of Borneo, the, 492  
 Olympia, races for the kingdom at, 156  
 Omaha Indians, 63, 216, 473, 474  
 Omens, magic to annul evil, 37, from observation of the sky, 279, from boiling milk, 482, from the smoke and flames of bonfires, 612, 615, 616, 621, 624, 645, from cakes rolled down hill, 620, of marriage, 626, 646  
 Omonga, a rice-spirit, 416  
 On or Aun, king of Sweden, 278, 290  
 Ongtong Java Islands, ceremony at reception of strangers in the, 196  
 Onitsha, on the Niger, king of, 200, ceremony at eating the new yams at, 483, human scapegoats at, 569  
 Oracles, given by the king as representative of the god, 94, by inspired priests, 94  
 Oracular spring at Dodona, 147  
 Oraons of Bengal, 144, 342, 434  
 Orchomenus in Boeotia, human sacrifices at, 291  
 Ordeal of battle, 158, by poison, 294  
 Orestes at Nemi, 2, 6, 216  
 Oriental religions in the West, 356-62  
 Orinoco, Indians of the, 27, 28, 71, 73, 78, 524  
 Orion, the constellation, 355  
 Orissa, Queen Victoria worshipped as a deity in, 100  
 Orkney Islands, transference of sickness by means of water in the, 544  
 Orotchis, bear-festivals of the, 514  
 Orpheus, the legend of his death, 379  
 Osiris, 52, 325, 443, the myth of, 362-8, the ritual of, 368-77, the nature of, 377-382, and the sun, 384, the cults of

- Adonis, Attis, Dionysus, and, 424, key to mysteries of, 444, and the pig, 472, 475, in relation to sacred bulls, 476  
 Osiris, Adonis, Attis, their mythical similarity, 325  
 Osiris of the mysteries," 376  
 Osiris-Sep, title of Osiris, 375  
 Ostiaks, the, 521  
 Ostrich, ghost of, deceived, 526  
 Ot Danoms of Borneo, 195, 597  
 Ottawa Indians, 214, 522, 527  
 Ounce, ceremony at killing an, 523  
 "Our Mother among the Water," Mexican goddess, 588  
 Ovambo of South-west Africa, 224  
 Owl, eyes of, eaten to make eater see in the dark, 496, life of a person bound up with that of an, 684, sex totem of women, 688  
 Ox, in magic, 22, 31, 72, corn-spirit as, 457, 466-8, slaughtered at threshing, 459, sacrificed at the *Bouphonia*, 466, effigy of, broken as a spring ceremony in China, 468  
 Oyo, king of, among the Yorubas, 274  
 Pacific, oracular inspiration of priests in the Southern, 94  
 Paddy (unhusked rice), the Father and Mother of the, 419  
 Padlock as amulet, 242  
 Paganism and Christianity, resemblances explained as diabolical counterfeits, 358, 361  
 Palatinate, mimic contest between Summer and Winter in the, 316  
 —, the Upper, trees asked for pardon on being felled in, 113  
 Palatine Hill at Rome, 111  
 Palenque in Central America, ruins of, 10  
 Palm-branches, in ceremony to procure rain, 74, ashes of, mixed with seed at sowing, 615, stuck in fields to protect them against hail, 617  
 — Sunday, 74, 125, 705  
 — tree, thought to ensure fertility, 119  
 Pan's image whipped with squalls, 580  
 Panes, festival of, 499  
 Pango, title signifying god, 98  
 Pans, rustic Greek deities, 464  
 Panther, ceremony at the killing of a, 221  
 Panua, tribe of Khonds, 434  
 Paphos in Cyprus, 329, sanctuary of Aphrodite at, 330, religious prostitution at, 331  
 Papuans, the, 43, 496, 682, of Finsch Haven, 246  
 Papyrus, of Nebseni, 380, of Nekht, 380  
 Parents-in-law, their names not to be pronounced, 249-50  
 Parlia, the, Roman festival of shepherds, 154, 360  
 Parkinson, John, 281  
 Parrot, external soul of warlock in a, 669  
 Parrots' eggs, a signal of death, 273  
 Parthian monarchs brothers of the Sun, 104  
 Pârvatî and Siva, marriage of the images of, 320  
 Paschal candle, 614  
 — Mountains, Easter fires on the, 615  
 Passier, in Sumatra, king of, 277  
 Pastoral tribes, animal sacraments among, 533  
 Patagonia, 236, remedy for smallpox in, 550  
 Patani Bay, the Malays of, 183  
 Paternity of kings a matter of indifference under female kinship, 154  
 Paton, W. R., 580  
 Pawnees, the, 225, 432  
 Payaguas of South America, 82  
 Pea-mother, 399, 400, -wolf, 448  
 Peacock, a totem of the Bhils, 474  
 Pear-tree as protector of cattle, 119; as life-index of a girl, 682  
 Pearls, in homoeopathic magic, 37  
 Peas-cow, 458, -pug, 448  
 Pebbles thrown into Midsummer fires, 628  
 Pelew Islands, 116, seclusion of man-slayers in, 215, taboos observed by relations of murdered man in the, 227  
 Pelops and Hippodamia, 156  
 Penance observed after building a new house, 117, for killing a boa-constrictor, 222  
 Pennefather River in Queensland, the natives of the, 39  
 Pennyroyal, burnt in Midsummer fire, 631  
 Pentheus, king of Thebes, 378, 392  
 Pepper as a cure or exorcism, 196, dropped into eyes of strangers, 198  
 Perche, in France, homoeopathic cure for vomiting in, 16  
 Perils of the soul, 178-94  
 Perkunas or Perkuns, the Lithuanian god of thunder and lightning, 161  
 Persephone, 327, 393-6, 398, 414, 420-24, 469  
 Persia, horses sacrificed to the Sun in, 79, temporary kings in, 289, king of, 593  
 Personification of abstract ideas not primitive, 315  
 Peru, Indians of, 30, 33, 144, 236, 527; theocratic despotism of ancient, 48  
 Perun, the thunder-god of the Slavs, 161  
 Peruvian Andes, 79  
 Peruvians, the ancient, 412  
 Pessinus, priestly kings at, 9, local legend of Attis at, 347, image of the Mother of the Gods at, 348, high-priest of Cybele at, 353, high-priest perhaps slain in the character of Attis at, 440  
 Phaedra and Hippolytus, 4, 7  
 Phalaris and his brazen bull, 281  
 Phaya Phollathep, "Lord of the Heavenly Hosts," temporary king in Siam, 284  
 Pheneus, lake of, 110  
 Philae, the sculptures at, 376, 381

- Philippine Islands, the, belief that souls of ancestors are in certain trees in, 115, grave of the Creator in, 264, human sacrifices in, 355, 433, head-hunting in, 441
- Philo of Byblus, 293
- Philosophy, as a solvent of religion, 162, primitive, 263
- Philostratus, on death at low tide, 35
- Phoenicia, song of Linus in, 425
- Phoenician temples, 330, 331, kings in Cyprus, 332, vintage song, 425, 442
- Phrixus and Helle, children of King Athamas, 290
- Phrygia, 347, 354, Lityerses in, 425, 426
- Phrygian cosmogony, 347, cap of Attis, 353
- Picardy, harvest customs in, 451, Lenten fire-customs in, 612
- Picts, female descent of kingship among the, 156
- Piers, Sir Henry, 120
- Pig, sacrificed for rain or sunshine, 73, blood of a, drunk as a means of inspiration, 95, and lamb as expiatory victims, 224, corn-spirit as a, 460-62, in relation to Demeter, 469, and Attis, 471, attitude of Jews to the, 472, in ancient Egypt, 472, used to decoy demons, 549, 556-7 *See also* Pigs
- Pigeon, family of Wild, in Samoa, 474
- Pigs, magical ceremonies to catch wild, 18, magical stones to breed, 33, sacrificed at the marriage of Sun and Earth, 136, at the Thesmophoria, 469, 476, sacrificed to the moon and to Osiris, 472, reasons for not eating the flesh of, 494, driven through Midsummer fire, 627, and through the need-fire, 640, offered to monster who swallows novices in initiation, 694, 696
- Pillar, fever transferred to a, 545
- Pine-cones, symbols of fertility, 353, thrown into vaults of Demeter, 353
- tree, in the myth and ritual of Attis, 347, 348, 350, 352, in the rites of Osiris, 380, sacred to Dionysus, 387
- Pipiles of Central America, 136
- Pirua, granary of maize, 412
- Pitteri Pennu, Khond god of increase, 557
- Placenta (afterbirth) and navel-string, contagious magic of, 39-41
- Plague, transferred to camel, 540, sent away in scapegoat, 565
- Plane-tree, Dionysus in, 387
- Planets, human victims sacrificed to, 444
- Plantain-tree, afterbirth buried under a, 40, fertilised by parents of twins, 137
- Plants, magic to make them grow, 28, influence persons homoeopathically, 29, sexes of, 114, thought to be animated by spirits, 487, external soul in, 681
- Plataea, festival of the Daedala at, 143, the Archon of, 224
- Plough, in relation to Dionysus, 387; piece of Yule log inserted in the, 645
- Ploughing, by women as a rain-charm, 70, ceremony of, performed by temporary king, 284, 288, Prussian custom at, 342, in rites of Osiris, 375
- Plurality of souls, doctrine of the, 690
- Pluto, carries off Persephone, 393, 469-70
- Plutus, begotten in thrice-ploughed field, 421
- Poison, continence observed at brewing, 219
- Poison ordeal, 294
- Poland, objection to iron ploughshares in, 225, harvest customs in, 404, 406, 451, Christmas custom in, 450, need-fire in, 641
- Pole-star, homoeopathic magic of the, 34
- Pollution and holiness not differentiated by savages, 223
- Polynesia, taboos in, 205, 206, 259, sacredness of the head in, 231, infanticide in, 293
- Polynesian chiefs sacred, 205
- Polynesians, oracular inspiration of priests among the, 94, their way of ridding themselves of sacred contagion, 473
- Polytheism evolved out of animism, 117
- Pomegranate causes virgin to conceive, 347
- Pomegranates sprung from the blood of Dionysus, 389, seeds of, not eaten at the Thesmophoria, 389
- Pomerania, harvest custom in, 430
- Pometia sacked by the Romans, 6
- Pommerol, Dr, 611
- Pomos of California, 562
- Pompey the Great, 328
- Ponape, one of the Caroline Islands, treatment of the navel-string in, 40, king of, 232
- Pongol, Hindoo family festival, 482
- Pons Sublicius* at Rome, 225
- Poona, rain-making at, 70, incarnation of elephant-headed god at, 100
- Poor Man, name applied to the corn-spirit after harvest, 465
- Old Woman, last sheaf left for, 465
- Woman, name applied to the corn-spirit after harvest, 465
- Poplar wood used to kindle need-fire, 639
- Porta Capena at Rome, 4, 351
- Portraits, souls in, 193
- Portugal, belief as to death at ebb tide in, 35
- Poseidon, 97, 471
- Potato Woman, the Old, 405, -mother, 413, -wolf, 448, 449, -dog, 449
- Potatoes, magical stones for increase of, 33, custom at eating new, 481
- Prayers, to the sun, 14, 26, 78, for rain, 71, 77, 86, 118, 159-61, to Dionysus, 387, to dead animals, 507, 522-4
- Precious stones, magic of, 34
- Pregnancy, 238, 239

- Pretenders to divinity among Christians, 101
- Priest, of Diana, 1, 8, 710, of Nemi, 8, 161, 163, 167, and magician, their antagonism, 52, drenched with water as a rain-charm, 70, rolled on fields as a fertility charm, 139, of Zeus, 159, brings back lost souls in a bag, 186, of Dionysus, 291, sows and plucks the first rice, 482, of Aricia, 592, of the Earth, 594
- Priestesses, 94, 594
- Priestly kings, 9
- Priests, magical powers attributed to, 53, 54, inspired by gods, 94, influence wielded by, 196, their hair unshorn, 232, foods tabooed to, 238, of Attis, the emasculated, 347, sacrifice human victims, 589, 591
- Princesses married to foreigners or men of low birth, 154
- Processions, for rain in Sicily, 74, with bears from house to house, 512, with sacred animals, 535, to the Midsummer bonfires, 628, 630, of giants (effigies) at popular festivals, 654
- Progress, the magician's, 45-8
- Prophets, Hebrew, their ethical religion, 51
- Propitiation, essential to religion, 50, of the souls of the slain, 212, of the spirits of slain animals, 217, 220, of the spirits of plants, 487, of wild animals by hunters, 518-32, of vermin by farmers, 530
- Prostitution, sacred, before marriage, 330, suggested origin of, 331
- Provence, priests thought to possess the power of averting storms in, 53, May-trees in, 124, mock execution of Caramantran on Ash Wednesday in, 304, Midsummer fires in, 630, the Yule log in, 637
- Prussia, contagious magic in, 44, custom at spring ploughing in, 342, harvest customs in, 421, 426, the Corn-goat in, 454, the Bull at reaping in, 459, Midsummer fires in, 627
- , East, harvest customs in, 401, 453, 454, 457
- , West, harvest customs in, 402, 457, pretence of birth of child on harvest-field in, 406, 421
- Prussian rulers formerly burnt, 274
- Prussians, the old, 288, their funeral feasts, 227, supreme ruler of, 274
- Psolois, the, at Orchomenus, 291, 292
- Psylli, a Snake clan, 83, 502
- Ptarmigans and ducks, dramatic contest of the, among the Esquimaux, 317
- Puberty, girls secluded at, 595, initiatory rites at, 692
- Punchkin and the parrot, story of, 669, 687, 690
- Punjaub, the, General Nicholson worshipped in his lifetime in, 100, human sacrifice in, 112, belief as to tattooing in, 180, Snake tribe in, 535, 536, human scapegoat in, 566
- Puppets, of rushes thrown into the Tiber, 493, used to attract demons of sickness from living patients, 564
- Puppies, red-haired, sacrificed by the Romans to the Dog-star, 444
- Purification, of man-slayers, 212, 215, of hunters and fishers, 216, after contact with a pig, 472, by washing, 473, before partaking of new fruits, 484, 488, by emetics, 485, 488, by standing on sacrificed human victim, 572, by beating, 602
- Purificatory ceremonies, at reception of strangers, 195, on return from a journey, 197
- theory of the fires of the fire-festivals, 642, 647, more probable than the solar theory, 650
- Puyallup Indians, 256
- Pygmalion, king of Cyprus, 332
- Pythagoras, maxims of, 44, 45
- Python clan, in Senegambia, 502
- Quartz used in circumcision, 224
- Quartz-crystal used in rain-making, 76
- Queen, name given to last corn cut at harvest, 407, the Harvest, in England, 405, of Athens, married to Dionysus, 142, of the Corn-ears, 405, of Egypt the wife of Ammon, 142, of Heaven, 337, 711, of May, 127, 129, 131, 320
- Queensland, beliefs as to the afterbirth in, 39, namesakes of the dead change their names in some of the tribes of, 253; expulsion of a demon in Central, 562, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 598
- Quetzalcoatl, Mexican god, 491
- Quiliccare, suicide of the kings of, 274-5
- Quinoa-mother, the, 413
- Quiteve, title of king of Sofala, 273
- Quito, the kings of, 431
- Quonde, in Nigeria, king-killing at, 271
- Ra, the Egyptian sun-god, 362, 364, 366, 475, and Isis, 260
- Race, to determine the Whitsuntide king, 129, succession to a kingdom determined by a, 156, for a bride, 156, of reapers to last sheaf, 459
- Races, at Whitsuntide, 124, 129, on horseback to the Maypole, 132, at fire-festivals, 611
- Radica, a festival at the end of the Carnival in Frosinone, 302
- Rain, the magical control of, 62-78, 234, 629, 645, prayers for, 71, 77, 86, 118, 159-61, kings expected to give, 85-7, 98-9, supposed to fall only as a result of magic, 87, Zeus as the god of, 159, prevented by the blood of a woman who has miscarried, 209

- Rain-bird, 72, -charms, 71, 131, 210, 234, 300, 341, 400, 437, 438, doctor, among the Toradjas of Celebes, 68, -gods, 73-5, king, 70, 107, -makers, 62, 84-6, 107, 269, 270, song, sung by women, 118, -stones, 76, 85, temple, in Angoniland, 64
- Rajah, temporary, after death of rajah, 287
- Rajahs, among the Malays, supernatural powers attributed to, 88, two, in Timor, 177
- Rajputana, gardens of Adonis in, 343
- Rahi, the fair of, in India, 319
- Ram, with golden fleece, 290, as vicarious sacrifice for human victim, 292, sacrificed to Ammon, 477, Tibetan goddess riding on a, 492, killing the sacred, 500, consecration of a white, 534
- Ram's skull in charm to avert demons, 492
- Rama, his battle with the king of Ceylon, 670
- Ramanga, among the Betsileo, 229
- Raratonga, in the Pacific, 39
- Rarhi Brahmans of Bengal, 602
- Raskolnik, Russian Dissenter, 71
- Raspberries, wild, ceremony at gathering the first, 486
- Rat's hair as a charm, 31
- Rats, in magic, 39, superstitious precautions of farmers against, 531
- Rattle, wooden, swung by twins to make fair or foul weather, 66
- Rattlesnakes respected by North-American Indians, 520
- Raven's eggs in homoeopathic magic, 32
- Reapers, contests between, 401, 403, 404, 407, 426, 439, throw sickles at the last standing corn, 401, 403, 404, 407, 446, 452, blindfolded, 404, 407, of rice deceiving the rice-spirit, 414, pretend to mow down visitors to the harvest-field, 430, remedies for pains in the back, 455
- , Egyptian, their lamentations, 338, 371, 382, 443, 444
- Reaping-match of Lityerses, 426
- Rebirth from a golden cow, 197, of ancestors in their descendants, 256
- Recall of the soul, 180
- Red colour in magic, 15, wool, 242
- Red-haired men sacrificed by ancient Egyptians, 378, 380, 443, 476, puppies sacrificed by the Romans, 444, 476
- Reddening the face of a god, 148
- Reddis or Kapus in Madras Presidency, 73
- Reflection, the soul identified with the, 192
- Reflections in water, supposed dangers of, 192
- Regalia, sanctity of, in Celebes, 295
- Regeneration from a golden cow, 197
- Regicide among the Slavs, 278, modified custom of, 283
- Regifugium at Rome, 157, 301
- Reincarnation of animals, 526-7
- Relations, names of, tabooed, 249-51, of the dead take new names for fear of the ghost, 253
- Religion, and magic, 48-60, 64, 90, 92, 162, 324, 711, defined, 50, two elements of, a theoretical and a practical, 50, and science, 51, 712, the Age of, 56, transition from magic to, 57, and music, 334, 335
- Religions, oriental, in the West, 356-62
- Religious associations among the Indians of North America, 698
- Remission of sins through the shedding of blood, 356
- Remulus, 149 *See* Romulus
- Renan's theory of Adonis, 340, 341
- Renouf, Sir P le Page, 384
- Reproductive powers, beating people to stimulate their, 581-2
- Reptile clan of the Omaha Indians, 474
- Resurrection, 236, of the god, 300, 386, of the tree-spirit, 300, of a god in the hunting, pastoral, and agricultural stages of society, 301, enacted in Shrovetide and Lenten ceremonies, 307, of the effigy of Death, 312, of the Carnival, 315, of the Wild Man, 315, of Kostrubonko, 317, of Attis, 350, 360, of Osiris, 374, 376, of Dionysus, 468, of animals, 516, 529, of fish, 527, divine, in Mexican ritual, 592, ritual of death and, 691-701
- Rex Nemorensis*, King of the Wood, 3
- Rheumatism, and magic, 44, 45, popular cure for, 196
- Rhine, dramatic contest between Winter and Summer on the middle, 316
- Rhodes, worship of Helen in, 356
- Rhodians worship the sun, 79
- Rhys, Sir John, 635, 636
- Rice, in homoeopathic magic, 28, 29, in bloom treated like a pregnant woman, 115, 414, used to attract the soul conceived as a bird, 181, 184, in water, divination by, 256, soul of, 413-15, 417, two sheaves as "husband and wife," 418, (paddy) father and mother of the, 419, "eating the soul of the rice," 482, the new, ceremonies at eating, 482
- Rice bride and bridegroom, 418, cakes, 490, child, 417, mother, 413, 415, 417
- Rickets, cure for, 682
- Riedel, J G F, 696
- Rings to prevent the escape of the soul, 180, as amulets, 226, 243, as spiritual fetters, 243, and knots tabooed, 238-44
- Ritual, of Adonis, 335-41, of Attis, 347-352, of Dionysus, 389, primitive, marks of, 411, magical or propitiatory, 411, myths dramatised in, 608, of death and resurrection, 691-701
- Rock-crystal in rain-charms, 72, 83
- Roepstorff, F A de, 255

- Romans, sacrificed pregnant victims to ensure fertility, 28, the ancient, their ceremonies for procuring rain, 77, 78, superstition as to egg-shells, 201, cutting hair or nails on shipboard, 234, superstitious objection to clasped hands or crossed legs, 240, belief in the magic virtue of divine names, 261, adopt the worship of the Phrygian Mother of the Gods, 348, their sacrifice of red-haired puppies, 444, 476, their cure for fever, 543, deemed sacred the places struck by lightning, 709
- Romanus Lecapenus, the emperor, 680
- Rome, the Sacrificial King at, 9, 106, rain-making in, 78, 149, sacred trees in, 111, kings of, 146-51, King and Queen of, 147, 151, founded by settlers from Alba Longa, 148, descent of the kingship in, 152, Midsummer festival in ancient, 153, 154, priests in, 224, name of guardian deity kept secret, 262, *Regifugium* at, 301, Phrygian Mother of the Gods brought to, 348, Festival of Joy (*Hilaria*) at, 350-51, sacrifice of she-goat to Vediovis at, 392, annual sacrifice of October horse at, 478, festival of the Compitalia at, 491, the Mother and Grandmother of Ghosts at, 491-3, human scapegoats in ancient, 577, Saturnalia at, 583, sacred fire of Vesta at, 665
- Romulus, 111, 148, 158, 378
- Romulus or Remulus, King of Alba, 149
- Rook, island of, expulsion of the devil from the, 547, initiation of young men in the, 695
- Rope used to keep off demons, 559
- Rose, the Little May, 125, the white, dyed red by the blood of Aphrodite, 336
- Roumania, festival of Green George in, 126
- Roumanians of Transylvania, 191, 227, 341
- Rowan, parasitic, 702
- Rowan-tree, a protection against witches, 620
- Royalty, the burden of, 168-78
- Runaways, knots as charms to stop, 242
- Runes, magic, Odin and the, 355
- Rupert's Day, effigy burnt on, 614
- Rupture, cure for, 682
- Russia, thieves' candles in, 56, rain-making in, 63, 71, celebration of Whitsuntide in, 121, 128, 134, St George's Day in, 128, priest rolled on the fields to fertilise them, 137, use of knots as amulets in, 242, funeral ceremonies of Kostrubonko, etc, in, 317-18, harvest customs in, 405, 425, wood-spirits in, 465, expulsion of demons in Eastern, 559-60, Midsummer fires in, 627, 656, treatment of the effigy of Kupalo in, 652, story of the external soul in, 671, birth trees in, 682, fern-seed at Midsummer in, 704
- Rustling of leaves regarded as the voice of spirits, 115
- Ruthenia, Midsummer bonfires in, 627
- Ruthenian burglars, their charms to cause sleep, 30
- Rye-boar, 460, 461, -mother, 399, 400, -dog, 449, -goat, 454, -pug, 449, -sow, 447-60, -wolf, 447, 448, -woman, 428, Woman, the Old, 405
- Sabaea or Sheba, kings of, 200
- Sabarios, a Lithuanian festival, 480
- Sabine priests, 224
- Sable-hunters, rules observed by, 525
- Sacaea, a Babylonian festival, 281, mock king of, 443
- Sacrament in the rites of Attis, 351, of swine's flesh, 470, of first-fruits, 479, combined with a sacrifice of them, 488, of eating a god, 498, types of animal, 532-8
- Sacramental bread, 491, eating of corn-spirit in animal form, 470, meal of new rice, 482
- Sacred persons, names of tabooed, 257-9
- Sacrifice, of the king's son, 289, of virility, 349, 350, not to be touched, 473, annual, of a sacred animal, 475, of first-fruits, 488, of heifer at kindling need-fire, 641
- Sacrifices, offered to ancestors, 71, 72, human, 79, 96, 112, 117, 146, 279, 281, 290, 354, 355, 378-80, 431, 569, 571, 579, 587, 609, 617, 653, 657, 658, offered to kings, 104, offered to a sacred sword, 109, offered to trees, 112, 113, 115, 116, 118, on roof of new house, 117, to water-spirits, 146, to the dead, 175, at foundation of buildings, 191, to souls of slain enemies, 212, vicarious, 292, of children among the Semites, 293; offered in connection with irrigation, 370
- Sacrificial king at Rome, 9, 106
- Sagard, Gabriel, 527
- Saghalién, facilitating childbirth in, 240
- Sahagun, B de, 587
- St Andrews, witch burned at, 243
- St Angelo, ill-treated in drought, 75
- St Bride, her Day in the Highlands of Scotland, 134, an old goddess of fertility, 135
- St Bridget, 134
- St Columba, 101
- St Dasius, martyrdom of, 584-5
- St Denys, his seven heads, 366
- St Francis of Paolo, 74
- St Gens, his image used in rain-making, 77
- St George, festival of, 360
- St George's Day, fertilisation of barren women by fruit-trees on, 119, Green George on, 126-8, ceremony to fertilise the fields on, 137
- St Gervais, spring of, 77
- St Hippolytus, 5
- St James, 50, 51

- St John, Midsummer festival of, in Sardinia, 343, Sweethearts of, 343, oil of, found on oak leaves at Midsummer, 661-2, 706
- the Baptist, bathing on his day, 70, his chapel at Athens, 545, associated with Midsummer Day, 622
- , the Knights of, 630, Grand Master of the Order of, 631
- St John's Day, swinging on, 289, Midsummer fires on, 624, 628, fern-seed blooms on, 704 See Midsummer Day
- St John's Eve, in Sweden, 122, Russian ceremony on, 318, in Malta, 631
- St Joseph, ill-treated in drought, 75
- St Lawrence, fire of, 536
- St Louis, 90
- St Mary, Isle of, 523
- St Maughold, gives veil to St Bridget, 134
- St Michael, ill-treated in drought, 75
- St Patrick, canon attributed to, 90
- St Paul, on immortality, 398
- St Peter, as giver of rain, 77
- St Peter's Day, 318, 360
- St Pons, his image used in rain-making, 77
- St Rochus's Day, need-fire kindled on, 641
- Saint Sécaire, Mass of, 54
- St Stephen's Day, 537
- St Sylvester's Day, 561
- St Tecla, falling sickness cured in her church at Llandegla in Wales, 545
- St Vitus's Day, 644
- Saints, violence done to images of, to procure rain, 75, images of, dipped in water as a rain-charm, 77
- Sakalavas of Madagascar, 172, 258, 295
- Šakvari song, ancient Indian hymn, 67
- Šal tree, 145
- Salish or Flathead Indians, 187, 486
- Salmon, twins thought to be, 66, ceremonies at catching the first of the season, 528
- Salmoneus, king of Elis, 77, 149, 159, 292
- Salt, abstinence from, 23, 138, not to be eaten, 218, 510, 595, 602, Mexican Goddess of, 588
- Salt-pans, continence observed by workers in, 219
- Salvation of the individual soul, importance attached to, in Oriental religions, 357
- Samarcand, homoeopathic magic applied to babies in, 32, New Year ceremony in, 285
- Samaveda, the, 67
- Samhnagan, Hallowe'en bonfires, 635
- Samoa, rain-making in, 75, taboo on persons who have handled the dead in, 206, butterfly god in, 474, the Wild Pigeon family in, 474
- Samorin, title of the kings of Calicut, 275
- Samoyed shamans, their familiar spirits, 683
- Samoyeds of Siberia, 252
- Sampson, Agnes, a Scotch witch, 542
- Samyas monastery, near Lhasa, 573
- San Pellegrina, church of, at Ancona, 585
- Sanctity and uncleanness not clearly differentiated in the primitive mind, 607
- Sandwich Islands, the king personated the god in the, 93, 94, precaution as to spittle of chiefs in the, 237
- Saning Sari, rice goddess, 415
- Sanitation improved through superstition, 201
- Sankara and the Grand Lama, 189
- Santals, their belief in the absence of the soul in dreams, 182
- Saparoea, East Indian island, fishermen's magic in, 18
- Sarawak, 15, 25, 89, taboos observed in, 24
- Sardines worshipped by Indians of Peru, 527
- Sardinia, gardens of Adonis in, 343, Sweethearts of (St John at Midsummer in, 343-4, Midsummer fires in, 344
- Sarmata Islands, marriage of the Sun and Earth in, 136
- Satan, annually expelled by the Wotyaks, 559, and by the Cheremiss, 560, preaches a sermon in North Berwick church, 681
- Saturn, the god of sowing, 583, his festival the Saturnalia, 584
- Saturnalia, 136, 153, 553, 575, the Roman, 158, 583-7
- Satyrs in relation to goats, 464
- Savage, the, 47, his awe and dread of everything new, 225, our debt to, 262-4, not to be judged by European standards, 294, not illogical, 517, his belief that animals have souls, 518, unable to discriminate clearly between men and animals, 532, secretiveness of, 691, his dread of sorcery, 691
- Savage Island, kings killed on account of dearth in, 87, cessation of monarchy in, 176
- Savage philosophy, 263
- Saxo Grammaticus, 33, 155
- Saxons of Transylvania, 238, 239, 306, 312, 316, 456, 530, 672
- Saxony, May or Whitsuntide trees in, 123, Whitsuntide mummers in, 298, 300, "carrying out Death" in, 309, Oats bride and bridegroom in, 409, fires to burn the witches in, 622
- Scandinavia, female descent of the kingship in, 155
- Scandinavian custom of the Yule Boar, 461
- Scapegoat, Jewish use of, 569, a material vehicle for expulsion of evils, 575
- Scapegoats, animals as, 540, 565, 568, birds as, 541, public, 562-77, divine animals as, 570, 576, divine men as, 571, 576, in general, 574
- , human, 542, 565, 569, in classical antiquity, 577-87



- Scheube, Dr B, 507  
 Schleswig, custom at threshing in, 431  
 Schrenck, L von, 511  
 Schuyler, E, 543  
 Science, and magic, 48, 711; and religion, 712  
 Scorpion's bite, pain transferred to an ass, 544  
 Scorpions, Isis and the, 364  
 Scotland, magical images in, 56, witches raise wind in, 80, iron as a safeguard against fairies in, 226, witch burnt in, 243, harvest customs in, 341, 403, 406-8, 452, names given to last corn cut in, 403, 409, 480, saying as to the wren in, 536, witchcraft in, 542, worship of Grannus in, 611, Beltane fires in, 617-620, few traces of Midsummer fires in, 631, Hallowe'en fires in, 635, need-fire in, 639-41 *See also* Highlands  
 Scouvion, or Escouvion, in Belgium, 610  
 Scrofula, 90, 203, 204  
 Scylla, daughter of Nisus, 670  
 Scythians, the, 87  
 Sea Dyaks, 25, 239, 249, 531  
 Sea-god, human sacrifice to, 579  
 Seals, care taken of the bladders and bones of, 526  
 Sealskins in sympathy with the tides, 35  
 Seasons, magical and religious theories of the, 324  
 Seb (Keb or Geb), Egyptian earth-god, father of Osiris, 362  
 Secretiveness of the savage, 691  
 Sedna, Esquimaux goddess, 552  
 Seed-corn, 420, 452, 461, 463, 469, 470, 666, -rice, 284, -time, annual expulsion of demons at, 557  
 Seger, a sago magician of Kiwai, 379  
 Seker (Sokari), title of Osiris, 375  
 Selangor, rice-crop supposed to depend on the district officer of, 89, durian-trees threatened in, 113  
 Seligman, Dr C G, 266, 270  
 Semele, mother of Dionysus, 265, 389  
 Seminole Indians of Florida, 486, 520  
 Semites, the, 293  
 Semitic Baal, 281, kings as hereditary deities, 333, personal names, indicating relationship to a deity, 333, worship of Adonis, 325  
 Senal Indians of California, 707  
 Sencis of Peru, the, 78  
 Senegambia, Python clan in, 502, the mistletoe in, 660  
 Serbia, rain-making ceremony in, 69, Midsummer fires in, 627, the Yule log in, 638, need-fire in, 640  
 Serbian women's charm to hoodwink their husbands, 32  
 Serpents, in magic, 32, ceremonies observed after killing, 222, killing the sacred, 501, burnt alive, 655, 658  
 Servius Tullius, Roman king, 152  
 Set, or Typhon, brother of Osiris, 363, 365 475  
 Seven, the number in magical ceremonies, etc, 242, 280, 417, 610, 631  
 Sex totems, 687-8  
 Sexes, of plants, recognised by some savages and by the ancients, 114, influence of the, on vegetation, 135-9, danger apprehended from the relation of the, 700  
 Sexual intercourse practised to make the crops and fruit grow, 135-6  
 Seyf el-Mulook and the jinnee, story of, 674  
 Shadow, the soul identified with the, 189-192  
 Shadows, of people drawn out by ghosts, 190, animals injured through their, 190, of certain persons dangerous, 190, 207, of people built into foundations of edifices, 191  
 Shakespeare on death at ebb tide, 35  
 Shamans, 88, 683  
 Shanghai, geomancy at, 36  
 Shans of Burma, 77  
 Sheba or Sabaea, kings of, 200  
 Sheep, torn by wolf in homoeopathic magic, 32, used in purificatory ceremony, 214, black, sacrificed for rain, 72  
 Shell, called the "old man," 33  
 Shenty, Egyptian cow-goddess, 375  
 Shetland, witches in, 81  
 Shilluk, the, 266, 294, their kings, 295  
 Shoes, of priestess, 174, of boar's skin worn by king at inauguration, 594  
 Shooting star, superstition as to, 279  
 Shrove Tuesday, customs on, 134, 302, 305, 317, 461, 614, 651, 656  
 Shrovetide customs, 298, Bear, 306  
 Shuswap Indians, 66, 190, 207  
 Siam, kings of, 99, 224, 257, 593, objection to the king's image on coins in, 193, mode of executing royal criminals in, 228, belief that a guardian spirit dwells in the head in, 230, ceremony at cutting a child's hair in, 235, temporary kings in, 284, 289, annual expulsion of demons in, 559, human scapegoat in, 570  
 Siamese monks, 112, story of the external soul, 669  
 Siao, belief as to sylvan spirits in, 116  
 Siberia, bear-festival in, 510, sable-hunters in, 525, external souls of shamans in, 683  
 Sibyl, the, and the Golden Bough, 3  
 Sibylline Books, the, 348  
 Sicily, attempts to compel the saints to give rain in, 74, 75, gardens of Adonis in, 344, Good Friday ceremonies in, 345, Midsummer fires in, 631  
 Sickness, homoeopathic magic for the cure of, 15, explained by the absence of the soul, 183, ascribed to possession by demons and cured by exorcism, 196, 547, cured or prevented by effigies, 492;

- transferred to things, 539, or people, 540, 544, or animals, 540, 544, bonfires a protection against, 610
- Sicknesses expelled in a ship, 563
- Sierra Leone, 174, custom of beating a king on the eve of his coronation in, 176
- Sieve, water poured through, as a rain-charm, 71
- Sikkim, fear of the camera in, 193
- Silenuses, minor deities associated with Dionysus, 464
- Silesia, Whitsuntide King in, 129, Whitsuntide customs in, 132, "carrying out Death" in, 309-11, 314, 614, bringing in Summer, 311, the Grandmother at harvest in, 401, names given to last sheaf in, 402, the Wheat Bride at harvest in, 409, harvest customs in, 428, 449, 451, 453, 457, expulsion of witches and evil spirits in, 560, 561, need-fire in, 640
- Silk-cotton trees revered, 112
- Silkworms, taboos observed by breeders of, 218
- Silvanus, the Roman wood-god, 140, 141
- Silvi, family name of kings of Alba, 149, 163
- Simeon, prince of Bulgaria, 680
- Similarity in magic, law of, 11
- Singarmati Deva, Indian goddess, 218
- Singhalese, the, 226
- Sins, confession of, 198, 217, 540, 541-2, 553, 569, the remission of, through the shedding of blood, 356, transferred to a buffalo calf, 541, transferred vicariously to human beings, 542, of the Children of Israel transferred to scapegoat, 569
- Sioux Indians, 497
- Sirius, the Dog-star, 370, 384
- Sisters, taboos observed by, 23, 25
- Situa, annual festival of the Incas, 553
- Siva and Párvati, marriage of the images of, 320
- Skeat, W W, 417
- Skeleton drenched with water as a rain-charm, 71
- Skin disease caused by eating a sacred animal, 473
- Skins of sacrificed animals, uses made of, 466, 477, 499-501, 529, of human victims, 591
- Skipping-rope played at bear-festival, 512
- Skulls, of head-hunters' victims preserved as relics, 433, of bears and foxes worshipped and consulted as oracles, 505, of turtles propitiated, 526
- Sky, twins called children of the, 67, observation of the, for omens, 279
- Skye, last sheaf called the Cripple Goat in, 455, the need-fire in, 618
- Slave, charm to bring back a runaway, 31
- Slave priest at Nemi, 3
- Slave Coast of West Africa, negroes of the, 116, exorcism of demons from children on the, 196, 226, precautions as to the spittle of kings on the, 237
- Slaves, license granted to, at the Saturnalia, 158, 583
- Slavonia, harvest customs in, 404, the Corn-spirit in, 448, custom of "carrying out Death" in, 578, the Yule log in, 638, need-fire in, 641, stories of the external soul in, 671
- Slavonians, South, 30, 32, 114, 119, 649  
See also Slavs
- Slavs, 110, 161, 278, 302, 400, 649, 665, of Carinthia, 126, South, 44, 636
- Sleep, charms to cause, 30, absence of the soul in, 181-2, forbidden in house after a death, 182, sick people not allowed to, 193
- Slovenes, 128, of Oberkram, 134
- Smallpox, 493, demon of, transferred to a sow, 540, blood of monkey used to exorcise the devil of, 549, flight from the evil spirit of, 550, demon of, expelled by means of an image, 563, expelled in a boat, 564
- Smith's craft sacred, 86
- Smoke, in rain-making, 73, of cedar inhaled as means of inspiration, 95, of bonfires, 612, 622, 645, of need-fire, 640, used to stupefy witches in the clouds, 650
- Smoking as a means of inducing a state of ecstasy, 484, in honour of slain bears, 522
- Snail supposed to suck blood of cattle, 190
- Snake, used in rain-charm, 72, respected by Indians of Carolina, 519, worshipped, 535, said to wound a girl at puberty, 601, seven-headed, external soul of witch in a, 676
- Snake-bite, charm against, 32, clan, exposed infants to snakes, 502, -god, married to women, 145, -stone, 34, tribe, in the Punjaub, 535
- Snipe, fever transferred to a, 545
- Snorri Sturluson, 379
- Sochet or Sochet, epithet of Isis, 383
- Society, uniformity of occupation in primitive, 61, ancient, built on the principle of subordination of the individual to the community, 357
- Sofala, kings of, put to death, 272
- Sogamosa or Sogamoza, the pontiff of, 104; heir to the throne not allowed to see the sun, 595
- Sokari (Seker), a title of Osiris, 375
- Solar theory of the fires of the fire-festivals, 642, 643
- Solomon Islands, the, disposal of cut hair in, 235, ceremony for getting rid of fatigue in, 540
- Solstice, the summer, its importance for primitive man, 622, the winter, reckoned by the ancients the Nativity of the Sun, 358

- Solstitial fires perhaps rain-charms, 706  
 Son of God, alleged incarnation of the, in America, 102, of the king, sacrificed for his father, 289  
 Songs of the corn-reapers, 424  
 Sopater accused of binding the winds, 81  
 Sorcerers, 84, 233, 235, 236, souls extracted or detained by, 187, 188, influence wielded by, 196, injure men through their names, 245, exorcise demons, 548  
 Sorcery, the dread of, 233, 691, protections against, 621, 629, 663  
 Sorrowful One, vaults of the, 371  
 Sothis, Egyptian name for Sirius, 370  
 Soul, the perils of the, 178, as a mannikin, 178, absence and recall of the, 180, as a shadow and a reflection, 189-92, in the blood, 228, 230, identified with the personal name, 244, of man-god, 265, succession to the, 293-5, of the rice, 413, 415, thought to be seated in the liver, 497, the notion of a, 690, the unity and indivisibility of the, 690 *See also* Souls  
 —, the external, in folk-tales, 667-78, in inanimate things, 679, in plants, 681; in animals, 683, kept in totem, 690  
 Soul-boxes, amulets as, 679-80, -stone, 680  
 Souls, of the dead in trees, 115, every man thought to have four, 179, light and heavy, thin and fat, 179, transference of, 184, 185, abducted by demons, 186, extracted or detained by sorcerers, 187-8, supposed to be in portraits, 193, of slain enemies propitiated, 213, of beasts respected, 223, of the dead transmitted to successors, 294, immortal, attributed to animals, 518, the plurality of, 690  
 South Sea Islands, human gods in the, 96  
 Sow, corn-spirit as, 460, the cropped black, at Hallowe'en, 636  
 Sowing, homoeopathic magic at, 28, sexual intercourse before, 136, continence at, 138, rites of, in Egypt, 371, and ploughing, ceremony of, in the rites of Osiris, 375, expulsion of demons at, 575  
 Spain, belief as to death at ebb tide in, 35, Midsummer fires in, 631  
 Spark Sunday in Switzerland, 613  
 Sparrows, charm to keep them from the corn, 530  
 Sparta, state sacrifices at, 9; sacrifices to the sun at, 79, king not to be touched, 224, warned by oracle against a lame reign, 273, octennial tenure of kingship at, 279  
 Spears, sacred, 351, 571  
 Speke, Captain J. H., 196  
 Spells, cast by strangers, 197, at hair-cutting, 233, cast by witches on union of man and wife, 650  
 Spelt-goat, last sheaf called the, 456  
 Spices used in exorcism of demons, 196  
 Spiders in homoeopathic magic, 31, ceremony at killing, 524  
 Spindles not to be carried openly on the highroads, 20, not to be twirled while men are in council, 20  
 Spinning forbidden to women under certain circumstances, 20  
 Spirit, Brethren and Sisters of the Free, 101, of vegetation, *see* Vegetation, the Great, of American Indians, 264  
 Spirits, in trees, 112, water, 145, averse to iron, 225, evil, fear of attracting the attention of, 248, distinguished from gods, 411, of the woods, 465, retreat of the army of, 546  
 Spitting, forbidden, 218, upon knots as a charm, 241, at ceremony of expulsion of evils, 568  
 Spittle, used in magic, 13, 233, 234, 237, tabooed, 237, used in making a covenant, 237, magical virtue of, 435, 437  
 Sprenger, the inquisitor, 681  
 Spring, magical ceremonies for the revival of nature in, 320, ceremony at the beginning of, in China, 468  
 Spring customs and harvest customs compared, 410  
 Spring, oracular, at Dodona, 147  
 Springbok, not eaten by Bushmen, 495  
 Squirrels burnt in Easter bonfires, 616, 656  
 Stabbing men's shadows in order to injure the men, 189  
 Standing on one foot, custom of, 284, 285, 288  
 Star, falling, in magic, 17, the Evening, in Keats's last sonnet, 34, of Salvation, 316, of Bethlehem, 347, the Morning, 432  
 Stars, shooting, superstitions as to, 279  
*Stella Maris*, an epithet of the Virgin Mary, 383  
 Stepping over persons forbidden, 211, over dead panther, 221  
 Sternberg, Leo, 513, 517  
 Sticks, charred, uses of, 614, 616, 624, 626, and stones, evils transferred to, 540, whittled, 508, 512  
 Stiens of Cambodia, the, 524  
 Stinging with ants as a form of purification, 601  
 Stone, used in ceremony to facilitate childbirth, 14, supposed to cure jaundice, 16, treading on a, as a homoeopathic charm, 33, (*lapis manalis*) used in rain-making at Rome, 77-8, holed, in magic, to make sunshine, 78, external soul in a, 680, magical, put into body of novice at initiation, 699  
 Stone-throwing as a fertility charm, 7; -curlew as a cure for jaundice, 16  
 Stones anointed in order to avert bullets from warriors, 26, homoeopathic magic

- of, 33, precious, magical qualities of, 34, rain-making by means of, 75, 85; in charms to make the sun shine, 78, in wind charms, 80, ghosts in, 190, sacred, 235, in last sheaf, 402, 403, criminal crushed between, 431, fatigue transferred to, 540  
 Stoning human scapegoats, 579  
 Storms, Catholic priests thought to possess the power of averting, 53, caused by cutting or combing the hair, 234  
 Stow, in Suffolk, witch at, 44  
 Strangers, taboos on intercourse with, 194, suspected of practising magic arts, 194, ceremonies at reception of, 195, slain as representatives of the corn-spirit, 426, regarded as representatives of the corn-spirit, 429, 431, 439  
 Straw, wrapt round fruit-trees as a protection against evil spirits, 561, tied round trees to make them fruitful, 612  
 Straw-bull at harvest, 457, -goat, 456  
 Strength of people bound up with their hair, 680  
 Strings, knotted, as amulets, 243  
 Strudeli and Stratelli, female spirits of the wood, 561  
 Stseelis Indians of British Columbia, 605  
 Stubbes, Phillip, his *Anatomie of Abuses*, 123  
 Stubble-cock, name of harvest supper, 451  
 Styx, passage of Aeneas across the, 707  
 Substitutes, put to death instead of kings, 278, 282, 289, temporary, for the Shah of Persia, 289, for human sacrifices, 354  
 Substitution for human victims, of animals, 292, 392, 436, of rice-cakes, 490, of effigies, 491  
 Suffocation as a mode of executing royal criminals, 228  
 Sulka, the, of New Britain, 64, 76, 247  
 Sulla at the temple of Diana, 164  
 "Sultan of the Scribes," at Fez, 286  
 Sumatra, magical image to obtain offspring in, 14, pregnant woman not to stand at the door in, 21, homoeopathic magic at sowing rice in, 28, rain-charm by means of a black cat in, 72, personification of the rice in, 415, tigers respected in, 519, human scapegoat in, 570  
 Summer, bringing in the, 311-16, and Winter, battle of, 316-17  
 Summer-trees, 311, 314  
 Sun, prayers offered to the, 14, 26, 78, magical control of the, 78-80, ceremonies at eclipses of the, 78, ancient Egyptian ceremony for the regulation of the, 78, sacrifices to the, 79, chief deity of the Rhodians, 79, supposed to drive in a chariot, 79, caught by net or string, 79, father of the Incas, 104, Parthian monarchs the brothers of the, 104, and Earth, marriage of the, 136, 145, not allowed to shine on sacred persons, 169, 170, represented as a man with a bull's head, 281, Adonis as the, 337, Nativity of the, 358, the Unconquered, Mithra identified with, 358, Osiris as the, 384, first-fruits offered to the, 431, ceremony at the re-appearance of the, in the Arctic regions, 551, hearts of human victims offered to the, 589, rule not to see the, 595, not to shine on girls at puberty, 596-600, 602, symbolised by a wheel, 644, fern-seed procured by shooting at the, 705, the ultimate cooling of the, 713  
 Sun-god, the, 73, 105, -goddess, 168  
 Sundanese, 30  
 Sunflower roots, ceremony at eating, 487  
 Sunshine, use of fire as a charm to produce, 647-8  
 Surinam, the Bush negroes of, 166, 473  
 Swabia, the Harvest-May in, 118, May-trees in, 123, disposal of cut hair in, 235, Whitsuntide mummers in, 297, Shrovetide or Lenten ceremonies in, 307, the Old Woman at harvest in, 402, harvest customs in, 454, 457, 458, 460, Lenten fires in, 612, Easter fires in, 617, Midsummer fires in, 624, "fire of heaven" in, 644  
 Swallows as scapegoats, 541  
 Swami Bhaskaranandaji Saraswati, 100  
 Swan-woman, Tartar story of the, 676  
 Swazieland, knots as charms in, 242  
 Swearing on stones, 33  
 Sweat, contagious magic of, 43  
 Sweating as a purification, 207  
 Sweden, sacred grove in, 110, peasants stick leafy branches in cornfields in, 118, guardian trees in, 120, birch twigs on the eve of May Day in, 122, bonfires and May-poles at Midsummer in, 122, Midsummer Bride and Bridegroom in, 133, Frey and his priestess in, 143, dramatic contest between Summer and Winter on May Day in, 316, harvest customs in, 406, custom at threshing in, 431, Yule Boar in, 461, Christmas custom in, 462, Easter bonfires in, 617, May Day bonfires in, 621, 645, Midsummer fires in, 625, the need-fire in, 641, the mistletoe in, 661, 663, Balder's balefires in, 664, superstitions about a parasitic rowan in, 702, the divining rod in, 705  
 Swedish kings, traces of nine years' reign of, 278  
 "Sweethearts of St John," 343, 344  
 Swine's flesh, sacramentally eaten, 470, 472, not eaten by worshippers of Attis, 471  
 Swineherds forbidden to enter Egyptian temples, 472  
 Swinging, at ploughing rite in Siam, 285, 288, to make the flax grow high, 289

- Switzerland, harvest customs in, 455, 457, 458, frightening away the spirits of the wood in, 561; Lenten fires in, 613, the need-fire in, 641, 645, the mistletoe in, 661, 662, fern-seed on St John's Night in, 705
- Sword, a magical, 109
- Swords used to ward off or expel demons, 549, 551
- Sycamore at doors on May Day, 121, effigy of Osiris placed on boughs of, 376
- Syleus, the legend of, 442
- Sylvan deities in classical art, 117
- Sympathy, magical, 38
- Syrians, their religious attitude to pigs, 471, esteemed fish sacred, 473
- Syria, 241, Adonis in, 327, precaution against caterpillars in, 531
- Szis, the, of Upper Burmah, 418
- Ta-ta-thi tribe of New South Wales, 76
- Tâ-uz (Tammuz), 338
- Tabah, chief of, 237
- Taboo, or negative magic, 19-22, 29, of chiefs and kings, 204, the meaning of, 223, conceived as a dangerous physical substance which needs to be insulated, 594 *See also* Taboos
- Taboo rajah and chief, 177-8
- Tabooed acts, 194-202, hands, 204-8, 210, 214, 233, persons, 202-23, 593-5, things, 223-4, words, 244-62
- Taboos, on food, 21, 238, on parents of twins, 66, royal and priestly, 168-75, on intercourse with strangers, 194, on eating and drinking, 198, on showing the face, 199, on quitting the house, 200, on leaving food over, 200, on chiefs and kings, 202, on mourners, 205, on women, 207, on warriors, 210, on man-slayers, 212, on hunters and fishers, 216, as spiritual insulators, 223, on iron, 224, on sharp weapons, 226, on blood, 227, relating to the head, 230, on hair, 231, on spittle, 237, on knots and rings, 238, on words, 244, on personal names, 244, on names of relations, 249, on names of the dead, 251, on names of kings and other sacred persons, 257, on names of gods, 260, regulating the lives of divine kings, 593
- observed in fishing and hunting, 20, by children in the absence of their fathers, 21, 22, 26, by wives in the absence of their husbands, 21-5, by sisters in the absence of their brothers, 25, after house-building, 117, for the sake of the crops, 138, by the Mikado, 169, by headmen in Assam, 173, by ancient kings of Ireland, 173, by the Flamen Dialis, 174, by the Bodia, 175, by sacred milkmen among the Todas, 175, by priest of Earth in Southern Nigeria, 594
- Tahiti, seclusion of women after child-birth in, 208, king and queen of, 224, 593, sanctity of the head in, 231, names of kings not to be pronounced in, 259
- Talismans possessed by the Fire King of Cambodia, 108
- Talmud, the, on menstruous women, 604
- Talos, legend of, 280
- Tamarind tree, sacred, 118
- Tammuz, or Adonis, 325, the lover of Ishtar, 325, laments for, 326, mourned for at Jerusalem, 327, as a corn-spirit, 338, his bones ground in a mill, 338, 442, perhaps represented by the mock king of Sacaea, 442-3
- Tana (Tanna), one of the New Hebrides, contagious magic of clothes in, 43, magic practised on refuse of food in, 201
- Tapio, woodland god in Finland, 141
- Tar barrel, burning, swung round pole at Midsummer, 625
- Tara, capital of ancient Ireland, 173, 273
- Tari Pennu, earth goddess, 434
- Taro plants beaten to make them grow, 581
- Tarquin the Elder, 152
- the Proud, 150
- Tartar Khan, ceremony at visiting a, 198
- stories of the external soul, 675, 676
- Tartars, the Buddhist, 102
- Tasmania, 252
- Tatius, king of Rome, 152, 158
- Tattoo marks of priests of Attis, 352
- Tattooing in the Punjab, 180
- Tauric Diana, her image brought by Orestes to Italy, 2, only to be appeased with human blood, 6
- Taygetus, Mount, sacrifices to the sun on, 79
- Taylor, Rev J C, 570
- Teeth, contagious magic of, 38-39, of rats and mice in magic, 39, of ancestor in magical ceremony, 78, of sacred kings preserved as amulets, 109, loss of, supposed effect of breaking a taboo, 206, as a rain-charm, 234, extracted, kept against the resurrection, 236
- Tegner, Swedish poet, 664
- Tein-eign*, need-fire, in Scotland, 617, 618
- Telepathy, magical, 22, 24, 25
- Telugus, their way of stopping rain, 64
- Temple at Jerusalem, built without iron, 225
- Temples built in honour of living kings of Babylon, and of Egypt, 104
- Tenedos, isle of, 291, 392
- Tepehuanes of Mexico, 193
- Teton Indians, 524
- Teutonic kings as priests, 9, stories of the external soul, 672, thunder-god, 160
- Tezcatlipoco, Mexican god, 587
- Thargelia, Greek festival of the, 579, 582
- Thebes, the Boeotian, grave of Dionysus at 389

- Thebes, in Egypt, 142, 174, Valley of the Kings at, 377, annual sacrifice of ram to Ammon at, 477, 500
- Theddora tribe of South-east Australia, 498
- Theocracies in America, 170
- Theogamy, divine marriage, 140
- Theology distinguished from religion, 50
- Theseus and Hippolytus, 4
- Thesmophoria, ancient Greek festival, 353, 371, 389, 469, 470
- Thevet, F A, 88
- Thieves' candles, 30, 31, 56
- Thlinkeet or Tlingit Indians, 234, 528, 600
- Thompson Indians of British Columbia, 27, 45, 487, 708
- Thonga, Bantu tribe of South Africa, 708
- Thor, the Norse thunder-god, 160
- Thorn bushes to keep off ghosts, 207
- Thorns, wreaths of, hung up as a sign to warn off strangers, 558
- Thoth, Egyptian god of wisdom, 362, 364
- Thrace, worship of Dionysus in, 386, the Bacchanals of, 390, human scapegoat in, 579
- Thracian gods ruddy and blue-eyed, 260
- Thread, use of, in magic, 181, 242, 545
- Thresher of the last corn, 400, 405-6, 448, 456, 458, 460
- Thresher-cow, in the Canton of Zurich, 458
- Threshing, customs at, 400, 405, 418, 428-9, 431, 448, 449, 451, 453, 456, 458, 460
- Threshing-dog, 448
- Thrumalun, mythical being in Australia, 693
- Thunar or Donar, German thunder-god, 160
- Thunder, imitation of, 63, kings expected to make, 149, expiation for hearing, 174, Midsummer fires a protection against, 627, 629
- Thunder-beings, 524, -besom, 662, 709, -bird, the mythical, 599, -god, 161
- Thunderbolt, Zeus surnamed the, 159
- Thuremlin, a mythical being, 692
- Thuringen, homoeopathic magic at sowing flax in, 28, May King in, 129, Whitsuntide mummers in, 298, 300, carrying out Death in, 308, customs at threshing in, 405, 458, the Harvest-cock in, 451, "the Boar in the corn" in, 460, Midsummer fires in, 656
- Tiber, puppets thrown into the, 493
- Tibet, the Grand Lamas of, 102, incarnate human gods in, 103, vicarious use of images in, 492, human scapegoats in, 572
- Tibetan new year, 572
- Tides, homoeopathic magic of the, 34, 35
- Tigers, respected in Sumatra, 519
- Timmes, the, of Sierra Leone, 176
- Timor, island of, telepathy in, 26, fetish or taboo rajah in, 177, war customs in, 212, transference of fatigue to leaves in, 540
- Timorlaut Islands, 526, 564
- Tinneh or Déné Indians, 208, of North-west America, 486
- Titans kill Dionysus, 388
- Tiyans of Malabar, 602
- Tlingit or Thlinkeet Indians, 234, 528, 600
- Tlokoala, a secret society of the Nootka Indians, 699
- Toads in relation to rain, 73
- Tobacco, used as an emetic, 484-5
- Tobacco smoke, priest inspired by, 95
- Toboongkoo, the, of Central Celebes, 116
- Todas, a tribe of Southern India, 100, 175, 534
- Togoland, expulsion of devils in, 555
- Tolalaki, the, of Central Celebes, 498
- Tolampoos, the, of Central Celebes, 244
- Tomori, the, of Central Celebes, 116, 416
- Tonapoo, the, of Central Celebes, 117
- Tonga, chiefs' touch thought to heal scrofula in, 90, veneration paid to divine chiefs in, 177, kings of, 203, 231, tabooed persons not allowed to handle food in, 206, ceremony performed after contact with a sacred chief in, 473
- Tonquin, division of monarchy in, 177, annual expulsion of demons in, 558
- Toothache, transferred to enemies, 539; remedy for, 544
- Toradjas of Central Celebes, 18, 21, 68, 71, 75, 117, 197, 232, 416, 581
- Torches, offered by women to Diana, 3, used to mimic lightning, 77, used in expulsion of demons, 548, 550, 554, 555, 557, 560, 562, in expulsion of witches, 560, 561, processions with lighted, 610, 611, 647, carried round folds, 631, applied to fruit trees to fertilise them, 647
- Torres Straits Islands, 604, magic in the, 18, personal names tabooed in, 250, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 598
- Tortoises in magic, 36, reasons for not eating, 495
- Totem, skin disease supposed to be caused by eating, 473, supposed effect of killing, 689, receptacle for a man's external soul, 690, transference of soul to, 692, 700
- Totem animal, artificial, 699, clans, 17, 504, 700
- Totemism, in Australia and America, 533, suggested theory of, 689
- Totems, magical ceremonies for the multiplication of the, 17, 85-6
- Toumbuluh tribe of North Celebes, 239, 240
- Toxcatl, old Mexican festival, 587
- Transmigration of human souls, into turtles, 504, into bears, 511, into totem animals, 691
- Transubstantiation, 490
- Transylvania, rain-making in, 71, festival of Green George in, 126, continence at sowing in, 138, saying as to sleeping child in, 182, harvest customs in, 451, 452, 456, customs at sowing in, 530, story of the external soul in, 672

- Transylvania, the Germans of, 239, the Roumanians of, 191, 227, 341, the Saxons of, 238, 306, 312, 316, 456, 530, 672
- Travancore, the Rajah of, 543
- Tree, that has been struck by lightning, 80, 708, decked with sham bracelets, etc., 342, burnt in the Midsummer bonfire, 626, 628, external soul in a, 670, 680  
*See also* Trees
- Tree-agates, 34
- spirit, represented simultaneously in vegetable and human form, 125, representative of, thrown into water to ensure rain, 126, killing of the, 296-323, resurrection of the, 300, in relation to the vegetation-spirit, 315-16, Attis as a, 352, Osiris as a, 380, effigies of, burnt in bonfires, 651, human representatives of, put to death, 652, 665
- spirits, 109-17, beneficent powers of, 117-20, 651, in human form or embodied in living people, 125
- worship, 109, among the ancient Germans, 110, among European families of the Aryan stock, 110, among the Lithuanians, 110, in ancient Greece and Italy, 111, among the Finnish-Ugrian stock in Europe, 111, notions at the root of, 111, in modern Europe, relics of, 120-35
- Trees, worship of, 109, oracular, 110, regarded as animate, 111, sacrifices offered to, 112, 113, 115, 116, 118, sensitive, 112, apologies offered to, for cutting them down, 113, bleeding, 113, threatened to make them bear fruit, 113, married to each other, 114, in blossom treated like pregnant women, 115, animated by the souls of the dead, 115, planted on graves, 115, demons in, 116, ceremonies at cutting down, 116, grant women an easy delivery, 120, sacred, 120, represented on the monuments of Osiris, 380, in relation to Dionysus, 387, evils transferred to, 545, burnt in bonfires, 612, 616, 626, 630, 651, lives of people bound up with, 681, 682, passing through cleft trees as a cure for various maladies, 682-3, fire thought by savages to be stored like sap in, 706
- Tribute of youths and maidens sent to the Minotaur, 280
- Trinity, the Hindoo, 52
- Triptolemus, prince of Eleusis, 394, 396, 470
- Troezen, sanctuary of Hippolytus at, 6
- Trolls, 617, 625, 663, 707
- Tsetsaut Indians of British Columbia, 600
- Tshi-speaking peoples of the Gold Coast, 26
- Tsimshian Indians of British Columbia, 66
- Tsuen-cheu-fu, in China, geomancy at, 36
- Tuaregs of the Sahara, 252
- Tubingen, burying the Carnival near, 306
- Tuhoe tribe of Maoris, 119
- Tullus Hostilius, king of Rome, 141, 158
- Tumleo, island of, 43
- Tuŋa, a spirit, expulsion of, 551
- Turcoman cure for fever, 242
- Turkestan, human scapegoat in, 543
- Turks, exorcism practised by the, 195; preserve their nail-parings for use at the resurrection, 236, of Central Asia, 496
- Turmeric cultivated, 434, 437
- Turner's picture of the Golden Bough, 1
- "Turquoise, Mistress of," at Sinai, 330
- Turtle, magical models of, 18
- Turtles, killing the sacred, 502; transmigration of human souls into, 504
- Twanyirika, an Australian spirit, 693
- Twelfth Day, ceremony of the King at Carcassone on, 537, the Eve of, 561, 609, 647
- Night, expulsion of the powers of evil on, 561, the King of the Bean on, 586; the Yule log on, 637
- Twelve Days from Christmas to Twelfth Night, precautions against witches during the, 561, Nights, remains of Yule log scattered over the fields during the, 637
- Twins, 29, 227, taboos laid on parents of, 66, supposed to possess magical powers, 66-7, associated with salmon, and the grizzly bear, 66, called children of the sky, 67, water poured on graves of, 67; parents of, thought to be able to fertilise plantain trees, 137
- "Two Brothers, The," Egyptian tale of, 674
- Tycoons, the, 176
- Typhon, or Set, the brother of Osiris, 363, 365, 475
- Tyrol, the, witches in, 234; disposal of loose hair in, 237, wedding-ring as amulet in, 243, customs at threshing in, 429, the last thresher in, 449, 456, "burning out the witches" in, 560, 622, Lenten fires in, 612, Midsummer fires in, 625, fern-seed in, 705
- Ualaroi, the, of the Darling River, 692
- Uap, island of, taboos observed by fishermen in, 218
- Uea, one of the Loyalty Islands, 185
- Uganda, 208, priest inspired by tobacco smoke in, 95, taboos observed by father of twins in, 227, king's brothers burnt in, 286, human scapegoats in, 543, 565, king of, 543, 565, 593
- Ukraine, ceremony to fertilise the fields on St George's Day in the, 137
- Uliase, East Indian island, 191, 196
- Ulster, taboos observed by the ancient kings of, 173
- Umbrians, ordeal of battle among the, 158
- Unconquered Sun, Mithra identified with the, 358

- Universal healer, mistletoe called, 659  
 Unmatjera tribe of Central Australia, 693  
 Unreason, Abbot of, 586  
 Upsala, sacred grove at, 110, festival at, 279, sacrifice of King's sons at, 290, human sacrifices at, 354  
 Upulero, the spirit of the sun, 14  
 Ur, the fourth dynasty of, 104  
 Urua, divinity claimed by the chief of, 98  
 Valerius Soranus, 262  
 Vampyres, need-fire kindled as a safeguard against, 641, 649  
 Vancouver Island, 599  
 Vedijovis, she-goat sacrificed to, 392  
 Vegetable and animal life associated in the primitive mind, 325  
 Vegetation, homoeopathic influence of persons on, 29, spirit of, 124, 125, 127-129, 131, influence of the sexes on, 135-139, men and women masquerading as the spirits of, 140, marriage of the powers of, 146, death and revival of the spirit of, 300, 315, 318-19, perhaps generalised from a tree-spirit, 315-16, 339, growth and decay of, 324, 385, decay and revival of, in the rites of Adonis, 337, gardens of Adonis charms to promote the growth of, 341, 342, Attis as a god of, 352, Osiris as a god of, 381, 385, decay and growth of, conceived as the death and resurrection of gods, 385, ancient deities of, as animals, 464-79, Mars a deity of, 578, spirit of, burnt in effigy, 651, reasons for burning a deity of, 651, leaf-clad representative of the spirit of, burnt, 652, view that victims of the Druids represented spirits of, 658  
 "Veins of the Nile," 371  
 Velea, a deified woman, 97  
 Vendée, custom at threshing in, 406  
 Venison, ill effect of eating, 496  
 Venus (Aphrodite) and Adonis, 5, 7, 8  
 Venus, the planet, identified with Astarte, 346, 370  
 Vermin, from hair returned to their owner, 236, propitiated by farmers, 530, exorcised with torches, 647  
 Verres, Roman governor, 397  
 Vervain, 17, 623, 624  
 Vesta, temple of, 3, 704, perpetual fire of, 3, 665  
 Vestal fire, 3, at Nemi, 163, 164  
 — Virgins, 3, 153, 235, 478, 493  
 Vestals, 4, 145  
 Victoria, Queen, worshipped in Orissa, 100  
 Victoria, aborigines of, 45, 252, sex totems in, 688  
 Victoria Nyanza, Lake, 87  
 Vine, the, cultivation of, introduced by Osiris, 362, 380, in relation to Dionysus, 386  
 Vintage song, Phœnician, 425, 442  
 Violets sprung from the blood of Attis, 348  
 Virbius, 4, 5, 8, 141, 163, 164, 301, 476, 707  
 Virgin, the Heavenly, mother of the Sun, 358  
 Virgin Mary and Isis, 383  
 — mothers, tales of, 347  
 Virgins, sacrifice of, 146, 370  
 Vitu Levu, Fijian island, 695  
 Vitzilpuzth, a great Mexican god, 488  
 Voigtland, locks unlocked at childbirth in, 239, bonfires on Walpurgis Night in, 622  
 Volga, sacred groves among the tribes of the, 111  
 Vomiting, homoeopathic cure for, 16, as a religious rite, 485  
 Vosges, the, disposal of cut hair and nails in, 236, harvest customs in, 449, Midsummer fires in, 629, 645, cats burnt alive on Shrove Tuesday in, 656  
 Vosges Mountains, the, May customs in, 121, "catching the cat" in, 453  
 Voyages, telepathy in, 24  
 Wadai, Sultan of, 200, 273  
 Wageia of East Africa, 215  
 Wagogo of East Africa, 23, 72, 85, 495  
 Wagtail, the yellow, in magic, 15, 16  
 Waizganthos, an old Prussian god, 288  
 Wajagga of East Africa, 237  
 Wakanda, a spirit, 216  
 Wakelbura of Australia, 180, 603  
 Wakondyo of Central Africa, 76  
 Walber, the, 126, 127  
 Waldemar I, King of Denmark, 89  
 Wales, belief as to death at ebb tide in, 35, harvest customs in, 403, falling sickness transferred to fowls in, 545, Beltane fires in, 620, Midsummer fires in, 630, 646, Hallowe'en fires in, 635, mistletoe in, 661, 663  
 Walhalla, mistletoe growing east of, 608  
 Wallachia, crown of last ears of corn worn by girl at harvest in, 341  
 Walos of Senegambia, 660  
 Walpurgis Day in Upper Franken, 616  
 — Night, witches abroad on, 560, 622, annual expulsion of witches on, 561  
 Wambugwe of East Africa, 72, 84  
 Wandorobbo of East Africa, 219  
 Wanika of East Africa, 112  
 War, telepathy in, 25-7, rules of ceremonial purity observed in, 210, continence in, 210-12  
 Warlock, the invulnerable, stories of, 668  
 Warramunga of Central Australia, 17  
 Warriors tabooed, 210, 594  
 Warts, transferred to ash-tree, 546  
 Warua, the, 198  
 Washing, forbidden for magical reasons, 21, 23, 68, practised as a ceremonial purification by the Jews, and by the Greeks, 473  
 Wataturu of East Africa, 85  
 Watchdogs, charm to silence, 31



- Water, used in charms, 26, 63, 67, 71, 341 ; kings of, 108 ; in Midsummer festival, 154, 625 ; of Life, Ishtar sprinkled with, 326 ; used to wash away sins, 543
- Water-ousel, heart of, eaten to make eater wise and eloquent, 496
- spirits, propitiation of, 127 ; women married to, 145 ; sacrifices to, 146 ; danger of, 192
- Wawamba of Central Africa, 76
- Wax figures in magic, 543-4
- Weapon and wound, contagious magic of, 41-3
- Weapons, prayers to, 27 ; of warriors, purification of, 214 ; sharp, tabooed, 226
- Weariness, transferred to stones, 540
- Weather, magical control of the, 60-83
- Weaving, charm to ensure skill in, 32
- Wedding ring amulet against witchcraft, 243
- Weevils spared by Esthonian peasants, 530
- Wells, cleansed as rain-charm, 67 ; men-  
struous women kept from, 604, 606
- Wends, the, 119, 402, 451, of Saxony, 708
- Wennland in Sweden, treatment of  
strangers on the threshing-floor in, 431 ;  
grain of last sheaf baked in a girl-shaped  
loaf in, 480
- Westermarck, Dr Edward, 642, 643
- Westphalia, the Whitsuntide Bride in, 135 ;  
the last sheaf at harvest in, 401 ; the  
Harvest-cock in, 451 ; Easter fires in,  
615, the Yule log in, 637
- Wetar, East Indian island, stabbing  
people's shadows in, 189, belief regard-  
ing leprosy in, 473
- Whale, solemn burial of dead, 223
- Whale's ghost, fear of injuring, 220
- Whalers, taboos observed by, 217, 220, 221
- Whales, ceremonies observed at the  
slaughter of, 523
- Wheat and barley, the cultivation of, intro-  
duced by Osiris, 363, discovered by  
Isis, 382
- Wheat Bride, 408, -cock, 451, -cow, 457 ;  
-dog, 448, 449, -goat, 454, -man, 428,  
-mother, 400, -pug, 449, -sow, 460 ;  
-wolf, 449, 450
- Wheel, effigy of Death attached to a, 311,  
fire kindled by the rotation of a, 627,  
639, 644, as a symbol of the sun, 644
- Wheels, burning, rolled down hill, 612, 613,  
615, 622-4, 626, 641, 643, 645, 646,  
rolled over fields at Midsummer to  
fertilise them, 629, 647, perhaps in-  
tended to burn witches, 649
- Whit-Monday, custom observed by Russian  
girls on, 128, the Leaf King at Hildes-  
heim on, 130 ; the king in Bohemia on,  
130, the king's game on, 132 ; pretence  
of beheading a leaf-clad man on, 297,  
pretence of beheading the king on, 298-9
- Whitsun-Bride in Denmark, 133
- Whitsuntide, races at, 124, 129 ; contests  
for the kingship at, 129, 132 ; drama of  
Summer and Winter at, 317
- Whitsuntide Basket, 129, Bride, 132, 133,  
135 ; Bridegroom, 133 ; crown, 132,  
133 ; customs, 121, 124, 128-35 ; King,  
129, 132, 133, 298-9 ; -lout, 128 ; mum-  
mers, 296-301 ; Queen, 131, 132, 299
- Wicker giants at popular festivals in  
Europe, 654 ; burnt in summer bonfires,  
655
- Widows and widowers, mourning customs  
observed by, 207
- Wife, the Old, name given to the last corn  
cut, 403
- Wife's infidelity thought to injure her  
absent husband, 23, 25
- Wild animals, propitiated by hunters, 518-  
532
- Man, a Whitsuntide mummer, 467
- Willow, mistletoe growing on, 660
- Willow-tree, 683 ; at festival of Green  
George among the gypsies, 126-7
- Winamwanga of Northern Rhodesia, 708
- Wind, the magical control of the, 80-83 ;  
of the Cross, 81 ; in the corn, sayings as  
to the, 399, 448, 454, 457, 459, 460, 463
- Winds, charms to calm the, 80 ; sold to  
sailors, 81 ; tied up in knots, 81 ; kept  
in jars, 170
- Wine, the sacramental use of, 498
- Winnowing basket, image of snake in, 535
- fan, in rain-making, 73 ; used to  
scatter ashes of human victims, 378,  
443 ; an emblem of Dionysus, 388
- Winter, ceremony at the end of, 551 ;  
general clearance of evils at the beginning  
or end of, 575
- and Summer, dramatic battle of, 316-  
317
- Witch, burnt in Ireland, 56 ; burnt at St.  
Andrews, 243 ; name given to last corn  
cut after sunset, 403 ; Old, burning the,  
429 See also Witches
- "Witch-shots," 649
- Witchcraft, dread of, 194, 236 ; strangers  
suspected of practising, 194 ; practised  
in Scotland, 542 ; protections against,  
610, 620, 626-8, 648, 656, 663, 666, 702,  
707 ; need-fire, a sovereign remedy for,  
641 ; ailments attributed to, 649 ; fatal  
to milk and butter, 663
- Witches, 44, raise the wind, 80, 81 ; make  
use of cut hair, 234, 237 ; protections  
against, 243, 620, 627 ; expulsion of,  
560 ; burning of, 560, 561, 621, 635, 658 ;  
shooting the, 561 ; effigies of, burnt in  
bonfires, 610, 612, 613, 648, 658 ; charm  
to protect fields against, 615 ; cast spells  
on cattle, 620 ; steal milk from cows,  
620, 627, 628, 648 ; abroad on Walpurgis  
Night, 622 ; driving away, 622 ; resort  
to the Blocksberg, 625 ; steal milk and  
butter, 628 ; abroad at Hallowe'en, 634 ;



- with Persephone, 388, said to have transferred the sceptre to young Dionysus, 388, father of Dionysus by Demeter, 389, his appearance to Hercules in the shape of a ram, 500; and Danae, 602
- Zeus, the Descender, places struck by lightning consecrated to, 159, Heavenly, at Sparta, 9, Lacedaemon, at Sparta, 9, Laphystian, 290-92, Lightning, sacrificial hearth of, 159, Polieus in Cos, 466
- Zumbas, or Muzimbab, of South-east Africa, 97
- Zoganes, temporary king at Babylon, put to death after a reign of five days, 282
- Zoilus, priest of Dionysus at Orchomenus, 291
- Zulu language, its diversity, 258
- Zululand, rain-making by means of a "heaven-bird" in, 75, children buried to the neck as a rain-charm in, 75, names of chiefs and kings tabooed in, 257, kings put to death in, 272, festival of first-fruits in, 483, seclusion of girls at puberty in, 595, gardens fumigated with medicated smoke in, 645
- Zulus, 192, 495, 498
- Zuni Indians of New Mexico, 502, 504, 571
- Žytniamatka*, the Corn-mother, 421

